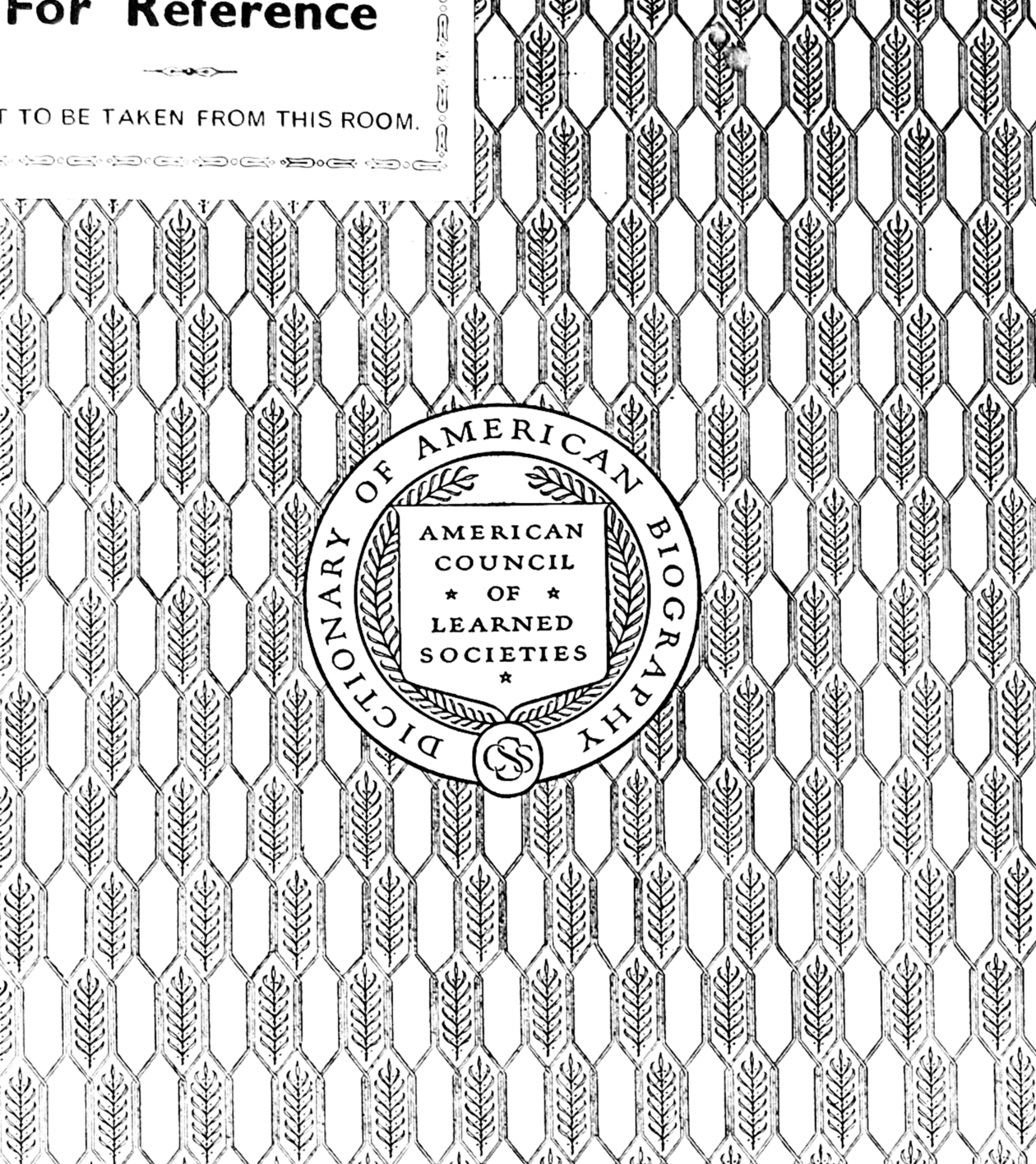
DICTIONARY OF AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY
AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

For Reference

T TO BE TAKEN FROM THIS ROOM.



DICTIONARY OF AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

PUBLISHED UNDER THE AUSPICES OF

AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

AMERICAN PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

AMERICAN ACADEMY OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, Cambridge, Massachusetts

AMERICAN ANTIQUARIAN SOCIETY, Worcester, Massachusetts

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY, New Haven, Connecticut

AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, New York, New York

AMERICAN PHILOLOGICAL ASSOCIATION, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania

ARCHAEOLOGICAL INSTITUTE OF AMERICA, New York, New York

SOCIETY OF BIBLICAL LITERATURE AND EXEGESIS, Haverford, Pennsylvania

MODERN LANGUAGE ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, New York, New York

AMERICAN HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION, Washington, District of Columbia

AMERICAN ECONOMIC ASSOCIATION, Evanston, Illinois

AMERICAN PHILOSOPHICAL ASSOCIATION, Middletown, Connecticut

AMERICAN ANTHROPOLOGICAL ASSOCIATION, Chicago, Illinois

AMERICAN POLITICAL SCIENCE ASSOCIATION, Evanston, Illinois

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY OF AMERICA, Albany, New York

ASSOCIATION OF AMERICAN GEOGRAPHERS, Minneapolis, Minnesota

AMERICAN SOCIOLOGICAL SOCIETY, Washington, District of Columbia

AMERICAN SOCIETY OF INTERNATIONAL LAW, Washington, District of Columbia

COLLEGE ART ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, New York, New York

HISTORY OF SCIENCE SOCIETY, South Hadley, Massachusetts

LINGUISTIC SOCIETY OF AMERICA, Washington, District of Columbia

MEDIAEVAL ACADEMY OF AMERICA, Cambridge, Massachusetts

POPULATION ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, Washington, District of Columbia

14065
25.1.56

DICTIONARY OF American Biography

Edited by Dumas Malone

14

Oglethorpe - Platner

Charles Scribner's Sons
NEW YORK

Prompted solely by a desire for public service the New York Times Company and its President, Mr. Adolph S. Ochs, have made possible the preparation of the manuscript of the Dictionary of American Biography through a subvention of more than $500,000 and with the understanding that the entire responsibility for the contents of the volumes rests with the American Council of Learned Societies.

COPYRIGHT, 1934, BY
AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

Printed in the United States of America

S+82
Bhatt
JAMMU & KASHMIR UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY
No 14,065.
Date 25. 1. 56.
SRINAGAR
ST 01
R
920.07
J63D.14
ALLAMA IQBAL LIBRARY
14065

The Dictionary of American Biography was published under the auspices of the American Council of Learned Societies and under the direction of a Committee of Management which consisted of J. FRANKLIN JAMESON, *Chairman*, JOHN H. FINLEY, ALLEN JOHNSON, FREDERIC L. PAXSON, MRS. ARTHUR H. SULZBERGER, CARL VAN DOREN, CHARLES WARREN.

The editorial staff included ALLEN JOHNSON, HARRIS E. STARR, ERNEST S. BATES, GEORGE H. GENZMER, H. W. HOWARD KNOTT.

The American Council of Learned Societies consists of the following societies:

American Philosophical Society
American Academy of Arts and Sciences
American Antiquarian Society
American Oriental Society
American Numismatic Society
American Philological Association
Archaeological Institute of America
Society of Biblical Literature and Exegesis
Modern Language Association of America
American Historical Association
American Economic Association
American Philosophical Association
American Anthropological Association
American Political Science Association
Bibliographical Society of America
Association of American Geographers
American Sociological Society
American Society of International Law
College Art Association of America
History of Science Society
Linguistic Society of America
Mediaeval Academy of America
Population Association of America

CONTRIBUTORS TO VOLUME XIV

Charles David Abbott . . . . C. D. A.
Thomas P. Abernethy . . . . T. P. A.
Adeline Adams . . . . . A. A.
James Truslow Adams . . . . J. T. A.
Raymond William Adams . . . R. W. A.
Daniel Dulany Addison . . . D. D. A.
Nelson F. Adkins . . . . . N. F. A.
Robert Greenhalgh Albion . R. G. A.
William F. Albright . . . . . W. F. A.
Carroll S. Alden . . . . . C. S. A.
Edmund Kimball Alden . . . E. K. A.
Richard Aldrich . . . . . R. A.
William H. Allison . . . . . W. H. A.
Katharine H. Amend . . . . . K. H. A.
Marguerite Appleton . . . . M. A.
Raymond Clare Archibald . . R. C. A.
Charles F. Arrowood . . . . C. F. A.
Percy M. Ashburn . . . . . P. M. A.
Astley P. C. Ashhurst . . . . A. P. C. A.
Joseph Cullen Ayer . . . . . J. C. A.
Samuel Gardiner Ayres. . . . S. G. A.
Elizabeth M. Bacon . . . . . E. M. B—n.
Christina H. Baker . . . . . C. H. B.
Horace B. Baker . . . . . H. B. B.
Thomas S. Barclay . . . . . T. S. B.
Lewellys F. Barker . . . . . L. F. B.
Viola F. Barnes . . . . . V. F. B.
Claribel R. Barnett . . . . . C. R. B.
David P. Barrows . . . . . D. P. B.
Clarence Bartlett . . . . . C. B—t.
Howard R. Bartlett . . . . . H. R. B.
George A. Barton . . . . . G. A. B—n.
Edson S. Bastin . . . . . E. S. B—n.
Alan M. Bateman . . . . . A. M. B.
Ernest Sutherland Bates . . E. S. B—s.
George Gordon Battle . . . G. G. B.
William G. Bean . . . . . W. G. B—n.
Robert P. Bellows . . . . . R. P. B.
Orval Bennett . . . . . O. B.
C. C. Benson . . . . . C. C. B.
Percy W. Bidwell . . . . . P. W. B.
Theodore C. Blegen . . . . . T. C. B.
Willard Grosvenor Bleyer . . W. G. B—r.
Louise Pearson Blodget . . . L. P. B—t.
Lansing B. Bloom . . . . . L. B. B.
G. Alder Blumer . . . . . G. A. B—r.
Ernest Ludlow Bogart . . . . E. L. B.
Herbert E. Bolton . . . . . H. E. B.
Robert W. Bolwell . . . . . R. W. B.

Edwin M. Borchard . . . . . E. M. B—d.
Sarah G. Bowerman . . . . . S. G. B.
Julian P. Boyd . . . . . J. P. B.
William K. Boyd . . . . . W. K. B.
Elizabeth Breckenridge . . . E. B.
Crane Brinton . . . . . C. B—n.
Jean Lambert Brockway . . . J. L. B.
Robert C. Brooks . . . . . R. C. B.
L. Parmly Brown . . . . . L. P. B—n.
Paul E. Bryan . . . . . P. E. B.
G. MacLaren Brydon . . . . . G. M. B.
F. Lauriston Bullard . . . . F. L. B.
Edmund C. Burnett . . . . . E. C. B.
William Mill Butler . . . . W. M. B.
Henry J. Cadbury . . . . . H. J. C.
Huntington Cairns . . . . . H. C.
Isabel M. Calder . . . . . I. M. C.
William S. Carpenter . . . . W. S. C.
Zechariah Chafee, Jr. . . . . Z. C., Jr.
Wayland J. Chase . . . . . W. J. C.
Francis A. Christie . . . . . F. A. C.
Jane Clark . . . . . J. C.
Robert C. Clark . . . . . R. C. C—k.
Hugh McD. Clokie . . . . . H. M. C.
Frederick W. Coburn . . . . F. W. C.
Robert P. Tristram Coffin . . R. P. T. C.
Fannie L. Gwinner Cole . . . F. L. G. C.
Florence Converse . . . . . F. C.
Robert Spencer Cotterill . . R. S. C.
George S. Cottman . . . . . G. S. C.
Robert C. Cotton . . . . . R. C. C—n
E. Merton Coulter . . . . . E. M. C.
Theodore S. Cox . . . . . T. S. C.
Katharine Elizabeth Crane . K. E. C.
Robert Irvin Cratty . . . . . R. I. C.
Edward E. Curtis . . . . . E. E. C.
Edward E. Dale . . . . . E. E. D.
Charles B. Davis . . . . . C. B. D.
Ralph Davol . . . . . R. D.
Richard E. Day . . . . . R. E. D.
Babette Deutsch . . . . . B. D.
Irving Dilliard . . . . . I. D.
John J. Dolan . . . . . J. J. D.
Harold I. Donnelly . . . . . H. I. D.
William Howe Downes . . . W. H. D.
Stella M. Drumm . . . . . S, M. D.
Edward A. Duddy . . . . . E. A. D.
Raymond S. Dugan . . . . . R. S. D.
Andrew G. Du Mez . . . . . A. G. D—M.

Contributors to Volume XIV

Walter A. Dyer . . . . . W. A. D.
Rosamonde Hopkins Earle . . R. H. E.
J. Harold Easterby . . . . . J. H. E.
Edward Dwight Eaton . . . . E. D. E.
Walter Prichard Eaton . . . W. P. E.
Edwin Francis Edgett . . . . E. F. E.
Everett E. Edwards . . . . . E. E. E.
Barnett A. Elzas . . . . . B. A. E.
Amos A. Ettinger . . . . . A. A. E.
Daniel Evans . . . . . D. E.
Paul D. Evans . . . . . P. D. E.
Herman L. Fairchild . . . . . H. L. F.
Charles Fairman . . . . . C. F.
Paul Patton Faris . . . . . P. P. F.
Hallie Farmer . . . . . H. F.
Ethel Webb Faulkner . . . E. W. F.
Harold U. Faulkner . . . . . H. U. F.
James Kip Finch . . . . . J. K. F.
Mary Elizabeth Fittro . . . . M. E. F.
Paul J. Foik . . . . . P. J. F.
Henry Wilder Foote . . . . . H. W. F.
Harold N. Fowler . . . . . H. N. F.
Dixon Ryan Fox . . . . . D. R. F.
L. Webster Fox . . . . . L. W. F.
John H. Frederick . . . . . J. H. F.
John C. French . . . . . J. C. F.
Claude M. Fuess . . . . . C. M. F.
Joseph V. Fuller . . . . . J. V. F.
John F. Fulton . . . . . J. F. F.
Paul N. Garber . . . . . P. N. G.
Lee Garby . . . . . L. G.
F. Lynwood Garrison . . . . F. L. G.
George Harvey Genzmer . . . G. H. G.
John H. Gerould . . . . . J. H. G.
W. J. Ghent . . . . . W. J. G.
William Frederic Giese . . . W. F. G.
Lawrence H. Gipson . . . . . L. H. G.
Harry Gehman Good . . . . . H. G. G.
Colin B. Goodykoontz . . . . C. B. G.
Armistead Churchill Gordon, Jr. . . . . A. C. G., Jr.
Kenneth M. Gould . . . . . K. M. G.
E. Allison Grant . . . . . E. A. G.
Charles Graves . . . . . C. G.
Anne King Gregorie . . . . . A. K. G.
Ernest S. Griffith . . . . . E. S. G.
Richard M. Gummere . . . . R. M. G.
Sidney Gunn . . . . . S. G.
James Samuel Guy . . . . . J. S. G.
Charles W. Hackett . . . . . C. W. H.
LeRoy R. Hafen . . . . . L. R. H.
Percival Hall . . . . . P. H.
Marguerite Bartlett Hamer . M. B. H.
Philip M. Hamer . . . . . P. M. H.
J. G. deR. Hamilton . . . . . J. G. deR. H.
Talbot Faulkner Hamlin . . T. F. H.
George McLean Harper . . . G. M. H.
Fred E. Haynes . . . . . F. E. H—s.
Earl L. W. Heck . . . . . E. L. W. H.
Samuel J. Heidner . . . . . S. J. H.
H. H. Henline . . . . . H. H. H.
Amos L. Herold . . . . . A. L. H.
Granville Hicks . . . . . G. H.
John Donald Hicks . . . . . J. D. H.
William Ernest Hocking . . . W. E. H.
John Haynes Holmes . . . . . J. H. H.
Oliver W. Holmes . . . . . O. W. H.
Ivan Lee Holt . . . . . I. L. H.
B. Smith Hopkins . . . . . B. S. H.
Walter Hough . . . . . W. H.
John Tasker Howard . . . . J. T. H.
Leland Ossian Howard . . . . L. O. H.
Theodora Kimball Hubbard . T. K. H.
Harry M. Hubbell . . . . . H. M. H.
Francis Edwin Hyde . . . . . F. E. H—e.
Albert Hyma . . . . . A. H.
Asher Isaacs . . . . . A. I.
Edith J. R. Isaacs . . . . . E. J. R. I.
Joseph Jackson . . . . . J. J.
Alfred P. James . . . . . A. P. J.
Willis L. Jepson . . . . . W. L. J.
Rufus M. Jones . . . . . R. M. J.
Charles H. Judd . . . . . C. H. J.
Louis C. Karpinski . . . . . L. C. K.
Louise Phelps Kellogg . . . . L. P. K.
Rayner W. Kelsey . . . . . R. W. K.
Ruth Anna Ketring . . . . . R. A. K.
Edward L. Keyes . . . . . E. L. K.
Alma Dexta King . . . . . A. D. K.
Edward S. King . . . . . E. S. K.
Louis A. Klein . . . . . L. A. K.
John R. Kline . . . . . J. R. K.
Grant C. Knight . . . . . G. C. K.
G. Adolf Koch . . . . . G. A. K.
Max J. Kohler . . . . . M. J. K.
Alois F. Kovarik . . . . . A. F. K.
E. B. Krumbhaar . . . . . E. B. K.
Charles B. Kuhlmann . . . . C. B. K.
Elbert C. Lane . . . . . E. C. L.
William Chauncy Langdon . . W. C. L.
Kenneth S. Latourette . . . K. S. L.
George M. Lewis . . . . . G. M. L.
Orin G. Libby . . . . . O. G. L.
Anna Lane Lingelbach . . . . A. L. L.
Charles Sumner Lobingier . . C. S. L.
Mildred E. Lombard . . . . . M. E. L.
Ella Lonn . . . . . E. L.
Charles E. T. Lull . . . . . C. E. T. L.
Thatcher T. P. Luquer . . . . T. T. P. L.
Harry Miller Lydenberg . . . H. M. L.
Thomas Ollive Mabbott . . . T. O. M.
Thomas McCrae . . . . . T. M.
Roger P. McCutcheon . . . . R. P. M.
Joseph McFarland . . . . . J. McF.
Reginald C. McGrane . . . . R. C. McG.
Kenneth McKenzie . . . . . K. McK.

Contributors to Volume XIV

Donald L. McMurry	D. L. M.
Katherine McNamara	K. McN.
James C. Malin	J. C. M.
W. C. Mallalieu	W. C. M.
H. A. Marmer	H. A. M.
Frederick H. Martens	F. H. M.
William R. Maxon	W. R. M.
Robert Douthat Meade	R. D. M.
Leila Mechlin	L. M.
Lafayette B. Mendel	L. B. M.
Clarence W. Mendell	C. W. M—l.
A. Howard Meneely	A. H. M.
George P. Merrill	G. P. M.
Frank J. Metcalf	F. J. M.
Adolf Meyer	A. M.
Raymond C. Miller	R. C. M—r.
Florence Milligan	F. M.
Harvey C. Minnich	H. C. M.
Broadus Mitchell	B. M.
Wilmot B. Mitchell	W. B. M.
Carl W. Mitman	C. W. M—n.
Conrad Henry Moehlman	C. H. M.
Robert E. Moody	R. E. M.
Warren King Moorehead	W. K. M.
Samuel Eliot Morison	S. E. M.
Frank Luther Mott	F. L. M.
Edmund C. Mower	E. C. M.
John Herbert Nelson	J. H. N.
Thomas K. Nelson	T. K. N.
H. Edward Nettles	H. E. N.
Allan Nevins	A. N.
Lyman C. Newell	L. C. N.
Roy F. Nichols	R. F. N.
J. Bennett Nolan	J. B. N.
Joe L. Norris	J. L. N.
Walter B. Norris	W. B. N.
Grace Lee Nute	G. L. N.
Frank M. O'Brien	F. M. O.
Francis R. Packard	F. R. P.
Laurence B. Packard	L. B. P.
Victor H. Paltsits	V. H. P.
Scott H. Paradise	S. H. P.
Charles W. Parker	C. W. P.
Henry Bamford Parkes	H. B. P.
James W. Patton	J. W. P—n.
Charles O. Paullin	C. O. P.
Theodore C. Pease	T. C. P.
James H. Peeling	J. H. P—g.
Josiah H. Penniman	J. H. P—n.
Hobart S. Perry	H. S. P.
Charles E. Persons	C. E. P.
Frederick T. Persons	F. T. P.
A. Everett Peterson	A. E. P.
James M. Phalen	J. M. P—n.
Francis S. Philbrick	F. S. P.
Frank L. Pleadwell	F. L. P.
John M. Poor	J. M. P—r.
Charles Shirley Potts	C. S. P.
Julius W. Pratt	J. W. P—t.
Richard J. Purcell	R. J. P.
Belle Rankin	B. R.
Albert G. Rau	A. G. R.
P. O. Ray	P. O. R.
Thomas T. Read	T. T. R.
Herbert S. Reichle	H. S. R.
Alfred E. Richards	A. E. R.
Thomas A. Rickard	T. A. R.
Robert E. Riegel	R. E. R.
Donald A. Roberts	D. A. R.
George Roberts	G. R.
Burr Arthur Robinson	B. A. R.
Edwin Arlington Robinson	E. A. R.
William A. Robinson	W. A. R.
J. Magnus Rohne	J. M. R.
Lois K. M. Rosenberry	L. K. M. R.
Marvin B. Rosenberry	M. B. R.
Victor Rosewater	V. R.
Joseph Schafer	J. S—r.
Israel Schapiro	I. S.
Leslie M. Scott	L. M. S.
Horace Wells Sellers	H. W. S.
James Lee Sellers	J. L. S.
Thorsten Sellin	T. S—n.
Robert Francis Seybolt	R. F. S.
Robert Shafer	R. S.
Benjamin F. Shambaugh	B. F. S.
William Bristol Shaw	W. B. S.
Guy Emery Shipler	G. E. S.
Lester B. Shippee	L. B. S.
Kenneth C. M. Sills	K. C. M. S.
Alexander Silverman	A. S.
Francis Butler Simkins	F. B. S.
Theodore Sizer	T. S—r.
David Stanley Smith	D. S. S.
Edward Conrad Smith	E. C. S.
Herbert Solow	H. S.
E. Wilder Spaulding	E. W. S.
Oliver L. Spaulding, Jr.	O. L. S., Jr.
Thomas M. Spaulding	T. M. S.
C. P. Stacey	C. P. S.
Harris Elwood Starr	H. E. S.
Henry P. Stearns	H. P. S.
Raymond P. Stearns	R. P. S.
Leo F. Stock	L. F. S.
Witmer Stone	W. S.
R. H. Sudds	R. H. S.
James Sullivan	J. S—n.
Charles S. Sydnor	C. S. S.
David Y. Thomas	D. Y. T.
Charles M. Thompson	C. M. T.
Ernest Trice Thompson	E. T. T.
Herbert Thoms	H. T.
Irving L. Thomson	I. L. T.
Edward S. Thorpe	E. S. T.
Edward Larocque Tinker	E. L. T.
Elizabeth Todd	E. T.

Contributors to Volume XIV

Charles C. Torrey	C. C. T.
Harry A. Toulmin, Jr.	H. A. T., Jr.
Aaron L. Treadwell	A. L. T.
Alonzo H. Tuttle	A. H. T.
George B. Utley	G. B. U.
William T. Utter	W. T. U.
John T. Vance	J. T. V.
Thomas C. Van Cleve	T. C. V—C.
Henry R. Viets	H. R. V.
Harold G. Villard	H. G. V.
Eugene M. Violette	E. M. V.
James J. Walsh	J. J. W.
Harry R. Warfel	H. R. W.
Aldred S. Warthin	A. S. W.
W. Randall Waterman	W. R. W.
Francis P. Weisenburger	F. P. W.
Paul Weiss	P. W.
Charles L. Wells	C. L. W.
F. Estelle Wells	F. E. W.
Elizabeth Howard West	E. H. W.
Allan Westcott	A. W.
Arthur P. Whitaker	A. P. W.
Jerome K. Wilcox	J. K. W.
Estelle Parthenia Wild	E. P. W.
Herbert U. Williams	H. U. W.
Mary Wilhelmine Williams	M. W. W.
Stanley T. Williams	S. T. W.
Helen Sumner Woodbury	H. S. W.
Robert M. Woodbury	R. M. W.
Maude H. Woodfin	M. H. W.
Thomas Woody	T. W.
Walter L. Wright, Jr.	W. L. W., Jr.
Lawrence C. Wroth	L. C. W.
Donovan Yeuell	D. Y.
Edwin H. Zeydel	E. H. Z.

DICTIONARY OF
AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

Oglethorpe — Platner

OGLETHORPE, JAMES EDWARD (Dec. 22, 1696–June 30, 1785), soldier, philanthropist, founder of the colony of Georgia, was born in London, the son of two stanch Jacobites, Sir Theophilus and Lady Eleanor (Wall) Oglethorpe, who endowed him with an abiding loyalty to the Crown, the military and parliamentary family tradition, strong moral courage, and a high purpose. Educated at Eton and Corpus Christi College, Oxford, he held a succession of army commissions until 1715, when he migrated to Paris, whence in 1717 he took service under Prince Eugene of Savoy against the Turks. Having gained a deservedly high military reputation, he later joined his family as a satellite at the quasi-court of James III at Saint Germain, France, and Urbino, Italy. For two years he was wholly engulfed in the Jacobite maelstrom, serving the cause in England, France, and Italy; but his return to England in 1719 marked the definite cessation of his Jacobite interest, and he soon succeeded his elder brother as incumbent of the family estate of Westbrook in Godalming, Surrey. Here he seems to have remained quietly until in 1722 he emerged from his rural retreat as a candidate for Parliament.

Succeeding his father and two elder brothers, Oglethorpe represented Haslemere for thirty-two years, despite virulent Whig opposition in the elections of 1722, 1734, and 1741. He placed himself on record as a mild High Tory, an advocate of restrictions on the use of distilled spirits, an opponent of both royal extravagance and Walpole's autocratic mismanagement in domestic affairs, a protagonist of national defense and anti-continental isolation, an ardent advocate of the spiritually oppressed, and a strong supporter of the budding Industrial Revolution. Persistently advocating naval preparedness and the expansion of imperial commerce and voicing his colonial and commercial policy in phrases which, presaging the principles of Burke, Franklin and Jefferson, proclaimed at once the unity of the empire and the equality of all its citizens, wherever situate, Oglethorpe favored imperial preference, not isolated protection. His humanitarian bent was manifested in his reports of 1729–30 concerning penal conditions, especially in the debtors' prisons, in his exposé of the evils of impressment in a pamphlet, *The Sailor's Advocate* (1728), which went through eight editions, and in his avowed antipathy to negro slavery.

His interest in penal reform led him to conceive the idea of sending newly freed and unemployed debtors to America. While his plans matured and two sums of money came to aid him, the position of Carolina on the southern frontier of the English colonies, exposed to predatory raids of Indians, Spaniards, and the French, led the British government to seek a sound program of simultaneous colonial expansion and defense. Hence, after a long period of many trials, Oglethorpe and nineteen associates received a charter on June 9/20, 1732, creating them "Trustees for establishing the colony of Georgia in America," for a period of twenty-one years. The motives for the grant were threefold: to relieve domestic unemployment, to strengthen the colonies and increase imperial trade and navigation, and to provide a buffer state for Carolina. Oglethorpe played a major rôle in securing proper publicity and adequate revenues for the venture. In the former endeavor he utilized the newspapers and produced a prospectus, *A New and Accurate Account of the Provinces of South-Carolina and Georgia* (1732). With the help of royal approbation he secured, among other contributions, the grant

originally intended for Bishop Berkeley's Bermudan and Rhode Island projects. The death of his mother in June 1732 left him unencumbered by domestic ties, and he determined to accompany the first band of emigrants.

From his landing at Charleston on Jan. 13, 1733, until his return to England late in 1734, he gave his attention chiefly to problems of administration. The neighboring Indians were conciliated at a convention where Oglethorpe secured a grant of the site of Savannah and the promise of the Indians to cease communication with the French and Spaniards. Fortifications were built and a rigorous system of military training established. Efforts were made to attract further immigration—a policy distinctively Oglethorpe's, for the British government opposed it—and resulted in the arrival in 1734 of the Salzburger Lutherans, the first religious body to seek asylum in Georgia. Lack of interest on the part of some trustees, together with constant need of money and certain neglect in his correspondence, led Oglethorpe to return to England in 1734. The press welcomed him and his Indian companions, and his presence revived the interest of his fellow trustees. Largely at his instigation, they now enacted important measures prohibiting the sale of rum, prohibiting negro slavery, and providing for the regulation of peaceful dealings with the Indians by means of a licensing system.

Rumors of insurrection led Oglethorpe to return to Georgia in December 1735, taking with him Charles and John Wesley to minister to the spiritual needs of his settlers. The policy of religious toleration brought results. To the flourishing congregation of Salzburger Lutherans were now added a colony of Scotch Highlander Presbyterians, equally valuable for military purposes. Three bands of Moravians under A. G. Spangenburg, David Nitzchmann, and Peter Boehler [*qq.v.*] came in 1735, 1736, and 1738, respectively. The Georgian careers of the Wesleys, despite Oglethorpe's best endeavors, were both brought to abortive conclusions through lack of sympathy with pioneer conditions and unfortunate encounters with the daughters of Eve. Charles sailed for England in 1736; John in 1737.

Almost immediately upon his return in 1736 Oglethorpe had founded Frederica on the Altamaha as a southern outpost against the Spaniards. To promote the military establishment he now incurred huge debts which the trustees, in sheer desperation, referred to the British government. Simultaneously Carolina rose in its wrath over the licensing of the Indian trade which deprived that colony of a lucrative traffic.

Oglethorpe

The storm now broke over Oglethorpe's head. Spain's complaints of his encroachments at Frederica, the trustees' ire at his failure to make regular reports, tales spread in London by returned malcontents, and the embattled Carolinians' prompt appeal to Whitehall drew him once more to England (1736–37). There, with honeyed words and a more equable balance sheet, he pacified the trustees; the Carolina question was compromised; the malcontents were silenced; but the Spanish issue remained. Early in 1737 Oglethorpe sought a parliamentary grant for the defense of his colony, and when it appeared that Walpole had intended to use Georgia as a pawn in his temporizing with Spain, the former bluntly criticized the Prime Minister and, ultimately gaining his desires, returned to Georgia in September 1738, with a regiment of seven hundred men.

Henceforth the vital concern in the life of Georgia and its governor was the war with Spain. By virtue of its proximity to Florida and its status in Spanish eyes as *terra irredenta,* Georgia was the logical point of first attack. Opening with a mutiny which, quelled by Oglethorpe, made him but the more determined to save his colony, the war developed into a futile attack on St. Augustine in 1740 by the Georgians, loyally aided by the Carolinians, and an equally unsuccessful Spanish riposte against Frederica in 1742. Despite the inertia of the trustees and the British government, Oglethorpe, by borrowing on all his English property, provided an adequate defense and saved Georgia to the empire. This period was also notable for the passing of the Moravians, who, reluctant to bear arms, removed to Pennsylvania; for the growth of the Anglican, Lutheran, and Calvinist elements in the colony; and for the missionary labors of George Whitefield [*q.v.*], whose orphanage Oglethorpe particularly befriended. The calm of domestic affairs was disturbed by the unwarranted expenditures of the storekeeper, the problems of primogeniture and tail male, and the protests of malcontents against the prohibitory laws. Oglethorpe gradually lost most of his great administrative powers. An attack on St. Augustine in 1743 failed, and an ever-deepening discontent and dissatisfaction with his policy, together with charges against him by a subordinate, drew him home in September 1743. He was brought before a court martial; the charges against him were dismissed as "frivolous . . . and without foundation"; but his colonizing days were ended.

The rest of his life was perhaps an anticlimax. Marriage on Sept. 15, 1744, to Elizabeth Wright, heiress of Crantham Hall, Essex; imperfect lead-

ership in the campaign against the Young Pretender in 1745, resulting in a court martial in which he was acquitted; and the sop of promotion to lieutenant-general in 1746 and general in 1765, led him to a ripe old age, passed in the literary circle of Samuel Johnson, Boswell, Goldsmith, Horace Walpole, Edmund Burke, and the Georgian Ladies' Clubs, with Hannah More, Mrs. Vesey, Mrs. Carter, and Mrs. Montagu. His death on June 30, 1785, closed a career full of promise and replete with achievement in the expansion of the British empire beyond the seas: the career of an imperial philanthropist.

[The chief sources for Oglethorpe's early life are the various volumes of Reports of the Historical MSS. Commission, and the King's Collection of Stuart Papers at Windsor Castle (see *Calendar of the Stuart Papers . . . Preserved at Windsor Castle*, 7 vols., 1902–23). For his parliamentary career, see Wm. Cobbett, *Cobbett's Parliamentary Hist. of England* (1811), vols. VIII–XV, and *Journals of the House of Commons*, vols. XX–XXVI; and for the colonization of Georgia see the *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1730–85; *MSS. of the Earl of Egmont: Diary of Viscount Percival Afterwards First Earl of Egmont* (3 vols., 1920–23); *The Colonial Records of the State of Ga.* (26 vols., 1904–16), ed. by A. D. Candler, esp. vols. XXI–XXV; and *Ga. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vols. I–III (1840–73), vol. VII (3 pts., 1909–13). For the Johnsonian era see Geoffrey Scott and F. A. Pottle, *Private Papers of James Boswell . . . in the Coll. of Lt.-Col. Ralph Heyward Isham* (19 vols., 1928–34). Among secondary works, see V. W. Crane, "The Philanthropists and the Genesis of Georgia," *Am. Hist. Rev.*, Oct. 1921; R. A. Roberts, "The Birth of an American State: Georgia: An Effort of Philanthropy and Protestant Propaganda," *Trans. Royal Hist. Soc.*, 4 ser. VI (London, 1923); J. R. McCain, *Georgia as a Proprietary Province: The Execution of a Trust* (1917); A. E. Clark-Kennedy, *Stephen Hales, D.D., F.R.S.* (1929); James Boswell, *The Life of Samuel Johnson* (1791); Nehemiah Curnock, *The Jour. of John Wesley*, vol. I (1909); John Telford, *The Letters of the Rev. John Wesley* (1931), vol. I. For biographies of Oglethorpe, see Robert Wright, *A Memoir of General James Oglethorpe* (1867); Austin Dobson, *A Paladin of Philanthropy* (1899); Henry Bruce, *Life of General Oglethorpe* (1890); L. F. Church, *Oglethorpe* (1932). A forthcoming study, with a full bibliography, will be A. A. Ettinger, "James Edward Oglethorpe, Imperial Idealist."]

A. A. E.

O'GORMAN, THOMAS (May 1, 1843–Sept. 18, 1921), Catholic educator and prelate, son of John and Margaret (O'Keefe) O'Gorman, was born in Boston. In 1848 his parents moved to Chicago, and later, to St. Paul, Minn., in which cities Thomas received his early schooling. Bishop Joseph Crétin [*q.v.*] sent O'Gorman and John Ireland [*q.v.*] to study for the priesthood at the French seminaries of Meximieux and Monthel. Ordained, Nov. 5, 1865, in the St. Paul Cathedral by Bishop Thomas L. Grace, O'Gorman was stationed as pastor of St. John's Church, Rochester, Minn., until he joined the Congregation of St. Paul the Apostle (1878). As a Paulist, he served at the Church of St. Paul the Apostle, New York, and traveled throughout the United States on the mission band. Returning to

St. Paul diocese, he was given the parish of the Immaculate Conception in Faribault (1882). Three years later, Bishop Ireland appointed him first rector of St. Thomas College, St. Paul, where he also taught dogmatic theology. In 1890 he was called to the chair of ecclesiastical history in the recently established Catholic University of America in Washington. While there he wrote *A History of the Roman Catholic Church in the United States* (1895), for the American Church History Series, which was well received, although hardly more than a good summary of J. G. Shea's monumental work. Besides this book, a printed lecture, *How Catholics Come To Be Misunderstood* (n.d.), and an occasional fugitive article, he did little writing. Of imposing appearance and a winning personality, he is said to have been an inspiring teacher and a good lecturer.

In 1896, through the nomination of Archbishop Ireland, he was appointed second bishop of Sioux Falls, S. D., and consecrated, Apr. 19, in St. Patrick's Church, Washington, D. C., by Cardinal Satolli, the papal delegate. In 1902 he was selected by President Roosevelt to accompany Judge Taft on his mission to Rome for the settlement of the friar-land claims in the Philippines. As bishop, he saw his diocese thrive for a quarter of a century, the Catholic population grow from 30,000 to 70,000, the number of priests more than double; churches and missions increase, and large hospitals erected at Sioux Falls, Aberdeen, Milbank, Mitchell, Pierre, and Yankton. Especially interested in education, he built eighteen parochial schools; gave ample patronage to a number of academies; and founded in 1909 Columbus College at Chamberlain, S. D., under the Clerics of St. Viator, which in 1921 was superseded by a new institution at Sioux Falls, under specially trained diocesan priests. Death came from a paralytic stroke, and the bishop was buried from his recently dedicated St. Joseph's Cathedral.

[G. W. Kingsbury and G. M. Smith, *Hist. of Dakota Territory*, etc. (5 vols., 1915), vol. IV; Doane Robinson, *South Dakota* (1930), vol. I; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *The Am. Cath. Who's Who* (1911); *Cath. Univ. Bull.*, Apr. 1896, II, 215; annual Cath. directories; *Daily Argus-Leader* (Sioux Falls), Sept. 19, 22, 1921; *Sioux Falls Press*, Sept. 20, 1921.]

R. J. P.

O'HARA, JAMES (1752–Dec. 16, 1819), Revolutionary soldier, manufacturer, was born in Ireland, the son of John O'Hara. It is said that he was educated at the seminary of St. Sulpice in Paris, gave up the ensign's commission given him by his relative, Lord Tyrawley, and entered a ship-broker's office in Liverpool to learn business methods before sailing for America. Upon

receiving a legacy from a cousin he left England and settled in Philadelphia in 1772. The following year he entered the employ of Devereaux Smith and Ephraim Douglas of Pittsburgh in carrying on trade with the Indians. This work took him to the wilderness of western Virginia. Later he became a government agent among the Indians. At the outbreak of the Revolution he volunteered as a private, later equipped a company of volunteers, and was elected captain. His company saw much service on the frontier at Kanawha and then, as part of the forces of George Rogers Clark, during the expedition to Vincennes. In 1779 all but twenty-nine of his company had been killed in action, and those survivors were thereupon placed under Daniel Brodhead's command. He was selected by the general to carry an important message to Washington asking for supplies. Later he became commissary at the general hospital and was stationed at Carlisle, Pa. The years 1781–83 found him serving as the assistant-quartermaster for General Greene.

After the Revolution he married Mary Carson of Philadelphia. In their home at Pittsburgh he placed some of the first carpets brought across the Alleghany Mountains, and it is said that the neighbors called them coverlets and were amazed to see them laid on the floor. The O'Haras had six children. He entered business and filled many large contracts for the government. In 1792 President Washington appointed him quartermaster of the United States army, and he served during the Whisky Rebellion and General Wayne's expedition against the Indians. He is credited with "saving the army" by his efficient business methods and remarkable understanding of the Indian character and varied dialects. Resigning in 1796, he again became a government contractor and continued in that capacity until 1802. Sometime earlier he had formed a partnership with Maj. Isaac Craig, with whom he erected the first glassworks in Pittsburgh. To superintend the work he hired a German chemist, William Peter Eichbaum, with whom he journeyed from Philadelphia on foot. Their first successful product, the result of costly experimentation, was glass bottles, and their plant became famous. This plant was one of the first of its kind to use coal as fuel. He next turned his attention to the salt industry. He found that salt was carried overland on pack horses from New York state and was therefore very expensive. He built boats for the purpose of transporting this important product more cheaply. On the outward trip he loaded the boats with flour, provisions, and other merchandise in salt barrels, which were

O'Hara

reserved in his contracts and, when empty, were filled with salt for the return trip. He also built vessels to carry cotton to Liverpool and was one of the pioneers in this trade. His *General Butler* was captured by a Spanish vessel in 1807. He became a director and then president of the Pittsburgh branch of the Bank of Pennsylvania. He was interested in iron works at Ligonier in partnership with John Henry Hopkins [*q.v.*]. Having invested heavily in real estate in the rapidly growing town of Pittsburgh, he found himself "land poor" during the crisis of 1817 and was saved from bankruptcy by his friend, James Ross. Nevertheless, by the time of his death, two years later, he had cleared his estate of all debt. He was buried in the churchyard of the First Presbyterian Church, but his remains were subsequently moved to the Allegheny Cemetery.

["Letter-Book of Major Isaac Craig," *Hist. Reg.: Notes and Queries*, Sept. 1884; *Fort Pitt and Letters from the Frontier*, comp. by M. C. Darlington (1892); *Western Pa. Hist. Mag.*, Oct. 1926; *Hist. of Allegheny County, Pa.* (1889); R. M. Knittle, *Early American Glass* (copr. 1927).] A. I.

O'HARA, THEODORE (Feb. 11, 1820–June 6, 1867), journalist, soldier, was born at Danville, Ky. His father, Kean O'Hara, was one of three brothers who were implicated in Lord Edward Fitzgerald's Irish conspiracy in 1798 and fled with their father to the United States. He became famous in Kentucky as a schoolmaster, married a woman of Maryland Irish lineage, and bestowed affectionate care on the training of his son. After graduating in 1839 from St. Joseph's College, Bardstown, O'Hara read law in the office of William Owsley [*q.v.*] at Frankfort, made a lifelong friend of his fellow clerk, John Cabell Breckinridge [*q.v.*], and was admitted to practice in 1842. Soon thereafter he secured an appointment in the Treasury at Washington, but finding a clerk's life unbearably tame he returned to Frankfort and joined the staff of the *Yeoman*. During the Mexican War he served from June 26, 1846, to Oct. 15, 1848, as captain and assistant quartermaster of Kentucky volunteers, was brevetted major Aug. 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct at Contreras and Churubusco, and participated in the battle of Chapultepec as a member of Franklin Pierce's staff. After another sojourn in Washington he went back to the *Yeoman*. In the winter of 1849–50 he joined Narciso Lopez's expedition to "liberate" Cuba and was made colonel of the Kentucky regiment, which numbered about 240 men. They landed at Cardenas early in the morning of May 19, 1850, but O'Hara's filibustering on Cuban soil lasted only a few hours. He was shot in the legs while leading an attack on the Spanish barracks,

was taken aboard ship, and conveyed safely to the United States. In 1852 he became one of the six editors, every man of them a colonel, of the Louisville *Times*, a militant anti-Know-Nothing sheet that was extinguished by its opponents' victory in the elections of 1855. He was a captain in the 2nd United States Cavalry from Mar. 3, 1855 to Dec. 1, 1856, and an editor of the Mobile *Register* from then until the oncoming of the Civil War. With his usual enthusiasm he raised the Mobile Light Dragoons and in January 1861, with the assistance of kindred spirits, seized Fort Barrancas in Pensacola harbor. Later he was colonel of the 12th Alabama Infantry and a staff officer to Albert Sidney Johnston and, after Johnston's death at Shiloh, to his old friend Breckinridge. After the war he became a cotton merchant at Columbus, Ga., but a fire destroyed his warehouse and other property. He never married. The story of his connection with William Walker, the Nicaraguan filibuster (Collins, *post*, I, 411), is apocryphal, and his movements during several periods of his career have not been traced.

O'Hara was of medium height, with black hair, hazel eyes, and regular features, was fastidious in his dress, and comported himself like the Irish gentleman that he was. Besides the social charm and derring-do that were natural to him, he possessed a magniloquence that his friends amiably mistook for evidence of literary genius. He is remembered for a single poem, "The Bivouac of the Dead," a sonorous dirge commemorating the re-interment at Frankfort, July 20, 1847, of the Kentuckians slain in the battle of Buena Vista. The poem exists in two versions, of which the earlier and longer is also the better. Certain lines from it have been carved in marble or cast in bronze on soldiers' monuments or over the gates of military cemeteries throughout the country. His scanty literary remains also include a short dirge for Daniel Boone and a eulogy of William Taylor Barry. The latter was long regarded as a masterpiece of Southern oratory. O'Hara spent his last days on a friend's plantation near Guerryton, Ala., where he died of malaria. His body was re-interred in 1874 in the state military cemetery at Frankfort, Ky.

[*Commonwealth* (Frankfort), June 14, 1867; *Louisville Daily Democrat*, June 14, 1867; Lewis and R. H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.*, vol. I (1874); G. W. Ranck, *O'Hara and His Elegies* (Baltimore, 1875; reviewed in the N. Y. *Nation*, June 29, 1876, by C. E. Norton) and *The Bivouac of the Dead and Its Author* (Cincinnati, 1898); T. H. S. Hamersly, *Complete Regular Army Reg. . . . 1779–1879* (1880); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*, 1 ser. II, X, XX (pt. 1), XXXVIII (pt. 4), LII (pt. 3), 2 ser. III, 4 ser. I; D. E. O'Sullivan, "Theodore O'Hara," *Southern Bivouac*, Jan. 1887; S. B. Dixon, "The Bivouac of the Dead," *Ibid.*, Mar. 1887; R. B. Wilson, "Theodore O'Hara," *Century Mag.*, May 1890; A. C. Quisenberry, *Lopez's Expeditions to Cuba, 1850–51* (Filson Club Pubs., no. 21, 1906); J. S. Johnston, "Sketch of Theodore O'Hara," *Reg. Ky. State Hist. Soc.*, Sept. 1913; J. W. Townsend, *Ky. in Am. Letters* (1913).] G. H. G.

O'HIGGINS, HARVEY JERROLD (Nov. 14, 1876–Feb. 28, 1929), novelist, journalist, who has been called the prose laureate of the commonplace man, was born in London, Ontario, Canada, the son of Joseph P. and Isabella Stephenson O'Higgins. He received his education in the common schools and was a member of the class of 1897 at the University of Toronto. He left the University without a degree to begin his long career as a journalist. In July 1901 he married Anna G. Williams of Toronto. He soon began writing for American periodicals, chiefly *Scribner's*, the *Century*, *McClure's*, *Collier's*, and *Everybody's*, short detective stories and, later, articles on political and social questions. The sentiment and the love of common types apparent in the short stories appeared in his first full-length works such as *The Smoke-Eaters* (1905), *Don-a-Dreams* (1906), *A Grand Army Man* (1908), and *Old Clinkers* (1909). His success as a practical journalist led naturally to a series of volumes on matters of contemporary political or sociological interest. These he did in collaboration with others possessed of special knowledge in the fields presented. The first, *The Beast* (1910), written with Judge Ben B. Lindsey, deals with the social environment of city-bred youth and presents the reform measures advocated by Judge Lindsey. This volume was followed by *Under the Prophet in Utah* (1911), with Frank J. Cannon, dealing with the organization and functioning of the Mormon Church; *On the Hiring Line* (1909), with Harriet Ford; *The Doughboy's Religion* (1920), with Ben B. Lindsey; and *The American Mind in Action* (1924), with Dr. Edward H. Reade, an attempt to psychoanalyze several eminent Americans (Morris Fishbein, "The Typical American Mind," *Bookman*, June 1924; "The American Mind," *Current Opinion*, May 1924).

The last-mentioned volume indicates a turning point in O'Higgins' career. Serious illness caused him to seek various methods of cure, but the one that seemed to him most effective was that offered by psychoanalysis. He presented a general though spirited view of the subject in *The Secret Springs* (1920) but first applied it in a truly literary manner in *Some Distinguished Americans* (1922) in which he depicted with characteristic clarity and economy a series of

characters motivated by the unconscious. His literary use of the psychoanalytic method was more effective than his application of it to actual persons in *The American Mind in Action*. And although he was deeply interested in his newly found literary mode he was not carried to any extreme by his enthusiasm. A good journalist, and the author of many volumes designed to popularize special information, he never became a press agent. His true literary instinct saved him and enabled him finally to produce his best work in *Julie Crane* (1924) and *Clara Barron* (1926), mature and sympathetic studies of modern American women. In these novels he was master not alone of his sure technique but also of his special concepts of character (*Saturday Review of Literature*, Nov. 15, 1924). In collaboration with Harriet Ford, he wrote several successful plays: *The Argyle Case* (1912), a detective drama in which W. J. Burns assisted, *The Dummy* (copyrighted in 1913 under the title *Kidnapped*), a detective comedy, *Polygamy* (1914), a tense drama of marriage under Mormonism, and *Main Street* (1921), which, though not important as drama, enjoyed much popular favor. The last was an endeavor to dramatize the novel by Sinclair Lewis (*Bookman*, December 1921, p. 373).

Throughout his life O'Higgins gave himself constantly and generously to every cause that affected the well-being and dignity of his craft. He devoted himself most assiduously to the work of the Authors' League with which he was actively associated from its establishment until his death. Officially through the League and unofficially through innumerable personal contacts with young authors he worked for the advancement and protection of American writers with a devotion and selflessness gratefully remembered by his co-workers (*Authors' League Bulletin*, March 1929). During the World War (1917–18) he entered the government service under George Creel as associate chairman of the Committee of Public Information. His special task was to answer the propaganda designed to arouse racial animosities within the United States. His patience and humanity admirably fitted him for the task while his inherent liberalism enabled him to see more clearly and to speak more temperately—though with no diminution of effect—on highly controverted matters (*Century*, December 1917, p. 302, January 1918, p. 405). O'Higgins was a man of great personal charm, and perhaps in this fact lies his truest claim to fame. For though he wrote many pleasing short stories and novels and was master of an authentic style he produced no one volume that will

place him among the outstanding writers of America.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; Heywood Broun, "Literary Portraits: Harvey O'Higgins," *Bookman*, Oct. 1921; Burns Mantle, *Am. Playwrights of Today* (1929); Burns Mantle and G. P. Sherwood, *The Best Plays of 1909–19* (1933); "The Man Who Writes Irish Stories," *Current Opinion*, Oct. 1914; *Harper's*, Apr. 1929; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 1, 1929.] D. A. R.

OHLMACHER, ALBERT PHILIP (Aug. 19, 1865–Nov. 9, 1916), physician, pathologist, was born in Sandusky, Ohio, the son of Christian John and Anna (Scherer) Ohlmacher. He attended high school at Sycamore, Ill., and took his medical training at Northwestern University, graduating M.D. in 1890. On June 14, 1890, he was married to Grace M. Peck of Sycamore, Ill. He then launched upon a varied medical career. From 1891 to 1894 he was professor of comparative anatomy and embryology at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, Chicago, serving also for two years, 1892–94, at the Chicago Polyclinic. In the latter year, 1894, he went to the medical department of Ohio Wesleyan University as professor of pathology and bacteriology until 1897. For the next four years he was director of the pathological laboratory of the Ohio Hospital for Epileptics at Gallipolis. He then went to the medical department of Northwestern University as professor of pathology, but after a year, 1901–02, returned to the Ohio Hospital for Epileptics as superintendent. In 1905 he became director of the biologic laboratory of Frederick Stearns & Company in Detroit. After serving in this capacity for two years he entered private practice in Detroit and continued in it until his death. In practice he specialized in bacterial and vaccine therapy, and in the treatment of epilepsy. He was the author of various articles in the *American Text-book of Pathology* (1902) and the *Reference Handbook of the Medical Sciences* (vol. VII, 1904). He wrote numerous papers based on original investigations, on blood-platelets, thymus gland, lymphatic constitution, cancer parasite, microtechnique, diphtheria antitoxin, typhoid meningitis, vaccine therapy, epilepsy, and other subjects. He was a fellow of the American Medical Association, and a member of the American Association of Pathologists and Bacteriologists, the National Association for the Study of Epilepsy, the Society of American Bacteriologists, and the National Association for the Study and Prevention of Tuberculosis.

Ohlmacher's chief contributions to science were his studies on the pathology of epilepsy. In cases of idiopathic (primary) epilepsy, he noted the almost constant association of the thy-

mic-lymphatic constitution, as shown by persistence of the thymus, general lymphadenoid hyperplasia, and arterial hypoplasia. From both morphological and physiological grounds he suggested that a relationship exists between genuine epilepsy and rachitis, eclampsia infantilis, thymic asthma and thymic sudden death, tetany, and possibly exophthalmic goiter. He called attention to the frequent occurrence of brain tumors and cerebral developmental disturbances in cases of secondary epilepsy, advancing the opinion that the presence of the neoplasm accounted for the epileptic seizures from which the patients suffered. While his general conclusions have not been confirmed in all respects by later work, Ohlmacher's studies are of importance in that they anticipated by some years the modern conceptions of the epileptic and hyperthyroid constitutions.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Bull. Ohio Hospital for Epileptics*, vol. I (1898) and vol. II (1904); *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Nov. 18, 1916; the *Detroit Free Press*, Nov. 11, 1916.] A. S. W.

O'KELLY, JAMES (*c.* 1735–Oct. 16, 1826), was a pioneer Methodist preacher, who seceded from the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1792 and founded a sect the members of which first called themselves Republican Methodists and later simply "Christians." Whether he was born in Ireland or in America is uncertain. As a young man he seems to have lived in Surry County, Va., and there, about 1760, to have married Elizabeth Meeks; later they moved to Chatham County, N. C. By the time of the Revolution, during which he suffered hardships because of his zealous devotion to the American cause, and saw some army service, he had become a Methodist and was preaching as opportunity offered with much effect.

The first official mention of him appears in the minutes of the Conference held at Leesburg, Va., in May 1778. That year, and the year following, he traveled on the New Hope Circuit, N. C., and in 1780 on the Tan River Circuit. From 1782 his appointments were in Virginia, where for a number of years he served as presiding elder of districts. During this period he became one of the most influential of the Methodist leaders. At the "Christmas Conference" in Baltimore, 1784, at which the Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States was organized, he was one of those elected and ordained elder. A contemporary is quoted as saying of him that he was " 'laborious in the ministry, a man of zeal and usefulness, an advocate for holiness, given to prayer and fasting, an able defender of the Methodist doctrine

O'Kelly

and faith, and hard against negro slavery, in private and from the press and pulpit' " (W. W. Bennett, *Memorials of Methodism in Virginia*, 1871, p. 315). He was independent, wilful, and fiery, however, resentful toward any display of authority on the part of individuals in the Church, and, increasingly antagonistic to Asbury, as time went on he became more and more obstreperous. He was a member of the first Council, a body made up of the bishops and presiding elders according to a plan originated by Asbury, who was then averse to General Conferences, for the purpose of directing the affairs of the Church. Immediately after its session, however, he returned to Virginia and began violently to oppose the institution, and to attack Asbury. In January 1790 he wrote the Bishop a letter charging him with exercise of power, and bidding him "stop for one year," or he would use his influence against him. He also wrote to Bishop Coke in England, complaining of Asbury's unwillingness to accede to the demand for a General Conference. Asbury at length yielded, and at the Conference held in Baltimore, Nov. 1, 1792, O'Kelly offered an amendment to the law investing bishops with the power of fixing the appointments of the preachers. After a long debate it was defeated. Subsequently, its author and some of its supporters left the Conference. At Asbury's suggestion the Conference voted him forty pounds per annum on condition that he forbear to excite division. He accepted it for only a short time. The charge that in addition to being opposed to the government of the Church, he had also become heretical in doctrine (see Jesse Lee, *A Short History of the Methodists in the United States of America*, 1810, p. 180) lacks substantiation. About 1798 he published, under the signature "Christicola," *The Author's Apology for Protesting Against the Methodist Episcopal Government.* Based upon material secured by Asbury, Rev. Nicholas Snethen issued in 1800, *A Reply to an Apology. . . .* These were followed by *A Vindication of an Apology* (1801) and, on Snethen's part, by *An Answer to James O'Kelly's Vindication of His Apology.* As a result of his secession, the Methodist Episcopal Church suffered a considerable loss in membership, and O'Kelly devoted the remainder of his life to the new organization which he and his followers established in 1793, then called the Republican Methodist Church, congregational in polity and with the Scriptures as its only creed and rule of faith and practice. A year later its adherents began to call themselves simply "Christians." He published pamphlets, tracts, and books, among them, *Essay on Negro Slavery*

(1784); *Divine Oracles Consulted* (1800); *The Christian Church* (1801); *Letters from Heaven Consulted* (1822); and *Hymns and Spiritual Songs Designed for the Use of Christians* (1816).

[In addition to works cited above see, W. E. MacClenny, *The Life of Rev. James O'Kelly* (1910), a partisan defense of O'Kelly; John McClintock and James Strong, *Cyc. of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature*, vol. VII (1877); *Jour. of Rev. Francis Asbury* (3 vols., 1852); L. M. Lee, *The Life and Times of the Rev. Jesse Lee* (1848); Robert Paine, *Life and Times of Wm. M'Kendree* (2 vols., 1869); E. J. Drinkhouse, *Hist. of Meth. Reform* (2 vols., 1899); M. T. Morrill, *A Hist. of the Christian Denomination in America* (1912). Authority for the date of death is *Raleigh Register and N. C. Gazette*, Nov. 3, 1826, which says that O'Kelly was then in his eighty-eighth year; MacClenny, *ante*, p. 229, quotes a statement that he died in his ninety-second year.]

H. E. S.

OKEY, JOHN WATERMAN (Jan. 3, 1827–July 25, 1885), judge and author, the son of Cornelius and Hannah (Weir) Okey, was born near Woodsfield, Monroe County, Ohio. His father was of English and his mother of Scotch-Irish descent. He received his education in the common-schools, under private instruction, and at the Monroe academy. He read law in an office at Woodsfield and was admitted to the bar in October 1849. In March of the same year he married May Jane Bloor of St. Clairsville, Ohio. In 1853 he was appointed and the next year elected probate judge of Monroe County. From 1856 until his resignation in 1865 he was common-pleas judge. Removing to Cincinnati, he practised law until 1875. With William Yates Gholson [*q.v.*] he published in 1867 the *Digest of the Ohio Reports*, which, though long since superseded, was considered an excellent work at the time. A committee of the bar in his day said of it that "it could not have been better done and the merits of no legal publication have ever been more universally acknowledged by the legal profession throughout the state" (43 *Ohio Reports*, vi). In 1869 he joined S. A. Miller in the publication of *The Municipal Code of Ohio*, and in 1875 he was appointed by Gov. William Allen a member of the commission to revise and consolidate the laws of Ohio. In 1877 he was elected a judge of the supreme court of Ohio on the Democratic ticket and in 1882 was reëlected to the same position. While serving this second term he died at Columbus, survived by four children.

Though in active practice in Cincinnati for ten years, it is not believed that he achieved great distinction at the bar. It is as a writer and more particularly as a judge that he is best known. His fame as a common-pleas judge extended far beyond his own district, and while on the supreme court bench he seems to have been looked upon by his colleagues and by the bar as a judge of ability. The reason for the unusual place assigned to him is not to be found in his reported opinions. These are with a few exceptions short and, although clear, logical, and well-written, are in no sense great opinions. His reputation as a judge is to be found in the fact that "he brought to this position a more ample and more accurate knowledge of our statutory law and the decisions of our court than was ever possessed by any one of whom we have any knowledge or tradition" (*Ibid.*). His paternal grandfather settled in Ohio before it became a state and upon the organization of Monroe County was elected an associate judge; his father was a member of the state legislature; he, himself, was steeped in the early history of Ohio. This, coupled with his long experience as a common-pleas judge and the knowledge he gained in editing the digest and in serving on the commission to revise the laws of Ohio, gave him a knowledge and understanding of the laws and decisions of Ohio possessed by no man of his generation. He was an omnivorous reader and was familiar with the decisions of other courts and the works of legal authors, but his peculiar distinction as a judge lies in his grasp of the polity of Ohio. "This polity Judge Okey knew, and he knew wherein it differed from all others; and he regarded it as better than any other" (*Ibid.*, viii).

[Information from his son, George B. Okey; "In Memoriam," 43 *Ohio Reports*, v–x; G. I. Reed, *Bench and Bar of Ohio* (1897), I, 31; *Cincinnati Commercial Gazette*, July 26, 1885.] A. H. T.

O'LAUGHLIN, MICHAEL (*c.* 1838–Sept. 23, 1867). [See Booth, John Wilkes.]

OLCOTT, CHANCELLOR JOHN [See Olcott, Chauncey, 1860–1932].

OLCOTT, CHAUNCEY (July 21, 1860–Mar. 18, 1932), actor, singer, whose given name was Chancellor John, was born of Irish ancestry in Buffalo, N. Y. His father was Mellon W. Olcott. He was educated in the public schools and made his first public appearance at the Academy of Music in Buffalo. In the late seventies he was appearing with traveling companies of entertainers and in 1880 he found employment with R. M. Hooley, well-known manager of minstrel shows. In 1882 he joined the Haverly Minstrels, and was also with the Thatcher, Primrose, and West Minstrels, and the Carncross Minstrels in Philadelphia. His voice had developed into a light tenor. While a "black face," he frequently sang "When the Robins Nest Again," to the

great delight of audiences. His musical ability led him into other fields. For a time he sang in *The Old Homestead,* and also with the Duff Opera company. In 1891 he went to England and in London secured an Irish romantic rôle in a light opera, *Miss Decima,* at the Criterion Theatre. His success in this rôle suggested to him his future career, and on his return to the United States he joined forces with August Pitou, who both managed his tours and sometimes wrote his plays, and succeeded to the mantle of W. J. Scanlan as a star in Irish musical dramas. One of his first acts on his return to the United States was to introduce the song "Mother Machree." In 1894 he appeared in *The Irish Artist,* for which he wrote both the words and music, and in 1896 in *Edmund Burke,* and so on in a long list of now quite forgotten sentimental and romantic Irish comedies, with plentiful songs. Some of the songs he made famous were "I Love the Name of Mary," and "My Wild Irish Rose"; the latter he himself wrote. His success continued for two decades. He did not as a rule play in the so-called "first-class" theatres, at top prices, but in the more popular houses, at popular prices, and his audiences were to a great extent composed of men and women—especially women—of his own race. But they were immensely loyal, and responded to him year after year.

In spite of the fact that he was both a tenor and an Irishman, Olcott had a good business sense, so that he not only made but saved a tidy fortune. He built a summer house at Saratoga Springs, which was a tasteful adaptation of colonial architecture to modern summer living, with a charming garden, and it was widely copied by other home builders. There was, of course, a limit to the romantic appeal of even an Irish tenor, and after the World War Olcott's popularity waned. He reappeared in 1924, in a revival of *The Rivals,* however, in which Mrs. Fiske played Mrs. Malaprop, and he played Sir Lucius, and in the course of the play he sang a song, always followed by tumultuous and laughing applause by the audiences. In 1925 he was taken sick and never recovered. He went to Monte Carlo to live, where he died in March 1932 of anemia. He was married at least three times. His last wife was Margaret O'Donovan of San Francisco, to whom he was married on Sept. 28, 1897, and who survived him. He was never a great actor, nor a great singer. But he was pleasantly competent in both capacities, and he had a charming Celtic personality, well suited to the light sentimental or romantic rôles which he assumed. His audiences were not exacting, but quickly responsive to sentiment, to a tear and a smile. These he gave them with sincerity. His plays had little relation to the realistic Irish drama developed by the Abbey Theatre in the twentieth century, and both plays and playing belong to an era of Irish-Americanism which is fast vanishing.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1930–31; *Who's Who on the Stage,* 1906; A. D. Storms, *The Players Blue Book* (1901); E. L. Rice, *Monarchs of Minstrelsy* (1911); August Pitou, *Masters of the Show* (1914); *Variety* (N. Y.), Mar. 22, 1932; *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 18, 1932; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Herald Tribune,* Mar. 19, 1932; Robinson Locke Collection, N. Y. Pub. Lib.]

W. P. E.

OLCOTT, EBEN ERSKINE (Mar. 11, 1854–June 5, 1929), mining engineer and transportation executive, was born in New York City, the second son among four sons and four daughters of John Nathaniel Olcott and Euphemia Helen (Knox). His father was descended from Thomas Olcott, who settled in Connecticut in the seventeenth century. After attending the College of the City of New York, Eben entered the School of Mines of Columbia University and graduated there in 1874. His first position was that of chemist for a Hunt & Douglas process plant in North Carolina of which he later became superintendent; next he was assistant superintendent of the Pennsylvania Lead Company works, at Mansfield Valley, Pa. From 1876 to 1879 he was superintendent of a gold mine in Venezuela; later he held a similar position in Colorado. After superintending the St. Helena Mines, Sonora, Mexico, 1881–85, he opened an office as consulting engineer in New York. Partly on the basis of his professional studies of the copper deposits at Cerro de Pasco, Peru, mining was initiated in that region, which has since developed into one of the most important copper districts of the world. Two exploring expeditions in Guiana and Colombia were less productive of permanent enterprise. In 1890–91 Olcott similarly explored the gold and copper district of eastern Peru, an undertaking of great hardship because of the high elevation, remoteness of the region, and difficulties of transportation.

By his marriage in 1884 to Kate Van Santvoord, he became the son-in-law of "Commodore" Alfred Van Santvoord, founder of the Hudson River Day Line of steamers running between New York and Albany. On the death of Van Santvoord's only son, he accepted in 1895 the management of this important line, to which he gave the greater part of his time for the rest of his life. He built the company's fleet up from two large steamships to seven and gave

every detail of their operation his close supervision. His agreeable personal qualities gained him the loyalty of his employees and the friendship of his business associates. Shortly after assuming the management of the Day Line, he became senior member of the firm of Olcott, Fearn & Peele, consulting engineers. In connection with this firm and its successors, Olcott, Corning & Peele and Olcott & Corning, he continued to practise in an advisory capacity for a number of years. He was also a trustee, officer, or director, of several banking corporations, and a director of the Catskill Evening Line. He belonged to numerous professional societies, and in 1901–02 was president of the American Institute of Mining Engineers. He was on the council of the American Geographical Society, the Board of Foreign Missions of the Reformed Church in America, and the Board of Managers of the American Bible Society; was a trustee of the American Seaman's Friend Society, and treasurer and trustee of the American Indian Institute. He took an important part in the organization of the Hudson-Fulton celebration of 1909. At the time of his death, in New York City, he was survived by his widow, three sons, and a daughter.

[*Mining and Metallurgy*, July 1929; *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, vol. XCIV (1930); Nathaniel Goodwin and H. S. Olcott, *The Descendants of Thomas Olcott* (1874); *Who's Who in Mining and Metallurgy* (1908); *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *N. Y. Times*, June 6, 1929.] T. T. R.

OLCOTT, HENRY STEEL (Aug. 2, 1832–Feb. 17, 1907), president-founder of the Theosophical Society, has been variously considered a fool, a knave, and a seer, and was perhaps a little of all three. He was born in Orange, N. J., the son of Henry Wyckoff and Emily (Steel) Olcott; was educated in the schools of New York City, and for one year attended the University of the City of New York; and from 1848 to 1853 was engaged in farming in northern Ohio. While there he became interested in spiritualism which, however, did not yet displace agriculture in his affections. In 1853 he returned to New York and, after taking a course in agricultural chemistry, started the Westchester Farm School at Mount Vernon, N. Y., where he attempted the culture of sorghum, on which he published a treatise, *Sorgho and Imphee* (1857). He visited Europe in 1858 to study its agricultural conditions and for the next two years was associate agricultural editor of the *New York Tribune*. On Apr. 26, 1860, he was married to Mary E. Morgan of New Rochelle, N. Y., from whom he was later divorced. At the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted and served as signal officer in Burnside's North Carolina campaign until he caught fever and was invalided home. Appointed by Secretary Stanton a special commissioner, with the title of colonel, to investigate military arsenals and navy yards, he is said to have uncovered a great deal of corruption. After the war he studied law, was admitted to the bar, and practised for some years in New York City.

In the summer of 1874 he published in the New York *Daily Graphic* a series of articles on the alleged spiritualistic phenomena of the Eddy brothers at Chittenden, Vt. These were later published, with supplementary material, in book form as *People from the Other World* (1875). They sufficiently convict their author of credulity or chicanery or both (see D. D. Home, *Lights and Shadows of Spiritualism*, 1877, pp. 301–28). At Chittenden Olcott made the acquaintance of Helena Petrovna Hahn Blavatsky [*q.v.*], and during the ensuing winter they became very intimate. Under her tutelage he plunged into a study of occultism. When the Theosophical Society was formed in September 1875, he became its first president. He edited Madame Blavatsky's imperfect English in her *Isis Unveiled* (1877), and for years was her devoted press agent. But with all his efforts, the Society did not prosper; so on Dec. 18, 1878, "the Theosophic Twins," as Madame Blavatsky called them, sailed for India to carry Hindu philosophy to the Hindus. They settled first at Bombay, later at Adyar, a suburb of Madras. While Madame Blavatsky spread the faith of occultism by means of her "physic phenomena," Olcott attempted mesmeric healing but had so many failures that his colleague begged him to desist. As a lecturer he was more successful, particularly among the Buddhists, whose religion he formally adopted. In 1881 on a trip to Ceylon he urged the Buddhists to establish their own schools, and for use as a textbook compiled *A Buddhist Catechism* (1881), which was translated into twenty-three languages.

When, in 1885, Madame Blavatsky was exposed by the London Society for Psychical Research, opinions differed as to whether Olcott had been her dupe or her accomplice. It now seems probable that he began as the first and ended as the second. He was a man of plausible manners and dignified appearance, with a long sage-like beard, but one eye did not focus properly; it is said that occasionally that eye "got loose and began to stray suspiciously and knavishly, and confidence [in him] vanished in a moment" (V. S. Solovyoff, *A Modern Priestess of Isis*, 1895, pp. 36–37, 84). But although he can

hardly be vindicated from some complicity in Madame Blavatsky's frauds, he was temperamentally an organizer rather than an occultist, and after her departure had left him in peace he settled down to the sober work of developing the Theosophical Society on a legitimate basis. For its enormous growth during the next twenty years the credit should be largely his. Tireless in lecturing and writing on its behalf, he paid several trips to Europe for the sake of harmonizing discordant factions. He edited until his death its official organ, the *Theosophist,* and wrote *Theosophy, Religion and Occult Languages* (1885), and *Old Diary Leaves,* an intimate history of the movement, in three volumes (1895, 1900, 1904). At the time of his death the Society had over six hundred branches in forty-two different countries.

Olcott also opened in India four free schools for pariahs which came to have 1,700 members. In 1889, on a lecture tour to Japan in response to an invitation from the eight Japanese Buddhist sects, he formulated fourteen points of agreement among all Buddhists, and persuaded the Japanese to enter into cordial relations with the Ceylonese Buddhists for the first time in history. He was on equally good terms with the Brahmins and received from one of their pundits, Taranath Tarka Vachaspati, the sacred thread of the Brahmin caste and adoption into his gotra—a unique favor to a foreigner. While traces of the charlatan remained with him till the end—seen in the occasional trick, learned from Madame Blavatsky, of invoking the authority of the Mahatmas for his own plans—nevertheless his genial kindliness of heart and genuine love of spiritual things made him, in the long run, a friend of humanity.

[Olcott's *Old Diary Leaves,* covering his life from the time of his first meeting with Mme. Blavatsky, must be read with due caution but is nevertheless invaluable; the form in which it first appeared, in the *Theosophist,* Mar. 1892–Dec. 1906, is more complete and candid than the revision for book publication. *The Theosophical Movement, 1875–1925* (1925) gives a very unfavorable view of Olcott from the pro-Blavatsky standpoint. Other references are: Nathaniel Goodwin and Henry Steel Olcott, *The Descendants of Thomas Olcott* (1874); the Hodgson report in the *Proc. of the Soc. for Psychical Research* (London), May and June 1885; Emma Coulomb, *Some Account of My Intercourse with Mme. Blavatsky from 1872 to 1884* (London, 1885); *Letters of H. P. Blavatsky to A. P. Sinnett* (1925); *The Mahatma Letters to A. P. Sinnett* (1923); obituary by Annie Besant, *Theosophist,* Mar. 1907; *Who's Who in America,* 1906–07; *N. Y. Daily Tribune,* Feb. 18, 1907.] E. S. B—s.

OLDEN, CHARLES SMITH (Feb. 19, 1799–Apr. 7, 1876), governor of New Jersey, was a quiet, unpretentious Quaker who, after a successful career in business, was drawn into politics by those who respected his sagacity and honesty. He was the son of Hart and Temperance (Smith) Olden and was born on the family farm at Stony Brook near Princeton, N. J., originally purchased in 1696 by his ancestor, William Olden, who had come from England some time earlier. This farm had been the scene of the major action of the Revolutionary battle of Princeton. Charles began his education in Princeton and was continuing it at the Lawrenceville school nearby when, at fifteen, he gave up school to assist his father in running the little general store in Princeton. He was soon given an opening in the larger business of Matthew Newkirk in Philadelphia. Then, from 1826 to 1832, he engaged in business at New Orleans so successfully that he was able to return to Princeton, purchase part of the family farm, erect a fine house, and settle down to the life of a gentleman farmer. That was his chief occupation for the remainder of his life, though he became a director of the Trenton Banking Company in 1842. Upon his return to Princeton from the South, he married Phoebe Ann Smith. They had no children of their own but adopted a daughter.

Modest and retiring, he did not seek political office, but in 1844 he was persuaded to run for a seat in the state Senate from Mercer County. He won the election and held the position for six years. In 1859 an opposition group, composed of Republicans, Whigs, and National Americans, unanimously nominated him for the governorship, to run against the Democratic candidate, E. R. V. Wright. He was no orator, but he was popular with the farmers of the state and won the election by a close margin. His inaugural address indicated a desire to accomplish several reforms, particularly in connection with the state prison and the treatment of the insane. These were overshadowed, however, by the Civil War. Working quietly but incessantly, he tried to inject life into the obsolete state military system and obtain funds for the almost empty state treasury. A strong Union man, he cooperated in every possible way with the federal government. Though he had no formal legal training, he was a judge of the New Jersey court of errors and appeals and a member of the court of pardons from 1868 until his resignation in 1873. He was also a riparian commissioner from 1869 to 1875 and served as head of the New Jersey electors in the presidential election of 1872. He was treasurer of the College of New Jersey (Princeton) from 1845 until 1869 and was a trustee of Princeton from 1863 to 1875. He rendered the college a great service when, in 1866, he wrote a letter outlining Princeton's needs to

his old school friend, John C. Green [*q.v.*]. He died at Princeton and was buried in the old Friend's burying ground not far from his home.

[Manuscript "Personal Reminiscences" of C. P. Smith in N. J. State Lib., Trenton; J. F. Hageman, *Hist. of Princeton and Its Institutions* (1879), I; *Geneal. and Personal Memorial of Mercer County, N. J.* (1907), ed. by F. B. Lee, vol. II; John MacLean, *Hist. of the Coll. of N. J.* (1877), vol. I; *Gen. Cat. of Princeton* (1908); C. M. Knapp, *N. J. Politics* (1924); *Beecher's Mag.*, Apr. 1871.] R. G. A.

OLDHAM, JOHN (*c.* 1600–July 1636), colonist and trader, was born in England, probably in Lancashire, about 1600 and emigrated to America in 1623, arriving at Plymouth in July by the ship *Anne*. He was one of the few passengers who did not intend to become members of the general body of the Plymouth colonists or join in their communal economic life but came on "their perticuler," as Bradford described it. Agreements were made with these new-comers, establishing their peculiar status and forbidding them to trade with the Indians until the period of "joint trading" as practised by the colonists should have ended. Oldham had considerable practical ability but was heady and self-willed and had an ungovernable temper. In the spring of 1624 the Rev. John Lyford arrived from England, and he and Oldham soon united with various malcontents in the colony to make trouble. They dispatched complaining letters to the party of the Adventurers at home opposed to the interests of the Pilgrims. Bradford secretly opened these letters and read them before the ship sailed which carried them. Oldham and Lyford next set up a church of their own. They were brought to trial and sentenced to banishment. Oldham left the colony but his wife and family were allowed to remain until he could remove them comfortably. He returned in March and exploded his wrath upon the colony's magistrates. They "committed him until he was tamer" and then beat him out of town with their muskets (Bradford, *post*, I, p. 411). He settled at Nantasket and soon after at Cape Ann where there was a small fishing settlement. He was an enterprising merchant and engaged in trade between Massachusetts and Virginia, and also carried on an extensive trade with the Indians. In time he made his peace with the authorities at Plymouth.

In 1628 he returned to England, taking charge of Thomas Morton [*q.v.*] of Merry Mount. While in England he suggested a commercial scheme to the Massachusetts Bay Company, then planning to settle the colony of that name. He not only failed in his negotiations but the Company forbade him to trade with the Indians.

The next year John Gorges, who claimed to be heir to the Gorges grant, conveyed to Oldham a large tract but the Massachusetts Bay Company refused to recognize his title. On Feb. 12, 1629/30 the Council for New England granted to Oldham and Richard Vines a tract of land lying on the south side of the Saco River in Maine. Oldham, however, took no interest in this patent. He returned to New England and settled at Watertown, where he became a substantial citizen. He took the oath as freeman, May 18, 1631, and was elected a representative to the General Court in 1632 and was reëlected in 1634. In 1633 he made an expedition to the Connecticut River and the following year was granted 500 acres by the Court lying near "Mt. ffeakes" on the Charles River (*Records of the Court of Assistants*, II, 1904, p. 43). The same year he was made one of the overseers of powder and shot for the colony, and in 1635 he was appointed by the Court one of the committee to consider the problem presented by Endecott's having cut the cross out of the flag (*Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay* I, 1853, pp. 125, 145). In the following July while on a trading expedition to Block Island Oldham was murdered in his shallop by Pequot Indians with the connivance of certain Narragansett sachems. The murder was one of the chief episodes leading to the Pequot War.

[Wm. Bradford, *Hist. of Plymouth Plantation* (2 vols., 1912), ed. by W. C. Ford; Alexander Young, *Chronicles of the First Planters of the Colony of Mass. Bay* (1846); *Winthrop's Journal* (2 vols., 1908), ed. by J. K. Hosmer; *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 1 ser., XIV (1876) and XX (1884); *The New English Canaan of Thos. Morton* (1883), ed. by C. F. Adams; S. F. Haven, *Hist. of Grants under the Great Council for New England* (1869), p. 31.] J. T. A.

OLDHAM, WILLIAMSON SIMPSON (June 19, 1813–May 8, 1868), jurist, Confederate senator from Texas, the son of Elias and Mary (Bratton) Oldham, was born in Franklin County, Tenn. Elias was a poor farmer and could not give his son an education, but the boy studied at night by the light of a brushwood fire, read law in Judge Nathan Green's office, and was admitted to the bar when twenty-three years old.

In 1836 he moved to Fayetteville, Ark., where he became a successful lawyer. His marriage, Dec. 12, 1837, to Mary Vance McKissick, the daughter of the wealthy and influential Col. James McKissick, and his own personality and untiring energy soon brought him recognition. In 1838 he was sent to the General Assembly from Washington County; he was elected speaker of the House of Representatives four years later; he was one of the presidential electors in

1844; and a few months thereafter was elected associate justice of the supreme court of Arkansas, a position he filled with distinction. Preferring a political to a judicial career, he ran for Congress in 1846, but was defeated. In 1848 he was a candidate for the United States Senate but was again defeated in a bitter campaign. He resigned his judgeship June 30, 1848.

In the spring of 1849 he moved to Austin, Tex. His wife died on the way, leaving him with five children. On Dec. 26, 1850, he married Mrs. Anne S. Kirk of Lockhart, Tex., and after her death, on Nov. 19, 1857, married Agnes Harper of Austin. He engaged in his profession and took part in all the social, economic, and political discussions of the time. From 1854 to 1857 he was one of the editors of the *Texas State Gazette* (after June 1855, the *State Gazette*), the Democratic organ in Texas. He played an important part in the controversy of 1855–57 between the Democratic party and the Know-Nothings. In 1859 he was defeated for nomination for Congress, because at this time he was not a radical "Southern rights man" and was opposed to the reopening of the slave trade. In that year he published, with the aid of George W. White, his law partner, *A Digest of the General Statute Laws of the State of Texas* (1859). As a member of the secession convention in 1861, he voted for secession, and was then sent as a delegate to the convention of the Southern states at Montgomery, Ala. He was a member of the Confederate Provisional Congress and was appointed by President Davis a commissioner to Arkansas in an unsuccessful attempt to get the state to secede at that time. Under the permanent government, he was sent to the Confederate States Senate from Texas, where he became the champion of state rights on every occasion. He opposed conscription bitterly, because he believed that the leaders wanted to destroy the state governments (Oldham, "The Last Days of the Confederate States," p. 187). He also opposed granting President Davis power to suspend the writ of *habeas corpus*. He was a member of a committee which reported on Jan. 25, 1865, that the government had enough men and military supplies to carry on the war indefinitely. After the downfall of the Confederacy, he went back to Texas, but soon fled to Mexico and later to Canada. He was allowed to return to Texas but he refused to apply for a pardon and remained an unreconstructed believer in state rights until his death from typhoid fever in Houston.

[Oldham's "History of a Journey from Richmond to the Rio Grande from March 30 until June 26, 1865, or, The Last Days of the Confederate States with a Review of the Causes That Led to Their Overthrow" (MS. at Univ. of Tex.), gives his opinions about measures in Congress. *Jour. of the Cong. of the Confederate States of America, 1861–1865* (7 vols., 1904–05) contains valuable information. The material for his life in Ark. is based on public documents and the files of the *Arkansas Banner* (Little Rock), 1843–48, and *Arkansas State Gazette* (Little Rock), 1837–42. The file of the *Texas State Gazette* (Austin), 1849–65, is valuable for the later period. See also *Ark. Banner*, Dec. 25, 1844; J. D. Lynch, *The Bench and Bar of Tex.* (1885); E. Fontaine, "Hon. Williamson S. Oldham," in *De Bow's Mo. Rev.*, Oct. 1869; *Houston Daily Telegraph*, May 9, 1868; A. D. King, "The Political Career of Williamson Simpson Oldham" (thesis, Univ. of Tex., 1929); Oldham family records.] A. D. K.

OLDSCHOOL, OLIVER [See SARGENT, NATHAN, 1794–1875].

OLIN, STEPHEN (Mar. 2, 1797–Aug. 16, 1851), Methodist Episcopal clergyman, educator, son of Henry and Lois (Richardson) Olin, was born in Leicester, Vt. His father was a lawyer and a prominent political figure in that state. As a student in Middlebury College, Olin won high scholastic honors and was valedictorian of the class of 1820. He secured these honors, however, at the expense of his health. Close application to his studies and lack of physical exercise so undermined his constitution that the rest of his life was a continual struggle with disease. He had intended to enter the legal profession but in 1820, hoping to benefit by the climate, he went to South Carolina, where he became an instructor in Tabernacle Academy. While there he joined the Methodist Episcopal Church and in 1824 was admitted on trial to the South Carolina Conference. From January to July 1824 he served as junior preacher in Charleston, S. C., but the rigorous life of the early Methodist itinerancy proved too strenuous for him, and he was soon forced to retire from the active ministry. In 1826, while recuperating at Madison Springs, Ga., he was elected professor of ethics and belles-lettres in Franklin College, Athens, Ga., which position he held from 1827 to 1833. On Nov. 20, 1828, he was ordained elder by Bishop William McKendree [*q.v.*].

In March 1834 he became president of Randolph-Macon College, then located in Mecklenburg County, Va., but by 1837 his health was again depleted, and he spent the next three years recuperating in Europe and the Holy Land. Returning to America in 1840, his health partially restored, he accepted in 1842 the presidency of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. This office he held until his death in 1851. As president of two pioneer Methodist colleges, he did much to arouse his denomination to its educational task. By his official visits to the annual Conferences and by his articles in the *Christian*

Advocate and Journal he did much to enlist the support of both clergy and laity to the early educational program of Methodism. He was one of the few Methodists prior to 1850 who championed the cause of theological education.

As a delegate to the General Conference of 1844 from the New York Conference, which opposed slavery, Olin found himself in a peculiar position, for during his stay in the South he had owned slaves. He endeavored to prevent the schism in the Church and was a member of the committee appointed to find a basis of agreement for the pro-slavery and anti-slavery groups. Buckley states that "the only speech delivered in the General Conference of 1844 which exhibited a full comprehension and just estimate of all sides of the subject was that of Stephen Olin who was as familiar with the North as with the South" (J. M. Buckley, *post*, II, 119). Although Olin voted for the Finley resolution which requested Bishop Andrew to desist from episcopal duties until he had freed himself from all connection with slavery, yet, immediately after the adjournment of the Conference, he became the leader in the movement for securing fraternal relations between the two branches of Episcopal Methodism. He was vitally interested, also, in fostering a closer friendship among the various Protestant denominations, and was instrumental in organizing the Evangelical Alliance. In 1846 he represented the New York and New England conferences of the Methodist Episcopal Church at the meeting of the Alliance in London.

In addition to his many contributions to Methodist periodicals, he published in 1843, *Travels in Egypt, Arabia Petraea, and the Holy Land* (2 vols.). After his death two volumes of his manuscript sermons and addresses were published under the title, *The Works of Stephen Olin* (1852). In 1853 *The Life and Letters of Stephen Olin* appeared. Other posthumous publications of his include: *Youthful Piety* (1853); *Greece and the Golden Horn* (1854); *College Life; Its Theory and Practice* (1867). Olin was married twice: first, Apr. 10, 1827, to Mary Ann Eliza Bostick of Milledgeville, Ga., who died in Naples, Italy, May 7, 1839; second, at Rhinebeck, N. Y., Oct. 18, 1843, to Julia M. Lynch. A son born to them in 1847 died in youth.

[Matthew Simpson, *Cyc. of Methodism* (1881); J. M. Buckley, *A Hist. of Methodism in the U. S.* (2 vols., 1897); J. M'Clintock, "Stephen Olin," in *Meth. Quart. Rev.*, Jan. 1854; R. Irby, *Hist. of Randolph-Macon Coll., Va.* (copr. 1898); *Meth. Quart. Rev.*, Oct. 1851; *Hartford Daily Courant*, Aug. 18, 1851.]

P. N. G.

OLIVER, ANDREW (Mar. 28, 1706–Mar. 3, 1774), lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, was born in Boston of a wealthy and distinguished colonial family. He was the son of Daniel Oliver, a member of the Provincial Council, and Elizabeth Belcher, and the brother of Chief-Justice Peter Oliver [*q.v.*]. His great-grandfather, Thomas Oliver, emigrated from England in 1632. In Andrew's boyhood the political and social connections of the family were of the best, and the boy passed through Harvard, graduating at eighteen in 1724. Four years later, on June 20, 1728, he was married to Mary, daughter of the Hon. Thomas Fitch, by whom he had three children before her death on Nov. 26, 1732. Andrew Oliver [*q.v.*] was a son by this marriage. On Dec. 19, 1734, he was married to Mary, daughter of William Sanford, by whom he had fourteen children. His second wife was the sister of the wife of Gov. Thomas Hutchinson, and thus during most of his active life Oliver was in close family relations, as well as political sympathy, with Hutchinson and his party.

For some years Oliver represented Boston in the General Court and in 1748 served as a commissioner, with Hutchinson, at the meeting in Albany for the purpose of negotiating with the Six Nations. Meanwhile he had been elected to the Provincial Council in 1746 and continued to be elected annually to and including 1765. In December 1756 Josiah Willard, who had served as secretary of the province for more than a generation, died, and on the 13th Acting-Governor Phips appointed Oliver to the vacant post until the King's pleasure might be known. Oliver continued in the office until Mar. 11, 1771, being twice commissioned by the King, Mar. 2, 1758, and Apr. 10, 1761 (Colonial Society of Massachusetts, *Publications*, vol. II, 1913, vol. XVII, 1915).

After the passage of the Stamp Act, Oliver accepted an appointment as stamp-officer. This proved to be an extremely unpopular and even dangerous step. In 1765 he was reëlected to the Council, for the last time, by a majority of only three or four votes (Hutchinson, *post*, III, p. 117). On Aug. 14 he was hanged in effigy on the Liberty Tree. In the evening the mob razed a building said to have been intended for the stamp office and then attacked Oliver's house. The marauders broke windows, smashed down the doors, destroyed much of the fine furnishing, and greatly terrified the family. On the next day Oliver resigned his post but the mob was not satisfied and attacked the houses of Oliver's brother, the chief-justice, and of Hutchinson. After some months an unfounded rumor was

spread abroad that Oliver intended after all to act as stamp officer. He received two threatening anonymous letters, and having already suffered enough from the mob, he agreed to appear again on Dec. 17 at the Liberty Tree and make oath before a justice of the peace that he would never act in that capacity. On Oct. 19, 1770, he was commissioned by the King as lieutenant-governor and sworn into office Mar. 14, 1771, serving until his death. He had always retained his interest in Harvard and in 1772 he fostered medical instruction there by gifts of anatomical preparations imported from London (Colonial Society of Massachusetts, *Publications,* vol. XIX, 1918, p. 284).

In 1773 he was again a storm center of popular rage. In the late sixties he, as well as Bernard, Hutchinson, and others, had written to England certain letters describing the unsettled conditions in the colonies and advising remedies. Benjamin Franklin, while in England, obtained these private letters and forwarded copies to the popular party in Boston. They were made public in 1773 and, although the incident reflects little credit upon Franklin and his Boston correspondents, the popular rage broke over Oliver. In addition, Arthur Lee, in England, concealing his identity under a pseudonym, accused Oliver of perjury in the public press. "Scarce any man," as Hutchinson wrote, "ever had a more scrupulous and sacred regard to truth" (Hutchinson, *post,* p. 456), and after an examination of evidence Oliver was completely exonerated, but his unpopularity and the threatenings of the mob had accented certain physical disorders and his health gave way. He sank slowly and died on Mar. 3, 1774. The petty vindictiveness of the popular party followed him to his grave. As lieutenant-governor, according to the custom of the day, he was accorded a public funeral but as a result of a childish dispute over a trifling matter of precedence between members of the two houses of the legislature, the lower house refused to attend. In addition, John Hancock, as commander of the "Cadets," insisted that they should form part of the procession as an honor due the office of lieutenant-governor if not the man. Samuel Adams made furious opposition. The feeling was so violent that Chief-Justice Oliver was afraid to attend his brother's burial. Indecent attacks were made upon the cortège, and in the presence of the family the Sons of Liberty cheered as the coffin was lowered into the grave.

[Thos. Hutchinson, *The Hist. of the Province of Mass. Bay,* vol. III (1828); J. H. Stark, *The Loyalists of Mass.* (1910); *Copy of Letters Sent to Great Britain, by His Excellency Thos. Hutchinson, the Hon. Andrew Oliver, and Several Other Persons* (1773); J. K. Hosmer, *The Life of Thos. Hutchinson* (1896); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Apr. 1865; *Colonial Soc. Mass. Pubs.,* vol. XXVI (1927).] J. T. A.

Oliver

OLIVER, ANDREW (Nov. 13, 1731–Dec. 6, 1799), jurist, scientist, was born in Boston. He was the son of Andrew Oliver [*q.v.*], secretary and lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, and his wife Mary, daughter of the Hon. Thomas Fitch. He graduated from Harvard in 1749. On May 28, 1752, he married Mary, daughter of Chief Justice Benjamin Lynde [*q.v.*]. A few months prior to this he had moved to Salem, where his wife's family lived. Salem became his permanent home and with its interests he was closely identified. On Nov. 19, 1761, he was appointed judge of the inferior court of common pleas for Essex County, a position which he continued to occupy until the outbreak of the Revolution. In 1762, when one of the Salem representatives in the General Court was elected to the governor's council, Oliver was chosen at a special election, held June 9, to take his place. He continued to represent Salem in the provincial legislature until 1767, refusing to accept any compensation for his services. At a town meeting, Oct. 21, 1765, it was voted to request him to use his efforts to effect a repeal of the Stamp Act and at the same time to prevent "lawless violence and outrage." On Aug. 9, 1774, he was appointed one of the mandamus councilors but refused to serve. During the troublous years that followed, when all the other members of his family because of Loyalist sympathies went into exile, he stayed quietly at Salem.

Law and politics were by no means the whole of life to him. While proficient in mathematics and fond of music and history, his deepest interest, especially in later years, lay in scientific studies. He was a founder of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and a member of the American Philosophical Society, to which he was elected on Jan. 15, 1773. Several papers composed by him were read at meetings of the society, and two were published in the second volume of the *Transactions* (1786). One of these, entitled "A Theory of Lightening and Thunder Storms," attempted to show that the electric charges in thunderclouds "reside, not in the cloud or vapors of which it consists, but in the air which sustains them." The other, entitled "Theory of Water Spouts," sought to explain these phenomena by analogy to the suction of liquid through a quill. His most significant contribution to colonial science was *An Essay on Comets, in Two Parts,* published in 1772 and reprinted in 1811, wherein he strove to account for the tails of comets "upon philosophical Prin-

ciples" and to show that "in Consequence of these curious Appendages, Comets may be inhabited Worlds." This venture into the field of astronomy was dedicated to John Winthrop [*q.v.*], Hollis professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Harvard, to whose inspiring instruction Oliver confessed that his interest in science was due. The work was translated into French and drew favorable comment from scholars at home and abroad. From science he is said to have turned occasionally to poetry. He appears to have been the author of an "Elegy on the late Professor Winthrop," first published in the *Independent Chronicle* of June 9, 1779.

A man of considerable means, he was not harried by the necessity of earning a livelihood. To those less fortunate than himself, he gave generously. Studious tastes and defective health induced him to lead a life of some seclusion. Afflicted for thirty years with a distressing chronic disease, he bore it with exemplary cheerfulness. He died at Salem, with an enviable reputation for learning and benevolence.

[John Winthrop and Andrew Oliver, *Two Lectures on Comets . . .* (1811), contains an excellent appreciation, and the elegy on Winthrop. See also *Jour. and Letters of the Late Samuel Curwen* (1842), ed. by G. A. Ward; J. B. Felt, *Annals of Salem* (2nd ed., 2 vols., 1845–49); *The Diaries of Benj. Lynde and of Benj. Lynde, Jr.* (1880); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. III (1888) and vol. LXI (1928); W. T. Davis, *Bench and Bar of the Commonwealth of Mass.* (1895), II, 394.]

E. E. C.

OLIVER, CHARLES AUGUSTUS (Dec. 14, 1853–Apr. 8, 1911), ophthalmologist, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, the son of George Powell Oliver, M.D., and Maria Louisa Oliver. His great-grandfather, Nicholas B. Oliver, was born in Kent, England, in 1740, educated at Oxford University, and emigrated to Philadelphia before the Revolutionary War in which he served as infantryman. His father served in the Union Army during the Civil War and settled in Philadelphia during the boyhood of Charles Augustus. He attained prominence as a surgeon in that city and became the founder and first president of the Medico-Chirurgical College of Philadelphia, later merged with the graduate school of medicine of the University of Pennsylvania. The son received his preliminary education in the public schools of Philadelphia and at the Central High School and was graduated M.D. from the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania in 1876. His thesis was entitled "Opium *vs.* Belladonna." He was married on June 6, 1888, to Mary Schermerhorn Henry of New York. A son and a daughter were born of this union.

Upon graduating from the University of Pennsylvania, Oliver served as interne in the Philadelphia Hospital (Blockley) from January 1877 to May 1878 and in 1894 he became ophthalmic surgeon to the institution. In 1878 he became affiliated with the Wills Hospital in Philadelphia through his appointment as clinical clerk in the service of William Fisher Norris [*q.v.*]. His association with Norris was instrumental in shaping his subsequent career which was devoted entirely to ophthalmology. His association with Wills Hospital was continuous from the time of his first appointment until his death. In 1890 he was elected attending surgeon to this institution and served as secretary of the staff during the whole period of his association with the hospital as surgeon. The eye clinics at St. Mary's, St. Agnes', and the Presbyterian hospitals owe their establishment to his enterprise, and upon his retirement from active service in them he was made consulting ophthalmic surgeon to each. He was made associate clinical professor of ophthalmology in the Woman's Medical College of Pennsylvania in 1897 and became full clinical professor of the same subject in 1906. He was also consulting ophthalmologist to the Friends' Asylum for the Insane in Philadelphia, and to the State Hospital for the Chronic Insane of Pennsylvania at Norristown, Pa.

In the literature of ophthalmology Oliver found the greatest field for his endeavors. *A Textbook of Ophthalmology,* written in 1893 in collaboration with his teacher and colleague Norris was one of his outstanding accomplishments. This was translated into Chinese and was adopted as a textbook in the medical schools of China. With the same associate he published *System of Diseases of the Eye* (1897–1900) which appeared in four volumes and represented the work of more than sixty contributors of eminence. He also published *Ocular Therapeutics for Physicians and Students* (1899), translated from the German of F. W. M. Ohlemann; *Injuries to the Eye in their Medico-Legal Aspect* (1900), a revised edition of A. J. Osterheimer's translation of the work of S. Baudry; *An Essay on the Nature and the Consequences of Anomalies of Refractions* (1899), a revised edition of the work of F. C. Donders, and contributed to Wood's *System of Ophthalmic Operations* (2 vols., 1911). Among his numerous monographs, that entitled *A Description of Some of the Important Methods Employed in the Recognition of Peripheral and Central Nerve Diseases* (1897) was translated into French and German. In addition to over one hundred and twenty-five monographs of record he found time to edit the ophthalmic section of Charles Sajous's *Annual of the Medi-*

cal Sciences over a period of several years in collaboration with Dr. Thompson Wescott, later with Dr. William Zentmayer, and still later with Dr. William Campbell Posey, and also to function in an editorial capacity in connection with the *Annals of Ophthalmology, Annales de Oftalmologia, Ophthalmoscope,* and *Annales d'Oculistique.* He was a member of many scientific societies in America and abroad.

[*Trans. Coll. of Physicians of Phila.*, 3 ser. XXXV (1913); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Who's Who in Pa.*, 1908; *Gen. Alumni Cat. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1917); *Annals of Ophthalmol.*, July 1911; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); J. W. Croskey, *Hist. of Blockley* (1929); *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Apr. 10, 1911; personal communications with Oliver's contemporaries.] L. W. F.

OLIVER, FITCH EDWARD (Nov. 25, 1819–Dec. 8, 1892), physician and historian, was born in Cambridge, Mass., the son of Daniel and Mary Robinson (Pulling) Oliver. He was descended from Thomas Oliver, a physician, who emigrated to America in 1632, and was the great-grandson of Andrew Oliver, 1731–1799 [*q.v.*]. Daniel Oliver (1787–1842), his father, was professor of intellectual philosophy at Dartmouth College (1823–37) and also taught chemistry and materia medica in the medical school (1820–38). Oliver entered Dartmouth College when fifteen years of age, taught in rural schools during the long winter vacations, and was graduated in 1839. After a few months devoted to the study of law, he entered the Harvard Medical School and received the degree of M.D. in 1843, part of his medical education having been obtained at Dartmouth College, the Medical College of Ohio in Cincinnati, where his father had gone as a teacher, and by private instruction under Oliver Wendell Holmes [*q.v.*], a distant relative. After receiving his degree, he spent a year in Europe, particularly in Paris and Italy, returning to Boston to practise in 1844.

At first Oliver took an interest in general medicine. He became one of the district physicians of the Boston Dispensary, served on the staff of the Boston City Hospital, and was an instructor in materia medica in the Harvard Medical School (1860–70). From 1860 to 1864 he edited, with Calvin Ellis [*q.v.*], the *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal.* He was a member of the important local medical societies and his chief medical publications were a translation, with W. W. Morland, of A. F. Chomel's *Elements of General Pathology* (1848), an important paper, "The Use and Abuse of Opium" (*Third Annual Report of the State Board of Health of Massachusetts,* 1872), a much discussed subject at the time, and "The Health of Boston, 1875" (*Seventh Annual Report . . . Board of Health of Massachusetts,* 1876). His real interest, however, was in the history of Massachusetts, in which his direct as well as collateral family lines had borne an important and conspicuous part. His first historical publication was *The Diaries of Benjamin Lynde and of Benjamin Lynde, Jr.* (1880). A few years later he gave assistance to P. O. Hutchinson, who edited *The Diary and Letters of His Excellency Thomas Hutchinson, Esq.* (London, 2 vols., 1883–86; Boston, 2 vols., 1884–86) and, in 1878, he issued a completed edition of William Hubbard's *History of New England,* which had been published, in part, by the Massachusetts Historical Society in 1815. There followed, in 1890, *The Diary of William Pynchon of Salem,* whose daughter had married his grandfather. Besides these volumes Oliver wrote a number of papers which appeared in the *Proceedings* of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He joined the Society in 1876 and was appointed cabinet keeper in 1880, a position which he held, with distinction, until his death. He left to the Society a large and valuable collection of *Oliverana,* comprising all the publications he could find of those bearing his name.

For many years he was an active member of the Church of the Advent, Boston, and he wrote, for use in his church and elsewhere, *A Selection of Ancient Psalm Melodies, Adapted to the Canticles of the Church in the United States of America* (1852, 2nd ed., enlarged, 1858), in which is found an excellent arrangement of *"De Profundis." A Sketch of the History of the Parish of the Advent in the City of Boston, 1844–94* (1894) was largely written by him. As a physician, Oliver is said to have "brought to his duties fresh and abundant learning, conscientiousness, unsparing devotion, and the most scrupulous care" (Slafter, *post,* p. 478). As a historian he had "the instincts and habits of a scholar. . . . When he entered upon a theme of study he was not content till he had patiently surveyed the whole field, and gathered in all that was necessary to know" (*Ibid.*, 485). His writings and annotations are models of their kind, clear, concise, and in pure, faultless English. In social life he is said to have been somewhat reticent but modest, courteous, and dignified. On July 17, 1866, he married Susan Lawrence Mason, a descendant of a distinguished family of Boston. His wife and six children survived him.

[E. F. Slafter's memoir in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. VIII (1894), is the best account of Oliver. See also: *Boston Evening Transcript,* Dec. 9, 1892; and the *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, Dec. 15, 22, 1892.] H. R. V.

Oliver

OLIVER, GEORGE TENER (Jan. 26, 1848–Jan. 22, 1919), steel manufacturer, lawyer, newspaper publisher, and United States senator from Pennsylvania, was born at Donaghmore, near Dungannon, County Tyrone, Ireland, while his parents, Henry William and Margaret (Brown) Oliver, were on a visit to the latter's old home. The father had been a merchant in Ireland and active in the Liberal party of that day; his emigration to America in 1842 followed the defeat of his party. George was educated in the public schools of Allegheny (now the Northside of Pittsburgh) and in Pleasant Hill Academy at West Middletown, Pa. He then attended Bethany College in West Virginia, graduating in 1868. For a short time thereafter he taught school in Peebles Township (now Hazelwood) but soon began the study of law in Pittsburgh in the office of Hill Burgwin. In 1871 he was admitted to the bar and on Dec. 19 of that year married Mary D. Kountze of Omaha, Nebr. During the ten years which followed Oliver built up a successful law practice in association with William B. Rogers. Against the advice of the latter he gave up this practice to become vice-president and later president of the Oliver Wire Company, organized by his brother Henry William Oliver [*q.v.*]. During his presidency he exhibited a regard for his employees rarely shown in those days. It was his practice to keep the plants running even though operating without profit in order to give employment to his men. In 1899 the company sold its plants. Between 1889 and 1897 Oliver was also president of the Hainsworth Steel Company. In the last-named year when this company merged with Oliver & Snyder Steel Company, he remained as president of the new company and served until 1901.

At the age of fifty-two Oliver disposed of his manufacturing interests and embarked upon a career, covering the remaining nineteen years of his life, as a newspaper publisher. In June 1900 he purchased the oldest newspaper west of the Allegheny Mountains, the *Pittsburgh Gazette*, a morning paper. Next he became owner of the *Pittsburgh Chronicle-Telegraph*, an evening paper. In 1906 he bought the *Pittsburg Times* which he consolidated with the *Gazette* and called the *Gazette Times*. He directed the papers and their policies throughout his ownership, often writing the editorials. He had long been interested in politics. In 1884 he was a presidential elector on the Blaine-Logan ticket; in 1890, the supervisor of the federal census for his district. In 1904 and again in 1916 he served as a delegate to the Republican National conventions at which Roosevelt and Hughes were nominated. But his larger field of activity was in the United States Senate. Although he refused to fill the unexpired term of Senator Quay in 1904, he consented to step into the place made vacant in 1909 when President Taft appointed Philander C. Knox to the cabinet. After completing two years he was elected for the full term, 1911–17, thus serving during the trying days of American neutrality. His chief activity in the Senate was the support of the protective tariff in general and the iron and steel tariff in particular. He declined a second term and retired to private life on the death of his wife who was his constant companion. He survived her by less than two years. He was buried in Allegheny Cemetery in Pittsburgh.

[The sketch of Oliver in J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. XI (1919), is reprinted in G. T. Fleming, ed., *Hist. of Pittsburgh and Environs* (1922), vol. III. See also the *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); and the *Pittsburgh Dispatch* and *Pittsburgh Post*, Jan. 23, 1919.]

A. I.

OLIVER, HENRY KEMBLE (Nov. 24, 1800–Aug. 12, 1885), teacher, treasurer and commissioner of labor of Massachusetts, superintendent of cotton-mills in Lawrence, musician, was born in Beverly and died in Salem, Mass. He traced his ancestry from Thomas Oliver, who emigrated to America in 1632 and settled in Boston not far from the present Old South Church on Washington Street. The Rev. Daniel Oliver, a graduate of Dartmouth in 1785, was his father, and Elizabeth Kemble of Boston his mother. His name, Thomas Henry Oliver, he changed to Henry Kemble Oliver in 1820 to preserve that of his mother. From the Boston Latin School he went to Phillips Academy at Andover, divided his college course between Harvard and Dartmouth, and graduated in 1818 from the latter. Harvard granted him the degrees of A.B. and A.M. in 1862, placing his name with the class of 1818. He began his teaching career in Salem as usher of the Latin Grammar School and in 1827 he became the first master of its English High School. Owing to his interest in mathematics, he had his senior classes compute the times of all the total eclipses visible in the United States for the last seventy years of the century. In 1830 he erected on Federal Street in Salem a building for an academy and for five years conducted a school for boys, converting it then into a school for girls. He devoted twenty-five years to school work in that city. In 1830 he was one of the committee of seven who prepared the plan which resulted in the founding of the American Institute of Instruction, a forerunner of the National Educa-

tion Association, and in 1858–59 he was agent for the state board of education.

From 1844 to 1848 Oliver was adjutant-general of the Massachusetts militia. His preparation for this office began in 1821 when he entered the Salem Light Infantry. Twelve years later he was lieutenant-colonel of the 6th Massachusetts Infantry and was soon promoted to its colonelcy. In the Ancient and Honorable Artillery of Boston he gained a captaincy by 1846. It was during the period of his state service that the Mexican War occurred, and it fell to him to raise the only volunteer regiment to go to Mexico from New England, known as the 1st Massachusetts Volunteers. During this time he was also a member of the board of visitors for West Point. For ten years, 1848–58, he served as superintendent of the Atlantic Cotton Mills in Lawrence. To provide for the better education of his employees he proposed a library for their use. He offered one hundred volumes and a loan of fifty dollars for new purchases and in a short time the number of volumes reached 3,500. He added bathing rooms to the mills and provided free lectures and concerts for its employees. From 1860 to 1865, during the years of the Civil War, he was treasurer of the state. During that time he handled almost eighty thousand dollars of the state's money at an annual salary of $2,300.

While still a young boy Oliver sang in a Boston church, and at the age of twenty-three he began his long career as an organist, serving two years at St. Peter's Church in Salem, two in the Barton Square Church, twenty in the North Church, and twelve in the Unitarian Church in Lawrence. He organized the Salem Mozart Association, serving as its president, organist, and director; was a member of the Boston Handel and Haydn Society, the Salem Oratorio Society, and the Salem Glee Club; and an honorary member of the Portland Haydn Society. He wrote church music and in 1848, with two others, joined in publishing *The National Lyre,* which contained many of his own compositions. In 1860 he published *Oliver's Collection of Hymn and Psalm Tunes,* followed in 1875 by *Original Hymn Tunes,* dedicated to the Salem Oratorio Society. "Federal Street" is his best-known tune. The climax of his musical career may be said to have occurred at the Peace Jubilee in Boston on June 25, 1872, when he was called from his place among the basses of the Salem Choral Society group to conduct the singing of his "Federal Street," set to his own words, "Hail gentle peace," and rendered by 20,000 voices. During the centennial year he was given a place at the exposition in Philadelphia as a judge of instruments of precision and of music.

The crowning work of Oliver's life was the organization and development of the Massachusetts Bureau of Statistics of Labor, a pioneer institution of its kind. It was authorized by a resolve of the legislature, approved June 23, 1869, and on the July 31 following he was appointed its first chief. His first report, covering the seven months to March 1870, dealt largely with wages and hours of labor. Subsequent reports showed cost of living, habits and education of families, and factory conditions. Oliver made four reports as chief of this bureau and in 1873 retired to spend the later years of his life at his home in Salem. He was mayor of that city from 1877 to 1880. He had married, on Aug. 30, 1825, Sarah Cook, daughter of Samuel Cook and Sarah Chever of Salem. They had seven children. He was a member of the North Street Unitarian Church in Salem and from its altar his public funeral was conducted. His writings consist chiefly of addresses on educational subjects and reports of the Bureau of Labor. He also published in 1830 a work on the construction and use of mathematical instruments, and in 1868 *Genealogy of Descendants of Thomas Oliver of Bristol, England, and of Boston, New England.*

[The best sketch of Oliver is that by J. H. Jones in *Seventeenth Ann. Report of the* (Mass.) *Bureau of Statistics of Labor* (1886). See also: the *Musical Herald,* Jan., Mar., Apr. 1882; F. J. Metcalf, *Am. Writers and Compilers of Sacred Music* (1925); C. S. Osgood and H. M. Batchelder, *Hist. Sketch of Salem* (1879); *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.,* vol. XLIX (1913); *Fifty-Seventh Ann. Meeting of the Am. Inst. of Instruction,* 1886; *Salem Gazette,* Aug. 14, 1885.] F. J. M.

OLIVER, HENRY WILLIAM (Feb. 25, 1840–Feb. 8, 1904), ironmaster, was born at Dungannon, County Tyrone, Ireland, one of six children of Henry William Oliver, a Scotch-Irish harness-maker, and Margaret (Brown) Oliver. George T. Oliver [*q.v.*] was his younger brother. The family emigrated to Pittsburgh in 1842, where Henry attended the public schools and Newell's Academy until the age of thirteen. He then became a messenger boy for the National Telegraph Company, along with Andrew Carnegie. For eight years he was employed by Clark and Thaw, forwarding agents, and by Graff, Bennett & Company, iron manufacturers. At Lincoln's first call for troops in 1861 he enlisted in the 12th Pennsylvania Volunteers and served a three months' term. When Lee invaded Pennsylvania in 1863 he again enlisted and fought in the battle of Gettysburg.

In 1863 he organized the firm of Lewis, Oliver & Phillips for the manufacture of nuts and bolts on a small scale and in 1866 his brothers David

and James were admitted to the firm. Upon the retirement of W. J. Lewis in 1880 the company adopted the name Oliver Brothers & Phillips. Still later (1888) it was incorporated as the Oliver Iron & Steel Company, with Henry W. Oliver as chairman of the board. In the twenty years following the Civil War the business grew to gigantic proportions. Oliver was identified with a great variety of ferrous industries, such as sheet and tin plate, steel wire, and pressed steel cars. He was also a builder of railroads, which he saw were essential to the industrial future of Pittsburgh. He was one of the original owners of the Pittsburgh & Lake Erie Railroad, was president of the Pittsburgh & Western Railway Company from 1890 to 1893, and promoted the Akron & Chicago Junction Railroad (now part of the Baltimore & Ohio) to secure better freight facilities with the West. As a railroad man he introduced important improvements, including the use of steel cars for safety.

With his practical knowledge of iron and steel, Oliver foresaw the necessity of large mineral reserves, and his chief distinction is as a pioneer in opening the vast iron-ore region of Minnesota. Hearing in 1892 of the discovery by the Merritt brothers of the great Mesabi range north of Duluth, he hastened to inspect the diggings. When Leonidas Merritt showed Oliver specimens of high-grade ore lying practically on the surface, which could be loaded with one scoop of a steam-shovel at a labor cost of five cents a ton, Oliver needed little argument. He leased an enormous annual tonnage, organized the Oliver Iron Mining Company, built a railroad to Lake Superior, and began the great ore traffic from the lake ports to the Pittsburgh mills. Andrew Carnegie was sceptical of the value of "ore prospecting" and considered Oliver a hare-brained enthusiast, but Oliver's logic impressed Henry Clay Frick, then the active head of the Carnegie Steel Company, who, against Carnegie's orders, joined forces with Oliver to exploit the Minnesota treasures. Eight years later the Oliver iron-ore interests, originally organized on a cash investment of some $600,000, were bought by the newly formed United States Steel Corporation for $17,000,000. The "Oliver luck" became a Pittsburgh legend, but it was based more upon sound knowledge and driving energy than upon chance. Oliver invested heavily in Pittsburgh real estate and business structures, and also became an organizer and the largest stockholder of the Pittsburgh Coal Company. In the far West he held extensive interests in Arizona copper mines.

Oliver was a lifelong adherent of the Republican party. He served three years (1879–82) as president of the Common Council of Pittsburgh, was a delegate to four Republican National conventions (1872, 1876, 1888, 1892) and a presidential elector-at-large in 1880. In 1881 he was nominated by caucus for United States senator but was defeated on account of factional divisions in the party. He was highly influential in both state and federal policies, however, and in 1882 was appointed by President Arthur as representative of the iron and steel interests on a commission to draw up the metal schedules of the new tariff. He died in 1904. He had married in 1862 Edith A. Cassidy of Pittsburgh by whom he had one daughter. His estate built as a memorial the Henry W. Oliver Building, long the largest office building in Pittsburgh. Oliver himself was instrumental in the widening of a downtown street later renamed Oliver Avenue.

Oliver

[J. N. Boucher, *A Century and a Half of Pittsburg and Her People* (1908), vol. III; J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. IX (1918); G. I. Reed, ed., *Century Cyc. of Hist. and Biog. of Pa.* (1904), vol. II; G. T. Fleming, ed., *Hist. of Pittsburgh and Environs* (1922), vol. IV; Paul DeKruif, *Seven Iron Men* (1929); *Pittsburgh Dispatch*, *Pittsburgh Gazette*, Feb. 8, 1904, personal information from members of the family.]

K. M. G.

OLIVER, JAMES (Aug. 28, 1823–Mar. 2, 1908), inventor, manufacturer, was born in the parish of Liddesdale, Roxburghshire, Scotland, the son of George and Elizabeth (Irving) Oliver. His father was a shepherd, and in the hope of bettering his circumstances he emigrated with his family to America in 1835, where several of his older children had preceded him, and settled on a farm near Geneva, N. Y. James had had a little schooling in Scotland, but when he arrived in the United States, although only twelve years old, he immediately went to work as a farm hand in the neighborhood of his home. In the spring of 1836 the Olivers moved to a leased farm near Alloway, N. Y., and in the following fall they migrated to Indiana and obtained a farm site at Mishawaka, four miles from South Bend. During the succeeding nineteen years Oliver engaged in a variety of occupations. In 1838 he was apprenticed to a builder of the Fox threshing machine; later, he obtained employment in a foundry owned by the South Bend Iron Works in Mishawaka; when this company discontinued business in 1840, he became a cooper's apprentice and after completing his apprenticeship followed his trade successfully in Mishawaka for a number of years. He was more interested in foundry work, however, and late in 1845 obtained employment with the St. Joseph Iron Company in the same town.

Acc. No. 184,065

In 1855, while on a visit to South Bend, he met a young foundryman and purchased a one-fourth interest in his business there. He entered upon his new work most energetically and in 1857 purchased the entire establishment. Two years later the plant was destroyed by fire but he immediately rebuilt it, and to help defray the expense he took in two business friends as part owners. He continued in general foundry work with fair success until 1864, when his plant was again burned. Following its immediate reconstruction, he determined to go into the manufacture of plows in addition to regular foundry stock. Soon he was experimenting with chilled iron in an effort to make hard-faced plows, as many foundrymen and others had done before him. After four years of labor, he had proceeded with the problem sufficiently to obtain patents for a "mould board for plows" (No. 76,652) and "casting mould boards" (No. 76,939) on Apr. 14 and 21, 1868, respectively. Some time later he made his first important discovery in the matter of successful chilling; namely, that by circulating hot water through the "chills" he could prevent the castings from cooling too rapidly or unevenly. For this discovery he received patent No. 86,579 on Feb. 2, 1869, the patent being entitled "chill for casting mould boards." Confident that he was proceeding in the proper direction, he next worked on the improvement of moulding patterns. This undertaking resulted in a second important discovery —a method of ventilating the chills by curves along the face of the mould which allowed the escape of the gases that form within the flasks when molten iron is poured in. The use of this method permitted the liquid metal to come into direct contact with the face of the chill, removing all of the soft spots in the mould boards and leaving the surface smooth and perfect. For this improvement he received a number of patents between 1871 and 1876. His last great discovery was a process of annealing the plow castings so that the soft portions became pliable enough to work out their strains from shrinkage in cooling without affecting the hardness of the chilled faces. Even before the incorporation into his plow of this last discovery, Oliver's product was much in demand, for it was low in price, adaptable to any kind of soil, cut a very smooth furrow, and procured a lighter draft than any other metal plow then in use. In 1878, in order to increase his output, he bought thirty-two acres of land in the southwestern part of South Bend, and the following year began the erection of a new plant. Building followed building as the business increased, and at his death, the Oliver

Oliver

Chilled Plow Works covered sixty-two acres, employed 2,000 men, and produced annually upwards of 200,000 plows. Oliver, as president, conducted the affairs of this great business up to the time of his death, continuing also his inventive work.

He was very much interested in the civic betterment of South Bend. He built the Oliver Hotel, and erected a large opera house and the city hall. On May 30, 1840, he married Susan Doty of Mishawaka and at the time of his death in South Bend was survived by two children.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; Waldemar Kaempffert, *A Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924), vol. II; R. L. Ardrey, *Am. Agricultural Implements* (copr. 1894); Anderson and Cooley, *South Bend and the Men Who have Made It* (1901); *Farm Implement News*, Mar. 5, 1908; *Indianapolis News*, Mar. 2, 1908; Patent Office records.] C. W. M—n.

OLIVER, PAUL AMBROSE (July 18, 1830–May 17, 1912), soldier, inventor, manufacturer, the youngest of five children of Capt. Paul Ambrose Oliver and Mary Van Dusen, was born in the English Channel on board the *Louisiana*, a vessel built by his grandfather, Matthew Van Dusen, shipbuilder of Kensington, Pa., and owned and commanded by his father. Shortly after the birth of his youngest child, Captain Oliver settled with his family at Altona, Germany, and remained there ten years. During this time Paul Ambrose imbibed a knowledge of German military science at the local gymnasium which he later made of practical use. In 1849 he came to the United States, settled in New Orleans, and engaged in the cotton export trade. Later he settled at Fort Hamilton, N. Y., where he was also engaged in the shipping business. In 1856 he organized and was made president of the Fort Hamilton Relief Society, an association instrumental in preventing an epidemic of yellow fever in New York City.

He joined the army and on Oct. 29, 1861, was commissioned second lieutenant in the famous 12th New York Volunteers. His promotion was rapid, owing largely to the fact that he perfected in his own company a German bayonet drill which was widely approved by his superiors. He rose to the captaincy, was successively offered commissions as major, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel of the 5th New York Volunteers, all of which he declined, and served as aide on the staffs of Generals Butterfield, Meade, Hooker, and Warren. He was a principal witness at an investigation of the conduct of Gen. Carl Schurz, during which Schurz criticized Oliver for presuming to give as his own orders which really came from Hooker (*War of the Rebellion: Official Records, Army*, 1 ser. XXXI, pt. 1, p. 187).

By order of General Grant, Oliver was assigned to duty with General Patrick, Headquarters Armies of the United States, January 1865. As provost-marshal, he assisted in paroling the Confederate army at Appomattox, a service which General Sharpe called "invaluable and highly meritorious" (*Ibid.*, XLVI, pt. 3, p. 853). Oliver left the service on May 6, 1865; two days later he was brevetted brigadier-general of volunteers. He had taken part in twenty-five battles and was favorably mentioned in the official reports of Hooker, Butterfield, and others for the coolness, bravery, and intelligence he displayed in action (*Official Records*, 1 ser. XI, XII, XXXI and XLVI). At Resaca, Ga., on May 15, 1864, Oliver "assisted in preventing a disaster caused by Union troops firing into each other" (General Butterfield to the Secretary of War, May 26, 1892). The brigade being fired into was led by Col. Benjamin Harrison. Appropriately enough, when Harrison became president, Oliver was decorated with the Congressional Medal of Honor.

After the war Oliver engaged in the anthracite coal trade but soon gave that up to experiment in the manufacture of explosives. Between 1868 and 1889 he secured several patents for formulas for explosives and for machines for their manufacture. His machines were designed to mix the ingredients in small quantities with an excess of moisture so as to prevent violent explosions; his powders were especially adapted for blasting in coal mining. He is generally credited with the invention of dynamite and black powder; but his discoveries in this field were contemporaneous with, and probably independent of, the similar inventions of Nobel in France, Schultze in Germany, and Von Lenck in Austria (J. B. Bernadou, *Smokeless Powder*, 1901; J. P. Cundill, *A Dictionary of Explosives*).

Oliver settled in Wilkes-Barré, Pa., in 1868, and set up a small powder mill. As he was in close touch with the coal operators in the anthracite region, his business "grew to a large importance" (*Coal Trade Journal*, May 22, 1912, p. 478). His mill experienced several disastrous fires and explosions, but by 1873 he was regularly employing 100 men and producing 900 kegs of powder per day. His mills were purchased in 1903 by E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, and are still in operation; the principles of manufacture evolved by him have continued in use with some modifications. The enormous expansion of the anthracite coal trade following the Civil War and the increasing industrial uses of explosives meant a corresponding expansion in his business, and Oliver was enabled to retire after amassing a considerable fortune. Among other things, he was interested in the forestry movement in his state, being stimulated, no doubt, by the denuding of thousands of acres of virgin timber in the adjacent mountains.

Oliver was a communicant of the Episcopal Church. He never married. Genial in manner, of distinguished presence, he made his home at Fern Lodge, overlooking the historic Wyoming Valley, typical of the resplendent hospitality and luxury of the new industrial order which he had done much to advance.

[Sources include: H. E. Hayden, "Oliver Family," *N. Y. Genealog. and Biog. Record*, July, Oct. 1888, Jan. 1889; H. C. Bradsby, *Hist. of Luzerne County, Pa.* (1893); *Circular No. 8*, ser. 1913, Pa. Commandery, Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion; *Ann. Reports of the Commissioner of Patents*, 1878–1889; A. P. Van Gelder and Hugo Schlatter, *Hist. of the Explosives Industry in America* (1927); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*, 1 ser. XI, XII, XXV, XXVII, XXXI, XXXII, XXXVIII, XLII, XLVI; *Wilkes-Barré Record*, May 18, 1912; and records of E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Wilkes-Barré office. A volume of newspaper clippings in the possession of Miss Adelaide Bonnell, Elizabeth, N. J., includes a copy of the letter from Gen. Butterfield of May 26, 1892, referred to above.]

J. P. B.

OLIVER, PETER (Mar. 26, 1713–October 1791), Loyalist, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Daniel and Elizabeth (Belcher) Oliver and the brother of Lieutenant-Governor Andrew Oliver [*q.v.*]. The family was descended from Thomas Oliver who came to Massachusetts from England in 1632 and at the time of the Revolution its members occupied distinguished social and political positions. Peter graduated in 1730 from Harvard where he had ranked high in scholarship but had been disciplined for stealing a turkey and a goose. On July 5, 1733, he was married to Mary, daughter of William and Hannah (Appleton) Clarke, by whom he had six children. They lived in Boston until 1774 when Oliver bought land and settled at Middleboro', Plymouth County, about thirty miles from the capital. He established iron works there and built one of the finest residences in New England, called "Oliver Hall," celebrated for its size and elegance and the beauty of its grounds. He lived there until his exile; later, about 1782, the place was burned by the Americans.

On Dec. 12, 1747, Oliver was appointed judge of the inferior court of common pleas of Plymouth County and served for nine years. He was then made judge of the superior court, Sept. 14, 1756, and in 1771 became chief justice. The most famous case in which he sat, as an associate justice, was the trial of the British soldiers in 1770. "A Loyalist by birth, education and instinct, a man of courage, firmness, learning and character," he became a marked man as the troubles with England came to a crisis. The judges of

the superior court received niggardly pay from the General Court, £120 a year for the associate justices and £150 for the chief justice. The British government determined to augment the salaries by annual grants, which immediately inflamed patriotic sentiment in the colony. In view of the threatening attitude of the people, four of the judges, after having decided to accept the grants, recanted, but Chief Justice Oliver held firm. He claimed that he had expended about £2,000 as justice since his appointment and offered to settle the question by resigning if the General Court would reimburse him to the extent of one-half his expenditures. The only answer was a categorical inquiry as to whether or not he would accept the Crown grant and he replied affirmatively. The legislature then proceeded to draw up articles of impeachment but Governor Hutchinson, whose daughter had married Oliver's son, refused to countenance the impeachment proceedings. Matters came to a head at Worcester, Apr. 19, 1774, when the grand jury in writing refused to serve under him. The grand jurors of Suffolk County similarly refused to serve under him in August.

Oliver had already been a member of the Council and in 1774 was appointed one of the "Mandamus Councillors." On Oct. 14, 1775, he was one of the signers of the Address to General Gage, and, with his niece, was among those who left for Halifax with the British forces when they evacuated Boston in March 1776. He continued to England where he was hospitably received by the King and was given the degree of D.C.L. by Oxford University. He resided at Birmingham until his death, the government having granted him a pension. At his death he left a manuscript entitled "The Origin and Progress of the American War to 1776" the interest of which is mainly personal as the bias is so strong as to invalidate the value of the account as history. He was greatly interested in history and wrote both in verse and prose, among the items printed being *A Speech . . . After the Death of Isaac Lothrop* (Boston, 1750); *A Poem Sacred to the Memory of the Honorable Josiah Willard* (1757), and *The Scripture Lexicon* (1787), which was used as a text at Oxford and several times reprinted.

[Sources include: Thos. Weston, "Peter Oliver," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July–Oct. 1886, and genealogy, *Ibid.*, Apr. 1865; J. H. Stark, *The Loyalists of Mass.* (1910); *Colonial Soc. of Mass. Pubs.*, vol. V (1902) and vol. XXV (1924); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XIV (1876); P. O. Hutchinson, *The Diary and Letters of His Excellency Thos. Hutchinson* (2 vols., 1883–86); and Thos. Hutchinson, *The Hist. of the Province of Mass. Bay*, vol. III (1828). *The Alumni Oxonienses* and the *Gentleman's Mag.*, Oct. 1791, give Oct. 12, 1791, for date of death; the *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1865, gives Oct. 13. Oliver's "Origin and Progress of the American War to 1776" is with the Egerton MSS. in the British Museum; there is a transcript of the document in the Lib. of Cong., Manuscript Division.] J. T. A.

OLMSTEAD, GIDEON [See OLMSTED, GIDEON, 1749–1845].

OLMSTED, DENISON (June 18, 1791–May 13, 1859), scientist and teacher, was the youngest and fourth child of Nathaniel Olmsted, a farmer living near East Hartford, Conn. His mother (his father's second wife) was Eunice Kingsbury of Hebron, Conn. He was the grandson of Nathaniel and Sarah (Pitkin) Olmsted of Hartford, and a direct descendant of James Olmsted who emigrated from Fairsted, Essex, England, to Connecticut in 1632. After his father's death, his mother married again and moved to Farmington, Conn., where Denison received his early education in the district school and privately from Gov. John Treadwell, who instructed him in arithmetic (not taught then in public schools) and in whose home Olmsted did "such offices as a boy could do for his board" (Woolsey, *post*, p. 577). Later, he was a clerk in the store of Governor Treadwell's son. At sixteen he decided to study further in order to enter Yale College, and after teaching a district school for one season he entered the school of James Morris at Litchfield South Farms. Rev. Noah Porter [*q.v.*], the parish minister at Farmington, was also his instructor. In 1809 he entered Yale and there received the degree of A.B. in 1813. Having nearly exhausted his patrimony, he taught at the Union School, New London (1813–15), before continuing further study. In 1815 he was appointed a tutor at Yale, where he also studied theology under President Timothy Dwight [*q.v.*]. His M.A. oration in 1816 was on "The State of Education in Connecticut," and contained ideas relating to a seminary for school-masters (normal school), plans for the establishment of which he hoped to carry out at the end of his tutorship.

Somewhat reluctantly, therefore, in 1817, he accepted a call to the professorship of chemistry at the University of North Carolina. He was granted a year for preparatory study under Benjamin Silliman [*q.v.*] at Yale, and in 1818 married Eliza Allyn of New London. At the University of North Carolina he successfully advocated in 1821 a state geological survey, legally established in 1822. He was appointed state geologist and mineralogist and made the first survey of and reports on the state's natural resources. In 1825 he was called to Yale to fill the chair of mathematics and natural philosophy.

Eleven years later he prevailed on the college authorities to establish a separate chair of mathematics, and after that time he filled the chair of natural philosophy and astronomy until his death. His wife died in 1829 and in 1831 he married Julia Mason of Rensselaer County, N. Y. He had five sons and two daughters. A teacher by nature, he assisted the friends of common-schools by writing, lecturing, and appearing before legislative bodies. While he was unable to carry out the normal-school idea himself, he nevertheless wrote much on the necessity of such a project.

As an instructor of scientific subjects, he introduced experiments into his lectures and inaugurated laboratory work for the students. He advocated an astronomical observatory for the use of students, and another for scientific research. A lamentable lack of textbooks led him to prepare such aids, not only for the colleges, but for academies and the general reader. His *Introduction to Natural Philosophy* (2 vols., 1831–32) was used for many years after his death in the edition revised by E. S. Snell of Amherst. It was followed by *Compendium of Natural Philosophy* (1833), which went through more than a hundred editions; *Introduction to Astronomy* (1839); *A Compendium of Astronomy* (1839), for schools; *Letters on Astronomy, Addressed to a Lady* (1840), prepared for school libraries by request of the Massachusetts Board of Education; and *Rudiments of Natural Philosophy and Astronomy* (1844), which also appeared in raised letters for the use of the blind. All his books show excellent arrangement of material, and thoroughness and clearness of presentation.

His contributions in physics and astronomy were mainly on meteors, hailstorms, aurora, and zodiacal light. The papers dealing with the famous meteoric showers of Nov. 13, 1833 (*American Journal of Science and Arts*, January–April 1834, January 1836), brought him scientific fame. In these he collected and arranged in logical and orderly manner all the available data on the subject. The cause of such showers, he concluded, is due to particles of cosmic origin (suggesting comets) passing through the earth's atmosphere and proceeding from a definite radiant (γ-Leonis), and, recalling similar observations of other times, he assumed a probable periodicity of occurrence of the phenomenon. Although he refers to the November showers of 1799, it was left for later generations to connect meteoric showers with a definite comet. His study of hailstorms led him to show the electrical theory then held (especially in France) to be incorrect and to give substantially the explanation, accepted today, based on dynamics and thermodynamics of the atmosphere (*Ibid.*, April 1830). His work on geological subjects was mainly concerned with the mineral resources and their utilization. He invented a process for "gas light from cotton seed," patented July 21, 1827, a useful stove, patented Nov. 5, 1834, and a lubricant of lard and rosin for machinery. He wrote many articles on religious subjects and also a number of biographical sketches.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. VI (1912) contains full bibliog. See also T. D. Woolsey, in the *New Englander*, Aug. 1859; C. S. Lyman, in *Am. Jour. of Science and Arts*, July 1859; H. K. Olmsted and G. K. Ward, *Geneal. of the Olmsted Family in America* (1912); K. P. Battle, *Hist. of the Univ. of N. C.* (2 vols., 1907–12); Alexander von Humboldt, *Cosmos* (London, 1850, trans. by Edward Sabin); *Columbian Weekly Reg.* (New Haven, Conn.), May 21, 1859.]

A. F. K.

OLMSTED, FREDERICK LAW (Apr. 26, 1822–Aug. 28, 1903), landscape architect, was born in Hartford, Conn. His paternal forbears had been numbered among the intelligent townsmen and farmers of the region since its settlement in 1636, when James Olmsted, an emigrant of 1632 from Essex County, England, came thither from Boston. His father, John Olmsted, a prosperous merchant, took a lively interest in nature, people, and places, which was inherited by both Frederick Law and his younger brother, John Hull. His mother, Charlotte Law (Hull) Olmsted, died when he was scarcely four years old, to be succeeded in 1827 by a congenial step-mother, Mary Ann Bull, who shared her husband's strong love of nature and had perhaps a more cultivated taste.

Frederick was sent to be educated, first to dame schools and then to a succession of rural parsons, but his lessons were broken by solitary country rambles from the home of one friend or relation to another. Moreover, holidays took the form of long tours mostly by carriage, in which his father and step-mother, accompanied by the two boys, took great pleasure. When Frederick was sixteen he had thus made four journeys, each over a thousand miles, in New England, New York State, and Canada, during which he observed populous towns as well as various types of rural scenery, and was encouraged to discuss what he saw. When he was almost ready to enter Yale in 1837, sumach poisoning weakened his eyes and, giving up college plans, he spent two and a half years studying engineering with Frederick A. Barton, first at Andover, Mass., and later at Collinsville, Conn. In August 1840, he went to work for Benkard & Hutton, French dry-goods importers in New York, remaining until March 1842, but finding

mercantile employment uncongenial after the outdoor life he loved. For the next year, he attended lectures in a desultory way at Yale, leaving in April 1843, before the mast in the bark *Ronaldson* for China in search of adventure; during a year-long voyage his eyes were open for strange people and scenes.

On his return, he determined to take up farming as a career, and spent some months at his Uncle Brooks's farm in Cheshire, Conn., followed by a summer (1845) on Joseph Welton's farm at Waterbury, Conn., and a winter attending scientific lectures at New Haven, more enjoyable socially because of his brother John's presence at Yale. Frederick's Yale affiliations later caused him to be made an honorary member of his brother's class, that of 1847, and the circle of his brother's friends, there and in New York, numbering among them Charles Loring Brace [*q.v.*], brought him in touch with the great sociological problems of the period. From April to October 1846, he pursued his agricultural apprenticeship on the prize farm of George Geddes, "Fairmount," near Owego, N. Y., and in 1847 he felt himself ready to begin independent farming, first on a small place at Guilford, Conn., and from January 1848, on the more adequate Ackerly farm, "South Side," Staten Island, N. Y., purchased for him by his father, and operated with enthusiasm for several years until literary activities came to overshadow agricultural interests. He himself in later life considered this practical experience in agriculture, combined with his attempts at home landscaping and his modest nursery business, and also his active participation in local county affairs, an important part of his preparation for his career.

In 1850 he began the series of travels which were to draw forth his literary ability, and sailed with his brother and Charles Brace for Europe—following four weeks on the Continent by a walking tour of rural Britain, recorded in *Walks and Talks of an American Farmer in England* (1852). While farming and writing, he had made the acquaintance of Andrew Jackson Downing [*q.v.*], who, in consequence of Olmsted's earlier contributions to the *Horticulturist,* sent him letters of introduction. He visited Downing at Newburgh, and they must have compared impressions of foreign parks and gardens. Late in 1852, impelled by a stirring discussion with William Lloyd Garrison, who was visiting the farm with Charles Brace, Olmsted started on his first Southern journey, commissioned by Henry J. Raymond, editor of the *New York Times,* to write his unbiased impressions of slavery and of actual economic and social conditions in the South. The success of his letters, later published as *A Journey in the Seaboard Slave States* (1856), suggested a second tour, also largely on horseback, which took Frederick with his brother John into Texas, followed by a solitary return journey from New Orleans to Richmond, described respectively in *A Journey Through Texas* (1857) and *A Journey in the Back Country* (1860). Acclaimed as the most accurate picture of conditions in the South prior to the Civil War, the three books were condensed and published in America as *The Cotton Kingdom* (2 vols., 1861), and in England as *Journeys and Explorations in the Cotton Kingdom* (2 vols., 1861). His service in his Southern books, however, was not limited merely to a fair record of what he saw. "Olmsted did what he could to save the pot from boiling over. . . . For passion he sought to substitute thoughtfulness, for raving rationality, and for invective a calm examination of facts and their historical antecedents that should induce tolerance" (Mitchell, *post,* p. xi).

Meanwhile, brief sojourns on the somewhat neglected Staten Island farm, shortly to be sold, editorial work for *Putnam's Monthly Magazine,* and, in company with George William Curtis [*q.v.*], a financially disastrous dabbling in the publishing business of Dix & Edwards, led up to further travels in Europe (1856), partly on publishing matters. A pleasure visit to Italy with his sister yielded much in landscape inspiration. In 1857, somewhat at loose ends, he was still trying to wind up the publishing business, when chance gave him the opportunity for which his variety of experience had given him extraordinary preparation. The City of New York, inspired by the appeals of William Cullen Bryant and Andrew Jackson Downing, had embarked on the novel undertaking of providing a great public pleasure ground comparable with those of Europe.

Indorsed by such notables as Asa Gray, Washington Irving, and Peter Cooper, on Sept. 11, 1857, he was appointed superintendent of the new Central Park in New York, then under construction from the design of Captain Egbert L. Viele; and there Olmsted, at thirty-five, learned to engage in the bitterly fought but generally victorious battles between art and politics which were to tax his energies throughout the rest of his professional career. Associating himself with Calvert Vaux [*q.v.*], a young English architect whom he had previously met as Downing's pupil, he entered the competition for a new design for the park, which the two young men won under the name of "Greens-

ward." On May 17, 1858, Olmsted was appointed architect in chief of the Central Park, and, with Vaux, strove in the face of almost insuperable political difficulties, to make the first American park not only a work of art but also a successful municipal enterprise. (The full story of this great undertaking, told partly in Olmsted's own reports, may be found in Olmsted and Kimball, *post*, vol. II.)

On June 13, 1859, Olmsted married the widow of his brother John (who had died in 1857), Mary Cleveland (Perkins) Olmsted, thus becoming step-father to her three children, among them John Charles Olmsted [*q.v.*]; and to this family, first living in the Central Park, and then mainly in New York, were added two children that survived infancy, a daughter and a son, Frederick Law, Jr. In the fall of 1859, Olmsted paid an official visit to the parks and gardens of Europe to procure information of advantage for the development of Central Park, which, by 1860, to a large degree took the form intended by its designers and acquired a gratifying measure of public use and popularity. In that year, Olmsted and Vaux were appointed "landscape architects and designers to the Commissioners North of 155th Street," and thus began certain significant phases of city planning.

Shortly after the outbreak of the Civil War, Olmsted secured leave of absence from the Park to go to Washington, at the invitation of Henry W. Bellows [*q.v.*], to become general secretary of the United States Sanitary Commission, the parent of the American Red Cross; in some respects this was his most important single public service (F. L. Olmsted, Jr., *post*). Worn out by his arduous labors behind the battle-lines, the more difficult because of lameness caused by an accident during the Park's construction, Olmsted in 1863 was obliged to resign from the Sanitary Commission, but not before its work was thoroughly established and its ideals perpetuated in the newly formed Union League Club, of which he was a founder. To regain his health, Olmsted, having with Vaux resigned from the Park work largely for political reasons, accepted (August 1863) the superintendency of the Frémont Mariposa mining estates in California, where he was joined by his family in the early spring of 1864. The primitive life in Bear Valley, exploratory camping trips in the Yosemite and the High Sierras, and landscape designing in the region of San Francisco Bay, redirected Olmsted's thoughts to his career in landscape architecture. Two notable achievements resulted from his two-year sojourn: the erection of the Yosemite as a state reservation, Olmsted

Olmsted

serving as first president of the commission, and the design of the grounds and residential village for the new University of California at Berkeley.

In the summer of 1865, Olmsted and Vaux having been reappointed landscape architects to the commissioners of Central Park, and also designers of the new park for Brooklyn, Olmsted decided to return to New York, bringing his landscape work for the San Francisco park, the Oakland Cemetery, and the University of California to be completed by the firm of Olmsted, Vaux & Company. From 1865 dates the steady development of his national practice of the new art of landscape architecture, for seven years in close combination with Vaux, who supplied the architectural background which Olmsted himself lacked, and ultimately, after looser arrangements with Vaux and Jacob Weidenmann, with John Charles Olmsted and his own son Frederick Law, Jr., and other pupils. During this New York period to 1878 when, after ups and downs, political machinations finally removed him from Central Park, the most important other enterprises of Olmsted and Vaux were the laying out of upper New York, including Riverside Park, Prospect Park in Brooklyn, the suburban village at Riverside near Chicago, a park for Buffalo, the Chicago South Park, Staten Island improvement, and land subdivisions at Tarrytown and Irvington, N. Y. In 1874, Olmsted was commissioned to design the grounds of the United States Capitol at Washington, and in 1875 began his connection with what was to become the Boston park system. Early in 1878, accompanied by his stepson John, Olmsted sought relief from political persecution by a four months' holiday in Europe during which the two men studied parks and scenery with keen enjoyment. After Olmsted's return, he made the vicinity of Boston his principal headquarters, devoting himself to the plans of the Arnold Arboretum with Professors Asa Gray and Charles Sprague Sargent [*qq.v.*], the Boston parks, and the campaign for the protection of Niagara Falls in association with his friend Charles Eliot Norton [*q.v.*], which resulted in the general approval of Olmsted's scheme in 1879. Mount Royal Park in Montreal (1874–76), too, belongs to this period.

Although the permanent Olmsted home combined with office on Warren Street, Brookline, was not purchased until 1883, from 1881 Olmsted himself resided mainly in Brookline, leaving John in New York. The chief work of the next few years concerned the Albany State Capitol (with Leopold Eidlitz and H. H. Richard-

son), Belle Isle Park in Detroit, the Boston parks in which John became especially interested, the improvement of station grounds along the Boston & Albany Railroad near Boston, and numerous land subdivisions, grounds of educational and other institutions, and private estates, small and large, all over the country. (An extensive list of public and private clients of the Olmsted firm, which was constantly developing as a working organization, may be found in Olmsted and Kimball, *post,* vol. I.) In the later 1880's, the selection of site and development plans for Governor Leland Stanford's new university in Palo Alto, Cal., the publication of the improvement plan for the whole Niagara Reservation by Olmsted and Vaux, and Olmsted's participation with Charles Sprague Sargent in the founding of the journal *Garden and Forest,* were combined with work on the parks of Rochester, N. Y., and a large number of land subdivisions East and West, and advice to the City of New York, with Vaux, on Morningside Park and other matters.

The outstanding works which particularly filled Olmsted's mind during the last six years of active professional life were the "Biltmore" estate for George W. Vanderbilt at Asheville, N. C., other Vanderbilt and Rockefeller estates, the Boston and Hartford parks, parks for several Southern cities, especially Louisville, Ky., and above all the World's Fair at Chicago, to which, with "Biltmore," he personally gave the greater part of his time, although still traveling about the country to visit other works of the firm then in progress. When Henry Sargent Codman, who had been a member of the Olmsted firm since 1889, died suddenly, early in 1893 before the completion of the World's Fair grounds, Olmsted, refreshed by a rest and study tour abroad in 1892, was able to take charge and bring the landscape development to a successful outcome. At the famous dinner of Mar. 25, 1893, in New York, marking the collaboration of artists in creating the White City, Olmsted's life was summed up by Charles Eliot Norton: "Of all American artists, Frederick Law Olmsted, who gave the design for the laying-out of the grounds of the World's Fair, stands first in the production of great works which answer the needs and give expression to the life of our immense and miscellaneous democracy" (Charles Moore, *Daniel H. Burnham,* 1921, vol. I. 79). To this appreciation, Burnham added his own, "Each of you knows the name and genius of him who stands first in the heart and confidence of American artists. . . . he paints with lakes and wooded slopes; with lawns and banks and forest-covered hills; with mountainsides and ocean views. He should stand where I do to-night, not for his deeds of later years alone, but for what his brain has wrought and his pen has taught for half a century" (*Ibid.,* I, 74).

Two more years of professional work were vouchsafed Olmsted, who leaned more and more on John and on young Charles Eliot [*q.v.*], a partner since 1893. The last year was spent, with his son as apprentice, largely at "Biltmore," and there in the spring his portrait was painted outdoors by John Singer Sargent. On his last tour abroad in 1895–96 he had "Biltmore" much at heart, although he had definitely retired from practice in the fall of 1895. Subsequently his mind failed after nearly forty years of professional activity in landscape architecture. He died at Waverly, Mass. In 1898 his firm had become Olmsted Brothers, having successively been called F. L. & J. C. Olmsted (1884–89); F. L. Olmsted & Company (to include Henry S. Codman); Olmsted, Olmsted & Eliot (1893–1897), and F. L. & J. C. Olmsted (for the remainder of 1897), until F. L. Olmsted, Jr., became a full participant.

It is difficult to choose the most significant of the many great works through which Olmsted, with his various partners, shaped the art of landscape architecture in America. Aside from the World's Fair, which gave the first impulse to the cooperation of designers and which profoundly influenced the art and science of city planning, and Central Park, which set a new ideal of municipal amenity and constructive development, perhaps the Prospect Park at Brooklyn, and Franklin Park in Boston together with its related parks and parkways, are the living examples in which the beholder may catch the spirit of repose and relief from urban distractions which Olmsted sought.

He was the more able to advocate his ideals because of his literary ability, applied not only to his earlier books, but freely to the reports and documents which explained his professional landscape problems. Among such very numerous writings, perhaps the most interest attaches to reports on Central Park written in 1873 (Olmsted and Kimball, II, p. 569) when a favorable turn of political events enabled him to control its policies for a short period, and to the retrospective pamphlet, *The Spoils of the Park* (1882), written in a lighter vein after the bitterness of his overthrow had subsided, but laying bare the political filth which had constantly retarded his efforts to do justice to the public interest. His article "Park" in Appleton's *New American Cyclopaedia* (vol. XII, 1863) was the

first on the subject in any American encyclopaedia; and his two addresses, before the American Social Science Association, published as *Public Parks and the Enlargement of Towns* (1871) and *A Consideration of the Justifying Value of a Public Park* (1881), were milestones in the development of American civic consciousness. His interest in *Garden and Forest,* largely editorial, promoted increased public appreciation of the landscape art, and a late report on Central Park (1889) prepared with J. B. Harrison, "Observations on the Treatment of Public Plantations," represented his long experience in park planting as it reached approximate maturity. Among the reports for specific designs, in addition to the original "Greensward" document, that for Franklin Park, Boston, is perhaps the most illuminating of all in expressing his considered ideals for park scenery. By his writings he gave definition to the terminology of landscape art, establishing, with Vaux, the term landscape architect as applied to the professional designer and the term park as connoting scenery to be preserved and defended from urban encroachment.

Olmsted found landscape art in America at a low ebb. Even Downing reflected the horticultural taste which pervaded public as well as private landscape work, and, except for H. W. S. Cleveland [*q.v.*] and a very few others, "landscape gardeners" were usually ill-trained and interested rather in specimen plants than in picturesque compositions. Downing, however, had the ideal of public parks, which, deprived of his advocacy by his sudden death in 1852, descended to Olmsted who transmuted it into a living force. In him was the rare combination of philosopher and fighter; his conceptions, ardently expressed, could be comprehended by many who were originally hostile to them and thus be transformed on the ground into great instruments of public service. He was slightly built and never physically strong, yet his inborn vision, his qualities of leadership, and his penetrating sincerity, enabled him incomparably to direct urban life towards outdoor recreation and to leave in dozens of American cities continuing memorials to his foresight and genius.

[The most extensive source, consisting chiefly of his professional papers, is F. L. Olmsted, Jr., and Theodora Kimball, eds., *Frederick Law Olmsted, Landscape Architect, 1822–1903* (2 vols., 1922, 1928); vol. I, "Early Years and Experiences," contains a chronology and some autobiographical passages; vol. II bears the subtitle, "Central Park as a Work of Art and as a Great Municipal Enterprise, 1853–1895." To this should be added Broadus Mitchell, *Frederick Law Olmsted, A Critic of the Old South* (1924), prepared after a thorough analysis of unpublished manuscripts in possession of the family, as well as of the three books on the South. A brief sketch by F. L. Olmsted, Jr., is in *A Journey in the Seaboard Slave States* (1904 ed.), I, xi–xxvi. M. G. Van Rensselaer, a friend, published, on the basis of a long interview, "Frederick Law Olmsted" in the *Century Illustrated Monthly Mag.,* Oct. 1893. See also a serial article by John Nolen, "Frederick Law Olmsted and His Work," *House and Garden,* Feb.–July 1906, with the accepted photographic portrait of his later years; H. K. Olmsted and G. K. Ward, *Genealogy of the Olmsted Family in America* (1912); *N. Y. Times,* Aug. 29, 1903.] T.K.H.

OLMSTED, GIDEON (Feb. 12, 1749–Feb. 8, 1845), sea captain and privateersman, was born at East Hartford, Conn., the son of Jonathan and Hannah (Meakins) Olmsted and a descendant of James Olmsted or Olmstead, who came to Boston in 1632. In youth he shipped on vessels engaged in the West Indies trade, and in 1775–76 served with Connecticut militia around Boston. Back at sea later in 1776, he became master of the sloop *Seaflower,* but returning from Guadeloupe was captured Apr. 6, 1778, by the British privateer *Weir.* Upon his release at Cape François he took command of the French privateer *Polly* (16 guns). Off Jamaica on July 8 the *Polly* engaged H. M. S. *Ostrich* (16 guns) and had fairly beaten her when the British *Lowestoffe's Prize* (10 guns) entered the action and after three hours' hard fighting forced the *Polly* to surrender, with a loss of fifty-five of her 102 men. While still a prisoner Olmsted was sent from Jamaica to New York as second mate in the British sloop *Active,* with three other Americans in his watch. About midnight on Sept. 6, off Long Island, he and his watch confined the remaining nine officers and men below, overcame resistance (in which struggle Olmsted suffered a pistol wound) by firing a four-pounder into the cabin, and steered for the Delaware. They were escorted in by the Pennsylvania state brig *Convention,* which subsequently laid unjustified claim to the *Active* as prize. In the litigation over ship and cargo, the latter alone worth $98,800, the Pennsylvania Admiralty court granted Olmsted only a fourth part, but with the support of Gen. Benedict Arnold he secured in December 1778 a wholly favorable decision in the court of appeals established by Congress. Because of the dangerous conflict between state and union, no immediate action was taken, and the state's share was retained by the Pennsylvania treasurer, David Rittenhouse, as stakeholder. Olmsted's prosecution of his claim in state and federal courts during the next thirty years made his case celebrated but not until 1809 did he gain substantial restitution; then a peremptory *mandamus* from the United States Supreme Court was served

on the Rittenhouse heirs, despite a guard of Pennsylvania militia.

Olmsted returned to Connecticut in June 1779 and commanded successively the privateers *Gamecock* (August 1779), *Hawk* (spring of 1780), *Raven* (September 1780–June 1781), and *General Green* (spring of 1782), cruising chiefly off Long Island and taking numerous prizes. The *General Green* was captured in May 1782 by the much larger enemy privateer *Virginia,* and Olmsted probably remained prisoner in New York till the peace. Thereafter he commanded vessels in the Caribbean and European trade. His last privateering adventure began at Charleston in June 1793, when he converted his schooner *Hector* into a French privateer, taking out French citizenship papers and narrowly escaping prosecution when he entered Wilmington, N. C., in July with a British prize. Evidence suggests that he continued in this activity until 1795. He was married in 1777 to Mabel, daughter of Capt. Eliphalet Roberts of Hartford, but had no children. Until about 1809 he resided in Philadelphia, and later at East Hartford, where he was buried.

[For Olmsted's career see L. F. Middlebrook, *Capt. Gideon Olmsted, Conn. Privateersman* (1933), with detailed references to MSS. and printed sources; L. F. Middlebrook, *Hist. of Maritime Conn. during the Am. Revolution* (2 vols., 1925); H. K. Olmsted, *Geneal. of the Olmsted Family in America* (1912). Among many sources on the Olmsted claim see *U. S.* vs. *Judge Peters,* 5 *Cranch,* 115; *The Whole Proceedings in the Case of Olmsted and Others vs. Rittenhouse's Executrices* (1809); *Sundry Docs. Rel. to the Claim of Gideon Olmsted Against the Commonwealth of Pa.* (1808); *Jours. of the Continental Cong.,* 1779.] A. W.

OLMSTED, JOHN CHARLES (Sept. 14, 1852–Feb. 24, 1920), landscape architect, was born in Geneva, Switzerland. He was the eldest of the three children of John Hull Olmsted, who, after studying at Yale, in 1851 married Mary Cleveland (Perkins), received the M.D. degree from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1852, and then went abroad. After interludes in America, in 1857 John Hull died at Nice, leaving his wife and young family in charge of his brother Frederick Law Olmsted [*q.v.*], who married the widow in 1859. There was a strong bond of common interest between Frederick Law and the young John Charles, who, even at the age of twelve, demonstrated his enjoyment of the outdoor world during the family's residence in California, and especially during an exploring trip made in 1864 eastward through the High Sierras. Late in 1865 the family returned to New York, which remained its actual headquarters until 1881. Largely on account of the travels of his parents, John Charles received his early education from private teaching. He graduated from the Sheffield Scientific School at Yale in 1875 with the degree of Ph.B.

From 1859 when, before their western trip, the Olmsted family resided for a time in the Central Park in New York, then developing under his step-father's charge, John Charles lived in the midst of the designing and construction of works of landscape architecture, and came to apprehend the social and political phases through which esthetic success in public works had to be achieved. After graduation from Yale, he entered the landscape office of his step-father (then at 209 West 46th St., New York), and in 1878 was given a financial interest in the practice. Although he always emphasized the professional character of landscape architecture, he early showed marked business ability and the power to keep a large number of projects—for public and private clients—moving steadily along. In this, he was an invaluable aid to his step-father, whose genius could be in some measure released for expression of the philosophical and esthetic phases of the art as these appeared in the ever-widening and diversified practice of the office. The calm, stable, practical abilities of John Charles Olmsted established the professional practice of the firm on such a sound basis that it not only advanced the profession in the eyes of the world but also influenced the organization of the offices of many later firms of landscape architects in the United States.

In 1884, following removal of the office to Brookline, Mass., John Charles became a full partner in F. L. and J. C. Olmsted. After his step-father's retirement in 1895 he became senior partner in the firm, which after 1898 was called Olmsted Brothers, and shared responsibilities with his half-brother Frederick Law, Jr., and other later partners until his death in Brookline in 1920. Although he traveled extensively in the course of his more than forty years of professional practice, he kept in the closest touch with the office organization. During the period when he was senior partner, approximately 3,500 jobs came to the firm; and the proportion of these with which he made himself familiar was very large. He was concerned alone or with his partners in the design of hundreds of private estates, large and small, in all parts of the country, and the grounds of many institutions, including Smith College, Mt. Holyoke College, and Ohio State University, of industrial plants (notably the National Cash Register Company of Dayton, Ohio), public buildings, state capitols, and exposition grounds, including the Chicago World's Fair in 1893, the Lewis and Clark Ex-

position at Portland, Ore., 1906, the Seattle Exposition of 1909, the San Diego Exposition of 1915, and the Canadian Industrial Exposition at Winnipeg. Of the many parks in the design of which he participated, the Hartford (Conn.) parks, the Boston municipal parks and parkways, the Essex County (N. J.) park system, and the Chicago Southside Playgrounds which set a new standard in community playgrounds, engaged his special interest; and the parks of Bridgeport, Conn., Trenton, N. J., Buffalo and Rochester, N. Y., Dayton, Ohio, Detroit, Mich., Milwaukee, Wis., Seattle and Spokane, Wash., Portland, Ore., Louisville, Ky., Atlanta, Ga., and New Orleans, La., are evidences of his far-reaching influence for the public benefit, exercised in conjunction with Frederick Law Olmsted, Sr., or other partners. He kept in close touch with the operation of parks through his active membership in the American Association of Park Superintendents. He made an early contribution, also, to the still inchoate science of city planning in his solutions of difficulties in connection with park system design and in his interpretations to civic leaders. He served as the first president of the American Society of Landscape Architects (founded 1899) and for many years on the executive board. He was also active in the formation of the Boston Society of Landscape Architects.

Unlike his partners, F. L. Olmsted, Sr., and Jr., J. C. Olmsted has only a very brief list of writings to his credit. Many of his letters containing valuable statements of the principles of park system design were incorporated into reports by the firm without differentiation as to authorship. As an example of his writing on parks, an extract from the *Report of Olmsted Brothers on a Proposed Parkway System for Essex County, N. J.* (1915) was published as "Classes of Parkways," in *Landscape Architecture* (Oct. 1915). A report which he wrote during the first year of his partnership on Beardsley Park, Bridgeport, Conn., was privately printed in Boston (1884), and a description by him of the Hartford parks appeared in the *Hartford Courant*, July 10, 1901. Of his travels abroad he made many notes, especially on English gardens, but these remained unpublished, although in style and manner of treatment they have been compared to the intelligent discussion of landscape problems by the French writer, the Duc d'Harcourt.

Olmsted was short of stature but possessed of quiet dignity, retiring but abounding in vigor, gentle and kindly but firm and always possessed of the courage of his convictions. With his industrious methods of mastering a problem, and his wide knowledge of practical community affairs, he inspired confidence in citizens charged with responsibility for large undertakings within the field of landscape architecture, and was thus able to see realized to a very considerable extent the projects to which his "independence of thought, great fertility of resource, a pains-taking care for the details of his schemes," and his thorough knowledge of materials gave potency (Pray, *post*, p. 105).

On Jan. 18, 1899, in Brookline, he married Sophia Buckland White; they had two daughters.

[J. S. Pray, "John Charles Olmsted. A Minute on His Life and Service," with portrait, in *Trans. Am. Soc. of Landscape Architects, 1909–1921* (1922), which has been interpreted by the writer of this sketch in the light of her editorial work on the Olmsted papers and her personal acquaintance with J. C. Olmsted; E. T. Mische, "In Memoriam, John Charles Olmsted," with another portrait, in *Parks and Recreation*, April 1920; *Yale University, Obit. Record of Grads. Deceased during the Year Ending July 1, 1920* (1921); *Boston Evening Transcript*, Feb. 25, 1920; H. K. Olmsted and G. K. Ward, *Genealogy of the Olmsted Family in America* (1912).] T. K. H.

OLMSTED, MARLIN EDGAR (May 21, 1847–July 19, 1913), lawyer, congressman, son of Henry Jason and Evalena Theresa (Cushing) Olmsted, was seventh in descent from Richard Olmsted who came to America with his uncle, James, in 1632 and eventually settled at Norwalk, Conn. Born in Ulysses Township, Potter County, Pa., Marlin Edgar was educated in public schools and at Coudersport Academy, entered politics, and was elected auditor of the borough of Coudersport at the age of twenty-two. He had already been appointed assistant corporation clerk of the state in charge of corporation-tax collection. Continued in this position by Auditor-General Harrison Allen, he gave deep study to corporation taxation, and made valuable suggestions which were adopted in Pennsylvania law and practice. When a Democratic victory at the polls resulted in his removal from office in 1875, he turned at once to the study of law, reading in the office of a local judge. Admitted to the local bar on Nov. 25, 1878, to the bar of the supreme court of Pennsylvania, May 16, 1881, and to the bar of the Supreme Court of the United States, Nov. 12, 1884, he quickly found himself engaged in important practice. He was attorney for many corporations and his pleas resulted in some of the most important American decisions in corporation-tax law (see especially *Commonwealth* vs. *Texas & Pacific Railroad Co.*, 98 *Pa. Reports*, 90; *Commonwealth* vs. *Standard Oil Company*, 101 *Pa.*, 119; *Common-*

wealth vs. *Westinghouse Electric & Manufacturing Co.*, 151 *Pa.*, 265; *Western Union Telegraph Co.* vs. *Pennsylvania*, 128 *U. S.*, 39).

While thus engaged in extensive legal practice, he again entered politics, serving in the select council of Harrisburg. Elected to Congress in 1896 by a heavy majority, he was continuously returned until his voluntary retirement from public life in the elections of 1912. In Congress he rapidly rose to distinction. He was earnest in defense of the Republican party and its policies. Tariff protection and the gold standard, the dominant Republican measures, received his immediate and lasting support. Appointed at once on Committee on Elections No. 2, he rendered able service and is credited with having done much during the next decade to establish the committee as a judicial rather than a political tribunal. Placed, in his second term, on the Committee for the Revision of Laws, he was influential in framing and securing the adoption in 1900 of the governmental code of Alaska. By reason of his mastery of parliamentary procedure, he was often chairman of the Committee of the Whole and at times speaker *pro tempore*. After his death, it was stated in a eulogy in Congress that he was slated as the Republican successor of Speaker Cannon, a plan which was ruined by the Democratic control of the House after the congressional elections of 1910.

Late in his congressional career, Olmsted served on the important Committee on Appropriations, but his name is best known in connection with his work on the Committee on Insular Affairs, of which he became chairman in the Sixty-first Congress. Here he was actively connected with legislation for Puerto Rico, the Philippines, and other insular possessions of the United States. When in 1909 the Puerto Rican legislature adjourned without having made new governmental appropriations, Olmsted, in the face of strong opposition, secured, by an amendment of the Foraker Act of 1900, the passage of a bill extending to Puerto Rico legislation already adopted in regard to the Philippines and Hawaii, by which old appropriations should run until new appropriations should be made. Probably more significant was the civil government program for Puerto Rico which he presented in 1910, but which was held up in the Senate and put into operation in modified form only after his death.

When he retired to private life in 1913, his health was badly shattered. A brief vacation did him little good and on July 19, 1913, he died suddenly in New York City, following an operation. He was survived by his wife, Gertrude (Howard) Olmsted, daughter of Maj. Conway R. Howard, of Richmond, Va., whom he had married at Lynchburg on Oct. 26, 1899, and by five children. Olmsted was a man of distinguished appearance and by arduous study, clear analysis, and acute logic, established a high reputation as a lawyer and legislator.

[*A Biog. Album of Prominent Pennsylvanians*, 2 ser. (1889); *Year Book of the Pa. Soc.*, 1914; L. R. Kelker, *Hist. of Dauphin County, Pa.* (1907), vol. III; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; H. K. Olmsted and G. K. Ward, *Geneal. of the Olmsted Family in America* (1912); *Patriot* (Harrisburg, Pa.), July 21, 1913; *N. Y. Times*, July 20, 1913.]

A. P. J.

OLNEY, JESSE (Oct. 12, 1798–July 30, 1872), author of textbooks, was born at Union, Conn., the eighth of the ten children of Ezekiel Olney and his second wife, Lydia Brown. His ancestor, Thomas Olney, emigrated to Salem, Massachusetts, in 1635 and later aided Roger Williams in the founding of Providence. His grandfather, Jeremiah, and his father, as well as many other relatives, were officers in the Revolutionary army. His mother's family was of English stock long resident in America. The boy obtained most of his education at Whitesboro, N. Y. He was a precocious student with a special bent for the classics and geography. For a few years he taught in New York state; then moved to Hartford, Conn., where for twelve years, beginning in 1821, he was principal of the Stone School. He was a born teacher; effective pedagogical methods were instinctive with him. Dissatisfied with the classroom manuals in use, he sought to replace them with better ones and shortly proved himself a most successful textbook maker. His first venture was *A Practical System of Modern Geography* (1828), followed the next year by *A New and Improved School Atlas* (1829). It was immediately successful. The study of geography had but recently been introduced into American elementary education and was still a tail to the cosmographical kite. Its texts were dull and uninteresting, quite beyond the comprehension of elementary students. Olney's book was suited to his pupils. Beginning with the simple and known facts of their immediate surroundings, it carried them forward to a knowledge of distant lands and complex phenomena. Rudimental as the method seems now, it was new at the time. The book passed through nearly a hundred editions and millions of copies were sold. There were few American school children of that generation whose ideas of the outer world, both true and false, were not formed by it. If our grandfathers believed that "Italians are affable and polite . . . but they are effeminate,

superstitious, slavish, and revengeful," Olney no doubt must be held accountable.

Three years after the book's appearance he abandoned teaching to devote the rest of his life to textbook writing and to politics. Among his publications of the next twenty years were various readers, the most popular of which was *The National Preceptor; or Selections in Prose and Poetry* (2nd ed., 1829); a common-school arithmetic; a history of the United States; and several new books of geography. Being a firm believer in visual education, he prepared outline maps with accompanying exercises. The success of his textbooks gave him both financial independence and a reputation. When he stood for a seat in the Connecticut legislature in 1835, he was easily elected. For eight terms he represented Southington, where he lived from 1833 to 1854. For two years (1867–68) he was state comptroller of public accounts. Throughout his political career his interest lay primarily in education. He was a strong supporter of the movement which culminated in the organization of a state board of commissioners of public schools (1838) and a vigorous advocate of generous appropriations for the support of elementary education. In religion, as in other things, he was a liberal, and in middle life he joined a Unitarian church. He married Elizabeth Barnes of Hartford in 1829; of their six children one, Ellen Warner (Olney) Kirk, gained some reputation as a writer of fiction. In 1854 Olney moved to Stratford, Conn., where he died in 1872.

[J. H. Olney, *A Geneal. of the Descendants of Thomas Olney* (1889); *The Am. Ann. Cyc. for 1872* (1873); Charles Hammond and H. M. Lawson, *The Hist. of Union, Conn.* (1893); H. R. Timlow, *Ecclesiastical and Other Sketches of Southington, Conn.* (1875); *Am. Hist. Record*, Sept. 1872; *Hartford Daily Courant*, Aug. 1, 1872.] P. D. E.

OLNEY, RICHARD (Sept. 15, 1835–Apr. 8, 1917), lawyer, attorney-general, secretary of state, was born at Oxford, Mass. His father, Wilson Olney, was a descendant of Thomas Olney, a follower of Roger Williams; his mother, Eliza L. (Butler), was connected with the Sigourney family, Huguenot settlers of Oxford. At Leicester Academy, Brown University (A.M., 1856), and the Harvard Law School (LL.B., 1858), he successively won distinction. He was admitted to the bar in 1859 and entered the Boston office of Benjamin F. Thomas, whose daughter, Agnes, he married, Mar. 6, 1861, and to whose practice he succeeded. Confining himself to testamentary and corporation cases, which he conducted personally, he attained a respected position in professional and business circles but did not appear in the courts or in public. Square-

Olney

hewn and forbidding of figure and face, with drooping mustache and stern dark eyes, he attracted and sought no social intimacies. His adherence to the Democratic party afforded him little chance for a political carer. He was elected to the state legislature in 1873, but, after successive defeats for reëlection and for two other offices, he gave up politics. He was, therefore, hardly known to the people even of his own state in 1893, when he was selected by Cleveland as attorney-general to represent New England in the cabinet.

Besides the concern of his department with the test case of the Sherman Anti-Trust Law brought by his predecessor against the sugar refiners, which was dismissed by the Supreme Court in January 1895 (*U. S.* vs. *E. C. Knight Co.*, 156 *U. S. Reports*, 1), he gave much attention in his first year to outside affairs. His insistence that any action toward undoing the effects of the recent *coup d'état* in Hawaii should be predicated on an amnesty to the leaders prevented a restoration of Queen Liliuokalani, although the treaty of annexation negotiated by the provisional government was dropped. By making a preliminary draft he materially assisted President Cleveland in preparing his message to Congress asking repeal of the silver purchase clauses of the Act of 1890.

The economic unrest which found overt expression in the spring of 1894 in the march of Coxey's Army on Washington was prevented from assuming more serious proportions by the prompt action taken under Olney's orders to protect the trains on the Western railroads from seizure by additional contingents of unemployed demonstrants. When, later that summer, the American Railway Union, in support of the striking employees of the Pullman Company, paralyzed several roads by strikes growing out of the refusal to handle Pullman cars, the Administration made a straight case against the Union on the ground of obstruction of the mails. Olney directed the protection of mail trains by deputy marshals and obtained from Federal judges in Chicago an injunction restraining the activities of Eugene V. Debs, president of the Union, and other leaders. Federal troops were moved into Chicago, Debs [*q.v.*] and his lieutenants were arrested, and the strike collapsed. Olney directed the argument in the Supreme Court, in March 1895, against their unsuccessful appeal from a sentence for contempt of court (*In re Debs, Petitioner*, 158 *U. S. Reports*, 564). While he had shown throughout no concern with the underlying issues of the case, handling it opened his eyes to their gravity. He afterwards

upheld the rights of organized labor and supported the movement which brought about the arbitration act of 1898. His last important task as attorney-general was the defense before the Supreme Court of the income tax provisions of the Wilson-Gorman tariff act. Despite his forceful arguments, the Court ruled against the Government, May 20, 1895, by a vote of five to four (*Pollock* vs. *Farmers' Loan and Trust Co.*, 158 *U. S. Reports*, 601).

Upon the death of Walter Q. Gresham [*q.v.*] Olney, who had become a pillar of the administration and whose harsh personality had been mellowed by the social life of the capital, was chosen by Cleveland to fill his place as secretary of state. He was commissioned in his new office, June 8, 1895. Undertaking to push to a conclusion the repeatedly frustrated efforts of his predecessors toward inducing the British government to arbitrate the boundary dispute between Venezuela and British Guiana, he dispatched to Thomas F. Bayard, the ambassador at London, on July 20, 1895, with Cleveland's enthusiastic approval, the spirited declaration that, by withholding from arbitration a part of the disputed territory, the British were constructively extending their colonization in America in opposition to the "established policy" of the United States defined by President Monroe. His statement that, owing to its isolation and resources, "the United States is practically sovereign on this continent, and its fiat is law upon the subjects to which it confines its interposition," was not put to the test of an immediate comparison between the forces of the United States and those of Great Britain, because Great Britain, concerned with new and threatening international problems in Europe and South Africa, could not meet the challenge with a free hand. President Cleveland's seriousness of purpose in backing Olney was demonstrated by his appointment, under authority asked of Congress, of a commission to fix a line beyond which any extension of British authority would be resisted by the United States. After complicated negotiations, Olney secured Lord Salisbury's agreement to an arbitration safeguarding British settlements of fifty years' standing, under which the award of 1899 gave Venezuela the smaller portion of the territory that Great Britain had demanded.

The Venezuelan controversy was the occasion for the renewal of discussion of the project of an Anglo-American general treaty of arbitration, already under consideration for some years. When suggested by Salisbury in January 1896, Olney took up the subject earnestly. He endeavored in the correspondence which followed to secure the greatest possible extension of arbitrable subjects and assurance of the binding force of awards. A treaty largely satisfying his desires through a combination of ingenious formulae was signed in January 1897, but was not acted on by the Senate until after his retirement, when consent to ratification was denied.

Throughout his secretaryship Olney was vexed by problems connected with a new revolt in Cuba, which demanded constant activity: on the one hand, in preventing filibustering and, on the other, in pressing claims for the redress of injuries to nationals of the United States. Like Secretary Hamilton Fish under similar circumstances, he resisted the pressure for recognition of the belligerency of rebel forces which had no responsible organization capable of constituting a government. He likewise strove to persuade Spain to adopt a constructive program of reforms; but a note to this effect sent to the Spanish minister on Apr. 4, 1896, met with a dilatory response. The subsequent political weakness of the Cleveland administration prevented it from going forward with any strong policy.

In the disorders prevailing in China and Turkey, Olney insisted as vigorously and firmly as in the case of Cuba on the protection of American lives and property and on reparation for injuries. When the situation was reversed and Italians were lynched in Colorado and Louisiana, he readily admitted, subject to determination of the facts and to the reserved rights of the states, the obligation of the federal government to indemnify the families of the victims.

After his retirement, on Mar. 5, 1897, he returned to his law practice and did not again enter political life; but he served on the boards of many foundations, wrote and spoke on public questions, and remained a prominent figure in the Democratic party. He declined offers from President Wilson of the posts of ambassador to Great Britain and governor of the Federal Reserve Board, but supported all the policies of the Wilson administration in its foreign relations, including those with Germany. He died from a cancer two days after the declaration of war in 1917. His wife and two daughters survived him.

[Henry James, *Richard Olney and His Public Service* (1923), based on Olney's papers, with list of his published articles and addresses; Grover Cleveland, *Presidential Problems* (1904); A. L. P. Dennis, *Adventures in American Diplomacy* (1928); *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1895–97; sketch by Montgomery Schuyler in S. F. Bemis, ed., *The Am. Secretaries of State and Their Diplomacy*, vol. VIII (1928); *Boston Daily Globe*, Apr. 10, 1917.]

J. V. F.

OLYPHANT, DAVID WASHINGTON CINCINNATUS (Mar. 7, 1789–June 10, 1851), merchant and philanthropist, was born at Newport, R. I., the son of David (1720–1805) and Ann (Vernon) Olyphant. His father, a nephew of Lord Olyphant, was educated as a physician, in his youth supported the Stuarts, and after the eclipse of the Jacobite cause in the battle of Culloden emigrated to South Carolina. In the Revolution he served the colonies in several capacities, among them as director of Southern hospitals. After the Revolution, he was a member of the General Assembly of South Carolina. He was also a member of the Society of the Cincinnati. In 1785 he moved to Rhode Island, apparently because of failing health, and there married.

In 1806, shortly after the death of his aged father, young David went to New York to seek his fortune. Here he entered the counting-room of his cousin, Samuel King, senior partner of King & Talbot, a firm engaged in the then flourishing trade with China. In 1812 he removed to Baltimore, forming a business connection with a Mr. Bucklin of that city. The stormy years during and after the War of 1812 worked the ruin of that venture, and in 1817 Olyphant, in debt, returned to New York. Here he was associated with George W. Talbot, formerly of King & Talbot, and succeeded in paying his obligations. In 1818 he entered the employ of Thomas H. Smith, a picturesque figure with a somewhat meteoric career, who for a time was one of the most notable merchants in the China trade. From 1820 to about 1823 Olyphant was in Canton as Smith's agent, then returned to America for a few years, after which period he again held the Canton agency of the Smith firm —from 1826 until the spectacular failure of his employer (1827 or 1828). Thereupon, he formed in Canton, with C. N. Talbot, the son of his early friend, the firm of Olyphant & Company, and, returning to the United States, organized in New York a house under the name of Talbot, Olyphant & Company. In these business connections he continued until his death. Twice again he was in China—from 1834 to 1837 and from 1850 to 1851. It was while returning from the last trip that he died in Cairo.

Olyphant is remembered even more for his religious and philanthropic activities than for his business career. While in Baltimore, in 1814, he formally announced himself a Christian, and, as was natural for one with his Scotch heritage, he became active in the Presbyterian Church. It was in part as a result of his interest that the first American Protestant missionary to China, Elijah C. Bridgman [*q.v.*], went to Canton. Bridgman and David Abeel [*q.v.*]—the latter an agent of the American Seaman's Friend Society, in which Olyphant was also interested—arrived in Canton in 1830, having been given free passage by Olyphant's company on one of its ships. Olyphant and his partners provided quarters for the mission free of rent for thirteen years. Olyphant also underwrote the famous publication of this early American mission, the *Chinese Repository*. He and his partners provided free passage to China for many missionaries, including the distinguished S. Wells Williams [*q.v.*] and the first Protestant medical missionary in China, Peter Parker [*q.v.*]. In 1836 his firm purchased a vessel, the *Himaleh*, for the purpose of aiding in the distribution of Christian literature along the coast of China, and it was the *Morrison*, another of the company's ships, which in 1837 made a voyage to Japan in a memorable attempt to open that country to intercourse with Americans while restoring seven shipwrecked Japanese sailors to their homes. Olyphant was a member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions and of the executive committee of the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions, and it was largely in the interest of missions that he made the trip to China which cost him his life. It was, moreover, from deep moral conviction that he and his firm refused to participate in the profitable opium traffic which bulked so large in the foreign imports to China in his day. He was married to Mrs. Ann Archer in May 1815, and his sons, one of whom was Robert Morrison Olyphant [*q.v.*], continued his business.

[J. N. Arnold, *Vital Record of R. I., 1636–1850*, vols. IV (1893), pt. 2, pp. 52, 107, XIV (1905), p. 148, XX (1911), p. 216; Harrison Ellery, "The Vernon Family," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1879; Thatcher Thayer, *A Sketch of the Life of D. W. C. Olyphant, Who Died at Cairo, June 10, 1851, with a Tribute to His Memory* (1852); *Chinese Repository*, July 1851; W. C. Hunter, *The 'Fan Kwae' at Canton before Treaty Days, 1825–1844* (Shanghai, 1882); K. S. Latourette, "The Hist. of Early Relations Between the U. S. and China, 1784–1844," *Trans. of the Conn. Acad. of Arts and Sciences*, vol. XXII (1917); F. W. Williams, *The Life and Letters of Samuel Wells Williams, LL.D.* (1889).]

K. S. L.

OLYPHANT, ROBERT MORRISON (Sept. 9, 1824–May 3, 1918), merchant, railroad president, was born in New York City. He was the youngest son of David W. C. Olyphant [*q.v.*] and his wife, Ann. His father was a member of Talbot, Olyphant & Company, merchants in the China trade, whose record of cooperation with missionaries and refusal to engage in the opium trade gained for their office in China the nickname of "Zion's Corners." As a child, Robert

attended private schools in Troy, N. Y., Middletown, Conn., and New York City. He entered Columbia College with the class of 1843, at the age of fifteen, and graduated in three years (1842). On Oct. 13, 1846, he married Sophia, daughter of William Vernon of Middletown, R. I., and after her death, 1855, he married her sister Anna, Aug. 13, 1857.

After his graduation from Columbia, he entered the employ of his father's firm and in 1844 visited China, returning a year later. He was rapidly advanced and soon became a partner. Shortly before 1858 he reorganized his father's old firm, Olyphant & Company, Canton, China, and engaged in a general importing, shipping, commission, and mercantile business with the Orient, being careful to maintain the high standards which had characterized the concern under his father's direction. He resided in China four years and upon his return directed the business from New York until he retired from foreign trade in 1873.

During the later years of this period he turned his attention to the Delaware & Hudson Canal Company (later Delaware & Hudson Company), in which members of his family had been interested since 1852. This company was principally engaged in operating railroads and anthracite coal mines, though it also operated a canal, a gravity road, and steamboat lines on Lake Champlain and Lake George. He served as a member of its board of managers, 1867–68, 1873–74, and 1883–1918; was elected assistant president, 1876; vice-president, 1882; acting president, 1884; and president, Oct. 24, 1884. In this last capacity he served until his seventy-ninth year, retiring from active management, May 13, 1903. He was then made chairman of the executive committee, an honorary position. Olyphant's presidency was a quiet period in which the company reaped the advantages of previous construction and consolidation of its railroad properties. His policy was improvement rather than enlargement. He maintained the property at a high degree of efficiency and substantially increased the assets of the company in spite of sacrifices involved in the abandonment of the canal and gravity road during his administration. He dealt firmly with employees during strikes at the company's mines, and he regarded the award of the anthracite strike commission which followed the strike of 1902 as a concession to humanity and not to the strikers.

He liked to consider himself an old-fashioned business man. In his investments he preferred safety to large returns. He rarely took a vacation, and when he left the city he kept up a constant supervision over his business concerns. He had, also, numerous interests in art, science, and philanthropy, and he formed a noteworthy collection of American works of art. As a fellow of the National Academy of Design he assisted in raising funds for the erection of its first building. He gave liberally toward missionary work in China and was a patron of the Canton Christian Church. His death occurred in New York City in his ninety-fourth year; he had ten children.

[*Reg. of Saint Andrew's Soc. of the State of N. Y.*, 2 ser., pt. II (1922?); MS. notes and clippings in the library of the N. Y. Hist. Soc.; *A Century of Progress: Hist. of the Del. and Hudson Co., 1823–1923* (1925); printed and MS. material from the records of the company; *World* (N. Y.), May 17, 1903; "The Oldest Living Graduate," *Columbia Alumni News*, Apr. 5, 1912; *N. Y. Times*, May 4, 1918.] E. C. S.

O'MAHONY, JOHN (1816–Feb. 6, 1877), Fenian leader, was born near Mitchelstown, County Cork, Ireland, not far from Kilbeheny in Limerick, where his father, Daniel O'Mahony, held some lands. The family was popular on account of its nationalist feeling and its opposition in the past to the Earls of Kingston, whose estates were near by. Both O'Mahony's father and an uncle are said to have been concerned in the rebellion of 1798. Like his elder brother, Thomas Daniel, John attended Hamblin's School at Middleton in Cork and went thence to Trinity College, Dublin, where he was admitted as a "pensioner" on July 1, 1833, but never took a degree. Apparently the death of his father and brother left him in possession of their property, and he settled down to the life of a gentleman farmer. When the enthusiasts of the "Young Ireland" party broke away from O'Connell in disgust with his caution, O'Mahony adhered to them. He was then living on "a small paternal property" near Carrick-on-Suir, and he organized in the district one of the clubs which the "confederates" hoped to utilize in a revolt. In 1848, he shared the fortunes of Smith O'Brien and others in their brief and abortive insurrection, but escaped arrest, and remained in hiding until September, when he and John Savage for some days carried on a guerrilla campaign in the valley of the Suir, and had several conflicts with the police. On Sept. 26 Dublin Castle offered a reward of £100 for O'Mahony's apprehension; nevertheless, after a whole series of hairbreadth escapes, he got safely away to France. There he lived in poverty until, apparently, late in 1853, when he went to New York. The next year he helped organize a military body called the Emmet Monument Association, designed to turn Britain's difficulties in the Crimean War to Irish advantage. This organization disbanded when

the war ended, but was the foundation of the later Fenian movement. About this time O'Mahony had a fit of insanity and was temporarily confined in an asylum; but his friend John O'Leary (*post*) affirms his belief that he was quite sane during the rest of his life.

In 1857 O'Mahony published a translation of Geoffrey Keating's seventeenth-century Gaelic History of Ireland (*Foras feasa ar Eirinn . . . The History of Ireland*) which, though hastily executed and taken from bad texts, seems to have commanded respect from scholars. This work gave much attention (*e.g.*, pp. 343 ff.) to the Fenians (*Fiann*), the legendary defenders of Ireland in the time of Finn, and here probably O'Mahony got the idea of a name for a new militant organization. Towards the end of 1857 he and other Irishmen in New York suggested to James Stephens (see *Dictionary of National Biography*, 2nd Supp.), an 1848 rebel still in Ireland, that he should organize a revolutionary society there. On being promised financial support, Stephens inaugurated his secret movement in Dublin on Mar. 17, 1858. In Ireland the society, known later as the Irish Republican or Irish Revolutionary Brotherhood, was headed by Stephens; the American branch, called the Fenian Brotherhood, was directed by O'Mahony as "Head Centre." The movement spread in America—slowly at first—and modest sums were transmitted to Stephens. In 1860–61 O'Mahony visited Ireland and had a violent interview with Stephens, who accused him of affording him too little support; complete confidence was never restored between the two men afterwards. During the Civil War, O'Mahony worked to obtain Irish recruits for the Union army. Early in 1864 he raised the 99th Regiment, New York National Guard; became its colonel; and did duty with it at the Elmira prison camp.

At the end of the war the Brotherhood was prosperous, and O'Mahony sent drillmasters and large financial aid to Stephens. Disputes now arose between O'Mahony and hostile elements in his organization, growing worse after the British government nipped Stephens's conspiracy in the bud in September 1865. In October a Fenian congress in Philadelphia adopted a new constitution styling O'Mahony president and providing a senate to check his powers. In December an open quarrel occurred over the sale of Fenian bonds, O'Mahony desiring to proceed with it at once to aid those still conspiring in Ireland, while the senate enjoined delay. The organization split in two, each faction claiming to be the Fenian Brotherhood. The senate party elected W. R. Roberts [*q.v.*] as president and made plans to invade Canada. In January 1866, a congress of O'Mahony's adherents voted confidence in him and restored the old constitution. In April, however, he gave a reluctant consent to a hostile demonstration against Campobello Island (part of the province of New Brunswick), which proved a fiasco and was fatal to his popular reputation. Soon afterwards, Stephens, who had escaped from prison, arrived in New York, and on May 11 accepted O'Mahony's resignation. In 1872 O'Mahony was called out of retirement to resume the leadership of the Brotherhood, then only a shadow of the formidable organization of 1865; he now bore the title of executive secretary, but in 1875 again took that of "Head Centre," and held it until immediately before his death. His body was sent from New York to Ireland, and on both sides of the Atlantic there were impressive memorial demonstrations. He was buried in Glasnevin Cemetery, Dublin, on Mar. 4, 1877.

O'Mahony never married. O'Leary spoke of him as physically "perhaps the manliest and handsomest man" he ever saw, and believed him to be "the soul of truth and honour." Whatever may be said of his methods, the sincerity of his Irish patriotism is undoubted. With Stephens he shares, for better or worse, the credit of founding the formidable Fenian society. He was indifferent to money, and although he handled large sums of Fenian funds he died in poverty. His judgment was faulty and his behavior autocratic; but he remains one of the most attractive figures in the history of Irish nationalism.

[John O'Leary, *Recollections of Fenians and Fenianism* (2 vols., 1896), and article in *Dict. Nat. Biog.* (less valuable); John Savage, *Fenian Heroes and Martyrs* (1868); Joseph Denieffe, *A Personal Narrative of the Irish Revolutionary Brotherhood* (1906); C. G. Duffy, *Four Years of Irish History* (1883); Michael Doheny, *The Felon's Track* (1849); John Rutherford, *The Secret Hist. of the Fenian Conspiracy* (2 vols., 1877); Frederick Phisterer, *N. Y. in the War of the Rebellion* (1912), vol. I; *Alumni Dublinenses* (1924), ed. by G. D. Burtchaell and T. U. Sadleir; files of the *Times* (London), *Irish American* (N. Y.), *N. Y. Herald*, *N. Y. Tribune*; well-informed obituary notices, *N. Y. Herald*, Feb. 7, 1877, and *Irish World* (N. Y.), Feb. 17, 1877, and succeeding issues.]

C. P. S.

O'MALLEY, FRANK WARD (Nov. 30, 1875–Oct. 19, 1932), writer, was born in Pittston, Pa., the son of William and Catherine (Ward) O'Malley. His academic education was limited to the Wilkes-Barre, Pa., high school, but his ambition to be either an architect or an artist led him to spend ten years in pursuing special courses at the Art Students League, Washington, D. C. (1894–95), the University of Notre Dame (1896–98), and the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts in Philadelphia (1899–

1902). The time devoted to art was not justified by the results. O'Malley, in a facetious autobiographical sketch, once said that while in Washington he spent too much time in the Senate gallery; in Notre Dame, too much time with the football team; and in Philadelphia, too much time in a burlesque theatre.

When he arrived in New York in 1902 he found no place for artistic expression except as a commercial illustrator. Seeing that his casual light verse and humorous articles found a fair market in newspapers, he became a special writer on the *Morning Telegraph,* a daily devoted to racing, the theatre, and the night life of Broadway. His articles attracted the attention of the *Sun,* which engaged him as a reporter in 1906. His success was instant, not only on account of his humorous treatment of trivial happenings, but also because of his accurate and dramatic relation of serious events. Read today, most of these articles lack the flavor of their time and the color of their setting. A few—notably O'Malley's interview with the mother of a young policeman who was killed on duty (*Sun,* Oct. 23, 1907) —have been used as models by teachers of journalism. The account of the Triangle shirt-waist factory fire, in which 150 persons lost their lives (*Ibid.,* Mar. 26, 1911), is a good example of his ability to write "straight news." Much of O'Malley's product concerned the people and events of the "white light district" of New York in pre-prohibition days. Himself of fine moral character, he regarded the Tenderloin as a sort of fairyland. He wrote of himself that he was "a reporter on the *Sun* for fourteen years, thirteen of which were spent in Jack's restaurant" (*New York Times,* Oct. 20, 1932, p. 21). The Bohemian life which centered about Jack's saw little of him after his marriage in 1917. He resigned from the *Sun* in 1920 with the intention of writing something less ephemeral than newspaper articles. From 1920 to 1932 he wrote for the *Saturday Evening Post* twenty-eight articles, humorous or satirical, touching on life both in the United States and in Europe. Two of his articles, published in the *American Mercury* (May, September 1929), dealt with the virtues and weaknesses of the Irish in the United States. He wrote two books, *The War-Whirl in Washington* (1918) and *The Swiss Family O'Malley* (1928), and in collaboration with E. W. Townsend, two plays, *The Head of the House* (1909) and *A Certain Party* (1910); the plays had little success. His greatest days were those in which he was regarded as one of the best reporters of his generation.

O'Malley's lack of valuable productivity in his later years may be laid to the fact that he was more interested in life itself than in the portrayal of it. He was a delightful companion, ever eager to discuss any subject, and much sought for his candor, graciousness, and wit. His only bitterness was directed at prohibition, which he denounced publicly and privately with vehemence and to which he attributed his long stays in Europe. This hatred was not lessened when diabetes prevented him from using spirits. He died in Tours, France. On Sept. 1, 1917, he was married to Grace Edsall Dalrymple who, with a son and a daughter, survived him.

[*Sun* (N. Y.), Oct. 19, 1932; *N. Y. Times,* Oct. 20, 1932; F. M. O'Brien, *The Story of the Sun* (1918); *Who's Who in America,* 1930–31; personal acquaintance.] F. M. O.

OÑATE, JUAN de (*c.* 1549–*c.* 1624), frontiersman of New Spain (Mexico) and colonizer of New Mexico, was born of illustrious parentage in New Spain, but when and where it is uncertain. His father, Cristóbal de Oñate, became governor of Nueva Galicia in 1538, and during the next ten years, through the discovery of mines in Zacatecas, became one of the richest men in America. Juan's mother, Doña Cathalina de Salazar, was the daughter of the royal *factor,* Gonzalo de Salazar, who was the bitter enemy of Cortés. Little is known of Juan's youth. On the northern frontier, where he early became active for his king, his general services covered "bloody encounters with the Chichimecs, and the discovery of the rich mines of Zichú, Charcas, and San Luis Potosí, which he peopled with Spaniards" (quoted by Cornish, *post,* p. 459). He married Isabel Tolosa, a descendant of both Cortés and Montezuma. Of this union two children were born.

His chief claim to fame rests upon his services as founder of New Mexico. A revival of interest in that region after 1583 resulted in a spirited competition for the right to conquer it. Royal authorization for the appointment of a suitable person for this purpose was received by the viceroy of New Spain in 1583. Delays ensued, but on Sept. 21, 1595, the coveted contract, calling for the "exploration, pacification, and conquest of New Mexico," was awarded to Oñate. Disappointments awaited him. A new viceroy modified his contract, but, despite attendant delays, by September 1596 Oñate's large and well-equipped expedition was at the Nazas River, in the present Durango, prepared to enter the more than six hundred miles of unoccupied territory between there and the upper Rio Grande Valley. Meanwhile, in Spain, the Council of the Indies had shown interest in the New Mexico venture

being entrusted to Pedro Ponce de León of Spain, and in July 1596, Viceroy Monterey had received instructions to cancel Oñate's contract. To this, Oñate offered vigorous protest—at the same time endeavoring to keep his expedition intact, pending an appeal—for he "had spent 100,000 ducats in equipping the expedition, while the captains and soldiers who were to accompany him had spent an additional 200,000 ducats" (Hackett, *post*, I, 203). Confidence in De León being shaken, Oñate finally was authorized to proceed, and in August 1597 the expedition, somewhat depleted in men and supplies, advanced northward. On Apr. 30, 1598, a few miles south of the present El Paso, Tex., Oñate took formal possession "of all the kingdoms and provinces of New Mexico." By early autumn the upper Rio Grande pueblos had been reached, a capital had been founded at San Juan, missionary work had been begun, and the submission of the Indians received. This submission, save for the rebellion of Ácoma, which was suppressed with great cruelty early in 1599, was definitive for nearly a hundred years.

Oñate's contract—partly because of the king's interest in anticipating other European nations in the discovery of the supposed northwest passage—called for exploration, and in September 1598 the first of a series of expensive exploring expeditions was dispatched from San Juan. Others followed in rapid succession, notably one to Kansas in 1601, and one to the Gulf of California in 1605. In protest against these expeditions, which sapped the energy and resources of the colony, some of the settlers fled to Santa Bárbara but they were arrested and returned.

Meanwhile Oñate had been obliged to ask for reinforcements. Royal interest in New Mexico was still high and in 1605 twenty-four additional soldiers and two missionaries were sent. This aid proved insufficient, and for the next three years New Mexico's fate hung in the balance. Apparently for the purpose of bluffing the viceroy into sending reinforcements, Oñate resigned in August 1607, and notified the viceroy that if reinforcements were not forthcoming by June 1608 the province would be abandoned. The viceroy called Oñate's bluff and accepted his resignation, but instructed him to remain in the province. Soon thereafter the *cabildo* at the new capital, San Gabriel, elected him governor *ad interim*, and upon his refusal to serve, chose his son, Cristóbal. Since Cristóbal was an unsatisfactory choice, the viceroy in Mexico sent Don Pedro Peralta [*q.v.*] as governor, with sixteen soldiers, and orders were given for Oñate to return within three months.

Oñate went back to Mexico, and was tried on charges of misrepresenting the value of New Mexico, mistreatment of his soldiers and the Indians, and disobedience to vice-regal orders. He was found guilty on some of the charges in 1614 and sentenced to perpetual banishment from New Mexico, and from Mexico city for four years, and fined 6,000 ducats. In 1622 he appealed against the judgment, but though he had the support of the Council of the Indies, he failed to obtain the pardon of the king. He may have been successful later, for in 1624 he was in Spain trying to obtain a position in Mexico, Guadalajara, or the Philippines. His endeavor was not successful, but he was entrusted with the visitation of mines in Spain. His death, therefore, must have occurred in or after that year.

[Printed sources for the work of Oñate are *Colección de Documentos Inéditos, Relativos al Descubrimiento . . . de América*, vol. XVI (1871), and in C. W. Hackett, *Hist. Documents Relating to New Mexico . . .*, vol. I (1923). English translations of original sources are in Hackett, *op. cit.*, and in H. E. Bolton, *Spanish Exploration . . .* (1916). A contemporary account, written by a member of the expedition, is Gaspar Pérez de Villagrá, *Historia de la Nueva Mexico del Capitan Gaspar de Villagra* (1610), reprint with notes (2 vols., 1900). See also Beatrice Q. Cornish, "The Ancestry and Family of Juan de Oñate," in H. M. Stephens and H. E. Bolton, *The Pacific Ocean in Hist.* (1917); H. E. Bolton, *The Spanish Borderlands* (1921); G. P. Hammond, "Don Juan de Oñate and the Founding of New Mexico," in *Hist. Soc. of N. Mex. Pubs. in Hist.*, vol. II (Oct. 1927), also in *N. Mex. Hist. Rev.*, Jan. 1926–Apr. 1927; G. P. Hammond, "The Conviction of Don Juan de Oñate, New Mexico's First Governor," in *New Spain and the Anglo-American West. Hist. Contributions Presented to Herbert Eugene Bolton* (1932), I, 67–79.]

C. W. H.

ONDERDONK, BENJAMIN TREDWELL (July 15, 1791–Apr. 30, 1861), bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church, was born and died in New York City. He was the son of Dr. John and Deborah (Ustick) Onderdonk, and a descendant of Andries Onderdonk, a native of New Castle, Del., who died in 1687; Bishop Henry Ustick Onderdonk [*q.v.*] was Benjamin's brother. He was graduated at Columbia College in 1809, studied theology, and was ordained deacon at St. Paul's Chapel, New York, Aug. 2, 1812, and priest, in Trinity Church, Newark, N. J., July 26, 1815, by Bishop John Henry Hobart. In 1813 he married Eliza Moscrop. That same year he was appointed assistant minister of Trinity Church, New York, which position he held until his elevation to the episcopate, gaining a reputation as an excellent preacher and an energetic worker. From about 1821 he served as professor of ecclesiastical history at the General Theological Seminary, New York, and also as professor of the nature, ministry, and polity of the Church; from 1816 to 1830 he was secretary of the New York diocesan con-

vention. On Nov. 26, 1830, he was consecrated bishop of New York, in St. John's Chapel, by Bishops William White, Thomas Church Brownell, and Henry Ustick Onderdonk.

In November 1844 he was presented for trial upon the charges of "immorality and impurity" by Bishops William Meade of Virginia, James Hervey Otey of Tennessee, and Stephen Elliott, Jr., of Georgia. On Jan. 3, 1845, after a trial by the court of bishops provided for by the canons of his Church, he was suspended "from the office of a Bishop in the Church of God, and from all the functions of the sacred ministry." It was the first trial of a bishop ever held under the canons of the Episcopal Church (since the suspension of his brother the previous year had been effected without a trial) and was the most sensational episode in the history of the Church up to that time. The canon which gave the right of presentment to any three bishops, as well as to the bishop's own diocese, had been passed only three months previous to the trial. The *Churchman*, at that time representing the High Church party, charged that the presentment and condemnation of Bishop Onderdonk were the result of a Low Church conspiracy. The trustees of the General Theological Seminary refused to remove him from his professorship in that institution. It is recorded that "the proceedings of the court were almost universally reprobated." In 1859 a resolution was offered in the New York diocesan convention requesting "the House of Bishops to remit and terminate the Judicial Sentence of Suspension, under which the Bishop of the Diocese of New York is now suffering disability." In presenting the resolution, Dr. Francis Vinton argued that the canon under which Onderdonk was tried was responsible for the indefinite character of the sentence, since it provided only for "admonition, suspension or degradation"; that its injustice had been officially recognized, since the next General Convention (1847) had revised the canon to provide remission or modification, and had adopted another specifying that under no circumstances should any similar indefinite sentence be passed on any one in the future. He pleaded that the convention should ask to have done in Onderdonk's case what the later canon provided—a time limit set for such suspension. In 1850, furthermore, a canon had been passed establishing procedure for the resignation of a suspended bishop, thereby demonstrating that Onderdonk still retained his jurisdiction. In the same year another canon provided for a provisional incumbent to serve during the suspension of a bishop, thus indicating that the Church intended to make possible a suspended bishop's restoration. A memorial to the General Convention from Bishop Onderdonk was read, in which he begged "the mercy of the removal of my sentence," and stated that he could not acknowledge all the crimes imputed to him, adding, "I cannot but believe parts of my conduct to have betrayed indiscretion." The resolution was passed in the diocesan convention by vote of 147 to 19 (clerical) and 75 to 46 (lay). The General Convention of 1859 did not act on the petition, and before the next General Convention, Onderdonk had died. His conduct during his years of suspension was a matter for high commendation on all sides. He was a stanch and vigorous High Churchman, an aggressive, able administrator and opponent. His only written works were episcopal addresses, charges, and pastorals.

[Elmer Onderdonk, *Geneal. of the Onderdonk Family in America* (1910); W. S. Perry, *The Bishops of the Am. Church* (1897); H. G. Batterson, *A Sketch-Book of the Am. Episcopate* (1878); *Proc. of the Court . . . for the Trial of the Rt. Rev. Benjamin T. Onderdonk, D.D.* (1845); *Bishop Onderdonk's Statement: A Statement of Facts and Circumstances Connected with the Recent Trial of the Bishop of N. Y.* (1845); *Appeal from the Sentence of the Bishop of N. Y. in Behalf of His Diocese* (1845), and other pamphlets on the controversy; *Jour. of . . . the Seventy-sixth Convention of the Prot. Episc. Ch. in the Diocese of N. Y.* (1859); *Churchman*, 1844–45, 1861; *Church Jour.*, 1844–45, 1861.] G. E. S.

ONDERDONK, HENRY (June 11, 1804–June 22, 1886), teacher, local historian, was born at Manhasset, in North Hempstead, N. Y., the son of Joseph Onderdonck (*sic*) and Dorothy Monfoort, his wife, and the seventh child in a family of ten. He was descended from two old Long Island families, being fourth in descent from Andries Onderdonk, who purchased land in Flatbush, L. I., in 1672. In 1827 Henry was graduated at Columbia. On Nov. 28, 1828, he was married to his cousin, Maria Hegeman Onderdonk. At an early period he devoted himself to teaching, becoming principal of Union Hall Academy, at Jamaica, an institution opened in 1792. To the duties of principal he added instruction in the classics, then the leading course in preparatory schools; but equally congenial was that which he made his recreation, the study of Long Island antiquities. He also as occasion arose delivered lectures on temperance. After following the teaching profession for thirty-three years, he retired and engaged wholly in the work for which he had been preparing by his investigations in history and genealogy.

In the preface to *Revolutionary Incidents of Suffolk and Kings Counties*, Onderdonk declares: "The present volume completes a plan the compiler had some years since conceived, of collect-

ing and arranging in chronological order, the scattered and fragmentary notices of the events that occurred on Long Island, during our Revolutionary struggle" (p. 5). In respect for original documents as the source of knowledge and the basis of opinion, Onderdonk may rightly be pronounced a forerunner of a later school, whose claims are pronounced with much more emphasis than he ever employed. Official and military papers, diaries, old newspapers, and the conversations of aged people contributed material, and sometimes by their simplicity and bare reality they create an impression beyond the power of any literary presentation. Onderdonk understood the historic value of church records, which embody constant and unobtrusive influences in the life of communities, as important as the forces which give dramatic interest to political and military history. His work represents the painstaking collection and compilation of such materials as yield no great reputations but bring honor in the end to those who lay these foundations for prouder structures. Included in his published writings are: *Antiquities of the Parish Church, Jamaica (including Newtown and Flushing)* (1880); *The Annals of Hempstead, N. Y., 1643 to 1832, also the Rise and Growth of the Society of Friends on Long Island and in New York 1657 to 1826* (1878); *Antiquities of the Parish Church, Hempstead, including Oysterbay and the Churches of Suffolk County* (1880); *The Bibliography of Long Island* (1866); *Documents and Letters Intended to Illustrate the Revolutionary Incidents of Queens County* (1846); *History of the First Reformed Dutch Church of Jamaica, L. I.* (1884); *Queens County in Olden Times* (1865); *Revolutionary Incidents of Suffolk and Kings Counties* (1849).

[See the *Hist. of Queens County, N. Y.* (1882); Onderdonk's *Revolutionary Incidents of Suffolk and Kings Counties* (1849); Elmer Onderdonk, *Geneal. of the Onderdonk Family in America* (1910); *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, June 24, 1886.] R. E. D.

ONDERDONK, HENRY USTICK (Mar. 16, 1789–Dec. 6, 1858), bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church, was born in New York City, the son of Dr. John and Deborah (Ustick) Onderdonk; Benjamin T. Onderdonk [*q.v.*] was a younger brother. His ancestry is traced back to one Andries Onderdonk of New Castle, Del., who married Maria Van der Vliet, and died in 1687. Henry was graduated from Columbia College in 1805 and then studied medicine in London and Edinburgh, receiving the degree of M.D. from the University of Edinburgh. Returning to New York City, he became a practising physician, and from 1814 to 1815 was associate editor of the *New York Medical Magazine*. On Apr. 15, 1811, he married Eliza Carter. Dissatisfied with his profession, he studied for orders under the oversight of Bishop John Henry Hobart [*q.v.*], who ordained him deacon in St. Paul's Chapel, New York, Dec. 8, 1815, and priest, in Trinity Church, New York, Apr. 11, 1816. After four years in Canandaigua, then a missionary frontier post of the Episcopal Church in Western New York, he was elected, in 1820, to the rectorship of St. Ann's Church, Brooklyn, N. Y.

Having been elected assistant bishop of Pennsylvania, after a bitter partisan controversy between the High Churchmen and Low Churchmen of the day, he was consecrated at Christ Church, Philadelphia, Oct. 25, 1827, thereby becoming associated with Bishop William White [*q.v.*]. At that time Onderdonk was one of the most noted churchmen in the ministry of the Episcopal Church. On the death of Bishop White in 1836 he became the second bishop of Pennsylvania. In 1844 he wrote to the House of Bishops confessing his habitual abuse of intoxicating liquor, tendering his resignation of his jurisdiction, and asking for discipline. His resignation was accepted (*Journal of . . . General Convention*, 1844, p. 104), and he was suspended by the House of Bishops from "all public exercise of the offices and functions of the sacred Ministry, and in particular from all exercise whatsoever of the office and work of a Bishop in the Church of God" (*Ibid.*, pp. 171–72). He accepted his sentence in a spirit of humility, spending part of his period of suspension in writing. So exemplary was his conduct that he was restored to the active ministry by the House of Bishops in 1856, two years before his death.

Onderdonk was known as one of the outstanding theological scholars of his day and an expert controversialist. In the early part of 1844 he had been the cause of an extensive controversy, carried on chiefly in the church press. Learning that Bishop John H. Hopkins [*q.v.*] of Vermont intended to give a series of fifteen lectures on Romanism in Philadelphia, occupying in rotation the pulpits of five parishes, he wrote Hopkins that he had received the information with "regret and astonishment"—regret, because he felt the subject calculated to cause undue agitation and excitement, and astonishment, because he had not been consulted as head of the diocese. Bishop Hopkins canceled the proposed lectures, with a threat that he would take the matter to the General Convention. Among Onderdonk's published works are: *An Appeal to the Religious*

Public of Canandaigua (1813); *Episcopacy Tested by Scriptures* (1830); *Episcopacy Examined and Reexamined* (1835); *Essay on Regeneration* (1835); *Family Devotions from the Liturgy* (1835); *Thoughts on Some of the Objections to Christianity* (1835); *Sermons and Episcopal Charges* (2 vols., 1851). He wrote several hymns and versions of the Psalms, which appeared in the collection of Psalms and hymns appended to the prayer book of that day.

[Elmer Onderdonk, *Geneal. of the Onderdonk Family in America* (1910); W. S. Perry, *The Bishops of the Am. Ch.* (1897); H. G. Batterson, *A Sketch-Book of the Am. Episcopate* (1878); *Jour. of the Proc. of the Bishops, Clergy and Laity of the Protestant Episcopal Ch. in the U. S. A., Assembled in a Gen. Convention*, 1844, 1856; the *Churchman*, 1844–58; *Episcopal Recorder*, 1844–58; *Pennsylvanian* (Phila.), Dec. 7, 1858.] G. E. S.

O'NEAL, EDWARD ASBURY (Sept. 20, 1818–Nov. 7, 1890), Confederate soldier, governor of Alabama, was born in Madison County, Ala., while Alabama was still a territory. His father, Edward O'Neal, a native of Ireland, and his mother, Rebecca (Wheat) O'Neal, of Huguenot extraction, had removed from South Carolina shortly before his birth. When Edward was very young, his father died, and his mother, who appears to have been a woman of great force of character, managed the business affairs of the family and taught her two sons until they were ready to enter the academy. He not only graduated from the academy but also graduated from LaGrange College in 1836. On Apr. 12, 1838, he was married to Olivia Moore at Huntsville. He studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1840, and began practice at Florence, Ala. Within a year he was chosen by the state legislature to serve as solicitor of the 4th circuit and held this office for four years. He was always interested in politics. He was a candidate for Congress in 1848 but was defeated. He became one of the leaders of the movement for secession in northern Alabama. In 1861 he enlisted in the Confederate army and was chosen major of the 9th Alabama Infantry. His promotion was rapid. In October of that year he became lieutenant-colonel, and the next spring he was raised to the rank of colonel and assigned to the 26th Alabama Infantry. He led his regiment in the battles of the Peninsular campaign, was wounded at the battle of Seven Pines and again at Boonsboro, led Rodes's Division in the battle of Chancellorsville, where he was again wounded, and he was in command of the same division at Gettysburg. Early in 1864 the 26th Alabama was returned to the state to recruit its ranks. From there it was sent to Dalton, Ga., to aid in the defense against Sherman. He

led Canty's Brigade at Marietta and at Peachtree Creek. He was relieved of his command after this campaign and placed on detached duty. When the war closed he was in Alabama arresting deserters from the Army of the Tennessee. For the last eighteen months of the war he acted as brigadier-general, but he never received a commission.

At the close of the war he returned to Florence to resume the practice of his profession and his activity in politics. He was the leader of the Democratic party in northern Alabama during the Reconstruction period and a member of the constitutional convention of 1875. In 1882 he was elected governor of the state and was reelected in 1884. His administration was a turning point in the history of Alabama. The development of the state, which had been arrested by the war and Reconstruction, was taken up again; the state was prosperous, and for the first time money was available for something more than necessities. His major interests during his administrations were education and prison reform. Normal schools were established, and greatly increased appropriations were made for other state schools through his influence. The first steps toward prison reform were taken with the establishment of the board of convict inspectors. At the close of his administration he returned to Florence and lived there until his death.

[Manuscript material in the State Department of Archives and History, Montgomery; Willis Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); J. E. Saunders, *Early Settlers of Ala.* (1899); *Confederate Mil. Hist.*, ed. by C. A. Evans (1899), vol. VII; T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), vol. IV; *Gov. Edward A. O'Neal . . . Proceedings of the Joint Session of the Senate and House of Representatives of Ala.* (1927); *Daily Reg.* (Mobile), Nov. 8, 1890.] H. F.

O'NEALE, MARGARET (1796–Nov. 8, 1879), was the wife of John H. Eaton [*q.v.*], secretary of war under Andrew Jackson. Few careers have been as varied, colorful, and dramatic as that of "Peggy" O'Neale. Her father, William O'Neale, was a tavern-keeper of Washington, D. C., from the founding of the city. Peggy was a pretty child and was spoiled by guests at her father's inn. Her mother, Rhoda Howell, was apparently a woman of refinement and, according to her daughter (*Autobiography, post*, p. 1), a sister of Richard Howell [*q.v.*], governor of New Jersey. Peggy attended Mrs. Hayward's Seminary in Washington and for a little while Madame Day's school in New York. At an early age she was married to John B. Timberlake, a purser in the navy, and by him had a son and two daughters. When John H. Eaton first came to Washington in 1818 as sena-

tor from Tennessee, he took lodgings at the O'Neale tavern and became acquainted with the vivacious daughter of his host. When Andrew Jackson also came to Washington in 1823 as senator, he took up his quarters with his friend Eaton and wrote home to Mrs. Jackson of the "amiable" O'Neale family, and particularly of Mrs. Timberlake, who "plays on the Piano Delightfully, & every Sunday evening entertains her pious mother with Sacred music to which we are invited" (Jackson Papers, Dec. 21, 1823, Library of Congress). Presently rumors began to circulate to the effect that Eaton had become too familiar with Mrs. Timberlake. Then in 1828 her husband died while on duty in the Mediterranean. It was rumored that he had committed suicide. Within the year Eaton proposed to marry the fetching widow and consulted his friend Jackson, who had just been elected President, as to the propriety of his intentions. Jackson, who had always been fond of Peggy, advised the match as a means of discrediting the rumors, and the wedding accordingly took place on Jan. 1, 1829.

It was now time for the new President to select his cabinet and Eaton was docketed for the secretaryship of war. Other prominent Tennesseeans had reason to expect the place, but Eaton was one of those personal followers in whom Jackson gloried. A great clamor was raised by the élite of Washington because of Eaton's wife; but Jackson, whose beloved wife had just died under the sting of unjust imputations, would not heed it. He was enough of a gentleman to be chivalrous and enough of a frontiersman to be simple, direct, and stubborn. He would stand by his friend and his own prerogatives. His family broke up and his cabinet dissolved in the heat of the social war, but the President did not desert Peggy. Eaton resigned from the cabinet in 1831 and in 1834 he was appointed governor of Florida. In 1836 he was sent to Madrid as minister to the court of His Catholic Majesty. Here his wife basked for four years in the brilliance of a society which had no prejudice against her. In 1840 the Eatons returned to the United States and settled down again in Washington. There Eaton died in 1856. Peggy, a wealthy widow, devoted herself to the rearing of her grandchildren but soon succumbed to the charms of an Italian dancing master, Antonio Buchignani, and married him. After a few years of married life her husband defrauded her of her property and eloped with her grand-daughter. It was a desolate old woman who dragged out her existence until 1879 in the city which had seen her fortunes rise and sink so strikingly.

[*The Autobiog. of Peggy Eaton* (1932), dictated in 1873, is revealing if not reliable. The manuscript was left in the hands of Mrs. Eaton's pastor in New York City, the Rev. Chas. F. Deems, and its publication was undertaken by his son, the Rev. Edward M. Deems. The popular biography by Queena Pollack, *Peggy Eaton, Democracy's Mistress* (1931), is apparently based upon authentic source materials, but is not documented. There are accounts of Margaret O'Neale in Jas. Parton, *Life of Andrew Jackson* (1860), vol. III, and Meade Minnigerode, *Some Am. Ladies* (1926), and there are references to her in the works dealing with the administration of Andrew Jackson. Her maiden name is variously spelled, but two deeds in the office of the Recorder of Deeds of the District of Columbia are signed by her father "William O'Neale."] T. P. A.

O'NEALL, JOHN BELTON (Apr. 10, 1793–Dec. 27, 1863), author and jurist, was born on Bush River, Newberry District, S. C. The son of Anne (Kelly) and Hugh O'Neall, he was of Irish ancestry on both sides. He was a descendant of Hugh O'Neill or O'Neale who, about 1730, deserted from a British ship at anchor in the Delaware River and settled on the Susquehanna River, where he is said to have changed his name to O'Neall in order to escape detection. As a child John Belton O'Neall possessed a precocious mind with a remarkable memory, and he acquired a sufficient mastery of Latin and Greek at the Newberry academy to enable him to enter the junior class at the South Carolina College, where he graduated in 1812.

He entered the militia, in which he rose to the rank of major-general by the time he was thirty-two. When he was twenty-three he became a representative from Newberry District in the state legislature, but he was defeated for reëlection because of his support of a measure increasing the salaries of judges. In 1822, however, he was again elected to the legislature, where he sat for three consecutive terms and served as speaker during the last two terms. In 1827 he was known to favor a financial measure regarded by his constituents as extravagant, although as speaker he did not vote upon it, and he was not reëlected the next year. His second retirement from the legislature opened for him a wider field, the one in which his greatest reputation was achieved. He had been admitted to the bar in 1814, and the legislature elected him circuit judge in 1828. Two years later he was advanced to the South Carolina court of appeals. Together with David Johnson and William Harper he performed the duties of this court until 1835, when its decision in the cases of *The State ex relatione Ed. McCready* vs. *B. F. Hunt* and of *The State ex relatione James McDaniel* vs. *Thos. McMeekin* (2 *Hill*, 1), declaring unconstitutional the test oath devised by the nullifiers, incurred the hostility of the dominant party in the state and caused the court to be abolished.

The judges, however, were transferred to the other courts of the state, and he was assigned to the court of law appeals. In this capacity he served for the remainder of his life. Upon the death of John S. Richardson in 1850 he was elected president of the court of law appeals and of the court of errors, and in 1859 he became chief justice of South Carolina.

As a leader in the cause of temperance he exerted a profound influence upon the state. In his early youth, when he sold rum over the counter of his father's grocery to half-pint customers, he acquired an aversion to the traffic in intoxicating liquor, and this was intensified into hatred when indulgence on the part of his father led the latter to bankruptcy and the temporary loss of his mind. In 1832 he took a pledge to abstain from liquor and, in 1833, to abstain from tobacco. He forthwith plunged into the cause of temperance reform. He allied himself with the Head's Spring temperance society, which affiliated with the "Washington movement," a national temperance organization that was then making its appearance in South Carolina, and in 1841 he was appointed president of the South Carolina Temperance Society. In 1849 he joined the Sons of Temperance, in October 1850 was elected president of that body in South Carolina, and at the Richmond meeting in 1852 was elected president of the Sons of Temperance of North America. He delivered numerous addresses for the cause and for a time conducted a column, "The Drunkard's Looking-Glass," in the *South Carolina Temperance Advocate,* a weekly paper published at Columbia.

He was an active and many-sided man; he was president of the Columbia and Greenville railroad, was greatly interested in scientific agriculture and was for many years president of the Newberry agricultural society, one of the earliest of its kind in the state, and served as a trustee of the South Carolina College for forty years. Although of Quaker ancestry he became a member of the Baptist Church and served successively as president of the Newberry Baptist Bible Society, of the Bible board of the state Baptist Convention, and of the South Carolina Baptist Convention. He delivered many addresses on education, Sunday schools, and railroads; among them the two following especially set forth his views on temperance and education, "Address to Lawyers," in *A Course of Lectures on . . . Temperance . . . before the Charleston Total Abstinence Society by Fourteen of its Members . . . 1851* (1852) and *Oration Delivered before the Clariosophic Society . . . 1826* (1827). A writer of ease and facility, he contributed dozens of fugitive essays and letters to the newspapers of the state. His longer works include *The Negro Law of South Carolina* (1848), a paper originally read before a meeting of the state agricultural society; *The Annals of Newberry, Historical, Biographical, and Anecdotal* (1859), that contains a good deal of information about his early life; and *The Biographical Sketches of the Bench and Bar of South Carolina* (2 vols., 1859), a collection still regarded as authoritative. Opposed to both nullification and secession, he was active in the deliberations and conventions of the Union party in 1832, but owing to his advanced age he took no steps against the secession movement in 1860. He was a handsome man. His voice was remarkably clear, and on the bench his charges are said to have been eloquent and impressive. He was married, on June 25, 1818, to Helen Pope of Edgefield. Several years later, upon the death of his grandmother, Hannah (Belton) Kelly, he inherited "Springfield," an estate near Newberry, and resided there until his death.

[Sketch by Mitchell King in *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar, ante,* vol. I, copied in U. R. Brooks, *S. C. Bench and Bar,* vol. I (1908) and abridged in *Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas* (1892), vol. I; Maximilian Laborde, *A Tribute to Hon. J. B. O'Neall* (1872); *Addresses of J. H. Carlisle,* ed. by J. H. Carlisle, Jr. (1910); *Charleston Daily Courier,* Dec. 30, 1863.] J. W. P—n.

O'NEILL, JAMES (Nov. 15, 1849–Aug. 10, 1920), actor, was one of many foreign-born players whose entire professional life was passed on the American stage. He was born in Kilkenny, Ireland, the son of Edmond and Katherine O'Neill, and was brought by his parents to America when he was five years of age. His schooling, obtained in Buffalo, Cincinnati, and other cities, was meager, and his first appearances on the stage were made in Cincinnati in 1867. In one of these he found himself on the stage carrying a spear as a member of the guard that was to arrest Edwin Forrest in one of his typical robustious characters, and he was so overawed by the reputation and personality of the star that he failed utterly in his task. Undaunted by this failure, he succeeded in securing successive positions in stock companies in Baltimore, Cleveland, Chicago, and other cities.

Finally his great opportunity came, and on Oct. 2, 1876, he became a member of the Union Square Theatre Company in New York, sharing for a time leading rôles with Charles R. Thorne, Jr. His début there was made as the cripple Pierre in *The Two Orphans,* one of the most sympathetic rôles in that lachrymose melodrama, and among the other characters he acted there

during that and later seasons were Vladimir in *The Danicheffs*, Mons. Florion in *The Mother's Secret*, Maurice in *Miss Multon*, George Lovell in *The Man of Success*, Mons. de Montaiglin in *Raymonde*, and Julian Gray in *The New Magdalen*. Unlike some actors who have only the one quality to help them advance in their profession, he possessed both the advantage of physical attraction and the distinction of intellectual attainments. He has been described in his early days as "of faultless figure, as erect in carriage as a major, with dark hair and deep brown eyes, darker and deeper for the clearness and whiteness of his complexion, his manner easy and bearing graceful, his voice rich-toned and musical." In 1877 he went to San Francisco and remained there three years, his most notable appearance in that city being as Christ in Salmi Morse's production of the Passion Play at the Grand Opera House which aroused so much discussion and opposition that it was withdrawn by legal process and caused the arrest and fining of members of the company.

With his first appearance in 1882 as Edmond Dantes in a stage version of *Monte Cristo* began a new era in his career. Heretofore he had been known as a versatile actor. Henceforth for practically the rest of his life he was condemned to be identified with one play and one character. Season after season his reappearance as Edmond Dantes was an annual event in many cities throughout the country. He made again and again ineffectual attempts to abandon it, and while he failed to attract the public in one new part after another, in *Monte Cristo* he was always successful. Remembering his earlier triumphs in a wide range of parts, he naturally had no ambition to be famous in one character, but the public would not allow him to be anyone but Edmond Dantes. In time, therefore, he inevitably came to act it by rote, and the interminable repetition of "The world is mine," and the successive "One," "Two," and "Three," became bywords of the stage. Among the other plays he produced from time to time were *Fontenelle*, by Harrison Grey Fiske and Minnie Maddern Fiske, and *Don Carlos de Seville*, a poetic drama by Eugene Fellner. The public did not care to see him in any of them. He was no more fortunate with revivals of *The Three Musketeers*, *The Dead Heart*, and *Virginius*.

In his last active years on the stage he helped in the making of a motion picture version of *Monte Cristo*, and his last real acting was done as Jesse, the Jewish patrician in *The Wanderer*, during the season of 1916–17. William Winter describes him (*New York Tribune*, Oct. 24, 1900, p. 9), while he was still in the full flight of his *Monte Cristo* career, as a "thorough actor, powerful when power is required, very versatile, and in his demeanor, gesture, vocalism, and spirit, honest and sincere," and creating and sustaining "romantic illusion." For some two years before his death, which occurred at New London, Conn., where he had made his home for many years, he had been in failing health, the result of an automobile accident. He had played the part of Edmond Dantes more than six thousand times. He was married to Ellen Quinlan in July 1875, and she accompanied him on many of his tours, although he once remarked that she had somewhat of an aversion for the atmosphere of the stage. Eugene O'Neill, the American dramatist, is their son.

[See: H. G. Fiske, "James O'Neill," in *Famous Am. Actors of Today* (1896), ed. by F. E. McKay and C. E. L. Wingate; A. D. Storms, *The Players Blue Book* (1901); J. B. Clapp and E. F. Edgett, *Players of the Present*, pt. 2 (1901); T. A. Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); Arthur Hornblow, *A Hist. of the Theatre in America* (1919); A. H. Quinn, *A Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Civil War to the Present Day* (2 vols., 1927); Interview in *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, Feb. 2, 1895; the *Inter Ocean* (Chicago), Mar. 8, 1903; "Recalling the Romantic Drama," *Lit. Digest*, Aug. 28, 1920; the *Sun* (N. Y.), *N. Y. Herald*, *N. Y. Tribune*, and *Springfield Republican*, Aug. 11, 1920.]

E. F. E.

O'NEILL, JOHN (Mar. 8, 1834–Jan. 7, 1878), soldier and Fenian leader, was born at Drumgallon in the parish of Clontibret, County Monaghan, Ireland. His father died before the boy's birth. John remained in his native parish, obtaining the elements of an education, until 1848, when he emigrated to America to join his mother and her elder children, who had settled in Elizabeth, N. J., some years before. He attended school for another year, and afterward worked successively as a shop clerk, a traveling book-agent, and proprietor of a Catholic bookshop in Richmond. In 1857 he joined the 2nd United States Dragoons for the "Mormon War." In Utah, it appears, he deserted, and made his way to California, where he joined the 1st Cavalry, with which he was serving as a sergeant when the Civil War broke out. With this regiment he returned to the East to join the Union army and fought in the Peninsular campaign. In December 1862 he was appointed second lieutenant in the 5th Indiana Cavalry, and was promoted first lieutenant in the following April.

He soon acquired the reputation of being an unusually active and daring officer. He distinguished himself near Glasgow, Ky., in June 1863, and again shortly afterward at Buffington Bar, in the course of Morgan's Ohio raid. On Dec. 2 he was severely wounded at Walker's

Ford. Feeling that he was being passed over for promotion, in the spring of 1864 he resigned from his regiment and was appointed captain in the 17th United States Colored Infantry, only to leave the service in November. About this time he married Mary Crow. While working successfully as a claims agent in Tennessee, he became interested in the plans for an invasion of Canada proposed by the party headed by W. R. Roberts [*q.v.*] in the Fenian Brotherhood. He acted as a Fenian organizer in his district and in May 1866 led a detachment from Nashville to take part in the attack. Finding himself in command of the raiding party at Buffalo he led a force of 600 men, by his account, across the Niagara and occupied the Canadian village of Fort Erie. The next day he defeated a small column of Canadian volunteers near Ridgeway, and that night escaped from Canada with his men by boat before British troops closed in on his position. The raiders were arrested by a United States gunboat but released a few days later, and a charge of breach of the neutrality laws brought against O'Neill was dropped.

A few months later he was appointed "inspector-general of the Irish Republican Army," and at the end of 1867 he replaced Roberts as president of his branch of the Brotherhood and proceeded to prepare for another attack on Canada. There were obstructionists within his own organization, but his threats caused much alarm in Canada. In 1870 he quarreled with his "senate," and only a fraction of the Fenian organization supported him when on May 25 he attempted a raid at Eccles Hill on the Vermont border. His men fled when the Canadians opened fire, and he himself was arrested by a United States marshal and sentenced to two years' imprisonment, but he was released by presidential pardon after three months. He declared he would not again trouble Canada but was persuaded by W. B. O'Donoghue, formerly a member of Louis Riel's rebel government at Fort Garry, to attack Manitoba. The Fenian council, now mistrusting O'Neill, rejected the scheme, but he made the attempt with a few adherents on Oct. 5, 1871. He seized the Hudson's Bay post at Pembina (on territory then disputed between Canada and the United States) but was immediately arrested by United States troops. He was released by the American courts. Later he became agent for a firm of land speculators who desired Irish settlers for a tract in Holt County, Nebr. While thus engaged he died at Omaha. The chief town of Holt County bears his name.

The idea of invading Canada as a means of gaining Irish freedom can hardly be accounted other than singularly foolish, but friends and foes credited O'Neill with sincerity and courage in his pursuit of his object. He rejected assassination as an Irish weapon, insisting on "fair and honorable fight"; and though Fenianism was condemned by the church, he claimed to be a devout Catholic. His egotism made it hard for him to work with others.

[See O'Neill's own publications: *Address . . . to the Officers and Members of the Fenian Brotherhood, on the State of the Organization* (1868); *Message . . . to the Seventh Nat. Cong.* (1868); *Official Report . . . on the Attempt to Invade Canada . . . 1870 . . . also a Report of the Battle of Ridgeway* (1870); letter in the *Irish American* (N. Y.), Sept. 28, 1867. See also: "Fenians" and "McMicken Reports" series in the Macdonald Papers, Pub. Archives of Canada; Henri Le Caron (Thomas Beach), *Twenty-five Years in the Secret Service* (1892); John Savage, *Fenian Heroes and Martyrs* (1868); G. McMicken, *The Abortive Fenian Raid on Manitoba* (1888), reprinted in *Trans. and Proc. Hist. and Sci. Soc. of Manitoba*, vol. I (1889); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*, I ser. XXIII (pt. 1), XXXI (pt. 1); III ser. IV; *Official Army Reg. of the Volunteer Force of the U. S. Army* (Civil War), pts. VI, VIII; *Report of the Adj. Gen. of . . . Ind.*, vol. III (1866); *Irish American*, Jan. 19 and Feb. 2, 1878.]

C. P. S.

O'NEILL, MARGARET L. [See O'Neale, Margaret, 1796–1879].

OPDYKE, GEORGE (Dec. 7, 1805–June 12, 1880), merchant, municipal reformer, publicist, was born in Kingwood Township, Hunterdon County, N. J. He was a son of George and Mary (Stout) Opdycke and a descendant of Louris Jansen Opdycke, who emigrated from Holland to New Netherland prior to 1653. He attended a country school, became a teacher at the age of sixteen, and clerk in a store at Baptistown, N. J., at the age of eighteen. In 1825 he borrowed $500 and in company with another youth went to Cleveland, Ohio, where they established a store. The venture proved only moderately profitable, and the next year they sold their business and sought a more promising location. At New Orleans, learning that clothing was being sold at a profit of one hundred per cent., they set up a store and began manufacturing their own stock. The demand for clothing soon outran the capacity of the plant. Opdyke, seeking a greater source of merchandise, went to New York in 1832 and established probably the first important clothing factory in the city. He also engaged in the retail business there and later opened branch stores at Memphis, Tenn., and at Charleston, S. C. He made and sold principally rough clothing for plantation hands. In 1846 he placed the business in charge of his brother-in-law, John D. Scott, and turned his attention to importing and selling drygoods at wholesale. Both enterprises prospered, and by 1853 Opdyke was a millionaire. During the Civil

War he manufactured uniforms and arms for the Federal government. In 1869, having retired from merchandising, he established the banking house of George Opdyke & Company, which successfully withstood the panic of 1873, though with considerable loss to the fortune of the founder.

Opdyke's Southern experiences convinced him that slavery was an economic evil, not to be extended under any circumstances. In 1848 he began an active political career as a delegate to the convention of the Free-Soil party at Buffalo, and as an unsuccessful candidate for Congress. In 1854 he became a Republican. He was a member of the New York Assembly, 1859; mayor of New York, 1862–63; member of the state constitutional convention, 1867–68; and of the constitutional commission, 1872–73. In politics he was independent, acting always on the principle that the people should have strong, honest, and efficient government. In the Assembly he effectively opposed attempts to grant franchises against the interests of New York City. He attended the Republican National Convention, 1860, and opposed the nomination of Seward because he thought him too closely associated with the Republican boss, Thurlow Weed. As mayor, he vetoed a great number of ordinances designed to grant special favors. His annual message, 1863, contained proposals of many reforms, some of which have been adopted, while others still remain on the program of the municipal reformer. He recommended an increase in the powers of the mayor, and the abolition of state commissions and of county governments which overlapped city governments. He looked forward to a greater city of "Manhattan" which would include New York, Brooklyn, and their environs.

The most severe test of his administration occurred during the draft riots in July 1863. The city had been stripped of troops to repel Lee's invasion of Pennsylvania. The police were under the control of a state commission. Under the laws and the charter the mayor's powers were moral rather than legal. Opdyke obtained the cooperation of the police commission and the soldiers and marines in the harbor forts, issued proclamations calling citizens to arms, and exerted efforts to restore order without compromising with the rioters. In the midst of the disorders the common council passed an ordinance appropriating $2,500,000 to pay the commutation of the men drafted. Opdyke vetoed it because it tended to nullify a federal law, and to put a price upon the rioters' abstaining from further violence. His own claim against the city for heavy property losses during the riots led

Weed to assert that Opdyke had overcharged the city, and also the federal government, in connection with clothing contracts. An unfortunate and indecisive libel suit resulted.

Opdyke also gained some prominence as an economist. His *Treatise on Political Economy* (1851) was designed as an American reply to John Stuart Mill's *Principles of Political Economy*. In it Opdyke expressed his opinion that fiat money was desirable if issued in limited amounts. In a later *Report on the Currency* (1858) he proposed taxing bank notes of small denominations out of existence and advocated the issuance by the national government of gold certificates. These recommendations were subsequently adopted, though not in the form desired by Opdyke. He protested against the overissuance of greenbacks during the war but afterward recommended that the volume of currency be not reduced too quickly. In appearance Opdyke was tall and slender; in manner, gracious. He was a confidant of many leaders in national affairs and a friend of many distinguished scholars and authors. He was married, on Sept. 26, 1829, to Elizabeth Hall Stryker of New Jersey. She with their six children survived him.

[*Official Documents, Addresses, Etc., of Geo. Opdyke, . . . during the Years 1862 and 1863* (1866); C. W. Opdyke, *The op Dyck Geneal.* (1889); C. M. Depew, *1795–1895: One Hundred Years of Am. Commerce* (1895), vol. II; *The Great Libel Case: Geo. Opdyke agt. Thurlow Weed* (1865); the *N. Y. Herald* and *N. Y. Tribune*, June 13, 1880.] E. C. S.

OPPENHEIM, JAMES (May 24, 1882–Aug. 4, 1932), poet and novelist, was born in St. Paul, Minn., the eldest son of Matilda (Schloss) and Joseph Oppenheim, comfortably situated American Jews. James was a baby when they moved to New York City, where he received his education, chiefly in the public schools. His father's death, when he was six, brought him, too early, a sense of responsibility, and his contacts with Dr. Felix Adler encouraged him in a strenuous ethical discipline, from which the eager sensuous boy sought refuge in the reading and writing of poetry. For a few years he took extension courses at Columbia University, supporting himself by social and secretarial work, and later, by teaching. At twenty-three, June 1, 1905, he married Lucy Seckel, and his unequal struggle with the world began in earnest. Those who recall Oppenheim as he was then, the dark brilliant eyes set in a brooding, full-lipped, sensitive face, remember him as looking the poet's part, but he could not yet accept the coveted rôle. He spent about a year as superintendent of the Hebrew Technical School for Girls (1905–07), but proving too radical, had to resign. Resolving to live

by his pen, he wrote popular sentimental short stories and mediocre novels, which expressed his passion for social justice. He believed that his writing was warped by the necessity for making it pay—he had a wife and two sons to support. The fault probably lay as much in the fact that his moral fervor exceeded his ability to convey it.

His first book of verse, *Monday Morning and Other Poems,* appeared in 1909, but it was almost half a dozen years later, when he broke sharply with the middle-class world in which he had been living, that he began to find himself as a poet. In the free rhythms and clear emotions of *Songs for the New Age* (1914) there were signs that he was coming into his own. The happiest period of his career began with the establishment, in November 1916, of *The Seven Arts,* a monthly of which he was the editor and which included among its contributors men who have since become the most distinguished of American writers. When it took a bold stand against the World War, its subsidy was withdrawn, and Oppenheim was ostracized as a traitor. Spiritually and physically sick, he found salvation in the psychoanalytic doctrines of Jung. For a time he was a practising psychoanalyst and also tried to popularize Jung's theories through the press. Unfortunately, he allowed this interest to obtrude itself into his poetry, becoming less self-critical than ever. This is obvious in *The Sea* (1924), a volume containing all of his verse that he wished to preserve. He sinks to prosy banality in the part of the book which reprints *The Mystic Warrior* (1921) and rises to the height of his attainment in the *Golden Bird* (first published separately, 1923), which contains melodious love lyrics and poems successfully fusing the themes of Whitman and the Psalmist.

He was divorced from his first wife in 1914. When his companion, Gertrude Smith, was taken from him by illness, he married Linda Gray, who cherished him in the last years of his life. These were darkened by sickness, poverty, and the clouding of his early fame. He died of tuberculosis at the age of fifty. There was warmth, candor, and sweetness in the man, but his poetic gift was inadequate fully to express his sensitive and insurgent nature. Besides the works mentioned above, he published the following books of prose: *Doctor Rast* (1909), *Wild Oats* (1910), *Pay-Envelopes* (1911), *The Nine-Tenths* (1911), *The Olympian* (1912), *Idle Wives* (1914), *The Psychology of Jung* (1925); and these volumes of verse: *The Pioneers* (1910), *War and Laughter* (1916), *The Book of Self* (1917). Parts of *The Beloved* (1915), a novel, were reprinted as free verse.

[File of *The Seven Arts;* Louis Untermeyer, *The New Era in American Poetry* (1919); Paul Rosenfeld, *Men Seen* (1925); H. W. Cook, *Our Poets of Today* (1923); *N. Y. Times,* Aug. 5 and 31, 1932; information from Arthur B. Spingarn of New York City.]

B. D.

OPTIC, OLIVER [See ADAMS, WILLIAM TAYLOR, 1822–1897].

ORCUTT, HIRAM (Feb. 3, 1815–Apr. 17, 1899), educator, was the youngest son of ten children born to John Snell and Hannah (Currier) Orcutt, of Acworth, N. H. His father, a farmer, was barely able to provide for his large family, and Hiram was obliged to work on the farm, attending the district school but three months in each year. By the time he was eighteen, he had had one term in the academy at Chester, Vt. Inspired by his instructors, he decided to prepare himself for college, and attended school at Cavendish, Vt., Unity, N. H., and Meriden, N. H. At twenty-one, he entered Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., and two years later matriculated at Dartmouth College, graduating in 1842. Throughout this period he supported himself by teaching school during the winter terms, and on Aug. 15, 1842, he married Sarah Ames Cummings, daughter of Daniel and Hannah (Ames) Cummings, of Haverhill, Mass. After her death, he married Ellen Lazette Dana, Apr. 8, 1865, daughter of Ranson Stephen and Laura Lazette (Moulton) Dana, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y. Immediately after graduating from college, be became principal of Hebron (N. H.) Academy.

In 1843, he was elected principal of Thetford (Vt.) Academy, in which position he achieved a noteworthy reputation among the headmasters of New England. After twelve conspicuously successful years of service there, he accepted an appointment as principal of the Ladies' Seminary at North Granville, N. Y. Here, too, he distinguished himself as teacher and administrator. Having fulfilled the terms of his contract in 1860, he resigned and established the Glenwood Ladies' Seminary at West Brattleboro, Vt., as a private venture. Four years later he was appointed principal of the Tilden Ladies' Seminary at West Lebanon, N. H., and conducted both institutions successfully until 1868, when he sold his interest in the school at West Brattleboro. During these years, he found time to serve also as superintendent of schools in Brattleboro, Vt., and Lebanon, N. H. (1860–66), and as editor of the *Vermont School Journal* (1861–65). He established various educational associations, and gave many lectures before teachers' institutes in both New Hampshire and Vermont. For two

years, 1870–72, he represented the town of Lebanon in the New Hampshire General Court. Here he drafted the measures which established the State Normal School at Plymouth, made public school attendance compulsory, and authorized towns to change from the district to the town system of school administration. For six years after its establishment in 1870 he assisted the Normal School as secretary of the board of trustees. In 1880, he resigned from the principalship of the Tilden Ladies' Seminary, and removed to Boston, where he spent the remainder of his life. As early as 1876, he had been a member of the advisory board of the *New England Journal of Education*, and in 1881 he was appointed associate editor and manager of the subscription department. From 1875 to 1898, when he retired, he was manager of the New England Bureau of Education, which, under his direction, became the leading teacher's agency in Massachusetts.

Orcutt was a prolific and influential contributor of educational articles to New England periodicals and newspapers. In addition, he collaborated with Truman Rickard in the preparation of *Class Book of Prose and Poetry* (1847), a book that went through many editions. He published, also, *Gleanings from School-Life Experience or, Hints to Common School Teachers, Parents and Pupils* (1858); *Methods of School Discipline* (1871); *Teachers' Manual* (1871); *Parents' Manual* (1874); *Home and School Training* (1874); *School Keeping; How to Do It* (1885), and *Among the Theologies* (1888).

[*Am. Jour. of Educ.*, Dec. 1865; Paul Monroe, *A Cyc. of Educ.*, IV (1913), 554–55; *Vital Records of Haverhill, Mass.* (1911), II, 80; J. L. Merrill, *Hist. of Acworth* (1869), pp. 90, 251–53; *New England Jour. of Educ.*, June 17, 1876; *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 18, 1899; Orcutt's autobiography (MS.) in the possession of his son, Wm. Dana Orcutt, Boston, Mass.]

R. F. S.

ORD, EDWARD OTHO CRESAP (Oct. 18, 1818–July 22, 1883), soldier, was born in Cumberland, Md., the third son of James Ord, an officer in the United States Navy for a short time, and afterwards a lieutenant in the army during the War of 1812. His mother was a daughter of Col. Daniel Cresap, who had been a lieutenant of Maryland Volunteers. His grandfather had commanded one of the regiments which Washington sent to Pennsylvania to quell the whiskey insurrection. In 1819, the Ords moved to Washington, D. C., where Edward received his early schooling mostly from his father, a thorough scholar. When but seven years old, he showed marked aptitude as a calculator. At sixteen he entered the United States Military Academy, and graduated in 1839, seventeenth in a class of thirty-one. On July 1, 1839, he was appointed second lieutenant and assigned to the 3rd Artillery. His first service was against the Seminole Indians in the Florida Everglades in 1840. He was promoted first lieutenant for gallant conduct on this expedition. In 1847 he was sent on the *Lexington* from New York, around Cape Horn, to California. Shortly after his arrival, he was dispatched with two men to capture three murderers. He caught up with them at Santa Barbara, shot one who attempted to escape, brought the other two to jury trial before an alcade court, secured their conviction, and promptly executed them. Ord had to take matters in his own hands, for the alcade would neither assume responsibility nor take any action without Ord's direction. Ord received his captaincy on Sept. 7, 1850. At San Francisco, Oct. 14, 1854, he married Mary Mercer Thompson; they had two sons and a daughter.

During 1856, in Oregon, he campaigned successfully against the Rogue River Indians and later against the Spokane Indians in Washington Territory. In 1859, he was in the Artillery School at Fort Monroe, Va., and served in the expedition that suppressed John Brown's raid at Harpers Ferry. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he was stationed at the Presidio, San Francisco, where he was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers on Sept. 14, 1861. He was ordered East and from November 1861 to May 1862 commanded a brigade in the army defending Washington, D. C. During this period, at Dranesville, Va., Dec. 20, 1861, he led the attack against the Confederate forces under Gen. J. E. B. Stuart. The morale of his men was low; but through his brilliant leadership, success was attained and the drooping spirits of the men revived. For his conduct in this action he was brevetted lieutenant-colonel.

He was appointed major-general of volunteers, May 2, 1862. In the Army of the Tennessee he commanded the left wing from August to September 1862, and on Sept. 19, was brevetted colonel for gallant and meritorious service during the advance upon Iuka, Miss. After the battle of Corinth, in October, he joined the Federal army in pursuit of the retreating Confederates at Hatchie, assumed command, and drove back the head of the Confederate column. After this engagement, in which he was severely wounded, he was brevetted brigadier-general. From June 18 to Oct. 28, 1863, he commanded the XIII Army Corps in the Army of the Tennessee in the Vicksburg campaign. During the siege of Vicksburg, he served on Grant's staff and later, July 16,

1863, took part in the capture of Jackson, Miss. From August to October 1863, he served with the Army of Western Louisiana. In March 1864 he joined Gen. Franz Sigel at Cumberland and, with Gen. George Crook, directed the campaign against Staunton, Va. On July 9, 1864, he was given command of the VIII and later, of the XVIII Army Corps, in the operations before Richmond. In the assault and capture of Fort Harrison, Sept. 29, he was severely wounded. After his recovery he assumed command, Jan. 8, 1865, of the Army of the James and the Department of North Carolina. He engaged in the various operations about Petersburg, Va., and in the pursuit of General Lee until the surrender at Appomattox Court House, Apr. 9, 1865. On Mar. 13, 1865, he had been brevetted major-general. His aide-de-camp, the Rev. S. S. Seward, said: "I never saw him under any circumstances lose his self-control or forfeit for an instant his character as a courteous gentleman. . . . Before battle . . . he was exceedingly cautious . . . but as soon as the first bullet whistled over his head he seemed to lose all sense of fear, all hesitation, all thought, except to go forward and win the victory" (*New York Tribune*, July 26, 1883).

Following the war he commanded several military departments in turn until he was retired, Dec. 6, 1880. By Act of Congress, approved Jan. 28, 1881, he was made a major-general on the retired list. Subsequently he became identified with various civilian enterprises and remained so engaged until stricken with yellow fever en route from New York to Vera Cruz. He was taken ashore at Havana, Cuba, where he died. His remains were interred in the National Cemetery at Arlington, Va.

[P. T. Tyson, *Geology and Industrial Resources of California* (1851); *Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad., Ann. Reunion*, 1884; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891), vol. II; records of the U. S. Pension Office.] C. C. B.

ORD, GEORGE (Mar. 4, 1781–Jan. 24, 1866), naturalist and philologist, was born probably in Philadelphia, where his father, George Ord, formerly a sea-captain, had established himself in 1798 as a ship-chandler and rope-maker. His mother was Rebecca Lindemeyer, daughter of George and Judith Lindemeyer, said to be descended from early Swedish settlers on the Delaware. George entered his father's firm in 1800 and continued the business for some years after his father's death in 1806, eventually retiring, probably in 1829, to live thereafter the life of a gentleman of leisure. He was married in 1815 and had a daughter who died in infancy and a son, Joseph Benjamin Ord, who became an artist and portrait painter.

Of George Ord's early education there is no record, but he acquired somehow a broad and varied knowledge of both literature and science. At twenty-four he was the close friend and companion of Alexander Wilson [*q.v.*], fifteen years his senior, who was then beginning his great work on American birds: *American Ornithology; or, the Natural History of the Birds of the United States* (9 vols., 1808–14). Ord accompanied him on various excursions in the neighborhood of Philadelphia and his name not infrequently occurs on the pages of the *Ornithology*. Upon Wilson's premature death, Ord, who was one of his executors, took upon himself the completion of the work, editing Volume VIII, then ready for the press, and writing all of the text for Volume IX, which covered the birds depicted in Wilson's remaining drawings. Several years later, in 1824–25, he published another edition of the work with much additional material. Because of the excessive modesty which was one of his marked characteristics and his earnest desire not to detract from Wilson's credit, he concealed his participation whenever possible, and it is difficult in some instances to determine which paragraphs are his contributions. In the ninth volume (1814) of the *Ornithology*, he published a life of Wilson, in which he paid full tribute to his lamented friend, the perpetuation of whose memory and the defense of whose work became the great purpose of his life. The appearance of Audubon's beautiful plates about the time that Ord was preparing his later edition excited Ord's jealousy to a high pitch, and with the aid of his friend Charles Waterton he did all in his power to discredit Audubon. The attacks were vigorously met by Audubon's friends and thus arose what has often been termed the Wilson-Audubon controversy, although Wilson had died long before the controversy began.

In 1818 Ord accompanied Thomas Say, Titian Peale, and William Maclure [*qq.v.*] on what was perhaps his only extensive field trip, an expedition to Georgia and Florida resulting in the acquisition of many interesting collections. Besides the biography of Wilson he prepared memoirs of Say and C. A. Lesueur, an anonymous account of the zoölogy of North America for the second American edition (1815) of William Guthrie's *New Geographical and Commercial Grammar*, and a dozen papers on various subjects published in the proceedings of several societies. In later life he disposed of his manuscripts on philology, the results of forty years research, to Latham of London who used them

with full credit in the compilation of his new edition of Johnson's *Dictionary*. Ord's profound learning received ample recognition in the honors conferred upon him by the scientific societies of Philadelphia. Personally he is described by Malvina Lawson, daughter of the engraver of Wilson's plates, as "a very singular person, very excitable, almost of pure nervous temperament. Proud, shy and reserved toward strangers; but expansive and brilliant with his friends." He would sometimes get into a temper of rage if opposed in argument but his anger was soon forgotten. He attained the age of eighty-five, outliving most of his old friends and making no new ones. In his last years he was a recluse, withdrawn from the world, living among his books.

[Samuel Rhoads, "George Ord," *Cassinia, a Bird Annual, 1908* (1909); Walter Faxon, "Early Editions of Wilson's Ornithology," *Auk*, Apr. 1901; F. L. Burns, "Miss Lawson's Recollections of Ornithologists," *Ibid.*, July 1917; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Jan. 26, 1866.]

W. S.

ORDRONAUX, JOHN (Aug. 3, 1830–Jan. 20, 1908), lawyer and physician, son of John and Elizabeth (Charreton) Ordronaux, was born in New York City. His father, a Frenchman, commanded a privateer in the War of 1812 and died in 1841, whereupon John, the only child, was adopted by John Moulton of Roslyn, L. I. He graduated from Dartmouth College in 1850 and from the Harvard Law School in 1852. He practised law at Taunton, Mass., for two years, then removed to New York, utilizing his leisure in the study of medicine. He received an honorary degree of M.D. from the National Medical College, Washington, D. C. (Medical Department of Columbian, now George Washington University), in 1859, where in the following year he lectured on medical jurisprudence. His teaching record was remarkable. For forty-eight years he was lecturer, professor, or professor *emeritus* of medical jurisprudence in various schools of law and medicine: Columbia University Law School, 1860–1908; Dartmouth College Medical School, 1864–1903; National Medical College, Washington, D. C., and Columbian University Law School, 1863–73; University of Vermont, 1865–1908; Boston University Law School, 1872–1902.

On the outbreak of the Civil War he became examining surgeon for volunteers and in 1864 was appointed assistant surgeon of the New York National Guard. His *Hints on the Preservation of Health in Armies for the Use of Volunteer Officers and Soldiers* (1861) and his *Manual of Instructions for Military Surgeons, on the Examination of Recruits and Discharge of Soldiers* (1863) were the fruit of this military service.

In 1869 he published *Jurisprudence of Medicine*. He was the first New York state commissioner in lunacy (1874–82) and revised and codified the lunacy laws of the state. He was the author of *Commentaries on the Lunacy Law of New York and on the Judicial Aspects of Insanity at Common Law and in Equity, including Procedure as Expounded in England and the United States* (1878); *The Plea of Insanity as an Answer to Indictment* (1880); *Judicial Problems Relating to the Disposal of Insane Criminals* (1881); and *Constitutional Legislation in the United States* (1891). The last-named work was an attempt "to expound those administrative powers which, in our dual form of representative government, are sovereign within their several spheres of action," a theory by which "we have secured union without fusion of States and State sovereignty without disintegration of the Union." His contributions to the literature of mental diseases were many and always learned. In the field of letters he discovered scholarship of a high grade. Notable was his poetic translation, *Regimen Sanitatis Salernitanum: Code of Health of the School of Salernum* (1870), a book long out of print and keenly sought by collectors. He was also a contributor of several original translations to *Horace . . . Presented to Modern Readers* (1908), edited by C. L. and J. C. Dana, as to which Dr. Charles L. Dana commented: "It is rather strange that America has contributed so little to the translation or appreciation of our poet. Dr. John Ordronaux has been by far the most successful" (Introduction, p. xiii).

Although of ample means, Ordronaux was the least self-indulgent of men and denied himself much by reason of an innate, almost morbid, prudence in expenditure. For years he restricted himself to a luncheon that should not exceed twenty-five cents in cost. He would even scruple to add a desired book to his shelves. But this trait was not disclosed, or even guessed, in ordinary intercourse with men, to whom he was always a genial and charming companion, except when in the mood of depression that sometimes beset him. The writer remembers vividly Ordronaux's official visits to the State Asylum at Utica in the early eighties, occasions that were always welcomed by members of the medical staff. For there was in those periodic inspections no trace of "snooping" but only an obvious interest in the professional activities and welfare of young ministers to sick wards of the state. His eccentricities of conduct did not escape observation or amused comment. As instances, he would sometimes sleep with his head in a bandbox to outwit the bats, disinfect his bills with camphor,

carry a bit of tarred rope in his purse for like protective purposes, and in winter, when putting on his overcoat and muffler, be most careful to "button up the caloric." If his visit fell in hot weather he would prescribe a refreshing drink which he called "psychological lemonade," composed, among other ingredients, of ice-water, dilute phosphoric acid, tincture of gentian, and sugar. He was reputed the real inventor of a "glycerine tonic," since exploited commercially under the name of a well-known early superintendent of the Utica institution in which it was extensively prescribed. On arriving at his next official post he would often send a kind message to the young friends from whom he had just separated himself, sometimes in Latin, on a well-filled postcard, the phrase, *Sparge multa amicitiae verba apud omnes fratres,* being a favorite greeting. He was deeply religious, and occasionally acted as lay reader in the Episcopal Church. He never married, but compensated for that celibacy by becoming beloved father to the community in which for long years he dwelt. He died of cerebral apoplexy, at Glen Head, L. I.

[*The Institutional Care of the Insane in the U. S. and Canada*, ed. by H. M. Hurd, IV (1917), 467–69; T. H. Shastid, in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.*, (1920); *Long Island Medic. Jour.*, Apr. 1908; *Nation* (N. Y.), Jan. 23, 1908; L. W. Kingman, *The Kingman and Ordronaux Families* (1911); *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 21, 1908; recollections of Dr. E. N. Brush, Baltimore; personal acquaintance.] G. A. B—r.

ORDWAY, JOHN (*c.* 1775–*c.* 1817), explorer, was one of ten children of John and Hannah (Morse) Ordway, who lived at Amesbury, Mass., until about 1774 and subsequently at Bow, N. H., where John was born. Ruins of the parental home at Bow show that the father was a substantial farmer. His elder son Stephen lived in later life at Hebron, N. H., and became a prominent citizen there. About 1800 the younger John enlisted in the United States army and in 1803 was sergeant in Capt. Russell Bissell's company of the 1st Infantry, stationed at Kaskaskia, Ill.

Thither in that year came Capt. Meriwether Lewis [*q.v.*], enlisting recruits for his expedition across the continent. Ordway joined the expedition, was continued as sergeant, and appointed to keep the rosters and orderly books. During the first winter of preparation, when the men of the party were encamped at Dubois River, opposite St. Louis, he was frequently in charge of the detachment during the absence of the captains, Lewis and Clark. With the expedition he spent the first winter at the village of the Mandan Indians, leaving there Apr. 7, 1805, for the western journey. The next winter was spent on the shores of the Pacific, where Ordway endured his full share of the hardships and dangers of the situation. On the return journey the two leaders separated, Lewis undertaking a northern route, while Clark with Ordway sought the headwaters of the Missouri. From this point Ordway was dispatched with nine men to join Lewis; his journal covering the period July 13–19, 1806, is the sole record of that portion of the expedition. Ordway's party, augmented by some of Lewis' men, overtook Lewis on July 28, and continued with him to St. Louis, where the united expedition arrived in safety on Sept. 23.

After his return Ordway paid a visit to his home and family in New Hampshire. In 1807 he went back to Missouri, where he bought considerable land and established a plantation in the New Madrid district. His home suffered severely in the earthquake of 1811, when as his sister described the scene, it was "a dreadful sight to see the ground burst and throw out water as high as the trees." Practically nothing is known of Ordway's further career, except that in 1818 his widow, Elizabeth, applied for lands appropriated for the relief of the earthquake sufferers. The journal that John Ordway kept on the expedition was secured by Captain Clark for his records, but then it disappeared for many years. In 1913 it was found among the Biddle papers, and three years later was published in the *Wisconsin Historical Collections* (vol. XXII, 1916). It is a straightforward, clear narrative of the day by day happenings on the journey. Both the commanders trusted Ordway and he appears to have been next to them in both ability and authority.

[Records of the Ordway family are in the Vital Records of Amesbury, Mass.; those of Bow, N. H., are lost, and consequently the date of birth is lacking. See family letters in *Mo. Hist. Rev.*, July 1908; J. H. Morse and E. W. Leavitt, *Morse Geneal.* (1903); O. D. Wheeler, *The Trail of Lewis and Clark* (2 vols., 1904); sketch in preface to the journal, *Wis. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. XXII (1916); *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.*, June 1915.] L. P. K.

O'REILLY, ALEXANDER (1722–Mar. 23, 1794), officer in the Spanish army, was born at Baltrasna, County Meath, Ireland, the son of Thomas Reilly. He was taken by his parents to Spain, where at the age of ten he became a cadet in the Hibernia Regiment. Though crippled for life by a wound received in Italy in the War of the Austrian Succession, he won rapid promotion, thanks to native ability and to the patronage of various magnates, one of whom was the Irishman, Richard Wall, then an influential Spanish minister. A rare knowledge of modern warfare, acquired through a mission to Austria and France during the Seven Years' War, made O'Reilly a leader in the reform of the Spanish army. His

services in the war with Portugal and in the reorganization of the defenses of Cuba and Puerto Rico won him the rank of major-general (1763) and lieutenant-general (1767).

After the uprising of 1768 against Ulloa, the first Spanish governor of Louisiana, O'Reilly was sent with a force of some three thousand men to take formal possession of the province, punish the rebels, and assimilate the government of the province to that of the other Spanish dominions in America. He carried out his orders with vigor and success. The power of the King he demonstrated by executing five of the ringleaders; his clemency, by pardoning the rest. This is the episode that won him the sobriquet, "Bloody O'Reilly." The comprehensive regulations which he drew up for the administration of Louisiana remained in effect with little change to the end of the Spanish period. His conduct was highly praised by the King and the council of the Indies, and in October 1770 the French ambassador reported that O'Reilly was regarded as the leader of the military party in Spain. Honors were heaped upon him: in 1770 he was made inspector-general of infantry and placed in charge of a school for officers, and in 1771 he was given the title of count. Even the utter failure of his expedition against Algiers in 1775 did not deprive him of the King's favor; but he was demoted from the military governorship of Madrid to that of Cadiz, and his intrigues against Floridablanca later led to his banishment to the province of Galicia. Recalled in 1794 to take command of the army in Catalonia, he died at Bonete, near Chinchilla (Murcia), on the way to his post. His wife was Rosa de las Casas, a member of an influential family. His eldest son inherited the title and took up his residence in Cuba.

[Sources include: Jacobo de la Pezuela y Lobo, *Diccionario . . . de la Isla de Cuba* (Madrid), IV (1866), 164; Antonio Ballesteros y Beretta, *Historia de España* (Barcelona, 1923–29), V, 193, 258, 389; Manuel Serrano y Sanz, ed., *Documentos Históricos de la Florida y la Luisiana* (Madrid, 1912), pp. 295–312; Chas. Gayarré, *Hist. of La.* (4th ed., 1903), II, 283–354, III, 1–41; B. F. French, *Hist. Memoirs of La.*, V (1853), 240–91; Marc de Villiers du Terrage, *Les Dernières Années de la Louisiane Française* (Paris, n.d.), pp. 291–326; H. E. Bolton, *Athanase de Mézières* (2 vols., 1914), see Index; J. E. Winston, "The Cause and Results of the Revolution of 1768 in Louisiana," *La. Hist. Quart.*, Apr. 1932; David K. Bjork, "Alexander O'Reilly and the Spanish Occupation of La., 1769–70," in *New Spain and the Anglo-Am. West* (1932), I, 165–82; A. S. Aiton, "Spanish Colonial Reorganization under the Family Compact," *Hispanic-Am. Hist. Rev.*, Aug. 1932; and John O'Hart, *Irish Pedigrees* (ed. 1915), I, 743, 747. O'Reilly adopted the earlier form of the family name.]

A. P. W.

O'REILLY, HENRY (Feb. 6, 1806–Aug. 17, 1886), editor, author, pioneer in the erection of telegraph lines, was born in Carrickmacross, Province of Ulster, Ireland. His father was a merchant who met with reverses in business. His mother was Alicia Ledbetter, the daughter of a physician. The family of three emigrated to America in 1816 and settled in New York, where the boy was apprenticed to Baptiste Irvine, editor and owner of the New York *Columbian*, a newspaper which was a stanch advocate of the Erie Canal project. Owing to a change in the ownership of the paper, the apprenticeship terminated in a year, and O'Reilly's new employers were Clayton & Kingsland, publishers, in whose office he received valuable training. At the age of seventeen he became assistant editor of the *New York Patriot*, the organ of the People's party, which elected DeWitt Clinton governor of New York in 1824. Two years later Henry C. Sleight and Luther Tucker established the *Rochester Daily Advertiser* at Rochester, N. Y. Tucker became its business manager and selected as its editor young O'Reilly, with whom he had been associated on the *Patriot*. The *Advertiser* was immediately successful, and its youthful and vigorous editor soon gained notice as the chief opponent of Thurlow Weed, in the great anti-Masonic excitement which broke out owing to the abduction of William Morgan [*q.v.*]. Weed was chairman of an indignation meeting held in Rochester in December 1826 and became one of the national leaders of the anti-Masonic political party. In an editorial published Mar. 16, 1827, O'Reilly objected to the "harsh words, denunciation and proscription" which were "visited alike upon the innocent and the guilty," and this led to a war of words with Weed, who established an opposition paper in Rochester and, in 1828, had both the editor and the owner of the *Advertiser* indicted for libel. The issue never came to trial.

O'Reilly was constantly advancing a cause. In 1833 he began the agitation for the rebuilding and enlargement of the Erie Canal, and in 1859, when the railroad interests were hostile to the canal, he appealed to the people of the state to protect the interests of the waterway. In 1845 he entered into a contract with S. F. B. Morse and Amos Kendall to raise the capital for the construction of telegraph lines from Eastern Pennsylvania to St. Louis and the Great Lakes. He erected some eight thousand miles of line, but in the course of the venture he broke the terms of his contract. The resulting litigation and added financial difficulties led him to abandon his connection with the telegraph. Aside from innumerable pamphlets on the questions of the day, O'Reilly published in 1838 *Sketches of Rochester,*

with Incidental Notices of Western New York. In 1859 he gave a collection of historical manuscripts to the New York Historical Society, and subsequently he gave a smaller collection of documents to the Rochester Historical Society. He was married to Marcia Brooks, a daughter of Gen. Micah Brooks. They had one son, Henry Brooks O'Reilly, who was killed at the battle of Williamsburg, May 5, 1862. Although O'Reilly was in many respects a remarkable man, he lacked prudence in money matters, and old age found him a poor man.

[See: *The Rochester Hist. Soc. Pub. Fund Ser.*, vol. V (1926), and vol. IX (1930); Alexander Jones, *Hist. Sketch of the Electric Telegraph* (1852); J. D. Reid, *The Telegraph in America* (1879); Edward L. Morse, *Samuel F. B. Morse: His Letters and Journals* (1914), vol. II; R. H. Gillet, *First Telegraph Case before the U. S. Supreme Court* (1853); and the *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Aug. 18, 1886. O'Reilly changed the spelling of his name to O'Rielly, and that form is on his tombstone, but the name appears more commonly in the usual spelling.] W. M. B.

O'REILLY, JOHN BOYLE (June 28, 1844–Aug. 10, 1890), poet, editor and patriot, son of William David and Eliza (Boyle) O'Reilly, descended from ancient Irish families, was born at Castle Dowth, near Drogheda, on the south bank of the Boyne, where his father kept a school. He spent four years as an apprentice on the Drogheda *Argus* and three in England on the Preston *Guardian*, returning to Ireland in 1863 to enlist in the Tenth Hussars. Like most other young Irishmen he joined the Fenian Order. Almost a third of the English army were Irish. Utterly sincere, young O'Reilly obtained many "recruits," but his Fenian connection was discovered in 1866. He was tried by court martial, charged with "not giving information" of "an intended mutiny." Sentence of death as a conspirator to levy war against the Queen was passed on July 9, commuted the same day to life imprisonment, and subsequently to twenty years of penal servitude. After several years of solitary confinement at Millbank and a period of hard labor in the brickyards at Chatham, he was removed to Dartmoor.

O'Reilly was one of the sixty-three political prisoners deported to Australia in the first company sent there since the uprising of 1848. On Jan. 10, 1868, the *Hougoumont* dropped anchor before Fremantle near Perth. He was "Convict No. 9843." Sustained by an ever-buoyant spirit, he never gave up the idea of escape. Father Patrick McCabe befriended him. The priest called devoted friends to his aid, and obtained the assistance of an American whaling vessel. The prisoner made his start on Feb. 18, 1869. After weary days of peril and suspense he was rowed out to sea and taken aboard the whaler *Gazelle*, of New Bedford, Captain David R. Gifford. During the ensuing cruise the courage of the second mate, Henry C. Hathaway, saved O'Reilly from death, and his ingenuity saved the fugitive from capture at Roderique. For many years subsequently in America they were close friends. Off the Cape of Good Hope he was transferred to the American barque *Sapphire*, and at Liverpool he became "third mate" of the *Bombay* which landed him in safety at Philadelphia on Nov. 23, 1869. That same day he took out his first naturalization papers.

He knew nobody in the United States. But the story of his escape had preceded him and his personality procured him friends. Already he was called "the poet." He went on to Boston and obtained employment on the *Pilot*, the most influential "Irish paper" in America. As "war correspondent" he covered the Fenian raid into Canada from St. Albans. The frank criticisms of that ill-judged foray by such a writer produced a marked impression. Speedily he rose to fame. In 1876 the Catholic Archbishop of Boston and O'Reilly bought the *Pilot*. For fifteen years its influence now was nation-wide. As a Democrat he wrote vigorously of politics but refused to seek any office. He was a devout Catholic but tolerant and magnanimous. He became an ardent advocate of Home Rule and the Irish leader in New England, but he always emphasized the duties of American citizenship. He lectured throughout the country. His *Songs from Southern Seas* appeared in 1873; *Songs, Legends and Ballads* in 1878; *The Statues in the Block* in 1881; *In Bohemia* in 1886. He published a novel, *Moondyne*, in 1879, and a work on athletics, *Ethics of Boxing and Manly Sport*, in 1888. With Robert Grant, Frederic J. Stimson ("J. S. of Dale"), and John T. Wheelwright, he wrote a composite "novel of tomorrow," *The King's Men* (1884). O'Reilly was the poet for the O'Connell centenary, for the dedication of the Crispus Attucks monument on Boston Common, and he read a notable poem at the dedication of the Pilgrim Monument at Plymouth in 1889. He died before reaching his full stature as a poet. Born with the gift, he began to sing as a boy. Throughout his life most of his verse-writing had to be done almost without leisure. He disdained "the carving of cherry-stones," the elaboration of trifles. There are good lines in his poems, the sentiment is kindly, the themes widely varied. He seems most at home in a swinging ballad measure. Widely popular in his time, he is now best remembered by a group of short poems which express his love of the spiritual

things in human life. His genius for friendship gained him the affection of men of all faiths and all grades of culture. He was a founder of clubs, a canoe enthusiast, an excellent athlete, and a social favorite. On Aug. 15, 1872, he married Mary Murphy, the daughter of John and Jane (Smiley) Murphy, of Charlestown. His death at the summer home in Hull was occasioned by overwork and insomnia. A memorial in the Boston Fenway was erected by popular subscription. There are busts in the Boston Public Library and the Catholic University in Washington.

[Sources include: J. J. Roche, *Life of John Boyle O'Reilly* (1891); *Memorials* published by the City of Boston (1890, 1897); files of the *Pilot* and other Boston newspapers; Justin McCarthy, *Reminiscences* (1899), vol. I; Wemyss Reid, *Memoirs and Correspondence of Lyon Playfair* (1899); E. P. Mitchell, *Memoirs of an Editor* (1924); *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 11, 1890; information as to certain facts from O'Reilly's daughter, Miss Mary Boyle O'Reilly.] F. L. B.

O'REILLY, ROBERT MAITLAND (Jan. 14, 1845–Nov. 3, 1912), surgeon general, United States Army, was descended from an old Irish family, one branch of which, emigrating to Spain, produced Gen. Alexander O'Reilly [*q.v.*], who was captain general of Cuba and one of the Spanish governors of Louisiana. The American branch settled in Pennsylvania before the Revolution and it was in Philadelphia that, to John and Ellen (Maitland) O'Reilly, Robert was born. He was educated in the public schools of his native city and had begun the study of medicine when the Civil War commenced. In August 1862 he was appointed an acting medical cadet and assigned to the Cuyler General Hospital in Philadelphia; later he served as a medical cadet in a hospital at Chattanooga and in the office of the medical director of the Army of the Cumberland.

With the close of the Civil War he resumed his medical studies at the University of Pennsylvania and was graduated in 1866. In May 1867 he was appointed assistant surgeon in the army and was sent out to California by way of Panama with a detachment of recruits. From 1868 to 1869 he was in Arizona with troops operating against hostile Indians. In 1874 he participated in the Sioux campaign in Wyoming and Montana. While on duty incident to labor disturbances in Pennsylvania in 1877, he sustained an injury which incapacitated him for two years. Soon after his return from sick leave, he was assigned to duty as attending surgeon in Washington. In this capacity his attractive personality and his professional skill made him a prominent figure in the capital. He was the White House physician during the two administrations of President Cleveland, with whom he was on terms of intimate friendship.

Following the outbreak of the Spanish-American War, O'Reilly, then a major, was chief surgeon of Gen. John J. Coppinger's division at Mobile, Ala., and later was transferred to the staff of Gen. J. F. Wade in Havana. The medical department ship *Bay State* was placed at his disposal and he was sent to Jamaica for the purpose of acquiring information relative to the experience of the British army in tropical hygiene. He made a study of the housing, food, and care of troops, and submitted recommendations in relation to these subjects which were of material value. Returning from Cuba in November 1899, he commanded the Josiah Simpson Hospital at Fort Monroe, Va., and later was transferred to San Francisco as chief surgeon of the department of California. On Sept. 7, 1902, he succeeded William H. Forwood [*q.v.*] as surgeon-general of the army. General O'Reilly brought into his office a group of highly intelligent young officers and organized it into divisions, each with a responsible head. Unsatisfactory conditions in the army disclosed by the Spanish War caused the appointment of the Dodge Commission by President McKinley. The findings of the commission relating to the medical department took the form of a number of recommendations, which it devolved upon General O'Reilly to carry out. Among other reforms which resulted was a reorganization of the medical corps and the creation of the medical reserve corps. He was president of the board which recommended the adoption of typhoid prophylaxis for the army. In 1906 he represented the United States at the international conference at Geneva, Switzerland, for the revision of the Geneva Convention. He was retired for age on Sept. 14, 1909, and continued his residence in Washington until his death three years later from uremic poisoning. The only notable contribution to medical literature made by him was in the monograph on military surgery, which appeared in the fourth edition of W. W. Keen's *American Textbook of Surgery* (1903), in which he collaborated with Maj. William C. Borden.

O'Reilly was a man who won affection and loyalty from all who came into intimate contact with him. Though of a sensitive and retiring disposition he had an unfailing fund of courtesy and good nature. He was a devotee of chamber music and an accomplished performer upon the violin. Some of his deepest friendships were with those to whom he was bound by the ties of music. On Aug. 16, 1877, he married Frances L. Pardee of Oswego, N. Y., who, with one daughter, sur-

vived him. The death of a son just grown to manhood saddened his later years.

[J. E. Pilcher, *Surgeon Generals of the Army* (1905); F. H. Garrison, "In Memoriam: General Robert Maitland O'Reilly," *N. Y. Medic. Jour.*, Nov. 30, 1912; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), and *Evening Star* (Washington), Nov. 4, 1912.]

J. M. P—n.

O'RIELLY, HENRY [See O'REILLY, HENRY, 1806–1886].

ORMSBY, WATERMAN LILLY (1809–Nov. 1, 1883), engraver, was born in Hampton, Conn. He received a public-school education and at an early age became an apprentice in an engraving establishment. In 1829 he was a student in the National Academy of Design in New York City, and during his early life he lived at various times in Rochester, in Albany, where he engraved over his own name, and in Lancaster, Mass., where he worked for the firm of Carter, Andrews & Company. Finally he settled in New York City, where he became the proprietor of the New York Bank Note Company and one of the founders of the Continental Bank Note Company. He died in Brooklyn, N. Y., at the age of seventy-four.

During the first quarter of the nineteenth century the process of bank-note engraving was cheapened and facilitated by the introduction of machinery, and by the end of the century handcraftsmanship had been almost entirely superseded. Ormsby represented a curious combination of the two techniques. He was a versatile and accomplished inventor of machinery to facilitate the processes of engraving, but he was bitterly opposed to the complete replacement of the artist-craftsman. He held that notes should be engraved as a unit upon a single plate, with careful craftsmanship exerted on the design and interdependence of the composition. The counterfeiter would thus be foiled "not because he does not know how the work is done, but because he can not do it" (*Cycloidal Configurations*, p. 37). Ormsby was particularly bitter about the claims set forth for "Patent Green Tint" as a safeguard against spurious imitation. "Indeed," he wrote, "unless there is some interposition of Divine Providence, the prospect seems to be, that passports to Heaven will, eventually, be printed in 'Patent Tint.' But unless they are more secure against counterfeiting the 'narrow way' will be terribly crowded" (*Ibid.*, p. 43).

Ormsby was not frequently so urbane about what he considered charlatanry. He displays himself in his writings as a disgruntled eccentric, sensitive about his craftsmanship and childish

about his enmities. He considered himself discriminated against in business, but the forces of industrial change and reorganization were against him. He was an excellent line engraver, however, and was called upon for a great deal of work despite his conviction of persecution. His designs for notes were in wide use by the government at the time of the Civil War. He was the author of several pamphlets, among them *Cycloidal Configurations, or the Harvest of Counterfeiters* (n.d.), and of a volume on paper-money engraving entitled *A Description of the Present System of Bank Note Engraving* (1852).

[D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907); *Subject Matter Index of Patents for Inventions, 1790–1873* (1874); Frank Weitenkampf, *Am. Graphic Art* (1924); the *Sun* (N. Y.), Nov. 2, 1883.]

E. T.

ORNE, JOHN (Apr. 29, 1834–Nov. 29, 1911), Orientalist, was born in Newburyport, Mass., the son of John and Sarah Ingalls (Morse) Orne. The Orne family was well known and respected in Newburyport, and the name appears more than once in the early town records. John Orne, Jr., after completing the regular course in the Newburyport high school, studied by himself and was able to enter the sophomore class at Amherst College in 1852. Graduating there in 1855 with the degree of A.B., and a member of Phi Beta Kappa, he chose the teaching profession and taught with success in a number of secondary schools, chiefly in Newburyport, Lawrence, and Salem, from 1856 until 1867. In the latter year, Nov. 28, he married Louisa Fisk, daughter of Richard Lindsay, of Salem. They had no children. In this year also he accepted the appointment as sub-master and teacher of physics in the Cambridge High School; and at this post he remained for about twenty years, after which he retired from teaching.

While in Cambridge, Orne became interested in the Semitic languages. Under the guidance of Crawford H. Toy, who went to Harvard as Hancock Professor of Hebrew and Oriental Languages in 1880, he began the study of Arabic, and was introduced by him to the most important working tools of research in this field. He also made considerable progress in Hebrew and was a member of the Harvard Biblical Club. The most of his spare time, however, he devoted to Arabic and Mohammedan studies, pursuing them with remarkable energy and enthusiasm, gradually collecting a considerable library of texts and translations, and ultimately reaching a degree of proficiency in Arabic rarely attained by one who is mainly self-taught. In 1889 he was made curator of the Arabic manuscripts in

the Semitic Museum of Harvard University, and he held this office during the remainder of his life. He was a corporate member of the American Oriental Society for twenty-one years, having joined in 1890. He contributed to the *Proceedings* of the society in 1892 (vol. XV) two papers which gave evidence of his scholarship: the one dealing with an important medical treatise which he analyzed and in part translated from one of the manuscripts in the Harvard collection; the other describing, with specimen translations, a highly interesting collection of Arabic mortuary tablets from Egypt, dated in the ninth century A.D., acquired for the Harvard Semitic Museum in 1890. Orne received the degree of Ph.D. from Amherst College in 1896, "for eminent attainments in the Arabic language and literature."

[*Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; obituary notice in the *Amherst Grads.' Quart.*, Jan. 1912; *Biog. Record of the Alumni of Amherst College, 1821–71*; J. J. Currier, *Hist. of Newburyport*, vol. I (1906) and *"Ould Newbury"* (1898); *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 1, 1911; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Dec. 2, 1911.] C. C. T.

ORR, ALEXANDER ECTOR (Mar. 2, 1831–June 3, 1914), merchant, was the son of William and Mary (Moore) Orr. He was born in Strabane, County Tyrone, Ireland, whither his father's family had migrated in the seventeenth century from Scotland. Alexander, while traveling in the United States in 1850, was so favorably impressed that he returned the next year to New York City to live. He worked as a clerk in several commission houses before forming, in 1858, a connection with David Dows & Company, at that time possibly the largest grain dealers in the United States. He became a partner in 1861 and the firm's representative on the floor of the Produce Exchange in 1863. Intense interest in the business and a remarkable energy soon made him the dominant member of the firm, a force in the Exchange, and a recognized authority in his field. He helped reorganize the Produce Exchange, 1871–72, was long chairman of its important arbitration committee, a leading organizer of its Benefit Assurance Society and its Gratuity Association, secretary of the building committee which erected the Exchange's three-million-dollar home, and served as president, 1887–88. He gave similar service to the Chamber of Commerce of the State of New York, aided in the erection of its new building, and served as vice-president, 1889–94, and as president, 1894–99.

In 1894 Orr was appointed a member of the Rapid Transit Commission, created by the state legislature to draw up plans for a comprehensive transit system in New York City and to contract for its construction and operation. At the first meeting he was elected president, and he served in this capacity until 1907 when the Commission's duties were transferred to the Public Service Commission. After four years of study, plans were completed for a subway as the central feature of the system. The contracts were let in 1900 and the first trains were operated in 1904, Orr making the chief address at the opening of service. "It is a cheerful fact," commented the *World's Work* editorially (March 1904, p. 4512), "that the costliest municipal convenience ever constructed has been free from corruption and free from political management . . . has been built—in New York, too—without scandal; and very much of the credit for this historic achievement belongs to Mr. Alexander E. Orr."

In 1875–76 Orr served, by Governor Tilden's appointment, as one of the four members of the commission which, in investigating the management of New York's state canals, exposed the operations of the notorious "canal ring." He was frequently called before the state legislature to advise on transportation and marketing problems. He served as chairman of the "citizen's movement" which elected Seth Low mayor of Brooklyn in 1881, and he took a leading part in other reform movements in local New York politics. When president of the Chamber of Commerce during Cleveland's second term, he gave encouragement and powerful support to the president's sound money policies. Orr's knowledge and ability were sought for by many banks, insurance companies, and railways; and, though at one time he was a member of no less than twenty-nine boards of directors, he gave conscientious service to each. When the Hughes Investigation shattered public faith in the New York Life Insurance Company, he was persuaded to become its president, and in eighteen months he had the company completely reorganized and restored to its former standing. In addition, he found time to serve in official capacities for the Brooklyn Academy of Music, the Long Island State Hospital, the Long Island Historical Society, and the Society for the Reformation of Juvenile Delinquents, and he was a trustee of many similar institutions. He was treasurer for nearly fifty years of the Long Island Diocese of the Protestant Episcopal Church, managing its many complicated funds, and contributing large amounts to them. He was survived by three daughters, born to his first wife, Juliet Buckingham Dows, whom he married in 1857 and who died in 1872. His second wife was

Margaret Shippen Luquer, whom he married in 1873.

[The chief source is a privately printed memorial: *In Memory of A. E. Orr* (1917). See also: *Letters and Lit. Memorials of Samuel J. Tilden* (2 vols., 1908), ed. by John Bigelow; annual reports and monthly *Bulletin* of the Chamber of Commerce of the State of N. Y., especially the *Bulletin* for June 1914; *Rapid Transit in N. Y. City and in Other Great Cities* (1905), prepared by the Chamber of Commerce; *Cat. of Portraits in the Chamber of Commerce* (1924), containing a sketch and a copy of the portrait painted by A. H. Munsell, Orr's son-in-law; *N. Y. Times*, June 4, 1914; *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, June 3, 4, 1914.] O. W. H.

ORR, GUSTAVUS JOHN (Aug. 9, 1819–Dec. 11, 1887), educator, was born in Orrville, Anderson County, S. C., the son of James and Anne (Anderson) Orr. In 1821 the family moved to Jackson County, Ga., and there young Orr grew into manhood, working on the farm, and attending such schools as there were. In 1835 his father put him in a store at Jefferson, the county seat, but the boy had other plans revolving in his mind. In 1839 he set out for East Tennessee to attend the Maryville academy and then entered the University of Georgia but, owing to a high if not exaggerated sense of honor, left the university at the end of his junior year rather than help the faculty in a matter of discipline. He entered Emory College, Oxford, Ga., and was graduated in 1844. He then resolved to study law, but his record at Emory had been so good that he was offered a position as a teacher in the preparatory department and as a tutor in the college. He returned to Jefferson after two years, however, and began the study of law with one of the resident attorneys, but by the end of the year he gave up the idea of becoming a lawyer. In 1847 he was married to Eliza Caroline Anderson, who bore him ten children, and he accepted a position in a girls' school at Covington, Ga. The next year Emory College offered him the professorship of mathematics. His ability as a mathematician was recognized in 1859, when Gov. Joseph E. Brown appointed him Georgia's commissioner to settle by survey a troublesome boundary dispute with Florida. By 1867 the Civil War and Reconstruction had reduced the college to the vanishing point, and he accepted the presidency of the Southern Masonic Female College at Covington. There he remained until 1870, when he became professor of mathematics at Oglethorpe College, which was removed from Midway to Atlanta that year.

However, the work on which his fame was to rest was yet to be done. In January 1872 the Democrats took control of the state from the Carpet-baggers, and among the first acts of the new governor was the appointment of Orr as state school commissioner. The law for the establishment of a common-school system, passed in 1870, was based on a report he had made in 1869 to the Georgia teachers' association. Thoroughly revised and rewritten in 1872, this new act became the basis of the state's common-school system and served admirably the purpose for many years. He was reappointed successively by the succeeding governors and remained school commissioner until his death. Owing to a school debt caused by his predecessor, he did not open the schools until 1873, and in his work of setting up an educational system he met and overcame many prejudices that had grown up under Carpet-bag management. He wrote many articles for the newspapers and many letters to individuals, and he made hundreds of speeches throughout the state. He early reached the conviction that the federal government might find ways to help education in the states, and in the advocacy of this program he spoke widely over the United States and appeared at various times before congressional committees. In 1881 he was made vice-president of the National Education Association, and the following year he became its president. He had a high sense of justice and a broad outlook in a day when sectional narrowness was too common. He plead for justice to the negro and lost no popularity in his state in doing so. He became the agent for the Peabody Fund in Georgia and directed the use of much of this money for normal institutes and free scholarships.

[*Georgia*, ed. by A. D. Candler and C. A. Evans (1906), vol. III; C. E. Jones, *Education in Ga.* (1889); I. W. Avery, *The Hist. of the State of Ga.* (copr. 1881); L. L. Knight, *A Standard Hist. of Ga.* (1917), vol. II; C. M. Thompson, *Reconstruction in Ga.* (1915); *Atlanta Constitution*, Dec. 12, 1887; S. A. Echols, *Georgia's Gen. Assembly of 1878. Biog. Sketches* (1878).] E. M. C.

ORR, HUGH (Jan. 2, 1715–Dec. 6, 1798), inventor, patriot, the son of Robert Orr, was born in Lochwinnoch, Renfrewshire, Scotland. He received a common-school education in his native town and then learned the trade of whitesmith, becoming especially skilled in the making of edged tools. When he was twenty-five years old, having mastered also the gunsmith and locksmith trades, he sailed for America, and landed at Boston on June 7, 1740. He spent a year in Easton, Bristol County, Mass., and then removed to East Bridgewater, where he applied for work to a man named Keith, a maker of scythes. The story is told that he was quickly hired when he demonstrated his skill by making a keen razor out of an old iron skillet handle.

Not content merely to fashion scythes in the established way, Orr made constant experiments in an effort to improve the manufacturing methods, not only of scythes but of axes and edged tools generally. Thus he devised and built for the shop a trip-hammer said to have been the first in the colonies. His reputation as a maker of edged tools quickly spread and in a few years when his employer retired, Orr became owner of the shop. House and ship carpenters, millwrights and wheelwrights for twenty miles around came to him for new tools or to have old ones reconditioned. Thus he busied himself for upwards of thirty years, from time to time enlarging his establishment, and training his sons and other workmen in his craft.

Meanwhile, aware of the growing discord between the colonies and the mother country, he prepared his shop for the manufacture of firearms. As early as 1748, for the Province of Massachusetts Bay, he made 500 muskets which were deposited in Castle William, but nearly all of them were carried off by the British when they evacuated Boston. These muskets are believed to be the first ever made in the colonies. At the outbreak of the Revolution, being an ardent supporter of the Patriot cause, Orr again began producing muskets and in addition, "in concert with a French gentleman," built a foundry at Bridgewater, Mass., for casting cannon. At that time the usual practice in making iron or brass ordnance was to cast the piece with a cylindrical cavity somewhat smaller than the caliber desired, but Orr and his partner employed an improved method just then introduced in Europe. This consisted in making a solid casting and boring it to the proper caliber with a boring bar-iron and cutter. Though a difficult method, it yielded a far superior cannon both in strength and accuracy. During the war, Orr successfully produced a great number of iron and some brass cannon, from 3- to 42-pounders, besides a vast quantity of cannon-shot.

When peace was declared he resumed the manufacture of edged tools, but also turned his attention toward helping in the establishment of industries in the new states. A strong advocate of the machine as a substitute for hand labor, he had for years kept himself posted on all new developments taking place abroad in the application of machinery to textile manufacture, and as early as 1753 had invented a machine to clean flaxseed. Through his correspondents abroad he learned of the carding and spinning machines being made and used in England and about 1785 he successfully induced two skilled Scotch mechanics, Robert and Alexander Barr, who were acquainted with the new machines, to come to America and construct textile machinery in his shop and at his expense. The following year Orr was elected to the Massachusetts Senate and persuaded that body to encourage by practical means the establishment of textile manufactories in the state. State grants were made to enable the Barr brothers to construct a roving machine and "several other machines as might be necessary for carding, roping, and spinning cotton and wool" (Walton, *post*, p. 151) and to enable Thomas Somers, another Scotch mechanic under Orr's direction, to build other textile machinery. About the same time Orr employed at his own expense a man named McClure who knew how to weave by hand with the fly shuttle. This was probably the first use of the fly shuttle in America. The next year, Mar. 8, 1787, the legislature placed the machines made by Somers and the Barrs in the charge of Orr, with the proviso that he should "explain to such citizens as may apply for the same the principles on which said machines are constructed and the advantages arising from their use, and also . . . allow them to see the machines at work" (*Ibid.*). Advertisements to this effect were inserted in the Massachusetts newspapers and the machines soon came to be known as "The State Models." While they were imperfect and of little practical use, it was from them that the early American textile-machinery manufacturers obtained many of their ideas. Although permitted to use them, Orr never attempted to employ the machines for the creation of a manufacturing business of his own.

His interest in metals led directly to his one hobby, namely, the collecting of minerals and ores. This hobby was quite widely known and as a result, from every newly discovered ore deposit throughout the colonies Orr was immediately furnished samples of the rocks and minerals so that at the time of his death he was in possession of a very valuable mineral collection. He was married on Aug. 4, 1742, to Mary Bass of East Bridgewater, and of this union ten children were born. His son Robert Orr followed closely in his footsteps and became a skilled metal craftsman. He introduced the manufacture of iron shovels into Massachusetts and in 1804 became master armorer of the government arsenal at Springfield.

[Seth Bryant, *The Mitchell, Bryant and Orr Families* (1894); Perry Walton, *The Story of Textiles* (1912); *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. IX (1804); W. B. Weeden, *Economic and Social Hist. of New England* (1891), vol. II; J. L. Bishop, *A Hist. of Am. Manufactures from 1608 to 1860* (3 vols., 1861–68).]

C. W. M—n.

ORR, JAMES LAWRENCE (May 12, 1822–May 5, 1873), speaker of the House of Representatives, governor of South Carolina, Confederate States senator, was born in Craytonville, Pendleton District (now Anderson County), S. C., the great-grandson of Robert Orr who emigrated from Ireland to Bucks County, Pa., about 1730 and later removed to Wake County, N. C., and the son of Martha (McCann) Orr, a daughter of Irish emigrants, and Christopher Orr, a prosperous merchant. He was the brother of Jehu Amaziah Orr [*q.v.*]. His early years were spent in schools near his home and as a clerk in his father's store. In 1839 he entered the University of Virginia, where he began the study of law. Returning to South Carolina he completed his law studies in the office of Joseph N. Whitner and was admitted to the bar when he became of age. In the fall of the following year he married Mary Jane, the daughter of Samuel Marshall of Abbeville District, and began to edit the *Anderson Gazette,* a weekly newspaper. Within two years he abandoned journalism to devote himself to politics and to become the law partner of J. P. Reed. The court records of Anderson for the period show that this firm enjoyed nearly half the law business of that district. In 1844, at the age of twenty-two, he became a member of the state legislature, where he served until 1848. In that body he distinguished himself as the opponent of the parish system and as the champion of the popular election of presidential electors, internal improvements, and the reform of the public schools. Although a believer in the right of secession, he opposed the Bluffton movement, which would have committed the state to another nullification experiment. In 1848, after an exciting canvass, he was elected to Congress, where he served until 1859. In Congress he was largely instrumental in stifling the secessionist tendencies of his state. Although he had voted against the compromise measures of 1850, the following year he canvassed the state against the advocates of immediate secession and won a signal victory. This gave him opportunity to organize the South Carolina branch of the National Democratic party. He was able to bring about the defeat of R. B. Rhett for reëlection to the United States Senate and to get himself chosen head of the state's delegation to the National Democratic Convention of 1856, where he supported the policies of Stephen A. Douglas. These actions, coupled with his opposition to Know-Nothingism, made him very popular in the North, and he was elected speaker of the federal House of Representatives in 1857. He was

Orr

mentioned as a possibility for the Democratic presidential nomination in 1860 and was president of the state convention of April 1860, in which he stressed the value of the Union and prevented the delegates to the national convention from being instructed for secession.

Nevertheless, he changed his views to meet the changing sentiment of his state. Already he had overstepped himself, having been defeated for the United States Senate in 1858 for quoting a famous phrase of Webster on nullification. He withdrew from the National Democratic Convention of 1860 with the other South Carolina delegates and ardently championed the withdrawal of the state from the Union. He signed the ordinance of secession, was one of the three commissioners sent to Washington to negotiate for the possession of the Charleston forts, organized Orr's Regiment of Rifles for service under the Confederacy, and, after a brief and undistinguished military career, was elected a Confederate States senator in December 1861. In this capacity he served until the fall of the Richmond government. Realizing that the defeat of the Confederacy was inevitable, he was among the first who prepared for the problems of Reconstruction. He quarreled with President Davis and in 1864 advocated a negotiated peace. Espousing the Reconstruction policies of President Johnson, he played a prominent part in the state constitutional convention of 1865 and was elected governor by a small majority. As governor he pursued a compromising policy. He advocated modification of the notorious "black code" and provision for restricted negro suffrage, and he headed the state's delegation to the Union National Convention of 1866. Yet when Congress refused to accept these overtures, in a defiant mood he advised the state legislature to reject the Fourteenth Amendment. Changing his course again when he saw that congressional Reconstruction would be applied to the South, he shrewdly attempted to accommodate the state to the inevitable. He cooperated with the military officers, advised the whites to accept the Reconstruction acts, and made a statesmanlike address before that Radical state constitutional convention of 1868. Losing the confidence of the whites, he joined the Radical party. He was elected to the circuit bench in 1868 and served until 1870. He supported Grant's Ku-Klux policy before the Republican National Convention of 1872, and the president appointed him minister to Russia. After a few months at his new post, he died of pneumonia at St. Petersburg.

His phenomenal success as a politician was largely due to unusual personal qualities. Al-

though he was neither elegant in manners nor learned, his powerful physique, ringing voice, and intelligent face gave him an air of distinction. Genial and generous, he was liked even by his political enemies. Unlike most South Carolinians of his day, he accurately understood Northern public opinion and knew when it was expedient to accommodate his views to it. Had his advice been followed, South Carolina would have escaped many of its misfortunes. Yet his faults were patent. He changed his views too frequently to inspire popular confidence. His enemies were correct in ascribing this to ulterior motives, for every move he made redounded to his personal advantage in the form of some new public office.

[*Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas* (1892), I; B. F. Perry, *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883); F. B. Simkins and R. H. Woody, *S. C. during Reconstruction* (1932); J. S. Reynolds, *Reconstruction in S. C.* (1905); C. S. Boucher, "The Secession and Cooperative Movement in S. C.," *Washington Univ. Studies*, Humanistic Series, Apr. 1918; L. A. White, "The National Democrats of S. C.," *South Atlantic Quart.*, Oct. 1929; *Charleston Daily Courier*, Dec. 4, 1865, Aug. 26, 1872; *News and Courier* (Charleston), May 7, 1873.] F. B. S.

ORR, JEHU AMAZIAH (Apr. 10, 1828–Mar. 9, 1921), legislator and lawyer, was born in Anderson County, S. C., the son of Christopher and Martha (McCann) Orr and a brother of James Lawrence Orr [*q.v.*]. About 1843 the family moved to the eastern section of Mississippi. He studied at Erskine College in South Carolina and at the College of New Jersey (Princeton). In 1849 he entered the practice of law at Houston, Miss., and shortly afterward was chosen secretary of the state Senate. In 1852 he became a member of the lower house, and there he actively opposed the immediate sale of the Chickasaw school lands. Unfortunately, the land was sold two years later, after he had completed his term in the legislature and had been appointed United States attorney for the northern district of Mississippi. He was a member of the Democratic convention that nominated Buchanan. Originally opposed to secession, he deplored the split in the Charleston convention and voted for Stephen A. Douglas; but the results of the election of 1860 and the rising tide of war feeling convinced him that the conflict was inevitable, and from that time he supported the Confederacy. He was a member of the Mississippi convention of 1861 that voted for secession and then served in the provisional Congress of the Confederacy. He raised a regiment of 1400 men, the 31st Mississippi Volunteers, and served in the 1862 and 1863 campaigns in Mississippi. In April of the following year he resigned to enter the Second Confederate Congress. After he was convinced that the establishment of a separate republic in the South was impossible, he maintained that terms, advantageous to the South, ought to be obtained before exhaustion placed it at the mercy of the enemy, and he was disappointed that the Richmond administration, by insisting on Confederate independence as a *sine qua non*, rendered futile the Hampton Roads conference. In a subsequent speech before the legislature of Mississippi, he advocated a change in the executive policy of the Confederacy and blamed President Davis for the failure of the peace negotiations. The criticism was not welcomed at the time (F. A. Montgomery, *Reminiscences of a Mississippian in Peace and War* (1901, pp. 229–30).

At the close of hostilities he was again ahead of his constituency, when he advised the partial enfranchisement of the negroes. In 1870 he became a judge of the 6th judicial circuit and served for six years. He took part in the movement that returned the Democrats to power in Mississippi in 1876. From 1872 until his resignation in 1904 he was an active member of the board of trustees of the University of Mississippi. For fifty years he was an elder in the Presbyterian Church. While he was less in the public eye after the close of Reconstruction, his life was none the less active, for he devoted himself with great success to the practice of law, in which his powers seemed to increase with age. The latter part of his life was spent at Columbus, Miss. He was married twice, first to Elizabeth Ramsay Gates of Chickasaw County, S. C., in 1852, and, second, to Cornelia Ewing Van de Graaff of Sumter County, Ala., in 1857.

[Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907), vol. III; *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of Miss.* (1891), vol. II; *Who's Who in Miss.* (1914); *Pubs. Miss. Hist. Soc.*, vols. II, VIII, IX (1899–1906); *Columbus Dispatch*, Mar. 13, 1921; newspaper clippings in possession of his daughter, Mrs. Franklin Harris, Signal Mountain, Tenn.; date of death from tombstone, Columbus.] C. S. S.

ORTH, GODLOVE STEIN (Apr. 22, 1817–Dec. 16, 1882), politician, congressman, was born near Lebanon, Pa., a descendant of Balthazel Orth who is said to have emigrated to Pennsylvania with the Moravian leader Zinzendorf in 1742. After attending the local schools and Pennsylvania College, Gettysburg, he entered the law office of James Cooper. In 1839 he moved to Lafayette, Ind., and was admitted to the bar. The following year, in October, he married Sarah Elizabeth Miller of Gettysburg. In the campaign of 1840 he made his début as a political speaker, stumping Indiana for Harri-

son. This activity brought him prominence, and in 1843 the Whigs elected him to the state Senate, where he served until 1848. In 1845, as a result of discord in the Loco Foco ranks, he was elected president of the Senate. His name was presented as a candidate for the gubernatorial nomination in 1846, but he withdrew in favor of Joseph Marshall. Although he thought the nomination of Taylor on the Whig ticket a mistaken political move, he served as a presidential elector for Taylor and stumped northern Indiana. His wife died in 1849 and on Aug. 28, 1850, he married Mary A. Ayers of Lafayette. After the enactment of the Compromise Measures of 1850, like many anti-slavery Whigs, he joined the Know-Nothings, but in 1852 campaigned for Scott. He was president of the Indiana Know-Nothing Council for 1854–55, subsequently joined the People's party of Indiana, and out of this helped organize the Republican party in the state.

In 1861, Gov. O. P. Morton [*q.v.*] appointed him one of the five Indiana representatives to the Peace Conference in Washington. Prejudiced before going, he returned convinced that conflict was inevitable and advised preparation for war. When Governor Morton called for volunteers in July 1862, Orth reported in Indianapolis twenty-four hours later as elected captain of some two hundred men. The danger of invasion over, the company was mustered out, Aug. 20, 1862. In this year Orth was elected to the Thirty-eighth Congress. He served continuously through the Forty-first, but was not a candidate for reëlection in 1870. In Congress he urged vigorous prosecution of the war and later, stringent reconstruction measures. He voted for the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Amendments, opposing the later anti-Chinese legislation as contrary to the latter. Holding at first a position halfway between the Radicals and Johnson, he slowly gravitated toward the extreme Radicals when he became convinced that Johnson was as unwilling to compromise as they.

Following the war, his interest turned to foreign affairs. In 1866 he began a fight for recognition of the right of expatriation. Two years later he undertook the management of the House legislation looking toward the annexation of Santo Domingo, but opposed the recognition of Cuban belligerency as unprofitable. In 1868, also, he framed the Orth Bill which made certain changes in the diplomatic and consular services. In the Forty-first Congress he was one of the small group who brought about the election of James G. Blaine to the speakership. He was recommended in 1871 for appointment as United States minister at Berlin, but it was decided to continue George Bancroft in that post, and Orth was offered, but refused, the commissionership of internal revenue. He was returned to the Forty-third Congress but was not a candidate in 1874. In March 1875, after declining the mission to Brazil, he was appointed minister to Austria-Hungary, but resigned in May 1876 to accept the Republican nomination for the governorship of Indiana. Party discord, however, caused him to withdraw in favor of Benjamin Harrison. In 1878 he reëntered politics and was elected to the Forty-sixth Congress. Reëlected two years later, he died, at Lafayette, Ind., before the expiration of his term. Orth recognized the necessity of machinery in politics, and never hesitated to sacrifice principle for party solidarity. No unpopular legislation ever received his vote.

[W. H. Barnes, *Hist. of the Thirty-ninth Cong. of the U. S.* (1867), and *The Fortieth Cong. of the U. S.*, vol. II (1870); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); S. M. Cullom, *Fifty Years of Public Service* (1911); *Memorial Addresses on the Life and Character of Godlove S. Orth*, 47 Cong., 2 Sess. (1883); C. B. Stover and C. W. Beachem, *The Alumni Record of Gettysburg Coll.* (1932); *Indianapolis Sentinel*, Dec. 17, 1882; manuscript letters of Orth in the Ind. State Lib.; records in the Adjt.-General's Office, Indianapolis; papers in the William H. English Collection, Univ. of Chicago Lib.]

J. L. N.

ORTHWEIN, CHARLES F. (Jan. 28, 1839–Dec. 28, 1898), grain merchant, was born near Stuttgart, in Württemberg, Germany. His mother died when he was quite young. His father, Charles C. Orthwein, made provision for his schooling and the boy was given the best education which the state schools of southern Germany could afford. In 1854 he came to the United States with his father, brothers, and sisters. After a brief stop in St. Louis the family settled for a time in Logan County, Ill., but the father soon became dissatisfied with his new home, and with the other children, returned to Germany, leaving young Charles behind. His first business experience was in a store in his Illinois home, but he saw larger opportunities in St. Louis, and accordingly obtained employment in the wholesale grocery and commission house of Ed. Eggers & Company. In a short time this concern was dissolved; whereupon he formed a partnership with Gustave Haenschen, under the name of Haenschen & Orthwein, and established a grain commission business. This venture was launched during the Civil War, and the partners' warehouses became a base of supplies for the Union armies. Since trade with the South was cut off, Orthwein turned his attention to the grain markets of other parts of the country and

eventually made St. Louis the dominant grain center of the Mississippi Valley.

After the war he dispatched the first grain shipment to Europe by way of the Mississippi River, sending a cargo of 12,000 bushels in 1866. This venture was at first financially unprofitable, but the benefits to St. Louis were important. He frequently addressed business meetings and spoke in private to urge that St. Louis engage in the export trade by way of the Mississippi and the Gulf of Mexico. In furtherance of this project he was instrumental in laying a petition before Congress for river and harbor improvements. He prevailed upon the Illinois Central Railroad and other lines to build more adequate grain terminal facilities in New Orleans and other cities. Making St. Louis the center of his organization, he established branches in many cities in the United States and Europe. He owned the Victoria elevator and mill in St. Louis, several elevators in Kansas City, New Orleans, Galveston, Seneca, Mo., and New York City. He also owned a large tract of land in St. Claire County, Mo. He was interested in the Southern Electric Railway Company of which he was president, and at one time held a very large interest in the National Railway Company. He was president of the Merchants Exchange and a director in the German Savings Bank of St. Louis. He early affiliated himself with the Democratic party, and later became what was known as a "Sound Money Democrat." He was a member of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ. He married Caroline Nulsen, daughter of John C. Nulsen, in 1866, and they had six sons and three daughters. He died at his home in St. Louis at the close of his sixtieth year.

[*St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, Dec. 28, 29, 1898; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, Dec. 29, 1898; *St. Louis Republic*, Dec. 29, 1898; Wm. Hyde and H. L. Conard, *Encyc. of the Hist. of St. Louis* (1899), III, 1678.]

O. B.

ORTON, EDWARD FRANCIS BAXTER (Mar. 9, 1829–Oct. 16, 1899), geologist, educator, son of Samuel Gibbs and Clara (Gregory) Orton, was born in Deposit, Delaware County, N. Y. After early manhood he was known simply as Edward Orton. His father was a Presbyterian clergyman, a descendant of Thomas Orton, one of the early settlers of Windsor, Conn. Edward's boyhood was passed mostly in Ripley, N. Y., where his father was then settled. He was fitted for college under his father's tuition and in the academies of Westfield and Fredonia. Entering Hamilton College as a sophomore in 1845, he graduated with high standing in 1848. The year following he served as assistant principal in an academy at Erie, Pa., and during 1849–50 studied in Lane Theological Seminary, Cincinnati, Ohio, supporting himself meanwhile by tutoring. At the end of that time, owing to eye troubles and other causes, he withdrew and spent several months in outdoor life on a farm. Later, he made a sea voyage in a coasting vessel. In the spring of 1851 he became a teacher in the Delaware Literary Institute, Franklin, N. Y., but passed the year 1852–53 at the Lawrence Scientific School of Harvard University. The years 1853–54 found him again teaching in the Delaware Institute, but, still intent upon the ministry as a profession, he then entered the Andover (Mass.) Theological Seminary. Without graduating, he was ordained at Delhi, on Jan. 1, 1856, by the Delaware Presbytery.

So far as is recorded he had manifested no marked liking for the natural sciences prior to his entering the Lawrence Scientific School, where he was interested chiefly in chemistry and botany. In 1856, however, he became professor of natural sciences in the state normal school, Albany, N. Y. Charged with holding heretical views, he resigned at the end of three years, and from 1859 to 1865 was principal of an academy at Chester, Orange County, where his success was such that he was elected professor of natural history in Antioch College, Yellow Springs, Ohio, a position he continued to hold until chosen its president in 1872. Meanwhile, in 1869, he had been appointed an assistant on the Geological Survey of Ohio under John S. Newberry [*q.v.*], and in 1873 was made professor of geology and president of the newly established College of Agriculture and Mechanics, which in 1878 became the state university. In 1881 he voluntarily resigned his presidency, but he retained his professorship to the end of his life. In 1882, on the reorganization of the state survey, he was appointed state geologist, a position he held until his death seventeen years later.

Though his interest in geology developed late in life, yet as state geologist he was markedly successful, notwithstanding the delicate position in which he was placed in being called on to take up and complete the work of his former chief (Newberry). During his administration there were brought out volumes V to VII of the final reports of the survey; these differed in a marked degree from those of his predecessor in the attention given to economic problems, particularly clay, coal, oil, and gas. He was the first to point out in a convincing manner the essential conditions for the accumulation in the earth's crust of the last two substances and their true

relations, and to warn of the probability of their exhaustion through a continuance of the wasteful practices then employed. He lived to see his forebodings become actualities.

As an administrator, Orton was a compelling force in the organization of the College of Agriculture and its subsequent development into the state university. He was a likable man; quiet in his manner and of a somewhat retiring nature. Sagacious, kindly, and conservative, he won out where a more aggressive man would have failed. His interest in the public welfare was deep, especially in matters of public health and conservation of resources. In his opposition to the reckless wasting of natural gas, he was a pioneer. In 1855 he married Mary M. Jennings of Franklin, N. Y., by whom he had four children; his wife died in 1873 and two years later he married Anna Davenport Torrey of Millbury, Mass., by whom he had two children. He suffered a stroke of paralysis early in December of 1881, which deprived him of the use of his left arm and caused a slight limp in his walk, but he retained his mental powers unimpaired until 1899 when, on Oct. 16, he died suddenly and painlessly.

[Edward Orton, *An Account of the Descendants of Thomas Orton of Windsor, Conn.* (1896); *In Memoriam, Edward Orton, Ph.D., LL.D.*, (1899); G. K. Gilbert, in *Bull. of the Geol. Soc. of America*, Oct. 31, 1900; I. C. White, in *Am. Geologist*, Apr. 1900; Henry Howe, *Hist. Colls. of Ohio*, vol. I (1890); J. J. Stevenson, in *Jour. of Geology*, Apr.–May 1900; Washington Gladden, in *Ohio Archæol. and Hist. Pubs.*, vol. VIII (1900); *Ohio State Jour.* (Columbus), Oct. 17, 1899.]

G. P. M.

ORTON, HARLOW SOUTH (Nov. 23, 1817–July 4, 1895), lawyer, jurist, was the son of Harlow N. Orton, M.D., and Grace (Marsh) Orton. He came of vigorous pioneer stock and was descended from Thomas Orton, an early settler in Connecticut. Both of his grandfathers were Baptist clergymen and fought in the Revolutionary War. He was born and reared on a farm in Madison County, N. Y., and after attending Hamilton Academy he spent two years (1835–37) at Madison University (now Colgate University). For one year he taught in and had charge of Paris Academy in Bourbon County, Ky. He completed his preparation for the bar in the law office of his brother, Myron H. Orton, in La Porte, Ind., where he was admitted in 1838. On July 5, 1839, he was married to Elizabeth Cheney, daughter of a prosperous Maryland planter. He was keenly interested in politics and was an active member of the Whig party, although after 1854 he was an independent Democrat. In 1840 he made nearly one hundred speeches advocating the election of General Harrison. In 1843 the governor of Indiana appointed him probate judge of Porter County. He commenced the practice of law in Milwaukee, Wis., in 1847, and six years later became private secretary to Governor Leonard J. Farwell. He then removed to Madison, Wis., where he continued to reside until the time of his death.

In 1854 he was elected a member of the Assembly. The following year he was retained in the case of *Attorney General ex rel. Bashford* vs. *Barstow* (4 *Wis.*, 567), one of the early important cases establishing the right of the judiciary to determine the legality of the election of officers of a coördinate branch of the government. The fact that he was employed as counsel indicates his standing at the bar. He was associated with and opposed to the ablest lawyers of the Wisconsin of his day and played a leading part in the trial of this novel and celebrated case. He was also retained in the so-called Granger Case, *Attorney General* vs. *Railroad Companies* (35 *Wis.*, 425). With other eminent counsel he represented the state. In 1859 he was elected judge of the ninth judicial circuit, was reëlected without opposition, but resigned the office in 1865 to resume the general practice of his profession. He was again elected to the legislature in 1869 and in 1871. In 1876 he was an unsuccessful candidate of the Democratic party for a seat in Congress and in the same year was appointed one of the committee which compiled the *Revised Statutes of the State of Wisconsin* (1878). From 1869 to 1874 he was dean of the law school of the University of Wisconsin, from which institution he received in 1869 the degree of LL.D. He continued the practice of his profession until April 1878, when he was elected a justice of the supreme court of Wisconsin. He became its chief justice in January 1894 and continued to occupy that position until his death.

Physically Orton was a man of powerful rugged frame and was possessed of tremendous energy and vitality. Intellectually he was keen, alert, and vigorous almost to the point of aggressiveness. He possessed in extraordinary degree the ability to express his thoughts in forcible and striking language. Generous, warm-hearted, somewhat impulsive, he had a strong sense of justice and right. With a firm and positive character he combined open-mindedness and the power of listening sympathetically to the views of others. He was not regarded by his contemporaries or those who followed him as a profound student of the law. It was as an advocate that he excelled, so that he was markedly successful in jury trials and in forensic contests where appeals to public feeling and opinion were

involved. It was because of his ability along these lines that he was retained in the Barstow case. His service as a member of the supreme court was marked by great industry and thorough devotion to his work.

[See: memorial exercises of the Wis. supreme court reported in 90 *Wis.*, xxi–xlvii; J. B. Winslow, *The Story of a Great Court* (1912); *Biog. Rev. of Dane County, Wis.* (1893); J. R. Berryman, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of Wis.* (2 vols., 1898); P. M. Reed, *The Bench and Bar of Wis.* (1882); Edward Orton, *An Account of the Descendants of Thos. Orton of Windsor, Conn., 1641* (1896); the *Green Bag*, Apr. 1897; *Madison Democrat*, July 6, 1895.] M. B. R.

ORTON, JAMES (Apr. 21, 1830–Sept. 25, 1877), zoologist, explorer, educator, was born at Seneca Falls, N. Y., the fifth child of Rev. Azariah Giles and Minerva (Squire) Orton and a descendant of Thomas Orton who settled in Windsor, Conn., about 1641. His father, a graduate of Williams College, was a man of great intellectual attainments but lacked the practical gifts necessary for professional or financial advancement, and his life was spent as pastor of small country parishes where salaries were meager and living conditions hard. Four of his eight sons died in infancy. James early became interested in the natural sciences, and the two passions of his youth were the study of natural history and writing. He made numerous collecting trips in the vicinity of his home and sent a long series of communications to the *Scientific American* and other periodicals. At the age of nineteen he published *The Miner's Guide and Metallurgist's Directory* (1849).

Partly because of ill health and partly because of financial difficulties, he was delayed in entering college, but eventually matriculated at Williams and graduated in 1855. There he became intimate with Henry A. Ward, later curator of the museum of the University of Rochester and founder of Ward's Natural History Establishment. With Ward, Orton made many walking trips, especially for the collection of specimens. During his undergraduate days he accompanied two scientific expeditions to Nova Scotia and Newfoundland, and acquired such a reputation as a naturalist that the president of Williams advised him to make the study of natural history his life work. He adhered, however, to his original purpose of becoming a minister, entered Andover Theological Seminary, graduated in 1858, and was ordained to the Presbyterian ministry, July 11, 1860. In 1859 he married Ellen, daughter of Asahel and Mary Foote. She survived him fifty-three years, dying June 12, 1930. He held various pastorates in New York State and in Maine, during the first few years after his ordination, but definitely decided on the life of a naturalist in 1866, when he went to the University of Rochester as instructor in natural history, acting as a substitute for Ward, who was absent on leave. In 1869 he was appointed professor of natural history at Vassar College, which position he held until his death.

Three expeditions to South America, where he explored the equatorial Andes and the region of the Amazons, yielded Orton's most important contributions to science. The first of these expeditions, in 1867, traversed the region from Guayaquil to Quito, down the Napo River to Pebas on the Maranon, and from there to Para by steamer. This involved climbing from sea level at Guayaquil over the western Cordilleras to a height of 15,000 feet. After his return he published *The Andes and the Amazons* (1870). On the second expedition, 1873, he went from Para up the Amazons to Yurimaguas and from there over the Andes to Peru. Numerous communications which on these two trips had been sent to journals in the United States, dealing with the geology, climate, inhabitants, flora, fauna, and economic resources of the countries visited, were ultimately brought together in *The Andes and the Amazons*, of which a third edition appeared in 1876. The collections were distributed among various museums.

In 1876 Orton organized a third expedition. While the first two had been carried out largely at his own expense, the third was financed by Edward Drinker Cope [*q.v.*] of Philadelphia, who was to receive in return whatever fossils were collected. One object of the trip was to explore the Beni River for the commercial advantage of the Bolivian government. Accompanied by Dr. E. R. Heath, whom he had met on an earlier expedition, Orton started out with a guard of soldiers which the government officials strongly advised taking as protection against wild animals and savage men. At the junction of the Beni and Mamore rivers this guard deserted, taking with them most of the other men. The leaders were thus forced to return to the coast. After many hardships they finally reached Lake Titicaca and started to sail across it to Puno in Peru. On this short trip Orton was taken with a hemorrhage and died. Because he was a non-Catholic, permission to bury his body in consecrated ground was refused, but Señor Estaves, owner of a small island in the lake, offered a plot there, which offer was accepted. In 1921 a monument presented by Vassar alumnae was erected at his grave and unveiled with elaborate ceremonies. The collections of this third expedition were taken over by the Peruvian govern-

ment to be sent to the United States, but they were never received.

An important publication for its time was Orton's *Comparative Zoology, Structural and Systematic* (1876), which was in advance of its contemporaries in stressing function as much as structure, most zoological textbooks of that date being mainly anatomical or taxonomic. He published also *Underground Treasures, How and Where to Find Them* (1872), which a generation after his death was in sufficient demand to warrant a new edition; *The Proverbialist and the Poet: Proverbs Illustrated by Parallel or Relative Passages from the Poets* (1852); and *The Liberal Education of Women, the Demand and the Method* (1873).

[Susan R. Orton, "A Sketch of James Orton," *Vassar Quart.*, Feb. 1916; James Orton, *The Andes and the Amazons* (3rd ed., 1876); E. Albes, "An Early American Explorer," *Bull. of the Pan-American Union*, July 1914; I. K. Macdermott, "An International Dedication Ceremony," *Ibid.*, Aug. 1922; Edward Orton, *An Account of the Descendants of Thomas Orton of Windsor, Conn.* (1896); *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 31, 1877.]

A. L. T.

ORTON, WILLIAM (June 14, 1826–Apr. 22, 1878), telegraph executive, came of an old English family. The first of the family in America was Thomas Orton who was living in Windsor, Conn., in 1641 and later was one of the original settlers of Farmington, Conn. The father of William Orton, Horatio Woodruff Orton, a teacher, moved from Connecticut to a farm near Cuba, Allegany County, N. Y. He married Sarah Carson in 1825 and the following year William was born. His father taught him to study and to concentrate his energies. He attended the district schools and the Albany Normal School, from which he graduated in 1846. Meanwhile he worked in a printing shop, and later in the Geneva bookstore of George H. Derby. He also taught school several years. In 1850 he married Agnes Johnston Gillespie; they had eight children. In 1852 he became a partner in the publishing firm of Derby, Orton & Mulligan in Buffalo but in 1856 moved to New York, where he was well known in the publishing business until the failure of his firm two years later. In 1860 he became interested in New York City politics and threw himself into the local affairs of his ward. In 1861 he was elected to the New York Common Council, and there made his mark as a convincing debater and as a leader of the Republican minority. He also took up the study of law and was admitted to the bar in the spring of 1867.

In 1862 President Lincoln appointed him collector of internal revenue at New York. So successful was his conduct of this office during the war that in 1865 President Johnson appointed him commissioner of internal revenue at Washington. Meanwhile, the telegraph had been spreading through the country. By 1864 two companies dominated the industry, the Western Union and the American Telegraph. To compete with these, in that year a third company was formed, the United States Telegraph Company. Its preliminary development was not sufficiently wise for it to stand the struggle, and its president resigned. Well-meaning friends secured the election of William Orton to the presidency in October 1865 and he resigned his commissionership to accept the new task. Becoming acquainted with the actual condition of the company and realizing more and more the importance to the public of a single service in communications, he set to work with Jeptha H. Wade, president of the Western Union, to merge the United States Telegraph Company into the older organization. This was accomplished in April 1866. Wade continued as president of the enlarged Western Union Telegraph Company and Orton became vice-president. At the same time the headquarters of the Western Union were moved from Rochester to New York. Wade and Orton then initiated negotiations with E. S. Sanford, president of the American Telegraph Company, for the merger of that company into the Western Union, and this was completed in June 1866. A year later Wade resigned, and on July 10, 1867, Orton became president.

At this time he was a man of tall, commanding figure, of large frame and dignified bearing. He was built to be a strong man, but the unremitting strain to which he subjected his nervous energies impaired his health and weakened his constitution. As president, he found that the merging of the three companies into one entailed serious problems of financial adjustment, rendered more difficult by the disturbed financial conditions that prevailed during and after the Civil War. To justify the inflated capital of $41,000,000 that the Western Union took over with the mergers the new president had to increase greatly the real assets of the company. Further, the Western Union had now become truly national in scope and in responsibility. The vast railroad and highway development of the time necessitated an enormous amount of new construction. No less did efficient service to the public require expensive replacement.

Orton started out by suspending dividends. He also at once began to encourage invention and to stimulate scientific standards in telegraphic engineering. Once his program got under way, the business and public service of the

company increased rapidly. Before 1871 only one telegraphic message could be transmitted over a wire at a time. In that year the Western Union adopted the Stearns duplex system (patented in 1868), and in 1874 the Edison quadruplex system. The result was that the number of telegrams passing daily through the main office of the Western Union in New York City increased from 3,500 in 1871 to 75,000 in 1875.

With unification came also opposition. In 1869 three bills were introduced into Congress to provide that the Government should take over the ownership and operation of the telegraph companies. Orton probably rendered his greatest service to the development of American industry by his fight against these and similar proposals. Appearing repeatedly before the United States Senate and House Committees, by formal address and informal debate he contended for the principles on which he was transforming the telegraphic service of his day. He brought to bear his exhaustive knowledge of the facts of both American and European telegraphy. He opposed any legislation of the kind as impractical and contrary to the best development of telegraphic communications, and he denounced it as confiscatory and unconstitutional. Ever ready to meet attack, and always throwing himself with all his high-strung energy into the struggle, he won. But the long fight, added to the heavy strain of his regular executive and constructive labors, sapped his strength. His tense nervous physique, buoyant though it was, broke, and he died suddenly of apoplexy on Apr. 22, 1878.

[*Ann. Reports of the President of the Western Union Telegraph Company*, 1867–78; *Jour. of the Telegraph*, 1867–78, esp. the Memorial Number, May 1, 1878; *The Telegrapher*, 1864–77; J. D. Reid, *The Telegraph in America* (1879); Edward Orton, *An Account of the Descendants of Thomas Orton of Windsor, Conn.* (1896); *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Times, N. Y. Herald*, Apr. 23, 1878.] W. C. L.

ORTYNSKY, STEPHEN SOTER (Jan. 29, 1866–Mar. 24, 1916), Catholic prelate, son of John and Mary (Kulczycka) Ortynsky, was born at Ortynyczi, Galicia, Austria, of old Ruthenian stock. Educated in the public school and gymnasium at Drohobycz and in the University of Krakow, from which he received the doctorate in divinity, he was ordained, July 18, 1891, a monk of the Order of St. Basil the Great. As an eloquent preacher in the Slavic tongues and in German, as a writer, as a professor of philosophy in the university at Lawrow, Galicia, as a nationalist patriot, and as hegumenos of the monastery of St. Paul, Michaelovka, Ortynsky attained fame throughout Galicia, Bukovina, Hungary, and the Ukraine. Because of the increased immigration of people of these lands and of adherents of the Roman Catholic Church who followed the Greek rite, it was held desirable in Rome that a bishop be sent to the United States who would have special care of the priests and congregations of Greek Catholics as a safeguard against the religious and political proselyting activities of Greek Orthodox and Pan-Slavic agents. Hence, Dr. Ortynsky was appointed an auxiliary to the Latin bishops with the title of bishop of Daulia and with headquarters at Philadelphia. On May 12, 1907, he was consecrated by Archbishop Szeptycky of Lemberg.

In the rather difficult position which he occupied he displayed wisdom and ability. He was tactful in dealing with the various bishops and in preventing any feeling of conflicting jurisdiction. His work among the Ruthenians and Ukrainians was marked with a high degree of success. He established parishes, built schools, counteracted Greek Orthodox propaganda, fostered Americanization, fought radicalism, and introduced the Sisters of the Order of St. Basil the Great. These achievements led to the establishment of a Ukrainian Greek Catholic diocese and Ortynsky's appointment as Greek Catholic bishop for the United States with St. Mary of the Immaculate Conception Church in Philadelphia (which he established in 1909) as his cathedral (May 28, 1913). He founded St. Basil's Orphanage for dependent children and established for his countrymen the fraternal order "Providence," with its organ *Ameryka*, to which he was an active contributor. During the war he was deeply concerned over Russian atrocities in Galicia and the imprisonment of his patron, Metropolitan Szeptycky. He published an appeal in the form of two courageous pastoral letters (1915), which condemned the Czar's Pan-Slavic crusade of "liberation of Slavic peoples" while he trampled on their churches and undermined their nationalism. At the time of his death he had charge of a half million Greek Catholics, 152 churches, and 150 parish schools.

[*Am. Cath. Who's Who* (1911); *Cath. Encyc.*, VI, 748 f.; P. J. Kenedy, *The Official Cath. Directory* (1907 ff.); *Ameryka*, Mar. 26, 1916; *Evening Bulletin* (Phila.), and the *North American* (Phila.), Mar. 25, 1916; materials from the chancery of the Ukrainian Greek Catholic diocese.] R. J. P.

OSBORN, CHARLES (Aug. 21, 1775–Dec. 29, 1850), abolitionist, the grandson of Matthew Osborn who emigrated from England probably to Delaware, and the son of David and Margaret (Stout) Osborn, was born in Guilford County, N. C. About 1794 he removed to Knox County, Tenn., where he became a Quaker preacher. As an active minister from 1806 to 1840 he traveled

thousands of miles visiting and preaching in nearly every Quaker meeting throughout the United States, Canada, and Great Britain. He lived in Jefferson County, Tenn., Mount Pleasant, Ohio, and from 1819 to 1842 in Wayne County, Ind., excepting the years from 1827 to 1830 that he spent in Warren and Clinton counties, Ohio. In 1842 he removed to Cass County, Mich., and in 1848 to Porter County, Ind., where he died. On Jan. 11, 1798, he married Sarah Newman, who died on Aug. 10, 1812, leaving seven children, and on Sept. 26, 1813, he married Hannah Swain, who bore him nine children.

Endowed by his Quaker environment with a reforming spirit and influenced by the privations of a semi-pioneer life, he maintained with courage and ability his moral, religious, and anti-slavery convictions. In December 1814, at the house of his father-in-law, Elihu Swain, he began his career as an anti-slavery leader by laying the foundations for the Tennessee Manumission Society, whose organization he did not, however, complete until the next February at Lostcreek Meeting House. In 1816 he founded similar societies in Guilford County, N. C. While at Mount Pleasant, Ohio, he published the *Philanthropist,* from Aug. 29, 1817, to Oct. 8, 1818, a paper partially devoted to anti-slavery agitation. It has been asserted that he himself, and, through him, the manumission societies and *Philanthropist* were the earliest advocates of immediate emancipation. This assertion cannot be substantiated. The societies definitely advocated gradual emancipation. His own strong moral and religious convictions did not include demands for immediate emancipation until his affiliation with Garrisonian abolition about 1832. Through the *Philanthropist* he denounced the American Society for Colonizing the Free People of Colour of the United States, afterward the American Colonization Society, as a specious device of slaveholders to protect slavery, expatriate free negroes, and thwart other emancipation schemes. Following Quaker tradition he long opposed the use of products of slave labor, considering them stolen goods because slaves' labor was stolen by their masters. His exhortations resulted in the formation on Jan. 22, 1842, of the Free Produce Association of Wayne County, Ind., and the establishment of a propagandist newspaper, the *Free Labor Advocate and Anti-Slavery Chronicle.* When the conservatives, who, only mildly abolitionist, believed in confining anti-slavery activity to their own religious organization, gained control over the Indiana Yearly Meeting, which before 1842 was dominated by the active abolitionist radicals, they removed

him and others from the Meeting for Sufferings, a governing committee of the Church, on which he had served for years. This was a severe and unexpected blow to him. Bitterly lamenting the conservatives' position, he participated prominently in the secession of 2,000 radicals who formed the Indiana Yearly Meeting of Anti-Slavery Friends in February 1843. He continued his interest in the later activities of the seceders and died condemning the Fugitive-slave Law. After his death, in 1854 the Church published *The Journal of that Faithful Servant of Christ, Charles Osborn.*

[Minutes of the Manumission Soc. of N. C., in the Guilford College Lib.; minutes of Ind. Yearly Meeting of Anti-Slavery Friends in Earlham College Lib.; *Emancipator,* pub. by Elihu Embree, Apr. 30, May 31, 1820; Walter Edgerton, *A Hist. of the Separation in Ind. Yearly Meeting* (1856); Levi Coffin, *Reminiscences* (1876); *Hist. of Wayne County, Ind.* (1884), vol. II; G. W. Julian, "The Rank of Charles Osborn as an Anti-Slavery Pioneer," *Ind. Hist. Soc. Pubs.,* vol. II, no. 6 (1891); S. B. Weeks, *Southern Quakers and Slavery* (1896); P. M. Sherrill, "Quakers and N. C. Manumission Soc.," *Trinity Coll. Hist. Soc. Papers,* X (1914); A. E. Martin, "Anti-Slavery Soc. in Tenn.," *Tenn. Hist. Mag.,* Dec. 1915.] R. A. K.

OSBORN, HENRY STAFFORD (Aug. 17, 1823–Feb. 2, 1894), Presbyterian clergyman, author, map-maker, was born in Philadelphia, the son of the Rev. Truman Osborn, of New England stock, and Eliza (Paget) Osborn, of a South Carolina family. Henry received the degree of A.B. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1841, entered Union Theological Seminary, where he graduated in 1845, and on Apr. 9, 1848, was ordained a minister in the Presbyterian Church. Meantime he had been stated supply at Coventry, R. I., 1845–46, and in 1846 had gone to Hanover, Va., where he was in charge of a church till 1849. He served pastorates at Richmond, Va., 1849–53; Liberty, Va., 1853–58; and Belvidere, N. J., 1859–65. In 1860, while at Belvidere, he married Pauline Courson, to which union was born one daughter. He had a strong bent toward science, and during his early years in the ministry served for some time as professor of natural science in Roanoke College, Virginia. In 1866 he accepted the professorship of chemistry and mining engineering in Lafayette College, resigning to assume in 1870 that of the natural sciences in Miami University, Oxford, Ohio. Although in 1873 Miami University closed temporarily, he continued his residence in Oxford until his death, devoting his time to the ministry, lecturing, writing, and publishing.

He went abroad for travel and study in 1850–

51 and again in 1858–59. During the second trip he made special studies in the geography and plants of Palestine, as a result of which he published *Palestine, Past and Present* (London, 1859) and *Plants of the Holy Land with Their Fruits and Flowers* (1860), illustrated by original drawings which exhibit accuracy of observation and striking artistic skill. His chief interests from 1873 to the time of his death were the extension of his studies and publication in his two fields of original inquiry, the Holy Land and metallurgy. In connection with his later works on the Holy Land, he established in Oxford a "Map Shop" from which, with the assistance of one employee, for twenty years he published for churches and Sunday schools in England and America his attractive hand-made maps, illustrating the geography of Palestine and the ancient world for the benefit of ministers and Sunday-school teachers. His *New Descriptive Geography of Palestine* was issued in 1877. His publications in the field of mineralogy included *Metallurgy, Iron and Steel* (1869); *A Practical Manual of Minerals, Mines and Mining* (1888); and *The Prospector's Field-book and Guide* (1892). He was a member of a number of scientific societies both at home and abroad. He was a man of versatile talents and striking personality—tall, thin to gauntness, talkative, notably genial among friends, lover of harmless gossip. Like a true philosopher he was indifferent to economic considerations and social conventions. To and from his map shop, in his research laboratory, on field trips, on business errands, he wore his familiar "tile" hat and morning clothes. While much abstracted in his daily contacts, when engaged in conversation or address his mind exhibited a many-sided interest and a keen discrimination that marked him as distinctly intellectual.

[*Gen. Cat. of the Grads. and Former Students of Miami University* (1909); H. C. Baird, biog. sketch, in *Prospector's Field-book and Guide* (2nd ed., 1896); *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 4, 1894.] H. C. M.

OSBORN, LAUGHTON (*c.* 1809–Dec. 13, 1878), poet, dramatist, was a man whose peculiar temperament, antagonistic disposition, erratic outlook on life, and desire to be something different and to live apart from his fellow men, are occasionally found among those in the minor ranks of the literary profession. He was born in New York City, where his father was a well-known and wealthy physician, and during his course of study at Columbia, from which he was graduated in 1827, he is said by at least one classmate to have been studious and popular. That he was studious there can be no doubt. If he was popular, a change must have come over him after he left college, perhaps owing to the death of a favorite sister, and aggravated by the unfavorable reception accorded to his books. After he returned from a year of foreign travel, he lived for nearly half a century in retirement in New York, although he was surrounded by many who might have become his friends and associates in society and the world of letters. In 1831 his *Sixty Years of the Life of Jeremy Levis* was published in two volumes, its rambling style and varied material revealing beyond doubt that he had been a faithful student of Laurence Sterne and *Tristram Shandy*. The harsh and antagonistic comment of the press upon this book set him against the critics and reviewers, and thereafter he waged continuous verbal warfare with them. Many of his books were issued at his own expense and without his name, among his successive publications being *The Dream of Alla-Ad-Deen; The Confessions of a Poet* (1835); *The Vision of Rubeta, an Epic Story of the Island of Manhattan: with Illustrations Done on Stone* (1838), aimed particularly at William Leete Stone, 1792–1844 [*q.v.*], but which also contained a fierce attack on Wordsworth and replies to his critics, and *Arthur Carryl* (1841), a volume of miscellaneous poems and a "novel" in two cantos which gave the name to the volume. These were followed by numerous tragedies and comedies with such titles as *The Heart's Sacrifice, Matilda of Denmark, Bianco Capello*, and *Mariamne, a Tragedy of Jewish History*. He also wrote a *Handbook of Young Artists and Amateurs in Oil Painting*, published in 1845.

In addition to his literary gifts, he was a painter and musician of some skill, and a master of several languages. According to James Grant Wilson, he was at least six feet tall, of fine physique and carriage, while Poe, writing of him when he was about the age of thirty-five, says that he was "probably five feet ten or eleven, muscular and active." Poe also described him as "undoubtedly one of 'Nature's own noblemen,' full of generosity, courage, honor—chivalrous in every respect, but unhappily, carrying his ideas of chivalry, or rather of independence, to the point of Quixotism, if not of absolute insanity. He has no doubt been misapprehended, and therefore wronged, by the world; but he should not fail to remember that the source of the wrong lay in his own idiosyncracy—one altogether unintelligible and unappreciable by the mass of mankind" (*post*, p. 56). His plays were obviously for the library, and not for the footlights, and a search of dramatic records fails

to disclose any mention of their production in New York or elsewhere.

[E. A. Poe, *The Literati* (1850); S. A. Allibone, *A Critical Dict. of English Lit. and British and Am. Authors*, vol. II (1870); J. G. Wilson, *Bryant and His Friends* (1886); the *World* (N. Y.), Dec. 14, 1878.]
E. F. E.

OSBORN, NORRIS GALPIN (Apr. 17, 1858–May 6, 1932), editor, long a leader in the public affairs of Connecticut, was born in New Haven, the son of Minott Augur and Catharine Sophia (Gilbert) Osborn. He prepared for college in the Hopkins Grammar School and in 1880 graduated from Yale. His father was owner of the *New Haven Evening Register* and his home, a rendezvous for men of influence in the state and nation. Young Osborn grew up, therefore, in an atmosphere conducive to interest in political matters and acquired high ideals of public service. Upon leaving college he became a reporter on the *Register*, and in 1884, its editor. In 1907 he was made editor-in-chief of the *New Haven Journal-Courier*, which position he held till his death. Under the name "Trumbull," in 1890 he began contributing to the Sunday edition of the *New York Herald* piquant articles on political happenings in Connecticut, which are an invaluable source of historical information. In addition to his newspaper work, he published *A Glance Backward: Editorial Reminiscences* (1905), and delivered the Bromley Lectures on Journalism, Literature, and Public Affairs at Yale in 1920, published the following year under the title *Isaac H. Bromley*. He also edited *Men of Mark in Connecticut* (5 vols., 1906–10) and *History of Connecticut in Monograph Form* (5 vols., 1925), and was a contributor to the *Dictionary of American Biography*.

Both a lucid, forceful writer, and a brilliant speaker, he did as much to mould public opinion in Connecticut during his lifetime as any other one man, while by his contemporaries in newspaper circles his abilities were widely recognized. On every important issue of the day, local and national, he took a decided stand, and maintained it with courageous independence. No one who tried to influence him by base appeals ever remained long in his office. He fought hard but goodnaturedly and with the generosity and gallantry of a born gentleman. Politically, he was an old-time Democrat, and his advice in party councils carried weight. He was on the staff of Gov. Thomas M. Waller in 1883 and thereafter was always known as "Colonel." He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention of 1892 and enjoyed the confidence of President Cleveland during both his administrations. A member of the state constitutional convention of 1902, he led a notable but unsuccessful fight to change the antiquated system of representation in the legislature. For some thirty-five years he was active in the Connecticut Civil Service Reform Association; in the presidential campaign of 1896 he broke with his party and was an official of the Connecticut Sound Money League; in the local activities created by the World War, he took a leading part. Prohibition he assailed in season and out of season, attacking it as vicious in principle and deplorable in results. Perhaps his most valuable service, certainly the one that gave him greatest satisfaction, was in connection with the state prison. From 1895 till his death he was on the board of directors and after 1912 its president, acting also as chairman of the parole board. He practically determined the policy of the institution, took a personal interest in the inmates, and was their friend and adviser after their parole. He was both an idealist and a realist. He had implicit faith that the people, sufficiently informed, would do the right thing, and that the world was getting better; but he faced facts with both eyes open.

Tall and debonair, quick at repartee, a spirited raconteur with a rich resonant voice, he at once became the center of any group he joined. Significant of the confidence and regard he inspired is the fact that among his warmest friends were persons widely apart socially and of diverse political and religious views. In 1922 an infection necessitated the amputation of one of his legs. He bore its loss with his customary buoyant cheerfulness, and was soon back at his work, remaining active until shortly before his death. Married Dec. 27, 1881, to Kate Louise Gardner of New York, he was survived by three sons and two daughters.

[*A Hist. of the Class of Eighty, Yale College* (1910); *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *N. Y. Times*, May 7, 1932; *New Haven Journal-Courier*, May 7 ff.; personal acquaintance.]
H. E. S.

OSBORN, SELLECK (*c.* 1782–*c.* October 1826), journalist, poet, was born in Trumbull, Conn., the son of Nathaniel Osborn. At an early age he was apprenticed as a printer. From June 19, 1802, to Jan. 3, 1803, he edited the *Suffolk County Herald* at Sag Harbor, N. Y. In 1805 he joined Timothy Ashley in editing *The Witness*, at Litchfield, Conn. The town was at that time strongly Federalist and contained several outspoken critics of President Jefferson and his policies. Democrats encouraged the publishers to expose Federalist fallacies and uphold the President in their columns. Osborn penned edi-

torials with youthful zeal and indiscretion. The prominent Federalists were decorated with opprobious and malodorous nicknames until one, "Crowbar Justice" (Julius) Deming, sued the editors for libel. At the session of the county court in April 1806, they were found guilty, fined each $100 and costs, and ordered under bonds to "keep the peace & be of good behaviour . . . till the next Term of this Court" and "to stand committed within the Gaol of s'd County untill this Judgment be complied with" (Litchfield County Court Records, XVI, 304–05). Ashley exhibited compliance, but Osborn chose to "stand committed" and from his cell, as sole editor, continued *The Witness*. This made him a veritable John Wilkes in the eyes of John C. Calhoun [*q.v.*], then a law student in Litchfield (*New York Patriot*, Nov. 27, 1823), and of the Republican newspapers throughout the country and much political capital was made of his imprisonment. On Aug. 6, 1806, a demonstration was staged in his honor; there was a procession followed by "spread-eagle exercises in the meeting house" and a collation on the Green opposite the jail; the first toast offered was: "Selleck Osborn! the Later Daniel in the lion's den. He is teaching his persecutors that the beasts cannot devour him!" (White, *post*, p. 165). Reporting the incident, a Washington paper said that the "persecution of federalism" had raised Osborn "high in the esteem of dispassionate men" (*National Intelligencer*, Aug. 20, 1806).

It is more than possible that the presence in that Litchfield parade of a squad of cavalry militia from Massachusetts induced Osborn some time after his release to become a cavalryman. He was commissioned first lieutenant of light dragoons in the United States army July 8, 1808, was promoted to captain Feb. 20, 1811, became attached to the first regiment of light dragoons July 6, 1812 (a second regiment having been organized that year), served in the War of 1812 on the Canadian frontier, and was honorably discharged June 1, 1814. He soon returned to newspaper work, associating himself, after a brief interval, with the *American Watchman*, Wilmington, Del., of which, for about three years beginning July 19, 1817, he was the owner and editor (*American Watchman*, July 16, 1817). In 1823–24, zealous to gain the Republican presidential nomination for his friend Calhoun, he collaborated in editing and printing the *New York Patriot*. Later he moved to Philadelphia, where he died.

A regular feature in any newspaper edited by Osborn was a poet's corner, to which he contributed. In *The Witness*, Mar. 4, 1807, appeared

Osborn

a poem called "The Contrast—or War and Peace," containing these lines:

"Heaven hasten the time when the battle shall cease
And dread terror be banish'd afar;
When Love
Like a dove
With the EMBLEM OF PEACE
Shall return to the Ark, and that wretchedness cease,
Which embitters the horrors of War."

As these verses indicate, Osborn was an outspoken advocate of peace, despite the apparent contradiction of his career as a cavalryman. A volume of his verse entitled simply *Poems* was published in Boston in 1823. In 1810, at New Bedford, Mass., he married Mary, daughter of Barnabas Hammond. They had two children, a son and a daughter.

[*American Watchman*, July 16, 1817; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903), containing some inaccuracies; A. C. White, *The Hist. of the Town of Litchfield, Conn.* (1920); E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1875), vol. II; Samuel Kettell, *Specimens of Am. Poetry* (1829), vol. II; Roland Hammond, *A Hist. and Geneal. of the Descendants of Wm. Hammond* (1894); *Litchfield Monitor*, Aug. 13, 1806; Litchfield County Court records; Trumbull (Conn.) Cong. Church records; *Nat. Intelligencer* (Washington, D. C.), Oct. 30, 1826.]

A. E. P.

OSBORN, THOMAS ANDREW (Oct. 26, 1836–Feb. 4, 1898), lawyer, statesman, diplomat, was born in Meadville, Pa., the son of Carpenter and Elizabeth (Morris) Osborn. He was apprenticed to a Meadville printer and earned enough money to attend the preparatory department of Allegheny College (1855–57). He also had a few months of legal study in the office of Judge Derickson of Meadville in 1856. In 1857 he traveled westward to Pontiac, Mich., where his career was officially launched by his admission to the bar just after his twenty-first birthday. In November of the same year he turned westward again and settled in Kansas. He first found work as a compositor in the office of the *Kansas Herald of Freedom* in Lawrence, and as acting editor during the absence of the owner. In the spring of 1858 he opened a law office in Elwood and in the same year was elected attorney of Doniphan County. His winning personality, energy, and ability had by this time been demonstrated to such a degree that in 1859 he took his seat as senator from Doniphan County in the first legislature of the new state of Kansas. He was a Republican and a Free-Stater. In 1862 he was elected president *pro tempore* of the Senate, though one of its youngest members, and presided with conspicuous ability at the impeachment of Gov. Charles Robinson. In the same year, 1862, he was elected lieutenant-governor of Kansas. In 1864 President Lincoln appointed

him United States marshal, but political differences caused his removal by President Johnson in 1867.

In the election of 1872 Osborn was made governor of Kansas, and the following year he began his two eventful terms in that office. Three major crises arose, each of which he met with characteristic ability. His efficient relief measures during the "Grasshopper Year" of 1874 earned him the admiration and gratitude of the people of Kansas. The threat of a serious Indian uprising on the southern border of the state was successfully overcome by moderate but determined action. The discovery in 1875 of misconduct in the use of funds by the state treasurer was followed by prompt measures which averted what might have become a serious financial crisis. Under his administration the settlement of Kansas made great progress and many new counties were organized. In 1877, after having unsuccessfully campaigned for a seat in the United States Senate, Osborn was appointed minister to Chile by President Hayes. During his residence at Santiago, Chile became involved in war with Peru and Bolivia. Osborn's attempts to effect a peaceful settlement between the countries were appreciated but futile. With the help of Thomas Ogden Osborn [*q.v.*], American minister to Argentina, however, he was instrumental in settling the long-standing Patagonian boundary dispute, for which he received the public thanks of the government of Chile. In 1881 he was appointed minister to Brazil by President Garfield. While no sensational event marked his residence at Rio de Janeiro, the Brazilian government showed its appreciation of his four years of service by bestowing upon him the highest honor that could be given a foreigner, the Grand Cross of the Order of the Rose.

Returning to Kansas Osborn resumed his business and political interests. In 1888 he headed the Kansas delegation at the Republican National Convention. The same year he was elected state senator from Shawnee County and held office for two terms. He engaged in extensive business activities, including banking, real-estate, mining, investments, and railroads. He was a director of the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fé Railroad from 1894 until his death. In 1870 he married Julia Delahay, daughter of Judge Mark W. Delahay of Leavenworth, Kan. They had one son. Osborn died suddenly in 1898, while on a visit to his old home in Meadville.

[Charles S. Gleed, "Thomas A. Osborn," *Trans. Kan. State Hist. Soc.*, vol. VI (1900); W. E. Connelley, ed., *A Standard Hist. of Kan. and Kansans* (1918), vol. II; C. R. Tuttle, *A New Centennial Hist. of the State of Kan.* (1876); *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1878–82; *Message of the President of the U. S., Transmitting Papers Relating to the War in South America and Attempts to Bring About a Peace* (1882); D. W. Wilder, *The Annals of Kan., 1541–1885* (1886); the *Topeka Daily Capital*, Feb. 5, 1898.]

I. L. T.

OSBORN, THOMAS OGDEN (Aug. 11, 1832–Mar. 27, 1904), lawyer, soldier, diplomat, was born in Jersey, Ohio, the son of Samuel and Hannah (Meeker) Osborn. He graduated in 1854 from Ohio University at Athens and after reading law for two years in the office of Gen. Lew Wallace at Crawfordsville, Ind., was admitted to the bar. In 1858 he began the practice of law in Chicago. With the opening of the Civil War, however, he threw all his energies into recruiting a regiment of volunteers, the 39th Illinois Infantry, christened the Yates Phalanx in honor of the governor of the state. He was elected lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, which was attached to the Army of the Potomac, and was shortly promoted to colonel. He was wounded in the attack on Fort Wagner and later more seriously in the battle of Drewry's Bluff, when a bullet shattered his right elbow. For gallantry in action he was brevetted brigadier-general. After more than four months he was discharged from Chesapeake Hospital, but, too weak to return to the field, was given a furlough. He spent his period of convalescence delivering a vigorous series of speeches in Michigan, Illinois, and Indiana in Lincoln's second presidential campaign. Returning to active service in December 1864, he remained with his command on the north side of Richmond all winter, and on Apr. 2, 1865, in a dangerous and gallant charge captured Fort Gregg. This resulted in the fall of Petersburg and Richmond. Osborn was made full brigadier-general of volunteers, and the Yates Phalanx was presented with a brazen eagle by the Secretary of War.

After the war Osborn returned to his law practice in Chicago. He was treasurer of Cook County, Ill., in the years 1867–69; served on the board of managers of the National Home for Disabled Volunteer Soldiers; and on Jan. 7, 1873, was appointed a member of the Commission to Inquire into the Depredations Committed on the Texas Frontier, and spent the winter investigating conditions in the Rio Grande Valley. On Feb. 10, 1874, President Grant appointed him minister resident in the Argentine Republic. Never content to fill a passive rôle, he was not only careful to protect American interests, but tried to make himself a valued counselor and trusted friend of the Argentines. On July 6, 1880, his good offices were effective in terminating the civil war between the national government and the province of Buenos Aires. For

many years the relations between Argentina and Chile had been disturbed by a misunderstanding over the Patagonian boundary between the two countries. Osborn and his colleague, Thomas Andrew Osborn [*q.v.*], American minister to Chile, took the initiative in bringing about a settlement. The snowy Andes blocked travel between the two capitals, but a treaty was successfully negotiated and ratified (Oct. 22, 1881) by telegraph. Osborn commented that it might well be called "the Wire Treaty." Others suggested "the Osborn Treaty" as an appropriate name. Osborn was publicly thanked by the Argentine government and commended by his own. The Argentine Republic afterward presented him with a shield, "very handsome, artistic, and costly," bearing figures representing Chile and Argentina with hands joined, and the United States extending an olive branch. This shield, said to be the last finished work of Gustave Doré, was hung in the Art Institute of Chicago.

Osborn resigned in 1885 but remained in South America, engaging in railway projects. One link of the Pan-American Railway, from Asunción, Paraguay, to Sucre, Bolivia, was known as the Osborn Concession. He returned to Chicago in 1890 and retired from active business. He died suddenly in Washington, D. C., in 1904, and was buried in Arlington National Cemetery. He never married.

[*Biog. Sketches of the Leading Men of Chicago* (1868); *Chicago Record-Herald*, Mar. 28, 1904; "Hist. of the Thirty-ninth Infantry," in *Report of the Adj.-Gen. of the State of Ill.* (1867), vol. I; "Report and Accompanying Documents . . . on the Relations of the U. S. with Mexico," *House Report 701*, 45 Cong., 2 Sess.; *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1874–85; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; *Buenos Ayres Herald*, Nov. 14, 1880; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; the *Washington Post*, Mar. 28, 1904.]

I. L. T.

OSBORN, WILLIAM HENRY (Dec. 21, 1820–Mar. 2, 1894), railroad promoter and president, philanthropist, was born at Salem, Mass., the son of William and Anna Henfield (Bowditch) Osborn. He came of old New England stock. His earliest-known direct ancestor was a sea-captain, whom he resembled in his adventurous nature and independence. After attending the rural and high school of his community, he abandoned the routine of formal education at the age of thirteen to enter the East India House of Peele, Hubbell & Company of Boston. Within a few years his aptitude for business won him an appointment as their representative in Manila, where he later established himself in his own interest. Returning to the United States after about ten years, on Dec. 14, 1853, he married Virginia Reed Sturges, daughter of Jonathan Sturges, a New York merchant and one of the incorporators of the Illinois Central Railroad. Of this road, still incomplete, Osborn was made president in 1855. The company was then in a critical financial position. The "Schuyler frauds" (overissue of the stock of the New York & New Haven road, under the presidency of Robert Schuyler who was at the same time president of the Illinois Central) had made it virtually impossible to negotiate railroad securities, but Osborn reorganized the Illinois Central and placed it on a firm financial basis. When the panic of 1857 with its disastrous accompaniment swept the country, he again brought order into the chaos of the railroad's affairs by negotiating a personal loan, and reëstablished the company's credit by assessments upon stockholders and a new bond issue, thereby giving to the company permanent financial stability. The use of this road by the government during the Civil War for the transportation of troops and war materials and of grain and supplies, the rapid development of the natural resources of the country, and the consequent settlement of the company's lands so contributed to its material success that soon after 1861 it began to pay dividends to shareholders. Its credit continued to rise, and before severing his connection with the company, Osborn was able to negotiate its bonds at 3½%, an unprecedented accomplishment. For about thirty years he controlled the destinies of the Illinois Central, serving for ten years as president (1855–65), twenty-two as director (1854–76), and six as president of the Chicago, St. Louis & New Orleans (1877–82). During the last period he exercised his customary energy and ability in working out plans and policies whereby the Illinois Central acquired this line as an extension to New Orleans and became one of the world's most important railroad properties.

His retirement from business in 1882 meant only a transfer of activity; thereafter he devoted himself to philanthropy and the art of living. His private beneficence had a very wide range; while resident in Chicago he and his wife had actively promoted the welfare of the railroad workers by means of an employees' relief association and a library; in New York he was closely identified with the Society for the Relief of the Ruptured and Crippled, the Bellevue Training School for Nurses, and the New York Hospital. He rounded his career and enriched his personal life by a fine discrimination in literature and art, his library and art collection both being considerable. Among those whose warm friendship he enjoyed were the poet E. P. Whipple, whom he knew from childhood; Frederick

E. Church, the artist; and Samuel J. Tilden. His prominent traits were sincerity, hatred of affectation in people and of sham in men or in measures, and a pronounced tenacity of conviction. Much of his time toward the close of his life was spent quietly on his estate "Castle Rock," at Garrison, N. Y. He died in New York City, survived by two of his four children.

[Family records supplied by a son, Prof. Henry Fairfield Osborn; tributes of friends; recollections of President Stuyvesant Fish, L. V. F. Randolph, E. T. Jeffery; Emerson Hough, "The Settlement of the West: A Study in Transportation," *Century*, Jan. 1902; H. G. Brownson, *History of the Illinois Central Railroad to 1870* (1915); *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 4, 1894.] F.M.

OSBORNE, JAMES WALKER (Jan. 5, 1859–Sept. 7, 1919), lawyer, was born in Charlotte, N. C., the son of James W. Osborne and Mary (Irwin) Osborne. His ancestors on both sides of the house came of North-of-Ireland stock. His father was a judge of the superior court of North Carolina, highly respected and esteemed in his community; his mother was a woman of strong and vigorous mind, deeply read in literature, profoundly interested in public affairs, and a devoted companion to her children. He was graduated in 1879 from Davidson College, North Carolina. He stood high in his classes and showed even then the enormous energy, mental and physical, which characterized him throughout his life. In 1883 he sought a wider field for his ambitions in New York, where he studied in the Columbia University Law School, graduated in 1885, and was immediately admitted to the bar.

He was by principle and by heredity an ardent Democrat and his legal and political activities soon brought him into public notice. In 1891 De Lancey Nicoll [*q.v.*], who was then district attorney of New York County, appointed him as a member of his staff of young men remarkable for their character and ability. In this good company Osborne soon made his mark. During his eleven years of service, he conducted many of the most important criminal prosecutions in the County of New York. Of these, perhaps, the best known were the cases of Roland Burnham Molineux and Albert T. Patrick. In the former, upon the first trial, the defendant was convicted, but the judgment was reversed by the court of appeals, and upon the second trial he was acquitted (*The Molineux Case*, 1929, edited by Samuel Klaus). Albert T. Patrick was convicted, and the conviction was affirmed (182 *N. Y. Reports*, 131), but the sentence of death was commuted by Governor Higgins to life imprisonment, and Patrick was afterwards pardoned by Governor Dix. Osborne was thorough and careful in preparation, logical and forceful in the presentation of his evidence, and searching in his cross-examinations. In his addresses to the jury, he was eloquent and persuasive. In 1902 he resigned and entered into private practice, resuming after an interval membership in the firm of Osborne, Lamb & Petty, with which he had been connected before his public service. In 1905 he was nominated by the Democratic party as district attorney for New York County but was defeated by William Travers Jerome, an independent Democrat, nominated upon a fusion ticket, who won by a small majority.

Osborne continued in private practice during the rest of his life, but accepted a number of public retainers in which he rendered notable service. In 1909, he was appointed a special attorney general of the state of New York for the purpose of investigating and prosecuting the American Ice Company for violation of the anti-trust statutes. After a long and bitterly contested litigation, he was successful in securing the conviction of the Ice Company and the imposition of the maximum penalty. In 1910 he appeared as counsel for State Senator Benn Conger in the prosecution of State Senator Jotham Allds before the New York Senate upon the charge of taking a bribe to influence his action as a legislator. Although Allds had at his back very powerful influence, both political and financial, and counted many devoted friends, Osborne conclusively proved his guilt and his conviction followed (*Documents of the Senate of the State of New York*, 1910, no. 28). In the following year Osborne was counsel for the committee of the New York Senate which investigated political and social conditions in the City of Albany, uncovering many gross evils. In 1913, as special attorney general, he conducted a vigorous investigation of conditions and treatment of prisoners in the state prison at Ossining, which disclosed many abuses and led to the appointment of Thomas Mott Osborne [*q.v.*] as warden of Sing Sing prison.

Along with his professional activities, Osborne was a constant and devoted student of literature and history. He was passionately fond of chess and was an excellent amateur player. To the end of his life, in spite of failing health, he continued his love for and his exercise in athletic sports. On Jan. 8, 1896, he married Lelia Van Wyck, the daughter of Judge Augustus Van Wyck. He was survived by his wife and by their son. In his family life, he showed the same warm feeling and the same kindly sympathy that marked all the other phases of his intense nature. He died in New York at the age of sixty.

[*The Asso. of the Bar of the City of N. Y., Year Book*, 1920; *N. Y. County Lawyers' Asso., Year Book*, 1920; *N. Y. Herald*, Sept. 8, 1919; personal acquaintance.]

G. G. B.

OSBORNE, THOMAS BURR (Aug. 5, 1859–Jan. 29, 1929), biochemist, was born in New Haven, Conn., of old New England stock, the grandson of Eli Whitney Blake [*q.v.*]. His parents were Frances Louisa (Blake) Osborne and Arthur Dimon Osborne, the latter educated as a lawyer and subsequently engaged in banking. From Yale College Osborne received the degree of B.A. in 1881 and that of Ph.D. in 1885. During his boyhood and youth he was greatly interested in the study of plants, insects, and birds, of which he collected hundreds of specimens prior to 1880 when he began to be engrossed in the pursuit of chemistry. A biographer has said: "Osborne had no taste for poetry, the drama or noble prose. He was a realist. . . . A love of nature was music and poetry to him" (E. H. Jenkins, in *Thomas B. Osborne—a Memorial*, *post*, pp. 281–82). From Prof. Samuel W. Johnson [*q.v.*] of the Sheffield Scientific School he received much early inspiration and encouragement toward a career of research. For a time he served as Johnson's assistant, and on June 23, 1886, married his daughter, Elizabeth Annah Johnson. Two children were born to them. In May 1886 Osborne became a member of the staff of the Connecticut Agricultural Experiment Station, where he labored until his retirement in 1928.

The first of the contributions that were destined to bring him recognition as the foremost expert on the proteins of plants was a paper on the oat-kernel published (1891) in the *Report* of the Experiment Station for 1890. This was followed in the next decade by descriptions of the proteins of no less than thirty-two different seeds. Such proteins were demonstrated to be well-characterized substances worthy of the intensive study of biochemists. This fact was further emphasized when Osborne succeeded in crystallizing many of the seed globulins, thereby rendering carefully purified proteins of definite individuality available for further investigation. Through his own researches on crystalline vegetable globulins, notably the edestin of hempseed, he demonstrated that proteins in general behave towards acids like bases, that they form salts both with acids and with alkalis, and show many evidences of a capacity to undergo electrolytic dissociation and enter into ionic reactions.

Beginning in 1906, with the aid of a number of younger collaborators, he began a series of laborious, carefully executed hydrolytic decompositions of purified proteins that have added greatly to the understanding of their amino acid components. These analyses helped to pave the way for the extensive researches on the nutritive properties or biological value of various proteins which he began in collaboration with Prof. Lafayette B. Mendel of Yale University in 1909. During a period of twenty years of fruitful cooperation in research they published more than a hundred papers in scientific journals. In these were recorded the development of technique for feeding individual small animals with mixtures of somewhat purified foodstuffs—the so-called "synthetic" diets. Among the outstanding contributions were the demonstrations of the unlike "biological value" of different proteins in nutrition and growth. In the course of these studies came the discovery that butter-fat, egg yolk, cod-liver oil, many green leaves, and other parts of plants and animals contain a substance, soluble in fats, that is an indispensable dietary requisite and has since been designated as vitamin A. Lack of this food factor may lead to the appearance of the eye disorder (xerophthalmia), to the genesis of urinary calculi, and to other pathological manifestations. What was subsequently termed vitamin B was also soon brought into the picture of adequate nutrition. Extensive reports were made of the distribution of various vitamins in natural food products. The phenomena of growth, its suppression and acceleration under various regimens, and the effect of the individual inorganic constituents of the diet received attention.

A detailed catalogue of Osborne's further contributions (see *Thomas B. Osborne—a Memorial*) includes investigations of the wheat plant for which he was the first to receive the Thomas Burr Osborne gold medal founded by the American Association of Cereal Chemists in recognition of his outstanding contributions to cereal chemistry. Appreciation of the fundamental character of his protein investigations came early from Germany, where his paper on the oat-kernel was translated and published by V. Griessmayer in 1897. Osborne's own monograph *The Vegetable Proteins*, which first appeared in 1909 and was extensively revised in 1924, is a classic in biochemical literature. Somewhat related to the demonstrations of the unlike biological values of the proteins are the investigations of their immunological or anaphylactogenic properties conducted with great success in collaboration with Prof. H. Gideon Wells of the University of Chicago.

Honors came to Osborne from various sources;

he was elected a member of many learned societies at home and abroad, including the National Academy of Sciences. During the last seven years of his life he was a research associate in biochemistry in Yale University, a designation of distinction that conferred full professorial rank. The breadth of his knowledge and interest is revealed by the fact that in addition to his intense scientific activities, recorded in more than 250 papers and monographs, he served for years as a director of the Second National Bank of New Haven, his acumen in financial matters as well as his lively interest in the political questions and economic problems of the day making him well qualified and most acceptable to the directorate. One of his scientific associates has pointed out (*Thomas B. Osborne—a Memorial*, p. 371) that "few chemists have been privileged to follow the dictates of their interest so long and successfully without the interruptions or distractions that may retard the progress of the devotees of science." Another intimate colleague (*Ibid.*, p. 282) described him as "a wholesome clean-minded man, quick, impulsive, generous and broadminded and in all ways companionable."

[Outlines of Osborne's career will be found in *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; and in J. M. and Jaques Cattell, *Am. Men of Sci.*, vol. IV (1927). In *Thomas B. Osborne—a Memorial* (Feb. 1930), Bull. 312, Conn. Agric. Experiment Station, are collected a number of biographical sketches (with a photograph), a complete bibliography of his publications, a paper on "The Work of Thomas Burr Osborne" by his associates L. B. Mendel and H. B. Vickery, first published in *Science*, Apr. 12, 1929, and appreciations by Vickery in *Yale Jour. of Biology and Medicine*, Mar. 1929, by Mendel in *Am. Jour. Sci.*, Apr. 1929, by H. D. D. in *Jour. of the Chem. Soc.* (London), 1929, pt. II, p. 2974, and by H. L. Knight in *Experiment Station Record* (U. S. Dept. of Agric.), June 1929. See also obituary in *New Haven Journal Courier*, Jan. 30, 1929.] L. B. M.

OSBORNE, THOMAS MOTT (Sept. 23, 1859–Oct. 20, 1926), prison reformer, was born at Auburn, N. Y. His father, David Munson Osborne, a manufacturer of agricultural implements, was descended from Richard Osborn of London, England, who, in 1634, settled in Hingham, Mass.; his mother, Eliza (Wright), came of old Pennsylvania Quaker stock. The wealth of his family gave him an opportunity to travel and to receive the cultural education of the privileged few. Upon his graduation from Harvard *cum laude* in 1884 he began an apprenticeship in his father's manufacturing establishment, and on Oct. 27, 1886, married Agnes Devens of Cambridge. After his father's death, he was head of the firm until 1903, when it was absorbed by the International Harvester Company.

Politics interested him early. As member of the Auburn school board, 1885–91 and 1893–95, and as mayor, 1903–06, he proved himself efficient and honest. He soon became recognized as a leader of the upstate Democrats, for short periods held appointive state offices, and served as delegate to the state and national conventions of his party. His avocational interests centered largely around music and dramatics, and he organized and directed in his home city both a symphony orchestra and a dramatic club. His talent as a pianist was particularly a source of enjoyment to himself and to his friends.

Osborne's untiring work for prison reform was his outstanding achievement. Soon after his wife's death in 1896 he became interested in the George Junior Republic, and served for many years as a member and, later, as chairman of its governing board. To this work may be traced his interest in prison administration. In 1906 he concluded an address to the National Prison Association with these words, "The prison must be an institution where every inmate must have the largest practical amount of individual freedom, because 'it is liberty alone that fits men for liberty'" (*Proceedings . . .*, 1906, p. 38). These words of Gladstone thus became for him the guide to a better system of prison treatment. His opportunity to test their validity came in 1913 with his appointment to the chairmanship of the newly created state commission for prison reform. He began his duties in a most unorthodox manner by "serving" a week's term in the Auburn prison; the graphic account of this experience may be found in *Within Prison Walls* (1914). As "Tom Brown" he sought to know how life in prison affected those subjected to it, and he emerged convinced that the conventional treatment crushed the individuality and destroyed the manhood and self-respect of the prisoners, the very foundation on which reformation must rest. During his confinement a prisoner had suggested to him a plan which took form in the famous Mutual Welfare League, through which Auburn prisoners, under sympathetic guidance, achieved a sense of corporate responsibility, which became a powerful force in refittting them for social life. From 1914 to 1916, as warden of Sing Sing, and from 1917 to 1920, as commanding officer of the Portsmouth Naval Prison, Osborne used the Mutual Welfare League plan with conspicuous success. A splendid educational tool was in this way strikingly adapted to prison conditions, and even though the idea of self-government was by no means new, Osborne will probably be remembered as one of its conspicuous exponents, so far as its use in prison administration is concerned. In his two books, *Society and Prisons*

(1916) and *Prisons and Common Sense* (1924), his penal philosophy is well presented, particularly in the former.

Osborne was a man of a singularly fine and upright character. Tall and athletic, he gave the impression of rugged physical strength, and equally strong was his passion for justice and fair dealing. His public life was consequently turbulent, for while he called forth a keen loyalty in most of those who learned to know him intimately, his intransigency and his intolerance of opposition also created for him vigorous enmities. During his prison administration in Sing Sing, particularly, his unsparing criticism of political interference subjected him to the vilest abuse, which culminated in an indictment by the Westchester County grand jury, December 1915, on charges of mismanagement and immorality; the case never came to trial. After his resignation from Portsmouth in 1920, he spent the remaining years of his life lecturing and writing on prison reform. The finest monument to his memory is the "Tom Brown" house in New York City, headquarters of two organizations which he founded and which have recently been merged under the title "The Osborne Association." One of these was the Welfare League Association, an aid society for discharged prisoners, and the other, the National Society of Penal Information, which on the basis of field studies of actual prison conditions, conducts an intelligent propaganda for prison reform. He died in Auburn, N. Y., survived by four sons.

[W. R. Cutter, *Genealog. and Family Hist. of the State of Conn.* (1911), vol. III; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 21, 1926; J. J. Chapman, "Thomas Mott Osborne" and "Osborne's Place in Hist. Criminology," *Harvard Graduates' Mag.*, March, June 1927; *Thomas Mott Osborne*, pamphlet of memorial addresses published by the Nat. Soc. of Penal Information (n.d.); Frank Tannenbaum in *The Survey*, Oct. 1930–Mar. 1931, and *Osborne of Sing Sing* (1933); F. H. Wines, *Punishment and Reformation* (1919), ed. by W. I. Lane; F. E. Haynes, *Criminology* (1930); C. M. Liepmann, *Die Selbstverwaltung der Gefangenen* (1926); *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; genealogical information from a son, Charles D. Osborne.]

T. S—n.

OSCEOLA (*c.* 1800–Jan. 30, 1838), leader in the Second Seminole War, was born probably on the Tallapoosa River among the Creek Indians in what is now the state of Georgia. He was also known as Powell, a name that is explained variously as being that of a Scots father, grandfather, or step-father. Yet in spite of widespread opinion to the contrary it seems probable that he was of pure Indian blood and was a remarkably handsome example of a typical "full-blood and wild Indian" (Catlin's notes in Donaldson, *post*, p. 217; Welch, *post*, pp. 23–24). He is said to have fought against Jackson during the War of 1812 and again in 1818. About 1832 he was living near Fort King, visited the fort frequently, and was from time to time employed to restrain predatory Indians or to arrest deserters from the army. Gradually he began to assume a position of consequence among the Indians, although he had not been born to high rank nor is there any record that he was ever formally chosen a chief. He opposed the treaty of 1832 at Payne's Landing, in which some of the lesser chiefs agreed to removal across the Mississippi within three years, and he rejected the treaty of the next year at Fort Gibson, where some of the Seminoles were tricked into seeming to agree to immediate removal. He was present on Apr. 22, 1835, at the meeting called by Wiley Thompson [*q.v.*] in an effort to persuade the chiefs to acknowledge the treaty of Payne's Landing. Although most of the chiefs contented themselves with a silent refusal to touch the pen to such an instrument, Osceola is reported to have plunged his great knife into the paper in a dramatic gesture of defiance. He was arrested and imprisoned until, feigning a change of heart, he was released with the understanding that he would use his influence in favor of immediate emigratiton.

Instead, he gathered the forces of opposition, accomplished the murder of Wiley Thompson and Charley Emathla, a chief who had signed the treaty of Fort Gibson, and precipitated the Second Seminole War, in which his skill and ruthless daring carried him to a position of authentic leadership. He hid the women and children of the tribe in the great swamps of the region and led the warriors in the perilous work of harassing the white army. He was so successful in his guerrilla tactics as to arouse public criticism of the army and, especially, of its leader, Gen. Thomas S. Jesup [*q.v.*], who, goaded by failure and actuated by the kind of ruthlessness common to both soldiers and civilians on the frontier, ordered Osceola to be seized when he came for an interview in October 1837. In spite of the revulsion of public opinion caused by such a violation of the flag of truce, Osceola was taken to Fort Marion at Saint Augustine and later removed to Fort Moultrie near Charleston, S. C., where he died.

[Files of the Office of Indian Affairs; C. H. Coe, *Red Patriots* (1898), according to a statement by the Indian Office never suppressed by it; Grant Foreman, *Indian Removal* (1932); Andrew Welch, *A Narrative of . . . Occola Nikkanochee . . . with . . . Hist. of Occola* (1841); J. T. Sprague, *The Origin . . . of the Florida War* (1848); Thomas Donaldson, "The George Catlin Indian Gallery in the U. S. National Museum," in *Annual Report of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution*, 1885; *Army and Navy*

Chronicle, Jan. 21, Feb. 18, Mar. 31, Apr. 7, 1836, Dec. 14, 1837; *Niles' Weekly Register*, Jan. 30, Feb. 6, 20, 1836, Nov. 4, 1837; *Niles' National Register*, Feb. 3, 17, 1838.]

K. E. C.

OSGOOD, FRANCES SARGENT LOCKE (June 18, 1811–May 12, 1850), poet, was descended from William Locke who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1635. The daughter of Joseph Locke, merchant, and Mary (Ingersoll) Foster Locke, she was born at Boston but lived in childhood in Hingham, Mass. A brother, sister, and half-sister (Anna Maria Foster Locke) wrote verse, and her parents encouraged Fanny to do likewise. Under the pseudonym "Florence," she contributed to the *Juvenile Miscellany* edited by Mrs. Child. In 1834 while preparing verses on the paintings at the Boston Athenæum, she met one of the exhibitors, Samuel Stillman Osgood, a painter of some talent. She sat to him for a portrait and on Oct. 7, 1835, married him. With her husband she soon sailed for London, where Osgood had studied at the Royal Academy. He now gave his time to painting portraits, while she continued to write. The attractive young matron was taken up by Mrs. Norton, mingled in literary circles, contributed to magazines, and published a miniature volume, *The Casket of Fate* (2nd ed., Boston, 1840). A daughter, Ellen Frances, was born July 15, 1836. In 1838 appeared a volume of poems, *A Wreath of Wild Flowers from New England* (reissued, N. Y., 1842), which was well received, though her English fame was slight enough to make Elizabeth Barrett ask Browning in 1845 if he had ever heard of her. The collection contained a drama, *Elfrida*, with some good scenes and one mighty line. Sheridan Knowles asked her to write a play for him, and the result was *The Happy Release, or the Triumphs of Love*, which reached neither the boards nor (apparently) the printer. Her father's death in 1839 called the Osgoods to Boston, where on July 21 a second daughter, May Vincent, was born. The family moved to New York, and Mrs. Osgood contributed to most of the better literary periodicals of the day. Her output included many poems and occasional prose tales, usually including verses. She sometimes used the pen name, Kate Carol. She had an editorial connection with *Snowden's Ladies Companion*, which was merely nominal, but she wrote or prepared for the press several volumes, including *The Poetry of Flowers and the Flowers of Poetry* (1841, often reprinted); *The Snowdrop, a New Year Gift for Children*, and *The Rose, Sketches in Verse* (both Providence, 1842); *Puss in Boots* (1844); *The Cries of New York* (1846); *The Flower Alphabet* (Boston, n.d.). In March 1845, she met Edgar Allan Poe [*q.v.*], with whom her romantic story "Ida Grey" (*Graham's Magazine*, August 1845) and contemporary comment indicate she fell in love. Poe and she were much together at literary gatherings—where Rufus W. Griswold [*q.v.*] was another admirer—they wrote verses to each other, and the critic, willingly blind, gave unmeasured praise in "The Literati" and elsewhere to her mild poetry. When his inspiration failed, he asked her to write a poem for him to deliver in November 1845, in Boston, but her "Lulin" proved unsuitable. Her friendship with Poe was one cause of the quarrels that led to Poe's libel suit against Thomas Dunn English [*q.v.*]. Poe and Frances Osgood probably ceased to meet about 1847, but were not embittered. A selection, *Poems*, was issued in 1846 and a larger selection under the same title appeared with illustrations in 1850; both were occasionally reprinted, the smaller as late as 1861. A daughter, Fanny Fay, born in 1846, died early; the mother was consumptive, but continued to write voluminously. A little pamphlet, *A Letter about the Lions* (1849), was her last separate work—a gentle satire. Her husband went off to California in 1849 without her and returned to find her very ill. They moved into a new home at 112 West 22nd St., New York, where she died on May 12, 1850. She was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass. In 1851 her friends published *The Memorial, Written by Friends of the late Mrs. . . . Osgood*, edited by Mary E. Hewitt; it was reissued as *Laurel Leaves* in 1854. A little faded charm still clings to a few of her poems, the lines on Fanny Ellsler, the hymn "Labor," the requiem for Poe, and the songs "Call me pet names" and "My heart is a Music-Box," but she is remembered chiefly as a friend of Poe.

[Biographical sketches of Frances Osgood include one by Griswold in *The Memorial* named above (reprinted in the *International Magazine*, Dec. 1, 1850) and a very good one in J. G. Locke, *Book of the Lockes* (1853). See also the works of Poe; biographies of Poe; and W. M. Griswold's *Passages from the Correspondence of and Other Papers of Rufus W. Griswold* (1898); obituaries in the *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, May 13, 14, 1850, and the *N. Y. Herald*, May 13, 1850; and an article by H. F. Harrington in the *Critic*, Oct. 3, 1880. Many of her papers are preserved with those of Griswold, her literary executor, in the Boston Public Library. A charming portrait by her husband, together with his pictures of Griswold and Poe, are in the N. Y. Hist. Soc. Some of her minor volumes are very rare, no copies of the London *Casket of Fate*, or *The Rose* (mentioned by Griswold) were located by the writer; her *Lines to Mr. Dodson* (Brooklyn, 1885) was issued in an edition of only ten copies. For discussion of some disputed dates of her children's births, etc., see article by T. O. Mabbott in *Notes and Queries*, Jan. 10, 1931.

A book on Frances Osgood is in preparation by Annie Barcus Minga.]

T. O. M.

OSGOOD, GEORGE LAURIE (Apr. 3, 1844–Dec. 12, 1922), singer, composer, conductor, and teacher, was born in Chelsea, Mass., the son of John Hamilton Osgood and Adeline (Stevens) Osgood, and a descendant of John Osgood who emigrated to Massachusetts in 1638. As a child he showed an acute sense of pitch, and was given every musical advantage from his earliest years. At Harvard, where he was graduated in 1866, after studying composition and the organ under John Knowles Paine [*q.v.*], he directed the college glee club and orchestra for three successive years. After graduation he went to Germany, where he remained three years studying singing in Berlin under Ferdinand Sieber and Karl August Haupt, the former famous as an exponent of the old Italian tradition, and German song and choral music with Robert Franz. He then went to Italy for three years of further vocal study at Milan under Francesco Lamperti, after which he made a successful concert tour of Germany. As a result he was engaged in 1872 by Theodore Thomas [*q.v.*] for a winter tour of the United States with his orchestra as tenor soloist. For some thirty years thereafter Osgood played a leading part in Boston's musical life. He was very popular as a teacher and brought out a number of successful singers. He also directed an annual series of chamber-music concerts of a high quality, and completely transformed the Boylston Club of Boston, of which he was conductor from 1875 to 1893, from a male chorus into a mixed choral organization of two hundred voices. Under the name of the Boston Singers' Society (1890), he established its reputation for brilliant performance of difficult pieces. He translated the texts of many choral works and songs, and published a *Guide in the Art of Singing* (copr. 1874), which by 1917 had gone through eight editions. He also composed a number of part-songs and anthems and fifty songs, besides editing *The Boylston Collection of Choruses*. On Apr. 15, 1868, he married Jeannette Cabot Farley, by whom he had three children; she died Aug. 24, 1888, and on June 27, 1891, he married June Bright. After 1903 he made his home in Europe, first in Geneva, and later, in Godalming, England, where he had a large country estate and where he died.

[Ira Osgood and Eben Putnam, *A Genealogical of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood* (1894); *Musical America*, Dec. 23, 1922; *Musical Courier*, Dec. 28, 1922; *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; death notice in *The Times* (London), Dec. 14, 1922.]

F. H. M.

OSGOOD, HERBERT LEVI (Apr. 9, 1855–Sept. 11, 1918), historian, was born on a farm in Canton, Me., in the upper Androscoggin valley, the son of Stephen and Joan (Staples) Osgood. He was descended from John Osgood, who came from Hampshire, England, probably in 1638, lived for a time at Ipswich, Mass., and in 1645 settled in Andover. Intelligently encouraged at home, he passed through the local district school and the Wilton (Me.) Academy to Amherst College. Here he was influenced toward historical scholarship by Professors Julius H. Seelye and Anson D. Morse [*qq.v.*] and especially by J. W. Burgess, and graduated in 1877, fifth in a class of seventy-nine of which he was president. He taught numerous subjects for two years in Worcester (Mass.) Academy, and then carried on post-graduate study under Morse (taking the M.A. degree in 1880) and at Yale under William Graham Sumner. In 1882–83 he studied in Berlin under Wagner, Schmoller, Gneist, and Treitschke. He saw Ranke several times and in general adopted his view of the province and method of history. Returning to New England he briefly filled in teaching in Amherst and Smith colleges, and in the autumn of 1883 took a position in the Brooklyn (N. Y.) High School, which he held for six years. While teaching there he studied under Burgess and others at Columbia, where the School of Political Science had already reached high development, and in 1889 won his Ph.D. degree with a dissertation on *Socialism and Anarchism* (1889), being a study primarily of the works of Rodbertus and Proudhon.

Upon economic theory, however, he was not to concentrate his interest. He desired a field unworked with the tools of scientific method, marked off by clear boundaries and not too large for the employment of one lifetime; the political history of the English colonies on the American continent he regarded as meeting these specifications. In an article on "England and the Colonies" (*Political Science Quarterly*, Sept. 1887), he urged sympathetic study of the British colonial policy. He was one of the first if not the first university professor in America to question the legal justification of the Revolution, however inevitable it may have been on geographical, economic, and psychological grounds. In 1889–90 he spent fifteen months in the Public Record Office in London carrying on investigations. He was then called to Columbia, advancing to full professor in 1896. Though he taught general European history and the constitutional history of England, he progressively concentrated on the American colonies; from his

seminar there began to come a series of more than fifty doctoral dissertations illuminating the early history of every one of the thirteen colonies and Canada as well as phases of British imperial administration in London. He was deeply conscientious in guiding students' researches, sometimes exchanging fifty or sixty letters with a candidate in addition to many personal conferences. He and his students generally confined themselves to legal institutions. "Social and economic forces," he said in 1898 (*Columbia University Bulletin,* June 1898, p. 186), "should be treated as contributing to and conditioning historical development, but the historian must never lose sight of the fact that they operate within a framework of law." A little later in the same year he pronounced his dictum more definitely: "It is only through law and political institutions that social forces become in the large sense operative" (*Annual Report of the American Historical Association for the Year 1898,* 1899, p. 68). Abandoning the customary geographico-economic grouping of the colonies—northern, middle, and southern—he classified them according to their law and polity: royal and chartered, with the latter divided into proprietary and corporate. Three articles in the *Political Science Quarterly* (June–Oct. 1896) on "The Colonial Corporation," and three in the *American Historical Review* (July, Oct. 1897, Jan. 1898) on "The Proprietary Province as a Form of Colonial Government" had contained the elements of the design worked out in the first two volumes of *The American Colonies in the Seventeenth Century* which appeared in 1904. The third volume, published in 1907, traced imperial control throughout the same period. In 1908 he received the Loubat prize for the best work on early American history published during the previous five years.

Realizing that imperial records grew more indispensable as the scholar came forward in the eighteenth century, he went to London again in 1909 and remained there sixteen months; five years later he returned for four months more. By means of grants from Columbia University and the Carnegie Institution he was able to employ copyists during these two visits and similar assistance thereafter in America. At the time of his death in 1918 he had virtually completed his four volumes on *The American Colonies in the Eighteenth Century,* carrying the narrative down to 1763; a fund provided by Dwight W. Morrow made possible their publication in 1924. In these volumes the author felt that he was pioneering, much of the period having had no general scientific treatment before. The whole seven-volume

Osgood

work is largely the story of the struggle between British executives and colonial assemblies, wherein one may watch the development of the American political spirit which found expression in the Revolution. The posthumous volumes, like their predecessors, were honored with the Loubat prize in 1928.

He was a man of quiet manner, appreciative of music and pictorial art, and given to philosophical reflection. His life work is largely summed up in his seven volumes; he wrote no textbook, his nearest approach to it being the section he contributed on the early history of the United States in the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (11th ed., vol. XXVII, 663–84). He gave comparatively little attention to anything but teaching and writing his chapters, but in 1900 he made a report on the archives of New York for the American Historical Association (*Annual Report . . . for the Year 1900,* 1901, vol. II, 67–250) which has remained an unequaled model for such surveys, and after long effort he was chiefly responsible for reforming the archival administration of the state in 1907. In 1905 were published the eight-volume *Minutes of the Common Council of the City of New York, 1675–1776,* which he edited. He was originally strong and athletic, but his severe regimen reduced him to frailty by the age of sixty. On July 22, 1885, he married Caroline Augusta Simonds, daughter of Rev. Alpha Hiram and Sarah (Pettibone) Simonds; she with a daughter and two sons survived him, but the sons died subsequently in early manhood.

[D. R. Fox, *Herbert Levi Osgood, An American Scholar* (1924), with portrait; obituaries in *N. Y. Times,* Sept. 13, 1918; the *Nation* (N. Y.), Sept. 21, 1918; *Columbia Univ. Quart.,* Jan. 1919; Eben Putnam, *A Genealogy of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood* (1894), p. 184.] D.R.F.

OSGOOD, HOWARD (Jan. 4, 1831–Nov. 28, 1911), Baptist clergyman, teacher, and author, was born on "Magnolia Plantation," in Plaquemines Parish, La., the son of Isaac and Jane Rebecca (Hall) Osgood. His father was of New England ancestry, a nephew of Samuel Osgood [*q.v.*]. Although a wealthy planter, he became thoroughly dissatisfied with slavery and moved North, settling near New York City. Born and reared an Episcopalian, Howard Osgood joined the Baptist Church from conviction and at considerable personal cost. Entering Harvard College in 1846, he left in 1849, but nine years later was awarded the degree of A.B. He made an intensive study of the Germany theology. Ordained a Baptist minister, Feb. 12, 1857, he served as pastor at Flushing, L. I., 1856–58, and of the North Baptist Church, New York City,

1860–66. From 1868 to 1874 he was professor of Hebrew at Crozer Theological Seminary, Chester, Pa., acting also as librarian.

It was at the Rochester Theological Seminary, however, that he made his record as a teacher. During 1875–76 he served as acting professor of church history and for the next twenty-five years was librarian and professor of Old Testament interpretation. He was a member of the famous quintet—Strong, Osgood, Stevens, Pattison, and True—which for the last quarter of the nineteenth century was the pride of that seminary. He was a chivalrous Southern gentleman given to hospitality. Master of five languages, devoted to archaeology, rigidly conservative, unwilling to grant any quarter to the historical method of investigation, he spoke and wrote in behalf of a very orthodox interpretation of the Old Testament. His Biblical point of view may be gathered from the following articles and booklets: *The Old Testament, What It Is and What It Teaches* (1879); *Short Sketch of the Christology of the Old Testament* (1880); *Essays in Pentateuchal Criticism* (1888); "Old Wine in New Wine Skins," *Bibliotheca Sacra* (July 1893); contributions to *Anti-higher Criticism* (1894), edited by L. W. Munhall; "President Harper's Lectures," *Bibliotheca Sacra* (April 1895). The arguments now advanced by Fundamentalists were vigorously pressed by him. Because of his union with the Baptist denomination, he wrote on the form and significance of baptism. His *Archaeology of Baptism* (32 pp., plates) contains much first-hand data. Since he regarded the Baptists and Anabaptists as intimately related, he formed at Rochester one of the best American collections of "Anabaptistica." His *Protestant Pedo-baptism and the Doctrine of a Church* (n.d.; Baptist Tracts, vol. II, no. 3) indicates how decisive his break with Anglicanism had been.

Named as a member of the American commission for the revision of the Scriptures, his research in connection with the work of this office resulted in the publication, 1899, of a seventy-four page booklet on *References to the Versions by British Revisers*, a critical study of the accuracy of British scholarship. His most excellent work as translator is found in his "Introduction to the Three Middle Books of the Pentateuch" in the second volume of Philip Schaff's American edition of John E. Lange's *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures*. In addition to the publications referred to, Osgood was also the author of *Grammar of the Hebrew Language for Beginners* (1895); *Old Testament Ethics* (n.d.); "The Oldest Book in the World," *Bibliotheca Sacra* (October 1888); *Quotations of the Old Testament* (1880) and *Topics in the Psalms* (n.d.).

The last decade of his life although spent in retirement was occupied with diligent research and occasional lectures. On Apr. 14, 1853, he married Caroline Townsend Lawrence, by whom he had three sons and four daughters. He died at Rochester.

[See *Rochester Record*, May 1912 and Nov. 1917; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Jour. and Messenger*, Dec. 7, 1911; *Democrat and Chronicle* (Rochester, N. Y.), Nov. 29, 1911; Ira Osgood and Eben Putnam, *A Geneal. of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood* (1894). The library of the Colgate-Rochester Divinity School contains most of his pamphlets, articles, and books.] C. H. M.

OSGOOD, JACOB (Mar. 16, 1777–Nov. 29, 1844), religious enthusiast, founder of the Osgoodites, was born at South Hampton, N. H., the son of Philip Osgood, farmer, and a descendant of William Osgood, who emigrated to Salisbury, Mass., in 1638. Philip Osgood was married in succession to Elizabeth, Appia, and Mehitable Flanders, daughters of a South Hampton farmer; Jacob was probably son of Mehitable. In 1790 the family moved to Warner, N. H. Jacob became a farmer; he was also trained as a singer, and taught singing classes. In 1797 he married Miriam Stevens, by whom he had eight children.

In 1802 he was converted, but he rejected both Calvinism and Universalism as inventions of the devil. Although he felt himself ordered of God to preach, timidity prevented, and he became a "pharisee Christian," attending services in the Congregational meeting house. Again awakened religiously in 1805, he began to preach and cause disturbances in the meeting house at Warner and elsewhere. He joined the Freewill Baptists, but refused to acknowledge any theological principles except that one must love God and one's neighbor or be damned. This refusal, together with his unconventional methods of preaching, made him a suspect to the elders of the church. Others embraced his views and in 1812 the Osgoodites became a separate sect. They enjoyed occasional revivals, especially in 1816–17, and won disciples in Warner, Canterbury, Sutton, South Hampton, Newtown, Amesbury Mills, and Newbury-Byfield. As late as 1885 a few still bore the name.

Osgood believed that everything established by law was from the devil. He was particularly opposed to paid ministers, lawcourts, magistrates, town meetings, and military training; he said that it was wicked for Christians to fight. Between 1819 and 1826 a few of the sect were imprisoned and otherwise persecuted for refusing to attend training or pay the fines imposed

for absence. Osgood himself had a heifer taken from him, and in 1820 was imprisoned for eleven days; while in prison he preached and sang to his followers through the bars, and also enjoyed much "good beer." When released, he refused to leave the jail, saying that he had been thrust in against his wish and must be carried out; he was, although it took several men to lift his ponderous frame. Members of the sect also suffered some ill treatment from their neighbors, but people soon realized that they were honest and harmless. They were opposed to doctors and practised faith healing. Osgood claims to have healed a consumptive girl by laying his hands on her, after doctors had said her case was hopeless. He is credited with remarkable powers of prayer. According to tradition, God often answered his petitions by sending rain after drought and fine weather after rain; on one occasion, it was said, when a frost in early autumn killed his neighbors' corn, through his prayer to God his own corn was spared. His curses were considered equally efficacious: two or three times persecutors were killed or hurt in accidents after Osgood had threatened them with the wrath of God. Osgoodite meetings were a disorderly mixture of hymns, prayers, and exhortations, in which all the brethren participated. When a lull came Osgood would dismiss them with the words: "If there's no more to be said, meeting's done." When he preached he sat in a chair, closed his eyes, and held the side of his face with one hand. Osgoodite hymns were composed by Osgood and other members of the sect; they consisted mostly of denunciations of clergymen, lawyers, doctors, Calvinists, Methodists, Baptists, Universalists, Millerites, Whig politicians, abolitionists, female reformers, tobacco-smokers, and builders of railroads. Though opposed to tobacco, the Osgoodites attacked the temperance movement because of its clerical origin.

Osgood weighed 345 pounds. He was simple, outspoken, and courageous. "He would talk and weep and laugh almost in the same instant, and his talk never seemed tedious." He was quick in repartee. In spite of his eccentricities he gives the impression of having tried sincerely to be a good Christian.

[*The Life and Christian Experience of Jacob Osgood, with Hymns and Spiritual Songs* (1873), a pamphlet, now rare, printed at Warner, N. H., a copy of which is owned by George H. Sargent, of Warner; Ira Osgood and Eben Putnam, *A Geneal. of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood* (1894); Walter Harriman, *The Hist. of Warner, N. H.* (1879); F. M. Colby, "Hist. of Warner," in D. H. Hurd, *Hist. of Merrimack and Belknap Counties, N. H.* (1885); *N. H. Patriot and State Gazette* (Concord), Dec. 5, 1844, for death notice.]

H. B. P.

OSGOOD, SAMUEL (Feb. 3, 1747/48–Aug. 12, 1813), soldier, legislator, politician, was born in Andover, Mass. He was descended in the fifth generation from Capt. John Osgood who came to Massachusetts in 1638 and settled at Andover about 1645. Samuel was the third son of Capt. Peter Osgood and Sarah, daughter of Captain Timothy and Catherine (Sprague) Johnson. Educated at Harvard, he had planned to enter the ministry, but upon his graduation in 1770 he joined his brother Peter in business. Ill health is assigned for this change of purpose. With the outbreak of the Revolution young Osgood joined the army as captain of a company of minute men, became major and aide-de-camp to Gen. Artemas Ward [*q.v.*], and subsequently attained the rank of colonel. His legislative apprenticeship included service in the Essex convention (1774), in the Provincial Congress (1775 and after), in the constitutional convention of 1779, in the state Senate (1780), and in the Philadelphia convention for the limitation of prices (1780). Elected in February 1781, he took his seat in the Continental Congress on June 12, and was reëlected until, by virtue of the three-year limitation prescribed by the Articles of Confederation, his services were terminated, Mar. 1, 1784.

As a member of Congress he was alert and capable, serving on many important committees and having a hand in the preparation of numerous constructive measures, particularly those relating to business and finance. He was, for instance, appointed by Congress a director in the Bank of North America (Dec. 1, 1781) and was a member of the important treasury board throughout his three years of service. Marbois, the secretary of the French legation, himself favorably impressed with Osgood's ability and character, recorded that he was much esteemed for his good sense and integrity (Affaires Étrangères, États-Unis, Mem. et Doc., I). Osgood, for his part, was among those who became decidedly suspicious of the designs of France. He was, in fact, one of that numerous group with whom fear of centralized power and of "aristocratical influence" was becoming an obsession. (See for instance his letters to John Adams and Stephen Higginson, in Burnett, *post*, VII, 378, 414, 430; and letter to John Adams, in *The Works of John Adams*, 1850–56, VIII, 418.) A particular manifestation of this feeling during the latter part of Osgood's career in Congress was directed against the one-man power in finance (Robert Morris) and the outcome was that in 1784 the treasury was put into commission. As Gerry, one of the promoters of the measure, had planned (Gerry to Stephen Higginson, May 13,

1784, Burnett, VII, 522), on Jan. 25, 1785, shortly after Congress had removed to New York, Osgood was chosen one of the three commissioners of the treasury. These—Osgood, Walter Livingston, and Arthur Lee—conducted the business of the treasury until the establishment of the new system, with a secretary at the head, in September 1789.

It was altogether in keeping with Osgood's trend of thought in this period that he should oppose the new Constitution. It had cost him, he wrote to Samuel Adams, "many a sleepless night to find out the most obnoxious Part of the proposed Plan," and he had finally fixed upon "the exclusive Legislation in the Ten Miles Square" (Jan. 5, 1788, Samuel Adams Papers). Along with numerous others he had favored a "perambulatory" Congress (Burnett, VII, 349). Nevertheless, he became sufficiently reconciled to the new government to seek an appointment under it, and Washington made him postmaster-general (confirmed Sept. 26, 1789). Osgood's plan for the postal service (*Annals of Congress*, 1 Cong. 2 Sess., cols. 2107–2114; *Am. State Papers: Post Office*, 1834, p. 5) emphasized the importance of connecting the capital with the "extremes," but Congress failed to enact a new measure respecting the department until after his retirement. Upon the removal of the government to Philadelphia he resigned and was succeeded by Timothy Pickering [*q.v.*] in August 1791. (For one explanation of his resignation see Octavius Pickering and C. W. Upham, *Life of Timothy Pickering*, 1873, II, 502.)

No doubt the ties he had established in New York influenced his decision to remain there. His first wife, Martha Brandon, to whom he was married Jan. 4, 1775, had died in 1778 and on May 24, 1786, he had married Maria (Bowne) Franklin, widow of Walter Franklin of New York City. The Franklins were connected with the Clintons by marriage, and this fact doubtless contributed toward bringing about close political relations between Osgood and DeWitt Clinton. In the ten years following 1791 he appears to have taken only minor parts in politics, devoting himself particularly to theological studies. In the campaign of 1800, however, he won election to the New York assembly, and was chosen speaker. He also won in this campaign a most unflattering portrait from the vitriolic pen of "Aristides" (William P. Van Ness), who referred to him sarcastically as "that learned and pious expounder of the prophecies" (*An Examination of the Various Charges Exhibited Against Aaron Burr*, new ed., 1804, pp. 31–33). A friend of Jefferson since Congressional days and now

a thoroughgoing Republican, Osgood lost no time in offering to the new President his services (letter to Madison, Apr. 24, 1801, Madison Papers), and was rewarded with the office of supervisor of internal revenue for the district of New York (see his letter to Jefferson, Mar. 30, 1802, Jefferson Papers). A more desirable appointment shortly followed, May 10, 1803, when he was made naval officer of the port of New York. This office he retained until his death. Noteworthy among the acts of his life as a public-spirited citizen of New York was his work as an organizer and incorporator of the Society . . . for the Establishment of a Free School for the Education of Poor Children, later known as the Free School Society, and still later, as the Public School Society. He was also one of the founders of the American Academy of Fine Arts.

[Letters of Osgood are found in a number of different repositories, particularly the N. Y. Pub. Lib. (Samuel Adams Papers and the Emmet Collection), the Mass. Archives, and the Mass. Hist. Soc. (Knox Papers, Heath Papers, Pickering Papers). A body of Osgood Papers is in the N. Y. Hist. Soc. The records of the Board of Treasury, 1784–89, are in the Papers of the Continental Congress, nos. 138–146; to be supplemented by Washington's Letter-Book, no. 8 (Lib. of Cong.). The principal printed sources are: Ira Osgood and Eben Putnam, *A Geneal. of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood* (1894); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1866; J. G. Wilson, *The Memorial Hist. of the City of N. Y.*, vol. III (1893); M. J. Lamb, *Hist. of the City of N. Y.*, vol. II (copr. 1880); D. S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, vol. I (1906); E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Continental Congress*, vols. V, VI, VII (1931–34); *Jours. of the Continental Congress*; *N. Y. Gazette & General Advertiser*, Aug. 14, 1813.] E. C. B.

O'SHEA, MICHAEL VINCENT (Sept. 17, 1866–Jan. 14, 1932), educator, author, was the second of the ten children of Michael and Margaret (Fitzgerald) O'Shea of LeRoy, N. Y. Michael senior had come to the United States from Valencia, Ireland, at about the close of the Civil War and engaged in farming, of which his son had experience in his youth. Much more important in shaping him, however, were his elder-brother responsibilities for the eight younger children, since out of these responsibilities seems to have developed his life interest in child-welfare. From the LeRoy Academy he entered Cornell University in 1889 and received the degree of bachelor of letters in 1892. Between academy and university he had taught in country schools, and in the university he planned his course with a view to teaching. After his graduation he was for three years professor of psychology and education at the state normal school, Mankato, Minn. In 1894 he married Harriet Frisbie Eastabrooks of Milledgeville, Ill., who also was a teacher in the normal school at Mankato. In 1895 he became professor of pedagogy

in the Teachers College, Buffalo, N. Y. Two years later President Charles Kendall Adams of the University of Wisconsin, who as president of Cornell had known O'Shea as a student, induced him to come to Wisconsin as professor of education. This position he held to the time of his death.

From 1897 to the end of his life he interspersed his classroom duties with lecturing throughout the United States on subjects concerned with child welfare and education. With a talent for clear and lucid statement, he developed unusual skill in popularizing educational theory, and on the public platform his powers of interpretation were continually in wide demand. For this form of service his intellectual resourcefulness, his native wit, his dynamic vigor, and his charm of personality were invaluable assets. The field of this activity was extended to England and Scotland in 1905, 1906, and 1910, during which years, too, he studied the European schools. In 1905 he was chairman of the American committee at the International Congress of Education at Liège, Belgium, and in 1910 of the International Congress of Home Education at Brussels. His counsel was widely sought by parents, school boards, and both city and state boards of education. In 1925 he made a survey of the all-year schools of Newark, N. J. In 1925–26 he directed an all-state survey of Mississippi's educational system, and in 1927 of Virginia's.

In the field of authorship he was continuously active, his most important productions being *Education as Adjustment* (1903); *Linguistic Development and Education* (1907); *Social Development and Education* (1909); *Mental Development and Education* (1921); *The Child—His Nature and His Needs* (1924); *Newer Ways with Children* (1929). He also contributed to the authorship of various series of elementary school textbooks. At the time of his death he was chairman of the educational board of the Children's Book Club; editor-in-chief of *The World Book Encyclopedia* (19 vols., 1933), of the *Junior Home Magazine,* and of *The Nation's Schools.* He held membership and offices in various scientific and educational associations. The vital imagination and genial curiosity that were his made him welcome and useful among a host of friends. His religious affiliations were with the Congregational Church and he was long officially connected with the Young Men's Christian Association and the Young Women's Christian Association. His wife, two sons, and two daughters survived him.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1930–31; *Wis. State Jour.* (Madison), Jan. 18, 1932; *Jour. of Education,* Jan. 25, 1932; *School and Society,* Feb. 27, 1932; R. G. Thwaites, *The Univ. of Wis., Its Hist. and Its Alumni* (1900).]

W. J. C.

OSLER, WILLIAM (July 12, 1849–Dec. 29, 1919), physician, born at Bond Head, Upper Canada, was the youngest son of the Rev. Featherstone Lake Osler and Ellen Free (Pickton) Osler, who had come from Cornwall in 1837 and were of Anglo-Saxon and Celtic extraction respectively. The father, derived from a family of merchants and ship-owners, was of thick-set build and fair complexion, and was reserved in temperament, though he made himself beloved. The mother, born in London, was slender, short, and of olive complexion; in her girlhood, she was pretty, clever, witty, lively, quick at repartee, wilful but good-tempered, not easily influenced, faithful in friendship, and of strong religious bent. Health and longevity characterized both the Osler and Pickton families. William Osler resembled his mother in mental and emotional traits as well as in personal appearance, though he was also like a paternal uncle, Edward, a navy surgeon and general medical practitioner, of dark complexion and short stature, who was interested in writing and in natural history. As a boy, William Osler was rather undersized, but wiry and well-proportioned, supple in body, with an elastic swinging step; he excelled in cricket, football, and swimming, and was of impulsive but generous temperament. He was full of pranks and practical jokes which were usually harmless but sometimes led to regrets, as when he once killed a pig with a stone, or when he chopped off the tip of his sister's finger, or when he and eight comrades, "fumigated" the house-keeper of a school and in consequence spent a few days in jail and were fined.

After attendance at grammar schools in Dundas and Barrie, Ont., he entered Trinity College School at Weston in 1866, where he came into contact with two strong personalities: first, with the founder of the school and its warden, the Rev. W. A. Johnson, "who knew nature and how to get boys interested in it" (Cushing, *post,* I, 27) and to use books of reference, and, second, with its medical director, Dr. James Bovell, a man of boundless ambition combined with energy and industry but with the "fatal fault of diffuseness," an omnivorous reader, who at this time and during the next few years exerted an extraordinary influence upon the young Osler. While at Weston, he became head prefect, acquired knowledge easily (though he disliked mathematics), won the Chancellor's Prize, and became interested in diatoms and fresh water polyzoa. Through "Father" Johnson's influence,

he learned to love the Bible and Sir Thomas Browne's *Religio Medici.*

Though Osler had expected to take holy orders, he decided, apparently under the influence of Bovell and of Johnson, to abandon theology and become a physician. Entering the Toronto Medical School in the autumn of 1868, he worked there and in Bovell's library for two years, after which he went to McGill Medical School, Montreal, because of the better clinical opportunities it afforded. Here he graduated in 1872. In Toronto, at the age of twenty, he had begun what he later called his "ink-pot career" by a brief sketch entitled "Christmas and the Microscope" (published in *Hardwicke's Science-Gossip,* Feb. 1, 1869); and in Montreal, at the age of twenty-two, he began to report cases in medical journals. He had great admiration for one of his McGill teachers, Dr. Robert Palmer Howard, a courtly, scholarly gentleman, who worked hard in the hospital, studied medical literature assiduously, was ever alert to new problems, wrote excellent clinical papers, and, with his colleagues, taught with extraordinary care and accuracy by the methods of the Edinburgh School, introducing the pupils to the writings of Graves, Stokes, and Laennec. Osler, later in life, asserted that to Johnson, Bovell, and Howard he owed his success—"if success means getting what you want and being satisfied with it" (*The Master Word in Medicine,* 1903, quoted by Cushing, I, 69).

After graduation, he spent two years (1872–74) in study in Europe, visiting clinics in Great Britain, in Berlin, and in Vienna. He "walked the hospitals" with Murchison, Jenner, Wilson Fox, Ringer, and Bastian in London, with Traube and Frerichs in Berlin, and with Bamberger, Neumann, and Hebra and other famous specialists in Vienna; but he spent most of his time at work in histology, physiology, and experimental pathology in Burdon Sanderson's laboratory at University College Hospital in London. In this laboratory, he studied the antagonistic action of atropin and physostigmin upon the white blood corpuscles, and observed in the circulating blood, before anyone else, the presence of what later were called the "blood-platelets," describing them so carefully that the results of the studies were presented to the Royal Society (*Proceedings,* vol. XXII, 1874, pp. 391 ff.).

In 1874, he returned to Canada, did a little practice as substitute for another physician in Dundas, where he earned his first professional fee—"speck in cornea . . . 50c" (Cushing, I, 120), served a month as *locum tenens* for the resident physician of the City Hospital in Hamilton "for the consideration of $25.00 and a pair of old-

fashioned elastic-sided boots" (*Ibid.*), and then received an offer of a lectureship upon the institutes of medicine in McGill Medical School, which he accepted. In 1875, upon the death of Dr. J. M. Drake, he was officially appointed professor. While at work in histology and physiology, he was industrious also in other pursuits; he performed many autopsies, worked in the smallpox wards (where he contracted the disease himself), read widely and voraciously, helped the library, started a Journal Club, wrote for the medical journals, delivered inspiring addresses, enlivened interest in medical associations, contributed specimens to the museums, saw a few patients in consultation, participated energetically and whole-heartedly in all the medical activities of the city, and infected others with his enthusiasm. In 1876, a new position, pathologist to the Montreal General Hospital, was created for him, and a demonstration course in pathology, modeled upon that of Virchow, which he had observed in Berlin, was immediately undertaken. Three large quarto volumes of records of the autopsies made, written in his own hand, have been preserved. During this period, he held also a professorship in the Veterinary College and maintained an interest in comparative physiology and pathology, making reports upon broncho-pneumonia of parasitic origin in dogs, hog cholera, and bovine tuberculosis. One who knew him at this time commented upon his abounding vitality, his love of work, his promptness, alertness, and cheerfulness, his refusal to think ill of anyone, or to listen to ill-natured gossip or censure, his freedom from self-conceit and boastfulness, his happy knack of friendliness to people of all ages and conditions, and " 'his outgiving, expressing nature, sympathetic and true' " (*Ibid.,* 162).

Along with the laboratory work mentioned, he kept up his interest in clinical medicine, with the result that, in 1878, he was appointed "full physician" to the Montreal General Hospital. He thereupon went to London to take membership in the Royal College of Physicians and to observe clinical work for three months with Murchison, Gee, Roberts, Bastian, Ringer, Sutton, Savage, and Gowers, thus beginning a habit that he strongly recommended to others—that of "quinquennial brain-dusting" (*The Student Life,* 1905, quoted by Cushing, I, 167). At this time he made the acquaintance of Grainger Stewart, Jonathan Hutchinson, Clifford Allbutt, Gairdner, and Broadbent, all of whom he admired for their ideals and their practical clinical methods. While he was attending physician in Montreal, the section of the hospital of which he was given charge

underwent a revolution. Though patients were given very little medicine (Osler's treatment has been described as "a mixture of nux vomica and hope"), many recovered readily by virtue of his interest and encouragement; the old patients rapidly disappeared, and new ones stayed but a short time. During this Montreal period, his studies of the anaemias, of aneurysms, and of endocarditis and valvular disease of the heart were notable.

As early as 1884, the year after he was elected a fellow of the Royal College of Physicians of London, he had recognized the possibilities of medical school work on a university basis; he felt sure that greater results would be achieved if there could be better laboratories and a paid staff: "men placed above the worries and vexations of practice, and whose time will be devoted solely to teaching and investigating the subjects they profess" ("On the University Question," editorial in *Canada Medical and Surgical Journal,* January 1884). The summer of that year he spent in Europe (London, Berlin, Leipzig) and while there was offered and accepted appointment as professor of clinical medicine in the University of Pennsylvania. The decision to leave Montreal was difficult, and had to be made, he asserted, by flipping a coin. McGill deplored the loss of a vitalizing influence, exercised by personal contact; Osler, himself, remarked characteristically, that in parting he "felt the chordae tendineae grow tense" (Cushing, I, 229).

His removal to Philadelphia, in 1884, marked the beginning of a twenty-one year period of residence and work in the United States. In his new position, he was startling, at first, with his informal ways and his halting speech, devoid of any attempt at oratorical effect. But his clinical work in the hospital wards, his thorough knowledge of his subject, and his interest in autopsies and in the work of the clinical laboratory, soon gained respect; and, besides, his rare traits of personality made him popular alike as teacher, clinician, and consultant. In addition to regular work in the medical school, he made clinical and pathological studies at Blockley Hospital, and supported and stimulated the medical societies. Many contributions to medical literature, including *The Gulstonian Lectures on Malignant Endocarditis* (1885), the Cartwright Lectures, *On Certain Problems of the Blood Corpuscles* (1886; reprinted from *Medical News,* Philadelphia, Apr. 3, 10, 17, 1886); and his monograph, "The Cerebral Palsies of Children" (*Ibid.,* July 14–Aug. 11, 1888), belong to this period. Now and again his spirit of fun became irrepressible; occasionally he would publish as a practical joke some absurd letter or paper under the pen name "Edgerton Y. Davis of Caughnawauga, P.Q.," that "mischievous half" of his, analogous to M'Connachie, the "fanciful half" of Sir James Barrie.

In September 1888, Osler was appointed physician-in-chief to the new Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, which was to be opened formally in May 1889. There he remained for sixteen years—probably the most eventful and most influential period of his life. The Johns Hopkins University had appointed William H. Welch as professor of pathology in 1884, and his choice for the professorship of medicine was Osler, a selection that later gained the approval of John Shaw Billings [*q.v.*], adviser of the hospital trustees, and of Daniel Coit Gilman [*q.v.*], president of the University. As the Johns Hopkins Medical School, in which Osler was to be professor of medicine, did not open until four years after the opening of the hospital, the time necessary for the organization of a clinical staff and of the institutional work was available. The hospital was organized upon a unit system comparable to that in use in the great German universities, with a graded resident staff; but the teaching was later conducted more in accordance with the best British and French traditions. The teaching program included instruction of small groups of students who served in the wards as clinical clerks and surgical dressers, practical work in clinical laboratories, amphitheatre clinics, and demonstrations of conditions of "the unwashed" in the out-patient department. Osler selected as his resident physicians, successively, H. A. Lafleur, W. S. Thayer, T. B. Futcher, Thomas McCrae, and R. I. Cole, and he sought, as assistants and internes, what he called "A.A.1. copper-bottomed young graduates" (Cushing, I, 304). He made every effort to infect these men with the spirit of earnestness, the love of thoroughness and of orderliness in work with rigid mastery of one's time, the appreciation of knowledge for its own sake (apart from its value for practice and for pecuniary considerations), the determination to become familiar with the best thought of the world, and the desire to make original contributions to knowledge. Through his pupils he may be said to have created an American school of internal medicine.

In 1891, he published his *Principles and Practice of Medicine,* which became so popular as a text for students and practitioners that, of the first two editions alone, 41,000 copies were sold. By 1930, it had reached its eleventh edition; it has been translated into French, German, Spanish, and Chinese. It was the perusal of this text-

book by the Rev. F. T. Gates [*q.v.*], the adviser of Mr. John D. Rockefeller, that led to Mr. Rockefeller's large endowments of work in higher medicine and medical education. Later, with the aid of Thomas McCrae, Osler edited *Modern Medicine* (1907–10), a systematic treatise in seven volumes.

During his Johns Hopkins period, he was an active investigator of typhoid fever, malaria, pneumonia, amoebiasis, tuberculosis (for which he devised the home treatment), cardiovascular disease, the visceral lesions of the erythema group, ball-valve gallstone in the common duct, the relations of gall stones to typhoid, and cyanosis with polycythaemia (Vaquez-Osler disease); but his main contributions to medical research lay in his stimulation and insemination of the minds of others. In the field of public health he was an active propagandist, waging war especially against typhoid, malaria, tuberculosis, anti-vivisectionists, and the conditions responsible for infant mortality. He helped to make the Johns Hopkins Hospital a place of refuge for the sick poor of the city, and he did much for the medical libraries of Baltimore, especially for the library of the Medical and Chirurgical Faculty of Maryland. He was in demand for the making of "occasional addresses," among which *Aequanimitas* (1889), *The Master Word in Medicine* (1903), *Science and Immortality* (1904), and *The Student Life* (1905) may be mentioned as illustrating the charm of his literary style, his love of literary allusions born of his wide reading, his kindly advice and graceful humor, and his practical common sense combined with high ideals of scholarship and of life. One of his addresses, "The Fixed Period" (*Journal of the American Medical Association,* Mar. 4, 1905), in which he referred to Trollope's novel that suggested the chloroforming of men over sixty, caused an unexpected storm of protest. The misinterpretation of his meaning caused him pain, for he had always been especially respectful, tender, and affectionate to older men, and those who knew him were well aware of his especial interest in human beings at the two extremes of life. Moreover, his mission had been to soothe rather than to irritate. He was always composing disputes and bringing together discordant elements in the profession, services that brought him fame as a peace-maker. Throughout this period, as a consulting practitioner he attracted patients from near and far; moreover, he became "the doctor's doctor," and, despite every effort to restrict the number of his patients, was finally overwhelmed by them, a fact that, together with some "substernal threatenings," had some weight in his decision to accept, in 1905, the call to the Regius Professorship of Medicine in the University of Oxford, which he held until his death nearly fifteen years later.

In Oxford, he soon showed that the opportunities of a Regius professorship are as great as are the qualities of its incumbent. One of his chief interests was the Bodleian Library, of which he was a curator and for which he secured valuable gifts. He was Master of the Almshouse at Ewelme and took a deep interest in the old men there. He participated actively in reforms in public health, in medical education, and in professional organization in England. He was a member of the two committees that advised the Board of Education and the Treasury in the distribution of state grants to the universities. In the development of the Oxford Medical School, the work of the Oxford Press, the formation of the Association of Physicians of Great Britain and Ireland (1906), the launching of the *Quarterly Journal of Medicine* (1906), the amalgamation of the London medical societies into the Royal Society of Medicine (1907), and the formation of its historical section (1912), he took an active part. Throughout life, and especially after fifty, he evinced much interest in the history of medicine and in the collecting of old medical books. He continued to be in demand as an occasional speaker; among his notable addresses after he went to Oxford were *Man's Redemption of Man* (1910); *A Way of Life* (1914), delivered at Yale; *The Old Humanities and the New Science* (1919), a presidential address before the Classical Association. He received many honorary degrees from universities, was elected president of the Ashmolean Natural History Society (1919), the Bibliographical Society (1913–19), and the Classical Association (1919), and in 1911, at the time of the coronation of King George V, was made a baronet, much, he declared, to the embarrassment of his democratic simplicity.

Upon the outbreak of the World War, he was made physician-in-chief of the Queen's Canadian Military Hospital at Shorncliffe, and later shared in the propaganda for disease prevention in the army. Typhoid and paratyphoid, war nephritis, trench fever, the Dardanelles diarrhoea, and the soldiers' heart were among the maladies in which he showed especial interest.

He had married in 1892, when in Baltimore, Grace Linzee (Revere), the widow of Dr. Samuel W. Gross [*q.v.*] of Philadelphia, and the extraordinary hospitality of "the Chief" and Mrs. Osler at 1 W. Monument St., in Baltimore, and

later of Sir William and Lady Osler at 13 Norham Gardens in Oxford (which came to be known as "The Open Arms") was noteworthy. Their first child died soon after birth; the second, Edward Revere Osler, was killed in Belgium in 1917 while on active service as an officer in the Royal Field Artillery. In October 1918 his collection of books and an endowment fund were given as a memorial by his parents to The Johns Hopkins University for the encouragement of the study of English literature of the Tudor and Stuart periods. During his later life, Osler suffered from recurrent attacks of bronchitis; he jokingly declared that he sometimes "coughed his Pacchionian bodies loose." At the end of 1919, worn out by war activities and exhausted by grief over the death of his son, he developed an empyema and a pulmonary abscess which, despite operation, proved fatal.

Several portraits of Osler were painted, including paintings by Thomas Corner and by Seymour Thomas, the best known being that by Sargent in a group, "The Four Doctors," which hangs in the Welch Library of the Johns Hopkins Medical School. His appearance in 1903 is reproduced in a plaque made by Vernon in Paris. A well-known sketch made by Max Brödel, showing Osler with halo and wings dominating a cyclone that sweeps away disease, bears the legend: "The Saint—Johns Hopkins Hospital." A part of his personal library, consisting of some 7,600 bound volumes bearing upon the history of medicine and science, was bequeathed to McGill University; it is catalogued in *Bibliotheca Osleriana* (Oxford, 1929), edited by W. W. Francis, R. H. Hill, and Archibald Malloch; his collection of important editions in English literature was given to the Tudor and Stuart Club of The Johns Hopkins University; a third part, consisting chiefly of modern clinical books, was given to the Johns Hopkins Hospital.

His most eminent colleague, Dr. Welch, has stated that, at the time of his death, Osler was "probably the greatest figure in the medical world; the best known, the most influential, the most beloved. . . . His life embodied his precepts, and his students cherished his words" (*Johns Hopkins Alumni Magazine,* 1921, quoted by Cushing, I, 428, n.). "Cultivate peace of mind, serenity, the philosophy of Marcus Aurelius," was his advice; "Think not too much of tomorrow, but of the work of today, the work which is immediately before you." Writing shortly before his death (Cushing, II, 679), he said: "The confounded thing [his illness] drags on in an unpleasant way—and in one's 71st year, the harbour is not far off. And such a happy voyage! & such dear companions all the way! And the future does not worry."

[The definitive biography is Harvey Cushing, *The Life of Sir William Osler* (2 vols., 1925); a shorter work is E. G. Reid, *The Great Physician; A Short Life of Sir William Osler* (1931). A bibliography of his writings (730 items), assembled by M. W. Blogg, appeared in *Bull. Johns Hopkins Hospital,* July 1919. See also a memorial volume of appreciations and reminiscences by various authors with classified bibliography of Osler's writings and a list of writings about him, privately issued as *Bull. No. IX of the Internat. Asso. of Medic. Museums and Jour. of Technical Methods* (Montreal, 1926). Many references are listed in the *Index Catalogue of the Library of the Surgeon-General's Office,* 3 ser. VIII (1929), 469–70.] L. F. B.

OSSOLI, MARGARET FULLER [See Fuller, Sarah Margaret, 1810–1850].

OSTENACO [See Outacity, fl. 1756–1777].

OSTEN SACKEN, CARL ROBERT ROMANOVICH VON DER (Aug. 21, 1828–May 20, 1906), entomologist, diplomat, was a native of St. Petersburg, and died at Heidelberg, Germany. Although he was a Russian baron, his most productive years were passed in the United States and the bulk of his life work was concerned with the dipterous fauna of America. In 1839, at the age of eleven, he became interested in entomology while on a visit to Baden Baden. He was educated in St. Petersburg, and entered the diplomatic service in 1849. In 1856, when twenty-eight years old, he was appointed secretary to the Russian legation at Washington. Six years later he was made consul general of Russia in New York City, resigning in 1871. After several journeys to Europe he was in the United States unofficially from 1873 to 1877. Before leaving Russia he had written three entomological papers. During his American sojourn he was principally engaged, partly in collaboration with Dr. Hermann Loew of Vienna, in an investigation of the Diptera of America north of the Isthmus of Panama. He published, first, in 1858, through the Smithsonian Institution, a *Catalogue of the Described Diptera of North America.* This was followed by a series of papers, very largely descriptive, and four volumes under the general title *Monographs of the Diptera of North America* (1862–73) by Loew and himself, also published by the Smithsonian Institution. Subsequently, after visiting the principal type collections of Europe, he prepared a second catalogue, of a critical character (Smithsonian Institution, 1878), which, according to an eminent authority, "for clearness, completeness and absolute mastery of the subject, must forever remain an unapproachable model for later workers" (Aldrich, *post,* p. 270). The Loew and Osten Sacken type collection was eventually

placed in the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Cambridge, Mass.

In 1877 he went to Heidelberg, where he remained for the rest of his life. He continued to work, carried on a correspondence with entomologists in different parts of the world, and published many papers, mainly rather brief but all of importance. He spoke and wrote many languages, but preferred English, which he used with great clearness and force. In his closing years he jokingly referred to himself as "the grandfather of American Dipterology," a title that he really deserved. Before he died he published at his own expense *Record of My Life Work in Entomology* (three parts; pts. 1–2, including pp. 1–206, Cambridge, Mass., 1903; pt. 3, pp. 207–240, Heidelberg, 1904), which contains his portrait and a critical bibliography of 179 titles in addition to a deal of interesting notes and correspondence.

[J. M. Aldrich and C. W. Johnson, in *Entomological News*, Oct. 1906; G. H. Verrall, in *Entomologist's Monthly Mag.* (London), Oct. 1906; *Illustrirte Zeitung* (Leipzig), June 14, 1906.] L. O. H.

OSTERHAUS, PETER JOSEPH (Jan. 4, 1823–Jan. 2, 1917), Union soldier, consul, son of Anton A. Osterhaus, was born in Coblenz, Germany. He received his early education in his native city, studied at a military school in Berlin, and served as a volunteer in the 29th Infantry Regiment. In 1846, at Kreuznach in Rhenish Prussia, he married Natilda Born. He became involved in the Revolution of 1848, and when the government triumphed he emigrated to the United States (1849), settling in Belleville, Ill., where he was employed as a drygoods clerk. He later moved to Lebanon, Ill., and operated a general merchandise business. Moving with his family to St. Louis, Mo., in 1851, he became bookkeeper for a wholesale hardware firm.

At the outbreak of the Civil War, he volunteered as a private in the 12th Missouri Volunteers. He was soon commissioned captain, Company A, 2nd Missouri Volunteer Infantry, promoted to major, Apr. 27, 1861, and fought in the battle of Wilson's Creek, Aug. 10, 1861. On Aug. 27 of that year, he was honorably discharged from this commission, and on Dec. 19 following, commissioned colonel, 12th Missouri Volunteer Infantry. Vacating that commission in June 1862, he accepted appointment as brigadier-general, United States Volunteers. He commanded the 1st Division of Gen. S. R. Curtis' corps and, in the Army of the Southwest, a division which took part in the engagement at Pea Ridge, Ark. (Mar. 6–8, 1862). He was in

Osterhaus

command of the 3rd Division, Army of the Southwest, to Dec. 31, 1862, and of the 9th Division of the same army from Dec. 31, 1862, to Aug. 2, 1863. In this last command he participated in the Vicksburg campaign. In a sharp engagement at Big Black River, Miss., on May 17, 1863, he was wounded by a shell fragment. His next command was the 1st Division, XV Corps of Grant's army at Chattanooga. Under temporary command of Gen. Joseph Hooker, Osterhaus led his troops over Lookout Creek, climbed to the summit of Missionary Ridge, took literally thousands of prisoners, and drove the Confederate southern wing from the crest of the ridge. On July 23, 1864, he was made a major-general of volunteers. He was chief of staff to the commanding general of the military division of West Mississippi to May 27, 1865; commanded the Department of the Mississippi to June 13, 1865; the District of the Mississippi to July 17, 1865; the Northern District of the Mississippi to Sept. 16, 1865; the Department of the Mississippi to Nov. 18, 1865, and the Western District of the Mississippi to Jan. 17, 1866, when he was relieved, having been honorably mustered out Jan. 15, 1866.

General Osterhaus served as United States Consul to France, from June 18, 1866, until Aug. 16, 1877, residing at Lyons. His term included the period of the Franco-Prussian War, and his reports show keen insight into the economic problems involved in French compliance with the conditions of peace imposed by Germany. When relieved by his successor, he returned to the United States and engaged in the manufacture and exporting of hardware. He was again called into public service, however, and acted as vice and deputy consul of the United States at Mannheim, Germany, from Mar. 16, 1898, to Nov. 8, 1900, when he resigned that he might retire and enjoy a rest within the circle of his family and his friends. On June 27, 1902, Congress authorized an additional pension for his services as a major-general of volunteers. This pension was stopped Mar. 20, 1905, for on Mar. 3, 1905, Congress by special act appointed him brigadier-general of the United States Army, and on Mar. 17 he went on the retired list. He lived to the age of ninety-four, his death occurring at Duisburg, Germany, where he was buried. On Nov. 15, 1863, his first wife died in St. Louis, and on July 28, 1864, he married her sister, Amalia Born. By his first marriage he had five children, and by his second, three.

[*War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (4 vols. 1887–88); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); T. H. S. Hamersly, *Complete Army and Navy*

Reg. of the U. S. (1882); pension records; consular files, State Department; personnel records, War Department; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 6, 1917; family records in possession of Alexander Osterhaus, Hollywood, Cal.]

C. C. B.

O'SULLIVAN, JOHN LOUIS (November 1813–Feb. 24, 1895), journalist, diplomat, was born, according to tradition, on a British man-of-war, in the harbor of Gibraltar. His father, John O'Sullivan, American merchant and sea captain, later consul for the Island of Teneriffe, had served in Miranda's Venezuela expedition in 1806. His grandfather, T. H. O'Sullivan, had been a member of the Irish Brigade in the French army, but during the American Revolution had joined the British army in New York; his great-grandfather, John O'Sullivan, born in County Kerry, Ireland, was adjutant-general in the army of "Bonnie Prince Charlie" in 1745, escaping to France after the defeat at Culloden (*Dictionary of National Biography*, XLII, 318, 319). John Louis O'Sullivan appears to have inherited a family propensity for championing lost causes. He backed Narciso Lopez in his filibustering expeditions against Cuba (1849–51), was twice indicted for violation of the neutrality laws (see *Democratic Review*, April 1852), and though he escaped conviction, lost heavily in those ventures, "having been ruined for Cuba," as he told James Buchanan. During the American Civil War he lived abroad, voicing his Southern sympathy in several pamphlets in which he urged Northern Democrats to end the war, and the British government to recognize the Confederacy. Prior to that time, however, he had won a place of some prominence in American letters and politics.

Educated at a military school in France, at Westminster School, England, and at Columbia College, where he took degrees in 1831 and 1834, he practised law in New York until 1837, when, in collaboration with S. D. Langtree, he established the *United States Magazine and Democratic Review*, first published in Washington, D. C., and in July 1841 moved to New York. The aim of this publication, as O'Sullivan stated it, was "to strike the hitherto silent string of the democratic genius of the age and the country" (*Passages from the Correspondence and Other Papers of Rufus W. Griswold*, 1898, p. 123). The editors succeeded in this aim, for the *Democratic Review* became the mouthpiece for the exuberant nationalism of the period, glorifying all things American and predicting the expansion of the United States till its boundaries should embrace the North American continent and Cuba as well. It was in an article in this magazine (July-August 1845), almost certainly written by O'Sullivan, that the phrase "manifest destiny" first appeared (J. W. Pratt, "The Origin of 'Manifest Destiny,'" *American Historical Review*, July 1927). In the literary field, the *Review* secured contributions from Hawthorne (between whom and O'Sullivan a warm friendship developed), Thoreau, Poe, Bryant, and others. In 1846 O'Sullivan sold the magazine. From August 1844 to 1846 he had also edited the *New York Morning News*, which he had founded jointly with Samuel J. Tilden [*q.v.*]. In 1841 he was in the New York legislature, where he advocated the abolition of capital punishment. From 1846 to 1854 he was a member of the board of regents of the University of the State of New York. On Feb. 1, 1854 (two years after his trial for filibustering) President Pierce named him chargé d'affaires in Portugal, and on June 19 of the same year he was nominated minister resident. He served in this capacity until 1858, championing American ideals and defending the American conception of "manifest destiny." Thereafter, he resided in Lisbon, London, and Paris until 1871 or later. From 1879 to 1895 he lived obscurely in New York. Julian Hawthorne, who knew him well, has described him as "handsome, charming, affectionate and unlucky, but an optimist to the last." It is noteworthy that at the time of his death "manifest destiny" was again becoming a popular watchword. He was married in 1846 to a daughter of Dr. Kearny Rodgers.

[Numerous personal glimpses of O'Sullivan appear in Julian Hawthorne, *Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife* (2 vols., 1885). Consult also F. L. Mott, *A Hist. of Am. Mags., 1741–1850* (1930); Algernon Tassin, *The Mag. in America* (1916); J. W. Pratt, "John L. O'Sullivan and Manifest Destiny," *N. Y. Hist.*, July 1933; files of the *Democratic Rev.* from 1837 to 1846; *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 26, 1895.]

J. W. P—t.

OTACITE [See OUTACITY, fl. 1756–1777].

OTERMÍN, ANTONIO de (fl. 1678–1683), is known solely in connection with his administration as governor of New Mexico from 1678 to 1683, during which time occurred the disastrous Pueblo Indian uprising which resulted in the abandonment of New Mexico by the Spaniards for twelve years. When Otermín became governor, Spanish settlers in the upper Río Grande region numbered about 2,900 persons and settlement extended from Isleta in the south, near present Albuquerque, to Taos in the north, a distance of about one hundred and fifty miles, and from Pecos in the east to Jémez in the west, a distance of about seventy-five miles. The most important settlements were Santa Fé, the capital, and also the center of a ranching district known as Río Arriba, and Isleta, which was the center of a flourishing farming community known as

Río Abajo. In the latter district the governor was represented by Lieutenant-Governor García.

In the third year of Otermín's administration a native of the north, Popé, planned a general rebellion, which, because of the discovery of the plot, was begun prematurely on Aug. 10, 1680. The Spaniards in the outlying districts were taken unawares and 380 civilians, including men, women, and children, and twenty-one missionaries lost their lives. One thousand refugees finally assembled at Santa Fé under Otermín and fifteen hundred at Isleta under García, each group being led to believe by the attacking Indians that all other Spaniards in the province had been killed. At Santa Fé Otermín and his group of refugees heroically withstood for nine days a siege during which their position was made unbearable through the diversion of a stream of water by the natives. In a desperate daybreak attack led by Otermín on Aug. 20 the demoralized besiegers were defeated, after which the Spaniards began a retreat to Isleta, from where the southern refugees had retreated toward the south. Overtaking this group, Otermín and the entire body of refugees proceeded to the mission of Guadalupe (at present Juárez, opposite El Paso, Tex.), being accompanied thither by 317 loyal Indians of the Tigua and Piros tribes. By October the Spaniards had been lodged in three temporary settlements in the vicinity of Guadalupe and ultimately the loyal Indians were also lodged in three pueblos, one of them being the historic pueblo of Isleta which at present is situated a few miles below El Paso on the American side of the river.

At Guadalupe the refugees under Otermín were aided by the viceregal government, and, pending the contemplated reconquest of New Mexico, the provincial capital was temporarily designated as El Paso del Río del Norte (present Juárez). In the winter of 1681–82 Otermín led a poorly equipped expedition of 146 soldiers to reconquer New Mexico. Little was accomplished except to ascertain the determination of the rebels and to burn eight pueblos and sack three others located in the heart of the Pueblo region. On returning to El Paso Otermín petitioned for a leave in order to seek medical treatment. The viceregal *fiscal* recommended the disapproval of the request but in August 1683, Don Jironza Petris de Cruzate assumed his duties as successor of Otermín at El Paso. Despite the many available documents of the period 1678–82, nothing is known of Otermín before the former or after the latter year. In a formal complaint filed against him with his successor, the cabildo of Santa Fé stated that Otermín, "not being able or not wishing to govern," entrusted his authority to his *maestre de campo* Javier, "a man of bad faith, avaricious and cunning," who was charged with having goaded the Indians to rebel in 1680.

[Authoritative accounts of the administration of Otermín are in C. W. Hackett, "The Revolt of the Pueblo Indians of N. Mex. in 1680," in *Quart. Tex. State Hist. Asso.*, Oct. 1911, and "Otermín's Attempt to Reconquer N. Mex., 1681–82," in *Old Santa Fé*, Jan.–Apr. 1916. Consult also Anne E. Hughes, *The Beginnings of Spanish Settlement in the El Paso District* (1914); and Gaspar Perez de Villagrá, *Historia de la Nueva México* (ed. 1900), vol. II, App. III.]

C. W. H.

OTEY, JAMES HERVEY (Jan. 27, 1800–Apr. 23, 1863), first Protestant Episcopal bishop of Tennessee, was born in Bedford County, Va., one of a family of twelve children. His grandfather, Col. John Otey, fought in the Revolution; his father, Isaac, was a farmer and served for thirty years as the representative of his county in the Virginia legislature; his mother was a Matthew, a descendant of Tobias Matthew, Archbishop of York, 1606–1628. At the age of twenty, James Hervey graduated from the University of North Carolina with the degree of bachelor of belles-lettres. Remaining in the university as instructor in Greek and Latin, he had to lead the daily prayers in the chapel. Since he showed evident embarrassment, a friend gave him an Episcopal prayer book, the first he had seen, his parents not being members of any church. On Oct. 13, 1821, he married Eliza D. Pannill of Petersburg, Va., and soon took charge of an academy at Warrenton. Here he was baptized by the village rector, Rev. William Mercer Green, later first bishop of Mississippi. Bishop John S. Ravenscroft [*q.v.*] confirmed him, and on Oct. 10, 1825, ordained him deacon. On June 7, 1827, he was ordained priest by the same bishop.

Settling in Franklin, Tenn., he opened a school, serving also as pastor and missionary for eight years, with only one other Episcopal clergyman in the state. Bishop Ravenscroft visited him in 1829 and the diocese of Tennessee was organized at Nashville. In 1833 there were only five presbyters and one deacon in the diocese, but at the convention held at Franklin in June of that year Otey was elected bishop, and was consecrated in Philadelphia, Jan. 14, 1834. His services by toilsome journeys on horseback extended through Florida, Louisiana, Mississippi, Arkansas, and Indian Territory as well as Tennessee. "Weary, weary, weary," found frequent repetition in his diary. In 1852 he settled in Memphis.

As the originator of the idea, and one of the founders of the University of the South, Bishop

Otey deserves remembrance. The formal meeting for organization was held on Lookout Mountain, Chattanooga, July 4, 1857. Otey made an address, was elected chairman of the meeting and later, chancellor of the institution. Sewanee was selected as the site, and ten thousand acres secured. The legislature granted a charter, Jan. 6, 1858, nearly $500,000 was subscribed, and the corner stone was laid, Oct. 10, 1860. War stopped all further effort and swept away all the subscriptions. Before it was over, Otey had died and Bishop Charles T. Quintard [*q.v.*] took up the work.

By birth and early training, Otey was an "old-time Whig," a stanch supporter of the Constitution. His letters on the eve of war show the horror it aroused in his soul. The clergy in his diocese were recommended to use the ante-communion office, which did not contain any prayer for the President, in place of the usual services of morning and evening prayer, which included such a petition. He wrote to Secretary of State Seward, begging that hostilities be suspended and imploring him to use his influence with the President in the interest of peace. (See "The Change of Secession Sentiment in Virginia in 1861," in *American Historical Review,* October 1925.) General Sherman treated Bishop Otey with marked respect, did not compel him to take the usual oath of allegiance, and was a frequent attendant at the Bishop's services in Memphis. Notwithstanding the secession of the Southern states, Otey saw no reason for dividing the Church. He felt that at least "the opinions and consent of our northern brethren should be consulted in any such step, and everything avoided as far as possible likely to give offence to any portion of the Church."

The death of his wife in June 1861 was a heavy blow to him, and his own followed in less than two years. They had nine children. His remains lie in the churchyard in Ashwood, where a memorial service is still held every year. He was the author of one book, *Doctrine, Discipline, and Worship of the American Branch of the Catholic Church, Explained and Unfolded in Three Sermons* (1852).

[W. M. Green, *Memoir of Rt. Rev. James Hervey Otey, D.D., LL.D., the first Bishop of Tennessee* (1885), with extracts from his diary, letters, addresses and sermons; A. H. Noll, *Hist. of the Church in the Diocese of Tenn.* (1900); W. S. Perry, *The Hist. of the Am. Episcopal Church, 1857–1883* (1885), vol. II; Daniel McLeod, *The Rebellion in Tenn.: Observations on Bishop Otey's Letter to the Hon. William A. Seward* (1862).]

C. L. W.

OTIS, BASS (July 17, 1784–Nov. 3, 1861), portrait painter, engraver, pioneer in lithography in the United States, was the son of Dr. Josiah and Susanna (Orr) Otis, and a descendant of John Otis who emigrated to Massachusetts in 1630 or 1631 and settled in Hingham. He was born in Bridgewater, Mass. At an early age he is said to have been apprenticed to a scythe-maker in his native town. Dunlap said he was informed that the artist received his first instructions in painting by working for a coach painter, evidently after having completed his apprenticeship in the implement factory. By the time he first appeared in New York, in 1808, he had established a reputation as a painter of portraits. In 1812 he went to Philadelphia and set up a studio. He signalized his arrival in the city by sending eight portraits to the Second Annual Exhibition of the Columbian Society of Artists, in May 1812, which was the first display of his work. To the 1813 Exhibition he contributed among others, a portrait of himself. He painted portraits of Thomas Jefferson, James Madison, Joseph Hopkinson, Commodore Truxtun, Charles Thomson, and Dr. Caspar Wistar for *Delaplaine's Repository of the Lives and Portraits of Distinguished American Characters,* between 1815 and 1818, but only one of these portraits was engraved, that of Jefferson, because the work did not go beyond the first two volumes. The Jefferson portrait was painted from life. For several years Otis appears to have been kept busy copying portraits for Delaplaine, painting many more than those noted above, and annually sending his work to the exhibitions of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts.

To the exhibition of 1819, Otis sent the only composition he is known to have painted. This was entitled, "Interior of an Iron Foundry," and is understood to have pictured the place where he served his apprenticeship. The painting was favorably received, and the artist presented it to the Academy. In 1815 he invented the perspective protractor, but this contrivance seems to have attracted little attention, although commended by several artists. He was noted for painting portraits of deceased persons, sketching them in their coffins, and giving them a life-like character on his canvas. One of the distinguished examples of this work was his portrait of Stephen Girard, which he copied at least once, and which is apparently the only likeness of the "mariner and merchant." Dunlap did not think highly of Otis' work, declaring that his portraits were "all of a class; if not so originally, he made them so" (*post,* II, p. 383), although he admitted that Otis had "strong natural talents, and a good perception of character." A year before his death Otis painted a portrait of himself for Ferdinand J. Dreer, of Philadelphia, an antiquary, which

was reproduced in the *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography* (October 1913).

Otis' chief claim to fame lies in the fact that he made the first lithograph in America. This has been identified by the writer as the portrait of the Rev. Abner Kneeland, affixed to the volume of his lectures, published in 1818. The plate bears the inscription, "Bass Otis, Sc.," and does not resemble the familiar lithograph, because in Otis' ignorance of the art, he merely etched the stone in a combination of lithotint, stipple, and line, methods not intended to be used in combination. That the plate is a lithograph has been denied by Frank Weitenkampf (*American Graphic Art*, 1924, p. 152), who claims that it was executed on copper. Joseph Pennell, however, who was an expert lithographer, expressed himself to the writer as satisfied that it was a print from a stone. Otis made in precisely the same manner a lithograph which appeared in the *Analectic Magazine*, for July 1819, but he limited his method to expression in line. It was an etching on stone, contrary to the design and purpose of lithography, which is intended for surface and not for intaglio printing. The lithograph in the *Analectic* has always been cited as the first American lithograph, although the magazine that contained it did not claim for it that distinction. Otis was married, in 1819, to Alice Pierie of Philadelphia. In 1845, after her death, he left Philadelphia and opened a studio in New York. Five years later he was painting portraits in Boston but in 1859 he returned to Philadelphia. There he later died and was buried beside his wife and children in Christ Church Burial Ground.

[Jos. Jackson's "Bass Otis, America's First Lithographer," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1913, contains some errors corrected in this sketch. See also: D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers Upon Copper and Steel* (1907); Mantle Fielding, *Am. Engravers Upon Copper and Steel* (1917); Wm. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 3 vols., 1918); E. L. Clark, *A Record of the Inscriptions on the Tablets and Grave-Stones in the Burial Grounds of Christ Church, Phila.* (1864); *Vital Records of Bridgewater, Mass.* (2 vols., 1916); *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Nov. 4, 1861.] J. J.

OTIS, CHARLES EUGENE (May 11, 1846–Nov. 8, 1917), jurist, was the son of Isaac Otis, a descendant of John Otis who emigrated from England about 1631 and settled in Hingham, Mass., and of Caroline Abigail (Curtiss) Otis. Born on a farm in Prairieville Township, Barry County, Mich., he attended Prairie Seminary at Richland, the Kalamazoo high school, and the University of Michigan, where he received the degree of A.B. in 1869. After teaching school for two years he went to St. Paul and read law with his brother, George L. Otis, a leading member of the Minnesota bar, entering into partnership with him as soon as he was admitted to practice, in 1873. This firm lasted until 1883 when, upon the death of George L. Otis, a younger brother, Arthur G., was associated with the survivor.

An avowed Democrat, Otis was appointed judge of the second district of Minnesota in 1889 by the Republican governor, William R. Merriam, to fill a vacancy. At the general election of 1890 he was nominated by both parties, but in 1896, since he had repudiated the Chicago platform, his own party refused to renominate him. The Republicans supported him, however, and he was elected for another term. Declining a third nomination, in 1903 he resumed the practice of law in partnership with his son, James C. Otis, and these two, a little later, brought into the firm Willis C. Otis, a nephew of the elder member. This organization persisted down to 1917; at that time Willis went into the army, and a new partner, Kenneth G. Brill, was admitted, the firm name becoming Otis & Brill. In 1904 Otis was a candidate for chief justice of the supreme court of the state but, along with the rest of his party, went down to defeat before the Roosevelt landslide.

Always interested in civic matters, he was an alderman of St. Paul from 1880 to 1883 and a member of the library board from 1896 to 1899. As judge, many parties were willing to place their cases in his hands to hear and decide. He sustained the validity of the so-called "Bell Charter" of St. Paul, a new organic law passed in 1891, which did much to secure a more economical and less corrupt government for the city. His principal claim to remembrance, however, comes from his having been appointed, with the consent of all parties, by Judge Walter H. Sanborn of the Eighth United States Circuit Court to take testimony, hear arguments, and report findings of fact and "conclusions of law, together with the forms of decrees which he recommended to be entered, in the nine Minnesota railroad rate cases" (*Proceedings, Minnesota State Bar Association*, 1918, pp. 159–61). The work of taking testimony and hearing arguments lasted from June 2, 1908, to May 26, 1910, and Otis' report as master in chancery was submitted June 29, 1910. His findings and conclusions as to the three roads which were taken for test cases were approved by Judge Sanborn, who rendered a decision in favor of the complainants (the stockholders). These had sought by injunction to prevent the railroad officials from complying with the Minnesota law, on the grounds that the law operated to interfere with interstate commerce,

over which Congress and not the state has jurisdiction, and that the prescribed rates were confiscatory, hence in violation of the Fourteenth Amendment. When the case was taken to the Supreme Court of the United States on appeal, that court, speaking through Justice Hughes, reversed the decision on the first point, holding that since Congress had not dealt with this phase of intrastate commerce, the field was open to state action. As to the second point, that the rates were confiscatory, the lower court was sustained as to one railroad, the Minneapolis & St. Louis, but not in the case of the more important ones, the Northern Pacific and the Great Northern. The testimony of his associates both during his lifetime and after his death supports the statement indorsed by the bar association that Otis "was a man of the highest character and ability, a patriotic citizen and an honest, able and fearless judge." On Sept. 3, 1874, he married Elizabeth Noyes Ransom; they had three children, two of whom survived him. His death occurred in St. Paul.

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); A. N. Marquis, *The Book of Minnesotans* (1907); *Proc. Minn. State Bar Asso., 18th Ann. Session* (1918); 230 *U. S. Reports*, 352; 184 *Fed. Reporter*, 765; *Daily News* (St. Paul), Nov. 8, 1917.]

L. B. S.

OTIS, CHARLES ROLLIN (Apr. 29, 1835–May 24, 1927), inventor, manufacturer, was born in Troy, N. Y., the son of Elisha Graves Otis [*q.v.*] and Susan A. (Houghton). After obtaining a grade-school education at Halifax, Vt., and Albany, N. Y., he entered his father's machine shop at the age of thirteen, and learned his trade. He became especially familiar with steam engines, and when his father moved to Bergen, N. J., to become master mechanic of a bedstead factory there, young Otis, although but fifteen, was made engineer. The following year when his father moved to Yonkers, N. Y., he went with him and assisted in the erection of a new factory there. He worked side by side with his father in the construction of an elevator, and was so impressed by the safety appliance devised by the elder Otis that he urged the latter to establish a shop for the building of elevators. Close association with his father developed in the son the same integrity and genius for invention possessed by the former, and upon his death in 1861 Charles was in a position successfully to carry on the elevator business, which his father had established in Yonkers.

As the demand for elevators increased during the sixties, Otis and his younger brother supplied it, and at the same time continued to make improvements in the machinery. On Oct. 18, 1864, Charles Otis obtained a patent for elevator brakes (No. 44,740); in 1865 he secured three patents for improvements on his father's steam hoisting engine; on Sept. 10, 1867, he patented an improved valve for the steam engine (No. 68,783); and the following year, still other improvements. He succeeded, too, Feb. 21, 1871, in securing a reissue of his father's original patent of 1861, which was assigned to the new firm known as Otis Brothers & Company, organized in 1864. By 1872 the firm was doing a business of $393,000. After the company was incorporated a few years later and the business continued to grow, Otis and his brother retired (1882), selling their holdings to a syndicate of capitalists. Several years later, however, the brothers regained control and Charles was again elected president. He continued in this capacity until 1890, when he retired and spent the balance of his life in travel.

He was appointed a member of the board of education of Yonkers in 1886 and served continuously in that capacity for a great many years. A member of the committee on teachers and instruction, he devoted much time to visiting and inspecting schools. He was an extensive reader and owned a valuable library, including both classical and scientific works. On Aug. 28, 1861, he married Caroline F. Boyd of New York, who died in 1925. Otis' death occurred at Summerville, S. C. His second cousin and nurse, Margaret Otis Nesbit, claimed that he had married her in December 1926 and contested his will, in which he had left her $10,000 out of an estate of $1,250,000. After seven months of litigation, and the payment of gifts, annuities, and legal expenses, the estate amounted to $461,000, of which the widow received $130,000.

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); C. E. Allison, *The Hist. of Yonkers* (1896); *New York Times*, July 3, Sept. 19, 1927, Jan. 18, 1928; information as to certain facts from the Otis Elevator Co.; Patent Office records.]

C. W. M—n.

OTIS, ELISHA GRAVES (Aug. 3, 1811–Apr. 8, 1861), manufacturer, inventor, the son of Stephen and Phoebe (Glynn) Otis, was born on his father's farm at Halifax, Windham County, Vt. He was a descendant of John Otis who emigrated from England as early as 1631 and settled in Hingham, Mass. Stephen was for many years a justice of the peace in Halifax and also served four terms as a member of the state legislature. Young Otis received his education in his native town, where he remained until the age of nineteen, when he went to Troy, N. Y. Here for five years he carried on building operations. Forced by illness to give up this strenu-

ous work, he secured a trucking business and engaged in hauling goods between Troy and Brattleboro, Vt. After three years, having accumulated a little capital, he purchased some land on the Green River in Vermont, where he built a house and gristmill. The latter was not a success, however, and converting it into a sawmill, he began the manufacture of carriages and wagons, which business he continued rather successfully until about 1845.

Failing health again compelling him to change his occupation, he moved with his family to Albany, N. Y., where he found employment as master mechanic in a bedstead manufactory. In the course of his three years' employment there, he acquired a little capital and with this established a small machine shop, where he did general jobbing work and also constructed a turbine waterwheel of his own invention. The source of power for his shop was Patroon's Creek, and when in 1851 the city of Albany took over the creek as part of its water supply, Otis was forced out of business. Meanwhile, one of his former employers had established a bedstead factory at Bergen, N. J., and Otis moved there late in 1851 to become master mechanic in this factory. The following year his employers began the construction of a new factory at Yonkers, N. Y., and Otis was put in charge of its erection and the installation of the machinery. In the course of this work it became necessary to construct an elevator, and during its building Otis devised and incorporated a number of unique features. The most important of these was a safety appliance that operated automatically and prevented the elevator from falling in case the lifting chain or rope broke.

This elevator, the first with safety appliances, attracted the attention of a number of New York manufacturers with the result that in a short time Otis was given orders for three elevators. He thereupon gave up his position with the bedstead factory and established a shop of his own in Yonkers. The three elevators which he built and installed may be said to be the beginning of the elevator business. In 1854 he demonstrated his safety elevator at the American Institute Fair in New York by standing on a full-size model and deliberately cutting the rope after it had ascended to some height. From this time on, his business gradually expanded until at the time of his premature death he had a plant valued at $5,000 and employed from eight to ten men. Orders for elevators were, of course, not numerous and in addition to carrying on the work of improving them, he devised a number of other mechanical contrivances. On May 25, 1852, he received a

patent for railroad car trucks and brakes (No. 8,973), and on Oct. 20, 1857, one for a steam plow (No. 18,468). He also invented a bake oven, patented Aug. 24, 1858 (No. 21,271), but with the invention of his steam elevator, for which he received a patent (No. 124) on Jan. 15, 1861, he established the firm foundation for the elevator business upon which his sons so successfully built. Otis was twice married: first, on June 2, 1834, to Susan A. Houghton of Halifax, who died Feb. 25, 1842; and second, about 1845, to Mrs. Elizabeth A. Boyd. At the time of his death in Yonkers he was survived by his widow and two sons of his former marriage, one of whom was Charles R. Otis [*q.v.*].

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); C. E. Allison, *The Hist. of Yonkers* (1896); data from Otis Elevator Company, N. Y.; E. W. Byrn, *The Progress of Invention in the Nineteenth Century* (1900); Patent Office records.]

C. W. M—n.

OTIS, ELWELL STEPHEN (Mar. 25, 1838–Oct. 21, 1909), soldier, was born at Frederick, Md., the son of William and Mary Ann Catherine (Late) Otis, and a descendant of Richard Otis who was in Massachusetts as early as 1655. Elwell graduated at the University of Rochester in 1858 and at the Harvard Law School in 1861, and then began the practice of law in New York. On Sept. 13, 1862, however, he entered the military service as captain in the 140th New York Infantry. With this regiment he served in all the subsequent operations of the V (Warren's) Corps, Army of the Potomac. He became lieutenant-colonel Dec. 23, 1863, and after the battle of Spotsylvania commanded his regiment, replacing the colonel, who had been killed in action. On Oct. 1, 1864, during the operations about Petersburg, he was wounded in the head by a rifle bullet—a wound which occasioned him inconvenience for the rest of his life. He was given sick leave, but being still unfit for duty at its termination he was honorably mustered out on Jan. 24, 1865. For gallant conduct in action he received the brevet ranks of colonel and brigadier-general of volunteers.

In the reorganization of the regular army after the war, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel in the 22nd Infantry, with rank from July 28, 1866. He accepted the appointment on Feb. 7, 1867, and joined his regiment in Dakota. As additional recognition of his services at Spotsylvania, he received the brevet rank of colonel in the regular service. He remained with his regiment in the northwest until 1880, serving in various Indian campaigns, the most important of which was that of Little Big Horn in 1876 and 1877. In 1874 and 1875 he was assistant in-

spector-general of the Department of Dakota. The ideas which he formed during these years of frontier service are contained in his thoughtful book *The Indian Question,* published in New York in 1878.

On Feb. 8, 1880, he was promoted colonel of the 20th Infantry, and joined his new command on Mar. 31. In the autumn of the next year he moved with headquarters and two companies of his regiment to Fort Leavenworth, having been designated by General Sherman, commanding the army, to establish a school of application for young officers. Three companies from other infantry regiments, four troops of cavalry, and a light battery were added to his command. He organized the school, and remained as its commandant until June 1885. It rapidly established itself as the center of military education in the army. Under various official names, but always colloquially as "Leavenworth," it has had continuous existence, and, among the numerous special schools which have grown up in the army, it has retained its hegemony. In the fall of 1890 he left his regiment to become chief of the recruiting service. He never rejoined it, for on Nov. 28, 1893, he was promoted brigadier-general. He commanded the department of the Columbia until the spring of 1897, then went to the Department of Colorado.

On May 4, 1898, he was made major-general of volunteers, and ordered to San Francisco for duty with the force outfitting for the Philippines. The first expedition sailed on May 25; General Otis went in July, with the fourth. Upon arrival in Manila on Aug. 21 he was placed in command of the VIII Army Corps, comprising all the troops present, and on the 29th he relieved General Wesley Merritt [*q.v.*] in command of the Department of the Pacific and as military governor of the Philippines. The situation was complicated and delicate. The first necessity was to relieve the Spanish officials, both military and civil, throughout the islands, and to establish American government with the least possible confusion. The Spanish officials could not always be found; and when found, their affairs were often in confusion and an orderly transfer impossible. Meanwhile, Aguinaldo and his insurgent government were maneuvering for recognition and for military position in the outskirts of Manila. The American government was established, and, by the exercise of great diplomacy and self-restraint, peace with the insurgents was maintained until Feb. 4, 1899. On that night a Filipino soldier approached the American outposts, refusing to halt or to answer challenges. The American sentinel finally fired, and the fire

Otis

was instantly and actively taken up by the insurgent troops. The situation was tense in Manila for a few days, but the city was promptly cleared of insurgents, and American columns took the offensive in all directions. The operations thus begun continued until the insurgent forces were completely scattered, then gradually passed into occupation of the country, suppression of brigandage, and the establishment of civil government. General Otis continued in command until May 5, 1900, when he was relieved by Gen. Arthur MacArthur and returned to the United States. For his services in the Islands he received the brevet rank of major-general in the regular service, and on June 16, 1900, was promoted substantively to that grade. Until his retirement, Mar. 25, 1902, he commanded the Department of the Lakes; he then took up his residence in Rochester, where he remained until his death.

Otis was twice married: first, Oct. 5, 1870, to Louise, daughter of Judge Henry R. Seldon of Rochester, who died Apr. 24, 1875; second, Apr. 13, 1878, to Louise, daughter of Col. Alexander Hamilton Bowman and widow of Col. Miles McAlester. She, with three daughters, survived him. He was a man of medium height, stoutly built, erect, soldierly and distinguished in appearance. He was quiet in his tastes and manner, but forceful and never afraid of responsibility. His command in the Philippines was one continuous series of decisions which had to be made with no precedents to guide; Otis made them, as a rule, without reference to Washington. His legal instincts and training stood him in good stead, and the adaptations of Spanish law to the new conditions, worked out under his direction, still stand as the basis of Philippine administration.

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); *Official Army Reg.*, 1909; *Hist. Sketch . . . of the U. S. Infantry and Cavalry School, Fort Leavenworth, Kan.* (1895); *Report of Maj.-Gen. E. S. Otis, U. S. Volunteers, on Military Operations and Civil Affairs in the Philippine Islands* (1899); *Army and Navy Jour.*, Oct. 23, 1909; *Democrat and Chronicle* (Rochester, N. Y.), Oct. 21, 1909; information furnished by Mrs. Harry Knight Elston, Otis' eldest daughter, and by Maj.-Gen. Fred W. Sladen, formerly his aide-de-camp.] O. L. S., Jr.

OTIS, FESSENDEN NOTT (Mar. 6, 1825–May 24, 1900), physician, was born at Ballston Springs, Saratoga County, N. Y., the son of Oran Gray and Lucy (Kingman) Otis, and a descendant of John Otis, born in England, who settled in Hingham, Mass., about 1631. In 1843 Fessenden met with an accident because of which he was unable to continue systematic study. He took up landscape drawing and perspective,

which he taught successfully, publishing several textbooks on the subject. One of these, *Easy Lessons in Landscape,* had reached a fifth edition in 1856. Because of his attainments in this field Union College gave him the honorary degree of A.M. in 1851 and the following year he was elected to Phi Beta Kappa. In the meantime he had entered the medical department of the University of the City of New York (now New York University), taking as his preceptor Dr. John Whittaker, demonstrator of anatomy. In 1850 he transferred with Dr. Whittaker to the New York Medical College and graduated therefrom in 1852, receiving the gold medal for his graduation thesis. After an interneship at the Charity Hospital, which terminated in 1853, he served as ship surgeon in the Panama, and, later, in the Pacific service, and in 1861 published *Illustrated History of the Panama Railroad,* reissued in 1867 under the title, *History of the Panama Railroad.* He married, in 1859, Frances Helen Cooke of Catskill, N. Y.

In 1860 he began private practice in New York, where he served as police surgeon from 1861 to 1871 and president of the medical board of the police department from 1869 to 1871. He was lecturer (1862–71) and professor of genito-urinary and venereal diseases (1871–90) at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, surgeon to the Charity Hospital for ten years, and consultant to the Manhattan Eye and Ear Hospital and to the New York Skin and Cancer Hospital. He was a fellow of the New York Academy of Medicine, the New York State Medical Society, the British Medical Association, the American Association of Genito-Urinary Surgeons, and the New York Medical and Surgical Society.

His interest came to be concentrated chiefly in genito-urinary diseases. In 1878 he published *Stricture of the Male Urethra; Its Radical Cure* and from that time he was largely concerned with establishing the curability of urethral stricture, and in advocating certain principles which he regarded as fundamental to that cure. The state of medical science in his day confined the surgical attack upon the urinary organs to the urethra. Diseases of other organs were diagnosed as urethral and attacked as such. The doctrines of Otis were at first received unfavorably, but later won acceptance in the United States and had influence in England. The 1889 edition of *Stricture of the Male Urethra* is memorable for its audacious inclusion of a perfectly sound attack by Dr. H. B. Sands upon many items of the Otis theory and the brilliant discussion of this by the author. The theory is recognized today as fantastic yet in practice it provided a basis for attacking strictures of the male urethra more radically and more successfully than they had ever been attacked before. Today Otis is recognized as the first man to have cured stricture. His urethrotome and urethrameter are widely used. His theories are of historic interest and his memory still lives as that of a charming, enthusiastic, and honest gentleman. Among his publications, in addition to numerous contributions to medical journals, are *Classroom Lectures on Syphilis and the Genito-Urinary Diseases* (1878); *Contagion of Syphilis* (1878); *Clinical Lectures on the Physiological Pathology of Syphilis and Treatment of Syphilis . . .* (1881); *Practical Clinical Lessons on Syphilis and the Genito-Urinary Diseases* (1883). He died in New Orleans of a carbuncle during convalescence from double pneumonia.

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); John Shrady, *The Coll. of Physicians and Surgeons, N. Y., and Its Founders, Officers, Instructors, Benefactors, and Alumni, a Hist.* (n.d.), vol. I; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); Bransford Lewis, *Hist. of Urology* (1933), I, 74–75; *Medic. Record,* June 2, 23, 1900; *Daily Picayune* (New Orleans), May 25, 1900; alumni records of Union College.]

E. L. K.

OTIS, GEORGE ALEXANDER (Nov. 12, 1830–Feb. 23, 1881), military surgeon, editor of the surgical volumes of the *Medical and Surgical History of the War of the Rebellion,* was a descendant of John Otis of England, who settled in Hingham, Mass., about 1631. His great-grandfather was a physician of Scituate, Mass.; his grandfather was a Boston merchant with an interest in literature; his father, also named George Alexander Otis, was a lawyer, who in 1830 married Anna Maria Hickman, daughter of a Virginian. In 1831 the elder Otis died of tuberculosis, leaving an infant son of the same name. The boy attended the Boston Latin School, and later Fairfax Institute in Alexandria, Va., where he was prepared for college. Entering Princeton in 1846 as a sophomore, he received his bachelor's degree in 1849 and in 1851, that of M.A. At college he displayed a special fondness for literature.

He studied medicine under the preceptorship of Dr. F. H. Deane of Richmond, Va., where his mother resided. In the fall of 1849 he matriculated in the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, from which school he received the degree of M.D. in 1851. While still an undergraduate in medicine, Sept. 19, 1850, he married Pauline Clark Baury, the daughter of Alfred Louis Baury, an Episcopal clergyman of Newton Lower Falls., Mass.; they had two daughters. After his graduation, he went to Paris, expecting to specialize in ophthalmic surgery, but he

found general surgery more attractive. The rioting that marked Louis Napoleon's *coup d'état* in 1851 gave him opportunities to see military surgery and the work of such masters as Velpeau, Roux, and Jobert. He returned to the United States in 1852 and settled in Richmond. In April of the following year, he founded the *Virginia Medical and Surgical Journal,* and made it an excellent periodical, notable for its translations and abstracts from the French. Meanwhile he was not prospering, and in 1854 he removed to Springfield, Mass., from which place he acted as a corresponding editor of the *Journal* until the close of 1859. In Springfield he attended more closely to private practice, and was more successful.

Upon the outbreak of the Civil War he was appointed surgeon of the 27th Massachusetts Volunteers, and was mustered into the Federal service on Sept. 14, 1861. He accompanied the regiment South and served with it in Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina. For a few months, early in 1863, he was on detached service in the Department of the South. Here he attracted the notice of Surgeon Charles H. Crane, medical director, which notice later led to his assignment to the duty which proved to be his great work for the last sixteen years of his life. On July 28, 1863, he was granted twenty days' leave of absence because of his wife's serious illness. Reaching home on Aug. 1, he learned that she had died on July 24. Having no near relatives to whom to entrust the care of his small daughters, he placed them in a convent. Returning to his regiment, he served with it and on detached duty, including duty as a division surgeon, until May 1864, when he was granted sick leave. In June 1864 he resigned his commission as surgeon of the 27th Massachusetts and accepted an appointment as assistant surgeon, United States Volunteers. While in Washington he again met Surgeon Crane, at this time on duty in the surgeon-general's office, who secured his detail as assistant to Surgeon John H. Brinton, United States Volunteers, then curator of the Army Medical Museum and engaged in collecting materials for a surgical history of the war. In August Otis was promoted to the grade of surgeon of volunteers, and in the following October he was ordered to relieve Surgeon Brinton of his duties. These duties Otis continued to perform until his death. Immediately after the close of the war, under direction of Surgeon-General Barnes, Otis and Surgeon Woodward prepared *Reports on the Extent and Nature of the Materials Available for the Preparation of a Medical and Surgical History of the War* (1866). It presented an impressive array of data and attracted widespread and favorable notice.

In 1866 Otis accepted an appointment as assistant surgeon in the regular army. Meanwhile, he had devoted himself to the study and arrangement of the materials for the surgical history. His *Report on Amputations at the Hipjoint in Military Surgery* was published in 1867, his *Report on Excisions of the Head of the Femur for Gunshot Injury,* in 1869. These monographs met with general favor from the profession and exalted his reputation as a writer. The first surgical volume of *The Medical and Surgical History of the War of the Rebellion* appeared in 1870. It treated of the special wounds and injuries of the head, face, neck, spine, and chest. It was richly illustrated and contained interesting discussions of the vast amount of material dealt with. The second surgical volume was issued in 1876, and treated of the wounds and injuries of the abdomen, pelvis, back, and upper extremities. It was quite as interesting as the first volume and even larger. Both met with a most favorable reception at home and abroad. During the interval between the appearance of these volumes, and later, Otis wrote many articles, the most important being *A Report of Surgical Cases Treated in the Army of the United States from 1865 to 1871* (1871), *A Report on a Plan for Transporting Wounded Soldiers by Railway in Time of War* (1875); and *A Report on the Transport of Sick and Wounded by Pack Animals* (1877). These were all issued as circulars of the surgeon-general's office.

In 1877 he suffered a stroke of paralysis, and was an invalid thereafter until his death. He continued work, however, and at the time of his death, which his friend, Woodward, says came "as a welcome release from suffering" (*American Journal of the Medical Sciences,* July 1881, p. 293), was engaged on the third surgical volume, which was later completed under the editorship of Surgeon D. L. Huntington. Concerning Otis' methods of work, one of his assistants made the following comment: "It must be remembered that in order to achieve these various stupendous successes, the work was not all done by Dr. Otis alone. He had under his direct command at the time, in the old Ford's theater on 10th Street in Washington, a great body of skilled clerks, who did nothing beyond collecting, classifying, and arranging the records of the field and post hospitals of the Civil War; so this great mass of material was ever ready for the use of the medical officer in command of that division of the Museum" (*Medical Life,* May 1924, p. 192).

Otis

[W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); circulars and circular orders, surgeon general's office, 1881; *Trans. Am. Medic. Assoc.*, vol. XXXII (1881); *Medic. Life*, May 1924; *Am. Jour. of the Medic. Sciences*, July 1881; *British Medic. Jour.*, Aug. 13, 1881; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Feb. 23, 1881.] P. M. A.

OTIS, HARRISON GRAY (Oct. 8, 1765–Oct. 28, 1848), statesman, was born in Boston, the eldest child of Samuel Allyne and Elizabeth (Gray) Otis. His father was brother to James Otis and Mercy Otis Warren [*qq.v.*], and the youngest child of Col. James Otis of Barnstable, Mass. His mother was the daughter of Harrison Gray (1711–94), treasurer of the province of Massachusetts Bay, and a refugee Loyalist in the Revolution. "Harry" Otis, as he was always called by his friends, inherited the winning personality, charming manners, and full-blooded enjoyment of life that have characterized the Otis family for two hundred years, and which marked him off from the somewhat austere and inflexible type of New England political leader. He also developed a brilliant if somewhat facile intellect. His education at the Boston Latin School was interrupted by the siege of Boston. Entering Harvard College in 1779, he graduated first in the class of 1783 and in later years received the usual appointment to the Harvard corporation and board of overseers that are awarded to successful alumni. His father, a merchant who had speculated heavily during the war, went bankrupt after its close. Harry read law with Judge John Lowell [*q.v.*] and was admitted to the Boston bar in 1786. The same year he commanded a volunteer infantry company during Shays's Rebellion, but did not see action; and made a reputation as an orator when taking his master's degree at Harvard.

Otis quickly rose to a leading place at the Boston bar, earned a large income for the period, and acquired within ten years considerable property, largely by investments and speculations in Boston real estate, and Maine and Yazoo lands. On May 31, 1790, he married the daughter of a Boston merchant, Sally Foster (1770–1836), who bore him eleven children. A liberal in social and religious matters, he was a member of the Brattle Square Church (Unitarian). A Federalist, like almost all of his class in New England, Otis first served his party in 1794 by dissuading the Boston town meeting from supporting Madison's anti-British resolutions. The same year, and in 1795, he was elected a Boston representative to the General Court of Massachusetts. Another burst of eloquence in Boston town meeting on April 25, 1796, routed the local Jeffersonians who were attacking Jay's Treaty, and helped to make Boston the "headquarters of good principles" from the Federalist point of view. President Washington immediately appointed him United States district attorney for Massachusetts, an office which he resigned the same year in order to enter Congress, as the successor to Fisher Ames [*q.v.*].

In Congress (1797–1801) Otis established close relations with the South Carolina Federalists, John Rutledge, Jr., and Robert Goodloe Harper [*q.v.*], and supported the measures of President Adams' administration by speech and written word. He was foremost in creating the system of armed neutrality in 1797–98 to meet French aggression, which, like most of the Federalists, he considered a "Jacobin" offensive to undermine the federal government, and destroy the basis of American society. For that reason, he supported the Alien and Sedition Acts. An ardent admirer of Alexander Hamilton, he was preparing to urge a declaration of war against France in 1799, when President Adams accepted the conciliatory advances of the French government. In the factional fight that then broke out in the Federalist party Otis defended and supported the President. He and Mrs. Otis were leading figures in the "Republican Court" at Philadelphia, but found Washington little to their taste, and he refused to stand for reëlection to Congress in 1800.

Otis then settled down in Boston and became a leader in politics, in society, and at the bar. Charles Bulfinch [*q.v.*] was employed to design for him three of the most distinguished dwelling houses that are still standing in Boston. The first (now 141 Cambridge St.) was built in 1795–96 and sold in 1800, when a much larger one (85 Mount Vernon St.) was erected on Beacon Hill, the greater part of which Otis and a small syndicate had purchased, when a pasture, in order to develop as a residential district. The third Otis mansion (45 Beacon St.), built in 1806, became his home for the rest of his life; and he also maintained the country estate of "Oakley" in Watertown. The Otis houses were centers of Boston hospitality. J. Q. Adams wrote in 1816, "In the course of nearly thirty years that I have known him, and throughout the range of experience that I have had in that time, it has not fallen to my lot to meet a man more skilled in the useful art of entertaining his friends than Otis; . . . His Person while in Youth, his graceful Deportment, his sportive wit, his quick intelligence, his eloquent fluency, always made a strong impression upon my Mind; while his warm domestic Affection, his active Friendship, and his Generosity, always commanded my esteem" (Morison, *post*, I, 224).

In politics Otis was an active party manager, and the principal connecting link of the Federalist aristocracy with the Boston democracy; but he was never admitted to the inner councils of the "Essex Junto," who suspected insincerity in his polished manners, and possible defection in his support of President Adams. His few published orations do not justify the high reputation that he enjoyed as a public speaker. He was fluent, classical in language and diction, but ready in wit and allusion, the favorite orator of Boston town meeting in the generation between Samuel Adams and Daniel Webster. Otis served in the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1802–05 and in 1813–14 (speaker, 1803–05), and in the state Senate 1805–13 and 1814–17 (president, 1805–06, 1808–11). Although not privy to the Federalist secession plot of 1804, he became an active leader of the state-rights movement in his party at the time of Jefferson's Embargo, consistently opposed the War of 1812, and led the Hartford Convention of 1814. Otis proposed a New England convention as early as 1808, but used his influence against a similar movement during the war until the summer of 1814 when, in his opinion, a convention became necessary to control and moderate the exasperated feelings of New England, to concert maneuvers for interstate defence against Great Britain when the federal government was powerless to help, and to procure concessions to New England commercial interests from the other states. He was chairman of the joint committee of the General Court which reported in favor of the Hartford Convention in October 1814, drafted the call to the other New England States, and was chosen by the legislature second of the twelve Massachusetts delegates to Hartford. In the Convention itself (Dec. 15, 1814–Jan. 5, 1815) Otis served on all important committees, and drafted the final report (*The Proceedings of a Convention of Delegates . . . at Hartford,* 1815), which well expressed his caution, moderation, and averseness to force an issue with the federal government. Appointed by the Governor of Massachusetts on Jan. 31, 1815, one of a committee of three to negotiate with the authorities at Washington about using federal revenues for state defense, he proceeded to the capital, but was met on the way by news of the Peace of Ghent, which rendered his mission abortive and himself ridiculous.

Otis supported both the administrations of Monroe, and helped to inaugurate the "era of good feelings" by entertaining the President at Boston in 1817. He was elected that year to the United States Senate, after declining a Federalist nomination to the governorship of Massachusetts. But he effectually shut himself out from becoming a national figure by becoming the public champion of the Hartford Convention. After consulting his friends on the desirability of publishing the journal of the Convention in 1818, he published *Letters Developing the Character and Views of the Hartford Convention* (1820), and *Otis' Letters in Defense of the Hartford Convention . . .* (1824), engaged in an acrid pamphlet controversy on it with J. Q. Adams (*Correspondence between John Quincy Adams . . . and Several Citizens of Massachusetts Concerning the Charge of a Design to Dissolve the Union . . .* 1829), and frequently adverted to the subject in his public speeches. Every such effort stirred up feelings and charges which he was powerless to allay, and which, however unjustified in fact, he would have better allowed the public to forget. In the United States Senate he did not particularly distinguish himself, although he entered with great ardor into the effort to form a northern bloc against the extension of slavery to Missouri in 1820. The atmosphere of Washington seemed so unfriendly, and his efforts to obtain payment of the Massachusetts war claims were so constantly thwarted, that he resigned his seat in 1822 in order to run for mayor of Boston. On that occasion he was defeated. The Federalist nomination for governor of Massachusetts was given to him in 1823, upon the refusal of John Brooks [*q.v.*] to run again. The Republicans put up a strong candidate, Dr. William Eustis [*q.v.*], and as Otis unwisely made the Hartford Convention the principal issue of the campaign, he was badly defeated; that defeat marked the passing of the Federalist party in its last stronghold.

Otis never relinquished his hold of local public affairs. He was thrice elected mayor of Boston (1829–31), and he acquired some notoriety by refusing to interfere with William Lloyd Garrison. He greatly deprecated and publicly denounced the abolitionist movement, which he foretold would bring about a division of the Union, but refused to countenance any suppression of free speech on slavery. In the 1820's Otis became a considerable owner of manufacturing stock, and a convert to protection, although he had been instrumental in defeating the Baldwin tariff of 1820. After flirting with the Jacksonian party he became a stout Whig, and a supporter of Henry Clay. Always an enemy to democracy, he firmly believed that the country was going to the dogs. In 1848, in his eighty-third year, Otis published a pungent letter against the "fifteen-gallon" temperance law, and another (Boston

Atlas, Oct. 2, 1848), in all the verve of his youthful style, in favor of General Taylor. Old age and debility prostrated him, and before the presidential campaign was over, he died at his Boston residence on Oct. 28, 1848.

[S. E. Morison, *The Life and Letters of Harrison Gray Otis, Federalist, 1765–1848* (2 vols., 1913), with portraits and bibliography; *Pubs. Colonial Soc. of Mass.*, XIV (1913), 329–50; *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, XLVIII (1915), 343–51; LX (1927), 24–31, 324–30; W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); *Great Georgian Houses of America* (1933), pub. for the benefit of the Architect's Emergency Committee; obituary in *Boston Daily Advertiser,* Oct. 30, 1848.]

S. E. M.

OTIS, HARRISON GRAY (Feb. 10, 1837–July 30, 1917), soldier, journalist, was born at Marietta, Ohio, the youngest of the children of Stephen Otis and his second wife, Sarah Dyer Otis. He was descended from John Otis, an early colonist in Massachusetts. He received a brief common-school education and at the age of fourteen became a printer's apprentice. In 1856–57 he attended Wetherby's Academy at Lowell, Ohio, for five months, and afterward took a commercial course at Granger's College at Columbus. He resided for a time in Louisville, Ky., where he became an active member of the new Republican party and served as a delegate from that state to the national convention of 1860. He enlisted in the Union army at the beginning of the Civil War and served with the 12th and 23rd Ohio Infantry. He fought in fifteen engagements, was twice wounded, attained the rank of captain, and at the end of the war was brevetted major and lieutenant-colonel. After his discharge he returned to Marietta and for about eighteen months was publisher of a small local newspaper. In 1866–67 he was official reporter of the Ohio House of Representatives, then moved to Washington where he was foreman in the government printing office (1868–69). During this period he acted as Washington correspondent of the *Ohio State Journal,* and had immediate charge of the *Grand Army Journal.* In 1868 he was a delegate from the District of Columbia to the soldiers' and sailors' convention at Chicago which first nominated General Grant for the presidency. For about five years (1871–75) he was chief of a division in the Patent Office.

In 1876 Otis moved to California. He first settled in Santa Barbara and for four years conducted the Santa Barbara *Press.* From 1879 to 1881 he served as special agent of the Treasury Department to enforce the terms of the lease of the Alaska seal fisheries to the Alaska Commercial Company. In 1882 he moved to Los Angeles and purchased a substantial interest in the

Times, which about this time had absorbed the *Weekly Mirror*; by 1886 he had acquired full control. For the next thirty years, as president and active manager of the Times-Mirror Company, he was one of California's most picturesque, forceful, and noted journalists. Under his wise and aggressive leadership, the *Times* contributed in many ways to the growth and expansion of Southern California. In 1888, he was largely instrumental in organizing the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce. His journalistic career was temporarily interrupted by the Spanish-American War. At its outbreak, he was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers, and with his command saw active service in the Philippines. At the end of the war he was brevetted major-general "for meritorious conduct in action at Caloocán."

For many years the *Times* was widely known for its zealous championship of the open shop and for its bitter and unrelenting opposition to union labor. In revenge for its unsparing attacks, a group of union men dynamited the *Times* plant Oct. 1, 1910, destroying the building and killing twenty-one employees. The sensational trial (1911) of the McNamara brothers, charged with the crime, attracted nation-wide attention and came to a dramatic end by their confessions. (See *The New International Year Book,* 1911, pp. 138, 692–93). In 1914 Otis transferred his controlling interest to his daughter and son-in-law, Mr. and Mrs. Harry Chandler, but he continued in active direction of the *Times* until the day of his death. A contemporary journalist, speaking of his "most powerful personality" and "overwhelming individuality," says that "he permeated and dominated his entire establishment. He marched his martial way through every department—editorial, news, mechanical, and business. He knew every detail of every department better than the men at the head of them."

In addition to his newspaper interests, Otis became identified with a number of business ventures all of which proved highly profitable: he was president of the board of control of the Los Angeles Suburban Homes Company; a director of the California-Mexico Land and Cattle Company, and president of the Colorado River Land Company, its successor. Throughout his long life he retained his early interest in politics, taking an active part in all state campaigns in California. He was an uncompromising Republican and vehement opponent of the Progressive movement in that party. He was interested in international arbitration, and one of his last efforts was developing the details of his peace program,

outlined in his *Plan to End Wars* (1915), a synopsis of which had been published in the *Times* only a few days before his death.

On Sept. 11, 1859, Otis was married to Eliza A. Wetherby, who was actively associated with him in journalism until her death in 1904. Five children were born to them, one son and four daughters. He died at the home of his daughter, Mrs. Chandler, in Hollywood. His own city residence, "The Bivouac," had been given, the preceding Christmas, to Los Angeles County for a public art gallery; it is now known as the Otis Art Institute. Two daughters and thirteen grandchildren survived him.

[R. D. Hunt, *Cal. and Californians* (1926), vol. III; *Circular No. 17*, ser. of 1917, Cal. Commandery, Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion; *A Letter from Harrison Gray Otis* (pamphlet, 1917); J. M. Lee, *Hist. of Am. Journalism* (1923); *The Autobiog. of Lincoln Steffens* (1931), vol. II; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. . . . of the U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; *Evening Herald* (Los Angeles), July 30, 1917; *Examiner* (Los Angeles), *San Francisco Chronicle* and *Los Angeles Times*, July 31, 1917.] P. O. R.

OTIS, JAMES (Feb. 5, 1725–May 23, 1783), politician and publicist, came of a Glastonbury yeoman's family that emigrated to Massachusetts about 1631. His grandfather, John Otis (1657–1727), moved to Barnstable, commanded the militia of that county, served as judge for twenty-five years, and as councilor of the province for nineteen years. John's son James (1702–78), generally called Colonel Otis, a self-educated lawyer, married Mary Allyne of Pilgrim stock; James Otis, born in his grandfather's house at the Great Marshes, West Barnstable, was the eldest of their thirteen children. He was prepared for Harvard by the local minister, graduated with the class of 1743, studied law under Jeremiah Gridley [*q.v.*], was admitted in 1748 to the bar of Plymouth County, and two years later moved to Boston. In the Spring of 1755 he married Ruth, the well-dowered daughter of Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham, a Boston merchant. There were three children, a son and two daughters. Blackburn's portrait of Otis painted in 1755 shows a strong but plump and pleasant countenance, with shrewd, narrow-lidded eyes, giving no hint of the inner flame that eventually consumed him.

By painstaking study Otis became learned in the common, civil, and admiralty law; and his interest in the theory of law was coëval with his interest in the law itself. An enthusiastic student of the ancient classics, he published *The Rudiments of Latin Prosody . . . and the Principles of Harmony in Poetic and Prosaic Composition* (1760); another treatise, on Greek prosody, remained in manuscript and was destroyed with his other papers. He was also an avid reader of classical English literature, and of ancient and modern works on political theory. As a barrister his mind was supple, his apprehension quick, his pleading, brilliant and captivating; following the superior court circuit, he became known in all parts of the province. Thomas Hutchinson [*q.v.*] admitted "that he never knew fairer or more noble conduct in a pleader, than in Otis," who disdained technicalities and "defended his causes solely on their broad and substantial foundations" (Tudor, *post*, p. 36). Enemies later described him as a smugglers' attorney; actually, he acted as king's attorney in the absence of the attorney general in 1754 (Josiah Quincy, Jr., *Reports*, I, 402, note); and later, Governor Pownall appointed him king's advocate general of the vice-admiralty court at Boston.

In 1760, Pitt ordered the Sugar Act of 1733 to be strictly enforced. The royal customs collectors applied to the superior court of the province for writs of assistance, in order to help them in search of evidence of violation. Otis, in his official capacity, was expected to argue for the writs. Instead, he resigned his lucrative office and undertook, for Boston merchants, to oppose the issuance. Unfortunately the circumstances were such as to cause his motives to be questioned. Governor Shirley had promised to appoint Colonel Otis to the superior bench, and asked Francis Bernard [*q.v.*], who became governor in August 1760, to make the promise good. The elder Otis was now speaker of the House, and leader of the bar in the three southern counties; he had great influence over the rural members of the House, and both as member from Barnstable and as colonel of the county militia had cooperated loyally with the administration during the war. On Sept. 11, Chief Justice Stephen Sewall died. Colonel Otis at once bespoke Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson's influence to be appointed junior associate justice, supposing the chief justiceship filled from the court itself. James Otis' account (*Boston Gazette*, Apr. 4, 1763) differs from Hutchinson's, written many years later (*The History of the Province of Massachusetts Bay*, III, 86; P. O. Hutchinson, *The Diary and Letters of . . . Thomas Hutchinson*, I, 1883, pp. 65–66) as to what assurances were given; but Hutchinson was appointed chief justice Nov. 13, 1760. One rumor had it that James Otis then declared "that he would set the province in flames, if he perished by the fire"; another, that he declaimed from the Aeneid, "Flectere si nequeo superos, Acheronta

movebo!" Both stories were flatly denied by Otis; and, as John Adams pointed out, he had resigned an office far more lucrative than the one his father wanted; but the Loyalists always believed that his entire political course, and indeed the Revolution in Massachusetts, arose out of frustrated family ambition (Hutchinson, *History*, III, 88). Otis certainly felt that Hutchinson and Bernard had "double-crossed" him, and that they were endeavoring to accumulate the chief offices in the province.

In February 1761, Otis and Oxenbridge Thacher argued the illegality of writs of assistance before the full bench of the superior court, in the Council chamber at the Old State House, Boston. The picturesque scene was vividly described by John Adams in 1817 (*Works*, X, 247) to Otis' biographer: "Otis was a flame of fire! . . . he hurried away every thing before him. American independence was then and there born; the seeds of patriots and heroes were then and there sown . . ." But exactly what Otis said cannot now be recovered with any exactness. John Adams' notes taken on the occasion contain these significant sentences: "An act against the Constitution is void; an act against national equity is void; and if an act of Parliament should be made, in the very words of this petition, it would be void. The executive Courts must pass such acts into disuse. . . . Reason of the common law to control an act of Parliament" (*Works*, II, 522). The phrase, "Taxation without representation is tyranny," which was not germane to the issue, appears only in Adams' final expansion of his notes, made about 1820 (Tudor, *post*, p. 77). Otis and Thacher lost their case. But in 1766, Otis' position was sustained by Attorney General de Grey, who ruled that the act of Parliament in question did not authorize the issuance of writs of assistance in the Colonies (*Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings*, LVIII, 1925, pp. 22, 71–73). The significance of Otis' speech, however, lies in his harking back to the constitutional doctrines of Coke and Sir Matthew Hale, invoking a fundamental law embodying the principles of natural law, and superior to acts of Parliament; a doctrine upon which colonial publicists leant during the next twenty-five years, which was embodied in the federal and state constitutions, and which in its final form became the American doctrine of judicial supremacy.

In May 1761, two months after this speech, Otis was chosen one of the four representatives of Boston to the General Court, the provincial legislature. His father was the same year re-elected speaker of the House. Hutchinson (*History*, III, 166) credits the two with marshalling the old town and country parties into a popular bloc against the crown officials. In the session of 1761–62, they opposed the administration on sundry questions involving privilege, but promoted a grant of Mount Desert Island to Governor Bernard; this last was really a log-rolling device to get royal consent to establishing new townships in that part of Maine (W. O. Sawtelle, *Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts*, XXIV, 1923, pp. 203–04). Otis was moderately interested in other new townships, but not those.

In his first political pamphlet, *A Vindication of the Conduct of the House of Representatives* (1762), Otis made a brief exposition of the rights of Englishmen, and defended his party's policy vigorously. Scurrilously abused as "Bluster" in the *Boston Evening Post*, Feb. 14, 1763, he lashed back savagely in the *Boston Gazette* for Feb. 28, Mar. 28, and Apr. 4, 1763. Yet, in the midst of these altercations, he struck a high note of patriotism in a Faneuil Hall speech as moderator of Boston town meeting. He extolled the British Constitution and the King; declared "Every British Subject in America is, of Common Right, by Acts of Parliament, and by the laws of God and Nature, entitled to all the essential Privileges of Britons"; that attempts to stretch the royal prerogative were responsible for whatever unpleasantness had occurred; that "the true Interests of Great Britain and her Plantations are mutual; and what God in his Providence has united, let no man dare attempt to pull assunder" (*Boston Gazette*, Mar. 21, 1763). On other occasions, the vehemence of Otis' language distressed even his friends (John Adams, *Works*, II, 142–44); and this conduct was the more wondered at because James was normally good-humored and sociable, like all his family. Friends and foes alike agreed that from 1761 to 1769 Otis was the political leader of Massachusetts Bay, although Samuel Adams was probably more popular in Boston. Otis was also active in local organizations like the "Sons of Liberty," and the "Corkass," which met in Tom Dawes' attic and made up a slate of candidates and measures for the town meeting (*Boston Evening Post*, Mar. 14, 21, 1763).

An appearance of coalition between Otis and Hutchinson in 1763–64, as John Adams remembered (*Works* X, 295–96), "well nigh destroyed Otis' popularity and influence forever"; and when on Feb. 1, 1764, Governor Bernard appointed Colonel Otis chief justice of the common pleas and judge of probate in Barnstable Coun-

ty, many assumed that the family had sold out. Adams declares that only the revival of attacks saved Otis from defeat in the spring election; but an examination of the newspaper files proves that he was not opposed in 1764. The next year, when he was scurrilously attacked in the *Evening Post* (especially in Samuel Waterhouse's ditty "Jemmibullero," May 13, 1765, in which he is called, among other things, a "rackoon" and a "filthy scunk") he almost failed of reëlection. In the meantime, to counteract the new Sugar or Revenue Act of 1764, Otis wrote *The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted and Proved,* published at Boston July 23, 1764, and reprinted in London the next year. "One of the earliest and ablest pamphlets written from the natural law point of view" (C. H. McIlwain, *The American Revolution,* 1923, p. 153), the *Rights* is a closely reasoned statement of the constitutional position of the colonies in the single commonwealth that Otis believed the British Empire to be. In it were developed the principles recorded in his writs of assistance argument, principles to which Otis remained faithful while he kept his reason. The "wavering" or "retreat" often referred to in secondary accounts is found neither in his writings nor his recorded speeches.

The House adopted Otis' doctrine as its own, and on June 14, 1764, he was appointed chairman of a committee of the General Court to correspond with other colonial assemblies. The proposed Stamp Act soon overshadowed the Sugar Act. The Stamp Act Congress was summoned by a circular letter of invitation to the other colonies, adopted by the Massachusetts House on motion of Otis, who was appointed one of the three Massachusetts delegates. A few days afterward came the news of Patrick Henry's Virginia resolves, which Otis thought treasonable, but which temporarily took the leadership of public sentiment out of his hands, fomenting riots at Boston that summer. Otis much preferred "dutiful and loyal Addresses to his Majesty and his Parliament, who alone under God can extricate the Colonies from the painful Scenes of Tumult, Confusion, & Distress" (to Henry Sherburne, Nov. 26, 1765, Stamp Act Manuscripts, Library of Congress). The Congress met at New York on Oct. 7. On this, Otis' second and last journey outside New England, he met other colonial leaders such as Thomas McKean [*q.v.*], who later referred to him as "the boldest and best speaker" (John Adams, *Works,* X, 60), and John Dickinson [*q.v.*], who carried on a friendly correspondence with Otis for several years, and through him published the "Letters from a Farmer" and Liberty Song

Otis

in Boston (Mercy O. Warren, *History of the Rise, Progress and Termination of the American Revolution,* 1805, vol. I, 412–14; *Warren-Adams Letters,* I, 1917, pp. 3–7). Otis served on one of the three committees of the Congress, which adopted his constitutional doctrine, while rejecting colonial representation in Parliament, which Otis had proposed in his *Rights of the Colonies.* It seems probable that Otis' colleagues persuaded him that representation would not help the colonies, for he did not mention it thereafter (Hutchinson to Franklin, Jan. 6, 1766, Bancroft Manuscripts, New York Public Library).

Having failed to persuade Governor Bernard to let the courts function without stamped paper until the act was repealed, Otis and his lawyer friends had plenty of leisure. In the "Monday Night Club" of politicians, Otis was "fiery and feverous; his imagination flames, his passions blaze" (John Adams, *Works,* II, 162–63). But he also belonged to the "Sodalitas," a law club that met under Gridley's presidency to study and discuss ancient law; and John Rowe notes Otis' presence at sundry private dinners, public banquets, coffee-house reunions, tea parties, and country-house assemblies (Anne R. Cunningham, *Letters and Diary of John Rowe,* 1903). In the same year, he published three pamphlets. One of these, *Considerations on behalf of the Colonists, in a Letter to a Noble Lord,* was a reply to Soame Jenyns' defence of the Stamp Act. *A Vindication of the British Colonies,* and *Brief Remarks on the Defence of the Halifax Libel on the British-American Colonies,* were replies to Martin Howard's *Letter from a Gentleman at Halifax,* and its sequel. The first, dated Sept. 4, 1765, was a lively discussion of "virtual" representation. Otis declared that Jenyns' reasoning could as well prove the whole globe, as America, represented in the House of Commons; if Manchester and Birmingham were not represented, they ought to be. His greatest indignation was reserved for Howard's statement that the admission of colonial representation would defile the "purity" and destroy the "beauty and symmetry" of the House of Commons (*Vindication,* p. 28). He challenged the justice of suppressing colonial manufactures (*Considerations,* p. 22), and pointed out the exploitation inherent in the imperial system (pp. 29–30). But he still stoutly maintained that Parliament had "an undoubted power, authority, and jurisdiction, over the whole" (*Ibid.,* pp. 9, 13, 36). In *Brief Remarks,* he made a furious attack on his critics.

Otis' pamphlets probably had more influence

in America and England, before 1774, than those of any other American except John Dickinson. They laid a broad basis for American political theory on natural law. Otis avoided the two impasses into which several of his contemporaries stepped: the distinction between external and internal taxation, and the sanctity of colonial charters. But in advocating colonial representation, he took a false turning himself. He had not the foresight to perceive a federal solution: an *imperium in imperio* was to him "the greatest of all political solicisms" (*Vindication,* p. 18). Nor did he face the choice between submission and revolution. If Parliament's sovereign authority was not recognized "the colonies would be independent, which none but rebels, fools, or madmen, will contend for . . . Were these colonies left to themselves, to-morrow, America would be a meer shambles of blood and confusion . . ." (*Ibid.,* pp. 21–22). Neither in theory nor in tastes was Otis a democrat; his often vituperative language arose from his own hot passions, not from any catering to popularity.

At the spring election of 1766, Samuel Adams, whose qualities were needed to temper Otis' rashness and turbulence, and the Hampshire Cato, Joseph Hawley [*q.v.*], were elected with him to the General Court. During the next two years, this triumvirate directed the majority in the House of Representatives. Otis generally prepared the rough draft of the state papers that issued from that body, while Adams did the smoothing and revision. When the General Court met, it refused to reëlect Chief Justice Hutchinson and his Oliver associates to the Council, and James Otis was chosen speaker of the House. Governor Bernard negatived both this election and that of six councilors, including Colonel Otis. During the next two years, no opportunity was neglected by the triumvirate to put the Governor and Lieutenant-Governor in a hole; and Otis spent so much time on public affairs that his law practice was almost completely neglected.

When news of the Townshend Act arrived, Otis was prompt to denounce an incitement to violence which had been posted on the Boston "liberty tree." Presiding over a town meeting that very day (Nov. 20, 1767), he declared that "no possible circumstances" could justify "tumults and disorders, either to our consciences before God, or legally before men" (Richard Frothingham, *Life and Times of Joseph Warren,* 1865, pp. 38–39, notes). Otis also presided over the town meeting on Oct. 28 that launched the non-importation movement. The Massachusetts circular letter, adopted by the House on Feb. 11, 1768, was the joint product of Otis and Samuel Adams (John Adams, *Works,* X, 367). They triumphed when the House voted not to rescind 92 to 17, on June 30, 1768. This spirited defiance did more to unite the colonies than any measure since the Stamp Act. The Massachusetts "92" became another such talisman as No. 45 of the *North Briton.*

The sloop *Liberty* case, the news that Otis and Adams were threatened with trial for treason in England, and that troops were being sent to Boston, followed in quick succession. Yet Otis still continued to oppose direct action. He organized and moderated the town meeting of Sept. 12–13, 1768, which quashed proposals of resistance to the landing of troops, and called a convention at Faneuil Hall ten days later. Otis, to the dismay of Adams, refused at first to take his seat in this convention, kept Adams quiet when he did appear, and doubtless showed his hand in the mild resolutions that the convention passed (W. V. Wells, *The Life and Public Services of Samuel Adams,* 1865, vol. I, 216–18; Hutchinson, *History,* III, 205–06). Considering his repeated efforts to prevent violence, it is not surprising that Otis' irritable nature was stirred to a frenzy of resentment when the publication of some intercepted letters showed that Bernard, and the commissioners of the customs, had been writing home that he was a malignant incendiary. On Sept. 4, 1769, he posted these officials in the *Boston Gazette* as liars. The next evening he entered the British Coffee House at the site of 60 State St., where John Robinson and other crown officers were seated. A brawl ensued in which Robinson struck Otis a severe blow on the head with a cutlass or hanger. Otis was finally rescued by outsiders. He sued Robinson and obtained a verdict of £2000 damages; Governor Hutchinson, who was delighted at what he termed "a very decent drubbing," was planning "to steer this whole business" so as to get Robinson off and reward him with promotion, when Otis, on receiving an apology from Robinson's attorney, released all damages beyond court costs, lawyers' fees, and physicians' bills, which amounted to £112 10*s* 8*d* (Tudor, *post,* pp. 360–62, 503–06; *Proceedings Massachusetts Historical Society,* XLVII, 1914, p. 209; *Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts,* XI, 1910, pp. 5–7; Massachusetts Archives, XXV, 437–38, XXVI, 375; papers of the case in Suffolk County Court Files, 102, 135).

Robinson's assault finished Otis' career. It is true that for several years his conduct at times had given people cause to doubt his sanity (*Evening Post,* Feb. 14, 1763, p. 2; *Proceedings Mas-*

sachusetts Historical Society, IV, 1870, p. 53), and an offensive garrulity had been growing on him. His family life was unhappy: Mrs. Otis, "beautiful, placid and formal" (Tudor, p. 20) was a high Tory. But the crack on his head permanently unhinged his reason. "He rambles and wanders like a ship without a helm," noted John Adams in January 1770 (*Works,* II, 226); in February he was "raving mad," broke windows in the Old State House, fired guns from his window (John Rowe, *Diary,* pp. 199, 201), called on Governor Hutchinson, and craved his protection on the king's highway. He did not stand for election in 1770, but seemed so completely restored in 1771 as to be chosen once more, and for the last time; his course at that session was conciliatory. But by September he was as distracted as ever, and began to drink heavily (Massachusetts Archives, XXVII, 228, 246–47); and in December 1771 the probate court, on representation that James Otis was *non compos mentis,* appointed his younger brother Samuel A. Otis guardian (*American Law Review,* July 1869, p. 664). He enjoyed several lucid intervals later; but none of his political opinions recorded subsequent to his injury are important.

After 1771 Otis led a quiet life, well cared for by friends and relatives. On June 17, 1775, he borrowed a gun, and rushed among the flying bullets on Bunker Hill, but returned unscathed (*Proceedings Massachusetts Historical Society,* XII, 1873, p. 69). Only fire from heaven could release his fiery soul; death came, as he had always wished it to come, by a stroke of lightning, as he was watching a summer thunderstorm in the Isaac Osgood farmhouse at Andover, on May 23, 1783.

[In addition to the pamphlets mentioned in the text, Otis probably wrote the political introduction to the 1764 edition of William Wood's *New England's Prospect* (see *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* VI, 1863, p. 250). All the political pamphlets are reprinted with an introduction by C. F. Mullett in *The Univ. of Mo. Studies,* IV, nos. 3, 4, July, Oct. 1929. The best discussion of their doctrine is in B. F. Wright, Jr., *American Interpretations of Natural Law* (1931). For bibliography of various versions of the writs of assistance speech, see Edward Channing, *A Hist. of the U. S.,* III (1912), 5, notes. Many cases in which Otis was an attorney are reported, and the legality of writs of assistance discussed by Horace Gray, with illustrative documents, in Josiah Quincy, Jr., *Reports of Cases . . . in the Superior Court of Judicature of the Province of Mass. Bay,* I (1865), pp. 395–540; but see an opinion by Attorney General de Grey, printed by G. G. Wolkins in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* LVIII (1925), 71–73. Otis contributed many articles, signed and unsigned, to the *Boston Gazette* between 1761 and 1769; answers or attacks may be found in the *Boston Evening Post.* He destroyed all his papers before his death, and as he corresponded little, very few of his letters are in existence. The Otis MSS. and Otis Papers at the Mass. Hist. Soc. are mainly law papers of his father, and

contain but a few personal letters. John Adams' "Diary," and his letters to William Tudor about Otis are in C. F. Adams, ed., *The Works of John Adams,* vols. II (1850) and X (1856). Thomas Hutchinson, as he once promised Otis (Mass. Archives, XXVI, 86), was "revenged of him" in *The Hist. of the Province of Mass. Bay,* III (1828); the more vituperative and gossipy "Origin and Progress of the American Rebellion" written by Peter Oliver in 1781 (Egerton MSS., Br. Museum; copies in Mass. Hist. Soc. and Lib. of Cong.) is amusing, but adds little save invective to Hutchinson. Many of the latter's contemporary comments in his correspondence (Mass. Archives, XXV–XXVI; Bancroft MSS., N. Y. Public Lib.), are printed in J. K. Hosmer, *The Life of Thomas Hutchinson* (1896). Other unfavorable comments may be found in the Bernard and Chalmers Papers among the Sparks MSS. in the Harvard College Lib.

William Tudor, *The Life of James Otis* (1823), is the only biography, and J. H. Ellis, "James Otis," *Am. Law Rev.,* July 1869, pp. 641–65, the only article, worth mentioning. Richard Frothingham, *The Rise of the Republic* (1st ed., 1872), and J. G. Palfrey, *Hist. of New England,* vol. V (1890), contain the fullest account of Massachusetts politics in the period when Otis was active. The portraits of Otis and his wife, painted in 1755 by Joseph Blackburn, are owned by Mrs. Charles F. Russell, and usually exhibited in the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. The best reproductions are in the Catalogue entitled *Massachusetts Bay Colony Tercentenary Loan Exhibition of One Hundred Colonial Portraits,* published by that Museum in 1930. See also W. A. Otis, *A Geneal. and Hist. Memoir of the Otis Family in America* (1924); W. H. Whitmore, *A Mass. Civil List for the Colonial and Provincial Periods* (1870).]

S. E. M.

OTT, ISAAC (Nov. 30, 1847–Jan. 1, 1916), physician and writer, was born in Northampton County, Pa., the son of Jacob and Sarah Ann LaBarre Ott. He studied at Lafayette College, Easton, Pa., receiving his degree of A.B. in 1867, and the next year entered as a medical student at the University of Pennsylvania in Philadelphia, where he received the degree of M.D. in 1869. He began the practice of medicine at Easton, Pa., and always considered that place his home although he was frequently called away by the numerous positions that he held. He was resident physician of St. Mary's Hospital in Philadelphia during the year 1871. After a few years of practical experience he went abroad for further study and attended lectures at the Universities of Leipzig, Würzburg, and Berlin. He was for a time lecturer in physiology at the University of Pennsylvania (1878–79) and in 1879 a fellow in the biology department of John Hopkins University in Baltimore. In 1894 he became professor of physiology in the Medico-Chirurgical College in Philadelphia, and during 1895–96 was dean of the College but resigned that office, preferring to devote more time to his practice, teaching, research, and writing. In addition to his practice in Easton and his teaching in Philadelphia, Ott was for many years consulting neurologist to the Pennsylvania Asylum in Norristown. He resigned from the faculty of the Medico-Chirurgical College two years be-

fore his death but continued to be director of laboratories. His death, caused by pneumonia, occurred at his home in Easton.

Ott was not only a successful practitioner and teacher but he found time for extensive researches. He studied the actions of medicines on the human body and the effects of certain drugs, particularly the alkaloids which act as depressants or stimulants, such as cocain, veratria, gelsemium, lobelina, lycoctonia, and thebain. Under the general title of "Contributions to the Physiology and Pathology of the Nervous System" he published at different times a series of twenty neurological papers, among them an account of the retrograde and lateral movements with hypnotism; and a report of the effect of section of the spinal cord on the excretion of carbonic acid. His later researches were devoted to the endocrine secretions and the thermogenetic centers of the brain. He is credited with the discovery of the hormone of milk secretion. Also he was the first scientist to demonstrate that injury to the corpus striatum causes a rise in heat production and body temperature. His papers on his thermogenetic researches include: *A New Function of the Optic Thalami* (1879), in collaboration with G. B. W. Field; *The Heat-Centre in the Brain* (1887); *The Four Cerebral Heat-Centres* (1887), in collaboration with W. S. Carter; *The Thermo-Inhibitory Apparatus* (1887), with Charles Colmar; and *Thermogenetic Apparatus: Its Relation to Atropine* (1887), also with Charles Colmar; and *The Heat-Centres of the Cortex Cerebri and Pons Varolii.* His other writings include: *Action of Medicines* (1878); *Modern Antipyretics* (1891); *Textbook of Physiology* (1904); and *Internal Secretions* (1910). He was a member of the American Physiological Society; the American Neurological Society; German Medical Society of New York; Philadelphia Neurological Society; and the American Society of Naturalists. He was survived by his widow, Katherine (Wykoff) Ott, whom he had married on Oct. 14, 1886.

[Joseph McFarland, memoir in the *Jour. of Nervous and Mental Disease*, Mar. 1916; *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. II (1914); *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Jan. 1916; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Phila. Evening Bull.*, Jan. 1, 1916; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Jan. 2, 1916.] F. E. W.

OTTASSITE [See Outacity, fl. 1756–1777].

OTTENDORFER, ANNA BEHR UHL (Feb. 13, 1815–Apr. 1, 1884), philanthropist and proprietor of the *New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung*, was the daughter of Eduard Behr, a merchant in Würzburg, Germany. She was born in

that city. Living in an age when higher education for women was generally frowned upon, she enjoyed only a common-school training, though showing an early aptitude for learning. Of the first years of her life little else is known. In 1836 or 1837, in company with a relative, she left Germany for the United States, determined to make her own way in the growing republic of the West. The first year she spent with a brother in Niagara County, N. Y. In 1838 she made the acquaintance of a young printer, Jacob Uhl, whom she married in New York City the same year. The early years of their married life were marked by struggle and penury. In 1844 they purchased, on the instalment plan, the German job-printing and book-and-newspaper publishing business of Julius Bötticher in New York. The *New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung* was printed in this office. By dint of the hard work and thriftiness of the two owners, the enterprise proved so successful that they were able the next year to purchase the *Staats-Zeitung*, then a small weekly. Anna Uhl did her full share as compositor, secretary, and general manager. The paper developed first into a tri-weekly, then into a daily publication. In 1852 Uhl died, and the widow, displaying remarkable perseverance and executive ability, not only cared for her six small children but also continued to attend to the constantly growing business of her publishing concern and of the *Staats-Zeitung* in particular. From 1852 to 1859 she was the sole manager, declining several flattering offers of purchase. On July 23, 1859, she was married to her assistant, Oswald Ottendorfer [*q.v.*].

After this marriage, which did not cause Mrs. Ottendorfer to discontinue her managerial activities, the newspaper enjoyed even greater success, financially and professionally, than before. Daily she would receive in her private offices a host of visitors, many of whom came to solicit her philanthropic cooperation. In accordance with her means Mrs. Ottendorfer had always engaged in charitable work; in her declining years, when she had amassed a considerable fortune, she did so extensively. Many of her philanthropies, of considerable scope for their day, were privately bestowed and have never been published. In 1875 she founded the Isabella Home for Aged Women in Astoria, Long Island, named in memory of her deceased daughter. In 1881, she gave, in memory of her deceased son, the Hermann Uhl Memorial Fund for German-American educational purposes in New York City and Milwaukee. The next year she donated a large sum for the women's pavilion of the German Hospital in New York City, and

soon after another for the German Dispensary on Second Avenue, also in New York City. Institutions in Brooklyn, N. Y., Newark and Elizabeth, N. J., and Meriden, Conn., also benefited by her charities. She gave liberally, too, for providing means for the study of the German language in New York and elsewhere. In 1883 she was decorated by the Empress Augusta of Germany for her charitable endeavors. Further sums for philanthropic purposes were stipulated in her last will. Of her six children, all by her first marriage, a son and three daughters survived her.

[See: *Harper's Bazar*, May 3, 1884; H. A. Rattermann, *Anna Ottendorfer, Eine deutsch-amerikanische Philanthropin* (1885), reprinted from *Der Deutsche Pionier*, Nov. 1884; A. B. Faust, *The German Element in the U. S.* (1927), vol. II; *Zur Erinnerung an Anna Ottendorfer* (1884); *Sonntagsblatt der New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung*, Apr. 6, 1884.] E. H. Z.

OTTENDORFER, OSWALD (Feb. 26, 1826–Dec. 15, 1900), philanthropist and proprietor of the *New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung*, was the son of Vincenz and Catharine (Neumeister) Ottendorfer. He was born, according to one source, on Feb. 14, but in all likelihood the later date is correct in conformity to the Gregorian calendar, while the earlier date is based upon Old-Style computation. The youngest of six children, he was born in the town of Zwittau in Moravia, then a province of Austria-Hungary, now in Czechoslovakia. His father was a clothmaker in fair circumstances. After attending the school of his native town and the gymnasia of Leitomischl and Brünn, he entered the University of Vienna in 1846 and studied chiefly philosophy. The next year he emigrated to Prague, learning the Czech language and taking up the study of law at the university. When in 1848 liberal uprisings occurred sporadically in various sections of the German-speaking countries, Ottendorfer took an active part, first in the revolt against the Metternich government in Vienna, then in the Schleswig-Holstein war against Denmark, and finally in the revolutions in Saxony and Baden. From 1849 to 1850 he continued his university studies in Heidelberg but, under the constant menace of arrest by the victorious forces of reaction, decided to flee first to Switzerland, then to the United States. He embarked for America late in September 1850 and arrived in New York on Oct. 26. After many bitter struggles he secured employment in the counting-room of the *New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung* in 1851. The next year, when the proprietor of this newspaper, Jacob Uhl, died, Ottendorfer became the assistant of the widow, Anna (Behr) Uhl (see Ottendorfer, Anna Behr Uhl), in its management. In 1858 he was made editor; the following year, on July 23, he married Mrs. Uhl.

Under his management the *Staats-Zeitung* flourished, developing from an insignificant foreign-language newspaper into an influential, widely read metropolitan organ. A reform Democrat, Ottendorfer was active in anti-Tammany movements in New York and through his editorial and other public utterances became a force even in national politics. He served as alderman and supervisor in New York City from 1872 to 1874 and was a candidate for mayor in 1874. He gave $300,000 for the erection and endowment of an educational institution in his native town (Die Ottendorfer'sche Freie Volks-Bibliothek) and founded a home for aged and indigent men on Long Island. The Ottendorfer Branch of the New York Public Library in New York was also established by him. He was universally respected as a man of substantial character, stanch liberalism, and great social-mindedness. The Ottendorfer Memorial Fellowship awarded annually to an American student of the German language and literature for study abroad was created in his memory.

[See *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1900; *Zur Erinnerung an Oswald Ottendorfer* (1900), published by the *Staats-Zeitung*; and *Sonntagsblatt der New-Yorker Staats-Zeitung*, Dec. 16, 1900.] E. H. Z.

OTTERBEIN, PHILIP WILLIAM (June 3, 1726–Nov. 17, 1813), German Reformed clergyman, founder of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ, was born at Dillenburg, in what is now the Prussian administrative district of Wiesbaden, the fourth of the ten children of Johann Daniel and Wilhelmina Henrietta (Hoerlen) Otterbein, and the elder of a pair of twins. His father, grandfather, and five brothers were ministers; his one sister to live to maturity became a minister's wife. He was educated at the Reformed seminary at Herborn, where the Calvinistic theological atmosphere was mollified somewhat by pietistic strains in one or two of the professors. On June 13, 1749, he was ordained as vicar of Ockersdorf in succession to his brother. His evangelical zeal and strictness were disliked by his ecclesiastical superiors, so that when Michael Schlatter [*q.v.*] came to Herborn to recruit missionaries for work in Pennsylvania, Otterbein was encouraged to volunteer. He did, and arrived at New York in Schlatter's company July 28, 1752. Till his death sixty-one years later he was the active pastor of various German Reformed congregations: at Lancaster, Pa., 1752–58; Tulpehocken, 1758–60; Frederick, Md., 1760–65; York, Pa., 1765–74; and of the

Second Evangelical Reformed Church, Baltimore, 1774–1813. On Apr. 19, 1762, he married Susan Le Roy of Lancaster, whose sister a few years later married John William Hendel [*q.v.*]. His wife's death Apr. 22, 1768, was a grievous affliction to him, and he never remarried. In 1770–71 he made a long-deferred visit to his relatives in Germany. To the end of his life he was a member in good standing of the German Reformed Coetus of Pennsylvania and was regarded in fact as one of its noblest supports. In turn he seems to have prized his relation to the Coetus and always considered himself a minister of the Reformed Church. He was, nevertheless, the instigator of a non-sectarian religious movement, to which, shortly before his death, he gave the status of an independent denomination.

At Lancaster, which was a frontier community when he came to it, Otterbein underwent a period of great emotional stress, accompanied by a clarifying and deepening of his religious convictions such as is usually designated by the term "conversion." Thereafter he devoted himself with heroic energy to religious work and tried particularly to minister to the spiritual needs of the unchurched Germans who were scattered everywhere through the backwoods of Pennsylvania and Maryland. At Whitsuntide one year, probably 1768, he had his famous meeting with Martin Boehm [*q.v.*] at Isaac Long's farm some six miles northeast of Lancaster, and after that the two men worked together cordially. By 1772 he was organizing classes on the Wesleyan model and appointing class leaders. On May 4, 1774, the day he began his duties in Baltimore, he met Francis Asbury [*q.v.*], who was ever after his friend and admirer. Otterbein took part in Asbury's consecration Dec. 27, 1784, to the office of superintendent of the Methodists in America. In 1789, at a meeting at Otterbein's parsonage, Otterbein, Boehm, and six lay evangelists formed an organization of a sort and adopted a confession of faith, which was evidently the work of Otterbein himself. During all these years he was making frequent trips through Maryland and Pennsylvania and even into Virginia. In 1800 the first annual conference of the United Brethren was held near Frederick, Md. Otterbein was seriously ill in 1805 and thereafter traveled never more than a few miles from Baltimore, and the movement of which he had been the leader began to fall into the hands of younger men. Many of them by this time were administering the sacraments and conducting themselves in general as if they were ordained ministers. Seven weeks before his death Otterbein was persuaded to ordain three of them, Christian Newcomer, Joseph Hoffman, and Frederick Schaffer. Why he had declined for so many years to take this step, and what the condition of his mind was when finally he did take it, were for two generations the subject of violent controversy, and to these questions no decisive answer can be given. By conferring ordination upon them, Otterbein established the United Brethren as, according to Protestant views, a branch of the universal church.

He was a man of lofty character, and in personal culture a strange contrast to his rude associates, all of whom were products of their frontier environment. He left almost no letters or papers, and his only known publication is *Die heilbringende Menschwerdung und der herrliche Sieg Jesu Christi* (Germantown, Pa., 1763). He made a temperate use of tobacco and alcohol, and raised money to buy bells for his church by organizing a lottery, but he opposed the use of organs, patronage of the theatre, and membership in the Masonic order.

[Henry Harbaugh, *The Fathers of the German Reformed Church*, vol. II (Lancaster, Pa., 1857); A. W. Drury, *The Life of Rev. Philip Wm. Otterbein* (Dayton, Ohio, 1884), rev. and incorp. in his *Hist. of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ* (Dayton, 1924); W. J. Hinke, "Philip Wm. Otterbein and the Reformed Church," *Presbyt. and Reformed Rev.*, July 1901; *Minutes and Letters . . . of the German Reformed Congregations in Pa., 1747–92* (1903).] G. H. G.

OTTO, BODO (1711–June 12, 1787), one of the more influential German settlers of Pennsylvania during the first half of the eighteenth century, senior surgeon of the Continental Army, was born in Hanover, Germany. His father was Christopher Otto, controller of the district of Schartzfels, and his mother Maria Magdalena Nienecken. He was named for his baptismal sponsor, Privy Councilor Baron Bodo von Oberg. He received an excellent scholastic education with a view to entering the profession of medicine, served an apprenticeship with physicians and surgeons in Harzburg, Hildesheim, and Hamburg, was intern for a time at the Lazaretto at Hamburg, and served as surgeon in the Duke of Celle's Dragoons. In 1736 he was married to Elizabeth Sanchen and settled in Luneburg where he was accepted as a member of the "College of Surgeons" and became surgeon to the prisoners and invalids in the fortress of Kalkberg. After the death of his first wife he was married in 1742 to Catharina Dorothea Dahncken. Three sons by this marriage became surgeons and later assisted their father in hospital service during the American Revolution. In 1749 he was appointed chief surgeon for the district of Schartzfels. This position he held until 1755, when, with his family, he emigrated to America on the *Neptune*

from Rotterdam. He opened an office in Philadelphia late in 1755, but in 1760 he removed to New Jersey, where his practice is said to have extended over Gloucester, Salem, and Cumberland counties. After the death of his second wife he returned in 1766 to Philadelphia, and later in the same year married Maria Margaretha Paris (J. B. Linn, *Record of Pennsylvania Marriages Prior to 1810,* II, 1880, p. 339), who survived him.

Otto was a stanch Lutheran and through the influence of the Patriarch Henry Melchior Mühlenberg, a lifelong friend, removed to Reading, Pa., in 1773. His influence amongst his countrymen of German descent was great and he became a leader in the patriot cause, serving upon the Berks County Committee of Safety and as delegate to the Pennsylvania Provincial Congress of 1776. Later in 1776 he was appointed senior surgeon of the Middle Division of the Continental hospitals and labored in New Jersey with the wounded from the battle of Long Island. On Feb. 17, 1777, Congress ordered him to Trenton to establish a military hospital for the treatment of smallpox. He remained until September 1777 when he was assigned to a hospital in Bethlehem, Pa. In the spring of 1778 he was placed in charge of the hospitals at Yellow Springs where many of the sick from the camp at Valley Forge were treated. Upon the reorganization of the medical and hospital departments by Congress in 1780, Otto was one of the fifteen physicians selected for the hospital department and was among the last to leave the service Feb. 1, 1782. At the time of his retirement from the army Dr. John Cochran, the director-general, wrote a testimonial commenting upon Otto's humanity and the success of his medical practice. After the war he reopened his Philadelphia office but soon returned to Reading. He had been elected a member of the American Philosophical Society in 1769 and had for many years been an active member of the Pennsylvania German Society. He died in 1787 and is buried in the churchyard of Trinity Lutheran Church of Reading, where a shaft has been erected to his memory by the D.A.R. A sword and some of his surgical instruments are in the collection of the Historical Society of Berks County.

[Most of the information about Bodo Otto is contained in unprinted materials: in the archives of the Pa. German Soc., the Hist. Soc. of Berks County, the Hist. Soc. of Pa., the records of the Adj.-Gen. in Washington, and in documents in the possession of a descendant, James E. Gibson of Phila.] J. B. N.

OTTO, JOHN CONRAD (Mar. 15, 1774–June 26, 1844), physician, was born near Woodbury, N. J., the son of Dr. Bodo and Catherina (Schweighauser) Otto and the grandson of Bodo Otto [*q.v.*]. His mother was the daughter of a Swiss immigrant. Young Otto was sent to the College of New Jersey (later Princeton) and graduated in 1792 at the age of eighteen. He entered the office of Benjamin Rush the next spring and became Rush's favorite pupil and close friend until the latter's death. In 1796 he was graduated from the University of Pennsylvania; his graduation thesis was a study on epilepsy. He returned to the subject in later life when in 1828 he thought he had found a successful cure for the disease ("Case of Epilepsy, Successfully Treated," *North American Medical and Surgical Journal,* July 1828). Settling as a practitioner in Philadelphia, he quickly had opportunity to study yellow fever, which appeared in epidemic proportions in 1797, 1798, 1799, 1802, 1803 and 1805. In the second of these epidemics, Otto was himself attacked. In the same year, 1798, he was elected a physician to the Philadelphia Dispensary, a position that he held for five years. He was also for many years physician both to the Orphan Asylum and the Magdalen Asylum.

Otto's most important contribution to medical science was his original description of hemophilia in the *Medical Repository* (vol. VI, 1803, p. 3) under the title "An Account of an Hemorrhagic Disposition Existing in certain Families." Although isolated and incomplete accounts of this hereditary disease can be found in the literature since the time of the Talmud, Otto's may fairly be considered the first adequate description, so that the attention of the medical world was fixed upon it as a recognized clinical entity. He noted the essential feature of transmission in one family (Smith-Sheppard) over a period of at least seventy or eighty years, also "that the males only are subject," and "although the females are exempt, they are still capable of transmitting it to their male children." Two years later Otto published another paper on the same subject (*Philadelphia Medical Museum,* vol. I, 1805, no. 3), giving the history of a Maryland family, and in 1808 his original paper was reprinted in the London *Medical and Physical Journal* (July 1808). Soon confirmed by other American observers, the work was recognized and expanded in Germany by Nasse and Schönlein. It was one of the most notable contributions made by an American to medical science up to that time.

When Benjamin Rush died in 1813, Otto was chosen to succeed him as a physician to the Pennsylvania Hospital and served for twenty-two years. On his resignation in 1834 a special resolution acknowledged his "long, faithful and use-

ful" labors, and it is probable that Otto's own generation attached more importance to his bedside labors and lectures than it did to his description of hemophilia. To meet the expected cholera epidemic in 1832 a committee of twelve leading physicians was appointed to take measures necessary to cope with the situation. Otto was unanimously selected chairman of the body. This was the western extension of the first great modern cholera epidemic. In Philadelphia alone during July and August 1832 there were 2,240 cases with 750 deaths. After the epidemic, the city of Philadelphia presented a handsome silver pitcher to Otto in recognition of his services. Elected a member of the College of Physicians in March 1819, he held various offices in that body, being censor for many years and vice-president for the last four years of his life. Some at least of his papers were read before that body, including an article on "Congenital Incontinence of Urine," which though done in 1830, fourteen years before his death, seems to be the last medical article that he wrote. He died in his seventy-first year, of "extensive organic disease of the heart," though he had for years been a sufferer from frequent attacks of severe "general gout." He was interred in the newly opened Woodlands cemetery in West Philadelphia. In 1802 he had married Eliza Tod. They had nine children, one of whom was William Tod Otto [*q.v.*].

[Isaac Parrish, memoir in *Summary of the Trans. Coll. of Physicians of Phila.*, vol. I (1846); Wm. Osler, "Haemophilia," in Wm. Pepper's *System of Practical Medicine*, vol. III (1885); E. B. Krumbhaar, "John Conrad Otto and the Recognition of Hemophilia," *Bull. Johns Hopkins Hospital*, Jan. 1930; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), June 29, 1844; information as to certain facts from Otto Tod Mallery, Philadelphia, Pa.] E. B. K.

OTTO, WILLIAM TOD (Jan. 19, 1816–Nov. 7, 1905), jurist, assistant secretary of the interior, United States Supreme Court reporter, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of Dr. John Conrad Otto [*q.v.*] and Eliza Tod. He entered the University of Pennsylvania in 1829, receiving his degree of A.B. in 1833. After completing his study of law in the office of Joseph R. Ingersoll he moved to Brownstown, Ind., in the fall of 1836. In 1844 he was elected president judge of the second judicial circuit. He was the last judge to be elected by the legislature and served until 1852, when he was defeated by George A. Bicknell, Democrat. For five years, 1847–52, he was professor of law at Indiana University. At thirty-six, he had won the reputation of being one of the ablest presiding circuit judges in the state. On the bench he was autocratic and austere, brooking no familiarity, but outside of official life he displayed a sense of

humor and a pleasing personality. At the expiration of his term in 1853, he moved to New Albany and engaged in private practice. His services were at once in demand for cases pending in the Indiana Supreme Court. In 1855 he was employed to test the constitutionality of the state liquor law as counsel for the appellant in *Beebe* vs. *the State* (6 *Ind.*, 501). In the decision a substantial part of the law was adjudged unconstitutional.

In 1858 Otto was defeated as Republican candidate for the state attorney-generalship. In 1860 he was one of the Indiana delegates to the Republican National Convention. From the first he supported Lincoln and in January 1863 Lincoln appointed him assistant secretary of the interior. In this position he took an active interest in Indian affairs and recommended legislation for Indian betterment. His ability gained him the respect of Orville H. Browning and Hugh McCulloch, who urged Grant to appoint him arbitrator for the United States under the convention with Spain for the adjudication of claims for damages sustained by American citizens in Cuba. He resigned as assistant secretary of the interior in 1871 to accept this position and served until 1875 when he was appointed reporter of the United States Supreme Court. Meanwhile he continued with his law practice, and in January 1873 he argued before the United States Supreme Court on the Judiciary Act of Feb. 5, 1867, maintaining that the Supreme Court, under this act, had no more power than under the Act of 1789 even though the express limitation of powers had been omitted. The decision, given two years later, upheld Otto's arguments (87 *U. S.*, 590). In 1883 Otto resigned as Supreme Court Reporter, having completed seventeen volumes (91–107 *U. S.*) of reports. In 1885 he was appointed one of the United States Representatives to the International Postal Congress at Lisbon. Otto never married, but a tombstone erected by him in the cemetery at Brownstown marks the grave of a woman who was to have become his wife. After his retirement from public life he continued to practise law. He died in Philadelphia in his ninetieth year.

[Sources include: L. C. Baird, *Baird's Hist. of Clark County, Ind.* (1909); a short autobiographical sketch written by Otto for William H. English which is in the English Collection at the Univ. of Chicago; *Univ. of Pa. Biog. Cat. of the Matriculates of the Coll. . . . 1749–1893* (1894); *Evening Bull.* (Phila.), Nov. 9, 1905.] J. L. N.

OUCONNASTOTE [See Oconostota, d. 1785].

OURAY (*c.* 1833–Aug. 24, 1880), a head chief of the Uncompahgre Utes, was born probably

at Taos, N. Mex. The meaning of his name is uncertain; although to a treaty made in 1863 he signed himself "U-ray, the Arrow," various interpretations have been offered. The date (1820) given for his birth by Thomas, in the *Handbook of American Indians,* is evidently an error, as well as the statement that he was born in Colorado. Frank Hall (*History of the State of Colorado,* vol. II, 1890) says that his father was a Tabeguache (Uncompahgre) Ute and his mother a Jicarilla Apache and that his boyhood was spent among Mexican rancheros of the better class, from whom he learned to speak Spanish correctly. At eighteen he joined his father's band in southwestern Colorado, and, about 1860, on his father's death, became its chief. In 1862 he was appointed an interpreter, at $500 a year, at the Los Piños Agency in southern Colorado, and in the same year visited Washington in behalf of his tribe. At Conejos, the agency headquarters, he signed the treaty of Oct. 7, 1863, when he was designated by the government as "head-chief of the Western Utes." To Christopher Carson [*q.v.*], who, according to General Sherman, "exercised a powerful influence over him" (Ellis, *post,* p. 248), he became closely attached while Carson was in command at Fort Garland in 1867, and in the summer of that year he aided Carson in suppressing the uprising of a Ute subchief, Kaniatse. In February 1868, with a delegation of Utes, he again visited Washington, where, with Carson and others, he negotiated the treaty of Mar. 2. In 1872 he strongly resisted the efforts of the government to compel his tribe to relinquish certain lands granted them in perpetuity, but in the following year accepted a compromise. In the same year the government granted him an annuity of $1,000 which continued until his death, and also built for him a comfortable dwelling. Because of his remoteness from the scene he was unable to prevent the Meeker massacre at the White River Agency, in September 1879; he was, however, able to check the spread of the outbreak and to restore peace. He died at his home on the Los Piños reservation.

Like most of the Utes, Ouray was short and stout. His head was strikingly large, with regular features that bore an expression of good will. He spoke a broken English readily, and he was fond of conversation, especially with cultivated men. His manners were courtly and gentle. From his youth he advocated friendliness toward the whites, and, though stiffly defending the interests of his people, always discouraged violence. In his personal life he was something of a Puritan; he avoided obscene and profane language, never used tobacco, and abhorred whiskey, though occasionally in company he drank a little wine. From an early day he was inclined to Christianity, and two years before his death he joined the Methodist Church. It has been said of him that he was the only outstanding personality developed among the Ute people. His wife Chipeta, whom he married in 1859 and who endeared herself to the whites by many acts of kindness, survived him for more than thirty years.

[Cyrus Thomas, in F. W. Hodge, *Handbook of Am. Indians,* pt. II (1910); J. H. Baker, *Hist. of Colo.,* vol. I (1927); Thos. Sturgis, *The Ute War of 1879* (pamphlet, 1879); H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Nev., Colo., and Wyo.* (1890); Sidney Jocknick, *Early Days on the Western Slope of Colo.* (1913); E. L. Sabin, *Kit Carson Days* (1914); E. S. Ellis, *The Life of Kit Carson* (1889); *Weekly Gazette* (Colo. Springs), Sept. 11, 1880; *Rocky Mountain News* (Denver), Aug. 24, 1880.]

W. J. G.

OUTACITY (fl. 1756–1777), Cherokee chief, lived in the Overhill town of Tamali on the Little Tennessee River in what is now Monroe County, Tenn. He was spoken of by several different names—Ostenaco, Austenaco, or Ustenacah, Judd's Friend or Judge Friend, and Mankiller—and that by which he was most commonly known, probably only a title of rank, was spelled variously, as Outacity, Ottassite, and Otacite. He is often identified with the Wrosetasatow who in 1721 signed a treaty with Gov. Francis Nicholson. In 1757 he led a band of warriors down the Valley of Virginia to join Col. George Washington at Fort Loudoun near Winchester, but in the subsequent uprising led by Oconostota [*q.v.*] he took an active part and was present at the surrender of Fort Loudoun in the Cherokee country in 1760. Although a lesser chief among the Cherokee, he was thrust forward by the influence of British and American authority. His chief claim to distinction was due to a visit to England in 1762 under the guidance of Henry Timberlake [*q.v.*], whose hope of advancement seemed to be in advertising an intimacy with Outacity as proof of influence over the Indians. On the night before he sailed for Plymouth, Outacity made a farewell speech with a moving eloquence that was remembered by Thomas Jefferson half a century later. After a short and easy voyage—though he was sick all the way—he arrived in London on June 18. During this visit he and his two companions bore themselves with graceful dignity and were quite the sensation of the town. They had an audience of an hour and a half with King George, were painted by Joshua Reynolds, and kept Oliver Goldsmith waiting three hours for a visit while, as he complained, Outacity dressed and prinked himself with a savage vanity as great as any to be found in civilization. The *Royal Magazine* for July

1762 carried a full-page engraving of a portrait of Outacity and an article describing the little party. In August they sailed for home and Outacity's brief hour of importance was at an end.

His later history continued to be that of a minor leader. His name was signed to various treaties of the period, and there is record of British attempts to strengthen his position in the tribe in the belief that his loyalty might be more dependable than that of some other Indian leaders. Like the rest of his tribe he fought for Great Britain in the Revolution, and he probably died during that struggle or in the period immediately afterward.

[*Lieut. Henry Timberlake's Memoirs* (1927), ed. by S. C. Williams; Lib. of Cong. transcripts from British Public Record Office, esp. CO^5: 72, pp. 436–37; *The Colonial Records of N. C.*, vols. VII, VIII, X (1890); *The State Records of N. C.*, vols. XI, XVII (1895–99); Alexander Hewat, *An Hist. Account of . . . S. C.* (1779), I, 297–98, II, 238; *London Magazine*, June, July, Aug., Sept. 1762, material indexed under Cherokee; *Annual Register . . . 1762* (1763), p. 92; P. L. Ford, *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson*, vol. IX (1898); S. M. Hamilton, *Letters to Washington*, vols. I, II (1898–99); W. C. Ford, *The Writings of George Washington*, vol. I (1889); "The Official Records of Robert Dinwiddie," *Va. Hist. Colls.*, n.s. IV (1884); J. W. M. Gibbs, *The Works of Oliver Goldsmith*, V (1886), 202.]

K. E. C.

OUTCAULT, RICHARD FELTON (Jan. 14, 1863–Sept. 25, 1928), comic artist, was born in Lancaster, Ohio, the son of J. P. and Catherine (Davis) Outcault. He was educated at McMicken College (later part of the University of Cincinnati), and went to Paris for further training in art, returning with his status assured by a beret and a velveteen painting jacket. On Christmas Day, 1890, he was married to Mary Jane Martin, in Lancaster, Ohio. With his wife he removed to New York City, where his comic talents were disciplined and persecuted by the minutiae and drawing-to-scale required of him as draftsman on the *Electrical World* and the *Street Railway Journal*. He found time, however, to do some comic pictures for *Truth*, a weekly journal with a none too respectable reputation, and to submit other drawings to *Life* and *Judge*.

Meanwhile the newspapers were experimenting with color presses, and after many ludicrous failures a process was developed by the New York *World* which seemed satisfactory. Morrill Goddard, the Sunday editor, carried the day for comics rather than fashions as the feature of the new colored supplement, and in casting about for comic talent was referred to Outcault, since the men whose reputations were already established were unavailable because of contracts with comic periodicals. Accordingly, on Sunday, Nov. 18, 1894, Outcault inaugurated the

"funny paper." His first drawing—with significance probably undreamed of—was entitled "The Origin of a New Species." Shortly afterward he produced "Hogan's Alley" and its hero, the "Yellow Kid," which boosted to sensational heights the already notable success of the comic supplement. Meanwhile the *New York Journal* had added a colored page to its regular Sunday edition, and in 1896, with the lure of a tremendous salary, enticed Outcault away from the *World*. George Luks, however, was employed to take his place, and with Luks doing yellow kids for the *World* and Outcault continuing the original in the *Journal* a sensational rivalry developed in Park Row. While this struggle was in process the other papers designated the contenders as "Yellow Kid journals," later shortened to "yellow journals," a term destined to have a career of its own in journalism.

Outcault's next connection was with the *New York Herald*, in which his "Pore Li'l Mose" appeared in 1901 and, in 1902, the renowned "Buster Brown." Buster and his dog Tige eclipsed all their inventor's earlier successes and brought him a fortune and countless offers of employment on foreign newspapers. Buster became a fad that spread all over the country and his name was appropriated for cigars, suits, garters, belts, sweaters, and even children. Outcault published several books on Buster Brown and Tige. He returned to the *Journal* in 1905, but he retired from active work about ten years before his death. He was seriously interested in the theater, delighted in taking part in amateur performances, and was co-author of the dramatic version of *Buster Brown*. He died at his home in Flushing, Long Island, after an illness of about ten weeks.

Outcault was the originator of the bad boy type of humor which dominated the comic productions of the country for the first decade of the twentieth century. The fun of the hoodlum is perennial, but he interpreted it with what he himself called a "kind of epigrammatical humor of a strain that I look on peculiarly as my own."

[R. L. McCardell, "Opper, Outcault and Company: the Comic Supplement and the Men who Make It," *Everybody's Mag.*, June 1905; *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; obituaries in the New York papers for Sept. 26, 1928, and editorials in the papers for the following day; W. G. Bleyer, *Main Currents in the Hist. of Am. Journalism* (1927), pp. 339–40.]

E. T.

OUTERBRIDGE, ALEXANDER EWING (July 31, 1850–Jan. 15, 1928), metallurgist, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Alexander Ewing and Laura C. (Harvey) Outerbridge, and a member of a family prominent in the shipping business in New York, Newfoundland, and the

Bermudas. He was educated at the Episcopal Academy, Philadelphia, and subsequently received private instruction in chemistry and mathematics. In 1867 he became assistant to Henry Morton [*q.v.*], then secretary of the Franklin Institute, and when Morton, in the absence of Dr. John F. Frazer, became acting professor of chemistry and physics at the University of Pennsylvania, Outerbridge aided him in his teaching. He also taught English at the Episcopal Academy.

He was appointed in 1868 assistant in the assay department of the United States Mint in Philadelphia. During his ten years in this post he made several notable contributions to metallurgy. For eight months in 1873, at the Mint and in laboratories at Stevens Institute, Hoboken, and the University of Pennsylvania, he experimented with the spectrum analysis of gold, silver, and other metals, reporting his results in the *Annual Report of the Director of the Mint* (1874). In 1876 he developed a method of obtaining thin films of gold or other metals for study under the microscope with transmitted as well as reflected light. He deposited the gold electrically on copper foil, then dissolved the copper, leaving the thin gold film to be mounted on a glass slide. Such films were obtained 1/10,000,000 of an inch in thickness. Later series of experiments dealt with the impurities in silver. While at the Mint he also designed apparatus to collect metallic vapors escaping from the crucibles when precious metals were melted in the furnaces.

In 1878 he declined appointment as chief assayer at the United States Mint in Helena, Mont., but the next year accepted a transfer to the Mint at New Orleans where an assay office was to be reëstablished. After organizing the office, he returned in 1880 to the Philadelphia Mint, but shortly resigned to become metallurgist for A. Whitney & Son, Philadelphia, manufacturers of car wheels. In 1888 he resigned this position and became metallurgist for William Sellers & Company, Philadelphia, in which connection he continued until his death. During the year 1886 he invented a process for carbonizing delicate plant leaves, lace, and other organic substances without rendering them brittle. These carbonized materials or patterns were utilized in moulding iron, steel, bronze or other metals to obtain perfect replicas of such delicate objects to use as dies. For this contribution he received the John Scott Medal from the City of Philadelphia (1888). In a paper read before the American Institute of Mining Engineers, Feb. 20, 1896 (*Transactions,* vol. XXVI, 1897), he made public his two years' study on the "mobility of molecules" of solid cast-iron; the Franklin Institute appointed a committee to investigate the subject, publishing the report in its *Journal,* July 1898. The year previous, 1897, he had again received the John Scott Medal for these studies. From them it later became evident that iron castings could be made to grow or change in cubical dimensions while in the solid state without destroying their metallic properties or distorting their shapes (*Mobility of Molecules of Cast-iron,* 1904). For this discovery Outerbridge was awarded in 1904 the Elliott Cresson Gold Medal by the Franklin Institute. While investigating the process of hardening tool steel, he perfected a form of permanent color screen for determining the precise temperature of a bath of molten metal.

Outerbridge was an active member of the Franklin Institute, serving on its committee of science and arts for fourteen years and on its board of managers for five; was made professor of metallurgy in 1901 and president of the mining and metallurgical section in 1908. He was an extensive contributor to newspapers and technical publications. Having great personal charm, he made friends easily. He played on the American cricket team in a number of international matches at a time when that gentlemen's game appealed strongly to Philadelphians. In politics he was an adherent of the Republican party; in religion, a member of the Episcopal Church. He married in 1880 Mary Ely Whitney of Philadelphia, who died the following year after the birth of a son. On Jan. 29, 1905, he married Margaret Hall Dunn, who, with his son, survived him.

[*Jour. Franklin Inst.*, Apr. 1928; J. M. and Jacques Cattell, *Am. Men of Science* (4th ed., 1927); *Who's Who in Engineering,* 1925; *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila), Jan. 16, 1928.]

F. L. G.

OVERMAN, FREDERICK (*c.* 1803–Jan. 7, 1852), metallurgist, was born in Elberfeld, Germany, and baptized Johann Friedrich in the reformed church at Barmen on Mar. 3, 1805. His parents, Johann Caspar Overmann and Maria Catherina (Ruhl), who were people of humble circumstances, could afford to give him only an elementary education. They then apprenticed him to a merchant, but he found this occupation not to his liking and was apprenticed to a cabinet maker. While becoming proficient in his trade, he utilized every opportunity to gain general knowledge. At the completion of his apprenticeship he started on his *wanderjahre* and, making his way to Berlin, there gained admission to the Royal Polytechnic Institute. Beuth, its

director, soon discovered the youth's native ability and encouraged him in every way, introducing him to Alexander von Humboldt and to various architects and artists who were prominent in Berlin at the time. Except for his *Über die frischen des roheisens,* which was published at Brünn in 1838, no record now remains of the successive steps by which he rose to be, at an early age, an authority in Europe on the metallurgy of iron, but according to his biographer (Roebling, *post*) he traveled all over Europe introducing his patented improvements in the puddling of iron and in manufacturing processes. He superintended the erection of a number of large plants, and was for a time in charge of engineering works at the royal mines at Chemnitz, Saxony, presumably an establishment where the pumps and other iron equipment were constructed. He also made a study of the mineral and industrial resources of Austria, collecting data for the use of Prince Metternich in negotiating a new commercial treaty with Great Britain. In the meantime, on May 9, 1829, in the church in which he was christened, he married Wilhelmina Friederike Helena Petzholtz.

In 1842, apparently dissatisfied with political and social conditions in Europe, he came to the United States, where he anglicized his name and passed the rest of his life. It is probable that he went very soon to Pennsylvania, the seat of nearly one-third of the whole iron industry of the United States, which owed most of its growth to German technologists. A scientist rather than a business man, he seems to have had a checkered career of success and failure. Turning to the writing of technological works in English, he published in 1850 *The Manufacture of Iron,* a volume of some five hundred pages, followed by *The Manufacture of Steel* (1851), *Practical Mineralogy, Assaying, and Mining* (1851), *The Moulder's and Founder's Pocket Guide* (1851), and *Mechanics for the Millwright, Machinist, Engineer, Civil Engineer, Architect, and Student* (1851). He had nearly completed *A Treatise on Metallurgy* (1852), 700 pages, dealing with mining as well as the metallurgy of the common metals, when he was accidentally killed by inhaling arsene in his Philadelphia laboratory. The work appeared shortly after his death, with a final chapter added by the publishers and a preface containing a biographical sketch of the author. If Overman had lived to a greater age he probably would have been a leading figure in the development of metallurgy in the United States, but he died almost a decade before the discoveries on the Comstock lode gave a great impetus to non-ferrous metallurgy, and two decades before the introduction of the Bessemer process into America similarly stimulated the metallurgy of iron. His *Treatise on Metallurgy* went through six editions. It exhibits a surprisingly sound understanding of the nature of alloys, and all his works deserve more recognition than has been accorded them for their influence on the development of mineral technology in America.

Overman

[Overman's own writings; preface by John A. Roebling [*q.v.*] to Overman's *Treatise on Metallurgy* (1852); *North American and U. S. Gazette* (Phila.), Jan. 9, 1852; information, including data from church records at Barmen, from the Verein deutscher Eisenhüttenleute.]

T. T. R.

OVERMAN, LEE SLATER (Jan. 3, 1854–Dec. 12, 1930), senator from North Carolina, was born in Salisbury, Rowan County, N. C., the son of William and Mary (Slater) Overman. His father belonged to a family long established in eastern North Carolina but in 1835 removed to Rowan County and there became a successful merchant and manufacturer. After a preparatory training in private schools the boy entered Trinity College (now Duke University) and graduated in 1874. He then taught in Winston-Salem, N. C., but his ambition turned to law and politics. He took an active part in the gubernatorial campaign of 1876 that resulted in the election of Zebulon Baird Vance [*q.v.*], became Vance's private secretary, and, when Vance became United States senator in 1879, was for a time secretary to Vance's successor, Thomas J. Jarvis. In 1878 he was admitted to the bar and on Oct. 31 of that year was married to Mary P. Merrimon, the eldest daughter of Augustus S. Merrimon [*q.v.*]. He began the practice of law in Salisbury in 1880. In 1881 he campaigned in the interest of a prohibition amendment to the state constitution, although Salisbury was the stronghold of the liquor interests. In 1883, 1885, 1887, 1893, and 1899 he was a member of the state House of Representatives from Rowan County and was elected speaker in 1893. As a legislator he manifested courage and became a recognized leader of the Democratic party. He also favored leasing the control of state-owned railroads to railway corporations and the establishment of a corporation commission. In 1895 he was the choice of the Democratic caucus of the legislature for the United States Senate, but he was defeated by Jeter C. Pritchard, who had the support of the Republicans and Populists. In 1903 after a long contest he was elected over Pritchard.

His record as a senator was that of a liberal conservative. He had deep reverence for American constitutional government as established and came to be regarded one of the best con-

stitutional lawyers in the Senate. On the other hand his interest in changing national problems led him to support many measures in the interest of various groups and classes of people when he believed such measure lay within the scope of existing powers of government. Thus he obtained an appropriation for the appointment of commercial agents abroad to aid in the extension of foreign trade, supported the formation of a labor department, and led the fight in the Senate for the Clayton Bill that included in its clauses larger protection of labor interests. Meanwhile he was very vigilant for the interests of North Carolina; notable was the prevention, through his efforts, of suits against the state by Cuba for the redemption of bonds that the supreme court of North Carolina had declared invalid. When the Democratic party obtained control of the Senate in 1913, he became chairman of the rules committee and was ranking member of the judiciary and appropriations committees; and during the prolonged absences of the chairman of the latter committee, he guided deliberations. He gave cordial support to the measures favored by President Wilson during his first term, and in 1913 he was also chairman of a Senate committee that investigated the activities of lobbies. During the World War he consistently advocated strengthening the hand of the chief executive and gave final shape to the Senate bill to empower President Wilson to transfer the functions of one department of government to another. This was known as the Overman Law. In 1918 he was chairman of the sub-committee of the judiciary that investigated German propaganda and, in 1919, chairman of a committee that investigated Bolshevist propaganda. To the time of his death he had served almost twenty-eight years, having been reëlected to the Senate in 1909, 1914, 1920, and 1926. He embodied its best traditions—his snow-white hair, his dignity and courtesy, and his occasional bursts of oratory suggesting the image of a Roman.

[Personal scrapbooks of Overman in possession of family; *Lee S. Overman, Memorial Addresses . . . in the Senate and House of Representatives* (1931); *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *News and Observer* (Raleigh), Dec. 12, 1930; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 12–14, 1930.]

W. K. B.

OVERTON, JOHN (Apr. 9, 1766–Apr. 12, 1833), jurist, pioneer, and politician, was born in Louisa County, Va., the son of James and Mary (Waller) Overton (Overton family data, compiled by Edyth Rucker Whitley, Nashville, Tenn.). His family, of English origin, was well connected but poor, and young Overton taught school for several years in order to assist in the education of his brothers and sisters. In 1787 he migrated to Kentucky for the purpose of studying law and took board in the home of a Mrs. Robards, of Mercer County. Completing his studies two years later, he decided to practise law in the frontier town of Nashville, Tenn. Making his way thither, he became a boarder in the home of the widow of Col. John Donelson. Here he was the bed-fellow of Andrew Jackson, another young lawyer who had shortly preceded him to Nashville (Parton, *post*, I, 149). In 1790 the western part of North Carolina became the Southwest Territory, and Overton was made supervisor of the federal excise (Knoxville *Gazette*, June 5, 1795). During this period he also became much interested in land speculations and was Jackson's partner in some of the most important land deals (Bassett, *post*, I, 13–15). In 1794 these two men purchased the Rice tract, upon which, in 1819, they founded the town of Memphis.

In 1804 Jackson resigned his place upon the bench of the superior court of Tennessee and Overton succeeded to the post, holding this position until the old courts were abolished, Jan. 1, 1810. In November 1811 he was appointed a member of the supreme court of the state to succeed George Campbell. In 1816 he resigned. He published two volumes of *Tennessee Reports* (1813–17), which cover cases tried before the court from 1791 to 1816. Being intimately connected with the formulation of the law during the plastic period of a new jurisdiction, he became the recognized authority on all matters relating to land legislation, and in many cases it was his influence which shaped the form it took. He also built up the largest landed estate in Tennessee and was considered the richest citizen of the commonwealth. After his retirement from the bench, he devoted his entire time to the promotion of his private interests and the political fortunes of Andrew Jackson. In 1821 he, William B. Lewis, and John H. Eaton [*qq.v.*] formed an informal committee of close personal friends for the advancement of Jackson's candidacy for the presidency, and from this time until the election of 1828 they were largely engaged in the defense of their hero against his enemies (T. P. Abernethy, "Andrew Jackson and the Rise of Southwestern Democracy," in *American Historical Review*, October 1927, pp. 71–72). Because he had resided with the Robards family in Kentucky, Overton's services were especially valuable in combating the scandal bruited about during the campaign in connection with Jackson's marriage to Rachel Robards, formerly Rachel Donelson. Though Overton kept complete records of all his transactions, before his death

he destroyed his correspondence with Jackson. On the election of "Old Hickory" to the presidency, Overton asked for no office and accepted no favors, remaining in Nashville to the end of his life. He must have possessed rare qualities, for he was unique in being able to live on intimate terms with Jackson as an adviser and friend without friction and without becoming a mere follower.

Henry A. Wise, who visited "The Hermitage" in 1828, described Overton as he sat in the family circle with a bandanna handkerchief thrown over his bald head, nose and chin nearly meeting, making ineffectual efforts to enter into the conversation (*Seven Decades of the Union*, 1872, pp. 100–03). His private life was apparently uneventful. His wife, Mary McConnell (White) May, was the widow of Dr. Francis May, the daughter of Gen. James White, and the sister of Hugh Lawson White.

[The best sketches of Overton are in J. W. Caldwell, *Sketches of the Bench and Bar of Tenn.* (1898), and W. W. Clayton, *Hist. of Davidson County, Tenn.* (1880). See also James Parton, *Life of Andrew Jackson* (3 vols., 1860); J. S. Bassett, *Correspondence of Andrew Jackson* (6 vols., 1926–33); obituary in *Nashville Republican and State Gazette*, Apr. 17, 1833. There is a good collection of Overton's correspondence in the possession of the Tenn. Hist. Soc., Nashville.]

T. P. A.

OWEN, DAVID DALE (June 24, 1807–Nov. 13, 1860), geologist, third son of the social philanthropist Robert Owen [see *Dictionary of National Biography*] and Ann Caroline Dale, his wife, was born at "Braxfield House," near New Lanark, Scotland. Like his elder brother, Robert Dale Owen [*q.v.*], he received his early training from private tutors and at the Lanark Academy, and then proceeded to the educational institution of Philipp Emanuel von Fellenberg, near Berne, Switzerland. Here he took a three-year course, beginning in 1824. In November 1827, with his brother Richard, he sailed for America, where their father had undertaken to plant a socialistic community at New Harmony, Ind. They reached New Harmony early in January 1828. In 1831, in company with Prof. H. D. Rogers [*q.v.*], David Owen sailed for London, where he attended lectures in chemistry and geology at the London University. Returning in 1832, after recovering from an attack of Asiatic cholera, he entered upon a course in medicine at the Ohio Medical College in Cincinnati, meanwhile spending his summers in arranging and classifying the collection of fossils made by the geologist William Maclure [*q.v.*].

After graduating in medicine in 1836, he spent one summer as a volunteer on the geological survey of Tennessee under Gerard Troost [*q.v.*], and in 1837 accepted the proffered position of state geologist of Indiana. Working without assistants, he made his own field observations and his own chemical analyses in a laboratory he had established at New Harmony. At the end of the first year, having rendered but one report, he resigned to accept an appointment from James Whitcomb, federal land commissioner, to make a survey of the Dubuque and Mineral Point districts of Wisconsin and Iowa, an area of about eleven thousand square miles. In carrying out this task he displayed exceptional energy and administrative ability. He received his commission Aug. 17, 1839, engaged and instructed his 139 assistants as to purposes and methods of procedure, and presented his report on Nov. 14 following, a "feat of generalship which has never been equalled in American geological history" (Merrill, *post*, p. 199). The report was published, under date of Apr. 2, 1840, as *House Document 239* (26 Cong., 1 Sess.). In 1847 he was appointed United States geologist to make a survey of the Chippewa Land District, the work being subsequently extended to include a more complete survey of the northwestern territory of Wisconsin, Iowa, and Minnesota, which with field and laboratory work occupied his time and attention until 1852. It was in the course of this survey that Dr. John Evans made under Owen's direction the first survey of the *Mauvaises Terres*, or Bad lands of the Upper Missouri. The complete report, *Report of a Geological Survey of Wisconsin, Iowa and Minnesota, and Incidentally of a Portion of Nebraska Territory* (1852), formed a quarto volume of 628 pages of text, with fifteen plates of fossils, nineteen folding sections, and a geological map. The illustrations of fossil remains were particularly fine for that period.

In 1854 Owen was appointed state geologist of Kentucky and continued to hold the position for five years. In 1857, he accepted also the position of state geologist of Arkansas, but here his limit was reached: he died in the midst of his task in 1860 and his final report was edited by J. P. Lesley [*q.v.*]. In the meanwhile, however, he had accepted a third office, becoming for the second time state geologist of Indiana—an appointment made with the understanding that the actual work of the survey was to be done by his brother, Richard Owen, who had recently resigned the professorship of geology in the university at Nashville, Tenn. The *Report of a Geological Reconnoissance of Indiana Made during the Years 1859 and 1860 under the Direction of the Late D. D. Owen* was published by Richard Owen in 1862.

Viewed in the light of today, much of Owen's work can be regarded as reconnaissance. He was the first to point out the rich mineral nature of the Iowa and Wisconsin lands, and that the ores of lead and zinc were limited to the magnesian limestone, and the first to give the name *subcarboniferous* to beds immediately underlying the coal of Indiana. He was an artist, and his pictured geological sections are unequaled for their artistic beauty. Of the twenty-five plates in his report of 1840, fourteen are from his own drawings. His chief publications, besides those mentioned above, are the four reports of the Geological Survey of Kentucky (4 vols., 1856–61); *First Report of a Geological Reconnoissance of . . . Arkansas* (1858), and *Second Report . . .* (1860). He is said to have been a man of kindly, equitable disposition. Aside from geology he was most fond of chemistry, and at his own expense built a fully equipped laboratory at a cost of $10,000. He was married on Mar. 23, 1837, to Caroline C. Neef, daughter of Francis Joseph Nicholas Neef [*q.v.*], educational leader of the New Harmony community. Four children were born to them. His death at fifty-three, in the midst of his labors, was due to the undermining of his constitution by exposure and malaria and unremitting attention to his strenuous duties.

[Editorial in *Am. Geologist*, Aug. 1889, based, it is said, on information from Richard Owen; *Am. Jour. Sci. and Arts*, Jan. 1861; *First-Fourth Report of the Geol. Survey in Ky. Made during the Years 1854 to 1859*, vol. IV (1861); *Pop. Sci. Mo.*, Dec. 1895; G. P. Merrill, *The First One Hundred Years of Am. Geology* (1924); G. B. Lockwood, *The New Harmony Movement* (1905); Caroline Dale Snedeker, *The Town of the Fearless* (1931).] G. P. M.

OWEN, EDWARD THOMAS (Mar. 4, 1850–Nov. 9, 1931), educator, was born at Hartford, Conn. His father, Elijah Hunter Owen, a merchant, of Welsh ancestry, and his mother, Susannah Boardman, of English descent, were of old New-England stock. Owen was educated in the Hartford public schools and was graduated from Yale in 1872 with numerous scholastic and athletic honors. He was a member of half a dozen social and musical clubs and always set down as the proudest accomplishment of his life his winning of the Southgate cup in the single-scull race, in which he broke all previous records. He spent a year in graduate study at Yale, and three more in Europe, two at Göttingen and one in Paris. In 1878 he went to the University of Wisconsin as instructor in modern languages and the following year was made professor of French language and literature. He remained on the faculty until his retirement from active teaching in 1914, serving for several years as head of the department of Romance languages.

Owen's specialty as a scholar lay in a pioneer field. He aimed at rationalizing grammar by a radical revision of its method and nomenclature. He rejected its conventions as pseudo-science, akin to astrology or alchemy. He contended that its classification is unstable, overlapping, and contradictory, and the so-called parts of speech an absurdity. Why, for example, speak of "disjunctive conjunctives"? He paved the way for creating a truly logical grammar, based upon an analysis of the antecedent psychological states that prompt expression, by taking these as an abstract or ideal norm for clarifying and classing usage and the deformations that usage entails. These theories he developed in a series of monographs published in the *Transactions of the Wisconsin Academy of Sciences, Arts, and Letters:* "The Meaning and Function of Thought Connectives" (vol. XII, pt. 1, 1898); "A Revision of the Pronouns, with Special Examination of Relatives and Relative Clauses" (vol. XIII, pt. 1, 1901); "Interrogative Thought, and the Means of its Expression" (vol. XIV, pt. 2, 1904); "Hybrid Parts of Speech" (vol. XVI, pt. 1, 1909); "The Relations expressed by the Passive Voice" (vol. XVII, pt. 1, 1911); "Linguistic Aberrations" (vol. XXIII, 1927), and "Syntax of the Adverb, Preposition, and Conjunction" (vol. XXVI, 1931). He also edited various modern French texts.

Of tall, athletic build and great physical strength, Owen was always a devotee of the outdoor life and outdoor sports. He loved the countryside, sailed and fished on the lakes around Madison, and roamed on horseback over the wooded hills. Later in life he turned gardener on his suburban estate. He was long chairman of the University Athletic Committee, and was a founder of the Madison Park and Pleasure-Drive Association. He donated to the city, in commemoration of two daughters who died in childhood, the beautiful Owen Park and Drive. Another lifelong pursuit was the collecting of butterflies. During frequent midwinter trips in tropic lands he gathered a large collection of rare specimens. He loved leisure, cultivated many interests, was well read and at times boldly personal in his judgments, decidedly Anglo-Saxon and Victorian, though idolizing Balzac and girding at Wordsworth. He was a gentleman of the old school, fond of good talk, full of genial wit and shrewd good sense, of indulgence and enthusiasm. He was married, on Apr. 11, 1874, to Emilie Brace Pratt, of Hartford, Conn. She with two daughters survived him.

[*Bull. of Yale Univ.; Obit. Record of Grads. Deceased During the Year Ending July 1, 1932* (1932); R. G. Thwaites, *The Univ. of Wis.* (1900); E. H. Owen, "Some of the Owen Ancestors," a manuscript genealogy; *Wis. State Jour.* (Madison), Nov. 10, 1931.]

W. F. G.

OWEN, GRIFFITH (*c.* 1647–Aug. 19, 1717), Colonial leader, Quaker preacher, surgeon, was born in Wales, the son of Robert and Jane (Vaughan) Owen of Dolseredu, near Dolgelly. Before emigrating to America, he studied medicine and moved to Prescott in Lancashire, England, where he practised as a physician for some years. He became a Quaker by conviction, his father having given up his connection with the Society of Friends. He was married before he left England, but the family name of his wife, Sarah, is not recorded. She died in Philadelphia in 1702. The certificate of membership from Hartshaw West Monthly Meeting in England to Philadelphia states that Owen had "for many years phest [profest] ye blessed Truth," and had "been very well esteemed being of great service in his place."

He came to Philadelphia in the ship *Vine* in company with his father and mother and bringing his wife, three children, and seven servants. They landed at Philadelphia Sept. 17, 1684. Owen settled at first in Merion, now Lower Merion Township, in the tract of 40,000 acres assigned by William Penn to the Welsh Quaker immigrants, but soon afterward moved to Philadelphia, where he built one of the most attractive houses in the new colony. William Penn, in his letters (Penn-Logan Correspondence, *post*, I, 297), refers to Griffith Owen's house with a touch of envy, as being finer than he himself could afford. Owen's medical practice was extensive and he had the reputation of being a skilled surgeon. He was elected a member of the Colonial Assembly in 1686 and the three years following. In 1690 he was chosen a member of the Provincial Council, in which he continued to sit until his death, trusted and beloved by the Proprietor, who refers to him in his letters to James Logan as "honest Griffith Owen" (*Ibid.*, I, 172, 206). On one occasion, however, he strongly opposed the Proprietor's policy, when Penn proposed to sell part of the Welsh Tract to other incoming settlers. Griffith Owen led the opposition to this new policy and drafted the vigorous Remonstrance against it to the commissioners of the government, but the Remonstrance failed and the Welsh Tract was divided.

Throughout his life in the Pennsylvania colony, Owen was one of the foremost Friends in public service. He is mentioned a hundred times in the Minutes of Philadelphia Yearly Meeting.

He was appointed to membership on the most important committees of the Meeting, and usually served as chairman. He was chosen to settle differences, to solve complexities, to deal with offenders, to raise funds and to select teachers for William Penn's Chartered School, now the William Penn Charter School. He was one of the outstanding Quaker preachers in the Colony. He traveled frequently on religious visits to England, to Maryland, to the Eastern Shore, to Virginia, and twice to New England. He was in the thick of the struggle over what at that time was called "the Apostasy of George Keith" [*q.v.*], which rent the harmony of the infant colony. Friends in Philadelphia issued a document—*Our Antient Testimony Renewed* (London, 1695)—which was intended to clarify their theological position in this controversy. This document was in the main drafted by Griffith Owen who was chairman of the committee. It is an important paper since it is one of the very earliest confessions of faith of the Pennsylvania Quakers. It is strikingly theological and orthodox, with almost no emphasis on peculiar Quaker lines of thought. With William Penn, Thomas Story and others, Griffith Owen founded in September 1701 the Meeting of Ministers of Philadelphia (later called Meeting of Ministers and Elders).

In 1704 he married, as his second wife, Sarah Saunders, a widow, daughter of John Songhurst. His interest in the Welsh Tract continued unabated throughout his life, and he often visited the three Welsh Meetings "over the Schuylkill," namely, Haverford, Merion, and Radnor. He died in Philadelphia at the age of seventy years.

[*Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1884; "Correspondence between William Penn and James Logan," *Memoirs of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.*, vols. IX–X (1870–72); Robert Proud, *The Hist. of Pa.* (2 vols., 1797–98); T. A. Glenn, *Welsh Founders of Pa.* (1913), vol. II, and *Merion in the Welsh Tract* (1896); *The Friend* (Phila.), Mar. 10–Apr. 7, Apr. 21–28, 1855; *Geneal. Soc. of Pa. Pubs.*, especially vols. III–VII (Jan. 1906–Mar. 1920), IX (Mar. 1924), p. 46; Jacob Painter, *Thomas and Margaret Minshall and Their Early Descendants: To Which Are Added Some Accounts of Griffith Owen and Descendants* (1867).]

R. M. J.

OWEN, ROBERT DALE (Nov. 9, 1801–June 24, 1877), social reformer, author, elder brother of David Dale Owen [*q.v.*], was born at Glasgow, Scotland, the eldest son of Robert Owen [see *Dictionary of National Biography*] and Ann Caroline (Dale) Owen. His mother was the daughter of David Dale, proprietor of the cotton-mills at New Lanark, where Robert Owen was beginning to put into practice his theory of social reform. Robert Dale Owen's whole life, most of it spent in the United States,

was shaped by his father's influence. Possessed of much of his father's gift for original and liberal thought in social matters, he added to it a practicality and, after a time, a patience of his own. He was instructed in the New Lanark school and by private tutors until the age of eighteen, when he went for four years to the progressive institution of Philipp Emanuel von Fellenberg at Hofwyl, Switzerland. There he gained "a belief which existing abuses cannot shake nor worldly scepticism destroy, an abiding faith in human virtue and in social progress" (*Threading My Way,* p. 175). On his return to his father's cotton-mill community, he took charge of the school, of which he wrote the only comprehensive description (*An Outline of the System of Education at New Lanark,* 1824), and when his father was absent he managed the factories. In November 1825 he came to the United States with his father, the two proceeding early the next year to New Harmony, Ind., where the elder Owen had determined to begin an experiment in social reform through cooperation and rational education. Robert Dale Owen eagerly volunteered for manual work, but finding himself physically unfit for it, was glad to teach the school and edit the *New Harmony Gazette.* His editorial utterances reflected his enthusiasm for the adventure, but later in life he described the colonists as a "heterogeneous collection of radicals, enthusiastic devotees of principle, honest latitudinarians and lazy theorists, with a sprinkling of unprincipled sharpers thrown in" (*Threading My Way,* p. 286).

No sooner had the New Harmony experiment failed, in the spring of 1827, than he was destined for another disappointment. At New Harmony he had come under the influence of Frances Wright [*q.v.*], ten years his senior and a vigorous personality. In 1825 she had founded Nashoba, near Memphis, Tenn., a community devoted to gradual emancipation of slaves. Owen now went with her to the colony, but finding it in a declining way, he accompanied her to Europe, where he met Lafayette, Godwin, Bentham, and Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley. He was much drawn to the last, and in later life wished he had come under her gentle persuasion rather than the driving force of Frances Wright. On his return to America, after an unprofitable visit to Nashoba he went back to New Harmony to continue the *Gazette,* whither Miss Wright soon followed him. He now engaged with her for two years in the work of the "Free Enquirers," a coterie opposed to organized religion (particularly the evangelical sects with their revivals), and advocating liberal divorce laws, widespread industrial education, and a more nearly equal distribution of wealth. In June 1829 he left New Harmony and took up residence with others of the inner circle in New York. Here he devoted most of his time to editing the *Free Enquirer,* which was the old *New Harmony Gazette* rechristened. He was active in the autumn of this year in forming the "Association for the Protection of Industry and for the Promotion of National Education," his creed for which was belief in "a National System of Equal, Republican, Protective, Practical Education, the sole regenerator of a profligate age." This association was successful in 1829–30 in ousting the agrarians under Thomas Skidmore (author of *The Rights of Man to Property,* 1829) from the councils of the New York Working Men's Party and substituting a program of public education for their dream of equal division of property; but the workers finally repudiated the leadership of the Free Enquirers.

The work which Owen did in New York (promoting of lectures, educational and health centers, and free-thinking publications), corresponded closely to the propaganda activities of his father, whom he joined in England in 1832. For six months father and son were co-editors of *The Crisis;* then the son returned to New Harmony and began the most useful part of his career. He served three terms in the Indiana legislature (1836–38) and gave effect to his educational policies by securing for the public schools one-half of the state's allocation of surplus funds of the federal government. He was elected to Congress in 1842 as a Democrat, and served two terms (1843–47), but was defeated for a third. In 1844 he introduced a resolution requesting the President to notify Great Britain of the termination of the joint occupation of Oregon; this measure became the basis for the solution of the Oregon boundary dispute. In 1845 he introduced the bill under which the Smithsonian Institution was constituted, and as a member of the organization committee of the regents he insisted that the work of the Institution should include popular dissemination of scientific knowledge as well as investigation. His versatility was apparent in his service as chairman of the building committee, and he tried to make his experience available to others by publishing *Hints on Public Architecture* (1849). In the Indiana constitutional convention of 1850 and in the legislature the next year, he successfully advocated property rights for married women and liberality in divorce laws; his views on the latter subject involved him later in a debate with Horace Greeley [*q.v.*] in the *New*

York Tribune, afterwards widely circulated in pamphlet form (*Divorce: Being a Correspondence between Horace Greeley and Robert Dale Owen,* 1860). President Pierce appointed him chargé d'affaires at Naples in 1853, and two years later made him minister. In Italy he embraced Spiritualism, and worked to give the cult a scientific basis for its beliefs. His books, *Footfalls on the Boundary of Another World* (1860) and *The Debatable Land between This World and the Next* (1872), show a strange mixture of credulousness and suspicion.

When he returned to America in 1858 he became one of the leading advocates of emancipation. He was commissioned by the governor of Indiana to purchase arms in Europe for the state troops (May 30, 1861–Feb. 6, 1863). His letter to the President, Sept. 17, 1862, published with letters to Chase and Stanton in a pamphlet, *The Policy of Emancipation* (1863), was credited by Secretary Chase with having "had more influence on him [Lincoln] than any other document which reached him on the subject" (Lockwood, *post,* p. 371). In 1863 the Secretary of War appointed Owen chairman of a committee to investigate the condition of the freedmen, out of which study grew his volume, *The Wrong of Slavery* (1864), an understanding treatment of the whole institution. In *The Future of the North-West* (1863) he protested vigorously against the scheme, put forward in Indiana and the Northwest, of reconstructing the Union by leaving out New England. He was opposed to the immediate enfranchisement of the negro, advocating a plan whereby the suffrage should be granted freedmen after a period of ten years. Besides the publications mentioned, he was the author of *Pocahontas: A Historical Drama* (1837); *Beyond the Breakers* (1870), a novel; and many pamphlets on questions of public interest. In 1873–75 he contributed a number of autobiographical articles to the *Atlantic Monthly.* The first of these (January-November 1873), covering his first twenty-seven years, were published in book form under the title, *Threading My Way* (1874). He was twice married: on Apr. 12, 1832, to Mary Jane Robinson, who died in 1871, and on June 23, 1876, to Lottie Walton Kellogg. He died at his summer home on Lake George, New York, following a period of mental derangement.

[Robert Dale Owen, *Threading My Way* (1874), supplemented by articles in the *Atlantic Monthly,* Feb., June, July, Nov., Dec. 1874, Jan., June 1875; G. B. Lockwood, *The New Harmony Movement* (1905); Frank Podmore, *Robert Owen: A Biog.* (2 vols., 1906); A. H. Estabrook, "The Family History of Robert Owen," *Ind. Mag. of Hist.,* Mar. 1923; L. M. Sears, "Robert Dale Owen as a Mystic," *Ibid.,* Mar. 1928; "Robert Dale Owen and Indiana's Common School Fund," *Ibid.,* Mar. 1929; Caroline Dale Snedeker, *The Town of the Fearless* (1931); W. R. Waterman, *Frances Wright* (1924); *Indianapolis Journal,* June 27, *Indianapolis Sentinel,* June 26, 1877.] B. M.

OWEN, WILLIAM FLORENCE (1844–May 4, 1906), actor, was of English and Welsh ancestry on his father's side and of Irish on his mother's. He was born in Limerick, Ireland, and after various attempts as a newspaper writer, in business, and as a public reader in Canada, whither he had gone at about the age of twenty, he at last fulfilled a boyish ambition to become an actor, and remained upon the stage for the rest of his life. He frequently remarked to his friends that it was a decision he never regretted, even when his fortunes were not at the highest flood. More than once he said, in substantially the same words: "To be an actor one must be so filled with love for the work that one must be willing to starve, to suffer, to endure almost anything rather than to give up his profession." His first professional engagement was at Salem, Ohio, Dec. 17, 1867, with Catherine Hayes, as Victor Carrington in Watts Phillips' melodrama, *Nobody's Daughter,* and as Sir Matthew Scraggs in *Sketches in India.* An engagement in stock during the next season at Griswold's Opera House in Troy, N. Y., gave him opportunity to appear in support of several stars in such parts as Sir Hugh Evans in *Merry Wives of Windsor,* Old Deschapelles in *The Lady of Lyons,* Gobbo in *The Merchant of Venice,* and the Second Gravedigger in *Hamlet.* Seasons of miscellaneous engagements here and there in all sorts of characters followed, including appearances with Adelaide Neilson as Sir Andrew Aguecheek in *Twelfth Night,* with Joseph Jefferson as Cockles in *Rip Van Winkle,* and with George Rignold as Pistol in *King Henry V.* During the season of 1885–86 he was leading comedian at the Boston Museum while George W. Wilson, the regular occupant of that position, was temporarily on tour with Booth and Salvini. For several seasons he was leading comedian with Madame Modjeska, playing Touchstone, Sir Toby Belch, Cloten in *Cymbeline,* Michonnet in *Adrienne Lecouvreur,* and Brigard in *Frou Frou.* He also supported Marie Wainwright in the fall of 1889, and Julia Marlowe in 1895–96. Of his impersonation of Falstaff in the latter's production of *King Henry IV* it was said that "it seems as if the whole of the witty knight's soul was given by the actor."

Owen was a member of Augustin Daly's company during a part of the nineties, appearing in comedy rôles in support of Ada Rehan, and when in 1899–1900 Mrs. Fiske produced Lang-

don Elwyn Mitchell's dramatic version of *Vanity Fair* under the title of *Becky Sharp*, he appeared as Joseph Sedley. He repeated the part upon her revival of that play only a short time before his death, being forced to retire from the stage on account of serious illness. In figure he was rotund of body, his features were of comic cast, in manner he was a comedian of the unctuous type, a genuine Sir Toby Belch, an admirable Falstaff, a perfect Touchstone. He was in all respects an actor and not a clown, his resources being in his mind and in his voice, and not the result of either vocal or physical antics.

[J. B. Clapp and E. F. Edgett, *Players of the Present*, pt. II (1900); Wm. Winter, *Shakespeare on the Stage*, ser. 2 (1915), ser. 3 (1916); *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, Mar. 21, 1896, May 12, 1906; *Boston Transcript*, May 4, 1906; personal recollections.] E. F. E.

OWENS, JOHN EDMOND (Apr. 2, 1823–Dec. 7, 1886), actor and manager, although of English birth, became famous on the American stage especially as an interpreter of Yankee characters. His birthplace was Liverpool, but he was of Welsh parentage, the son of Owen Griffith Owen and Mary Anderton, the surname having been changed to Owens by his father in early manhood. When the boy was five years old, the family came to America and made their home in Philadelphia, whither they had been preceded by relatives. There John Edmond was educated in the public schools, and while serving as a clerk in a drugstore he made his stage début, at the age of seventeen, in a minor part at Burton's National Theatre. His progress was slow, his first important character not being given him until Sept. 27, 1841, when at the same theatre he acted Peter Poultice in *The Ocean Child*. Within ten years he had acquired wide celebrity as a comedian throughout the United States and during his long career he managed companies in Baltimore, New Orleans, and other cities. He was sometimes a star, sometimes leading low comedian in stock and traveling companies. In his *Autobiography*, Joseph Jefferson refers to Owens as he saw him in New Orleans in 1846 as "the then rising young comedian," and describes him as "the handsomest low comedian I had ever seen," with a "neat dapper little figure, and a face full of lively expression," and an "effective style and great flow of animal spirits" (*post*, p. 81). In 1856 he first played Solon Shingle in *The People's Lawyer*, and when he was at the Adelphi Theatre in London in 1865, Dickens saw him and pronounced his portrayal of the part as one of the most vivid and natural characterizations he had ever seen on the stage.

Owens

Through the years Owens' repertory became extensive; among his most popular impersonations were Toodles, Dr. Pangloss in *The Heir at Law*, Dr. Ollapod in *The Poor Gentleman*, Major Wellington de Boots in *Everybody's Friend*, Caleb Plummer, Paul Pry, Aminadab Sleek, and in fact practically all the stereotyped comedy rôles of that era. In 1876 he added Perkyn Middlewick in Henry J. Byron's comedy, *Our Boys*, then at the height of its popularity, to his list of characters, and when in 1882 he joined the Madison Square Theatre Company in New York, he was seen as Elbert Rogers, the old farmer, in *Esmeralda*, with Annie Russell in the title rôle. In 1885 he retired on account of illness to his estate of Aigburth Vale, about six miles from Baltimore, which he had bought in 1853, and increasing its size by the addition of many acres from time to time, he amused himself, during the intermissions between his engagements and tours in the entertainment of his many friends both in and out of the theatrical profession. He would often say: "Every man has his hobby, and mine is harmless. Spending money on my country residence entertains me, and the improvements I make give work to people who need it." On Apr. 19, 1849, he was married to Mary C. Stevens, daughter of John G. Stevens of Baltimore, and she survived him many years, writing a biography of him, and energetically defending him from what she thought was unfair criticism of his acting by those who denied his skill as an expert comedian. When Clara Morris wrote with somewhat bad taste that even his marriage with the "little orthodox Quakeress" seemed "an expression of eccentricity," Mrs. Owens retorted by saying in a letter to the *New York Dramatic Mirror* (June 22, 1901) that she had evidently been inspired "by imagination rather than memory."

The consensus of opinion about Owens is that he was a comedian who relied mainly for his effects upon the resources of a genuine comic personality, that he did frequently indulge in extravagance of action in order to arouse laughter, that in his impersonations of Yankee characters he was truer to the footlights than to real life, but that his "jolly rotund and flexible features, his plump and comical looking figure, his jaunty air and personal peculiarities were almost as familiar off the stage as his lifelike and truly artistic impersonations were on it." Few American comedians have been more popular in their day; few have lingered longer in the memories of those who saw them. The name of Owens is a tradition of the American stage that inevitably suggests comedy and laughter.

[*Memories of the Professional and Social Life of John E. Owens* (1892), written by Owens' wife; Clara Morris, *Life on the Stage* (1901) and *Stage Confidences* (1902); *The Autobiog. of Jos. Jefferson* (1890); Wm. Winter, *The Wallet of Time* (1913), vol. I; *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, June 22, 1901; *Boston Herald*, Jan. 9, 1885; *Brooklyn Eagle*, Oct. 20, 1885; *Sun* (Baltimore), and *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 8, 1886; the *World* (N. Y.), Dec. 11, 1886.] E. F. E.

OWENS, MICHAEL JOSEPH (Jan. 1, 1859–Dec. 27, 1923), inventor, glass manufacturer, son of John and Mary (Chapman) Owens, was born in Mason County, Va. (now W. Va.). His father was a coal miner with unusual mechanical genius but decidedly unpractical. It was his mother who was responsible for the practical qualities that played such a prominent part in his career. Michael had helped his father in the mines, and at the age of ten, recognizing the family's needs, he took employment in a glass factory in Wheeling, W. Va., where he shoveled coal into the "glory hole" or unit employed for resoftening glass during various stages of its manipulation in blowing. At that time glassblowers worked in two five-hour shifts per day. Black with soot and coal dust Michael would return to his home, bathe and clean up, and be ready for another blackening during the afternoon period. By the time he was fifteen he had become a glassblower.

In 1888, he began work in Toledo, Ohio, in the glass factory of Edward Drummond Libbey [*q.v.*]. Three months later he became its superintendent, and then the manager of a branch factory at Findlay, Ohio. In 1893 he had charge of the famous exhibit of the Libbey Glass Company at the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago. Somewhat before this time he had begun a series of experiments which led to the perfection of a completely automatic bottle-blowing machine. At first he applied an exceedingly simple principle, using a piston pump to suck glass into a mold from the surface of a pot of molten metal, then placing the gathered mass over another mold into which the article was blown by reversing the pump. The first bottles were decidedly crude, but in time this experiment resulted in a machine of over 9000 separate parts which, as recently modified, is capable of blowing four finished bottles per second. Preliminary patents for these machines were taken out in 1895 (patents No. 534,840; 548,587; 548,588). As the machine was developed, other patents were secured, that of Nov. 8, 1904 (No. 774,690) representing it essentially perfected. In 1903 Owens with Libbey and others organized the Owens Bottle Machine Company. Of this concern, later called the Owens Bottle Company, Owens was manager from 1915 to 1919, and vice-president from 1915 until his death. He was also vice-president of the Owens European Bottle Company, organized in 1905 with a plant at Manchester, England. When Irving W. Colburn [*q.v.*] began his researches in 1900 on a machine for the continuous drawing of flat sheet glass, Owens, together with his partner, Libbey, provided funds for the perfection of the machine. They purchased the patents in 1912, and in 1916 formed the Libbey-Owens Sheet Glass Company, whose first factory was built at Charleston, W. Va. Of this company Owens was vice-president until his death.

Owens possessed unusual mechanical ability but lacked the scientific knowledge required for the perfection of his plans. He displayed wise judgment, however, in consulting others, and a device thus brought to perfection he always considered a joint invention, though the fundamental idea had been his own. In 1919 he retired as general manager of the Owens Bottle Company to devote more time to his inventions. In addition to his bottle and sheet-glass machines, he perfected machines which were used in other factories for the blowing of lamp-chimneys and tumblers. During his lifetime he was granted forty-five United States patents on apparatus for controlling the operation of molds, annealing ovens, blowing glass, fire-finishing glass articles, the formation of special bottle necks, the making of sheet glass, the dumping of raw materials from the bottom of freight cars, the charging and operating of gas producers, the transferring of hot glass from furnaces to the blowing and drawing units. Some of these patents were taken out jointly with others, but the majority were awarded to him independently. After his death a number of patents were granted that had been applied for during his lifetime. He died in Toledo, survived by his wife, Mary (McKelvey) Owens of Bellaire, Ohio, whom he married in 1889, together with a son and a daughter.

[Keene Sumner, "Don't Try to Carry the Whole World On Your Shoulders," *Am. Mag.*, July 1922; *Michael J. Owens* (privately printed, 1923), a series of memorial articles including reprinted editorials from the *Glass Container*, Jan. 1924, and Toledo papers; *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Toledo News-Bee*, Dec. 27, 28, 1923.] A. S.

OWSLEY, WILLIAM (1782–Dec. 9, 1862), Kentucky jurist and governor, was born in Virginia, but in 1783 his parents, William and Catherine (Bolin) Owsley, removed with him to Lincoln County, Ky. After a common-school education, he held positions as teacher, deputy surveyor, and deputy sheriff. He studied law under John Boyle and practised in Garrard

County. About 1804 he married Elizabeth Gill. They had five children. In 1809 and 1811 he was a member of the state legislature. Appointed to the court of appeals in 1812, he resigned in 1813 but was almost immediately reappointed. One of the most important decisions in which he participated was *Commonwealth* vs. *James Morrison* (*2 Marshall,* 75), in which the court denied the right of the Bank of the United States to establish branches in Kentucky (*2 Marshall,* 75), although it later yielded to the decision of the federal Supreme Court. Another important case was *Blair, &c.* vs. *Williams* (*4 Littell,* 34), wherein the court held unconstitutional the Kentucky replevin act of 1820 giving debtors two years' grace unless creditors would agree to accept notes of the state bank. This decision met with an outburst of popular criticism, but it was reaffirmed by Owsley's opinion in *Lapsley* vs. *Brashears and Barr* (*Ibid.,* 47), which declared that the court need not follow the opinions of the legislature in interpreting the constitution and that previous replevin laws did not affect the issue. After these decisions the court was abolished by the legislature and a new one created. Nevertheless, he, with his colleagues, John Boyle and Benjamin Mills [*qq.v.*], continued to function as the old court, and after much controversy the new court was abolished. In 1828 he and Mills resigned, were renominated, but failed of confirmation by the Senate. He resumed practice in Garrard County and was again representative of that county in the state House of Representatives in 1831 and in the state Senate from 1832 to 1834. In 1833 he was a Clay presidential elector and from 1834 to 1836 was secretary of state under Gov. James T. Moorehead. He practised in Frankfort until 1843, when he retired from active practice and, having divided his farm in Garrard County among his five children, bought a new farm in Boyle County, near Danville.

In 1844, as the Whig candidate for governor, he defeated William O. Butler, the Democratic candidate, by a majority of about 5,000 votes. He was an able governor from 1844 to 1848 but was not popular on account of his unsociableness and, especially on account of his removal of Benjamin Hardin [*q.v.*] as secretary of state. The courts upheld him, but under the constitution of 1850 the governor was denied the power of removing this official. He was tall, slender, erect, simple, reserved. His prompt call of the militia in 1845 prevented a popular rescue of a convicted murderer. On the outbreak of the Mexican War, after receiving a letter from Gen. E. P. Gaines at New Orleans but before receiving official

notice from the War Department, he issued a call for volunteers and in a few days, by means of private subscriptions, had the Louisville Legion on its way to New Orleans. Largely owing to his recommendations, the state debt was decreased and the state prison improved. His last years were spent on his farm near Danville.

[Lewis and R. H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.*, revised ed. (2 vols., 1874); W. E. Connelly and E. M. Coulter, *Hist. of Ky.* (1922), vol. II; H. Levin, *The Lawyers and Lawmakers of Ky.* (1897); *The Biog. Encyc. of Ky.* (1878); L. P. Little, *Ben Hardin* (1887)]. W. C. M.

PACA, WILLIAM (Oct. 31, 1740–Oct. 13, 1799), signer of the Declaration of Independence, third governor of Maryland, jurist, was born near Abingdon, Harford County, Md., the second son of John and Elizabeth (Smith) Paca. The Paca family may have been of Italian origin; they appear in America as well-to-do planters in the latter part of the seventeenth century. At the age of fifteen William was sent to the College of Philadelphia where he received an M.A. degree in 1759. Shortly afterward he went to Annapolis where he studied law in the office of Stephen Bordley and was admitted to practice before the mayor's court in 1761. He completed his legal training at the Inner Temple in London and was admitted to the bar of the provincial court in 1764. On May 26, 1763, he was married to Mary Chew, the daughter of Samuel and Henrietta Maria (Lloyd) Chew of Annapolis, who had "a very considerable fortune" (Annapolis *Maryland Gazette,* June 2, 1763). Only one of their five children reached maturity. His wife died in 1774 and in 1777 he was married to Anne Harrison of Philadelphia who died three years later.

Paca was first elected to the provincial legislature in 1768 and soon became identified with the party opposed to the Proprietor. With Samuel Chase and others he urged that Governor Eden's proclamation regulating the fees of civil officers should be recalled. This was later done. He also led the opposition against the poll tax which had been laid for the support of the clergy. During this controversy Chase, Paca, and Thomas Johnson wrote (1774) an article in reply to Daniel Dulany and James Holliday who had defended the tax (Delaplaine, *post,* pp. 56–57). It was reprinted in London papers and brought the group into considerable prominence. While in the Assembly Paca was on the committee that directed the construction of the State House at Annapolis. In the preliminaries of the Revolution he became a leader of the patriot cause. He served on the Maryland Committee of Correspondence and was elected to the First Continental Congress in June 1774. In October

he returned to Annapolis where he was one of the representatives of that city in the Provincial Convention which met from Nov. 21 to 24. As member of the Second Continental Congress almost continuously from 1775 to 1779 he served on many important committees, among them the special Committee of Thirteen for Foreign Affairs. After Maryland removed the restrictions on the actions of her delegates in June 1776, Paca and his colleagues, Chase, Thomas Stone, and Charles Carroll, were free to vote for and sign the Declaration of Independence (C. F. Adams, *The Works of John Adams,* IX, 1854, p. 416).

Soon after the war started Paca became a member of the Maryland Council of Safety and spent several thousand dollars of his own money outfitting troops. He was in the convention that framed a constitution for the state in August 1776 and was elected one of the fifteen members of the first state Senate. In 1778 he was appointed chief judge of the Maryland General Court and two years later was appointed by Congress as the chief justice of the court of appeals in admiralty and prize cases (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* Feb. 9, 1780). In November 1782 he was elected governor of Maryland by the legislature and was reëlected unanimously in 1783 and 1784, his last term ending Nov. 26, 1785. As governor he was greatly interested in the welfare of returning soldiers and in reviving interests which the war exigency had caused to decline. He took an active part in raising subscriptions for Washington College and laid the cornerstone for the first building in 1783. The Society of the Cincinnati elected Paca to honorary membership for his services during the war. From 1784 to 1787 he served as vice-president of the Maryland Society, though the order was only for those who had served as army officers (*Annals of the Society of the Cincinnati of Maryland,* 1897, p. 32).

Paca was a delegate in the Maryland convention which adopted the federal Constitution in 1788. Although he proposed twenty-eight amendments he voted for adoption when the convention decided it had either to accept or reject the Constitution as submitted to it. In 1789 Washington appointed Paca federal district judge. He held this position until his death at "Wye Hall," his country home, in Talbot County. John Adams described Paca as a "deliberator" (Burnett, *post,* I, p. 67). He was identified with all important political movements in his state from his entrance into politics until his death. The numerous committees on which he served and the offices which he filled bear witness to his devotion to duty.

[H. E. Buchholz, *Governors of Md.* (1908), O. Tilghman, *Hist. of Talbot County, Md.,* vol. II (1915), and John Sanderson, *Biog. of the Signers to the Declaration of Independence,* vol. VIII (1827), contain short but rather inaccurate accounts of Paca's life. For periods and events in his career see: K. M. Rowland, *The Life of Chas. Carroll of Carrollton, 1737–1832* (2 vols., 1898); E. S. Delaplaine, *The Life of Thomas Johnson* (1927); E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Continental Cong.,* vols. I–VI (1921–33); *Archives of Md.,* vols. XI, XII, XLIII, XLV, XLVII, XLVIII (1892–1931); "Official Letter Book of Governor and Council," Maryland Archives (unpublished), vol. LXXVIII; L. W. Barroll, "Washington College, 1783," in *Md. Hist. Mag.,* June 1911; St. Johns Parish Records, Harford County; "Geneal. Record," in the Md. Hist. Soc.; B. C. Steiner, "Maryland's Adoption of the Fed. Constitution," *Am. Hist. Rev.,* Oct. 1899–Jan. 1900; *Baltimore American,* Oct. 17, 1799; *Fed. Gazette,* Oct. 16, 1799.]

M. E. F.

PACHECO, ROMUALDO (Oct. 31, 1831–Jan. 23, 1899), governor of California, congressman, diplomat, was born at Santa Barbara, Cal. He was the second son of Lieutenant of Engineers Romualdo Pacheco, a native of Guanajuato, Mexico, who went to California in 1825 as an aide-de-camp to Governor Echeandía, and of Doña Ramona Carillo, daughter of Don Joaquin Carillo of San Diego. The period of his childhood was one of turbulence. Spanish rule had come to an end in 1822; Mexico was involved in revolutionary difficulties. In the combat at Cahuenga Pass near Los Angeles in December 1831, Lieut. Pacheco was killed, leaving a widow and two sons, Mariano and Romualdo. Doña Ramona subsequently married an English sea captain, John Wilson. In 1840 the two children were sent to Honolulu for schooling. By the age of fifteen Romualdo was back in California, serving as supercargo on vessels in which his stepfather was interested. He was commanding a trading ship in 1846 when California passed under American control. When the state was admitted to the Union, he took the oath of allegiance to the United States and thereafter became one of the most active of its citizens. His family stood high in native California society and his English education and experience had fitted him for immediate political usefulness. He served several terms in the state Senate and also as judge of the superior court of his county. In 1863 he was appointed state treasurer by Gov. Leland Stanford to fill a vacancy. By subsequent election he served in this office for four years. In 1871 he was elected lieutenant-governor of California, and upon Governor Booth's election to the United States Senate, became governor of the state in January 1875.

Pacheco was the Republican candidate for the Forty-fifth Congress in 1876, for the fourth district. He was given the certificate of election and took his seat in 1877, but the House subse-

quently decided that his Democratic opponent had won the election by a few votes. Pacheco was the Republican candidate again in 1878, was elected, and was reëlected in 1880. His service at Washington was primarily as a member and subsequently as chairman of the committee on private land claims, a subject of much interest and litigation in California. Ending his congressional services in 1889, he was chosen by President Harrison in 1890 as American minister plenipotentiary to the Central American Republics. The next year he was accredited solely to Guatemala and Honduras. He appears to have satisfactorily represented the United States both in the settlement of the *Colima* dispute and in the harmonization of relations between these Republics. Subsequent to his retirement from the diplomatic service, he accepted the management of a cattle ranch in north Coahuila, Mexico, and later returned to San Francisco to engage in stock brokerage business. He died in January 1899 at Oakland, Calif.

As a public official, Pacheco made an excellent record. While lieutenant-governor of the state, he served, *ex officio,* as warden of the San Quentin penitentiary, where he found conditions which he worked to ameliorate. During his brief service as governor he took a strong attitude toward the development of the state university, and he was notably independent in his refusal to exercise executive clemency to wrong-doers. But perhaps his great service was in uniting the Spanish-speaking element of the state with the American settlers who entered in great numbers from 1849 on, in a common effort to build a harmonious California society and inculcate a loyal citizenship within the United States. In 1863 Pacheco married Mary McIntire, the writer of a number of successful comedies. He was a strikingly handsome man, a fine horseman, and was known among all his acquaintances for his personal charm and cultivated manners. It is related in his family that his greatest pleasure was to assemble at San Luis Obispo guests from far and wide for that typical ranch hospitality in which took place the sports and the unaffected social diversions which are a part of the state's heritage from its Spanish origin.

[H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.* (1890), vol. VII; T. H. Hittell, *Hist. of Cal.,* vol. IV (1897); C. E. Chapman, *A Hist. of Cal.: The Spanish Period* (1921); Richard H. Dana, *Two Years Before the Mast* (1869 ed.); *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.,* 1890–91; obituaries in New York and San Francisco papers; information as to certain facts furnished by Mariano Pacheco of San Luis Obispo.] D. P. B.

PACKARD, ALPHEUS SPRING (Dec. 23, 1798–July 13, 1884), college teacher, brother of Joseph Packard [*q.v.*], was born at Chelmsford, Mass., the son of Hezekiah and Mary (Spring) Packard. He was a descendant of Samuel Packard, who emigrated from Norfolk, England, in 1638 and settled in Hingham, Mass. Alpheus was educated at his father's home in Wiscasset, Me., at Phillips Exeter Academy, and at Bowdoin College, where he was graduated second in his class with the Latin salutatory in 1816. After three years spent in teaching at various Maine academies, he was called to be tutor at Bowdoin, beginning an uninterrupted service of sixty-five years which ended only with his death and which in extent, continuity, and variety has rarely been exceeded in American academic life. From 1824 until 1865 he was professor of the Latin and Greek languages; from 1842 until 1845 also professor of rhetoric and oratory; and from 1864 until 1884 Collins Professor of Natural and Revealed Religion. He was also college librarian from 1869 until 1881; and acting president from 1883 until 1884. On May 16, 1850, he was regularly ordained to the Congregational ministry and added preaching and the conduct of the chapel services at the college to his other manifold duties. For forty-five years he was librarian of the Maine Historical Society, and for over thirty years, a member of the Brunswick school committee.

The long years of service which he gave to so many different offices form but one indication of a character marked by unusual stamina and utter fidelity. All his long life he was in perfect health; and he was remarkably industrious and methodical. Although, like so many other teachers of his generation, he gave the greater part of his time and energy to his classes, he was a competent, if not an original, scholar. He edited *Xenophon's Memorabilia of Socrates, with English Notes* (1839) and wrote and published more than thirty essays and addresses, chiefly on educational and historical themes. As a teacher of the classics he did not emphasize unduly philological and grammatical details but always endeavored to unfold and illustrate the thought of the author. He set forth his theory of the art of teaching in these words: "Like faithful guides, we are to show the pupil the most direct path to knowledge, and become the companions of his way, pointing out to him the most favorable points whence he may view all that is grand and beautiful in the extensive field of human knowledge" (quoted in *Memorial, post,* pp. 5, 6). His methods were singularly effective and he was held in high esteem by his students. It was his good fortune to have under his instruction Longfellow, Hawthorne, and many others of later

eminence. Longfellow in his poem *Morituri Salutamus* delivered in 1875 at the fiftieth anniversary of his graduation from Bowdoin paid Packard, the only surviving member of the faculty of the twenties, the well-known tribute:

> "Honor and reverence and the good repute
> That follows faithful service as its fruit
> Be unto him whom living we salute."

He had a character of singular sweetness and gentleness combined with strong conviction. His portrait by Vinton, now in the Bowdoin Art Museum, reveals the features of a strong man, indubitably the gentleman. In person he was described as most impressive, very handsome, with a fine figure, and with none of the carelessness of dress and appearance that is not infrequent in academic circles. He was married, first, in 1827, to Frances Elizabeth, daughter of President Jesse Appleton [*q.v.*], who died in 1839 leaving five children, among them Alpheus S. Packard [*q.v.*], zoölogist of Brown University; and second, in 1844, to Mrs. Caroline W. (Bartelles) McLellan of Portland, who bore him one child. He died suddenly of heart failure at Squirrel Island, Me., while on a pleasure excursion with members of his family, and was buried in Brunswick.

[G. T. Little, *Geneal. and Family Hist. of the State of Maine* (1909), vol. II; W. R. Cutter, *New England Families, Geneal. and Memorial* (1913), vol. I; L. C. Hatch, *The Hist. of Bowdoin Coll.* (1927); *Memorial: Alpheus Spring Packard, 1798–1884* (1886), with bibliog.; *Bowdoin Orient*, July 16 and Oct. 1, 1884; *Daily Eastern Argus* (Portland, Me.), July 14, 1884; *Boston Transcript*, July 14, 1884.] K. C. M. S.

PACKARD, ALPHEUS SPRING (Feb. 19, 1839–Feb. 14, 1905), entomologist, teacher, was born in Brunswick, Me., and died at Providence, R. I. His father was Prof. Alpheus Spring Packard [*q.v.*] of Bowdoin College; his mother, Frances Elizabeth Appleton, daughter of Rev. Jesse Appleton [*q.v.*], president of Bowdoin, and a sister of the wife of President Franklin Pierce [*q.v.*]. The most of his male ancestors on both sides were ministers, and he was the first scientist in the family. A born naturalist, he began to collect minerals and shells when about fourteen or fifteen years old, and to read the natural history books in the library of the college. At sixteen he began to collect insects, and at eighteen commenced the study of comparative anatomy. The next year he entered into correspondence with Samuel H. Scudder [*q.v.*], then living at Williamstown, Mass., thus beginning a friendship which lasted through life. Entering Bowdoin in 1857, he graduated with the degree of A.B. in 1861. In the summer of 1860 he went with Prof. Paul A. Chadbourne [*q.v.*] upon the students' expedition from Williams College to Labrador, and in the spring of 1864 he accompanied the expedition organized by William Bradford, 1823–1892 [*q.v.*], the marine artist. His observations on these trips are recorded in *The Labrador Coast. A Journal of Two Summer Cruises to that Region* (1891). He was assistant on the Maine Geological Survey (1861–62), examining fossils in the Fish River region for the purpose of determining the age of the rocks.

After his graduation from Bowdoin, Packard went to Cambridge to study under Agassiz, and soon became a student assistant. In the meantime he received the degree of A.M. from Bowdoin (1862) and M.D. from the Maine Medical School (1864). In the latter year he was commissioned assistant surgeon in the first Maine Veteran Volunteers and went to the front, serving until the close of the war. For a year thereafter he was connected with the Boston Society of Natural History and then became curator of the Essex Institute. In October 1867 he married Elizabeth Derby, daughter of Samuel Baker Walcott. That same year he was appointed a curator of the Peabody Academy of Science, Salem, Mass., of which he was later director, and with Edward S. Morse, Frederick W. Putnam, and Alpheus Hyatt [*qq.v.*] founded the *American Naturalist*, of which he was editor-in-chief until 1887. He was lecturer on economic entomology at the Maine College of Agriculture and Mechanics (1870) and at the Massachusetts Agricultural College (1870–78), and lecturer on entomology at Bowdoin (1871–74). In 1869 he published his *Guide to the Study of Insects*, an illustrated volume of large size. The influence of this book on the study of entomology in the United States can hardly be overestimated. There was an unexpectedly large sale, and it was adopted by many of the colleges and universities. Some subsequent editions were published. Through this book, Packard became one of the best-known men in scientific circles in America, and in 1872 was elected to the National Academy of Sciences. In the same year he visited Europe for the first time and was warmly greeted by the most prominent naturalists. In 1873 he was one of the teachers in the Anderson School of Natural History at Penikese, established by the elder Agassiz. He was temporarily connected with the Kentucky Geological Survey in 1874, and in 1875, with the United States Geological Survey of the Territories under Ferdinand V. Hayden [*q.v.*]. In 1877 he became a member of the United States Entomological Commission, with Charles V. Riley and Cyrus Thomas [*qq.v.*], to investigate the Rocky Mountain locust. He resigned his position at the Peabody Academy of Science in

1878 to become professor of zoölogy and geology at Brown University, where he remained for the rest of his life. In 1898 he published his well-known *Text-Book of Entomology*, which dealt with the anatomy, physiology, embryology, and metamorphoses of insects.

During his career he worked incessantly. He was an ardent evolutionist and a man of great breadth of mind. Although a sound taxonomist, having described fifty genera and about five hundred and eighty species in many groups, his work was especially strong along biological lines. His last work was his monumental *Monograph of the Bombycine Moths* (3 vols., 1895–1914), the last volume being completed and edited after his death by T. D. A. Cockerell. He did a great work in popularizing science, but did little public lecturing on account of a defective palate. In addition to his scientific pursuits he was greatly interested in music and art. He was an honorary member of the Entomological Society of France and of the Entomological Society of London. His bibliography contains 579 titles. Aside from the important works already mentioned, he was the author of *A Monograph of the Geometrid Moths or Phalaenidae of the United States* (1876), and *Insects Injurious to Forest and Shade Trees* (1881), of which a second edition appeared in 1890. These constituted the first notable contributions to the study of forest entomology in North America. They were profusely illustrated and dealt almost entirely with the biological aspects of the insects treated. At the time of his death he was generally considered by both American and European scientific men as the broadest, the most learned, and the most accomplished entomologist in the United States.

[T. D. A. Cockerell, in *Biog. Memoirs Nat. Acad. Sci.*, vol. IX (1920), with bibliog.; Samuel Henshaw, *The Entomological Writings of Dr. Alpheus Spring Packard* (1887); *Popular Sci. Mo.*, May 1905; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Providence Daily Jour.*, Feb. 15, 1905.] L. O. H.

PACKARD, FREDERICK ADOLPHUS (Sept. 26, 1794–Nov. 11, 1867), editor of Sunday-school publications, was born in Marlboro, Mass. His father was the Rev. Asa Packard, a descendant of Samuel Packard, who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1638, settling in Hingham; his mother was Nancy Quincy, also of Puritan descent. For many years Asa Packard was pastor of the Congregational Church in Marlboro. Frederick prepared for college under his uncle, Hezekiah Packard, father of Alpheus S. and Joseph Packard [*qq.v.*], at Wiscasset, Me., and graduated from Harvard in 1814 with honors. He then studied law at Northampton, Mass., and practised at Springfield from 1817 until 1829. In 1819 he became editor and proprietor of the *Hampshire Federalist* (later the *Hampden Federalist*), a weekly journal giving the news of the day as well as articles on literary, scientific, and religious subjects; it was a predecessor of the *Springfield Republican*. In 1822 he married Elizabeth Dwight Hooker, daughter of Judge John Hooker. Shortly after, he united with the First Congregational Church of Springfield, and at once became interested in the Sunday school. He was elected its superintendent in 1827, and in 1828 was sent as a delegate to the Fourth Anniversary of the Sunday School Union. During 1828–29, he was a member of the state legislature of Massachusetts.

In the latter part of 1828 he was asked to become editorial secretary of the American Sunday School Union. Upon accepting the office, he moved to Philadelphia and until 1858 edited continuously all of the weekly and monthly periodicals of the Union, as well as all the books issued with its imprint. Certain unpleasant differences among the managers of the Union led to a suspension of his duties for a short time in 1858. Later, this opposition was withdrawn and he resumed his editorial work, continuing therein until the time of his death in 1867. During the period of his editorship more than 2,000 books passed through his hands. Between forty and fifty of these were written by him, though, owing to his unobtrusive disposition, he did not permit his name to appear on them, a fact which makes it difficult to identify them. In 1837 the Sunday School Union prepared a "Select Library" of some 120 volumes for use in public schools. The following year Packard endeavored to get Horace Mann [*q.v.*] and the Massachusetts Board of Education to approve the introduction of these into the Massachusetts schools. Since, in the opinion of Mann, the books were patently sectarian, their admission was not sanctioned. As a result, Packard carried on for years in newspapers and magazines a persistent attack upon Mann and the Board for excluding orthodox religion from the system of public education. (For full discussion of this episode, see R. B. Culver, *Horace Mann and Religion in the Massachusetts Public Schools*, 1929).

Packard was a man of many interests, and a great worker. He was a director of Girard College for Orphans, and in July 1849 was elected to its presidency, which he declined. He was manager of the House of Refuge, and for twenty-one years editor of the *Journal of Prison Discipline*. He also wrote many articles on religious, educational, and other subjects. Among the magazines of the Sunday School Union which

he edited was the *Sunday School Journal and Advocate of Christian Religion* and *Youth's Penny Gazette,* which later became the *Child's World;* the society's annual reports were also prepared by him. His own books include *The Union Bible Dictionary* (1837), *The Teacher Taught* (1839), *The Teacher Teaching* (1861), *The Rock* (1861), and *Life of Robert Owen* (1866). He had four children, among whom were Lewis Richard Packard, professor of Greek at Yale, and John Hooker Packard [*q.v.*].

[Charles Hudson, *Hist. of the Town of Marlborough . . . Mass.* (1862); Annual Reports of the Am. Sunday School Union, particularly *The 44th Ann. Report,* May 1868; E. W. Rice, *The Sunday School Movement 1780–1917 and the Am. Sunday-School Union, 1780–1917* (1917); G. H. Griffin, *Frederick A. Packard, A Memorial Discourse* (1890); *Phila. Inquirer,* Nov. 12, 1867.] H. I. D.

PACKARD, JAMES WARD (Nov. 5, 1863–Mar. 20, 1928), engineer, inventor, manufacturer, son of Warren and Mary E. (Doud) Packard, was born in Warren, Ohio. His father was a successful business man, engaged first in the hardware trade in Warren and later in extensive sawmill operations in Ohio, Pennsylvania, and New York. James spent a normal boy's life at home and developed a particularly keen interest in mechanics and electricity. He prepared for college in his birthplace, and at the age of seventeen entered Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Pa., the youngest in the class, graduating in 1884 with the degree of mechanical engineer. Immediately following his graduation he went to work in a steam power plant in New York City, and a year or so later obtained the job of foreman for the Sawyer-Mann Electric Company, New York, manufacturers of the Sawyer-Mann incandescent electric lamp. This association presumably gave him his first real opportunity to engage in research and experimentation, for in the course of the succeeding five years he acquired a number of valuable patents. These included a new form of incandescent lamp, a lamp socket, and four patents on improvements in vacuum pumps for exhausting the air from incandescent lamp bulbs.

In 1889 the Sawyer-Mann Company was sold to the Westinghouse interests, which sale included the transfer of Packard's patents; and, although he had the opportunity to connect himself with the new owners, Packard returned to his home in Warren and with his brother started an electrical business under the name of the Packard Electric Company. The following year, with the aid of local capital, the brothers reorganized their company as the New York & Ohio Company, and for more than ten years engaged in

Packard

the manufacture of electrical transformers, fuse boxes, measuring instruments, and cables. At first these products were of the conventional type, but Packard, devoting his time especially to research, devised a number of improvements, which were immediately manufactured by the company. Thus on Oct. 9, 1894, he obtained two patents for a transformer and fuse box; he devised a number of further improvements in transformers in 1897 and 1899, and perfected a new electrical measuring instrument in 1900.

Early in this decade Packard had become interested also in the "horseless carriage" and bought a French De Dion-Bouton motor tricycle which, incidentally, had been constructed in Massachusetts. He also investigated the early European horseless carriages and as a result, between 1891 and 1893, conceived the idea of building such a vehicle himself. Assisted by one of his shopmen, he drew up plans for a vehicle and negotiated for the purchase of a gasoline engine from Charles King of Detroit. The depression of 1893 unfortunately halted for five years the actual building of the automobile. In 1898, however, he purchased one of the first Winton automobiles and shortly afterwards, in company with George Weiss, who had been one of the organizers of the Winton Company, and W. A. Hatcher, the Winton shop superintendent, he designed and built his first automobile, which was given a road test Nov. 6, 1899. Following this successful trial, the Ohio Automobile Company was immediately formed as a department of Packard's electric company, and the manufacture of Packard automobiles was begun early in 1900. After several years of successful operation, in 1903, with the assistance of outside financial help, he reorganized his company as the Packard Motor Car Company and established a new plant at Detroit, Mich., where it has remained ever since. Although president of the new company, Packard continued to live in Warren. The mercantile side of the business had very little appeal for him, however, and after a few years he relinquished the presidency and for the remainder of his life acted as consultant and adviser to the company. As in his earlier electrical work, so in the automobile field his greatest interest was in research, and he contributed many valuable improvements to the automobile. These included gasoline engines; transmission, ignition and carburetion systems; chassis construction; and braking mechanisms. His success, it has been said, was due primarily to his sensitiveness to mechanical crudeness and his talent to see how things that had been done could be done better. His homes were storehouses of useful and experimental de-

vices, including a collection of watches, which, for exquisite beauty and intricate mechanism, was perhaps the finest ever assembled by an individual. It is now in the possession of the Horological Institute of America, Washington, D. C. His philanthropies were many, the outstanding ones being a million-dollar laboratory for electrical and mechanical engineering given to Lehigh University and the sum of a million dollars given to the Seaman's Institute in New York. In August 1904 he married Elizabeth Achsah Gillmer of Warren, Ohio, who survived him at the time of his death in Cleveland.

[J. G. Butler, *Hist. of Youngstown and the Mahoning Valley, Ohio* (1921, vols. I–II); correspondence with Horological Institute of America and the Packard family; J. R. Doolittle, *The Romance of the Automobile Industry* (1916); *Automobile Trade Jour.*, Dec. 1, 1924; *Automobile Industries*, Mar. 24, 1928; *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, Mar. 21, 1928; *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; Patent Office records.] C. W. M—n.

PACKARD, JOHN HOOKER (Aug. 15, 1832–May 21, 1907), surgeon, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Frederick A. Packard [*q.v.*], of old New England ancestry. His father's line went back to Samuel Packard who came to America in 1638; through his mother, Elizabeth Dwight (Hooker), he was descended from Rev. Thomas Hooker [*q.v.*], who emigrated to New England in 1633, and founded the town of Hartford, Conn., in 1636. John Hooker Packard received the degree of A.B. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1850, and that of M.D. from the same institution in 1853. He then went abroad and walked the hospitals of the Old World, spending most of his time in London and Paris, in the latter place seeing some of Nélaton's operations. On his return to America he served as resident physician in the Pennsylvania Hospital, with which institution he was to have a long and honorable career. During the Civil War he was acting assistant surgeon in the United States Army, and served as attending surgeon to the Christian Street and to the Satterlee General hospitals in Philadelphia. Though ill at the time, he obeyed at once emergency orders to report at the scene of action during the battle of Gettysburg, where "for three days and nights he labored incessantly, and then, being utterly unable to continue at work, was sent back to Philadelphia, suffering from a nearly fatal attack of typhoid" (Gibbon, *post*, p. lvii).

In 1863, his election as surgeon to the Episcopal Hospital, Philadelphia, introduced him again to major surgery, especially traumatic major surgery. He resigned from the Episcopal Hospital, when, in 1884, he was elected surgeon to the Pennsylvania Hospital, a position which he held until 1896. He served also for a number of years as surgeon to St. Joseph's Hospital. He was the type of man who took personal interest in the administration of the institutions with which he was connected. Elected a fellow of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia in 1858, he served faithfully as secretary from 1862 to 1877. In 1885 he was elected vice-president of the college. He also served as Mütter Lecturer, being the first to hold this post. His *Lectures on Inflammation Delivered before the College of Physicians of Philadelphia under the Bequest of Dr. Mütter* were published in book form in 1865. He also gave the second series, published under the title *Notes on Fractures of the Upper Extremity* (1867). Packard was a founder of the Philadelphia Academy of Surgery (1879), the Pathological Society of Philadelphia, and the Obstetrical Society of Philadelphia. He was also an original fellow of the American Surgical Association (1880) and its treasurer (1880–83).

His published works include *A Treatise on Fractures* (1859), a translation of J. F. Malgaigne's work; *A Manual of Minor Surgery* (1863); and *A Hand-book of Operative Surgery* (1870). He contributed to John Ashhurst's *International Encyclopaedia of Surgery* the articles entitled "Poisoned Wounds" and "Injuries to Bones" (the latter, a monograph of 260 pages); and to J. M. Keating's *Cyclopaedia of the Diseases of Children* the chapters entitled "Colotomy" and "Fractures and Dislocations." In 1881 he edited an American edition of Timothy Holmes's *System of Surgery*. He was also responsible for three editions of *The Philadelphia Medical Register and Directory* (1868, 1871, 1873). He was recognized as an expert in medico-legal cases, and often served as expert witness. He was an active member of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts, and was on its board of directors from 1884, and chairman of its committee on instruction from 1887 to his death. His own artistic skill was considerable and his hospital histories were often adorned by excellent sketches. His last days were saddened by being forced to give up all active surgical work as the result of an infection of his finger, acquired in the course of his professional duties (1896). He was married, June 3, 1858, to Elizabeth Wood; they had six children, two of his five sons becoming physicians.

[J. H. Gibbon, "Memoir of John Hooker Packard, M.D." *Trans. of the Coll. of Physicians of Phila.*, 3 ser. XXXI (1909); R. H. Harte, "Presentation of the Portrait of Dr. John H. Packard," *Ibid.*, 3 ser. XXXIX (1917); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), May 22, 1907.] A. P. C. A.

PACKARD, JOSEPH (Dec. 23, 1812–May 3, 1902), Episcopal clergyman, Biblical scholar, was born at Wiscasset, Me., the son of Hezekiah and Mary (Spring) Packard, and a descendant of Samuel Packard who emigrated from England to Hingham, Mass., in 1638, later moving to Bridgewater. His father enlisted in the Revolutionary army at the age of thirteen, later graduated at Harvard, and was a minister and teacher. Joseph's home life was, therefore, that of a New England country minister's household, very simple, but strongly influenced by religion and learning. He began the study of Latin and Greek at an early age with his father; at twelve went to Phillips Academy, Andover; at fourteen taught Greek and Latin in his father's school; and at fifteen entered Bowdoin College, where his brother, Alpheus Spring Packard, 1798–1884 [*q.v.*] was professor of Latin and Greek and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow was his French professor. He graduated in 1831, salutatorian of his class, delivering the address in Latin. After graduating, he taught for several years and was in charge of Brattleboro Academy, Vermont.

In 1833 he entered Andover Seminary, and while there became a member of the Episcopal Church, to which he had been attracted by "its liturgy and its ways." He valued highly the historic episcopate, the right of the laity to representation in church councils, the custom of common worship, and the sacraments, and remained during his long life a stanch and devoted churchman of the evangelical school. In 1834 he became professor of Latin, Hebrew, and other branches in Bristol College, and two years later was elected professor of sacred literature in the Theological Seminary in Virginia, where he spent the rest of his life. He was ordained deacon by Bishop Griswold, July 17, 1836, and priest by Bishop Meade, Sept. 29, 1837. In January 1838 he married Rosina Jones, daughter of Walter Jones [*q.v.*] and grand-niece of "Light-Horse Harry" Lee. They had nine children, four sons and five daughters. He served for twelve years on the American Committee for the Revision of the Bible, published several articles in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, and edited "The Book of Malachi" (1874) in J. P. Lange's *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures*. In 1874 he became dean of the Seminary and held this position until he retired in 1895. He continued to live at the Seminary until his death.

Packard's life covered almost all of the nineteenth century, and in him two civilizations met: the Puritan of New England and the Cavalier and Church of England of Virginia. His father saw General Washington take command of the army under the elm at Cambridge, his father-in-law commanded the militia of the District of Columbia against the British in 1814, while he himself was acquainted with Generals Lee and Jackson, and lost two sons in the Confederate Army. He was remarkable, also, for his great length of service as a professor in one institution, through which he exerted no little influence upon the religious life of America. He was an honest, accurate, and thoroughly trained scholar, with a fine simplicity of character, singleness of purpose, good judgment, practical wisdom, and unfailing sympathy.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; T. J. Packard, ed., *Recollections of a Long Life, Joseph Packard, D.D.* (1902); W. A. R. Goodwin, *Hist. of the Theological Sem. in Va.* (1923); *Alexandria Gazette*, May 3, 1902.]

T. K. N.

PACKARD, SILAS SADLER (Apr. 28, 1826–Oct. 27, 1898), pioneer in business education, was born at Cummington, Mass., son of Chester and Eunice (Sadler) Packard. His father was a descendant of Samuel Packard who settled in Hingham, Mass., in 1638 and later removed to Bridgewater. In 1833, when Silas was seven years old, his family migrated to Fredonia, Licking County, Ohio, taking a month for the journey and traveling the entire distance from Troy, N. Y., to Newark, Ohio, by water. His account of this trip and of the family's adventures in the new home, *My Recollections of Ohio* (1890), written many years later, gives a typical picture of the pioneer experiences of hundreds of New England families. A few terms in the district schools and a year in Granville Academy, Granville, Ohio, constituted all the formal schooling that the boy was able to acquire, but his native resourcefulness carried him far. At sixteen he was a teacher of penmanship in country schools. Three years later, having become master of a Kentucky school, he exhibited proficiency in portrait painting, for which he had to prepare his own materials. This interest, however, seems to have been temporary. At Cincinnati in 1848 he resumed the teaching of penmanship in a commercial school and later added bookkeeping to the branches in which he offered instruction. After a brief residence in Adrian, Mich. (1850–51), he spent two years in Lockport, N. Y., removing to Tonawanda, N. Y., in 1853, where he started a weekly newspaper, the *Niagara River Pilot*.

In 1856 he became associated with Henry B. Bryant and Henry D. Stratton in promoting a chain of business "colleges." This enterprise took him to Chicago and to Albany, N. Y. In 1858 he founded Packard's Business College in the city of New York. He also assisted in com-

piling *Byrant and Stratton's National Book-Keeping*, a series of textbooks the first of which was published in 1860, and from May 1868 to March 1870 he published *Packard's Monthly*. Once having decided that his career was to lie in the field of commercial education, he held to that objective for the remaining forty years of his life. The New York school prospered under his direction; in its first twenty-five years it numbered 6,000 pupils. He was eager and measurably successful in promoting the training of young women for office work and in convincing employers of their capability. The introduction of the typewriter, with the increased demand for stenographers, was met by added facilities for training in those branches. Packard was one of the first business-school proprietors to sense the meaning of the changed conditions in business life and to adapt his methods to them. For many years he held a place of accredited leadership in his chosen vocation. He was accounted a good speaker and writer and was active in several organizations, notably the Ohio Society. On Mar. 6, 1850, he was married to Marion Helena Crocker.

[Theophilus Packard, *The Geneals. of Samuel Packard, of Bridgewater, Mass., and of Abel Packard, of Cummington, Mass.* (1871); Moses Cary, *A Geneal. of the Families Who Have Settled in the North Parish of Bridgewater* (1824); *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 28, 1898; B. J. Lossing, *Hist. of N. Y. City* (1884); *Nat. Mag.*, Dec. 1891, pp. 205–08.] W. B. S.

PACKER, ASA (Dec. 29, 1805–May 17, 1879), railroad builder, congressman, philanthropist, was born at Groton, New London County, Conn., the son of Elisha Packer, Jr. It appears that his formal education was limited to the rudiments secured in the local district school. As a youth he entered the tannery of Elias Smith at North Stonington and so conducted himself that his employer planned to take him into partnership but died before the arrangements were completed. As a result, young Asa, after experimenting with farming in Connecticut and finding conditions unsatisfactory, determined at the age of seventeen to seek his fortune in Pennsylvania. Setting out on foot with a knapsack on his back he arrived in 1822 in Brooklyn, Susquehanna County, where he served as an apprentice to a relative who was a carpenter and joiner. He followed this trade for several years and even worked at it for a time in the city of New York while still maintaining a residence at Springville, also in Susquehanna County, where he purchased land in 1823 and built with his own hands a cabin that served as his home for ten years. Mauch Chunk on the Upper Lehigh at this time acquired real importance owing to the completion of the Lehigh

Packer

Valley canal, and Packer became the owner and master of a canal boat that carried coal from this place to Philadelphia. Saving his earnings he purchased coal lands on the Upper Susquehanna and in this way laid the foundations of the fortune that he came to possess. In 1831 he also began to operate a store and boatyard in partnership with his younger and only brother, R. W. Packer, and subsequently took a contract for the construction of canal locks on the upper navigation of the Lehigh which he completed in 1837. The year following he was at Pottsville, building boats to transfer coal to New York by way of the New Canal. He engaged in mining and transporting coal for the Lehigh Coal & Navigation Company and also purchased and operated on his own account mines at Hazleton.

In 1843 Packer entered public life upon his election to the state legislature. As a member of that body he was able to secure an act for the creation of the county of Carbon with Mauch Chunk as its county seat. For five years subsequent to the erection of the county he was associate judge of the county court. In politics he was a Democrat and in 1852 he was elected to Congress from the thirteenth district and served for two terms. While fairly constant in his attendance he made no speeches. He was inclined to be regular, usually voting with the majority of his party, and supporting both Pierce and Buchanan. His power within the ranks of the Democratic party cannot be measured by speeches and public appearances. In the National Democratic Convention of 1868 he received the votes of the Pennsylvania delegation for president; in 1869 he was the Democratic nominee for governor. But he was not destined to enter public office again, although he accepted in 1876 a post as commissioner for the Centennial Exhibition and was especially influential in connection with the Centennial Board of Finance. The year preceding his election to a seat in Congress he acquired a controlling interest in a projected railroad incorporated in 1846 under the name of the Delaware, Lehigh, Schuylkill & Susquehanna Railroad Company, which in 1853 became the Lehigh Valley Railroad Company. This he not only financed but built in spite of the unwillingness of the Lehigh Coal & Navigation Company to support a project that seemed doomed to failure. Although he was financially embarrassed at times before the completion of the road he shared largely in the profits of the mining and transportation business that was developed and became before his death the richest man in Pennsylvania.

At the close of the Civil War Packer decided

to establish an institution for the education of the youth of the region that had for over forty years been the scene of his chief business activities. To achieve this end he set aside $500,000 and also donated a considerable body of land. In 1866 the new institution, Lehigh University, was chartered by the Pennsylvania legislature and opened for instruction in temporary buildings. Packer added greatly to his original gift to this foundation during his lifetime and in his will made it a beneficiary to the extent of $1,500,000. In addition, he liberally endowed the university library. He also gave most liberally to various activities of the Episcopal Church of which he was a member and by his will his great wealth was largely distributed. He died at his Philadelphia residence in his seventy-fifth year. He had married, on Jan. 23, 1828, Sarah M. Blakeslee, the daughter of a farmer of Schuylkill township in Susquehanna County. She with two sons and a daughter survived him. Packer possessed an indomitable will, unusual foresight, and business judgment. He knew the value of money and never allowed himself to divert it to channels that would not be generally profitable or beneficial. Accordingly he never indulged in extravagances but always lived with rigid simplicity.

[*Outline of the Career of the Hon. Asa Packer of Pa.* (1867); M. A. DeW. Howe, *The Lehigh Univ.: Asa Packer, Founder* (1879); J. M. Leavitt, *Univ. Sermon: Memorial to A. Packer* (1879); Henry Coppée, *Asa Packer* (n.d.); *The Biog. Encyc. of Pa. of the Nineteenth Century* (1874); J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. VI (1916); M. S. Henry, *Hist. of Lehigh Valley* (1860); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); C. K. Stark, *Groton, Conn., 1705–1905* (1922); Archives of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.; collection of newspaper clippings relating to Packer in the Lehigh Univ. Lib.]

L. H. G.

PACKER, WILLIAM FISHER (Apr. 2, 1807–Sept. 27, 1870), editor and politician, was born in Howard Township, Centre County, Pa., the son of James and Charity (Bye) Packer. He received but little schooling since his father, a farmer, died when William was but seven years old. In January 1820 he apprenticed himself to a relative, Samuel J. Packer, who was editor of the *Public Inquirer* at Sunbury, Pa., to learn the printing trade. Later the paper was discontinued and he entered the office of Henry Petrikin, publisher of the *Bellefonte Patriot* at Bellefonte, Pa. In 1825 he went to Harrisburg and worked as a journeyman printer on the *Pennsylvania Intelligencer*, published by Charles Mowry and Simon Cameron. Two years later he was appointed clerk in the register's office of Lycoming County at Williamsport, Pa., and at the same time commenced the study of law in the office of Joseph B. Anthony of that place. In the fall of 1827 he formed a connection with John Brandon, publisher of the *Lycoming Gazette*, which at this time was the only newspaper issued in the northern part of Pennsylvania. On Aug. 18, 1829, he became the sole owner of the paper and published it until May 1836, when he sold it to John R. Eck. The *Gazette* was a Democratic paper and as its editor Packer became a leader in the local affairs of that party and was sent as a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Baltimore, Md., in 1835. Eventually he became known as one of the ablest politicians of Pennsylvania.

In 1831 Packer worked to secure state appropriations for the completion of the West Branch Division of the Pennsylvania Canal, and from June 1832 until 1835, when the canal was completed, he was superintendent of that division. In 1836 he joined with O. Barrett and Benjamin Parke in publishing the *Keystone* at Harrisburg, Pa., which in a short time became a strong influence in Pennsylvania politics. He retained his interest in this paper until 1841. In February 1839 he was appointed a canal commissioner for the state and served until 1841. The following year he was appointed auditor-general of Pennsylvania and held this office until May 1, 1845. In 1847 and again in 1848 he was elected a member of the state House of Representatives and during both terms served as speaker. In 1849 he was elected to the state Senate. Here he carried through, against strong opposition, the bill to incorporate the Susquehanna Railroad Company, and upon the organization of the company on June 10, 1852, he was made its president. He served until 1854, when the road was consolidated with others to form the Northern Central Railway Company, and then was made a member of the board of directors. In 1857 he was elected governor of Pennsylvania. He was essentially a Northern moderate which was revealed by his strong opposition to the Kansas policy of Buchanan, although he had labored for the latter's nomination at the National Democratic Convention in 1856, and by his opposition to secession in 1861. As governor he continued his activities in behalf of improved transportation facilities for the state. He urged state aid to carry on the construction of the Sunbury & Erie Railroad and shortly after he left office the measure was passed. At the close of his term as governor in 1861 he retired from political life and returned to his home at Williamsport, Pa., where he later died. He had married, on Dec. 24, 1829, Mary W. Vanderbelt, by whom he had six children.

[G. P. Donehoo, ed., *Pa.: A Hist.* (1926), vol. III; W. H. Egle, *An Illustrated Hist. of the Commonwealth of Pa.* (1876); T. W. Lloyd, *Hist. of Lycoming County, Pa.* (1929); J. B. Linn, *Hist. of Centre and Clinton Counties, Pa.* (1883); W. B. Wilson. *Hist. of the Pa.*

Railroad Company (1899), vol. I; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Sept. 28, 1870.]

J. H. F.

PADDOCK, ALGERNON SIDNEY (Nov. 9, 1830–Oct. 17, 1897), secretary and acting governor of the territory of Nebraska, United States senator, was born at Glens Falls, N. Y., the son of Ira A. Paddock, a prominent lawyer, and Lucinda (Wells) Paddock. He attended a local academy, then entered Union College at Schenectady, N. Y., from which, however, owing to financial difficulties, he was never graduated. Later he taught school and read law. In May 1857 he followed his brother, Joseph W. Paddock, to Omaha, Nebr., where he promptly secured admission to the bar, preëmpted a farm nearby, and threw himself actively into the life of the new community. He was married on Dec. 22, 1859, to Emma L. Mack, daughter of Daniel and Lucinda (Perry) Mack, of St. Lawrence County, N. Y.

Most of Paddock's time was soon absorbed in politics. He identified himself with the Republican party, wrote strong anti-slavery editorials for the *Nebraska Republican*, ran for the state legislature in 1858 and lost, sat in the first Republican territorial convention ever to be held in Nebraska, and attended both the national conventions that nominated Lincoln for the presidency. During the campaign of 1860 he stumped the state of New York for the Republican ticket, and perhaps in reward for this service he was appointed by President Lincoln on Seward's nomination to be secretary of Nebraska territory. This office Paddock held continuously from 1861 to 1867, and twice, once in 1862 and again in 1867, he also acted as governor. He did not, therefore, see service in the Civil War, although he worked energetically to fill the Nebraska quotas of volunteers, and to enlist militia for the defense of the Nebraska frontier against the Indians. During the Reconstruction period, at considerable cost to his political advancement, he stood loyally by the Johnson administration. He went down to defeat in 1866 as the Independent Republican candidate for Congress; he failed of election in 1867 to the United States Senate, and he declined an appointment tendered him by President Johnson in 1868 as governor of Wyoming. He was still at odds with the dominant wing of the Republican party during the campaign of 1872, when he supported Greeley for president. That same year he changed his residence to Beatrice, Gage County, Nebr., and turned his attention to business.

Paddock rendered his principal public service as a member of the United States Senate for two terms, 1875–81, and 1887–93. He was the politician's ideal senator, for he conceived it to be his chief duty in Washington to look after the interests of his constituents. Few senators have ever worked harder or more successfully at this task; during his second term alone he was said to have introduced or reported 328 bills that eventually passed. He watched jealously the interests of Nebraskans whenever national policies that would touch them intimately were up for consideration. Perhaps his greatest triumph came in 1890, when in response to a resolution he had introduced the Interstate Commerce Commission investigated the charges of excessive freight rates on western railroads and ordered reductions that saved Nebraska producers many thousands of dollars. He was replaced in 1881 by Chas. H. Van Wyck and in 1893 by William V. Allen, both men of radical tendencies who rose to power on waves of agrarian discontent. From 1882 to 1886 he was a member of the famous Utah Commission which sought with some success to induce the Mormons to obey the national laws on polygamy. Paddock had many friends, and deserved to have them. He was even-tempered, unfailingly courteous, optimistic —particularly with regard to the future of Nebraska—and always a man of his word. He died in 1897 survived by his wife and three of his five children.

[J. Sterling Morton and Albert Watkins, *Illustrated Hist. of Neb.*, vol. I (1905); T. W. Tipton, *Forty Years of Neb.* (1902); A. C. Edmunds, *Pen Sketches of Nebraskans* (1871); H. J. Dobbs, *Hist. of Gage County, Neb.* (1918); *Neb. State Jour.* (Lincoln) and *Morning World-Herald* (Omaha), Oct. 18, 1897.]

J. D. H.

PADDOCK, BENJAMIN HENRY (Feb. 29, 1828–Mar. 9, 1891), bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church, son of Rev. Seth Birdsey and Emily (Flagg) Paddock, was born in Norwich, Conn., where his father was for many years rector of Christ Church. Benjamin was a sedate, serious-minded youth whose natural bent was toward the ministry. He graduated from Trinity College, Hartford, in 1848 and, after a year spent in teaching at the Cheshire Academy, Cheshire, Conn., of which his father was then principal, he entered the General Theological Seminary, New York, completing his course there in 1852. On June 29 of that year he was admitted to deacon's orders at Christ Church, Stratford, Conn., of which his brother, John Adams Paddock [*q.v.*], later also a bishop, was rector. In May 1853 he married Caroline H. Cooke of Wallingford, Conn., and on Sept. 27, at Trinity Church, Norwalk, he was ordained priest. While deacon he served for a time as assistant minister at the Church of the Epiphany, New

York. Following a few months' rectorship in Portland, Me., which place he left in the interest of his health, he took charge of Trinity Church, Norwich. After about seven years here he went to Christ Church, Detroit. His first wife having died in 1860, he married in 1863 Anna D. Sanger of Detroit. He was always greatly interested in missionary activities, and in 1868 was elected missionary bishop of Oregon and Washington, but declined. In May 1869 he became rector of Grace Church, Brooklyn, where he remained until 1873, in which year he was elected bishop of Massachusetts and on Sept. 17 was consecrated to that office in his own church.

Bishop Paddock had just the qualities which the troubled diocese of Massachusetts needed in its spiritual overseer. His election fell in the period when the strife between high church and low church adherents was most intense. The General Convention of 1871 had been a stormy one, and Paddock had delivered a speech there which had made a strong impression both because of its content and its spirit. In Massachusetts there was much bitterness. After the death of Bishop Eastburn, an implacable opponent of high church practices, each party was eager that one favorable to its views should be chosen as his successor. The election finally narrowed down to a contest between Rev. Henry C. Potter and Rev. James De Koven [*qq.v.*], leader of the high church movement. When it was clear that neither could be elected, Paddock, a compromise candidate, was chosen. Time proved the choice a happy one. His abilities were in no wise extraordinary, but he was a man of sound judgment, transparent goodness, and singleness of purpose. Not given to speculation, he went placidly on his way, the faith he had received from the fathers undisturbed by doubts within or turmoil without. Though firm in his own convictions, he was not contentious or partisan and allowed great latitude to others. Phillips Brooks said of him that he was "not so much a leader as the creator of conditions of advance" (Allen, *post*, III, 407). In this respect he rendered a great service to his diocese. He showed practical wisdom of a high order, did not dictate to his clergy but so far as was expedient left them alone, avoided taking sides, and devoted himself assiduously to building up the weak places in the diocese. As a result the discord died out, cooperation took its place, and not only was comparative harmony achieved, but through the missionary interest of the bishop the diocese grew and strengthened. At the age of sixty-three he broke down under his labors, and died of cerebral hemorrhage a few months later. Among his published sermons and addresses are: *The Church's Ceaseless Work and Chiefest Glory* (1859); *Our Cause, Our Confidence, and Our Consequent Duty* (1861); *The Noble Ambition of a Christian College* (1866); *Diocese of Massachusetts: The Bishop's Commemoration Address on the Tenth Anniversary of His Consecration* (1883); *The First Century of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the Diocese of Massachusetts* (1885). The Bishop Paddock Lectureship at the General Theological Seminary is named in his honor.

[T. M. Clark, *A Memorial Sermon on the Life and Character of Rt. Rev. Benjamin Henry Paddock* (1891); A. V. G. Allen, *Life and Letters of Phillips Brooks* (1901), vols. II, III; *The Churchman*, Mar. 14, 1891; *Boston Herald* and *Boston Daily Globe*, Mar. 10, 1891.]

H. E. S.

PADDOCK, JOHN ADAMS (Jan. 19, 1825–Mar. 4, 1894), bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church, was born in Norwich, Conn., the eldest son of Rev. Seth Birdsey and Emily (Flagg) Paddock, and a brother of Bishop Benjamin H. Paddock [*q.v.*]. When twenty years old he graduated from Trinity College, Hartford, and in 1849 from the General Theological Seminary, New York. On July 22 of that year he was ordained deacon at Christ Church, Norwich. He served as assistant to Rev. Lot Jones at the Church of the Epiphany, New York, and in June 1850 married Ellen M. Jones, the rector's daughter, who died shortly after their marriage. In 1850 he was ordained priest at Christ Church, Stratford, Conn., of which church he was rector until 1855. For the next twenty-five years he was in charge of St. Peter's Church, Brooklyn, and active in the administrative work of the diocese of Long Island. On Apr. 23, 1856, he married Frances Chester, daughter of Patrick and Susan Alada (Thurston) Fanning. In 1880 he was made missionary bishop of Washington Territory and on Dec. 15, was consecrated at St. Peter's.

In the spring of the following year he began more than a decade of strenuous activity in the Northwest. On the way out his wife contracted pneumonia and died soon after their arrival on the field. Before leaving the East she had collected money to take with her as the nucleus of a fund for establishing a much-needed hospital. More was added, and on the first anniversary of her death, Bishop Paddock dedicated at Tacoma the Fannie C. Paddock Memorial Hospital (later the Tacoma General Hospital). With good sense and unflagging devotion, never sparing himself, he sought to further the religious and educational interests of the Territory. One of his achievements was the raising of $50,000 in the East to insure a conditional gift of land and money for

the establishment at Tacoma of the Anna Wright Seminary, and Washington College. His efforts in this cause impaired his health, and he was never entirely well thereafter. By 1892 the comparatively few missions and parishes of which he had taken charge when he was made bishop had so increased in numbers that the field was divided into two jurisdictions, and he became missionary bishop of Olympia, with some fifty-seven missions and parishes in his care. While returning from the General Convention of 1892, he suffered a stroke and later went to Southern California in the interest of his health. Here, near Santa Barbara, he died; his burial was at Vancouver. Among his published writings are: *An Historical Discourse, Delivered in Christ Church, Stratford, Conn., Mar. 28th, 1855* (1855); and *The Modern Manifestations of Superstition and Skepticism* (1870).

[W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (1905), vol. I; Herbert Hunt, *Tacoma, Its Hist. and Its Builders* (1916), vol. I; *Churchman*, Mar. 17, 1894; *Tacoma Daily Ledger* and *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*, Mar. 6, 1894; information from Fannie Paddock Hinsdale, Vancouver, B. C.] H. E. S.

PADILLA, JUAN DE (*c.* 1500–*c.* 1544), Franciscan missionary, was a native of Andalusia. It was said that he "had been a fighting man in his youth" (Castañeda, in Winship, *post*, 1904, p. 33). He came to New Spain about the year 1528 and was attached to the Order of Friars Minor in the province of Santo Evangelio. In 1529 he became a military chaplain in the expedition of Nuño de Guzman to Nueva Galicia and Culiacán. In this capacity he served for three years, trying to rescue from oppression and slavery the natives who had been captured by the Spanish settlers on the borderland of the unknown wilderness. In the course of the following years he made many missionary journeys among the Mexican Indians. He built monasteries at Zapotlan, Túxpam, and Tulancingo, ruling the friars as superior and guardian until 1540. In that year, hearing of the new lands discovered by Fray Marcos de Niza [*q.v.*], he was fired with apostolic zeal to Christianize the natives there. In company with Fray Marcos and two other religious of the Order of St. Francis he obtained permission to join the expedition of Francisco Vázquez Coronado [*q.v.*]. One may gauge the stamina of the much-traveled Padilla by the fact that he was a pedestrian in all his journeys. After reaching Zuñi with Coronado he trudged on with Pedro de Tovar to Moqui in the vicinity of the Grand Canyon, and after wending his way back to Zuñi, joined Hernando de Alvarado on a trip of several hundred miles over vast deserts and immense rocky areas; he accompanied Coronado with a well-selected troop of cavaliers in search of the mythical Quivira and returned with the disappointed General to Cicuye (now known as Pecos, N. Mex.).

When Coronado abandoned New Mexico in 1542, Padilla, Fray Juan de la Cruz, and the lay brother Fray Lúis Descalona remained behind in the midst of the savages, with only one mounted Portuguese soldier as a military escort. Two *donados* of the Franciscan Order (tertiaries) and two Mexican Indian boys also cast their hazardous lot with the friars. Slowly they retraced the weary way to Quivira. The little party plodded the long and painful journey to the place where Coronado had planted a cross, and there established the first mission in the North American Southwest. The religious influence exercised by the padre upon the roving children of the prairies soon gained their confidence and affection, but his ardent missionary zeal urged him to attempt also the conversion of the Guas, a hostile tribe near by. This project was bitterly opposed by the Quivirans, but Padilla was determined to go. Only one day after his departure, he was overtaken by a galloping horde of Quivira Indians. His companions were ordered to flee for their lives, while he dropped on his knees offering his soul to his Master, and as he prayed, the Quivirans pierced him from head to foot with arrows. There has been much difference of opinion about the location of Quivira, the place near which he met his martyrdom. It has been placed on the Canadian River in the Texas Panhandle (Donoghue, *post*) and also in what is now Kansas, somewhat north of the present Wichita (C. O. Paullin and J. K. Wright, *Atlas of the Historical Geography of the United States*, 1932, pl. 38). The year of his death is given variously as 1542 and 1544; the day of his commemoration is Nov. 30.

[Original sources are documents of Coronado, Castañeda, and Jaramillo, in *Coleccion de Documentos Inéditos Relativos al Descubrimiento . . . de las Posesiones Españolas . . .*, III (1865), 363–69, 511–13, XIII (1870), 263–68, XIV (1870), 304–29, translated by G. P. Winship in *U. S. Bureau of Ethnology, Fourteenth Ann. Report, 1892–93* (1896) and in Winship, *The Journey of Coronado* (1904). See also P. J. Foik in *Mid-America*, Jan., Oct. 1930; David Donoghue, in *Southwestern Hist. Quart.*, Jan. 1929; A. F. Bandelier, in *Am. Cath. Quart. Rev.*, July 1890; Augustin de Vetancurt, "Menalogio Franciscano," *Teatro Mexicano*, vol. IV (1871).] P. J. F.

PAGE, CHARLES GRAFTON (Jan. 25, 1812–May 5, 1868), physician, pioneer in electrical experiment, was the son of a sea captain, Jeremiah Lee Page, and his wife Lucy (Lang) Page. He was of English ancestry, descended from John Page who came to New England in

1630, and was a native of Salem, Mass., where both his parents were born. Entering Harvard in 1828 at the age of sixteen, he graduated four years later and then studied medicine in Boston. He began practice in Salem, but at the same time engaged in experimental research in electricity, this he continued with short intermissions throughout his life, publishing the results from time to time in Silliman's *American Journal of Science and Arts*. Starting with Henry's calorimotor for obtaining sparks and shocks, he developed an induction apparatus of greater intensity than Henry's. This he described in the *Journal* of January 1837, and it is recognized to be in principle, with Ruhmkorff's improvements, the induction coil of today. About this time, too, he devised the self-acting circuit breaker and appears to have been the first to apply it to produce the extreme alterations necessary in induction machines. He independently discovered, also, the remarkable effect produced by substituting bundles of iron wires for solid iron bars in induction coils. Early in 1838, under Page's direction, all these discoveries were incorporated in a coil machine by Daniel Davis, Jr., an instrument maker of Boston, Mass., who subsequently made and sold at a considerable profit many more machines similar to this original one. Page, however, did not receive any financial benefit. In this same year he moved with his parents to Fairfax County, Va. Here he practised his profession for a time, and continued his electrical experiments, especially in the field of magneto-electricity, his chief object being to introduce electro-magnetism as a substitute, to a greater or less extent, for steam power. Being a man of moderate means, however, he could ill afford to devote his full time to this work, and in consequence his progress was rather slow.

About 1841 he was made one of the two principal examiners in the United States Patent Office, and in 1844 accepted, in addition, the chair of chemistry in the medical department of Columbian College (now George Washington University). He was compelled, however, to relinquish this position in 1849 on account of the pressure of his duties in the Patent Office. During this period his electrical work had definitely advanced, and by 1846 he had completed a small reciprocating electro-magnetic engine, having as its source of power the force with which the pole of an electro-magnet is drawn into its magnetizing helix. Three years later, as a result of a series of public lectures on electro-magnetism which he gave in Washington, attended by a special committee of the United States Senate,

Page was granted a special Congressional appropriation to continue his work on a large scale. He built several large stationary reciprocating electro-magnetic engines of both the vertical and horizontal types; then, about 1850, began the construction of a locomotive having two of his electric engines. Upon its completion in 1851, it was tried out over a specially constructed track five miles long between Washington and Bladensburg, Md. The trial was not successful even though a speed of nineteen miles an hour was obtained, mainly because the electric batteries were incapable of furnishing the necessary current to operate the locomotive for any appreciable length of time.

In 1852 he resigned from the Patent Office and, in association with J. J. Greenough and Charles L. Fleischmann, established in Washington the *American Polytechnic Journal*, the first number of which appeared early in 1853. During the two years of its existence (1853–54) he contributed many articles on electricity, including his *History of Induction: The American Claim to the Induction Coil and its Electrostatic Developments*, published in book form in 1867. He continued with his electrical experiments in his own laboratory and patented his design of a reciprocating electro-magnetic engine, receiving patent number 10,480 on Jan. 31, 1854. After the discontinuance of the *American Polytechnic Journal*, Page did not appear in any public capacity until 1861, when he again became examiner of patents in the Patent Office, a position he held for the remainder of his life. Outside of his electrical researches his greatest interest, especially in the latter part of his life, lay in rose culture. In this work he produced several new varieties, which he described in print and cuttings of which he furnished to rose growers both in the United States and abroad. On Sept. 23, 1844, he married Priscilla Sewall Webster of Augusta, Me., and at his death was survived by his widow and five children.

[C. N. Page, *Geneal. Chart of the Page Family* (1917); T. C. Martin and Joseph Wetzler, *The Electric Motor and its Applications* (1887); *Am. Jour. of Science and Arts*, July 1869; Waldemar Kaempffert, *A Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924), vol. I; E. W. Byrn, *The Progress of Invention in the Nineteenth Century* (1900); S. P. Thompson, *Dynamo-Electric Machinery* (1893); P. S. W. Page, *Reminiscences, 1883–1886* (privately printed, 1896); *Evening Star* (Washington), May 6, 1868; Patent Office records.]

C. W. M—n.

PAGE, DAVID PERKINS (July 4, 1810–Jan. 1, 1848), educator, was born in Epping, N. H. His father was a well-to-do farmer who refused for years to allow his son to leave the farm to attend an academy. Finally, when David

was sixteen, his entreaties prevailed and for a few months he attended Hampton Academy in New Hampshire and for the next winter taught a district school in the neighborhood. Then, after a few more months at the academy, he taught successively in a district school in Epping for a winter and then in Newbury, Mass. By this time he had determined to make teaching his profession and at the age of nineteen opened a private school in Newburyport. He began with five pupils but before the end of the term there were more applicants than he could accommodate. Two years later, in 1831, he was appointed associate principal of the Newburyport High School, in charge of the English department. In this position he remained for twelve years. On Dec. 16, 1832, he was married to Susan Maria Lunt.

During the winter of 1843 the legislature of the state of New York adopted the normal school system then in operation in Massachusetts and made an appropriation to establish a normal school in Albany in 1844. Opposition was determined and unscrupulous, and the success of the plan depended largely upon the choice of the principal. On the recommendation of Horace Mann and other eminent educators in Massachusetts members of the executive committee entered into correspondence with Page and he was appointed to the position. In Albany he found chaos. The rooms were unfinished; there was no apparatus, and nothing was ready for the opening session. By his tact and energy he was able to overcome the obstacles to progress and soon he had won favor. For three years he gave himself no rest. During the vacations he visited the different parts of the state, attended teachers' institutes, and lectured day after day. Everywhere he removed prejudice, won friends, and attracted pupils to the school. Opposition had died down. By 1847 the school was no longer an experiment, but to achieve this success Page had undermined his own strength. After an illness of a few days he died from pneumonia on Jan. 1, 1848.

Page possessed a singular aptitude for teaching. His intense fondness for study had led him to acquire a good knowledge of Latin and a fair amount of Greek. He was an excellent mathematician and had rather more than an ordinary acquaintance with chemistry and the other natural sciences in addition to a thorough knowledge of history and literature. He studied the natures and capacities of his students and won from them a respect which insured a high degree of order and harmony in his school. He was liked as a teacher and his students attended his

lectures with interest. Before he left Newburyport he had delivered several addresses before the Essex County Teachers' Association, which Horace Mann praised most highly. Of his lecture, "The Mutual Duties of Parents and Teachers," six thousand copies, a large number for those days, were printed and distributed among the teachers of Massachusetts. Page's contemporaries have described him as a man of great personal charm. His one published book, *The Theory and Practice of Teaching, or the Motives and Methods of Good School-Keeping,* was issued in 1847, the year before his death. It passed through many editions and was considered an invaluable guide for the inexperienced teacher. He also prepared a "Normal Chart of Elementary Sounds" for class-room use. The best edition of his work on teaching is that issued in 1885 by William H. Payne.

[There is a biographical sketch of Page in W. H. Payne's edition of Page's *Theory and Practice of Teaching.* See also: W. F. Phelps, *David P. Page: His Life and Teachings* (1892); J. M. Greenwood, ed., *The Life and Work of David P. Page* (1893), including some of Page's writings; E. A. Huntington, *A Funeral Discourse on David Perkins Page* (1848); the *Common School Jour.*, Apr. 1, 1848; the *Am. Jour. of Educ.*, Dec. 1858; *Daily Albany Argus,* Jan. 4, 1848.]

J. S—n.

PAGE, JOHN (Apr. 17, 1743 o.s.–Oct. 11, 1808), Revolutionary patriot, congressman, governor of Virginia, was born at "Rosewell," the great house built in Gloucester County by his grandfather, Mann Page [*q.v.*]. He was the son of Mann and Alice (Grymes) Page and thus represented an alliance of two of the dominant families in Tidewater Virginia. He gave to his grandmother, Judith (Carter) Page, the credit for whetting his appetite for reading and stimulating his inquisitive mind. When nine years old he was put in the grammar-school of the Rev. William Yates with some dozen sons of neighboring planters. The arid training he had there was little to his liking, and after a year a private tutor was engaged for him. When he was thirteen he entered the grammar-school at the College of William and Mary and continued there until 1763, when he finished the regular course in the philosophy schools. At William and Mary he and Thomas Jefferson became fast friends, sharing their ideas and their confidences. Their correspondence spanned fifty years with not a discord in its friendly harmony. It was to him that Jefferson wrote the letters that reveal his youthful romance with the "fair Belinda," Rebecca Burwell who was so soon to marry Jacquelin Ambler (Ford, *post*, I, 342, 357). Of his friend, Jefferson declared thirty years later to Albert Gallatin that he loved him as a brother

(*Ibid.*, VIII, 85). About 1765 Page married Frances, the daughter of Robert Carter Burwell of Isle of Wight County. They had twelve children, five of whom were married to sons and daughters of Thomas Nelson [*q.v.*]. In 1789 Page married in New York City, Margaret, the daughter of William Lowther of Scotland, who bore him eight children. For a time he was president of the Society for the Advancement of Useful Knowledge, at Williamsburg, a group that sought to play the rôle of the Royal Society of London in Virginia. With his friend David Jameson he was interested in astronomy and made experiments in measuring the fall of rain and dew. His friends called him "John Partridge" because of his astronomical pursuits, especially in calculating an eclipse of the sun. He confessed in later years that he did not think he had made great proficiency in any study for he was too sociable to shut himself off in solitude for study as did his friend, Jefferson (Autobiography, *post*, p. 151). He followed the fortunes of the Anglican Church with zeal and such devotion that he was suggested by certain of his friends as the first bishop of Virginia. In his religious convictions he was orthodox, and he opposed on many occasions the free thinking of certain of his fellow Virginians. In 1785 he was a lay delegate from Virginia to the convention of his church in New York.

In politics he began his career as a member of the colonial House of Burgesses under the patronage of his kinsmen, the Nelsons, and he had the favor of the governors, Botetourt and Dunmore. When the tide of Revolutionary sentiment rose he helped to direct its flow as a member of the Council and the Committee of Public Safety and then as lieutenant-governor under Patrick Henry. He was a member of the convention that framed the constitution for Virginia in 1776. He served in a military capacity in the Yorktown campaign and contributed of his private means to the Revolutionary funds. In the election for governor of Virginia in 1779 he ran a close second to his friend Jefferson, but this political matching was not allowed to strain the constancy of their friendship (see Ford, *post*, II, 188). After the Revolution he represented Gloucester in most sessions of the Virginia Assembly until 1789 when he went to Congress. He sat in that body until 1797 when, as he said, John Adams and Alexander Hamilton shut him out (Autobiography, *post*, p. 150). With James Madison, 1749–1812 [*q.v.*], and others he represented Virginia in determining the boundary between Pennsylvania and Virginia in 1784. He waged an active campaign for Jefferson in 1800.

In 1802 he succeeded James Monroe as governor of Virginia and served three successive terms in that office. In the closing years of his life he held the office of commissioner of loans, a federal office to which his friend Jefferson appointed him, recognizing his need of an office with a salary but fearing to place him in a position where his too little discriminating trust in his fellowmen might bring woe to him.

The care of a family of twenty children, the maintenance of the princely mansion of "Rosewell" and his sociable rather than business inclinations brought Page in his later years to a decline in fortunes. In 1786 he had been the largest slave owner in Abingdon Parish in Gloucester County, counting his black people to the number of 160. On his death at the age of sixty-four he was buried in the yard of St. John's Church at Richmond, where many of the stirring scenes of the Revolution took place. His own estimate of his life was that it had been a life devoted to liberty.

[Letters and photostats in Archives of Univ. of Va., and Archives of American Philosophical Soc., Philadelphia; brief autobiography in *Va. Hist. Register*, July 1850, and in Meade, *post*, I, p. 147; *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson*, ed. by P. L. Ford, vols. I, II, IV, VII–IX (1892–98); *Executive Jour. of the Council of Colonial Va.*, vols. III, IV (1928–30); *Am. Hist. Rev.*, July 1896; *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1893, July 1896, Oct. 1897, Oct. 1902, Oct. 1911; *Wm. and Mary College Quart.*, Jan. 1896, pp. 200–01, Oct. 1896, Apr. 1916; Wm. Meade, *Old Churches . . . of Va.* (2 vols., 1861); R. A. Lancaster, *Historic Va. Homes and Churches* (1915); R. C. M. Page, *Geneal. of the Page Family in Va.* (1883); *Richmond Enquirer*, Oct. 14, 1808.] M. H. W.

PAGE, MANN (1691–Jan. 24, 1730), Virginia planter and councilor, was born in Virginia, the grandson of John Page, who emigrated from England about 1650, became the progenitor of the Page family in Virginia, and established his house firmly in lands and public regard. Mann Page was the son of Matthew Page who was active in public and private affairs of the colony. He inherited large possessions from his father while his mother, Mary (Mann) Page, the sole heiress of John and Mary Mann of "Timberneck," Gloucester County, had brought to her husband and children broad acres. Both parents died before he was sixteen years old, and the boy was sent abroad in 1706 to Eton College. In 1709 he entered St. John's College, Oxford. On Feb. 6, 1713/14, he became a member of the Council of Virginia on the recommendation of the governor of the colony, who described him as a man of culture and influence. His associates were the important men of the colony.

By inheritance and by patents taken in his own right he became, according to tradition, the

second largest land owner in Virginia. His social and economic position was entrenched by his marriage first, in 1712, to Judith, the daughter of Ralph Wormeley, the secretary of Virginia, by whom he had two sons and a daughter, and second, in 1718, to Judith, the daughter of Robert Carter, 1663–1732 [*q.v.*], by whom he had five sons and a daughter. His father-in-law, "King" Carter, associated Page with him in organizing the Frying Pan Company to mine copper on the boundary of the present counties of Fairfax and Loudoun, where they held a tract of some 27,000 acres and reopened an old Indian trail from Tidewater to the mine on Frying Pan Run. At his death when he was still a relatively young man, Page owned land in Frederick, Prince William, Spotsylvania, Gloucester, Essex, James City, Hanover and King William counties. His most lasting monument was his home, "Rosewell," begun in 1725 on the right bank of Carter's Creek in Gloucester County, near the junction with the York River. It was barely completed before his death. The years have wrapped about this house many traditions. Built of brick, three stories high, with marble casements, carved mahogany finishings, and a lead roof, it was probably the largest home of an eighteenth-century colonial planter in Virginia. With the wings it had a frontage of 232 feet and something like thirty-five rooms. So severe a drain was the financing of such a structure in planter economy that Page's heirs were embarrassed by the debts that devolved upon them and had to sell lands to realize money to discharge the obligation. At the council board, acquiring and administering his huge tracts of land, stretching wide the patrimony for his rapidly increasing family, he was a typical gentleman of his age. When his surviving widow came to write his epitaph she declared, "His publick Trust he faithfully Discharged with Candour and Discretion Truth and Justice. Nor was he less eminent in his private Behaviour. . . ." (*Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Jan. 1924, p. 45.)

[*Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Apr. 1897, July 1898, Oct. 1905, Apr. 1913, Jan. 1923, Jan. 1924; Wm. Meade, *Old Churches . . . of Va.* (2 vols., 1861); R. C. M. Page, *Geneal. of the Page Family in Va.* (1883); R. A. Lancaster, *Historic Va. Homes and Churches* (1915); *Exec. Jour. of the Council of Colonial Va.*, vols. III, IV (1928–30); *Wm. and Mary College Quart.*, Jan. 1898.] M. H. W.

PAGE, RICHARD LUCIAN (Dec. 20, 1807–Aug. 9, 1901), Confederate naval and army officer, son of William Byrd and Anne (Lee) Page, was born in Clarke County, Va. His father, a farmer and planter, was of the Page family of Virginia which descended from John Page, an immigrant from England in early colonial days. His mother was the sister of Henry, "Light-Horse Harry," Lee [*q.v.*]. He attended the common-schools of Clarke County and Alexandria, Va. He chose the navy for a career, became a midshipman in 1824, and did his first cruising on board the *John Adams* with Admiral Porter in the West Indies. In 1825 he was transferred to the *Brandywine* to convey General Lafayette to France. He became a passed midshipman in 1830, was promoted to lieutenant in 1834, and to commander in 1855, which grade he held at the outbreak of the Civil War. During this period he did sea duty in nearly every part of the globe and served three tours on ordnance duty and one as executive officer at the Norfolk navy yard. His more important assignments at sea were as executive officer and commander of the *Independence*, flagship of Commodore Shubrick, during the Mexican War, as commander of the *Perry* from 1852 to 1854, and as commander of the *Germantown* from 1857 to 1859.

Resigning from the Federal service when Virginia seceded, Page became an aide on the staff of Gov. John Letcher of Virginia and was assigned to duty in connection with the organization of a state navy. He supervised the construction of fortifications at the mouth of the James River and on the Nansemond River and Pagan Creek. On June 10, 1861, he was commissioned commander in the Confederate States navy and was assigned to duty as ordnance officer at the Norfolk navy yard. While on this duty he volunteered to assist in firing an eleven-inch gun at Sewell's Point against Federal vessels. He was soon promoted to captain and assigned the task of establishing an ordnance and construction depot at Charlotte, N. C., which he operated for about two years. He was with Commodore Tattnall on board the *Savannah* at the naval battle off Port Royal. In 1864 he was commissioned brigadier-general in the provisional army and placed in command of the outer defenses of Mobile Bay with headquarters at Fort Morgan, Ala. He gallantly defended his fort against the combined sea and land attack of Admiral Farragut and General Granger, but after a terrific bombardment which made breaches in the walls of the fort and disabled most of his cannon and set fire to the citadel, he was compelled on Aug. 23, 1864, to capitulate. He was held as a prisoner of war until September 1865. After the war he settled at Norfolk, Va., and took an active interest in the affairs of the community. He served from 1875 to 1883 as superintendent of public

schools. In 1841 he had married Alexina, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth (Calvert) Taylor of Norfolk, Va. He died at Blueridge Summit, Pa., in his ninety-fourth year. He was survived by his wife and three children.

[*War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Army*); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of the Confed. States Navy* (1887); C. A. Evans, ed., *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), vol. III; T. H. S. Hamersly, *Gen. Reg. of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (1882); *Special Orders of the Adjutant and Inspector General's Office, Confed. States*, 1861–65; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, vol. IV (1888); R. C. M. Page, *Geneal. of the Page Family in Va.* (1883); *Encyc. of Va. Biog.* (1915), vol. III; *Va.-Pilot* (Norfolk), Aug. 10, 1901.] S. J. H.

PAGE, THOMAS JEFFERSON (Jan. 4, 1808–Oct. 26, 1899), naval officer, explorer, was born on his father's estate in Matthews County, Va., eighth son of Mann and Elizabeth (Nelson) Page and grandson of Gov. John Page and Gov. Thomas Nelson [*qq.v.*] of Virginia. He was appointed midshipman Oct. 1, 1827, and joined the *Erie* in the West Indies. Then followed several years of coast survey work, 1833–42, during which time he was promoted to lieutenant, 1837, and gained special favor with the director of the survey, Ferdinand Rudolph Hassler (*Memoir and Correspondence of Charles Steedman, Rear Admiral,* 1912, p. 129; portrait of Page, p. 156). After a cruise in the *Columbus* to the Mediterranean and Brazil, 1842–44, he was attached to the Naval Observatory, and then in the Far East commanded the brig *Dolphin,* 1848–51. Here, in association with his friend R. B. Forbes, a Boston merchant, he realized the need of a surveying expedition in the China seas, for the benefit of commerce and whalers, and upon his return proposed it to the department. This expedition was organized, but enlarged to include the Bering Sea and North Pacific, and put under a senior officer, Commander Ringgold. Page was offered second in command but declined and was subsequently assigned to command another expedition, in the small side-wheel steamer *Water Witch,* to "survey and explore the river La Plata and its tributaries," which had just been opened to commerce after the fall of the dictator Rosas in Argentina. The *Water Witch* left Norfolk Feb. 8, 1853, and after considerable delay at Buenos Aires, during treaty negotiations with the new government, sailed in September for the ascent of the Paraná and Paraguay rivers. In the next two years the expedition covered 3600 miles of river navigation and 4400 miles of exploration ashore, accounts of which appear in the commander's report (*Report of the Secretary of the Navy,* 1856, pp. 430–65) and in his book, *La Plata: The Argentine Confederation and Paraguay* (1850), which went to two editions and was translated into Spanish.

Page appears to have conducted his work with great energy and with adequate diplomacy, though Lieut. (later Rear Admiral) Ammen, who was for a time under him, expresses the view that Page "was entirely a gentleman, but . . . not well fitted to command such an expedition" (*The Old Navy and the New,* 1891, p. 269). Page had secured full privileges in their national waters from Brazil and Argentina, but had difficulties on this point with the dictator López of Paraguay, especially after a quarrel between López and an American trading company organized by the United States consul at Asunción, Edward Augustus Hopkins [*q.v.*], in which Page supported the consul. By a decree of Oct. 3, 1854, the *Water Witch* was excluded from Paraguayan waters, and on Feb. 1, 1855, while under the temporary command of Lieut. William N. Jeffers, she was fired upon from the Paraguayan fort Itapúra while ascending the Paraná. Page was greatly incensed, sought vainly for a demonstration from Commodore Salter of the Brazil Squadron, and on returning home in May 1856, called for an expedition to bring Paraguay to account for this action and alleged injuries to the trading company. President Buchanan took up the matter in his first message (1857), and a force of nineteen ships was dispatched under Commodore Shubrick with Page, now commander (1855), as fleet captain. A treaty with Paraguay was quickly arranged, and Page, relieved of fleet duties, resumed explorations from the spring of 1859 to the autumn of 1860, ascending the Paraguay to the head of navigation.

In the Civil War Page joined the Confederacy, was for over a year in command of batteries at Gloucester Point, York River, and was employed here and elsewhere in Virginia river defenses until March 1863, when he went to Europe to command one of the Confederate ironclads building there. After a year of seclusion in Florence, Italy, he was appointed in December 1864 to command the *Stonewall,* formerly the *Sphynx,* a powerful ironclad built in France for the Confederacy, then sold to Denmark, and by Denmark retransferred after the War of 1864. Page took her out of Copenhagen Jan. 7, 1865, received officers and stores off Quiberon, and then put in at Corunna and later Ferrol. Here he was watched by the *Niagara,* Capt. Thomas Tingey Craven [*q.v.*], and the *Sacramento,* but when the *Stonewall* steamed out on Mar. 24 and challenged battle, Craven prudently refused to risk his wooden vessels. After stopping at Lis-

bon, Mar. 26, the *Stonewall* crossed to Havana, where on news of the downfall of the Confederacy she was turned over to the Spanish authorities. After the war Page went to Argentina and spent some time on a cattle farm in Entre Rios, then superintended the construction of four Argentine ironclads in England, and about 1880 went to Florence. He died in Rome in his ninety-second year. He was survived by his wife Benjamina, daughter of Benjamin Price of Loudoun County, Va., whom he married at Washington in 1838, and by whom he had five sons and two daughters.

[In addition to the references cited see: "Autobiog. Sketch of Thos. Jefferson Page," *Proc. U. S. Naval Inst.*, Oct. 1923; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Navy)*, especially 3 ser. I–III; R. C. M. Page, *Geneal. of the Page Family in Va.* (1883); J. D. Bullock, *The Secret Service of the Confed. States in Europe* (1884); B. F. Sands, *From Reefer to Rear Admiral* (1899); T. J. Page, "The Confederate Cruiser Stonewall," *Southern Hist. Soc. Papers*, VII (1879), 263–80; biographical sketch (reprinted from the Richmond *Times*, Oct. 29, 1899), *Ibid.*, XXVII (1899), 219–31.] A. W.

PAGE, THOMAS NELSON (Apr. 23, 1853–Nov. 1, 1922), diplomat and man of letters, was born at "Oakland," a plantation near Beaver Dam, in Hanover County, Va., the son of Maj. John Page, an artillery officer in the Army of Northern Virginia throughout the Civil War, and the great-grandson of Gov. John Page, 1743–1808 [*q.v.*]. His mother before her marriage was Elizabeth Burwell Nelson, and among his kindred he counted Randolphs, Pendletons, Wickhams, Carters, Lees, and members of other distinguished families. His youth was spent amid scenes of war and reconstruction which so impressed him as to color his whole thinking in after life. As a boy he attended schools in the neighborhood of his home, helped with the farm work, listened to accounts of the golden times "before the War," heard the recent battles feelingly discussed, and read the many good books found in the family library. In 1869 he entered Washington College, Lexington, Va., where he came into personal contact with Gen. Robert E. Lee, then president of the institution. Withdrawing from the college in June 1872, he read law under his father for a year; then, in order to secure money for continuing his education, he spent several months as private tutor in a family living near Louisville, Ky. Entering the University of Virginia in October 1873, he applied himself to study with unusual diligence, and on July 2, 1874, received the degree of LL.B. In the fall of 1874 he settled as a lawyer in Richmond, Va., in time built up a practice, became interested in civic affairs, and took an active part in the social life of the city. On July 26, 1886, he married Anne Seddon Bruce, who died in 1888.

From childhood Page had shown a relish for literature and had written for college magazines and later for newspapers. His real start as an author, however, was made in 1884, when in the *Century Magazine* for April appeared his dialect story "Marse Chan." Thereafter editors were always pleased to consider his manuscripts, and by degrees he was weaned from the law and entered upon a busy life as story writer, novelist, and essayist. He made numerous friendships among literary men, steadily attracted attention by his work, and by 1889, during a stay abroad, had the satisfaction of finding himself known in some quarters even in England. Upon returning from Europe he made an extended lecture tour which further increased his reputation. After his second marriage, June 6, 1893, to Florence Lathrop Field, the widow of Henry Field of Chicago, he abandoned the practice of law entirely, and removing to Washington, D. C., established a home which became a center of hospitality.

The bulk of his literary work was fiction, most of it dealing with life in the South either just before or just after the Civil War. His most popular books were *In Ole Virginia* (1887), a volume of tales largely in the negro dialect; the novel *Red Rock* (1898); a story, *The Old Gentleman of the Black Stock* (1897); a collection of sketches and stories, *The Burial of the Guns* (1894); and two volumes for children, *Two Little Confederates* (1888) and *Among the Camps* (1891). In the same tone as the fiction and closely akin to it in theme are his essays and social studies, in *The Old South* (1892), *Social Life in Old Virginia* (1897), *The Negro, the Southerner's Problem* (1904), and *The Old Dominion* (1908). Besides the books named he wrote a dozen other volumes of fiction; several semihistorical works and eulogistic biographies, the most ambitious of the latter being *Robert E. Lee, Man and Soldier* (1911); a series of elementary lectures on Dante; a collection of dialect verse, *Befo' de War* (1888), published in collaboration with Armistead Churchill Gordon; and a volume of poems, *The Coast of Bohemia* (1906).

In 1913 Page was appointed by President Wilson ambassador to Italy, the duties of which office he performed conscientiously and with success. Upon the outbreak of the World War he aided hundreds of Americans in reaching home; and throughout the years of the struggle his tact and helpful labors won for him the esteem of officials in Rome and of many Italian people. During the peace negotiations he made a fruitless trip to Paris in an attempt to explain the Italian position and demands, and later he wrote

a sympathetic account of Italy's aims and part in the fighting: *Italy and the World War* (1920). In 1919, resigning his ambassadorship, Page returned to America and resumed his literary career. Bad health, however, handicapped him, and the death of his second wife in 1921 was a misfortune from which he never fully recovered. He died at "Oakland" on Nov. 1, 1922, and was buried in Rock Creek Cemetery, Washington, D. C. He left no children.

By his friends Page was considered a worthy and representative member of the Virginia aristocracy. He was modest in bearing, instinctively polite, considerate of women, cultivated in taste; throughout life he held fast to beliefs and a standard of conduct acquired in boyhood. A pride in the class from which he sprang in part explains his character, as well as certain qualities found in his literary work. Viewing plantation society as a partisan, he overemphasized its attractive side, minimized or neglected its faults, and failed to penetrate far beneath its surface appearance. In practically all he wrote, whether biography or historical essay or fiction, he was at heart a romancer—a romancer who, perhaps more than any other single man of his generation, exploited the conception of the ante-bellum South as a region of feudalistic splendor. His literary method, no less than his material, proved to be what readers of the day wished; and for more than thirty years his books were widely popular. The dialect tales which first brought him into literary prominence represent his best work; upon these and a few other short stories and sketches his reputation as a man of letters must continue to rest.

[A biography by Page's brother, Rosewell Page, *Thos. Nelson Page: A Memoir of a Virginia Gentleman* (1923), contains first-hand information, as does likewise the appreciative article by Page's friend, A. C. Gordon, in *Scribner's Mag.*, Jan. 1923. *Two Little Confederates*, parts of *The Burial of the Guns*, and other of Page's books have autobiographical value. Comments upon him as a literary figure appear in H. A. Toulmin, Jr., *Social Historians* (1911) and M. J. Moses, *The Lit. of the South* (1910). Information as to certain facts was furnished for this sketch by Mr. Rosewell Page.]

J. H. N.

PAGE, WALTER HINES (Aug. 15, 1855–Dec. 21, 1918), journalist and diplomat, was born at Cary, N. C., of pioneer stock. The Pages were of English origin and belonged to the substantial farmer class. Walter's father, Allison Francis Page, although the owner of a few slaves, disapproved of the institution of slavery and of the sectionalism that held sway in the South before the Civil War. From him Walter early imbibed a strong attachment to the Union and to democracy, and subsequent reading merely confirmed him in these loyalties. From his mother, Catherine Frances Raboteau, who was of Scotch and Huguenot descent, he inherited an abiding love of nature and an appreciation of good books. The rudiments of his education were acquired under her tutelage and it was she who introduced him to Dickens and Scott. These beginnings, together with a few years at local schools and at Bingham Academy at Mebane, N. C., were Page's preparations for his college course.

In 1871 he entered Trinity College, N. C. (now Duke University), but he had little liking for the place and in January 1873 transferred to Randolph-Macon College, Ashland, Va. The change was an important one, for it brought Page in contact with stimulating companions and with Thomas Randolph Price [*q.v.*], who aroused in him a devotion to Greek and English literature that remained with him throughout his life. In addition Price instilled in the impressionable youth a love of England that doubtless helps to explain Page's immense enthusiasm for the old country and her cause during the World War. From the guidance of Price, Page passed to that of Basil L. Gildersleeve [*q.v.*] at The Johns Hopkins University. Price had obtained for his pupil one of the first twenty fellowships when the new institution opened in 1876, and for the next two years Page pursued his studies under America's most distinguished classicist. But his residence at Johns Hopkins satisfied him that he did not wish to devote his life to Greek scholarship and in March 1878 he left the university.

After two or three false starts, Page definitely chose journalism as his profession and in February 1880 became a "cub" reporter on the *St. Joseph Gazette*, St. Joseph, Mo. In five months he was editor of the paper. The experience was valuable to him, but in the summer of 1881 he withdrew in favor of a novel venture of his own. He made an extended tour of the South to study the region and its problems and prepared for syndication in the leading newspapers of the country a series of penetrating articles based upon his observations. Page had already acquired a vivid style and his experiment proved a distinct success. The New York *World* late in 1881 gave him a roving commission and for a year he traveled first in the West and then with the peripatetic tariff commission of 1882 reporting its hearings. Upon his return to New York he served for another year as literary critic and editorial writer, but resigned when Joseph Pulitzer took over the *World* in 1883. Page now went home to take up a cause that had been close to his heart since boyhood, a crusade for the reconstitution of the South, and particularly of his native state. He acquired control of the Raleigh

State Chronicle, completely revised it, and plunged into a startling campaign that was both iconoclastic and vigorously constructive. He demanded the cessation of Confederate hero-worship and a widening of opportunities for the common man; he pleaded for decent educational facilities for whites and negroes, the promotion of scientific agriculture, local industries, and better roads. Page was sound and prophetic in his reforms, but his audacity and impatience aroused considerable hostility to him (H. W. Odum, *Southern Pioneers in Social Interpretation,* 1925). His paper was not a financial success and in 1885 he was obliged to relinquish it and return to New York.

It was not until 1887, however, when he joined the business staff of the *Forum,* a moribund monthly review, that an opportunity commensurate with his talents came to him. His initial efforts to improve its financial condition were not successful, but when in 1891 he acquired the practical direction of the whole publication, it took on new life and in a few years he made it one of the most entertaining and influential reviews in America. This achievement gave Page a reputation and in 1895 brought him an invitation to become literary adviser and associate editor of the *Atlantic Monthly;* three years later he succeeded to the editorship. His record in it justified the opportunity given him and under his brief but stimulating leadership the magazine departed from its rather conventional New England character and became an outspoken, provocative journal. Page was happy in his work, but fresh enterprises beckoned him to New York again and in 1899 he became a partner in the new publishing house of Doubleday, Page & Company, and the following year founded *The World's Work,* of which he served as editor until 1913. This magazine, devoted to politics and practical affairs, was undoubtedly Page's most important contribution to American journalism. As an editor he was ingenious and resourceful in his methods and persuasive in guiding his writers. "He made a friend of almost every contributor and a contributor of almost every friend" (*Outlook,* June 27, 1928, p. 356). He used his periodical freely to encourage educational, agricultural, industrial, and sanitary improvements in the South and gave much of his time to lecturing, correspondence, and committee work to advance these and other beneficent causes. As a member of the Southern Education Board and the General Education Board he did much to promote the idea of popular education as an indispensable complement to political and social democracy. He was also an active worker on the

International Health Commission and on Theodore Roosevelt's Country Life Commission. One of the most social, humorous, and kindly of men, he worked easily with others and his services were much in demand for large philanthropic enterprises.

In politics Page had been a Jeffersonian Democrat since his youth, but he never accepted the leadership of William Jennings Bryan. He was among the early and avowed advocates of the candidacy of his old friend, Woodrow Wilson, for the presidency and gladly accepted the ambassadorship to Great Britain in 1913, partly because he anticipated that it would give him an admirable opportunity to promote Anglo-American ascendancy in world affairs. His winsome personality, cultivation, and sympathetic views speedily won for him a hearty welcome in London, and in the fifteen months prior to the outbreak of the war he worked harmoniously with the President in eliminating causes of friction between the United States and Great Britain, notably in connection with the Mexican and Panama tolls questions. His brilliant and illuminating letters on English life and affairs were greatly enjoyed and valued by the President and stamped him as one of the most fascinating letter-writers of his time. So highly did Wilson value Page's services that when the Ambassador suggested resigning in 1914 for financial reasons, the President obtained funds privately in order that Page might remain in London (Baker, *Wilson,* IV, 32–34).

After the war broke out, however, the two men gradually drifted apart because of their quite different conceptions of the course the United States ought to pursue. Page had little sympathy with Wilson's purpose to maintain a strict neutrality in thought and action and to enforce a full observance of American rights by both groups of belligerents. Almost from the beginning he construed the war as a gigantic assault on democratic civilization by Prussian militarism and believed that the United States should give at least limited support to the Allies by temporarily acquiescing in Britain's restrictions upon commerce between the United States and Germany's neutral neighbors (Hendrick, *Page,* vols. I–III, *passim; Intimate Papers of Colonel House,* I, 304–05; II, 304–13). In the autumn of 1914 he thwarted the administration's efforts to prevail upon the British to accept the provisions of the Declaration of London (1909), which they had not ratified, by threatening to resign if the State Department continued its insistence (Hendrick, I, 383); and in January 1915, in a test case involving the *Dacia,* he enabled the British Foreign

Office to avoid serious complications by suggesting to Sir Edward Grey that the vessel, formerly German-owned but now under American registry, be seized by the French, the expectation being that this would arouse less antagonism in the United States (*Ibid.*, 394; III, 222–26, 236). In these and other ways Page manifested his opposition to Wilson's course in the early stages of the war, but generally he adhered to his instructions. His enthusiasm for the Allied cause was ill-concealed from the British ministry (*Ibid.*, II, 237, 400; Grey, *Twenty-Five Years*, II, 110), however, and probably made him less effective in presenting American contentions than he might otherwise have been. His irritation at the President's policy was greatly intensified when the administration carried on an extended paper controversy with Germany over the sinking of the *Lusitania* and other merchant vessels carrying American passengers instead of promptly severing diplomatic relations and making war preparations. He refused to be a party to Colonel House's peace proposals in London early in 1916 and was hostile to those of Germany and the President in December 1916, because he thought the war must continue until Germany was crushed (House, II, 135–36, 177–78, 402–03).

By this time Page had lost all confidence in his chief; he contended that Wilson had failed to grasp the significance of the struggle and had abdicated leadership in foreign affairs. For these as well as for personal reasons in November 1916 he asked to be relieved, but by the time an answer came (Feb. 5, 1917), the whole situation had changed and at the President's request Page consented to remain. Throughout the neutrality period Page expressed himself with much frankness in letters to Wilson and House and constantly pleaded for a close Anglo-American accord, but his views were discounted as being pro-British (*Ibid.*, I, 456; II, 99, 269–70). That Page was greatly influenced by his residence in London in wartime, and that he underestimated the peace sentiment among the American people and in Congress is apparent, but it is equally clear that his sturdy devotion to his own country, its people and its democracy, was never shaken. Since Page believed that "only some sort of active and open identification with the Allies" could put Americans "in effective protest" against the Central Powers (Hendrick, II, 193), he rejoiced when the United States finally entered the war. He interpreted the step as a vindication of his own contentions, the more so since Wilson's war message took much the same ground as he had advocated earlier. Once in the struggle Page was eager for the United States to participate in

"dead earnest." He urged the immediate dispatch to Europe of naval and merchant fleets and a small expeditionary force to be followed by a powerful army; also the granting to the Allies of a large loan at a low rate of interest. His tasks at the embassy became greater than ever, but he was now contented and hopeful that his cherished purpose of drawing the English-speaking nations together for world leadership would be realized. The strain of official work together with nephritis undermined his health, however, and in August 1918 he was obliged to resign. He returned to the United States in October and two months later died in Pinehurst, N. C., a war casualty. His wife, Willia Alice (Wilson) Page, whom he married in 1880, three sons, and a daughter survived him.

In addition to his voluminous correspondence and journalistic writings, Page was the author of three books: *The Rebuilding of Old Commonwealths* (1902), a group of essays looking toward the training of the "forgotten man" in the South; *A Publisher's Confession* (1905, 1923), which expressed Page's business creed; and *The Southerner* (1909), a novel written under the pseudonym "Nicholas Worth," expressing his ideas for Southern development. But it is his letters, so rich in literary and human quality and so full of whimsical humor, that will stand as Page's most enduring contribution to American literature.

[The principal sources are B. J. Hendrick, *The Life and Letters of Walter H. Page* (3 vols., 1922–25); and *The Training of an American* (1928). A brief sketch of Page's services in London, based largely on Hendrick's volumes, is contained in Beckles Willson, *America's Ambassadors to England* (1928). These works together with Viscount Grey, *Twenty-Five Years* (2 vols., 1925), are extremely favorable to Page. An article hostile to him is, C. H. Grattan, "The Walter Hines Page Legend," *American Mercury*, Sept. 1925. Other very useful sources are: *The Intimate Papers of Colonel House*, ed. by Charles Seymour (4 vols., 1926–28); and R. S. Baker, *Woodrow Wilson: Life and Letters* (4 vols., 1927–31). The series of *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1913–18 (1920–33) is indispensable for a detailed study of Page's ambassadorship.]

A. H. M.

PAGE, WILLIAM (January 1811–Sept. 30, 1885), portrait painter, born at Albany, N. Y., was the son of Levi and Tamer (Gale) Dunnel Page. In 1819, when the family moved to New York, the boy of eight was already making drawings of heads, and a likeness of his mother was considered "remarkably correct." He entered Joseph Hoxie's classical school and afterward went to a public school. At the age of eleven he won a prize for a sepia drawing from the American Institute. Three years later he was taken out of school and placed in the law office of Frederic de Peyster, who, becoming convinced that the lad was not qualified to distinguish himself in the

legal profession, took him to Col. John Trumbull [*q.v.*], who advised him to "stick to the law." Disregarding this advice, in 1825 he began the study of drawing and painting under James Herring [*q.v.*]; in 1826 he became the pupil of S. F. B. Morse [*q.v.*] and at the National Academy, where he received a silver medal for drawing.

At the age of seventeen he joined the Presbyterian church and determined to prepare himself for the ministry. To this end he studied for a short time at Andover and at Amherst, but after about two years he suddenly changed his mind and made a prompt return to portrait painting in Albany. He was then nineteen. He fell in love with Lavinia Twibill and they married. After three children had been born to them they fell out and were divorced. Page moved to New York and continued painting portraits with success. He was married to Sara A. Dougherty and with her, in 1844, he went to Boston, where they made a stay of three years. Many of his best portraits were painted at this period. His sitters included John Quincy Adams, Josiah Quincy, Charles Sumner, James Russell Lowell, Wendell Phillips, Charles W. Eliot, and Col. R. G. Shaw. Several of these portraits are in Harvard Memorial Hall. In 1849 Page went to Italy and remained there eleven years, for the most part living in Rome, Florence, and Venice. There he was considered the leading American painter of the day and enjoyed the friendship of eminent literary and artistic personages. He made a special study of Titian's works and tried to discover the secret of their color. It is probable that his own later work suffered in respect of originality and spontaneity from his excessive preoccupation with the methods of the Venetian masters. Much of his work was experimental, but at his best he was a remarkable portraitist. His drawing was especially strong. He became intensely interested in an alleged death-mask of Shakespeare and made a trip to Germany in 1874 especially to study it and make several copies in color. One of these is in the Metropolitan Museum, New York.

While he was living in Italy he obtained a divorce from his second wife, and in 1858 he married Sophia S. Hitchcock, by whom he had six children. He was an academician, and from 1871 to 1873 he was president of the National Academy. From 1860 to the time of his death he practised his profession in New York. He lectured to the students of the National Academy; numbered Lowell, Emerson, Hawthorne, and the Brownings among his friends; and was a picturesque as well as important figure in the art world. His portraits of Governors Marcy and

Fenton are in the New York City Hall; his "Ruth and Naomi" belongs to the New York Historical Society; a Holy Family is owned by the Boston Athenæum; five of his portraits, including those of John Quincy Adams and William Lloyd Garrison, with a half-length "Ceres," are in the Boston Art Museum; and "The Young Merchants" is in the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. One of his most important historical pieces, "Farragut's Triumphal Entry into Mobile Bay," was purchased by a committee and presented to the Grand Duke Alexis of Russia in 1871. During the last years of his life Page had a home at Eagleswood, N. J., where George Inness [*q.v.*] was his neighbor and intimate friend. They were both Swedenborgians. Page died at Tottenville, Staten Island, at the age of seventy-four.

[Wm. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 3 vols., 1918); H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); Samuel Isham, *Hist. of Am. Painting* (1905); W. H. Downes, article in *Atlantic Monthly*, Sept. 1888; *Art Jour.*, May 1876; *Cat. of Paintings, Museum of Fine Arts, Boston* (1921); *Illustrated Cat.: Paintings in the Metropolitan Museum of Art* (1905); Geo. Gale, *The Gale Family Records in England and the U. S.* (1866); *Albany Eve. Jour.*, Oct. 1, 1885; *World* (N. Y.), and *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 2, 1885).] W. H. D.

PAINE, BYRON (Oct. 10, 1827–Jan. 13, 1871), advocate of state rights in Wisconsin, judge, the son of James H. and Marilla (Paine) Paine, was born in Painesville, Ohio, founded by his mother's grandfather, Edward Paine, a Revolutionary officer from Connecticut. An academy at Painesville gave him his formal schooling, which was later supplemented by wide reading, the acquisition of the German language, and the literary training that is afforded by practice in writing for the press. Removing with his father, who was a practising lawyer, to Wisconsin Territory in the year before its admission as a state, he studied law and was admitted to the bar at Milwaukee in 1849. In the early years of his professional career, when clients were few, he did much writing for the *Free Democrat*, a free-soil newspaper at Milwaukee. He and his father both held the anti-slavery views prevalent at the time on the Western Reserve of Ohio and were sympathetic with the flame of angry protest against the enactment of the Fugitive-slave Law in 1850. In 1854 he appeared before the state supreme court as counsel for Sherman M. Booth, the editor of the newspaper to which he had contributed, when the rescue of a negro, Joshua Glover, involved Booth in criminal proceedings. Paine's argument for the granting of a writ of *habeas corpus* was mainly an attack on the constitutionality of the Fugitive-slave Law (*Uncon-*

stitutionality of the Fugitive Act. Argument . . . in the Matter of the Petition of Sherman M. Booth for a Writ of Habeas Corpus, n.d.). The state court granted the writ, but renewed efforts of the federal authorities ended, in 1859, with the decision of the federal Supreme Court upholding the right of the federal authorities to try Booth. Paine expressed in no uncertain terms his own belief in state sovereignty, and the defiance of the federal authorities voiced by the Wisconsin judges and by him was received with acclamation among anti-slavery men everywhere. He reaped a rich harvest of personal popularity in his own state, which culminated in his election, the spring of 1859, as associate justice of the state supreme court on a campaign platform, remarkable in Wisconsin history, of "State Rights and Byron Paine!" Carl Schurz, then a citizen of Wisconsin, came under the spell. Years afterward the figure of young Paine, whose "tall and sturdy frame, and his face, not regular of feature, but beautiful in its expression of absolute sincerity, kindness, and intelligence, made his very appearance a picture of strength ruled by reason, justice, and benevolence," remained a cherished memory in Schurz's recollections (Schurz, *post*, p. 112).

Nevertheless, in 1861, when Lincoln called for men and resources to defend the Union, no state responded more heartily than Wisconsin. In November 1864 Paine resigned from the bench and was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the 43rd Wisconsin Volunteers. The next May he resumed his law practice in Milwaukee. In 1867 he was reappointed to a seat on the state supreme bench, to which he was later elected and on which he served until his death. In two opinions, of 1869 and 1870, he made the effort to analyze and set forth the convictions he continued to hold concerning state rights and to point out wherein he understood they differed from the doctrine of the right of secession (*Knorr* vs. *The Home Insurance Company* and *In re Tarble*, 25 *Wis. Reports*, 150–66 and 394–413). The close reasoning and keen exposition of these opinions commanded the respect of his fellow judges and lawyers, most of whom had come wholly to disagree with his view of the once dominant issue. It is noteworthy that a man raised to a judicial station by a popular movement, without regard to his professional qualifications, should have won the confidence and respect of the bar so completely. He was survived by his wife Clarissa R. (Wyman) Paine, whom he had married on Oct. 7, 1854, and by their four sons.

["Death of Mr. Justice Paine," *27 Wis. Reports*, 23–68; J. R. Berryman, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar in Wis.* (1898), vol. I; P. M. Reed, *The Bench and Bar of Wis.* (1882); C. W. Butterfield, *Hist. of Dane County, Wis.* (1880); J. B. Winslow, *The Story of a Great Court* (1912); *The Reminiscences of Carl Schurz*, vol. II (1907); E. E. Bryant, "The Supreme Court of Wis.," *Green Bag*, Mar. 1897; *Chart No. 3, Showing Ancestry of Descendants of Gen. Edward Paine*, comp. by J. L. Paine (1902); *Wis. State Jour.* (Madison), Jan. 14, 16, 18, 1871.]

W. B. S.

PAINE, CHARLES (Apr. 15, 1799–July 6, 1853), manufacturer, railroad promoter, governor of Vermont, brother of Martyn Paine [*q.v.*], was born at Williamstown, Vt., fifth of the eight children of Elijah [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Porter) Paine. A high-spirited, adventurous boy, more interested in sport than study, he was nevertheless destined by his father for a professional career. He entered Phillips Exeter Academy in 1813, and in 1816, following the family tradition, Harvard College, from which he graduated in 1820. Four years of college life proved his capacity for gay and joyous companionship rather than for serious study. A century later, if he had survived the sterner scholastic requirements of his alma mater, he would probably have ranked high among the popular athletes of his class. Overcoming parental objections, he settled after graduation at Northfield, Vt., where he soon became the manager of his father's woollen-mills. Business responsibilities and the close contact with the strong personality of his father brought out his more solid qualities. He, too, became a model of punctuality, exactness, and strict honesty in business dealings, but with somewhat less of sternness than the older man displayed. His enterprise and his initiative in the adoption of improved machinery shortly brought increased prosperity to his factory, now organized on a large scale. Like his father, he interested himself in farming and stock breeding. Here also financial success followed.

Meanwhile, he was taking part in state politics. For one term he was a member of the House of Representatives (1828–29). After standing for the governorship as a Whig in 1835, he was elected to that office in 1841 and again in 1842. Like the other Whigs of his region, Paine was a strong protectionist; unlike the majority of them, he was so incensed by President Tyler's failure to follow the party leaders that he urged a constitutional amendment not merely to limit the president to one term but to deprive him of the veto power, "the only monarchical feature in our form of government" (Governor's message in *Journal of the House of Representatives of the State of Vermont*, 1841, p. 33). He failed to secure a geological survey and a reorganization of the school system in the state, but he did introduce a new and more thorough system of accounting by state officers.

After his retirement as governor, he devoted the rest of his life to railway promotion. Efforts, under charters of 1832 and 1835, to build a railroad through the center of the state had failed from lack of financial support. Paine now became the moving spirit in a new endeavor. The Vermont Central Railroad Company was organized in 1845 with Paine as president of the board of directors. It was intended that the road, crossing the state from northwest to southeast, should form a part of a great trunk line connecting Boston with Chicago by way of northern New York and the Lakes. With the aid of capitalists in Boston, where the financial direction was retained, Paine succeeded in completing the road, Dec. 31, 1849. Unfortunately, and partly through Paine's fault, the railroad left Montpelier, the capital, on a side line, as it did Burlington after connection was made with Montreal. It did, however, pass through Paine's hilltop village of Northfield. Despite his determined efforts, the road was not a financial success. In 1852 it passed into the hands of receivers and Paine in the last year of his life turned to the promotion of a railroad to the Pacific over a southern route. During explorations for this purpose he died of dysentery at Waco, Tex. He had become known for his philanthropy in his own village and elsewhere in the state, but his greatest service was the railroad which his persistence had carried to completion. He was never married.

[*Paine Family Records*, Oct. 1882; J. G. Ullery, *Men of Vermont* (1894); John Gregory, *Centennial Proc. and Hist. Incidents of the Early Settlers of Northfield, Vt.* (1878); A. M. Hemenway, *The Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, vols. I (1868), IV (1882); E. S. Gannett, *The Useful Man. A Sermon Delivered at the Funeral of Hon. Charles Paine* (1853); *Vermonter*, vol. XXXVII (1932), nos. 11–12.] P. D. E.

PAINE, CHARLES JACKSON (Aug. 26, 1833–Aug. 12, 1916), soldier, capitalist, yachtsman, was born in Boston, Mass., the eldest of the nine children of Charles Cushing and Fanny Cabot (Jackson) Paine. He was the great-grandson of Robert Treat Paine, signer of the Declaration of Independence, a grandson of Charles Jackson, jurist, and a brother of Robert Treat Paine, 1835–1910 [*qq.v.*]. After attending the Boston Latin School and graduating from Harvard in 1853, he studied in the law office of Rufus Choate and was admitted to the bar on Sept. 15, 1856. He then visited Europe and on his return spent some months in St. Louis, but from 1858 to the outbreak of the Civil War he maintained an office in Boston. On Sept. 5, 1861, he was authorized to recruit a company, and on Oct. 8 he was mustered in as captain and left

Paine

with his troops to join the force about Washington. He was commissioned major Jan. 16, 1862, and was made colonel of the 2nd Louisiana Volunteers on Oct. 23 of the same year. On Nov. 7, 1863, he was given command of a brigade, but he relinquished this assignment to join the staff of Gen. B. F. Butler. On July 4, 1864, the Senate confirmed him as brigadier-general; he commanded a division in various operations under Butler, was made major-general of volunteers by brevet on Jan. 15, 1865, and was mustered out of the army Jan. 15, 1866. After the war he devoted his energies to business affairs. He employed the extensive capital he controlled in large enterprises of the period, principally railroad building and development, and he took a prominent part in the management of several systems, including the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fé; Chicago, Burlington & Quincy; and the Mexican Central Railway. His financial power and acumen were recognized by the well informed, but he gained little public recognition except an appointment as one of three members of a commission on bimetalism accredited by the United States to Great Britain, France, and Germany in 1897.

Paine was best known as a yachtsman. His narrow escapes from drowning as a youth did not reduce his love for this sport, and in the seventies he became prominent by purchasing the *Halcyon*, a slow craft, and making changes that greatly increased her speed. In 1885 he joined a syndicate to build a cup-defender to represent New England, and this boat, the *Puritan*, won the trial races and beat the British challenger *Genesta*. In the two succeeding years he assumed the entire cost of two more defenders: the *Mayflower*, which won in the trials and in the cup-races against the *Galatea*; and the *Volunteer*, which defeated both American competitors and the Scotch challenger *Thistle*. Edward Burgess [*q.v.*], who designed all of Paine's successful defenders, died before the next race in 1893; but Paine had an entry, the *Jubilee*, which was eliminated in the trials. His interest in yachting continued, however, to his last years, and his practical skill and conspicuous fairness were influences on American yacht design and international sport. He was an unpretentious man, avoiding any kind of display. The old straw hat and plain garb in which he sailed his cup-defenders were often contrasted with the elaborate costumes of less famous and less wealthy owners. He was without aloofness and his unobtrusiveness may have contributed to an underestimation of his ability and achievement. On Mar. 26, 1867, he married Julia Bryant, a grand-daughter of

Hannah Farnham Sawyer Lee [*q.v.*]; they had seven children. He died in Weston, Mass.

[Sources include: *Report of the Harvard Class of 1853, . . . Issued on the Sixtieth Anniversary* (1913); Sarah C. Paine, *Paine Ancestry* (1912), ed. by C. H. Pope; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; *A Testimonial to Chas. J. Paine and Edward Burgess from the City of Boston* (1887), printed by order of the City Council; *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 14, 16, 1916; *N. Y. Times*, Aug. 15, 1916.]

S. G.

PAINE, ELIJAH (Jan. 21, 1757–Apr. 28, 1842), farmer, manufacturer, and jurist, was a native of Brooklyn, Conn., the second of eight children born to Seth and Mabel (Tyler) Paine. His ancestors, of English descent on both sides, had long resided in New England. Financial difficulties delayed his preparation for college. He was studying under the direction of his uncle, Rev. John Paine of Sturbridge, Mass., when in September 1776 he decided to join the Revolutionary army. Military life, however, especially garrison duty at Fort Washington, N. Y., proved uninteresting, and the war promised to drag on indefinitely; accordingly young Paine shortly returned to his studies. In the fall of 1777 he entered Harvard College, from which he graduated in 1781. His high standing is indicated by his nomination in 1782 as first orator by the newly founded chapter of Phi Beta Kappa, and his election as its president in 1783. Meanwhile, he had begun to study law in Boston, under Benjamin Lincoln, and in 1784 was admitted to the bar.

Seeking a place to establish himself, he followed the trend of migration northward to Vermont, pushing deep into the backwoods. With a few friends he made the first settlement at Williamstown during the summer of 1784. Here he cleared a large farm. Here, too, and also in the neighboring township of Northfield, he built saw and grist mills. He was by nature a man of affairs, quick to see a profit, hard at a bargain, punctual in fulfilling his obligations, and equally exacting with others. A stern, masterful man, six feet tall and strongly built, with a powerful voice, he had the initiative, energy, and executive ability which on a broader stage would have made him a captain of industry. In early Vermont he became a farmer on a large scale, a breeder of animals of many sorts, leading the way in popularizing merino sheep. By 1812 he had a flock of 1500 head. Then with characteristic energy he built in Northfield a large woollen-mill, where he produced flannels and broadcloths. Already, in 1803, he had constructed a turnpike connecting his district with the capital at Montpelier. In 1825 he became the first president of the Bank of Montpelier.

Meanwhile he was taking an active part in politics. Only two years after his arrival in Vermont he was a member and secretary of the constitutional convention of 1786. From 1787 to 1790 he was in the lower house of the state legislature. He served thereafter as judge of probate in the Randolph district (1788–91); as justice of the state supreme court (1791–93); as United States senator (1795–1801); as judge of the United States district court for Vermont, under one of Adams' "midnight" appointments (1801–42); and simultaneously as postmaster of his village (1815–42). He early aligned himself with the Federalists. He voted for the ratification of the Jay treaty, though at the cost of some unpopularity at home. In general he seems to have carried out his public duties with ability, but neither in Washington nor on the bench in Vermont did he leave any particular mark. As a judge he was known rather for strict discipline than for deep learnnig.

Throughout his life he was an ardent supporter of education. He endeavored in vain to have the state university located at Williamstown, but that his interest was not merely that of a real-estate promoter is evidenced by his long and active service as trustee of that institution, and of Middlebury and Dartmouth colleges as well. He took a prominent part in the affairs of the last named, being an aggressive leader of the anti-Wheelock faction in 1815 and thereafter (J. K. Lord, *A History of Dartmouth College*, 1913). He was honored by membership in the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and the American Antiquarian Society. For many years he was president of the Vermont Colonization Society, to which, and also to other benefactions, he contributed generously. He married, June 7, 1790, Sarah Porter of Plymouth, N. H. By her he had eight children; two of his sons were Charles and Martyn [*qq.v.*].

[Manuscript sketch of his father by Martyn Paine in the library of the Univ. of Vt.; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); John Gregory, *Centennial Proc. and Hist. Incidents of the Early Settlers of Northfield, Vt.* (1878); J. M. Comstock, *A List of the Principal Civil Officers of Vt. from 1777 to 1918* (1918); A. M. Hemenway, *Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, vol. II (1871); *Vt. Watchman and State Jour.* (Montpelier), May 2, 1842.]

P. D. E.

PAINE, HALBERT ELEAZER (Feb. 4, 1826–Apr. 14, 1905), lawyer, Union soldier, congressman, and commissioner of patents, was the son of Eleazer and Caroline (Hoyt) Paine. He was descended from a long line of Puritan ancestry running back to Stephen Paine who migrated to New England in 1638. He was born at Chardon, Geauga County, Ohio, was educated in the schools of that community, and completed his academic training at Western Reserve Col-

lege, from which he graduated in 1845. After graduation he removed to Mississippi, where he taught school for a time, but soon returned to Ohio and took up the study of law. In 1848 he was admitted to the bar and began practice at Cleveland. On Sept. 10, 1850, he was married to Elizabeth Leaworthy Brigham of Windham, Ohio. Removing to Milwaukee, Wis., in 1857, he opened a law office there, and soon formed a partnership with Carl Schurz [*q.v.*]. The latter was so constantly engaged in politics, however, that the work of the office fell almost completely upon Paine. Both were idealists and in considerable measure crusaders. When the Civil War broke out, Paine "turned the key in his office and joined the army." He was commissioned colonel of the 4th Wisconsin Cavalry, July 2, 1861, and brigadier-general of volunteers, Mar. 13, 1863. At Harrisburg, Pa., his regiment was offered a stock train for transportation, which he indignantly refused, and, arming his men with pick-handles, he seized the next suitable train that passed through. He refused to return fugitives and also declined to obey General Butler's order to burn Baton Rouge. His military service was distinguished. He lost a leg in the attack upon Port Hudson, La., and thereafter served on a military commission, as commander of forts in the defense of Washington, and finally as commander of the military district of Illinois. He was brevetted major-general of volunteers, Mar. 13, 1865, for conspicuous gallantry on several occasions, especially at Port Hudson. On May 15, 1865, he resigned from the army.

In the Thirty-ninth, Fortieth, and Forty-first congresses, to which Paine was elected as a representative from Wisconsin, he supported the Radical faction. His two speeches on reconstruction subscribe to the "State Suicide Theory" (*Congressional Globe*, 40 Cong., 2 Sess., App., pp. 272–75, 314–16). In the Fortieth Congress, he was chairman of the committee on militia and in the Forty-first, he served as chairman of the committee on elections, of which he had been a member during his first term in Congress. The position was extremely important, because of the question of seating representatives from the Southern states. As a practical politician, from his position as chairman of the committee on contested elections, he was sometimes forced to answer Thaddeus Stevens' question, "Which is *our* rascal?" His reports to the House were brief, direct, and conclusive.

Declining to stand for reëlection in 1870, he took up the practice of law in Washington. His former law partner, Carl Schurz, pressed him to become the assistant secretary in the Department of the Interior. He declined for financial reasons, but later accepted the post of commissioner of patents. During his eighteen months in this office (November 1878–May 1880), he instituted important changes in the bureau. The most important of these were the substitution of scale drawings for models; the provision that errors of the patent office could be rectified without changing the date of the origin of the patentees' rights; the dating of claims for grants from the time of receipt of the application instead of at some time within three months thereafter; and the introduction of the use of typewriters.

After his resignation Paine resumed law practice, which he followed to the end of his life. In 1888 he published *A Treatise on the Law of Elections to Public Offices,* which remains the authoritative work upon the subject. It exhibits the rules and principles applicable to contests before judicial tribunals and parliamentary bodies, and is based upon American, English, Scotch, Irish, and Canadian authorities. It consists of 900 pages of heavily annotated text and a comprehensive list of cases (to 1888) which constitute the precedents from which the rules and principles are derived. Systematically presenting all the aspects of the law upon elections, it stands as a monument to the industry, comprehension, and thoroughness which were dominant attributes of the author's character.

[*Milwaukee Jour.*, and *Milwaukee Sentinel*, Apr. 17, 1905; S. B. Ladd, "Halbert Eleazer Paine," in *Jour. of the Patent Office Society*, Nov. 1920; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Paine Family Records*, Jan. 1882, *The Reminiscences of Carl Schurz*, vols. II (1907), III (1908); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; *War of the Rebellion, Official Records* (*Army*); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).]

J. L. S.

PAINE, HENRY WARREN (Aug. 30, 1810–Dec. 26, 1893), lawyer, was born at Winslow, Me., the son of Lemuel and Jane Thomson (Warren) Paine and a descendant of William Paine who emigrated to Massachusetts in 1635. His mother was a niece of Gen. Joseph Warren [*q.v.*]. In childhood and youth he was noted for his abstention from the usual recreations. "He never rowed a boat, never skated, never played ball, goal, cards, chess, checkers, or any other game" (Mathews, *post*, p. 196). Entering Waterville (now Colby) College, Waterville, Me., in 1826 and graduating there in 1830, he continued for another year as tutor. He never lost his interest in the institution and from 1849 to 1862 he was a member of its board of trustees.

Following his father into the legal profession, he studied first in the office of his uncle, Samuel S. Warren of China, Me., and then took a year's course at the Harvard Law School (1832–33).

In 1834 he was admitted to the bar of Kennebec County, Me., and began practice at Hallowell. The following year he was elected to the state legislature, where he served through the 1837 session and also in 1853. Meanwhile, May 1, 1837, he was married to Lucy E. Coffin of Newburyport, Mass., and one daughter was born to them. From 1834 to 1839 he was the attorney for Kennebec County, and also became conspicuously successful in private practice. His growing reputation led him eventually into a larger field and in 1854 he established himself in Boston, where for over a quarter of a century he was a recognized leader of a distinguished bar. He was particularly effective before juries; but fair and courteous to his opponents. His professional income was large but he was careless in collecting fees and it was estimated that he gave away $100,000. A Democrat, even during the Civil War, he reluctantly consented to become his party's candidate for governor of Massachusetts in 1863 and again in 1864; but, of course, without hope of success. He is said to have been offered a seat in the United States Senate from Maine in 1853, and also one on the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts in 1867. From 1872 to 1885 he lectured on real property law at the Boston University Law School, with the great popularity of which his own personality had much to do. Failing health and hearing, due to overwork and lack of recreation, caused him to give up teaching as well as practice, and his last decade was passed in virtual retirement. During the last two years of his life he was unable to recognize his friends, and he had "discovered at last that, big as were his ancestors' deposits of vigor and vitality to his credit, he had overdrawn his account for years, and must now repay the excess with compound interest" (Mathews, *post*, p. 197). His career well illustrates the ephemeral nature of the advocate's fame. Efforts in forensic oratory, however effective, are rarely preserved, and records of professional triumphs are too often buried forever in the archives of the courts. Paine inherited from his father a taste for literature; he had a remarkable memory, and was noted for his use of literary allusion and his aptness of repartee. His death occurred in Cambridge, Mass.

[The most extensive account of Paine is William Mathews, "A Great New England Lawyer," *New England Magazine*, Apr. 1894; see also, *Paine Family Records*, No. 1, Nov. 1878; *Green Bag*, Feb. 1894; *Albany Law Jour.*, Jan. 6, 1894; *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 26, 1893.] C. S. L.

PAINE, JOHN ALSOP (Jan. 14, 1840–July 24, 1912), archeologist and botanist, was born at Newark, N. J., the son of Dr. John Alsop Paine and Amanda S. (Kellogg), who had previously lived in Oneida County, N. Y. After graduating from Hamilton College in 1859, he studied theology at Andover, where he was graduated in 1862. He had shown a particular interest in botany, which led to his engagement by the board of regents of the University of the State of New York to report on the flora of Oneida County. The results of his study were published by the regents as *Catalogue of Plants Found in Oneida County and Vicinity* (1865). His interest in scientific research led him to study for a year (1866–67) at the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale and at the Columbia School of Mines. He was then appointed professor of natural science at Robert College, Constantinople, a missionary institution which had been founded only four years previously. In preparation for his work there he was ordained to the ministry at Newark, N. J., on May 29, 1867. After completing his two-year term at Robert College, he spent a year in the universities of Leipzig and Halle, pursuing scientific and philological studies. From 1870 to 1871 he was professor of natural science and German at Lake Forest University, Illinois. He then returned to the East as associate editor of the *Independent*, a post which he held until his appointment in 1872 as archeologist and naturalist on the staff of the American Palestine Exploration Society.

With this appointment, Paine's career may be said to have reached its climax. Unfortunately, his training was too scattered, and his interests too wide to permit him to take advantage of the opportunity which presented itself for a distinguished scholarly career. He seems, also, to have had difficulties with the head of the expedition, Lieut. Edgar Z. Steever, Jr., a recent West Point graduate. After nearly three months of waiting in Beirut, the base of operations, the expedition was finally able to begin its work in Moab (March 1873), where it continued until midsummer. Only part of the results of its work were ever published, the most important being described by Paine in the *Third Statement of the Palestine Exploration Society*, January 1875, consisting of two papers entitled "The Identification of Mount Pisgah," and "A List of Plants Collected between the Two Zarquas, Eastern Palestine." In 1874 Hamilton College gave him the honorary degree of Ph.D., in recognition of his work.

The following years were devoted to somewhat scattered journalistic work and research in various scientific and philological fields. From October 1881 to July 1884 he edited and published an ephemeral periodical known as the

Journal of Christian Philosophy, and in 1887–88 he was on the editorial staff of the *Century Dictionary*. For a time he thought seriously of specializing in ancient oriental studies, and several papers by him appeared in the *Journal of the American Oriental Society* between 1885 and 1889. These papers show much acuteness and critical ability, but a lack of depth. In 1889 he was appointed curator of casts in the Metropolitan Museum, a post which he held until his retirement in February 1906. During this period he spent much of his time at his home in Tarrytown, N. Y., pursuing researches of a miscellaneous character. His favorite subjects, however, appear to have been the history of the unsuccessful attempts made by Spanish and French followers of Columbus to colonize the eastern coast of North America in the sixteenth century, and the chemistry and radio-activity of rare elements. In the field of archeology he published Handbook No. 7 of the Metropolitan Museum, on its collection of plaster casts and bronze reproductions of ancient sculpture.

[*A Hist. of the Class of '59 of Hamilton Coll.* (1899); *Gen. Cat. of the Theological Sem., Andover, Mass. 1808–1908* (1909); *Torreya*, Aug. 1912; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *N. Y. Times*, July 25, 1912.] W. F. A.

PAINE, JOHN KNOWLES (Jan. 9, 1839–Apr. 25, 1906), American composer, teacher, and organist, was born in Portland, Me., was married, on Sept. 7, 1869, to Mary Elizabeth Greeley, and died in Cambridge, Mass. He was the son of Jacob Small and Rebecca (Beebe) Downes Paine and was descended from Thomas Payne who emigrated to Yarmouth, in Massachusetts, in the seventeenth century. He came of a musical family. His grandfather, John K. H. Paine, built the first organ in Maine. Of Jacob's five children John Knowles was precociously gifted and was soon destined for a musical career. He studied in Portland with an excellent musician, the organist Hermann Kotzschmar. In 1857, at the age of nineteen, he was given the privilege of being sent to Germany for further study in music. Here he became a pupil of Karl August Haupt in Berlin, one of the foremost German organists, and here he gained that power and facility in organ-playing that was his first distinction and that first established his position as a musician. He is said to have studied also theory and composition with Wieprecht and Teschner. He remained in Berlin for three years and there made a name for himself. In 1861 he appeared in the city as an organ virtuoso, when his playing was praised by German critics as showing mastery of the instrument and especially a command of the difficulties of Bach's

Paine

music. He also played with success in other German cities and gave an organ recital in London that won for him commendation. In that year, 1861, he returned to America. His first appearance was at a concert in Portland. This was followed by others in Boston of which *Dwight's Journal of Music* declared that "so marked was the freedom, ease, and repose of Mr. Paine's manner of performance on the organ that one was almost led to overlook the exceeding brilliancy of his execution" (Nov. 9, 1861, p. 254). It was not long before he made for himself the reputation of one of the leading organists of the United States. The great Walcker organ in the Music Hall, Boston, one of the most notable organs in the country at that time, had been bought in Germany, brought to Boston, and put into that hall largely through Paine's efforts while he was still a student in Germany. On this he gave frequent recitals, heard by large audiences, in which he introduced many works of Bach not then widely known in America, and a source of much fretful complaint in the press. He also became organist of the West Church in Boston.

In 1862 Paine resigned his church position to take the post of director of music at Harvard College, acting as organist and choir-master. The catalogue of the college had offered musical instruction "with special reference to the devotional services in the Chapel," and extending to the "higher branches of part-singing," as early as 1856. In the year after his appointment as "instructor of music" Paine added two lecture courses, one on musical form and another on counterpoint and fugue. In 1869 Charles W. Eliot became president of the university, and immediately set about carrying out his revolutionary plans for an elective system and a great increase in the number and variety of courses open to undergraduates. In these Paine had a share. In 1872 he announced a comprehensive elective course in musical theory and in 1873, in the face of strong conservative opposition, he was made an assistant professor and offered three new courses in theory, adding the next year a course in the history of music. One of the chief opponents of these plans was Francis Parkman, the historian, a member of the Corporation, who is said to have ended every deliberation of that body with the words *"musica delenda est"*; and who, for many subsequent years, when the college was faced with a need of funds, was always ready with a motion to abolish the musical department. Finally, in 1875, Paine was promoted to a full professorship, occupying one of the first chairs in music to be established in any Ameri-

can university. He continued his activity in his Harvard professorship till his resignation at the end of the academic year 1905, a short time before his death.

He had begun in his youth in Portland to show his ambition to be a composer. One of his early elaborate works was a Mass in D, which he went back to Berlin in 1867 to conduct at a concert of the *Singakademie*. Contemporary reports suggest that it was a highly competent but scarcely inspired composition. In 1873 his oratorio of "St. Peter" was given in Portland, then a year later in Boston by the Handel and Haydn Society. That, too, was found more commendable for its competence than admirable for its depth and beauty. The fact was that Paine had not yet found himself or emancipated himself wholly from the pupillary status. A great progress was noted in his first symphony, in C minor (*opus* 23), played in 1876 by Theodore Thomas, and much more in his second symphony (*opus* 34), entitled "Im Frühling," played in 1880. At its first performance in Boston this symphony aroused great enthusiasm. An account of it is extant relating how ladies waved handkerchiefs, men shouted in approbation, and the highly respected John S. Dwight, arbiter in Boston of criticism, if not of manners, stood in his seat, frantically opening and shutting his umbrella as an expression of uncontrollable enthusiasm. This approbation extended to numerous other performances in Boston and elsewhere. The next year another and still higher point in his career was reached. In 1881 the classical department of Harvard gave a stage performance, in Greek, of Sophocles' *Œdipus Tyrannus,* for which Paine composed the music, consisting of a prelude for orchestra and numerous choruses for male voices. The performance attracted widespread attention as the first of such classical revivals in the United States upon such a scale, and made a deep impression not only upon scholars but also upon music-lovers. At intervals thereafter Paine produced other important works: a symphonic poem, "An Island Fantasy"; an overture, "As You Like It"; a symphonic poem, "The Tempest"; cantatas including "Phoebus, Arise" (to words by William Drummond); "The Realm of Fancy" (Keats); "The Song of Promise" (George E. Woodberry); "The Nativity" (Milton); and music for a stage performance at Harvard of *The Birds* of Aristophanes. After his resignation in 1905 he hoped to devote himself to composition, but the time allotted him was short. At the time of his death he was at work on a symphonic poem, "Lincoln," left unfinished.

Paine

Paine's position in American music was recognized by commissions given him to set to music Whittier's hymn for the opening of the Centennial Exposition in 1876; to write a "Columbus March and Hymn" for the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago; and a setting of Stedman's "Hymn of the West" for the St. Louis Exposition in 1904. In 1903 he was the official delegate of Harvard to the Wagner Festival in Berlin, where he received a gold medal, and his prelude to *Œdipus* was played at an international concert. In his later years he spent much time on an opera, *Azara,* for which he himself wrote the text, and by which he set great store. The subject is that of Aucassin and Nicolette in the time of the Trouvères in Provence. It was finished and published in English and in a German translation, but it was never produced upon the operatic stage. Concert performances of it were given in Boston several times that disclosed many beauties and certain traits of originality; but it is not clear that any great dramatic power or effectiveness was declared in them. Paine's allegiance was given more and more unreservedly in his maturer years to the romantic tendencies of the mid-nineteenth century, and the influence of Schumann is unmistakably to be discerned in many of his works. He yielded also to the influence of Wagner, though he never became as close an imitator of his methods as many were tempted to become in the years of Wagner's most potent spell. Paine's earlier works were found by many somewhat coldly academic, lacking spontaneity of inspiration. None can make that complaint against the "Springtime" symphony, or "An Island Fantasy," or the music to *Œdipus,* particularly the prelude. As he matured, his expression gained greatly in geniality and in poetic beauty. His romantic tendencies were manifested in program music of the more ideal sort, after Beethoven's canon, "more expression of feeling than delineation." In *Azara* the freedom of dramatic form that came from Wagner's example is to be found; the old-time divisions into arias and other set "numbers" are abandoned and the exigencies of the drama mainly condition the form of the music. But it would not be true to call the music "Wagnerian" in the generally accepted meaning of that term. It is wholly characteristic of Paine.

The best of Paine's works show fertility, a genuine warmth and spontaneity of invention, and a fine harmonic feeling, as well as a sure touch in the organization of form, and skill in instrumentation. It cannot be said that in any real sense they disclose "American" characteristics; Paine's musicianship was purely a product

of European influences, as indeed was inevitable in his day and for a good while thereafter. His larger compositions gradually lost their place on orchestral or choral programs. With all their individual charm, sometimes power and impressiveness, they have not shown the vitality of great works of genius. Yet there are always the influences of fashion and the narrow prejudices and often the ignorance of foreign conductors of American orchestras to be reckoned with in accounting for neglect. It is possible that the finer works of Paine would be found to have still a power to give delight, if they were given a chance to communicate it. But whatever may be the present vitality of Paine's music, it made history; it held up a high standard—it rather produced and established a high standard—of American art, and served a valuable purpose in keeping American music in the minds and in the affection of American music-lovers.

Perhaps greater, or at least more lasting than his music, was Paine's influence as a teacher. Harvard left him free to shape his teaching as he chose; and he has been called the first in this country to teach music as an art and not as a trade. Nature had not gifted him with inspiring qualities as a lecturer, but in the years of his activity at Harvard he accomplished a great work in inforcing upon a body of undergraduates destined to become music-lovers and supporters of music, the value of music as a component of a liberal education. To those delving more deeply into the technique of musical theory and musical composition, even to those who became composers, he furnished tools which in his day were none too easy to acquire in America, where institutions for imparting a thorough grounding in that technique were neither numerous nor of high standing. Paine's teaching sent forth from Harvard a number of composers of talent and accomplishment who have contributed much of value to American music, as well as others who have handed on the torch of his learning as teachers and as writers of history and criticism.

[G. T. Edwards, *Music and Musicians of Me.* (1928); J. T. Howard, *Our Am. Music* (1930); *The Development of Harvard Univ.* (1930), ed. by S. E. Morison; L. C. Elson, *The Hist. of Am. Music* (1904); Rupert Hughes, *Contemporary Am. Composers* (1900); *Dwight's Jour. of Music,* May 25, Aug. 10, Aug. 24, Nov. 9, 1861, Feb. 1, 1862; the *Harvard Grads.' Mag.,* Sept. 1906; *Boston Transcript,* Apr. 25, 1906.]

R. A.

PAINE, MARTYN (July 8, 1794–Nov. 10, 1877), physician, was born in Williamstown, Vt., son of Elijah [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Porter) Paine and brother of Charles Paine [*q.v.*]. He received his education from private tutors, among them being Francis Brown, subsequently president of Dartmouth College. After completing his preparatory education at Atkinson, N. H., Paine entered Harvard College in 1809, receiving his degree of A.B. in 1813. In that year he began the study of medicine under the preceptorship of the well-known Doctors Warren, father and son, of Boston. He entered the medical department of Harvard in 1815 and was graduated M.D. in 1816. His graduation thesis treated the subject of inflammation, and all his life he maintained that "most diseases are inflammatory in origin and demand antiphlogistic treatment." For six years (1816–22) he practised in Montreal and then removed to New York, where he lived for fifty-five years. In 1825 he married Mary Ann Weeks, by whom he had a daughter and two sons. His first published work, *Letters on the Cholera Asphyxia,* appeared in 1832.

In the late thirties he was one of the most active promoters of the medical college of the University of the City of New York and when it opened in 1841 he was associated with Valentine Mott, John W. Draper, Granville S. Pattison, Gunning S. Bedford, and John Revere on its first faculty. Here he continued to teach for some twenty-five years, at first as professor of the institutes of medicine, but after 1850 as professor of therapeutics and materia medica. Though he was not an interesting teacher, for he read his lectures, he came to be regarded as the leading professor of therapeutics in the country. His *Institutes of Medicine* (1847), a work of 1100 pages, went through nine editions, and his *Materia Medica and Therapeutics* (1848), through three. He was a bitter opponent of the use of tobacco and alcoholic liquors. Purging and bleeding were his favorite remedies. He was the last of the confirmed phlebotomists. He enjoyed a considerable European reputation and was a member of the Royal Society of Prussia, the Medical Society of Sweden, the Society of Naturalists and Physicians of Dresden, the Medical Society of Leipzig, several Canadian scientific bodies, and many American medical and historical societies. In America he was renowned "for his thorough acquaintance with modern medical literature and for the wide range of his knowledge of contemporaneous authors" (Gross, *post,* II, 388).

In the early fifties he was sent by his faculty colleagues to Albany to use his influence for the passage of legislation permitting dissections in New York state. Up to 1854 there was a stringent law on the statute books forbidding dissection under penalty of imprisonment at hard labor; and the Board of Councilmen of New York City

had urged the legislature "to oppose by every means the passage of any bill legalizing the dissection of dead bodies" (Gross, *post,* II, 388). Paine succeeded in securing in 1854, though by the scantiest of margins, the passage of an act abolishing the law prohibiting dissection. A devout Episcopalian, he published a book entitled, *On Theoretical Geology Sustaining the Natural Constitution of the Mosaic Records of Creation and the Flood in Opposition to the Prevailing Geological Theory* (1856). To him is attributed the authorship of a series of editorial articles, "Medical Education in Great Britain According to Documentary Evidence," published in the *New York Medical Press* in 1859, maintaining the superiority of medical education in the United States over that in Great Britain.

[S. W. Francis, *Biog. Sketches of Distinguished Living N. Y. Physicians* (1867), pp. 25–28, sketch repr. from *Medic. and Surgic. Reporter,* July 21, 1866; S. D. Gross, *Autobiography* (2 vols., 1887); J. J. Walsh, *Hist. of Medicine in N. Y. State* (5 vols., 1919); J. L. Chamberlain, *N. Y. Univ.* (1901); *Medic. Record,* Nov. 17, 1877; *N. Y. Tribune,* Nov. 12, 1877.] J. J. W.

PAINE, RALPH DELAHAYE (Aug. 28, 1871–Apr. 29, 1925), journalist, author, was born in Lemont, Ill. From his father, the Rev. Samuel Delahaye Paine, who fought in the trenches at Inkerman and who commanded a battery of light artillery in the Civil War, he inherited a passion for daring deeds on both land and sea. From his mother, Elizabeth Brown (Philbrook) Paine, came his admiration for New England's history as exemplified in the annals of the seaport towns. While still a boy in Jacksonville, Fla., where his father held a small parish, Paine saved enough from his salary as a twelve-dollar-a-week reporter to enter Yale College in the fall of 1890. He then began to cover the athletic news for a syndicate of over twenty newspapers and thereby pay for the whole of his own education and a part of his sister's schooling. His powerful physique won him a seat in the university crew and a place on the football squad, and his charm of personality brought to him the highest social honors Yale could offer. Immediately after graduation in 1894, he joined the staff of the Philadelphia *Press,* and two years later he was sent to England to cover the Yale-Oxford crew race, serving again in 1904 in a similar capacity for *Collier's Weekly* at the track meet between the Yale-Harvard and Oxford-Cambridge teams. But it was as war correspondent during the Cuban revolution and the Spanish-American War that Paine enjoyed to the full his love of semi-quixotic adventure, for during that period he combined news-gathering with filibustering under the doughty captain "Dynamite Johnny O'Brien." William Randolph Hearst selected Paine as the proper "fool-adventurer" to take a gold sword to Gomez, the Cuban leader, but after Paine had carried the "bauble" over 5,000 miles he had to *send* it to the patriot, only to learn that the swarthy hero had accepted it with scorn—a fact which Paine found highly amusing.

In 1900 Paine was sent to China to cover the Boxer Uprising (see *The Dragon and the Cross,* 1912, and *Roads of Adventure,* 1922). In 1902 the *New York Herald* placed him in charge of its campaign against the beef trust, a campaign which brought him notice because of its notable success. After a brief connection with the *New York Telegraph* as managing editor, Paine gave up journalism and began his career as fiction writer and historian. His researches as a historian led him to Salem, Mass., where he delved into the history of Yankee shipping and published his results in *The Ships and Sailors of Old Salem* (1909), *The Old Merchant Marine* (1919), and *The Fight for a Free Sea* (1920). As the atmosphere of his alma mater is felt in such fine boys' stories as *The Stroke Oar* (1908), *College Years* (1909), *Sandy Sawyer, Sophomore* (1911), and *First Down, Kentucky!* (1921), so the roar of the seven seas is heard in *The Praying Skipper and Other Stories* (1906), *The Wrecking Master* (1911), *The Adventures of Captain O'Shea* (1913), *The Call of the Off-Shore Wind* (1918), and many others of Paine's sea stories. In 1917 Paine was appointed special observer with the Allied fleets, an experience which was unique and thrilling in the extreme (see *Roads of Adventure*). Into his stories went the influence of his friendships with such war correspondents as Stephen Crane, Ernest McCready, and Richard Harding Davis, and his careful study of Joseph Conrad's writings, the result being a literary style marked by genial humor, graphic phrasing, and vivid picturization.

On Apr. 5, 1903, Paine married Mrs. Katharine Lansing Morse of Watertown, N. Y., and in 1908 they moved to Durham, N. H. Paine represented Durham in the state legislature (1919) and served on the state board of education from 1919 to 1921. He was presented a medal by the citizens of Dunkirk, France, in gratitude for his kindness to the citizens of that city during the war. He died in Concord, N. H., and was laid to rest near his literary workshop at "Shankhassick," his Durham residence. He was survived by his widow, and by five children, two of whom were step-children.

[For further biographical data consult the reunion records of Paine's college class (Yale, 1894), especially

the *Quindecennial Record* (1909), the *Quarter-Century Record* (1922), and the *Thirty Year Record* (1925); *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; the *Granite Monthly*, May, 1925; and A. S. Pier, "A Yale Man of the 'Nineties," in the *Harvard Grads.' Mag.*, Dec. 1925. Jacques des Gachons's preface to *La Victoire Imprévue* (1910), a French translation of six short stories by Paine, is a Frenchman's estimate of Paine's position among American short-story writers. For book reviews of Paine's works see the *Book Rev. Digest* for the years 1906 to 1927 inclusive. Certain information was supplied for this sketch by Paine's classmate and intimate friend, the Rev. Wm. S. Beard, New York City.] A. E. R.

PAINE, ROBERT (Nov. 12, 1799–Oct. 19, 1882), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, was the son of James and Nancy (Williams) Paine and a descendant of Dr. James Paine, who emigrated from England in 1699 and settled in Person County, N. C., where Robert was born. In 1814 his parents moved to Giles County, Tenn. He was sent to the best private schools of the region and was ready to enter the sophomore class of Cumberland College, Nashville, Tenn., when, on Oct. 9, 1817, he had a vital religious experience and became convinced of a call to preach. Within a month after conversion he was traveling a circuit, and in October 1818 was admitted on trial to the Tennessee Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church. On Nov. 11, 1821, he was ordained deacon, and on Nov. 26, 1823, elder. His rise was rapid; at the age of twenty-four he was sent as a delegate to the General Conference, and he attended every session of that body for the next twenty years.

In 1830, when LaGrange College, Franklin County, Ala., was founded under the patronage of the Tennessee and Alabama conferences, Paine was selected to be its first president, although for four years, out of modesty, he refused to accept the title of president, preferring to call himself superintendent. He had a difficult task directing the affairs of a college which lacked endowment and equipment, but he gave sacrificial service to the institution. For a number of years he contributed more than half of his annual salary to the school. He found the work of a college executive irksome and preferred to be in the pastorate, but for sixteen years, out of a sense of duty to his denomination, he remained as president.

Paine was closely connected with the formation of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. He was a delegate to the General Conference of 1844, which marked the schism in the Methodist Episcopal Church, and was chairman of the committee that prepared the Plan of Separation, providing for a peaceable division of the Church. He attended the convention at Louisville, Ky., May 1845, where the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, was formally organized, and at its first General Conference, May 1846, he was elected bishop, which office he held for thirty-six years. After his elevation to the episcopacy he made his home at Aberdeen, Miss. He was not a participant in partisan politics. For thirty years prior to the Civil War he did not even vote in presidential elections for fear that such action might harm his moral and religious influence. Because of this attitude, President Buchanan invited him to the White House in November 1860, in order to secure, as Buchanan said, an unbiased statement in regard to the Southern states. As his episcopal duties were hampered during the Civil War, Paine preached in the Confederate camps, secured chaplains for the army, and made his home an asylum for wounded soldiers. When at times the Federal troops came into the vicinity of Aberdeen, it was necessary for the bishop to go into temporary exile in order to avoid capture.

He was sixty-five years old when the Civil War ended, but the next seventeen years of his life were as busy as those of his early and middle manhood. He played an important rôle during the reconstruction period. He advised kindly relations between the whites and the freedmen and was instrumental in organizing the negro members of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, into the Colored Methodist Episcopal Church in America. His biographer (Rivers, *post*) declares that to no man more than to Bishop Paine was due the prosperity of the Church immediately after the Civil War. He favored the passage of progressive legislation at the General Conference of 1866. He was vitally interested in the securing of a great central university for the Church, and he rejoiced over the founding of Vanderbilt and its provision for theological education. He did not retire from active work until he was eighty-one years of age, and then only a few months before his death.

Upon the request of the General Conference of 1854 he wrote a biography of Bishop McKendree, entitled *Life and Times of William McKendree* (1869). He also prepared a series of articles in 1881 for the Nashville *Christian Advocate*, under the title "Notes of Life." In addition to his ability as an orator and administrator, he was a good financier. At one time he possessed considerable property, but as a result of the Civil War he suffered heavy financial losses. He was married three times: first, in 1824, to Susanna Beck of Nashville, Tenn., who died in June 1836; second, in 1837, to Amanda Shaw of Columbia, Tenn., who lived but a few months thereafter; third, in 1839, to Mary Eliza Millwater. There were two sons by the first marriage and four sons and three daughters by the third.

[R. H. Rivers, *Life of Robert Paine* (1884); J. B. McFerrin, *Hist. of Methodism in Tenn.* (3 vols., 1869–73); Anson West, *A Hist. of Methodism in Ala.* (1893); "Bishop Robert Paine," in *Quart. Rev. of M. E. Church, South*, n.s., vol. V (1882); *Aberdeen Examiner* (Aberdeen, Miss.), Oct. 26, 1882.] P. N. G.

PAINE, ROBERT TREAT (Mar. 11, 1731–May 11, 1814), signer of the Declaration of Independence, jurist, the son of Rev. Thomas and Eunice (Treat) Paine, counted among his ancestors several leaders, ecclesiastical and political, of early New England. He was a direct descendant of Maj. Robert Treat [*q.v.*], a colonial governor of Connecticut, and of Rev. Samuel Treat, one of the stalwart pioneers of Cape Cod. Other notable forebears were Stephen Hopkins, a signer of the Mayflower Compact; and Rev. Samuel Willard [*q.v.*], acting president of Harvard College. A great-uncle, Josiah Willard, was for thirty years secretary of the province of Massachusetts Bay. The first of the Paine family known to be in America was Thomas Payne, who was admitted freeman of Plymouth Colony in 1639. Rev. Thomas Paine, Robert's father, left the pulpit to engage in mercantile affairs at Boston and Halifax, Nova Scotia. At the time of Robert's birth the Paine family lived at Boston in School Street on Beacon Hill, at the foot of which stood Old South Church, where the child was duly christened. He was dedicated to the ministry in accordance with family tradition. After taking highest rank at the Latin School, he entered Harvard College with the class of 1749 and was domiciled at the home of Rev. Nathaniel Appleton, college chaplain. After graduating he taught for a while, then turned to the study of theology. His brief career in the ministry is best remembered for his services as chaplain on the Crown Point Expedition of 1755. To repair frail health he took to the sea—sailing first to Carolina, then to the Azores, Spain, and England, and concluding with a whaling voyage to Greenland.

Paine came upon the New England stage during the transition from an ecclesiastico-centric to a politico-centric form of government. As his forebears had upheld the best Puritan traditions under the old régime, he, true to his heritage, assumed similar responsibilities under the new order. By this time anxiety was subsiding in religious minds over the question as to whether or not the law was a holy calling, and in accordance with the trend of the period Paine gravitated quite naturally toward the Court House. Even while pursuing his theological studies he had begun to read law, and after a course with Benjamin Pratt was admitted to the bar in 1757. He first hung out his shingle at Portland, but in 1761 moved his law books to Taunton. His zeal in the rising Patriot cause resulted in his selection as associate prosecuting attorney in the celebrated "Boston Massacre" trial. His argument with regard to the underlying issue—whether Parliament had a right to quarter a standing army in a town without its consent—carried his name throughout the closely attentive colonies.

He was elected to represent Taunton in the provincial assembly (1773, 1774, 1775, 1777, and 1778). When the call came in 1774 for a Continental Congress to meet at Philadelphia, he was chosen one of the five Massachusetts delegates. The fact that his name was known beyond local boundaries because of his part in the "Massacre" case, his ecclesiastical ancestry and classical education, his travels in the Carolinas, Pennsylvania, New York, and England, and his geographical eligibility as a representative of the foremost town of southern Massachusetts, all contributed to his choice. At the first Congress he was appointed to the committees for drafting rules of debate and for fasting and prayer. In the second Congress, after the battle of Bunker Hill, when the creation and support of an army became the chief concern of Congress, he was appointed chairman of a committee charged with providing gunpowder. He was also a member of a committee to reorganize the militia. At first he was favorable toward the choice of Artemas Ward [*q.v.*], a college-mate, for commander-in-chief of the army; but eventually, under the leadership of John Adams, he voted for Washington. In later years he used this vote for Washington as an argument in favor of a desired federal appointment.

The final appeal to the Crown (July 1775) to preserve amity and good will with the Colonies, known as the Second Petition to the King or the "Olive Branch Petition," bears the signature of Paine, who was one of the few to sign both the "Olive Branch Petition" and the Declaration of Independence. He was reëlected to the Congress in 1776 and served throughout that year. In recognition of his services at Crown Point, he was sent with a commission to negotiate a treaty with the Indians of upper New York; he also served on a committee to establish a hospital. Though elected to the Congress of 1777, he did not go to Philadelphia, but remained in Massachusetts, where he served as speaker of the assembly. He continued, however, to experiment in the manufacturing of gunpowder and served on the committee appointed by Congress in December 1777 to inquire into the failure of the Rhode Island Expedition. In this same year he was elected first attorney-general of Massachu-

setts; in 1775 he had declined appointment to the Massachusetts supreme court. He was a member in 1778 of the committee of the legislature to prepare a draft of a state constitution and in 1779–80 played an important part in drafting that document. He was also concerned with confiscating the estates of departed Loyalists and with suppressing the rebellion led by Daniel Shays [*q.v.*] of impoverished Revolutionary soldiers.

Gov. John Hancock, a life-long friend, twice appointed Paine to the new supreme court of Massachusetts. The first of these appointments (1783) he declined, preferring to continue as attorney-general because of the larger salary, but the second (1790) he accepted as becoming the dignity of his advancing years. The extensive area of Maine (then a part of Massachusetts) necessitated tedious travels into remote regions for a justice-in-eyre. On one occasion Paine was arrested for traveling upon the Sabbath and roundly fined by a cross-roads court for violating a law he himself had been instrumental in framing. After fourteen years of service, increasing deafness hastened his retirement from the bench in 1804. He had moved his family to Boston in 1780, establishing a residence in the present Post Office Square, where a tablet indicates its site, and here he passed his sunset years, in daily converse with aristocratic fellow Federalists. Contemporary estimates of him usually remark upon his tendency to drollery, and his letters often display a whimsical extravagance of language. His life-long interest in science, especially in astronomy, led him to become a founder (1780) of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. Participating actively in affairs of the church, he broke away from the old moorings of Calvinism under the rising tide of "Rationalism," and found shelter in the harbor of Unitarianism. His last public appearance was at the installation of Edward Everett as minister to the Brattle Street Church.

On Mar. 15, 1770, Paine married Sally Cobb, sister of Gen. David Cobb, a lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts. Of their eight children, Robert Treat Paine, 1773–1811 [*q.v.*]—originally christened Thomas—became widely known as a poet. Robert Treat Paine the Signer died May 11, 1814, and was buried, from the Old Brick Church, in the Old Granary Burial Ground, only a few steps from the spot of his birth.

[Ralph Davol, *Two Men of Taunton* (1912); *The Works of John Adams* (10 vols., 1850–56), ed. by C. F. Adams; John Sanderson, *Biog. of the Signers to the Declaration of Independence*, vol. II (1822); Sarah C. Paine and C. H. Pope, *Paine Ancestry* (1912); *New England Palladium*, Mar. 13, 1814; Paine's Journal of Sixty Years (MS.), in the possession of the family.]

R. D.

PAINE, ROBERT TREAT (Dec. 9, 1773–Nov. 13, 1811), poet, christened Thomas, but legally renamed in 1801 after his eldest brother who died of the yellow fever in 1798, was born at Taunton, Mass., the second son of Robert Treat Paine [*q.v.*], signer of the Declaration of Independence, and his wife, Sally Cobb, the sister of the Revolutionary General Cobb. The family moved to Boston in the boy's seventh year. Robert attended the Boston Latin School, where he led his class, and in 1788 he matriculated at Harvard. Here he neglected routine exercises for "natural philosophy and elegant literature." Though he wrote Greek fluently and his name was often doubly underscored for excellence in composition, he showed a spirit of independence of authority and was rusticated four months in his senior year for opposing a tutor and airing his wit to President Willard. From the moment that he answered in couplet the satirical thrust of a classmate, declares Prentiss, "his blessed ruin was inevitable." In June 1792 he presented a valedictory poem, and on Commencement Day, a poem on Liberty. After graduating he entered the business world as a clerk of James Tisdale, but his contributions to the *Massachusetts Magazine* and his interest in Sarah Wentworth Morton [*q.v.*] left little room for business. In the winter of 1792–93, he fell in with the theatrical folk of Board Alley, and when the company moved into the new Boston Theatre in 1793, verses by Paine that had won the gold medal offered for a prologue raised the curtain on Sheridan, Otway, and Shakespeare. The poet found Eliza Baker, sixteen-year-old English actress, more attractive than ledgers. He turned to theatrical criticism, and left Tisdale and business in 1794.

In October 1794 Paine founded the *Federal Orrery*, of which his polite circle expected much. But the editor deserted sober Federalist politics for satire of the Jacobin faction. A mob attacked his house. The son of a man he had pilloried ignored his unloaded pistol, and thrashed him. Paine, never robust for such interludes, declared this whipping the turning point of his life. The *beau monde* dropped him; they had long been uncomfortable in his presence. He was married to Miss Baker in February 1795, and his father closed his door on him. The poet became Master of Ceremonies at the Theatre, ran into debt, and began to drink to excess. At the Harvard Commencement, 1795, he defied President Willard and read the censored lines on Jacobinism in "The Invention of Letters." The poem brought him $1,500. Next year he sold the *Orrery*, and the next, delivered a Phi Beta Kappa poem, "The

Ruling Passion," which brought him $1,200. In June 1798 he wrote "Adams and Liberty" for the Massachusetts Charitable Fire Society. When a host refused him a glass of wine till he had added a stanza on Washington, Paine seized a pen and wrote the best stanza of all. The song ran over the country like wildfire. At the break with France in 1798, he delivered an oration praised by Washington and President Adams, and, at Washington's death, he delivered a eulogy.

In 1798 a short-lived reconciliation with his father was effected. Paine was prevailed upon to study and practise law with Theophilus Parsons. Though he quoted Horace in court, attended plays and whist-parties, and made some bets, he paid off debts and became an exemplary Bostonian, being admitted to the bar in 1802. But the next year found him a satellite of the erratic theatrical Venus, Mrs. Jones. He lost two children within four days in 1804, and was very ill in 1805. Though he planned another paper, a pantomime *Bluebeard,* and a play, and tried to make a beginning on an edition of his collected works in 1808, the old fluency was gone. His shingle was taken down from the cobwebs over his door in 1809. He drifted from poor lodgings to poorer, and died in the attic of his father's house. The best Bostonians attended his funeral. Gilbert Stuart did his portrait from a death mask.

Paine's poetry began in imitation of Dryden and Gray; it ended in catch-words for political campaigns. It is the kind of poetry in which Agriculture and Freedom are capitalized. For a Columbia too young for originality, he served as bard. But Paine's life is more noteworthy. He was spokesman of the fine Neo-Roman cult of patriotism, of the age that produced the Society of the Cincinnati, put the key of the Bastile in Mt. Vernon, raised domes above lawyers invoking Virgil; a lover of reason and the theatre, a sort of sacrifice to youth and liberalism on the altar of aristocratic Boston.

[There is a biographical introduction by Chas. Prentiss to *The Works in Verse and Prose of the Late Robt. Treat Paine, Jr.* (1812) and a review of *The Works,* embracing a critical estimate of Paine's poetry, in the *Port Folio,* May 1813. See also: *Song of Jefferson and Liberty* (1874), ed. by J. P. Kirtland; Sarah C. Paine, *Paine Ancestry* (1912), ed. by C. H. Pope; and the *Columbian Centinel* (Boston), Nov. 16, 1811.]

R. P. T. C.

PAINE, ROBERT TREAT (Oct. 28, 1835–Aug. 11, 1910), philanthropist, was the third son of Charles Cushing and Fanny Cabot (Jackson) Paine and a brother of Charles Jackson Paine [*q.v.*]. He was a descendant of Thomas Paine (or Payne) who settled in Yarmouth, Mass., and was admitted freeman of Plymouth Colony in 1639, and of Gov. Robert Treat [*q.v.*] of Connecticut, and a great-grandson of Robert Treat Paine [*q.v.*], signer of the Declaration of Independence. Born in Boston, he was educated at the Boston Latin School and Harvard College, graduating from the latter in 1855 at the head of his class. After a year at the Harvard Law School, two years spent in study and travel in Europe, and a further year of legal study, he was admitted to the bar in 1859, and practised in Boston with marked and immediate success. On Apr. 24, 1862, he married Lydia Williams Lyman, by whom he had two sons and five daughters. Through his enterprise and wise investment in railroad and mining property he acquired a large fortune at a comparatively early age. He then retired from business and professional life and devoted himself exclusively to charitable and philanthropic work.

As early as 1870 he began a movement for better housing and in twenty years he had built in the vicinity of Boston over a hundred suburban dwellings, which workingmen were encouraged to buy on easy terms. His most successful and original enterprise was the Wells Memorial Institute for Workingmen, organized in 1879, a pioneer among institutions of the kind in the country. Its building, erected in 1881 at Paine's expense, became a center of industrial and trade-school courses, the seat of a cooperative bank, a successful club for working men, and even a meeting place of organized labor. His activities in behalf of better housing culminated in the Workingmen's Building Association and the Workingmen's Loan Association, both formed in 1888, of which he was the president. He was one of the first to appreciate fully that social problems must be scientifically studied, and in 1887 he and his wife founded the Robert Treat Paine Fellowship to enable Harvard graduates to study, at home or abroad, the ethical problems of society and public and private methods of ameliorating the conditions of the masses. In 1890 he established, with an endowment of $200,000, the Robert Treat Paine Association for the Help and Elevation of Working People, the proceeds of the endowment to be devoted to religious, charitable, and educational work.

It was in connection with the Associated Charities of Boston, of which he was the principal founder and the president from 1879 to 1907, that Paine's best work was done. His numerous addresses on the ideals of modern charity, which had wide circulation in pamphlet form, brought him recognition as a leading authority on the subject. The motto of the Boston Associated Charities, "Not Alms but a Friend," invented

by Paine, expresses his idea of philanthropy. He was a director of the American Prison Association and of the Boston Children's Aid Society and was influential in raising the prevailing standards of social responsibility and in securing legislation for social projects. He was an active supporter of the peace movement, president of the American Peace Society from 1891 to his death, and prominent at national and international peace conferences and at those held at Lake Mohonk.

Paine's only political office was his membership in the Massachusetts House of Representatives for the session of 1884–85, during which time he carried on investigations in connection with the committee on charitable institutions, of which he was chairman. Loyalty to his convictions drove him, at considerable cost to himself, into the Mugwump movement of 1884, and he was an unsuccessful Democratic candidate for the Forty-ninth Congress that year. Originally a Unitarian, he went with his family to Trinity Church in 1870 and remained thereafter a prominent member of the Episcopal Church, to the General Convention of which he was many times a delegate. He was chairman of the building committee of Trinity Church, and was primarily reponsible for securing the site and raising the funds for its present edifice. He was always either vestryman or warden of Trinity, and between him and its rector, Phillips Brooks, there existed a rich and lifelong friendship. He was president of the board of trustees of the Episcopal Theological School in Cambridge and a founder of the Phillips Brooks House at Harvard, at the dedication of which he made the address. He was large in mind and body, a genuine idealist, an executive of tact and force, with a rare capacity for winning adherents to a cause in which his convictions were enlisted. His death occurred in Waltham, Mass.

[S. C. Paine and C. H. Pope, *Paine Ancestry* (1912), C. H. Paine, ed.; M. C. Crawford, *Famous Families of Mass.*, vol. II (1930); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Survey*, Aug. 20, 1910; *Outlook*, Aug. 27, 1910; National Conference of Charities and Correction, *In Memoriam* (1911); *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 12, 1910.]

F. T. P.

PAINE, THOMAS (Jan. 29, 1737–June 8, 1809), revolutionary political pamphleteer, agitator, deist author of *The Age of Reason*, was born in Thetford, England, the son of Joseph and Frances (Cocke) Paine. Joseph Paine was a poor Quaker corset maker, rather unhappily married to a lady who, as an Anglican and an attorney's daughter, must have been somewhat his social superior. Young Thomas went to grammar-school until he reached thirteen, when poverty made it necessary to apprentice him at the

Paine

paternal trade. At nineteen he left home, shipping on the *King of Prussia* for a brief career as a privateer at the outbreak of war in 1756. His formal education can hardly have gone beyond the rudiments; indeed, as his enemies were delighted to point out, he never learned to write faultlessly grammatical English. In after life he referred frequently and proudly to his Quaker antecedents, and no doubt his feeling for the sanctity of the inner citadel of human consciousness had Quaker origins. But Paine had no trace of Quaker humility, no capacity for mystic self-surrender, and, since he fought in two wars, no absolute doctrines of non-resistance. He never, indeed, formally joined the Society of Friends. Nor, in spite of the efforts of a pious aunt, did he become an Anglican. He relates that a sermon on the Redemption, heard at the age of eight, impressed him with the cruelty implicit in Christianity, and made him a precocious rebel (Van der Weyde, ed., *Life and Works*, VIII, 71). Probably the most permanent influence of these twenty years upon him lay in the monotony of his occupation, in the ugliness of his poverty, in the gap—evident to himself at least—between his abilities and his apparent destiny.

For nearly twenty years more those abilities were concealed from the world. From 1757 to 1774 he was successively, and in various towns, corset maker, exciseman, school-teacher, exciseman again, tobacconist, and grocer. These last occupations he was able to carry on while maintaining his place in the excise. He went through two brief, childless marriages. His first wife, Mary Lambert, died within a year of their marriage at Sandwich on Sept. 27, 1759; the second, Elizabeth Ollive, whom he married on Mar. 26, 1771, while he was stationed at Lewes, was legally separated from him in 1774. The separation seems to have been due, not to any scandal, but to temperamental difficulties on both sides. The mere fact of separation, however, proved later a boon to Paine's enemies, and was generously embroidered to discredit him (George Chalmers, *Life of Thomas Paine*, 1791, pp. 33–35; James Cheetham, *Life of Thomas Paine*, 1809, p. 30). He was twice dismissed from the excise: first, in 1765, for having, as he himself admitted, stamped as examined goods he had not examined at all; and finally, after a reïnstatement which shows that his first offense was regarded as venial, for overstaying a leave of absence. The real motive for this second dismissal was probably Paine's activity as agent for the excisemen in their attempt to get Parliament to raise their wages, a form of agitation then rather novel, and

even revolutionary. He drew up a brief for his fellow excisemen, *The Case of the Officers of Excise,* privately printed in 1772 (published also in 1793). Cut off from his salary as exciseman, he was obliged to go into an ordinary and by no means discreditable bankruptcy. Like many another defeated European, he decided to try the new world. In London as lobbyist for his fellow-excisemen, Paine had had the luck to meet Franklin, and to make a favorable impression upon him. In October 1774, bearing invaluable letters of introduction from Franklin, this "ingenious, worthy young man" left for Philadelphia (A. H. Smyth, *Writings of Benjamin Franklin,* VI, 1906, pp. 248–49). Those years of failure and poverty had given Paine an education. He had not precisely learned from failure; he had, indeed, failed in business partly through too great a devotion to abstract learning. Ever since he had left school he had spent his spare time and money on books, lectures, scientific apparatus. He read widely but always seriously, worked hard at mathematics, experimented with mechanical contrivances. He thus achieved what was rare in Europe at the time, an education strictly confined to contemporaneous matters. No conservative, no evaluating discipline stood between his temperament and his times. Eighteenth-century science taught him to revolt against a society quite unscientifically constructed.

In Philadelphia, where he arrived on Nov. 30, 1774, Paine fell naturally into journalism. He supported himself largely by contributions to Robert Aitken's *Pennsylvania Magazine.* His first year's work covered a wide range, from recent inventions to "Cupid & Hymen." He was a pioneer in the movement for the abolition of negro slavery (*Pennsylvania Journal,* Mar. 8, 1775), but he cannot be numbered among the first defenders of women's rights. An article on that subject in the *Pennsylvania Magazine,* included by Conway in his edition of Paine's works, has been shown to be a translation from the French, a language Paine could not read (Frank Smith, in *American Literature,* Nov. 1930, p. 277). Nor is it likely that Paine had any personal influence in establishing the text of the Declaration of Independence (Albert Matthews, *Proceedings Massachusetts Historical Society,* XLIII, 1910, pp. 241–53). *Common Sense* gives him sufficient title to originality and fame, and his acknowledged writings are extensive enough without uncertain additions based on "internal evidence."

Common Sense was published as an anonymous, two-shilling pamphlet of forty-seven pages

in Philadelphia on Jan. 10, 1776. It urged the immediate declaration of independence, not merely as a striking practical gesture that would help unite the colonies and secure French and Spanish aid, but as the fulfillment of America's moral obligation to the world. The colonies must fall away eventually, Paine said; a continent could not remain tied to an island. If now, while their society was still uncorrupt, natural, and democratic, these colonies should free themselves from a vicious monarchy, they could alter human destiny by their example. Paine was the first publicist to discover America's mission. It is curious that, though his political ideology was thoroughly Jeffersonian, he insisted in all his writings of this period on the necessity for a strong federal union, emphasizing the dangers of particularism and state sovereignty. These centralizing doctrines, emphatic in *Common Sense,* were expanded in *Public Good* (1780), a pamphlet directed against Virginia's western land claims. Paine undoubtedly consulted such leaders as Franklin and Rush about *Common Sense,* but the pamphlet itself was entirely his own, and was launched on his own responsibility. Its success was amazing. Paine himself wrote that 120,000 copies had been sold in less than three months, and his best biographer asserts that 500,000 were sold in all (Conway, *Life,* I, 67–69). Even allowing for exaggeration, these are impressive figures.

Paine's authorship soon became known. After defending himself as "Forester" in the *Pennsylvania Journal* from the attacks of the Loyalist William Smith, he enlisted in the army in time to join in the retreat across New Jersey. At Newark he set to work on his first *Crisis,* which appeared in the *Pennsylvania Journal* on Dec. 19, and in pamphlet form on Dec. 23. The famous words with which it begins, "These are the times that try men's souls," probably did not win the battle of Trenton, but its eloquence did hearten many. Cheetham, Paine's bitter enemy, writes that "the number was read in the camp, to every corporal's guard, and in the army and out of it had more than the intended effect" (Cheetham, *Life,* p. 56). Eleven other numbers of the *Crisis,* with four supernumerary ones, appeared in the course of the war. The whole work shows Paine at his best as a political journalist. Characteristic are number three (April 1777) suggesting vigorous measures against American Tories, and *The Crisis Extraordinary* (October 1780) pointing out how an efficient federal and state tax system could readily shoulder the burden of the war.

Paine's services obviously merited some re-

ward. Occasional journalism was not, in his devoted but careless hands, an adequate means of self-support. In April 1777, he was appointed by Congress secretary to its committee on foreign affairs, a position he filled well enough until he was drawn into the extraordinary affair of Beaumarchais. Before France dared risk active alliance with the revolting colonies, supplies had been sent to America through the medium of Beaumarchais. Payment for these supplies was disputed. Silas Deane [*q.v.*], American agent recalled from France, upheld Beaumarchais' claim. Congress, however, relying largely on Arthur Lee [*q.v.*], who was still in France, refused payment. Deane, denied what he considered justice, rashly took to the newspapers in his own defense. Paine had the true revolutionist's scent for corruption, and an optimist's trust in the disinterestedness of the French government. He replied to Deane in the *Philadelphia Packet,* notably on Dec. 15, 1778, Jan. 2, and 9, 1779. In these letters he committed a double indiscretion: he supported his contentions by references to documents (reports from Lee), to which his position gave him confidential access; and by his statements he made it appear that the French government had sent supplies to the revolting colonies while it was still at peace with Great Britain. Under pressure from the French minister, Gérard, Paine resigned his position (Jan. 8, 1779). Gérard asserts that he immediately thereafter got Paine to accept a thousand dollars a year to write anonymously in the papers in support of France, but that he proved an unreliable press agent, and had to be released. The statement has only Gérard's authority, and is inconsistent with Paine's character. He had, indeed, as his conduct in the Beaumarchais affair shows, an idealistic devotion to the revolutionary cause quite proof against the limitations of propriety and tact; but he was incapable of financial dishonesty (Conway, *Life,* I, chap. IX).

Paine was soon (November 1779) given an appointment as clerk of the Pennsylvania Assembly. He continued his *Crisis,* and in 1780 showed further his devotion to the revolutionary cause by heading with a subscription of $500 out of a salary installment of $1,699 (paper) a fund for the relief of Washington's army. In 1781 he accompanied John Laurens to France in search of further financial relief, and returned successfully in the same year with money and stores. Beyond his expenses, he got nothing for the trip, and further, he was obliged to give up his position in the Assembly. The successful peace found him honored but poor. New York, however, gave him a confiscated Loyalist farm at

Paine

New Rochelle, and Pennsylvania £500 in cash. For Paine's modest needs this was enough, and until 1787 he lived in Bordentown, N. J., and in New York, mildly lionized, writing, and working on his most cherished invention, an iron bridge (D. C. Seitz, "Thomas Paine, Bridge Builder," *Virginia Quarterly Review,* Oct. 1927, p. 571). In 1786 he published *Dissertations on Government, The Affairs of the Bank, and Paper-Money,* in which he asserted that paper money involved inevitable inflation and injustice to creditors, and insisted that the state of Pennsylvania could not legally repeal its charter of the Bank of North America.

Because of his bridge (which he despaired of getting erected in America), and no doubt his temperamental restlessness, he went to Europe in 1787. The fall of the Bastille found him in Yorkshire making desperate efforts to get his bridge built. He had passed two pleasant years, partly in France and partly in England, welcomed by liberals like Condorcet, Fox, and even Burke, as the author of *Common Sense* and the friend of Washington. The bridge did get built, and stood up, though Paine lost money in the affair. He went to Paris late in 1789, and for nearly three years alternated between Paris and London, a self-appointed missionary of the world revolution. England, Paine felt, needed his efforts if the revolutionary movement were to continue its spread, and Burke's downright and immediately popular condemnation of the French Revolution late in 1790 provided an excellent opportunity for him to exert them. Paine replied to Burke early in 1791 with the first part of his *Rights of Man.* A second part followed in February 1792.

The *Rights of Man* was first of all a party pamphlet, an excellent piece of special pleading in defense of specific measures taken in revolutionary France. It is also an exposition of the "principles of 1776 and 1789." Government exists, Paine said, to guarantee to the individual that portion of his natural rights of which unaided he could not ensure himself. These rights, with respect to which all men are equal, are liberty, property, security, and resistance to oppression. Only a republican form of government can be trusted to maintain these rights; and the republic must have a written constitution, including a bill of rights, manhood suffrage, executive officers chosen for short terms and subjected to rotation in office, a judiciary not beyond ultimate control by the people, a legislative body popularly elected at regular intervals, and a citizenry undivided by artificial distinctions of birth and rank, by religious intol-

erance, by shocking economic inequalities. Such a republic will be well and cheaply governed, or rather, little governed, for "government is no farther necessary than to supply the few cases to which society and civilisation are not conveniently competent" (Van der Weyde, VI, 241). Part II contains, rather inconsistently, numerous proposals for social legislation which show that Paine was not unaware of the class struggle. Finally, the *Rights of Man* was an appeal to the English people to overthrow their monarchy and set up a republic. Paine clearly hoped that his pamphlet would do in England what *Common Sense* had done in America. It did indeed become immensely popular with English radicals, and is said to have sold 200,000 copies by 1793 (Conway, *Life*, I, 346). It was suppressed by Pitt's government, and its author, safe for the moment in France, was tried for treason and outlawed in December 1792.

Paine, with Washington, Hamilton, Madison, and certain Europeans of adequate virtue, had been made a French citizen by the Assembly on Aug. 26, 1792. In September the new Frenchman was elected to the Convention from four departments, choosing to sit for the Pas de Calais. As he could not speak French, and had to have his speeches read for him, his rôle in that assembly was inconsiderable. His friends, notably Condorcet, who knew English well, were mostly among the respectable, prosperous, moderate republicans of the Gironde group, and Paine attached himself to their party. He did, however, assert his independence and his humanity at the trial of Louis XVI by urging that the king be imprisoned to the end of the war and then banished for life. After the fall of the Girondins in June 1793 Paine ceased, on his own admission, to attend an assembly which was but a subordinate part of the tyrannical government of the Terror (Van der Weyde, V, 308). With a few congenial friends, he lived peacefully in the semi-rural Faubourg St. Denis until, a vote of the Convention having deprived him of his French citizenship and parliamentary immunity, he was imprisoned on Dec. 28, 1793, under a law providing for the imprisonment of nationals of countries at war with France. Poor Paine, outlawed in England, was now arrested in France as an Englishman. His imprisonment in the Luxembourg was not very harsh, for he was able to compose part of *The Age of Reason* there. He was never brought to trial and, after the fall of Robespierre had ended the Terror, was released in November 1794 at the request of the new American minister, Monroe, who claimed him as an American citizen.

Paine

There has grown up an exaggerated account of Paine's tribulations in France. His imprisonment has been seen as a plot devised by his bitter enemy, the American minister, Gouverneur Morris [*q.v.*], and consented to by violent Jacobin politicians anxious to rid themselves of a dangerous opponent. It is much more likely that the simple, official explanation is the true one. Paine was generally regarded by French politicians as a harmless humanitarian. Even his heresy on the execution of Louis XVI was forgiven on the ground that, as a Quaker, he could not vote for the death penalty. The debates in the Convention make it clear that he lost his French citizenship chiefly because patriotism, fanned by military defeat into hysteria, demanded extreme measures against foreigners. The very fact that he was never brought to trial is conclusive proof that the Jacobins did not desire his death. Morris had a conservative's dislike for Paine's ideas and activities, a social conformist's dislike for his Bohemian habits. When Paine formally applied to him for protection, Morris sent the French foreign minister a letter which mildly disclaimed responsibility for Paine's acts since his acceptance of French citizenship, but which did at least request that information be communicated to the American government. The minister's reply denied Paine's claim to American citizenship. Morris did not press the matter, and wrote Jefferson that Paine, even were the French brought to admit him an American citizen, would still be liable under French criminal law for offenses alleged to have been committed in France, and that he was better off unnoticed in jail than publicly on trial before the pitiless revolutionary courts. It seems gratuitous to attribute hypocrisy to Morris in an act displaying such obvious common sense and tact.

On his release from the Luxembourg, Paine, weakened by illness and without means of support, was hospitably cared for by Monroe and nursed back to health. Restored to his seat in the Convention, he appeared before that body in July 1795 and reiterated his faith in the Rights of Man. He next took up residence with Nicolas de Bonneville, a moderate republican journalist whom he had known before the Terror. Until 1802, when the Peace of Amiens made it safe for him to return to America, he lived in Paris, his slender resources eked out by the kindness of friends. He wrote variously, and helped to organize a little group of "Theophilanthropists," a sort of ethical culture society which aimed to supplant Christian superstitions with an orderly faith in humanity. He published a

Dissertation on First-Principles of Government (1795), and an essay, *Agrarian Justice, . . .* (1797). The *Letter to George Washington* (1796), in which he accused the president of bad faith or at least indifference, and Morris of deliberate plotting against him, was the outburst of a disappointed man not wholly free from delusions of persecution, and did much to injure his reputation in America.

The great work of this period was *The Age of Reason* (Part I, 1794; Part II, 1796). This so-called "atheist's bible" begins with the assertion, "I believe in one God, and no more; and I hope for happiness beyond this life." Paine, of course, was not an atheist, but a deist, and *The Age of Reason* was begun as a final justification for the metaphysical ultimates of his belief. He starts out with the familiar proofs of the existence of God, the argument from design and the argument from a first cause. He defines knowledge in the customary way of his century as clear, mathematical, and scientific. He then proceeds to show that man's knowledge of the Christian God is not that sort of knowledge. The second part of the work is an analysis of both testaments, book by book, designed to show that the Bible is inconsistent, and therefore not infallible. Almost everything that Paine brings forward here is today a commonplace of critical scholarship. His attempts at a treatment of comparative religions, such as his reference to "Christian mythology" and his scandalous analogy between the paternity of the first person of the Trinity and the paternities of Zeus, are modern enough in spirit, and today would offend many professing Christians by their manner rather than their matter—a remark which indeed holds true of the whole book. Having demolished Christianity, Paine returns to his God, whose power is apparent "in the immensity of the creation," whose wisdom is seen "in the unchangeable order by which the incomprehensible whole is governed" (*Ibid.*, VIII, 43).

In October 1802 Paine at last returned home to America. Mere physical absence, however, had not prevented his playing his usual contentious part in American politics. The first copy of the *Rights of Man* to arrive in America was lent by its recipient, J. Beckley, to Jefferson, with the request that he pass it on to the printer to get out an American edition. Jefferson [*q.v.*] passed it on, and wishing, as he characteristically explained later, to take off a little of the "dryness" of a formal accompanying note, added some genial remarks about the pamphlet's uses as an antidote to the "political heresies" of the time. The printer proceeded to publish Jefferson's note as a sort of official preface (P. L. Ford, *Writings of Thomas Jefferson*, V, 1895, pp. 328 ff.). The Federalists at once took up the phrase "political heresies" as leveled at John Adams—as indeed it was. J. Q. Adams as "Publicola" attacked Paine's principles and Jefferson's indiscretion in the *Columbian Centinel* (June–July 1791), and Paine found himself vicariously in the midst of the bitterest possible party warfare. *The Age of Reason* and the *Letter to Washington* served to maintain his highly controversial position in America. In 1801, Jefferson involved himself further by offering Paine passage home in a public vessel, the *Maryland*. By this time, as Henry Adams temperately puts it, Paine was "regarded by respectable society, both Federalist and Republican, as a person to be avoided, a character to be feared" (*History of the United States,* vol. I, 1889, p. 317). Paine wisely refused the offer, and returned on a private vessel.

The last seven years of Paine's life were spent partly in Bordentown, partly in New York City and in New Rochelle. They were marked by poverty, declining health, and social ostracism. Paine wrote little of importance in these years. In New York he mixed with radical society, and especially with the rationalists gathered around Elihu Palmer as the "Columbian Illuminati." Madame de Bonneville, wife of his old Parisian friend, had come to America with her three children, one of whom was Benjamin de Bonneville [*q.v.*], of later fame. Paine generously helped to support the family, stranded in America when Napoleon refused to allow the father to leave France. In these final years of Paine's life center many of the tales told to his discredit—that he was a drunkard, a coward, an adulterer, a tavern atheist. Many of these have no basis at all. But one thing is certain; whether deservedly or not, his last years were those of an outcast. He died in New York on June 8, 1809. There is no evidence of a death-bed repentance, though naturally enough such stories were industriously circulated (Conway, *Life,* II, 420). Since consecrated ground was closed to the infidel, he was buried in a corner of his farm in New Rochelle. In 1819 William Cobbett [*q.v.*], to atone for his bitter attacks on Paine in the nineties, had the latter's bones dug up, and took them back to England, intending to raise a great monument to the patriotic author of the *Rights of Man.* The monument was never erected, and on Cobbett's death in 1835 the bones passed into the hands of a receiver in probate. The court refused to regard them as an asset, and, with the coffin, they were acquired by a fur-

niture dealer in 1844, at which point they are lost to history.

Any attempt at a calm appraisal of Paine's character runs the risk of shading hostile black and friendly white into a neutral gray. Men always described him in superlatives, and in anything less than superlatives he seems unreal. He took an extreme, partisan stand on two issues that still divide Americans: in politics, that of the Jeffersonians against the Hamiltonians; in religion, that of the modernists against the fundamentalists. That Paine was a revolutionary by temperament is a statement on which his admirers and his detractors can agree; but it does but form the start for an analysis of his character. The repressed circumstances of his youth taught him that something was wrong with the world. His familiarity with the scientific and sociological writings of his contemporaries gave him a definite idea of a much better world. Experience helped him to fill in the outlines of this picture of a better world, but hardly to alter them. To the end, Paine would put up with nothing less than the Republic of Man. In America, in England, in France, he was serving, not men, but Reason.

This devotion to an abstraction, combined with a temperament naturally rebellious, made Paine extraordinarily sure of himself. His success as a writer sustained his self-confidence, while his failure at everything else supplied him with an abundance of grievances. This quality appeared to his enemies as a colossal vanity. Etienne Dumont wrote that he "was drunk with vanity. . . . It was he who had done everything in America. . . . He fancied that his book upon the *Rights of Man* ought to be substituted for every other book in the world" (*Recollections of Mirabeau*, 1832, p. 277). Even in the pages of his friend Monroe, this vanity comes out, perhaps in a truer light, as an extraordinary conviction of his own rightness, of his superior obligation to follow the light of his own reason (S. M. Hamilton, *Writings of James Monroe*, II, 1898, p. 441). He had also the unworldliness of the true revolutionary. Much has been made of his failure to enrich himself out of the hundreds of thousands of pamphlets he scattered over the western world, of his selling *Common Sense* at a loss, of his gift of the profits from the *Rights of Man* to the radical London Corresponding Society. But he did these things perhaps as much from indifference as from generosity. He simply lacked, as his early failures in business show, the gift of managing his own affairs. One suspects that towards the end he came to nurse this weakness as a virtue. Indeed, it is difficult to

Paine

escape the conclusion that in some respects Paine was the professional radical, the persecuted witness against the sins of the mighty. No doubt he was badly treated by respectable people on his return to America. No doubt he really was persecuted for his failures, big and little, to conform to current standards. But he gained an easy if somewhat shabby martyrdom thereby. And, cruel though the remark may seem, a happy, honored Paine is inconceivable in any world short of his own ideal one.

Of many of the aspersions spread by the pious and the conservative against Paine's character, we can make short shrift. Like most hated public men, he was accused of sexual irregularities, but all the evidence makes him out a singularly chaste man. After his death, Cheetham accused him of adultery with Madame de Bonneville, thirty-one years his junior. She brought a libel action against Cheetham and won it triumphantly (Conway, *Life*, II, 300). Nor can Paine be accused of financial dishonesty. He had numerous connections, especially in France, with men who were enriching themselves at public expense, but no one has succeeded in pinning a single job on him. Neither the charge that he beat his first wife nor that of his cowardice during the New Jersey campaign rests on any real evidence. That of drunkenness is a different matter. Too many people, friends and foes alike, have mentioned Paine's fondness for the brandy bottle for the fact of his drinking to be disputed. In his old age, he probably drank rather frequently. But he never was, as fanatics have charged, a dipsomaniac, nor did he die in *delirium tremens*. He seems always to have been careless about his personal appearance, and age and ostracism made him in his last years a trifle unlovely.

This opinionated and temperamental revolutionary never could bear to inflict physical suffering on any creature. He could not, like Robespierre, be cruel to men under the comfortable illusion that he was destroying abstractions. He did at times incline to think the great mass of people fools. He is reported—in a work of fiction, indeed, but with great psychological truth—as having defended the proposition that the minority is, even in a legislative body, more apt to be right than the majority (Royall Tyler, *The Algerine Captive*, 1802, vol. I, chap. XXVIII). But this paradox has become almost a traditional property of modern liberalism. It was one of the beliefs that helped disarm Paine for action, and prevent him from turning persecutor. In the last madness of the French Revolution he appears touchingly sane and modest. He cared too

much for his ideal state—for liberty, equality, and fraternity—to risk trying to realize it. His ideals, his sense of martyrdom and election, his softness, all the qualities that made him a good agitator, combined to turn him against the Terror.

Paine seems never to have labored to learn to write, but to have written easily and well from the moment, near middle age, when he decided to make writing his occupation. Now he did not write romantic prose, nor Augustan prose. He has nothing to do with mystery nor with majesty. But his prose is not pedestrian. He wrote neatly, lucidly, argumentatively, with the simplicity that apes artlessness. His sentences are brief, or at least relatively free from inversions and other Latin tricks. All his rhetoric is centred on the epithet, not on the sentence structure. He is full of telling and quotable phrases: "government is for the living, and not for the dead"; "society is produced by our wants and government by our wickedness"; "the ragged relic and the antiquated precedent, the monk and the monarch, will molder together" (Van der Weyde, VI, 26; II, 97; VI, 302). If, as in the last quotation, the epithets are a trifle theatrical, the effect on his audience is all the more telling. Jefferson thought Paine's style resembled Franklin's. Both men, indeed, wrote simply in a century fond of periodic eloquence. But Paine is moving, almost passionate, in a curiously contentious way; his aphorisms lack the sleek touch of common sense. Paine was always pleading a cause; his books are arguments, rather than expositions. Occasionally his pleading seems unnecessarily involved, or descends to endless chicanery. But in general he succeeds admirably in being interesting, understandable, and irritating—necessary virtues of a revolutionary journalist.

Paine belongs rather to the history of opinion than to the history of thought; he is the propagandist, through whom the ideas of great original thinkers are transmitted to the crowd. Yet one cannot in fairness deny him that measure of originality which makes stereotypes of philosophical abstractions. His written work, and in particular his major writings, *Common Sense*, the *Rights of Man*, and *The Age of Reason* can be taken as one of the typical patterns of eighteenth-century thought in Europe and America —in some respects, perhaps, as the most typical of such patterns. At first sight, his surprising ignorance of French may seem to have limited his command over the materials common to his contemporaries. But he mixed with the leading radicals of both continents, learned a great deal by talking, and thus absorbed his Bayle and his

Paine

Voltaire, his Rousseau and his Holbach at second hand.

Fundamental to this pattern of Paine's is the notion that mechanical causation in the Newtonian sense is an absolutely universal phenomenon. The laws of Nature, in his opinion, apply to politics as to astronomy, and in both fields men can, by discovering these laws and adapting their conduct to them, make their lives orderly and agreeable. Now in politics the majority of men have, through ignorance, disobeyed these laws and have reaped the consequence in unhappiness. To set up kings and priests to secure political health is as foolish as to set up magical incantations to secure physical health. An enlightened people will abolish old institutions as old superstitions, and in their place put the law of Nature, codified in the Rights of Man. Force as we know it will cease to exist, and all government will be self-government. Paine does not, of course, put things quite as baldly as this. He fills in the pattern with many and sometimes contradictory details. In particular, he hesitated before a dilemma familiar to his contemporaries: are common men to be trusted to manage their own affairs, or must the enlightened central government restrain selfish or ignorant particularism? Though the theoretical bases of his thought are all on the anarchic side, he often proposes practical measures on the authoritarian side (Van der Weyde, VII, 18; IV, 219 ff.). He makes no real attempt to sound the meaning of his favorite abstractions—rights, liberty, equality. His thought lacks subtlety and shading. Like most of his contemporaries, he is a confirmed environmentalist. But Paine is blunter than any one but a propagandist may be. "Man is not the enemy of man," he asserts, "but through the medium of a false system of government" (*Ibid.*, VI, 209). Heredity is a mere political imposition. It has no justification in nature. Wisdom, in particular, is a "seedless plant" (*Ibid.*, 263).

These political ideas, save where they are preserved in such pieces of ritual as the preamble to the Declaration of Independence or the French Declaration of the Rights of Man and the Citizen, seem now outmoded enough. Much in Paine's writings is almost quaint, as when he argues that his deist God created the solar system in order to teach men mathematics (*Ibid.*, VIII, 83). The nineteenth century pointed out adequately enough the weakness of his political philosophy—the abuse of the deductive method, the assumption that men are capable of guiding their conduct wholly by reason, the contempt for history, the faith in written constitutions, the

neglect of economic conflicts. The twentieth century is bidding fair to undermine the mechanical concept of causation on which his whole system rests. But of the work of Paine and men like him this much at least remains: the final destruction of the idea of a society hierarchically organized under a pessimistic and static cosmology; and the belief, now apparently rising again in a chastened form after the anti-rationalism of the nineteenth century, that human reason is man's best guide in politics and in ethics.

As to how much influence Paine's writings exerted on the course of history, there can be no final answer. Conceivably the United States of America might have become a free nation had *Common Sense* never been written. But even those who see history determined by economic and other physical, concrete forces can hardly deny that *Common Sense* helped to humanize and to concentrate such forces. Since his death Paine has lived on as a hero to a relatively small band of free-thinkers, of which men like Ingersoll and Bradlaugh were leaders. He has played in both Anglo-Saxon countries a rôle similar to that played by Voltaire on the Continent. To the majority of Englishmen and Americans, his name has been anathema. Not even his services during the Revolution have made him popular in the land which, after the abstract Republic of Man, he held most dear. There are signs, however, that the "atheist" is being forgotten in the patriot. At the celebration of the centenary of his death in New Rochelle in 1909, a Son of the American Revolution, in full Continental uniform, shared the platform with Painite free-thinkers. But there are still many to whom Paine is, as he was to Theodore Roosevelt, a "filthy little atheist" (*Gouverneur Morris*, 1888, p. 289). The discredit into which Paine fell is no doubt explicable partly by the fact that he was temperamentally a rebel, a socially disreputable professional agitator, and that America has done its best to live down this aspect of its origins; partly by the fact that his life was an unheroic sequence of purely literary struggles.

[Paine's unpublished letters and papers were destroyed by fire while in the possession of General Bonneville. Most of his letters to Jefferson and other contemporaries have been used by Conway in his *Life*. Further scholarly research like that of Frank Smith, "New Light on Thomas Paine's First Year in America," *American Literature*, Jan. 1930; "The Authorship of 'An Occasional Letter upon the Fair Sex,'" *Ibid.*, Nov. 1930, can no doubt add somewhat to our knowledge of Paine's minor journalistic writings. The first critical and complete edition of his works is that of M. D. Conway, *The Writings of Thomas Paine* (4 vols., 1894–96). The edition of W. M. Van der Weyde, *The Life and Works of Thomas Paine* (10 vols., 1925), adds nothing of importance to that of Conway. There are numerous separate and inexpensive editions of *Common Sense*, *The Crisis*, the *Rights of Man*, and *The Age of Reason*.

Early examples of hostile lives are those of George Chalmers, or "Francis Oldys" (1791); and James Cheetham (1809); of friendly lives, those of T. C. Rickman (1819), and Gilbert Vale (1841). The standard biography is M. D. Conway, *The Life of Thomas Paine* (2 vols., 1892); this was translated by Félix Rabbe, and published, with additional material, as *Thomas Paine (1737–1809) et la Révolution dans les deux Mondes* (1900). Conway is an uncritical admirer, and constantly exaggerates Paine's achievements; he is somewhat careless about giving exact references to his authorities. But he did a thorough piece of research in Europe and in America, and generously publishes his evidence as well as his conclusions. Subsequent lives by Ellery Sedgwick (1899), F. J. Gould (1925), W. M. Van der Weyde (1925, vol. I of the same author's edition of the *Works*), and M. A. Best (1927), have added no important facts, and little critical interpretation.

For Paine's political and theological ideas, see Leslie Stephen, *Hist. of English Thought in the 18th Century* (2 vols., 1876), I, 458–64; II, 260–64; M. C. Tyler, *The Lit. Hist. of the Am. Revolution* (1897), I, 452–74; C. E. Merriam, "Thomas Paine's Political Theories," *Pol. Science Quart.*, Sept. 1899, pp. 389–403; F. J. C. Hearnshaw, ed., *Social and Political Ideas of . . . the Revolutionary Era* (1931), 100–40. A recent article is H. H. Clark, "Toward a Reinterpretation of Thomas Paine," *Am. Literature*, May 1933. An obituary is in *N. Y. Evening Post*, June 10, 1809. There are no critical bibliographies; see the "Brief List of Paine's Works" in Conway, *Life*, II, 482–83; "Selected Reading List" in A. W. Peach, *Selections from the Works of Thomas Paine* (1928), i–iii.] C. B—n.

PAINTER, GAMALIEL (May 22, 1743–May 21, 1819), Revolutionary soldier and one of the founders of Middlebury College, was born in New Haven, Conn., the third son and the youngest of the six children of Shubael and Elizabeth (Dunbar) Painter. He was a descendant of Thomas Painter who was living in Massachusetts in 1637 and later moved to Rhode Island. Gamaliel received only a common-school education, perhaps at Salisbury, Conn. Here, on Aug. 20, 1767, he married Abigail Chipman. With her brother, John, he purchased land in the township of Middlebury, Vt., possibly from his own brother, Elisha, who was one of the original grantees in 1761. After preliminary explorations he took his wife and two sons to Vermont in 1773. Until the outbreak of the Revolution he was busy with the usual duties of the backwoodsman, clearing and planting his land, making surveys, opening roads, and, like most early settlers in western Vermont, resisting New York claimants to his lands. With the outbreak of hostilities he promptly joined the army, apparently serving with the expedition to Canada in 1775. The next year he became a lieutenant in Warner's Additional Continental Regiment. Later, he held a captain's commission in Baldwin's Artillery Artificer Regiment. He retired from the service in April 1782. Meanwhile, he had represented Middlebury at the two conventions at Dorset, Jan. 16 and Sept. 25, 1776; and in the

Windsor Convention (1777) which formed the state constitution he sat for Cornwall. When, however, British forces that year occupied much of the western part of the state, he withdrew from Vermont, returning with his family in 1784.

Three years later, after buying part of the site of the future village of Middlebury, he moved there and engaged actively in laying out village streets and selling lots. He erected a gristmill to attract settlers and engaged in various enterprises to promote the prosperity of the settlement which he was fathering. A simple, unassuming man, slow and halting in speech, and without any claims to consideration on the score of culture or education, he nevertheless won a position of authority in the new community. His sturdy physique and native mechanical sense fitted him admirably for the manifold tasks of the frontier. Sound judgment and shrewd business acumen, combined with energy and initiative, soon gave him a competence, which in the next thirty years grew into a considerable fortune for that region.

Having won the respect of his neighbors he renewed his political activity. Though without legal training, he served as assistant judge of Addison County from 1785 to 1786 and from 1787 to 1795. In 1786 he was elected from Middlebury for the first of fourteen terms in the lower house of the state legislature, a service which continued with some interruptions until 1810. Thereafter, he was twice (1813 and 1814) a member of the council which shared the executive powers with the governor. Throughout his life he was a firm Federalist. Conscious of the handicaps of a deficient education, he was an eager promoter of public instruction. He was one of the five original trustees of the Addison County grammar school founded at Middlebury in 1797, and when, in 1800, Middlebury College was added to this institution, Painter was one of its fellows. This administrative position he held until his death. His first wife having died in 1790, about 1795 he married Victoria Ball of Salisbury, Conn., by whom he had one daughter. Some time after 1806 he married for a third time, Mrs. Ursula Bull, daughter of Isaac Bull and widow of William Bull, of Litchfield, Conn. His three children having died, he provided that after the death of his third wife his estate should go to the college which he had helped to found and the building of which he had helped to erect.

[D. L. Jacobus, "The Painter Family," *New England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1914; Samuel Swift, *Hist. of the Town of Middlebury* (1859); *Records of the Governor and Council of the State of Vt.*, vol. VI (1878); J. M. Comstock, *A List of the Principal Civil Officers of Vt. from 1777 to 1918* (1918); G. C. Woodruff, *A Geneal. Reg. of the Inhabitants of the Town of Litchfield, Conn.* (1900); *Hist. Colls. Relating to the Town of Salisbury, Litchfield County, Conn.*, vol. II (1916); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of the Officers of the Continental Army* (1914); A. M. Hemenway, *The Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, vol. I (1868); *National Standard* (Middlebury, Vt.), May 26, 1819; *Conn. Courant* (Hartford), June 8, 1819.]

P. D. E.

PAINTER, WILLIAM (Nov. 20, 1838–July 15, 1906), engineer, inventor, was born on his father's farm at Triadelphia, Montgomery County, Md. He was the son of Dr. Edward and Louisa (Gilpin) Painter and was descended from early seventeenth-century Quaker settlers in Pennsylvania. During the first ten years of William's life his father farmed in various places in Maryland, the last being at Fallston, Harford County, and the boy's education was received in Friends' schools there and in Wilmington, Del. In 1855 he became an apprentice in a patent-leather manufacturing plant in Wilmington. Here he remained for four years, during which time he gave the first evidences of inventive ability, patenting a fare box on Aug. 3, 1858, and a railroad car seat and couch on Aug. 31, of the same year. In 1859 he returned to Fallston, Md., where his father had become the proprietor of a general store, and postmaster, and for the succeeding six years he worked as his assistant. During this time he devised and patented two additional inventions, a counterfeit-coin detector, July 8, 1862; and a kerosene lamp burner, June 30, 1863.

Realizing now that his greatest interest lay in the field of mechanics and mechanical engineering, early in 1865 he moved with his family to Baltimore and there obtained the position of foreman of a machine shop. Here, in the succeeding twenty years he engaged in the construction and improvement of pumping and other machinery for his employers. He conducted, too, in their establishment his own inventive and consulting engineering work, devising upwards of thirty-five contrivances, including an automatic magneto-signal for telephones, a seed sower, a soldering tool, and several pump valves. Soon after 1880 he turned his attention to bottle stoppers, and after several years of experiment obtained a patent, Apr. 14, 1885, for a wire-retaining rubber stopper, the feature of which was that it could be removed easily with one hand. To market this invention, the Triumph Bottle Stopper Company was organized in Baltimore by Painter and his friends. Soon afterward, Sept. 29, 1885, he obtained a patent for a so-called bottle seal, which was the first single-use bottle stopper, other than corks, ever offered the bottling trade. As this could be made and sold for ten times less than the "Triumph" stopper,

the company organized to market the latter was disbanded and the Bottle Seal Company was organized to market the new invention. It met with ready approval and provided a large and profitable business in the succeeding seven years. About 1891, however, Painter conceived the idea of a single-use cap stopper of metal, and on Feb. 2, 1892, obtained patents for such a sealing device. These are the basic patents of the "Crown Cork" bottle caps used extensively throughout the world today. To market this latest invention, the Bottle Seal Company was reorganized as the Crown Cork and Seal Company, incorporated Mar. 9, 1892, of which Painter was secretary and general manager until he retired in 1903. Besides the administrative work devolving on him he directed the experimental work as well, developing and patenting practically all of the machinery, not only to manufacture the caps but also to apply the caps to bottles. In the course of his career he was granted some eighty-five patents, the last one being issued after his death. On Sept. 9, 1861, he married Harriet Magee Deacon of Philadelphia, Pa.; at the time of his death, in Baltimore, Md., he was survived by his widow and three children.

[O. C. Painter, *Geneal. and Biog. Sketches of the Family of Samuel Painter* (1903), and *William Painter and His Father, Dr. Edward Painter* (1914); *Trans. Am. Soc. Mechanical Engineers*, vol. XXVIII (1907); Patent Office Records; *Sun* (Baltimore), July 16, 1906.] C. W. M—n.

PALEY, JOHN (Feb. 6, 1871–Dec. 23, 1907), editor, author, was born in Pleshczenitz, government of Minsk (some accounts say Radoszkowitz, government of Wilna), Russia, the son of Hyman Paley and Hayye Chortow. He received a traditional Jewish training at private schools, the Talmudical colleges of Minsk and Volozhin, and the Rabbinical seminary at Libau, under the directorship of Dr. Hillel Klein. At the last-named city he first commenced to acquire a secular education. Leaving Libau, he continued his studies at Kaunas, in the present Lithuania, and from thence proceeded to Moscow, where he engaged in business. In 1888 he left for the United States, where he remained until his death. He married Sophia Amchaintzky.

Almost from the first day of his arrival in America, Paley was engaged in literary work. His first Yiddish novel, "Di Russishe Helden," was written on the steamer bringing him to New York. It was submitted to and accepted by the Yiddish weekly *Der Volksadvokat*, and resulted in an invitation to join the staff of that paper. He later became its editor and publisher (1889–91). In 1891 he became editor of *Di Yiddishe Presse* in Philadelphia, and a year later editor and publisher of the *Volkswaechter* in New York (1892–93). The success of this paper won for him a reputation as one of the best Yiddish journalists in the country. When the *Volkswaechter* was merged into the *Jewish Daily News*, he remained on the staff, and shortly afterwards was appointed editor-in-chief.

In Paley's hands the *Jewish Daily News* (*Jüdisches Tageblatt*), the oldest Yiddish daily in the country, became a powerful organ of the Yiddish-speaking masses who held orthodox religious views. Its circulation rose rapidly. It was Paley who introduced into Yiddish journalism all the devices which had popularized the Hearst and Pulitzer publications, including shrieking headlines and sensational news stories. In his vigorous publicistic articles, however, he chose to represent the conservative Jewish opinion which was suspicious of the radical and socialist element in Jewish life. His forceful, intensely Jewish articles, signed Ben Amitai, appealed strongly to Orthodox Jewry throughout the country and won him a large personal following. On the other hand, he was singled out by the Yiddish socialist press for bitter invective and attack. His stirring appeals for noteworthy causes, whether political or charitable, never failed to elicit a quick and effective response from his admirers. His journalistic talents and strong hold on the masses were recognized by both political parties, and turned to advantage in times of political campaigns. Paley wielded his sharp pen until his tragic death by suicide.

In addition to his work as journalist and essayist he was the author of numerous novels and short stories, some of which appeared in the columns of his newspaper. He also translated into Yiddish many works of fiction from world literature and wrote vaudeville sketches and plays, some of which were produced on the Yiddish stage. His last work, a popular history of the United States, which appeared serially in the *Jewish Daily News*, remained unfinished.

[*The Am. Jewish Year Book*, 5665 (1904); *Jewish Encyc.* (new ed., 1925), vol. IX; *Am. Hebrew*, Dec. 27, 1907; Zalmen Reisen, *Lexicon fun der Yiddisher Literatur* (Wilna, 1927), vol. II; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 24, 1907.] I. S.

PALFREY, JOHN CARVER (Dec. 25, 1833–Jan. 29, 1906), soldier, engineer, was born in Cambridge, Mass., the son of John Gorham Palfrey [*q.v.*] and Mary Ann (Hammond) Palfrey. From his father he inherited an active mind and a puritanical sense of obligation and integrity. He attended the Boston Latin School, graduated from Harvard in 1853, and from West Point, first in his class, in 1857. He was appoint-

ed brevet second lieutenant and, later in the same year, second lieutenant in the corps of engineers.

Up to the time of the Civil War he served as assistant to the board of engineers for Atlantic seacoast defenses, and was connected with the construction and repair of the fortifications of Portland Harbor, Me., and Portsmouth, N. H. On the outbreak of war he was ordered to Fortress Monroe, Va., as assistant engineer. From December 1861 to January 1863 he was engaged as superintending engineer in the construction of the fort at Ship Island, Miss., and later was in charge of the construction and repair of the fortifications about New Orleans, the field works of the Department of the Gulf, and the defenses of Pensacola, Fla. He participated in the Red River campaign in 1864 and in the operations against Port Hudson, La., Fort Gaines, Fort Morgan and Mobile, Ala., and in the storming of Blakely. Towards the close of the Red River campaign, when the withdrawal of the supporting gunboats was blocked by the rapid fall of water in the river, Palfrey, then a captain of engineers, surveyed the stream and determined the practicability of engineering expedients by which the water level was raised, allowing the vessels to pass over the rapids and escape capture. In the operations against Fort Gaines and Fort Morgan he had immediate charge of the field works. For his services in the war he was brevetted major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel, and brigadier-general. Immediately after the war, he took part in the reconstruction of the San Antonio and Mexican Gulf Railroad of Texas.

On May 1, 1866, he resigned from the army and became agent of the Merrimack Manufacturing Company, Lowell, Mass. From July 1, 1874, until he retired from active business in 1891, he was treasurer of the Manchester Mills of Manchester, N. H. On Oct. 21, 1874, he married Adelaide Eliza Payson of Belmont, Mass. They had three children, two sons and a daughter. For many years he was an overseer of the Thayer School of Civil Engineering of Dartmouth College. He was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and secretary of the Military Historical Society of Massachusetts. To the publications of the latter he contributed a number of narratives of military operations in which he had participated. Among these were "The Siege of Yorktown" (*Proceedings,* vol. I, 1881) and "Port Hudson" (*Ibid.,* vol. VIII, 1910). He died in Boston, and was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1891); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (4 vols., 1887–88); C. F. Adams, "Tribute to John C. Palfrey" in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser. XX (1907); *Report of the Harvard Class of 1853 . . . Sixtieth Anniversary* (1913); information from the adjutant-general of the army and from General Palfrey's son.]

C. E. T. L.

PALFREY, JOHN GORHAM (May 2, 1796–Apr. 26, 1881), Unitarian clergyman, editor, historian, was a grandson of Maj. William Palfrey who was paymaster of the American forces in the Revolution, and the son of John and Mary (Gorham) Palfrey of Boston, where John Gorham was born. He received his earliest education at a private school, and then went to Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., where he prepared for Harvard. He graduated from college with the degree of A.B. in 1815, having for a classmate Jared Sparks [*q.v.*]. After graduation he studied for the Unitarian ministry and in 1818 was ordained as minister of the Church in Brattle Square, Boston. He remained with that church until 1831, when he was appointed Dexter Professor of Sacred Literature in Harvard, a post which he filled until his resignation in 1839.

He had long before begun to write for the press, his earliest articles appearing in the *North American Review,* of which Sparks was editor. In 1825, during Sparks's temporary absence in Europe, Palfrey acted as his substitute. In 1835 he bought the *Review* and conducted it with much success until he sold it to Francis Bowen [*q.v.*] in 1843. Between 1817 and 1859 he contributed thirty-one important articles to it. In 1842 and 1843 he was a member of the Massachusetts legislature. Meanwhile, he had become known as a lecturer, mainly on the evidences of Christianity, the Jewish Scriptures, and similar topics. He was interested in education, was chairman of the committee on education in the legislature, and cooperated with Horace Mann [*q.v.*] in his educational work. From 1844 to 1847 he was secretary of the Commonwealth and from 1847 to 1849 a member of Congress. In 1861 he was appointed postmaster at Boston, retaining that position until 1867. In politics he was at first a Whig and held his earlier offices as such; he was also an abolitionist, and himself freed a few slaves that he had inherited from his father, who had lived for a while in Louisiana.

Among his writings may be mentioned: *Sermons on Duties Belonging to Some of the Conditions of Private Life* (1834); *Academical Lectures on the Jewish Scriptures and Antiquities* (4 vols., 1838–52); *Lowell Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity* (2 vols., 1843); "Life of

William Palfrey," in Sparks's *Library of American Biography* (vol. XVII, 1848); and the *History of New England* (4 vols., 1858–75). A fifth volume of the *History*, which he had almost finished but had not had time to prepare for the press before his death, was published in 1890. Palfrey's claim to fame rests on this work. He appears to have been esteemed by his contemporaries, but his curious career—minister, professor, politician, postmaster, editor, writer, lecturer, and historian—indicates a certain lack of definite purpose and aim, a weakness of some sort in his character. As a recognition of his historical work, he was twice elected to the Massachusetts Historical Society and twice resigned, and the Society took no notice of his death in the usual form of memoir. The *History of New England* was the result of a vast amount of research, and he was both painstaking and usually accurate in detail. Although there are minor errors, some of which only subsequent research has corrected, the innumerable foot-notes, which are a feature of the volumes, are still a convenient and useful mine of information as to events and characters in the period he treated. (It may be noted that owing to his advancing age, the last two volumes are considerably inferior to the first three.) By frequently alternating his chapters on colonial affairs with chapters on contemporary events in England, thus attempting to provide the reader with a more adequate background, he introduced what at that time was rather an innovation. For this he deserves much praise. He probably tried to be fair in his judgments and when the volumes appeared they were much acclaimed for their impartiality; but from the standpoint of today, the whole work must be considered as biased in several respects. In the relations between England and the colonies, Palfrey could see little but tyranny on the one side and God-fearing patriotism on the other. Nowhere does he show any real understanding of motives and problems. The work is strongly biased, also, by his inability to admit any flaws in the Puritans. So far as respects them, the volumes are special pleading throughout. Furthermore, the work is called a *History of New England*, although Palfrey writes as a retained advocate for Massachusetts when dealing with any conflict between that colony and the others, a notable example of this being his treatment of the Massachusetts-Rhode Island dispute over the Quakers. It may also be noted that he wrote as a clergyman and his sympathies were all with the ecclesiastical organization rather than with the laymen throughout the early struggles. Although his work has now been superseded for the general reader, it still retains much value for the special student, and for nearly half a century was the one standard work on New England.

He received the degree of LL.D. from St. Andrew's College, Scotland, as well as honorary degrees from Harvard, and was elected a member of the American Antiquarian Society. On Mar. 11, 1823, he married Mary Ann, daughter of Samuel Hammond of Boston; they had six children, among whom were John Carver Palfrey [*q.v.*] and Sarah Hammond Palfrey. The latter, a woman of varied intellectual attainments, shared her father's interest in liberal theology and was prominent in the social and philanthropic movements of her day. Besides contributing to periodicals, she published poems and several novels.

[*Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s., vol. I (1882); *Report of the Proc. of the Numismatic and Antiquarian Soc. of Phila. . . . 1881* (1882); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); J. S. Loring, *The Hundred Boston Orators* (1853); *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 27, 1881.] J. T. A.

PALLADINO, LAWRENCE BENEDICT

(Aug. 15, 1837–Aug. 19, 1927), Roman Catholic missionary, was born in Dilecto, Italy, and trained in the preparatory colleges and seminaries of Genoa and Stazzius. In 1855 he entered the Society of Jesus and continued his study of philosophy and theology in Jesuit colleges in the Tyrol and at Monaco until he was ordained a priest, at Nice, in 1863. Meanwhile, apparently, he had taught for a time in Verona, during which period he witnessed the battle of Solferino (1859).

He volunteered for the California missions, and taught classes for four years at St. Ignatius College in San Francisco and at Santa Clara (see J. W. Riordan, *The First Half Century of St. Ignatius Church and College*, 1905). Assigned to the Indian missions in the Rocky Mountains (1867), he accompanied a party of Jesuits, including Fathers Urban Grassi and Joseph Bandini, to St. Ignatius Mission among the Flatheads of Montana, incidentally acquiring some knowledge of the dialects of the Walla Walla and Coeur d'Alène tribesmen during the tedious overland journey. For several years he was in charge of the mission and its Indian school, which the government assisted to the extent of contributing eight dollars each for fifty boys. Both an industrial and agricultural institution, it became an experimental farm for Indians and pioneer settlers. About 1873 Palladino went to Helena as an assistant to Father Joseph Menetry [*q.v.*], whose missionary parish covered a huge area. For sixteen years this was his station, but he made frequent journeys throughout Montana

to serve isolated settlers, camps, and tribesmen. As an example of his activities, after the battle of Big Hole Basin in 1877, where Gen. John Gibbon defeated the Nez Percés, he brought sisters from Helena and Deer River to nurse wounded Indians and soldiers. In 1883 he made a visitation over the whole diocese in preparation for the coming of the first bishop of Helena, J. B. Brondel [*q.v.*], in whose diocesan synods of 1884 and 1887 he took a leading part as counselor. In 1884 he was ordered back to his old mission, with which he remained until called to the rectorship of Gonzaga College in Spokane (1894). After his term of service here, he was in Seattle for a short time, but was finally assigned to Missoula, where he continued until his death, though he was somewhat inactive after the celebration in 1925 of his seventieth year in the Society of Jesus.

In 1894 Palladino published a substantial volume, *Indian and White in the Northwest; or a History of Catholicity in Montana,* which ranks as a primary source of information concerning the state, since it was written by one who witnessed its transition from a wild Indian country to a civilized community, was intimately acquainted with its missionaries, traders, miners, trappers, soldiers, and builders, and had traversed every part of its mountains and plains. Other than this book, Palladino's career permitted of no writing save reports on Indians, a sketch of one of his associates: *Anthony Ravalli, S.J., Forty Years a Missionary in the Rocky Mountains* (1884), and reminiscent notes on early Montana (*Woodstock Letters,* 1880).

[In addition to his own writings, see *Records Am. Cath. Hist. Soc.*, Mar. 1923, Mar. 1927; annual Catholic directories; *Helena Independent,* Aug. 20, 1927.]

R. J. P.

PALLEN, CONDÉ BENOIST (Dec. 5, 1858–May 26, 1929), editor, author, publicist, was born in St. Louis, Mo., the son of Dr. Montrose Anderson Pallen and Anne Elizabeth Benoist. His paternal grandfather moved from Virginia to St. Louis, where for more than a quarter of a century he taught at St. Louis Medical College. Montrose Anderson Pallen, a native of Vicksburg, Miss., served as medical director, 1861–63, under Gen. Henry A. Wise, Gen. William J. Hardee, and the Department of Mississippi. In 1874 he was called to teach gynecology at the University of the City of New York; in 1883 he became interested in the organization of the medical school of Fordham University. Anne (Benoist) Pallen was a direct descendant of the Chevalier Benoist who came to America as an officer under Montcalm. Her father, Louis A. Benoist, was a banker in St. Louis.

Pallen

Condé Pallen was graduated from Georgetown University, Washington, D. C., in 1880, and in 1883 received the degree of master of arts from the same institution. He studied also at St. Louis University where, after acquiring the degree of doctor of philosophy (1885), he remained for a short time as teacher. His love of study next carried him to Rome. Here one of his classmates was a youth who later as Pius XI was to confer upon him the Knighthood of St. Gregory (1926). The decoration *Pro Ecclesia et Pontifice* was earlier given him by Leo XIII.

From 1887 to 1897 Pallen was editor of *Church Progress* (St. Louis). As Roman Catholic revisory editor of the *New International Encyclopedia* and of the *Encyclopedia Americana* he became convinced that the time was appropriate for the publication of a work, the need of which had long been felt by Catholic scholars, which would give "full and authoritative information on the entire cycle of Catholic interests, action, and doctrine." The *Catholic Encyclopedia* (16 vols., 1907–14; supplement, 1922) was the result. Pallen was one of its board of editors, and from 1904 to 1920 was its managing editor. From 1912 to 1920 he served as president of the Encyclopedia Press which was organized to continue the publication of the *Encyclopedia* and to sponsor other works in the Catholic field. He was later editor of the Universal Knowledge Foundation, whose program included a general encyclopedia, *Universal Knowledge,* of which two volumes (1927–28) appeared before his death, and the *New Catholic Dictionary* (1929).

Pallen began in 1885 a career in lecturing and literature which brought him considerable fame in Catholic circles. He contributed papers on American Catholic literature to the Catholic Congress held in Baltimore in 1889; in the same year he delivered the "Centennial Ode" at Georgetown College. An essay, *The Meaning of the Idylls of the King* (1904), brought from Tennyson a treasured letter, reading: "You have seen further into the real meaning of the Idylls of the King than any of my commentators." His other works include: *The Philosophy of Literature* (1897), *New Rubaiyat* (1898), *Epochs of Literature* (1898), *The Feast of Thalarchus* (1901), a dramatic poem; *Death of Sir Launcelot and Other Poems* (1902), *Collected Poems* (1915), *Education of Boys* (1916), *Crucible Island* (1919), a romance; *As Man to Man: the Adventures of a Commuter* (1927), a series of popular articles written to answer accusations based upon misunderstanding of the teachings of the Catholic Church; *Ghost House* (1928);

and *The King's Coil* (1928). He was, besides, a constant contributor to the Catholic periodical press, and as chairman of the National Civic Federation's Department of Subversive Movements, was the indignant foe of restricted immigration, feminism, and social radicalism.

In 1886 he married Georgiana McDougal Adams of St. Louis, whose father, Gen. John Adams of Nashville, Tenn., a graduate of West Point, was killed in the battle of Franklin. She and ten children survived him.

[Family papers; *The Cath. Encyc. and Its Makers* (1917); J. S. Easby-Smith, *Georgetown Univ.* (1907), vol. II; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *The New Cath. Dict.* (1929); *Commonweal*, June 12, 1929; *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Herald Tribune*, May 27, 29, 1929.]

L. F. S.

PALMER, ALBERT MARSHMAN (July 27, 1838–Mar. 7, 1905), theatrical manager, was born in North Stonington, Conn., the son of a Baptist clergyman, Albert Gallatin Palmer, and Sarah Amelia Langworthy, and a descendant of Walter Palmer who settled in Stonington in 1653. He attended New York City schools and the New York University Law School from which he graduated in 1860. Although he never practised law, his studies stood him in good stead in the management and control of the theatres whose organizations he undertook in a troubled but progressive period of America's theatre history. In 1872 he first entered the theatre as a partner of Sheridan Shook (a theatre owner with no *flair* for the art of the theatre) in the management of the Union Square Theatre which Shook had on his hands after an unsuccessful experiment in management. One of their first productions was Sardou's *Agnes* in line with the current tradition of the American theatre, in which translations of foreign plays or plays adapted or frankly purloined from foreign sources were the most popular material. Although Palmer had not the distinctive theatre talents or training of the other leading managers of his time—like Wallack, himself an actor and a dramatist with a long theatre tradition behind him, or Augustin Daly, a talented director and producer—he had, nevertheless, certain outstanding virtues which were of value to him and his theatres. John Ranken Towse, who saw many of his performances, has described him as "a man of considerable cultivation, suave, shrewd, worldly, somewhat hesitant and timid in judgment, but with a first-rate executive ability, and a remarkable faculty of finding means to serve his ends. . . . All his representations were distinguished by vigor and vitality, and that cooperative smoothness and proportion which can only be attained by actors long accustomed to each other's methods and characteristics" (*post*, pp. 140, 141). And Arthur Hornblow substantiates this judgment: "He belonged to that school of managers whom we find in control of the leading theatres in Europe—men of culture, refinement and scholarship, . . . when a refined management gave the drama both dignity and form" (*post*, II, p. 261).

As his experience in the theatre grew, Palmer developed his native qualities of foresight, shrewdness, and good taste. Each year, until 1883, when he retired from the Union Square, he improved his company, widened his repertory, and began gradually to turn his attention to the cultivation and appreciation of American playwrights and of plays of American life and character. In 1883 he thought he would give up theatre management and travel abroad, but after a year of absence he joined the Mallory Brothers and took over the Madison Square Theatre, where he remained until 1891. He then went to Wallack's Theatre at Broadway and Thirtieth Street, renaming it Palmer's, and operated it with varying success until 1896, when he retired permanently from New York theatre management. Not the least of his attributes was his ability to select good advisers and associates. His play-reader and adapter, A. R. Cazauran, had an eager and adventurous taste in drama and the fact that he often recommended and pleaded the cause of plays a little out of the conventional line of the day may be the reason for the statement that three of Palmer's most successful productions, *The Two Orphans*, Sir Charles Young's melodrama, *Jim the Penman*, with Agnes Booth, and *Alabama*, by Augustus Thomas, were urged upon him against his own will and judgment (see MacKaye, *post*, I, p. 241). But the choice of Cazauran as play-reader was in itself an indication not only of Palmer's intelligence, but of his willingness to stand by the decisions of his associates in matters they understood, sometimes, better than he did.

Palmer has been said to have done more than any other manager of his day to encourage native dramatic ability (Moses, *post*, p. 77). His own statements (*Forum*, July 1893) give evidence of a forward-looking desire entirely beyond the general thought of his day to get plays not only by American authors but on native American material, especially material which showed the native American as something beyond the clown, the trader, the backwoodsman. It is on his list that such names as Augustus Thomas, Clyde Fitch, Bronson Howard (*The Banker's Daughter*), and William Gillette (*Held by the Enemy*) begin to be seen as the familiar property of the theatre. Although he himself is not credited with

the creation of any great actors, his companies were always well chosen, often by the addition of favorites from his rival's houses. In 1882 he made a real contribution to the life of the theatre by the foundation of the Actor's Fund of America, a charitable corporation of which he was the second president. Palmer's second wife was the divorced wife of Sheridan Shook. She had two children who took Palmer's name and she and Palmer had one daughter, Phyllis. After he had retired from New York theatre management, he managed road tours for Richard Mansfield for some years. He died of a stroke of apoplexy in his sixty-seventh year.

[M. J. Moses, *The Am. Dramatist* (1911); Percy MacKaye, *Epoch* (2 vols., 1927); J. R. Towse, *Sixty Years of the Theatre* (1916), pp. 140–45; Arthur Hornblow, *A Hist. of the Theatre in America* (1919), vol. II; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *N. Y. Dram. Mirror*, Mar. 18, 1905; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 8, 1905.]

E. J. R. I.

PALMER, ALICE ELVIRA FREEMAN (Feb. 21, 1855–Dec. 6, 1902), educator, was the eldest child of James Warren Freeman and Elizabeth Josephine (Higley) Freeman. She was born in the village of Colesville, N. Y., not far from Binghamton, in the valley of the Susquehanna. Her mother, a farmer's daughter and village beauty, had had some experience in teaching and was a woman of intelligence and sympathy. From her came the child's large, appealing eyes, dark hair, lively interest in things of the mind, marked executive and administrative gifts. When Alice was in her seventh year, this competent mother, herself hardly more than a girl, assumed the support of the four young children in order that her farmer husband might fulfil his desire to be a physician by taking the two years' training at the Albany Medical School. Through her father, Alice inherited a Scottish strain and the romantic courage of the pioneer that quickened all her life's adventure; her father's father had walked from Connecticut to become one of the earliest settlers of Central New York, her father's mother was the daughter of James Knox, of Washington's Life Guard.

The child taught herself to read at three years of age, and attended the village school at four. In 1864, the family moved to the nearby village of Windsor, a more convenient center for Dr. Freeman. Here, in 1865, Alice entered Windsor Academy, a preparatory and finishing school for boys and girls, where at fourteen she became engaged to a young teacher who was earning the wherewithal to continue his own education. It was a decorous and dignified engagement, but the experience, awakening her womanhood, revealed her to her clear-sighted self. When, in 1870, her betrothed entered Yale Divinity School, she discovered that a college education meant more to her than marriage, and six months later the engagement was dissolved, with respect and good feeling on both sides.

She would have a college degree, she said, if it took her fifty years to get it. That magnetic persuasiveness which was to prove so effective in her maturer years won its first victory in this youthful struggle to convince her parents that her ambition was practical and unselfish. In 1872, at seventeen, she took the entrance examinations for the University of Michigan and failed. Her personality had made its impression on President Angell, however, and at his request the examiners allowed her to enter on trial, and she remained. There followed seven years of unflagging industry and indomitable courage, despite ill health from overwork. In 1875, she interrupted her junior year to assist the family fortunes by becoming the head of the high school of Ottawa, Ill., for twenty weeks. In 1876, she received the degree of B.A. from Michigan and taught in a girls' seminary at Lake Geneva, Wis. In 1877 came the first invitation to Wellesley. Henry Fowle Durant [*q.v.*], the founder, had heard of her through President Angell, and offered her an instructorship in mathematics, which she declined. From 1877 to 1879 she taught in the high school of Saginaw, Mich. In 1878, came Wellesley's second call—to teach Greek. Her sister Stella was ill, however, the family needed her; and again she declined. In 1879, Stella died, and with characteristic persistence Durant sent her a third invitation. At twenty-four, she became the head of Wellesley's department of history; in her first year Durant is said to have remarked to a trustee; "You see that little dark-eyed girl? She will be the next president of Wellesley" (*Life, post,* p. 97). Shortly after his death, in 1881, the president, Ada L. Howard [*q.v.*], resigned, and Alice Freeman at twenty-six was appointed vice-president of the college and acting president. In 1882 she became president, and her administrative powers and gifts for organization found here their perfect field.

During the six years of her administration the Academic Council, the inner circle of heads of departments, was established; standing committees of the faculty were formed; entrance examinations were made more severe; courses of study were standardized and simplified; the gymnasium was refitted under the supervision of Dr. D. A. Sargent of Harvard; the personnel of the faculty was strengthened; connections were made with a number of first-rate preparatory schools in different parts of the country. It was the day of

beginnings, but no dry list of details can adequately describe the quickening impulse of her ardent and devoted personality. Never bookish, never a scholar, she had a bent for people and a genius for solving the concrete problems, and Wellesley at this time needed just what she could give. The institution was changed from a glorified boarding-school to a genuine college in her day, and the impetus gained from her contagious and eminently practical idealism has never been lost. In matters of general education, she also began to play her part. On Nov. 21, 1881, in Boston, she was one of the small group —seventeen women from eight different colleges —called in conference to consider organizing the women college graduates of the United States into an association for the promotion of the educational interests of women. On Jan. 14, 1882, she made the original motion which led to the organization of the Association of Collegiate Alumnae (forerunner of the American Association of University Women). She served two terms as president, 1885–86 and 1889–90. She was chairman of the important committee on Fellowships, 1889–95, and general secretary with power to direct and supervise the Association's policy in 1901–02. In 1884, she was one of three American delegates at the International Conference on Education in London.

On Dec. 23, 1887, she married Prof. George Herbert Palmer [*q.v.*] of the department of philosophy at Harvard. The record of this unclouded marriage is given in her husband's story of her life (*post*), a book which takes high rank among literary biographies. Although she now resigned her presidency, her connection with Wellesley did not cease. In 1888 she was elected a trustee, and held this office till her death. In 1889, Governor Ames appointed her a member of the Massachusetts board of education, and this position also was hers till she died. In 1891, she was one of five members of the board of managers for the Massachusetts exhibit at the World's Columbian Exposition. From 1892 to 1895 she was dean of women at the University of Chicago.

To secure her acceptance of this appointment, President William Rainey Harper [*q.v.*] released her from any obligation to teach, and fixed the period of her yearly residence at twelve weeks, to be distributed through the academic terms at her convenience. She was to select her own subdean, who would act in her absence. The duties of the office included supervision of the housing and food of the women students, their conduct, and the choice of their studies. Her belief in coeducation made this position especially attractive to her, but at the end of three years, when the women students were well established in the university, she resigned from an office too important to be executed chiefly in absentia. Meanwhile, in 1893 and 1894, she was active in promoting the changes through which Radcliffe College was formally attached to Harvard University. The International Institute for Girls in Spain, Bradford Academy, the Women's Education Association, each had a share in her busy life. She had joined the Presbyterian Church at fourteen, and later was prominent on the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions and in the Woman's Home Missionary Association.

In December 1902, while on a European holiday with her husband, she died in Paris, of heart failure, three days after an operation for intussusception of the intestine. Thirteen years later her husband published a little book of her verse entitled *A Marriage Cycle* (1915). To those who knew her as the woman of committees and affairs, the administrator and practical executive, occupied on the plane of the obvious, these simple, reticent poems, so genuinely and unaffectedly lyrical, reveal an unsuspected depth of nature and delicacy of spiritual reserve. No estimate of her temperament and achievement is just which does not take into consideration this slender volume.

Although Alice Freeman Palmer was no scholar, her academic recognition was early and continuous. She received the degree of Ph.D. from the University of Michigan in 1882, and honorary doctorates from Columbia (1887) and Union (1895). She is commemorated in the University of Chicago by the chimes in Mitchell Tower, dedicated in 1908; fellowships in the gift of Wellesley and the American Association of University Women bear her name, as does an institute for colored boys and girls in Sedalia, N. C. In 1920 she was elected to the Hall of Fame at New York University among the educators; and in May 1921 the commemorative tablet was unveiled there by her husband. Her ashes, with those of her husband, lie in the Wellesley Chapel, beneath the bas relief by Daniel Chester French, dedicated to her memory in 1909.

[The essential source is George Herbert Palmer, *The Life of Alice Freeman Palmer* (1908), supplemented by *The Teacher, Essays and Addresses on Education by George Herbert Palmer and Alice Freeman Palmer* (1908) and A. F. Palmer, *A Marriage Cycle* (1915); Florence Converse, *The Story of Wellesley* (1915); F. M. Kingsley, *The Life of Henry Fowle Durant* (1924). See also *Outlook*, Dec. 13, 27, 1902, Jan. 16, 1904, July 28, 1915, Jan. 12, 1916; *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), Feb. 1903; *Wellesley Mag.*, Feb. 1903; *Wellesley College News*, June 1909; *Wellesley Alumnae Quart.*, July 1921; *University Record* (Univ. of Chicago), July 1908; *Univ. of Chicago Mag.*, July 1910; *Sixty-sixth*

Ann. Report of the Board of Education [of Mass.], *1901–02* (1903); *A Service in Memory of Alice Freeman Palmer . . . Appleton Chapel, Harvard Univ.* (1903); *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 8, 1902.] F. C.

PALMER, ALONZO BENJAMIN (Oct. 6, 1815–Dec. 23, 1887), physician, teacher, and author of medical works, was the son of Benjamin and Anna (Layton) Palmer, and a descendant of Walter Palmer who emigrated from Nottingham, England, to Massachusetts about 1630 and settled, ultimately, in Stonington, Conn. He was born in Richfield, Otsego County, N. Y. Although he was left fatherless at nine, he received an adequate preliminary schooling in Oswego, Otsego, and Herkimer. Taking up the study of medicine, he graduated in January 1839 from the College of Physicians and Surgeons of the western district of New York, at Fairfield, Herkimer County.

Soon after his graduation, he moved westward to the comparatively new state of Michigan and settled at Tecumseh. The need for doctors in the new country was great and he soon built up a busy practice. His work was beset with the difficulties attending any pioneer enterprise, but in spite of the busy daily routine, he found time to keep abreast of the best available teachings and in the winters of 1847–48 and 1848–49, took postgraduate courses in New York and Philadelphia respectively. In 1850 he moved to Chicago, where he became associated with Dr. Nathan Smith Davis [*q.v.*] in a general practice. Two years later he was appointed city physician and became the official medical adviser to the health officer of the city. These latter positions he held for three years. During this period (1852) the cholera epidemic swept through Chicago. As city physician, he had charge of the cholera hospital which cared for fifteen hundred patients in the course of the year. His wide experience and careful observation during this epidemic resulted in a paper, *Observations on the Cause, Nature and Treatment of Epidemic Cholera* (1854), which was followed in later years by other valuable contributions to the study of the subject.

In 1852, Palmer was appointed professor of anatomy at the University of Michigan, but because of a limited budget did not assume the chair. In the same institution he became successively professor of materia medica, therapeutics, and diseases of women and children (1854), and professor of pathology and practice of medicine (1860). The latter position he filled until his death. In 1875, he became dean of the medical department and with the exception of one year held that office until he died. In the meantime, from 1864 to 1867 he was professor of pathology and practice of medicine in the Berkshire Medical Institution at Pittsfield, Mass., and from 1869 to 1879 was professor of the practice of medicine at Bowdoin College. Since his courses at the University of Michigan ended in March, he was able to lecture at the eastern institutions from April to June each year. At the beginning of the Civil War he was surgeon in the 2nd Michigan Infantry (May–September 1861), and was present at the first battle of Bull Run and other engagements.

Besides his well-deserved reputation as a teacher, Palmer became well known and respected through his writings. His wide medical experience culminated in the publication of a textbook entitled, *Treatise on the Science and Practice of Medicine, or the Pathology and Treatment of Internal Diseases* (2 vols., 1882). This was followed by *A Treatise on Epidemic Cholera and Allied Diseases*, published in 1885. His *Lectures on Sulphate of Quinine* had appeared in 1858, and *Epidemic Cholera, Its Pathology and Treatment*, in 1866. *The Temperance Teachings of Science* (1886) reflected his rigid belief in total abstinence from alcoholic stimulants and narcotics. From April 1853 to March 1860, Palmer was editor of the *Peninsular Journal of Medicine and the Collateral Sciences* and its successor, the *Peninsular and Independent Medical Journal*, published at Detroit. He was president in 1872 of the Michigan State Medical Society.

Endowed with a robust constitution, he was "a conscientious and skillful practitioner, an able writer, an earnest and successful teacher, and above all a most estimable citizen and Christian" (Davis, *post*). His success as a physician, writer, and teacher could scarcely have been so far-reaching without his kindly, sympathetic view of life. He was married twice: on July 19, 1843, to Caroline Augusta Wright, who died in 1846, and in 1867 to Love M. Root of Pittsfield, Mass., who survived him. There were no children.

[N. S. Davis, in *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Dec. 31, 1887; memorial address by C. L. Ford, in *Physician and Surgeon*, June–August 1888; *Medic. Record*, Dec. 31, 1887; *Trans. Mich. State Medic. Soc.*, vol. XII (1888); L. M. R. Palmer, *Memorial of Alonzo Benjamin Palmer* (1890); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); B. A. Hinsdale, *Hist. of the Univ. of Mich.* (1906); *Detroit Free Press*, Dec. 24, 1887.] G. M. L.

PALMER, BENJAMIN MORGAN (Jan. 25, 1818–May 28, 1902), Presbyterian clergyman, was born at Charleston, S. C., second of the four children of Rev. Edward and Sarah (Bunce) Palmer. Both parents were of New England stock, his father being a descendant of William Palmer who emigrated to America in 1621. Prepared for college by his parents and at a private

academy, Benjamin entered Amherst when he was little more than fourteen years old. There he found friends in Henry Ward Beecher and Stuart Robinson [*qq.v.*]. He led his class at Amherst, but was expelled in his second year for refusing to divulge the secrets of an undergraduate society. Returning to South Carolina, he taught school until, in January 1837, he entered the University of Georgia, from which he graduated eighteen months later. In 1841 he graduated, also, from the Columbia Theological Seminary, and in April of that year was licensed to preach.

The following autumn he was invited to become pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Savannah, Ga., and on Oct. 7 he married Mary Augusta McConnell; six children were born to them, only two of whom lived to reach maturity. On Mar. 6, 1842, he was ordained. He served the church at Savannah only until January 1843, when he went to the Presbyterian Church at Columbia, S. C. There he and other ministers founded the *Southern Presbyterian Review,* the first number of which appeared in June 1847. He lectured at Columbia Theological Seminary, and in 1854 resigned his pulpit to accept a professorship there. Two years later he relinquished it and became pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of New Orleans, which he served until his death. He was active in founding the Presbyterian Church in the Confederate States, and was the first moderator of its General Assembly. He participated in establishing Southwestern Presbyterian University and a weekly paper, the *Southwestern Presbyterian.* An ardent defender of slavery, he advocated secession (see *Daily Delta,* New Orleans, Nov. 30, 1860). During the Civil War he was for a time commissioner of his denomination to the Army of the Tennessee. His eloquence, power of mind, breadth of human sympathy, and most of all his perfect integrity and devotion won him high esteem. Notable among his achievements were his efforts for the relief of the persecuted Jews of Russia in 1882, and his leadership in the war on the Louisiana Lottery (1890–91).

In addition to six books he published numerous pamphlets, and contributed many articles to the *Southern Presbyterian Review,* the *Southwestern Presbyterian,* and the *Presbyterian Quarterly.* His books are: *The Life and Letters of James Henley Thornwell, D.D., LL.D.* (1875); *The Family in Its Civil and Churchly Aspects* (1876); *Formation of Character* (1890); *The Broken Home, or Lessons in Sorrow* (1890); *The Threefold Fellowship and the Threefold Assurance* (1892); and *Theology of Prayer*

(1894). His death resulted from injuries which he received when struck by a street car.

[T. C. Johnson, *The Life and Letters of Benjamin Morgan Palmer* (copr. 1906); *Daily Picayune* (New Orleans), May 29, 1902; *Presbyt. Quart.,* July 1902; R. Q. Mallard, "Personal Reminiscences of Rev. B. M. Palmer," in *Union Seminary Mag.,* Dec. 1902–Jan. 1903; L. G. Vander Velde, *The Presbyt. Churches and the Federal Union, 1861–1869* (1932).] C. F. A.

PALMER, BERTHA HONORÉ (May 22, 1849–May 5, 1918), social leader, was born in Louisville, Ky., the daughter of Eliza Dorsey (Carr) and Henry H. Honoré, a leading business man of the city who later removed to Chicago. She was the sister of Ida Honoré who married Frederick Dent Grant [*q.v.*]. She attended a convent-school near Baltimore, Md., and also studied under private tutors. In 1871 she was married to Potter Palmer [*q.v.*]. Soon after her marriage her husband lost a large part of his fortune in the great fire that swept the city, and she bent her energies to help him repair his losses. To her aid and to the excellent business judgment she developed he attributed much of his very great success. She had two sons, the elder born in 1874 and the younger in 1875, and she started on a social career that within a generation reached into every modern capital. She became the unquestioned social leader of the city of Chicago and maintained a social position in other cities of her own country and of Europe. In 1891 she was chosen president of the Board of Lady Managers of the World's Columbian Exposition. In this position she had the opportunity to exercise both her social gifts and her business acumen. She went to Europe to represent the fair and was very successful, especially in Italy and Belgium, in arousing interest in the project. The social connections she made at that time remained important to her all her life. It was principally due to her efforts that the women's department of the fair was so important a feature; she urged that the women's exhibits should have space in each state building, persuaded an imposing list of royal women to lend exhibitions, and obtained equal consideration for the activities of women. In 1892 she was chosen a trustee of Northwestern University. Eight years later, in 1900, President McKinley appointed her as a member of the committee to the Paris Exposition.

During her later years she gave attention to the management of the vast estate she had inherited from her husband in 1902. At her death its value had more than doubled under her management. She spent a great deal of her time and money in charitable and philanthropic work. On one occasion she opened her home for a meeting of the national civic federation, at which several

hundred representatives of capital and labor were present. Each year she lent her executive ability and her social experience to the management of the charity ball of Chicago, which grew increasingly important as a social event and as a means of collecting funds. She was said to give some $50,000 annually to charity, and by her will she left about half a million dollars for various philanthropic purposes. During her early married life she and her husband held membership in one of the struggling Disciples of Christ churches in Chicago. Later she became a communicant of the St. James Episcopal Church. She died in her home at Osprey, Fla., on Sarasota Bay.

[J. S. Currey, *Chicago* (1912), vol. III; Newton Bateman, Paul Selby, and J. S. Currey, *Hist. Encyc. of Ill.* (2 vols., 1925); *House Beautiful*, Jan. 1920; *Hampton Columbian Mag.*, Oct. 1911, pp. 540–42; *Munsey's Mag.*, Oct. 1900, p. 32; *World To-day*, Mar. 1907, p. 226; *N. Y. Times*, May 7, 18, 1918; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, May 7, 1918.] C. M. T.

PALMER, DANIEL DAVID (Mar. 7, 1845–Oct. 20, 1913), founder of chiropractic, was born on a farm at Lake Skoogag, near Toronto, Canada, of pioneer Scotch-Irish parentage. Definite knowledge of his early life is scanty. He had little benefit of schooling and was practically self-educated. When he was in his middle thirties he was a small merchant in What Cheer, Iowa. Here his son, Bartlett Joshua, was born in 1881. Shortly after his wife's death in 1883 he moved to Burlington, Iowa, and took up the practice of magnetic healing, then in 1895 he moved to Davenport, Iowa. He had made some study of osteopathy and of spinal adjustments, interest in which he attributed to the influence of Dr. James Atkinson of Davenport. In September 1895 he made the first trial of spinal adjustment upon the colored janitor of the building in which he had his office, for deafness. As originally stated by Palmer his science "consisted in removing the impingement of nerves in any of the three hundred or more articulations of the human skeleton, particularly the fifty-two articulations of the vertebral column, by using processes of the vertebrae as levers to rack the vertebra into position" (quoted in Gallaher, *post*, p. 34). Later in practice and in teaching, the offending nerve impingements were confined to the intervertebral foramina and the resultant effects charged to impairment of function in the corresponding segments of the spinal cord. The name chiropractic was suggested for the new science by the Rev. Samuel H. Weed of Bloomington, Ill., an early patient. The name (Greek *cheir*, hand, and *praktikos*, efficient) was freely translated by Palmer as "done by hand."

In 1898 he started the Palmer School of Chiropractic, with a three months' course. He had but fifteen students during its first five years, his son, Bartlett Joshua, being among the graduates of 1902. Leaving the school in his son's care he went in 1903 to Portland, Ore., where he opened the Portland College of Chiropractic. The venture was not successful and he soon returned to Davenport. In 1906 he was arrested for practising medicine without a license and served a sentence of six months in jail. When released he severed his connection with the school which was left to the direction of his son. He went to Oklahoma City where he participated in the establishment of the short-lived Palmer-Gregory Chiropractic College. From here he returned to Portland and became affiliated with the recently organized Pacific College of Chiropractic. Finding conditions at this school uncongenial he retired to private practice and to writing his *Textbook of the Science, Art and Philosophy of Chiropractic*, which appeared in 1910. This voluminous tome is an unrelated mixture of maxims, poetry, satire, invective, and irrelevances. With "allopathy" as his main target, he spares nobody, least of all his colleagues in chiropractic. In 1906 he had published in collaboration with his son, Bartlett Joshua, *The Science of Chiropractic*, and in 1914 there was published a posthumous volume, *The Chiropractor*, at Los Angeles, his later home. In the meantime the Davenport school had prospered under the younger Palmer. In August of 1913 there was held a widely heralded homecoming of former students. An estrangement of some years' standing existed between father and son, but to this school celebration came its founder, an uninvited guest. While acting as self-appointed leader of a street parade of students and graduates he was struck by a passing automobile and taken unconscious to a hospital. He recovered sufficiently to be moved to Los Angeles where he died about two months after the accident.

Physically Palmer was short and heavy set, with a broad round face and long flowing hair and beard. Of a contentious disposition, he was in continuous feud with his colleagues. He maintained a religious element in his conception of chiropractic healing, which was early discarded by his followers. He was thrice married, his third wife surviving him.

[Harry Gallaher, *Hist. of Chiropractic* (Guthrie, Okla., 1930); Chittenden Turner, *The Rise of Chiropractic* (Los Angeles, 1931); *Who's Who in Davenport*, 1929; *Los Angeles Times*, Oct. 21, 1913.] J. M. P—n.

PALMER, ELIHU (Aug. 7, 1764–Apr. 7, 1806), militant deist, was the eighth child of Elihu and Lois (Foster) Palmer and a descendant of Walter Palmer who was a freeman of Charles-

town, Mass., in 1634 and later settled in Stonington, Conn. Elihu was born and brought up on his father's farm at Canterbury, Conn., and graduated from Dartmouth College in 1787. In college he enjoyed a good reputation for integrity and literary proficiency and was elected to Phi Beta Kappa. He received aid from the college's charity fund and taught school during vacations.

After graduation he preached at Pittsfield, Mass., and studied divinity under Rev. John Foster, who later became a Universalist and fellow radical. A few months later, he received a call to the Presbyterian Church of Newtown, Long Island, where his tenure lasted only six months (1788–89) because of his liberalism. He removed to Philadelphia and joined the Universalists, but a proposed sermon against the divinity of Jesus was too much even for them, and Palmer found it necessary to quit the city to escape the wrath of outraged citizens. With his career as a Christian minister behind him, he studied law under the direction of a brother in western Pennsylvania, returned to Philadelphia, and was admitted to the bar in 1793. Three months later, in the plague of yellow fever, he lost his wife and was himself deprived of sight. This calamity unfitted him for the legal profession and he became a free-lance, deistic preacher. He sent his children to his father in Connecticut and removed to Atlanta, Ga.

After about a year, he moved to New York, which henceforth was the center of his activities. Here he founded a deistical society, to which he preached every Sunday evening. This society was known successively as the Philosophical Society, Theistical Society, and Society of the Columbian Illuminati. Sister organizations in Philadelphia and Baltimore, where Palmer occasionally went to preach, called themselves Theophilanthropists. He also preached in Newburgh, N. Y., where the deists had formed a "Society of Druids." The New York society, to further its activities, established a weekly paper, *The Temple of Reason,* under the editorship of Dennis Driscol, a recent immigrant from Ireland and an ex-priest. After only three months, Feb. 7, 1801, this paper was suspended in New York, but was resumed in Philadelphia the following April. Though experiencing some financial difficulties it survived there for nearly two years. In December 1803 Palmer began publishing in New York *The Prospect: or, View of the Moral World.* He was assisted in this undertaking by his second wife, Mary Powell, a widow, whom he had married in 1803. The *Prospect* appeared weekly until March 1805.

Palmer was a political as well as a religious liberal. More dominated by the ideas of the French revolutionists than by his New England background and directly influenced by Paine, Volney, Barlow, Condorcet, and Godwin, whom he regarded as "among the greatest benefactors of the human race," he saw in the American Revolution the beginning of genuine republicanism and a universal age of reason. In the struggle between the Federalists and Republicans, he was an eloquent and ardent opponent of "tyranny." His religious rationalism, however, was quite out of harmony with the trend of the times. He declared that the Bible offered no internal evidence of divine authority, and that any religious system requiring miracles to establish it was neither reasonable nor true. Organized religion was the product of "ambitious, designing, and fanatic men" who had succeeded in taking advantage of human ignorance. Moses, Mahomet, and Jesus "were all of them impostors; two of them notorious murderers in practice, and the other a murderer in principle." These three together, Palmer believed, had perhaps "cost the human race more blood, and produced more substantial misery, than all the other fanatics of the world." With respect for neither the founders of religious systems nor for the Bible, which he characterized as "a book, whose indecency and immorality shock all common sense and common honesty," Palmer preached the religion of unperverted Nature and rational education. "Man has created moral evil and man must destroy it." The American Revolution and the republican movement had accomplished political emancipation. Education and reason were now to bring about freedom from degrading religious superstitions.

The most complete statement of his thought is his *Principles of Nature; or, a Developement of the Moral Causes of Happiness and Misery among the Human Species* (1802), which was the textbook of his deistical societies. An anonymous pamphlet, *The Examiners Examined: being a Defence of the Age of Reason* (1794), is attributed to him. He was a contributor to *The Temple of Reason* and the *Prospect.* One of his best orations was *An Enquiry Relative to the Moral & Political Improvement of the Human Species* (1797).

Boundlessly optimistic, an eloquent speaker with a deep and sonorous voice, honest in the expression of his beliefs to the point of utter tactlessness and disregard for his financial well-being, the blind Palmer was both a heroic and a tragic figure. His main contribution to freethought was the organization of deistical societies with constitutions, ritual, secret meetings,

public addresses, and newspapers. His efforts to build a Temple of Nature where deist services could be held, scientific lectures given, children taught, and astronomical observations made, were unsuccessful. At forty-one he had grown old, weary, and tired of opposing himself "constantly to the current of public opinion." When he died of pleurisy in Philadelphia, it was as the champion of a cause which had brought him only poverty and opposition.

[M. D. Conway, *The Life of Thomas Paine* (1892), vol. II; C. F. Emerson, *Gen. Cat. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1910–11); *Posthumous Pieces . . . To Which Are Prefixed a Memoir of Mr. Palmer by His Friend Mr. John Fellows, and Mr. Palmer's Principles of the Deistical Soc. of the State of N. Y.* (1824); J. W. Francis, *Old New York* (1866); *The Autobiog. and Ministerial Life of the Rev. John Johnston, D.D.* (1856), ed. by James Carnahan; E. W. Leavitt, *Palmer Groups* (1901–05); James Riker, *The Annals of Newtown* (1852); John Wood, *A Full Exposition of the Clintonian Faction, and the Soc. of the Columbian Illuminati* (1802); G. Adolf Koch, *Republican Religion: The American Revolution and the Cult of Reason* (1933).]

G. A. K.

PALMER, ERASTUS DOW (Apr. 2, 1817–Mar. 9, 1904), sculptor, son of Erastus Dow and Laurinda (Ball) Palmer, was born in humble circumstances at Pompey, a rural village nine miles from Syracuse, N. Y. He had only six months of schooling, but from childhood, he had a sound body, a clear mind, a delight in beauty, and a skill of hand in expressing form. His first business was carpentry. It is recorded that at the age of nine he constructed a little sawmill, which became the marvel of the townfolk, and that at twelve he was an expert in making window sashes. At seventeen, with two other boys, he set forth on foot to seek his fortune in the western part of the state. Of the three he alone reached Dunkirk, on Lake Erie, where for six years he earned good wages. He next moved eastward to Amsterdam, N. Y., where again he found plenty to do, not only in simple carpentry, but also in wood-carving and cabinet making. After his marriage to Mary Jane Seaman, daughter of a farmer in the neighborhood, he went to Utica, and there built his house. Having seen and admired certain shell cameos, he attempted a cameo portrait of his wife. Though he knew nothing of the technique of the craft, and indeed was obliged to devise the necessary tools, his result was excellent. It met the approval of a connoisseur, who gave an order for his own portrait, and before long Palmer turned from carpentry to cameo-cutting as a means of livelihood. His precise eye and delicate skill of hand found such favor that within two years he had carved two hundred cameos, some of them "perfect gems," according to Tuckerman (*post,* p. 363). When the delicate work proved a strain on his eyes, at the suggestion of his patron he began to express his ideas in the ampler medium of clay. His first effort, the "Infant Ceres," modeled from one of his children, was successful. When carved in marble, the bust attracted attention at the 1850 exhibition of the National Academy of Design, and Palmer was taken into the Academy as an honorary member.

In 1846 he had moved to Albany where his career as a sculptor, already auspiciously begun, was to continue for a quarter-century. Pleasing bas-reliefs of winged heads called "Morning Star" and "Evening Star" were followed by the "Spirit's Flight," "Mercy," and "Faith." The original of "Faith," a large relief modeled in 1852, for St. Peter's Church, Albany, represents a draped female figure, standing with clasped hands before a cross. Photographs of this gentle composition had a wide popularity in American homes. It was not a masterly work, but its sweetness and simplicity appealed to the public. "Few photographic copies of any work of sculpture have had so large a sale" (Tuckerman, *post,* p. 361). Palmer continued to occupy himself with reliefs and with ideal busts such as the "Infant Flora" and the "June," the womanly "Resignation," and the maidenly "Spring." It was not until 1856 that he produced the "Indian Girl," now owned by the Metropolitan Museum. It was his first full-length marble statue and represented an Indian maid meditating upon a little cross found in the forest. Thus he was about thirty-nine years of age before he found the opportunity to model carefully a nude figure. The wonder is that his eye and hand served him so well. Powers' "Greek Slave," at that time a familiar figure in sculpture, was produced in Florence, in an atmosphere of artistic tradition, while Palmer's "Indian Girl" of 1856 and his more beautiful "White Captive" of 1858 sprang up in virgin soil, not far from the edge of the wilderness.

The "White Captive," now in the Metropolitan Museum of New York, surrounded by sculptures of far greater sophistication, remains his finest work. It tells a story of the American Indian wars, just as the "Greek Slave" tells a story of European strife. It is a simple standing nude figure of a young white girl, awaiting her fate from her savage captors. "Nothing so fine," wrote Lorado Taft, "had come over the seas from Italy; nothing so original, so dramatic, so human; nothing that could approach it, even in charm of workmanship" (*post,* p. 137). In 1864, the critic Jarves had expressed a contrary opinion. To him it suggested "meat and immodesty" (*post,* p. 280). In 1857, Palmer, like other

sculptors of his time, hoped that he might design a relief for the empty triangle in the gable of the House wing of the Capitol. Taking as his theme the landing of the Pilgrims, he composed an elaborate small-scale model for a large composition which he hoped would match and perhaps excel Crawford's "Past and Future of the Republic," sculptured over the Senate wing. Utterly untrained though he was in such work, his efforts were encouraged by influential citizens, and he believed that the commission was to be his. It was perhaps fortunate that his design was rejected. The government paid him for his model but did not award the commission.

Palmer was an individualist and firmly believed that beauty in art could be captured in his native state of New York as well as in Italy. His Albany studio, sixteen feet by eight feet, with its north light was said to be one of the best in the country. From that studio came a series of portrait busts in which Palmer's genius found triumphant expression, probably beyond anything that might have been attained in his pediment group. A bust of Alexander Hamilton was of necessity studied from various sources—Ceracchi, Trumbull, Stuart, Robertson, Sharpless—but most of the series were made from life. Among his notable sitters were Washington Irving, Moses Taylor, Erastus Corning, Governor Morgan, Dr. James H. Armsby, and Henry Burden. By a sympathetic searching of American traits revealed with the skill of a hand disciplined from his childhood, the sculptor imparted a new vitality to portraiture in this field. Tuckerman devotes an eloquent paragraph to "marvels of plastic skill" such as the portrait of Mrs. McCormick; Taft states that "it is difficult to conceive a finer bust" than that of Henry Burden.

In 1862, moved by the sacrifices of the Civil War, Palmer created his "Peace in Bondage," a three-quarters' length winged female figure in marble, the nude torso, the head, the wings and the fragment of drapery being carved with a charm rare at that time. Three years later came the majestic seated "Angel of the Sepulchre," an Albany Cemetery monument—a draped male figure definitely prefiguring the noble quality to be attained in such work a generation later by Saint-Gaudens, who, like Palmer, had begun his career in art as a cameo-cutter. It was not until 1873 that Palmer went abroad. At the mature age of fifty-four, well prepared by his own experience as a creative artist, he visited European cities and enjoyed their treasures of art. For a few months he took a studio in Paris, there to work on his studies for his bronze statue of Chancellor Robert R. Livingston. This statue, ordered by

Palmer

the state of New York, was placed in the national Capitol in 1874. "In matter of interpretation, of charm, and of artistic integrity, nothing finer had been done up to this time by an American sculptor," wrote Lorado Taft (*post*, p. 140). It was Palmer's last important work, but it shows no decline in his powers. The folds of the academic gown are skilfully disposed, and the hands beautifully modeled. A replica, shown at the Centennial of 1876, won a medal of the first class. Also among his works are "Pleasures of Memory," "Emigrant Children," "Sleeping Peri," and "Ambush Chief." He continued to create fine portrait busts, and in his Albany studio Jonathan Scott Hartley and Launt Thompson laid the foundations of their careers.

Despite his lack of early schooling, Palmer was by no means an uneducated man. He learned much by systematic reading, as well as through intercourse with persons of culture who were attracted to him by his goodness and charm. In 1873 Union College conferred upon him the honorary degree of A.M. He is rightly accounted a pioneer, because in such works as the "White Captive," he was the first to endow American sculpture with that greatly needed liberating gift, lyric charm. He died in Albany, where, in the Albany Historical and Art Society, there is a collection of his models in plaster. A son, Walter Launt Palmer [*q.v.*], born in Albany in 1854, gained recognition as a painter of winter landscapes.

[Lorado Taft, *The Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (1904 and later editions); C. R. Post, *A Hist. of European and Am. Sculpture* (1921), vol. II; C. E. Fairman, *Art and Artists of the Capitol* (1927); H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); W. J. Clark, *Great Am. Sculptures* (1878); J. J. Jarves, *The Art Idea* (1864); *Art Jour.* (London), Oct. 1, 1871; *Albany Evening Jour.* and *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 10, 1904.] A. A.

PALMER, GEORGE HERBERT (Mar. 19, 1842–May 7, 1933), philosopher, teacher, man of letters, was born in Boston, Mass. His father, Julius Auboyneau Palmer, a merchant of modest means, came of an English family which settled at Little Compton, R. I., in 1636. His mother, Lucy Manning Peabody, was descended from John Peabody, who became a freeman of Boxford, Mass., in 1674; his farm became George Herbert Palmer's summer home. The boy, named for the English poet, was physically feeble, hardly expected to live through infancy. To a long struggle with ill health, which affected all his student years, he attributed his longevity, since it compelled him to learn and observe the regimen under which alone he could maintain his working power.

In spite of frequently interrupted schooling, he

entered Phillips Andover Academy at twelve, spending two years there, and after an interval of travel and of experiment in the wholesale dry goods trade, entered Harvard in 1860, graduating in regular course in 1864. He offered a commencement part on Mill's Utilitarianism—Mill having captured his early enthusiasm as none of the regular teachers in the Harvard of his day had been able to do. Graduate study in philosophy was not available in America at that time, except in schools of theology. Palmer accordingly, after a year of teaching at the Salem High School, entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1865. In 1867, he left Andover to go abroad, spent in Germany fragments of two years, visited France and Italy, and returned to Andover to receive the degree of B.D. in 1870. Later, during a series of summers (in 1878 and following years), he pursued studies in Hegel under the personal guidance of Edward Caird, whom he sought out in Glasgow.

Though as a young man Palmer was painfully shy and hesitant both in speech and in writing, there was in him a personal force which made its impression on observant men. In 1870 President Charles William Eliot [*q.v.*], then in the second year of his administration, offered him a tutorship in Greek. Entering thus upon his service of forty-three years in Harvard, Palmer at once showed his power as a teacher by inaugurating a series of voluntary readings in the Odyssey, out of which came his remarkable English version, *The Odyssey of Homer*, published in 1884.

In 1872 an opening appeared in philosophy, as instructor and assistant to Prof. Francis Bowen [*q.v.*]; after one year in this post Palmer was made assistant professor of philosophy; he became full professor in 1883. Though at first he offered introductory courses, and indeed continued throughout his career to teach the introductory history of philosophy to fascinated groups of students, his interest turned decisively toward the theory of ethics: in 1889, "Philosophy 4" became the staple course in that subject, and with it his name as a teacher was peculiarly associated until his retirement in 1913. From 1889, he held the Alford Professorship of "natural religion, moral philosophy and civil polity." Becoming professor emeritus in 1913, Palmer relinquished this chair to Josiah Royce [*q.v.*]; but he served the University as overseer until 1919, and continued to reside within the Harvard Yard until his death at the advanced age of ninety-one.

Palmer was inclined to disown for himself originality in philosophical thought; he considered himself a critic and expositor rather than a creator of new concepts. There was however a depth and vigor in his thought to which this estimate does less than justice. While he prized true judgment above novelty, there was an element of genuine creation both in his masterly interpretations of the history of thought, and in his systematic expositions of ethical theory. The clarity for which he incessantly labored, his luminous and fluent prose, gave both hearer and reader an illusion of ease and simplicity which concealed not alone the effort, but also the force of the thinker. In Harvard he was the first to break away from textbook and recitation in philosophy and to work out his own system of ideas in lectures.

He belonged by inheritance to the Puritan tradition, and by training to the line of idealism, but he was a keen critic of Puritanism, its "extreme individualism and lack of a community sense," and he was equally dissatisfied with Hegel, on the ground that Hegel had a defective sense of the meaning of moral contrasts, and submerged the individual in the institution. The Puritan in him corrected the defects of Hegel; and the collectivist in him corrected the Puritan. The ethics of self-realization, characteristic of the English idealism of his day, he could not accept unless it were understood that the self in question is not the solitary or "abstract self," but the "conjunct self," the self as related to and tied in with others, through personal and institutional ties. Without these institutions, individual life is thin, unsatisfactory, ineffective. "Ally your labor with an institution" was his precept and his example. But within the institution, individual conscience must remain alert, correcting the institution and keeping it from the rigidity of death. The most perfect pre-arranged casuistry he considered inadequate to personal moral experience, which is infinite and changing; hence he took the Protestant rather than the Catholic view of authority, and aligned himself with Kant rather than with Hegel in his view of duty. Duty, he was accustomed to say, "is the call of the whole to the part," and duty has its one absolute law, a rule which is so final as to admit no deviation and yet so transparent in its texture as to admit every pulse of moral individuality: it is simply "the law that there shall be law," that conduct shall never be capricious.

The content of his course on ethics was never completely published. Parts of it have appeared in *The Field of Ethics* (1901), *The Nature of Goodness* (1903), *The Problem of Freedom* (1911), *Altruism; Its Nature and Varieties* (1919). These works preserve much of the lucidity and compactness of Palmer's lectures. His most memorable and effective works, however,

were those in which his philosophic thought gave itself to the interpretation of personality and art. In his own estimate, three of his books are likely to live a half century: *The Odyssey* (1884 and following), *The English Works of George Herbert* (3 vols., 1905), *The Life of Alice Freeman Palmer* (1908). These he calls his "books of affection and gratitude"; in them his powers of characterization reach their height. With them should be associated a series of contributions to letters: *The Antigone of Sophocles* (1899); *Intimations of Immortality in the Sonnets of Shakspere* (1912); introduction to T. C. Williams' translation, *The Georgics and Eclogues of Virgil* (1915); *Formative Types in English Poetry* (1918).

Palmer's greatness as a teacher was due in no small degree to the artist in him, which compelled him to orderliness of thought and presentation, and made shoddy, unclear expression repugnant to him. His speech abounded in expressions so perfect that "they continued to glow in the dark of the mind." But it was due as well to a discerning and persistent interest in persons. This interest was not indiscriminate: the friendship he offered was never genial, easy, intimate, profuse, but, with warm and enduring affection, held its own dignity and reserve. Few have been so gifted in the capacity for reaching objective estimates of personal ability. It was a part of his rigorous self-discipline to maintain an element of realism in these judgments, and in view of his belief that the imperfect has its own peculiar glories (*The Glory of the Imperfect,* 1891) he had no disposition to ignore the defects and paradoxes of the character with which he dealt. As a result, he was widely sought as a counselor in the placing of men, and left an indelible impress on the personnel of his department at Harvard, which included James, Royce, Münsterberg, and Santayana. This department was in no small measure of Palmer's building. Though he was not a lover of debate, he appreciated diversities of judgment, both in the composition of the department and in the minds of his own students.

Toward himself his judgment was equally objective and rigorous: that he knew and respected his limitations is in no small degree a secret of his success. He had early discovered the principle that limitation is a necessary element in achievement—a principle allied in his mind with the doctrine of the Incarnation—and he studied each defect as a possible source of power. Deficient in physical energy, he husbanded it and spent it with the maximum of effect. He was short in stature, quiet in manner and movement, but his voice was firm, capable of wide dramatic range, and his person impressive; bushy brows over deep-set eyes lent a suggestion of concentrated will, which seemed perpetually on duty. His simplicity of living, aided by a shrewd practical sense, made it possible for him to accumulate largely and to give generously. He gave to Wellesley College a remarkable collection of first editions of English classics; and in 1930 he added to this gift 900 letters of Robert and Elizabeth Browning. To Harvard he gave a library of the philosophical classics and a collection of editions and papers of George Herbert. Where he felt an obligation of honor or gratitude he interpreted it in a large way, as in his monumental edition of Herbert's writings. Externally his life was decorous, dominated by a passion for order, but although order versus oddity meant for him frequently a lack of interest in novelties of discussion, inwardly he inhabited a wide place; his touch with the classics lent steadiness to his outlook, his judgment was rapid, contemporary, pertinent, wise.

Palmer was twice married: first, June 15, 1871, to Ellen Margaret Wellman of Brookline, a Swedenborgian, somewhat his senior, a woman of marked social and intellectual gifts. The eight years of their marriage, until her death in 1879, did much to facilitate his intercourse with his students: to her he dedicated his *Odyssey.* Some eight years after her death, Dec. 23, 1887, he married Alice Freeman, then president of Wellesley [see Alice Freeman Palmer]. Both marriages were childless. He was widely honored as a scholar, receiving numerous honorary doctorates. In addition to the writings previously mentioned he published *The New Education* (1885), *Self-cultivation in English* (1897), *A Study of Self-Sacrifice* (1902), *The Teacher: Essays and Addresses by George Herbert Palmer and Alice Freeman Palmer* (1908), *Ethical and Moral Instruction in Schools* (1909), *The Ideal Teacher* (1910), *A Herbert Bibliography* (privately printed, 1911), *Trades and Professions* (1914), *The Lord's Prayer* (1920). It was fitting that the last of his published works should be a notable achievement in self-portrayal, *The Autobiography of a Philosopher* (1930), which remains the chief original source for his life.

[In addition to *The Autobiog. of a Philosopher,* published also as the "Introduction" to G. P. Adams and W. P. Montague, *Contemporary Am. Philosophy* (1930), vol. I, see S. E. Morison, *The Development of Harvard University Since the Inauguration of President Eliot* (1930), ch. i, "Philosophy, 1870–1929," by George Herbert Palmer and Ralph Barton Perry; Benjamin Rand, "Philosophical Instruction in Harvard University from 1636 to 1906," no. III, *Harvard Graduates' Magazine,* Mar. 1929; Josiah Royce, "In Honor of Professor Palmer," *Ibid.,* June 1911; R. C. Cabot, "George Herbert Palmer," *Boston Transcript,* Jan. 25, 1913; min-

ute on the Faculty Records of Harvard College, meeting of Oct. 3, 1933; W. E. Hocking, "Professor Palmer, Teacher," *Harvard Crimson*, May 10, 1933; *Boston Transcript*, May 8, 1933; *N. Y. Times*, May 8, 1933.]
W. E. H.

PALMER, HENRY WILBUR (July 10, 1839–Feb. 15, 1913), congressman and lawyer, was born in Clifford, Susquehanna County, Pa., the eldest son of Gideon W. and Elizabeth (Burdick) Palmer, both of New England ancestry. His father was a teacher, farmer, and a member of the constitutional convention of 1872–73. The boy received his education in the Wyoming Seminary at Kingston, Pa., the Fort Edward Collegiate Institute at Fort Edward, N. Y., and the law school at Poughkeepsie, N. Y. He was admitted to the bar at Peekskill in 1860 but shortly afterward left that place to enter the office of Garrick M. Harding at Wilkes-Barre, Pa., where he was admitted to the bar in August 1861. A few days later, on Sept. 12, he was married to Ellen M. Webster of Plattsburg, N. Y., who bore him eight children, and who became noted for her social welfare work among the boys of the coal region. He served under his father as a deputy paymaster in the Union army in 1862 and 1863, but he did not see actual military service. Returning to Wilkes-Barre, he entered a lucrative law practice and became interested in politics. In 1872 he stood for an uncontested seat in the constitutional convention, where he became prominent in the debates as a champion of woman's suffrage, prohibition, and the right of railroads to own and operate coal mines, although he declared himself opposed to the extension of corporate power.

In 1878 in the Republican state convention, he nominated his townsman, Henry M. Hoyt [*q.v.*], for governor. He stumped the state for Hoyt and was appointed attorney-general when Hoyt was elected. Both Hoyt and Palmer became unpopular with the party leaders before the term was over. Palmer conducted his office with independence, bringing suits for taxes against large corporations and against the common carriers for granting rebates to shippers. He antagonized the legislature by declaring unconstitutional a law granting members an increase in salary. In 1883 he resumed the practice of law at Wilkes-Barre and became counsel for a number of large coal and railroad companies. He amassed a considerable fortune and became a capitalist in his own right; his ardor against the extension of corporate power was noticeably lessened thereafter. In 1889 he was selected by the state Prohibition convention to conduct the campaign for an amendment to the state constitution prohibiting intoxicating liquors. In 1898 he endeavored

to gain the nomination for Congress in order to help save the country from "crazy socialists, populists, and silverites" (*Fifty Years, post*, p. 357). Refusing to engage in the usual convention methods, he failed to get the nomination. In 1900, under a new primary system, he was nominated and elected, and he was reëlected in 1902 and in 1904. In 1909 he again entered Congress for a term. During his incumbency he spoke against trusts but did not join conspicuously in the Rooseveltian attacks. As a trial lawyer he had few superiors. He had a gift for genuine eloquence, which was, however, often marred by bitter invective and harsh personalities. Many of his political doggerels, pungent with acrid partisanship and personalities, are still repeated in the locality. Of commanding presence, imperturbable, and somewhat cold, he was at once a thorough individualist, a Puritan reformer, and a devoted follower of the Republican party as the guardian of the established order. A week before he died, he finished his autobiography, *Fifty Years at the Bar and in Politics* (1913), which is in many ways a candid and often blunt memoir.

[Autobiography, *ante;* G. B. Kulp, *Families of the Wyoming Valley*, vol. I (1885); *Wilkes-Barre Record*, Feb. 16, 1913.]
J. P. B.

PALMER, HORATIO RICHMOND (Apr. 26, 1834–Nov. 15, 1907), composer, director of music, author, was born in Sherburne, N. Y., and died in Yonkers. He was the son of Anson B. Palmer and Abbey Maria Knapp. His mother died before he was three years old and he was thrown upon his own resources at an early age. At seven he was singing alto in the church choir which his father led. He was educated at Rushford (N. Y.) Academy, where after his graduation he taught for two years, and then became the director of music there. In 1855 he was married at Rushford to Lucia A. Chapman, a native of Dryden, N. Y., and a daughter of Rockwell M. and Susan Chapman. His wife was an artist, in 1900 a prize winner at the Paris Exposition. She spent three years in travel and study in Europe, putting the results of her observations into two books, *Grecian Days* (1896) and *Oriental Days* (1897).

While in Rushford Palmer directed the choir and organized a cornet band. His first singing school in a neighboring town was so successful that requests came to him from many places to teach singing classes. He then removed to Chicago where he became choir master in the Second Baptist Church and also published a monthly magazine, *Concordia*. He soon began to write music books for his classes and for the conven-

tions which were popular before the days of the modern singing school. He returned to New York in 1873 and in 1881 organized the Church Choral Union. From a membership of two hundred and fifty the first season it increased to forty-two hundred the third, and continued to grow until it had enrolled some twenty thousand singers. At one of his concerts, given in Madison Square Garden, there were nearly four thousand in the choir. Like the singing schools in the country, and the conventions in the larger towns, the idea of the Choral Union became popular and Palmer was called upon to organize similar groups in Brooklyn, Buffalo, Philadelphia, and Washington. A little later the establishment of the Chautauqua Movement offered an opportunity to develop the idea of a few weeks of intensive training in music, and in 1877 the Summer School of Music at Chautauqua was founded, and Palmer served as its dean for fourteen years. For seventeen successive years he conducted a musical festival at Courtland, N. Y., and for eleven years he was choir master of the Broome Street tabernacle in New York City.

Palmer's contributions to church music were extensive. Perhaps his most popular tunes were those written for "Just for today" and "Yield not to Temptation." The latter, for which he wrote both the words and the music, appeared in *The Song King* (1872) under the title "Looking to Jesus." "Just for today," copyrighted 1887, appeared in his *Book of Gems for the Sunday School* (1887) under the name *Oraz*. While he was on one of his visits to Palestine he wrote both words and music of "Galilee, blue Galilee." His "Master, the tempest is raging," is also reminiscent of the Holy Land. He was awarded the degree of Doctor of Music by the University of Chicago in 1880, and by Alfred University in 1881. He gave frequent lectures on astronomy, talks on his visits to the Holy Land and the Orient, and after he had become converted to the Baconian origin of the works of Shakespeare, he prepared a lecture setting forth his views. His writings include *The Song Queen* (1867); *The Elements of Musical Composition* (1867); *Palmer's Sabbath School Songs* (1868); *Palmer's Theory of Music* (1876); *Palmer's Music Catechism* (1881); *Palmer's Piano Primer* (1885); *Palmer's Class Method of Teaching the Rudiments of Music* (1892); *Choral Union* (1884); *Life-Time Hymns* (1896); *Palmer's Book of Classical Choruses* (1898); and *The Song Herald* (1904).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; J. H. Hall, *Biog. of Gospel Song and Hymn Writers* (1914); Georgia H. Jones, article in the *Musician*, Nov. 1899; H. J. W. Gilbert, *Rushford and Rushford People* (1910); *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Nov. 17, 1907.] F. J. M.

PALMER, INNIS NEWTON (Mar. 30, 1824–Sept. 9, 1900), soldier, was born at Buffalo, N. Y., the son of Innis Bromley and Susan (Candee) Palmer, and a descendant of Lieut. William Palmer who came to America on the *Fortune* in 1621. He received a common-school education and graduated from the United States Military Academy in 1846 as a brevet second lieutenant. His extended service in the Mexican War included the siege of Vera Cruz, the battles of Cerro Gordo, Contreras, Churubusco, Chapultepec, and the assault and capture of the city of Mexico. He was wounded at Chapultepec and was made a brevet captain for gallant conduct during that battle. Following the Mexican War, he served in various western posts almost without a break until the Civil War. His activities included the march to Oregon in 1849 and service in Oregon, Washington, Texas, and Indian Territory, with both the Mounted Rifles and the 2nd Cavalry. During this period he rose to be a major of cavalry (Apr. 25, 1861). In 1853 he married Catharine Jones, daughter of Col. Llewellyn Jones, of the United States Army, and by this marriage there were three daughters and a son.

In the first few months of the Civil War he served in the defenses of Washington, and as the Confederate armies approached the city in June he was placed in command of the Regular cavalry in the Manassas campaign. He was made a brevet lieutenant-colonel for gallantry at the battle of Bull Run, and was promoted to brigadier-general of volunteers on Sept. 23, 1861. He remained on duty in the defenses of Washington until March 1862, when he was given command of a brigade in the IV Corps, Army of the Potomac, and participated in the Virginia Peninsular campaign, taking part in the siege of Yorktown and the battles of Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Glendale, and Malvern Hill. In the fall of 1862 he organized New Jersey and Delaware volunteers and superintended camps of drafted men at Philadelphia. The remainder of his war service was in North Carolina, where he served from December 1862 until July 1865. In this period he held various department and district commands, and a portion of the time commanded a division in the XVIII Corps. On Mar. 13, 1865, he was made brevet colonel, 2nd Cavalry, and major-general of volunteers, the latter for long and meritorious service. The following January he was mustered out of the volunteer service and as brevet colonel took command of the 2nd Cavalry, which he had joined in 1855 as a captain.

After the war, promotion was very slow, and he did not become a full colonel until June 1868. For the most part the remainder of his service was in command of the 2nd Cavalry in the expanding West. He performed important duties, frequently commanding important frontier posts as well as his regiment. On Mar. 20, 1879, he retired as a colonel, after more than thirty years' service. He died at Chevy Chase, Md.

[*Army and Navy Jour.*, Sept. 15, 1900; *Army and Navy Reg.*, Sept. 15, 1900; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Sept. 10, 1900; information as to certain facts from a son-in-law, Maj.-Gen. Eben Swift.] D. Y.

PALMER, JAMES CROXALL (June 29, 1811–Apr. 24, 1883), naval surgeon, was born in Baltimore, Md., one of four sons of Edward Palmer, Baltimore merchant and commissioner of insolvency, and Catherine (Croxall) Palmer. He was a grandson of John and Mary (Preston) Palmer and James and Eleanor (Gittings) Croxall, all of Maryland, and a descendant of Edward Palmer, an Oxford scholar and relative of Sir Thomas Overbury, who secured a grant of Palmer's Island at the mouth of the Susquehanna in 1622 and projected there a college and school of arts. James Croxall Palmer graduated from Dickinson College in 1829 and was able to complete the medical course at the University of Maryland in 1833, although he received his diploma with the class of 1834. In March of the latter year he was commissioned assistant surgeon in the navy, standing first among the candidates then appointed.

His initial service was in the *Brandywine* of the Pacific Squadron and then in the *Vincennes* on a cruise around the world. After duty at the Baltimore naval rendezvous, he was in the Wilkes exploring expedition, 1838–42, first in the storeship *Relief* and later in the *Peacock*, being in the wreck of the latter at the mouth of the Columbia River, and subsequently in charge of the shore party at Astoria. The product of this cruise was a small volume of poems, *Thulia: a Tale of the Antarctic* (1843), republished in 1868 as *Antarctic Mariner's Song*, descriptive of the author's experiences in the south polar seas. In 1842 he was promoted to surgeon, and was in charge of the hospital at the Washington Navy Yard when the wounded from the *Princeton* explosion were brought there. He was in the *St. Mary's* in the Gulf during the Mexican War; in the *Vandalia* of the Pacific Squadron, 1850–53; and after service in the receiving ship *Baltimore*, in the steam frigate *Niagara*, 1857, when she was employed in laying the first Atlantic cable. After two years on the Mediterranean in the *Macedonian*, he was in charge of the medical service of the Naval Academy, then located at Newport, R. I., during the first two years of the Civil War; and from 1863 to 1865 he was fleet surgeon of the West Gulf Blockading Squadron under Farragut. In the battle of Mobile Bay, after the passing of the forts, Palmer, who was using the admiral's launch *Loyall* to visit the wounded in the fleet, was requested to carry orders to the scattered monitors to attack the *Tennessee*, and executed this hazardous duty, in Farragut's words, "with cheerfulness and alacrity" (Loyall Farragut, *The Life of David Glasgow Farragut*, 1879, p. 425). After the battle he went aboard the surrendered *Tennessee*, where he was chiefly instrumental in saving Admiral Franklin Buchanan [*q.v.*] from the amputation of a shattered leg. Through Palmer's efforts at this time an agreement was reached by which naval surgeons were not to be treated as prisoners of war.

He was in charge of the naval hospital at Brooklyn, 1866–69; was promoted to medical director Mar. 3, 1871; and was surgeon general of the navy from June 1872 until his retirement in June 1873. His death, from a complication of malaria and other diseases contracted during the Civil War, occurred ten years later at Washington, D. C. He was survived by his wife, Juliet Gittings, daughter of James Gittings of Long Green, Baltimore County, Md., whom he married May 22, 1837, and by two children. His contemporaries regarded him as an attractive and scholarly man, of notable gifts as a writer, skilled in his profession, and faithful to every obligation during nearly fifty years in the naval service. John Williamson Palmer [*q.v.*], the author, was his brother.

[Charles Wilkes, *Narrative of the U. S. Exploring Expedition, during the Years 1838 . . . 1842* (5 vols., 1845); L. R. Hamersly, *The Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (3rd ed., 1878); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Navy*); W. B. Atkinson, *The Physicians and Surgeons of the U. S.* (1878); *Sun* (Baltimore), Apr. 25, 1883; *Army and Navy Jour.*, Apr. 28, 1883; information from family sources]. A. W.

PALMER, JAMES SHEDDEN (Oct. 13, 1810–Dec. 7, 1867), naval officer, was born in New Jersey, and was the naval officer of highest rank from that state in the Civil War. After becoming a midshipman on Jan. 1, 1825, he served as a lieutenant on the *Columbia* in 1838 during her cruise around the world, and took part in the attack on Quallah Battoo, Sumatra, in retaliation for outrages on American traders. In the Mexican War he commanded the schooner *Flirt* and was engaged in blockade duty. At the outbreak of the Civil War he was in the Mediter-

ranean in command of the steamship *Iroquois* but was soon ordered to the blockade of Savannah. In September his ship was sent to the West Indies to capture the *Sumter,* which under Semmes had escaped from New Orleans and was seizing Union merchantmen.

Palmer found the *Sumter* in the harbor of St. Pierre, Martinique, and blockaded her, but was unable to prevent her escape one moonless night, for the harbor entrance was some fifteen miles wide and had two openings. As a result of the disappointment of the North, Palmer was deprived of his command, though later a court of inquiry exonerated him. By the time he was restored to the command of the *Iroquois,* in May 1862, Farragut had already captured New Orleans. He sent Palmer, however, to take possession of Baton Rouge and Natchez. Palmer also led the Union fleet in the first passage by Vicksburg, and secured the respect of Farragut by remaining under the fire of the batteries to relieve what he thought was a dangerous concentration of fire on the *Hartford.* Farragut, not understanding the move, shouted through his trumpet, "Captain Palmer, what do you mean by disobeying my orders?" An explanation was given and Farragut never forgot the gallant act. Later he made Palmer commander of the *Hartford* and the latter piloted it past Port Hudson when the *Mississippi* grounded and had to be burned. According to Loyall Farragut (*post*), Palmer was brave and cool under fire, and was accustomed to go into battle dressed with scrupulous neatness and buttoning on his kid gloves as if he were entering a ballroom. Palmer succeeded Farragut in command of the Union forces on the Mississippi and so missed taking part in the battle of Mobile Bay. Even in command of the West Gulf Squadron, where he also followed Farragut in the fall of 1864, he had his usual bad luck, for before the attack on Mobile City could take place he was superseded by Henry K. Thatcher [*q.v.*]. The latter, however, gave official credit to Palmer for the efficiency of the naval forces, and Palmer himself was in command of the ironclads.

In December 1865, Palmer was assigned the command of the West India Squadron in the *Susquehanna,* and was present at St. Thomas, Virgin Islands, when it was devastated by an earthquake and tidal wave. Probably as a result of his exertions for the stricken inhabitants, he contracted yellow fever and died within a few days. His remains were brought to New York, which he had considered his home, and funeral services were held at the navy yard on Dec. 21, 1867. His promotion to rear admiral had come

on July 25, 1866. He died unmarried; his brother, William R. Palmer, who had risen from a lieutenancy in the topographical engineers to a brevet colonelcy, died in 1862. According to Loyall Farragut, Palmer, in spite of a reserve of manner and a dignified bearing which amounted almost to pomposity, possessed a warm and generous nature.

[The only authority for the month and day of birth is a notation in a Navy Register of 1863 in the office of the Bureau of Navigation. Sources include: *Army and Navy Jour.,* Dec. 21, 28, 1867; J. S. Henshaw, *Around the World: A Narrative of a Voyage in the East India Squadron* (1840); *Official Records of the Union and Confederate Navies,* 1 ser. I (1894); Raphael Semmes, *Memoirs of Service Afloat During the War Between the States* (1869); Loyall Farragut, *The Life of David Glasgow Farragut* (1879), pp. 293, 324, 364; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Oct. 1868; J. T. Headley, *Farragut and Our Naval Commanders* (1867); *N. Y. Times,* Dec. 22, 1867.] W. B. N.

PALMER, JOEL (Oct. 4, 1810–June 9, 1881), pioneer and author, was born in Ontario, Canada, the son of Quaker parents, Ephraim and Hannah (Phelps) Palmer, who had moved across the line from the state of New York. He was a descendant of Walter Palmer who in 1630 emigrated from Nottingham, England, to Plymouth colony and died in Stonington, Conn., then in the province of Massachusetts Bay. Through his mother he was a descendant of William Phelps, one of the founders of Windsor, Conn. Taken back to New York state with his family at the outbreak of the War of 1812, he lived in Lewis and Jefferson counties until he was about sixteen. Then he went to Bucks County, Pa., where he worked on canals and other public works and where he was married, first in 1830 to Catherine Caffee and second, after her death, to Sarah Ann Derbyshire on Jan. 21, 1836. That year he removed to Indiana, where he was a contractor for the Whitewater canal, settled at Laurel in Franklin County, and bought land. He was a representative in the state legislature for two terms, from 1843 to 1845, and in the spring of 1845 started across the plains to Oregon. On the way he kept a day-to-day journal that was published in 1847 as *Journal of Travels over the Rocky Mountains.* With only such literary charm as inheres in the sincerity and drama of his record, the *Journal* was for a decade an important guidebook to overland immigrants for information concerning equipment for the journey and such details of the route as the location of suitable camping places, springs, and grassy oases. It remains the most complete record of pioneering along the old Oregon trail. The next year he returned to Indiana and in the spring of 1847, with his family, started on his second journey to the Pacific Northwest.

Shortly after his second arrival in Oregon, he served as commissary-general of the volunteer forces in the Cayuse War and was a member of a commission to persuade neighboring tribes not to join the Cayuse. In the autumn of 1848 he went to California. On his return to Oregon he laid out the town of Dayton on his land claim in what is now Yamhill County, built a gristmill, and settled down to improve his holdings. In 1853 he became superintendent of Indian affairs for the Oregon Territory and bent his enormous energy and personal magnetism to the difficult task of obtaining all their lands from the Indians without creating enough dissatisfaction among them to cause a war. He was a negotiator of nine of the fifteen treaties of cession made between Nov. 29, 1854, and Dec. 21, 1855, and he carried on his duties during the Yakima War led by Kamaiakin and Leschi [*qq.v.*]. In 1857 he was removed from office, not so much because his negotiations had not prevented an Indian uprising as because the settlers resented his restraint and his consideration for the Indians in carrying out his reservation policy. He was active in projects for the development of the community, opened one of the routes to British Columbia gold mines, was a director and, for a time, president of the Oregon City Manufacturing Company, and was one of the promoters of the Clackamas Railroad Company and of the Oregon Central Railroad Company. He was speaker of the state House of Representatives in 1862 and a member of the state Senate from 1864 to 1866. In 1870 he was defeated as the Republican candidate for governor. He died at his home in Dayton, survived by his wife and seven children.

[Information from Palmer's niece, Mrs. Felix Emanuel Schelling, Philadelphia; transcript of Palmer's manuscript narrative in the Bancroft Lib., Univ. of Cal., and other materials from his great-grand-daughter, Mrs. John G. Flynn, Caldwell, Idaho; H. W. Scott, *Hist. of the Oregon Country* (6 vols., 1924), comp. by L. M. Scott; H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of the Pacific States*, vols. XXIV, XXV (1886–88); R. G. Thwaites, *Early Western Travels*, vol. XXX (1906); *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, Sept. 1907, Mar. 1922, Sept. 1930, Sept. 1931; *Hist. of the Willamette Valley* (1885), ed. by H. O. Lang; *Morning Oregonian* (Portland), June 10, 1881.]

K. E. C.

PALMER, JOHN McAULEY (Sept. 13, 1817–Sept. 25, 1900), governor of Illinois, senator, was born in Scott County, Ky., the son of Louis D. and Ann Hansford (Tutt) Palmer, and the great-grandson of Thomas Palmer who emigrated to Virginia from England early in the eighteenth century. His father was a farmer and a Jacksonian Democrat with decided anti-slavery tendencies that led him to leave Kentucky for Illinois in 1831. He settled near Alton, and in 1834 the boy entered Shurtleff College at Upper Alton, Ill., where he stayed for two years, financing himself by doing odd jobs around the college and town. Then he peddled clocks and taught in a country school before moving to Carlinville in 1839, where he began reading law in the office of John S. Greathouse. In December of that year he was admitted to the bar. His political career started in 1840, when he gave ardent support to Van Buren. On Dec. 20, 1842, he was married to Malinda Ann, the daughter of James Neely of Carlinville, who died in 1885. They had ten children. In 1847 he was elected as a delegate to the Illinois constitutional convention and was later elected county judge under the new constitution. He was elected to the state Senate in 1851 and in 1854 opposed Douglas' Kansas-Nebraska Bill. When a resolution was offered to indorse the bill, he offered a substitute resolution condemning the bill and favoring the Missouri Compromise and the compromise measures of 1850. Although his resolution was rejected, he ran for state senator as an independent Democrat on a platform of opposition to the Kansas-Nebraska Bill and was elected.

He played an important part in the formation of the Republican party in Illinois, serving as president of the Bloomington convention in May 1856 and as delegate to the Republican National Convention at Philadelphia in June. In 1859 he was defeated as a Republican candidate for representative to Congress; in 1860 he was a delegate to the Republican National Convention that nominated Lincoln; and in 1861 he was a delegate to the peace convention at Washington. He began his military career in May 1861 as colonel of the 14th Illinois Infantry. He served in Missouri and at the engagements of New Madrid, Point Pleasant, and Island No. 10, and he received the rank of brigadier-general in December 1861. In 1862 he was made commander of the 1st Division in the Army of the Mississippi, fought gallantly at Stone River and Chickamauga, and was rewarded by the rank of major-general. In August 1864 he asked to be relieved of his command, owing to an altercation with General Sherman concerning his refusal to take orders from General Schofield, who, he claimed, was his junior in rank. The request was granted. Later he was given command of the Department of Kentucky but was relieved by request in 1866. The summer of 1867 found him in Springfield practising law with Milton Hay. He reëntered public life, however, in 1868, when he was elected governor of Illinois on the Republican ticket. In his inaugural address he

alienated many Republicans and pleased most Democrats by taking a definite stand for state rights, deprecating the extension of power by the federal government. His administration was a difficult one. Monopolists, lobbyists, and various "rings" all sought special legislation. He did all he could to check hasty and unscrupulous legislation by the use of his veto power, but his efforts were largely unavailing. In all, some 1700 bills were passed. When the people of Chicago were left destitute by the disastrous fire of 1871, he quickly sent money and supplies. However, when Mayor Mason asked for federal troops to maintain order in the city, and Grant provided them, Palmer displayed his state-rights position by protesting that state troops could handle the situation and that the use of federal troops was unconstitutional. He was later sustained by the legislature.

In 1872, disgusted with the corruption of the Grant régime, he joined the Liberal Republicans in support of Greeley and soon thereafter rejoined the Democratic party. In 1884 he was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention that nominated Cleveland for president, and in 1888 he was defeated as Democratic candidate for governor. On Apr. 4 of that year he was married to Hannah (Lamb) Kimball, the daughter of James Lamb and the widow of L. R. Kimball. Three years later he entered the United States Senate as a Democrat. As senator he served on the committees of military affairs, pensions, and railroads. He advocated a constitutional amendment to provide for the popular election of senators and urged the repeal of the Sherman Act of 1890. In 1896 he was the presidential candidate of the National or Gold Democrats on a platform denouncing protection and the free coinage of silver. He polled only 130,000 votes. He returned to his profession in 1897 but spent most of his time in editing *The Bench and Bar of Illinois* (2 vols., 1899) and in writing his memoirs, *Personal Recollections of John M. Palmer: The Story of an Earnest Life* (1901). He died in Springfield, Ill.

[Autobiography, *ante*; *The Biog. Encyc. of Ill.* (1875); Joseph Wallace, *Past and Present of the City of Springfield* (1904), vol. I; John Moses, *Illinois, Hist. and Statistical*, vol. II (1892); A. C. Cole, *The Era of the Civil War* (1919); E. L. Bogart, *The Industrial State* (1920); *Ill. State Register* (Springfield), Sept. 26, 1900.] E. B.

PALMER, JOHN WILLIAMSON (Apr. 4, 1825–Feb. 26, 1906), author, son of Edward and Catherine (Croxall) Palmer, and a brother of James Croxall Palmer [*q.v.*], was born and educated in Baltimore, Md. He completed a medical course at the University of Maryland in 1846,

Palmer

and sailed for California in the gold rush, reaching San Francisco, in the summer of 1849. Here he became the first city physician and in this position he wrote later, "between the day when I first entered San Francisco without a dime, and the day I left it, also without a dime, I was introduced to more of the pathos and tragedy . . . than any other person on the spot" (*The New and the Old*, pp. 31, 32). In 1850 he drifted on to Hawaii and thence to the Far East, where he served as surgeon in the small East India steamer *Phlegethon* through the Second Burmese War, 1851–52.

Returning to America, after further travel in China and India, he definitely gave up medicine, and settled in New York as a writer, contributing to *Harper's New Monthly Magazine*, *Putnam's Monthly Magazine*, and the *Atlantic Monthly*, and publishing his travel sketches in two entertaining volumes, *The Golden Dagon; or Up and Down the Irrawaddi* (1856), and *The New and the Old; or, California and India in Romantic Aspects* (1859). In 1856 he published a collection entitled *Folk Songs*. His comedy, *The Queen's Heart* (1858), was acted with some success by James E. Owens, and in 1859–60 he published translations of Jules Michelet's comedies *L'Amour* and *La Femme* and Ernest Legouvé's *Histoire Morale des Femmes*. On the staff of the *New York Times* at the opening of the Civil War, he proposed, as a Southern sympathizer, a series of letters picturing conditions in the South. His first article, from Richmond, the *Times* was unwilling to publish, but he later became a correspondent from the Southern side for the *New York Tribune*. In the latter part of the war he entered the Confederate service and was on the staff of Gen. J. C. Breckinridge [*q.v.*]. His poem "Stonewall Jackson's Way," a spirited war ballad written within sound of the firing at Antietam, attained considerable popularity.

About 1870 he resumed literary work in New York, serving for many years on the editorial staffs of the *Century* and *Standard* dictionaries and as a reviewer for the *Literary Digest*. He wrote a book on *Epidemic Cholera* (1866), edited *The Poetry of Compliment and Courtship* (1868), and prepared two books on art, *Beauties and Curiosities of Engraving* (2 vols., 1878–79) and *A Portfolio of Autograph Etchings* (1882). His only novel, *After His Kind*, appeared under the pseudonym John Coventry in 1886. In later years he showed a special interest in the social life of colonial Maryland and the old South, and published articles on this theme in the *Century Magazine*, 1893–97, and subsequently in the New

York *Home Journal*. A slender verse collection, *For Charlie's Sake, and Other Lyrics and Ballads*, appeared in 1901, notable chiefly for the martial poems "Stonewall Jackson's Way," "Ned Braddock," which he considered his best, and "The Maryland Battalion." From 1904 until his death from the infirmities of age he lived in Baltimore, loved by a wide circle of friends for his genial charm of manner and remarkable gifts of memory, and as a last though minor figure among the writers who voiced the Southern spirit in the Civil War. He was survived by his wife, Henrietta Lee, whom he married in 1855, and by a son, their only child.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Sun* (Baltimore), Feb. 27, 1906; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Old Maryland*, Mar. 1906.]

A. W.

PALMER, JOSEPH (Mar. 31, 1716–Dec. 25, 1788), manufacturer, soldier, was born at Higher Abbotsrow, Shaugh Prior, Devon, the son of John and Joan (Pearse) Palmer. His mother came from Fardle Mill in the Parish of Cornwood, Devon. He was educated in his native county and spent a few years near Liverpool, where it is believed he learned the technique of salt manufacture. In 1746 he emigrated to America in company with his brother-in-law, Richard Cranch, later a judge on the Massachusetts bench. They first engaged in business in Boston as card-makers for wool-carding. In 1752 they erected a glass manufactory in Germantown (now a part of Quincy, Mass.) where there were settled some Germans skilled in the craft. Fragments of glass bottles made at their works have been found, and they are thick, rough, and of a greenish hue. The two also erected chocolate mills and spermaceti and salt factories at Germantown. Palmer was successful in some of his business pursuits and bought large tracts of land at Pomfret, Conn. In 1770 he made a trip to England for his health and the next year he returned to Quincy.

On Sept. 6, 1774, a delegation from nineteen towns and districts on the south shore of Massachusetts Bay met at Milton to discuss the impending crisis between the colony and the mother country. Of this delegation "Deacon Joseph Palmer of Germantown" was chosen moderator. He was present at the battle of Lexington, and though not wounded, was so exhausted that it took him some days to recover. He served in the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts during 1774–75 and was made a member of the Committee of Safety at Cambridge. On Feb. 7, 1776, he was commissioned colonel in the 5th Suffolk County Regiment in the Massachusetts militia for the defense of Boston. Three months later he was chosen brigadier for Suffolk County. On Aug. 21, 1777, he and John Taylor were granted the sum of one hundred pounds sterling, "to repair to Bennington in the Grants [Vermont] to obtain the most authentic Intelligence of the Circumstan[ces] of the American Forces" (*Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, XI, 1903, p. 803). On Sept. 19, 1777, he was appointed brigadier-general to replace Gen. Timothy Danielson, to command the forces on a "secret expedition" to Rhode Island to attack the enemy at Newport. He proceeded to Tiverton on the 22nd, arriving there in about ten days. He took over the command of two regiments from Plymouth and Bristol counties, but the expedition proved to be a failure and Palmer and Brig.-Gen. Solomon Lovell were notified to attend a court of inquiry at Providence on Nov. 12, 1777, to give information regarding the failure (*Ibid.*, p. 803).

In 1783 Palmer returned to his factories at Germantown, but his health was shattered and he was in financial straits brought about by the depreciation of Continental money. He was greatly indebted to John Hancock for reasons not made clear; and after a disastrous quarrel with Hancock, he was forced to quit Germantown in 1784. He started a salt factory at Boston Neck and moved his family to Dorchester. Although his new factories were fairly successful, they failed to bring the old General health and peace. He died on Christmas day in 1788 at his own home. A year or two before his arrival in America, he had married Mary Cranch of Brood in the parish of Ermington, Devon. By her he had three children. One of his grandchildren was Elizabeth Palmer Peabody [*q.v.*].

[The best sketch of Palmer appears in the *New Englander* for Jan. 1845. See also: *Grandmother Tyler's Book: The Recollections of Mary Palmer Tyler* (1925), ed. by Frederick Tupper and H. T. Brown; W. S. Pattee, *A Hist. of Old Braintree and Quincy* (1878); Alden Bradford, *Hist. of Mass.*, vol. II (1825); *The Jours. of Each Provincial Cong. of Mass. in 1774 and 1775 and of the Committee of Safety* (1838); E. A. Barber, *Am. Glassware* (1900); *Mass. Centinel* (Boston), Dec 27, 1788.]

E. L. W. H.

PALMER, NATHANIEL BROWN (Aug. 8, 1799–June 21, 1877), sea captain, explorer, not only received early prominence for discovering the Antarctic continent, where a peninsula and an archipelago still bear his name, but was also in the forefront of the packet and clipper captains. He was born in Stonington, Conn., the son of Nathaniel and Mercy (Brown) Palmer, and was descended from Walter Palmer who had settled in Stonington in 1653. The father was a lawyer and a shipbuilder. Young

Palmer

Palmer went to sea at fourteen for four years on a coaster plying between Maine and New York. Like many other Stonington mariners, he became involved in the south-sea explorations stimulated by Edmund Fanning [*q.v.*]. The search for fresh seal rookeries, rather than pure geographical curiosity, stimulated the unusually fruitful activity of this little Sound port. Palmer went as second mate in 1819 on the brig *Hersilia,* Capt. James P. Sheffield, which brought back 8,868 sealskins from the re-discovered South Shetland Islands, south of Cape Horn. The next year, five Stonington vessels under Capt. Benjamin Pendleton returned to the South Shetlands. Pendleton sent Palmer in the little sloop *Hero* of about forty tons to search for new seal rookeries. Palmer discovered the mainland of Antarctica at Orleans Channel in November 1820 and subsequently went to Marguerite Bay in 68° south latitude beyond the Antarctic Circle. In February 1821, he encountered the Russian exploring squadron of Bellingshausen who suggested that the region be called Palmer Land, often miscalled Graham Land. A year later, in the *James Monroe,* Palmer explored the new region more thoroughly and, with an Englishman, discovered the South Orkney Islands. He and Pendleton returned to the scene in 1829–31 in the *Seraph, Annawan,* and *Penguin,* with several scientists including James Eights, but their search for new islands to the westward of the Palmer Peninsula was unsuccessful.

In the meantime, Palmer had made several voyages to the Spanish Main in the *Cadet* and *Tampico,* helping, incidentally, to transport troops and supplies for Bolívar; then he made some trips to Europe in the *Francis.* In 1834 he became a packet captain, one of the most desirable maritime posts of that day. His first command was the New York-New Orleans packet *Huntsville,* belonging to Edward Knight Collins [*q.v.*], who soon promoted him to the *Garrick* and then to the *Siddons* of his "Dramatic Line" to Liverpool. Soon clipper commands in the China trade became more desirable than packets, and Palmer again secured some of the best assignments. He became associated with A. A. Low & Brothers, important New York China merchants, who had the celebrated early clippers *Houqua, Samuel Russell,* and *Oriental* built by Jacob Bell [*q.v.*]. Palmer not only commanded these vessels in turn, making several very fast runs between China and New York, but is also said to have given valuable advice concerning their design and construction. Many prominent skippers, including his younger brothers Alexander and Theodore, had their first training under him. He had retired from active sea service by 1850, after taking the steamship *United States* to Bremen.

He apparently divided the rest of his years between New York and Stonington. When Donald McKay's masterpiece, the *Great Republic,* was burned in 1853, Palmer superintended her rebuilding. He was a director of the Fall River Line and took a special interest in the construction of its steamers. He corrected the official survey of Stonington harbor. He was a thorough sportsman, "being a skilful yachtsman, excellent shot, and truthful fisherman." He was one of the earliest members of the New York Yacht Club in 1845, owned some seventeen yachts, and was an energetic duck-hunter until his death. "Captain Nat," as he was universally known, was more than six feet tall and was a man of great physical strength and endurance. "Though rugged in appearance," writes Captain Clark, "his roughness was all on the outside" (*post,* p. 86). On Dec. 7, 1826, he married Eliza Thompson Babcock. They had no children. He died in San Francisco on his return from a vain attempt to restore his nephew's health by a sailing voyage to China.

[Edmund Fanning, *Voyages Round the World* (1833); E. S. Balch, *Antarctica* (1902); J. N. Reynolds, *Address, on the Subject of a Surveying and Exploring Expedition to the Pacific Ocean and South Seas* (1836); A. H. Clark, *The Clipper Ship Era* (1910); Geo. Powell, *Notes on South Shetland* (1822); J. R. Spears, *Capt. Nathaniel Brown Palmer* (1922); R. A. Wheeler, *Hist. of the Town of Stonington, County of New London, Conn.* (1900); R. G. Albion, *Square-Riggers on Schedule* (1938); W. H. Hobbs, *The Discoveries of Antarctica within the American Sector* (1939); Lawrence Martin, *Antarctica Discovered by a Connecticut Yankee* (1940); Russell Owen, *The Antarctic Ocean* (1941); *House Doc. 61, 22* Cong., 1 Sess.; *Senate Doc. 10, 23* Cong., 1 Sess.; *House Doc. 105, 23* Cong., *2* Sess.; *Daily Morning Call* (San Francisco), June 22, 1877.] R. G. A.

PALMER, POTTER (May 20, 1826–May 4, 1902), Chicago merchant, real-estate promoter, was born in Albany County, N. Y., the fourth son of Benjamin and Rebecca (Potter) Palmer, both Quakers. His formal education was confined to the elementary school. At eighteen years of age he became a clerk in a general store at Durham, N. Y. After three years he opened a dry-goods store for himself in the neighboring community of Oneida, from which, a little later, he removed his business to Lockport. When he looked about for greater merchandising opportunities, Chicago attracted his attention. Assisted by his father, he opened, in 1852, a dry-goods store on Lake Street, which was then the commercial center of the city. His methods of carrying on his business were so out of the ordinary as to surprise his competitors. He permitted customers to inspect merchandise in their own homes before buying and to exchange purchases already made for other merchandise or for the price paid. This method of retailing

finally prevailed among the larger stores in Chicago and came to be known as the "Palmer system." He led the way also in other business innovations, especially in laying increased stress on advertising and on attractiveness in displaying goods for sale. In the fifteen years following his arrival in Chicago he amassed a large fortune, as fortunes were measured at the time in the Central West. This he did, however, at the expense of his health. On the advice of his physicians he retired, in 1867, from active participation in business, turning over the management and control of his store to his partners, Marshall Field and Levi Z. Leiter [*qq.v.*].

After three years of rest and travel abroad he returned to Chicago as an active business man, now directing his interest to real-estate development. His most notable achievement in this respect was the transformation of what is now State Street from little more than a country road into a wide and attractive business thoroughfare. There he built the first Palmer House and some thirty-two other buildings. These improvements caused the removal of the retail business of the city to State Street from Lake Street, where it had been established for years. When the great fire of 1871 swept away a large portion of his fortune, he bravely began to recoup his losses. He built even larger and more permanent buildings than before. On a new site on State Street, at the corner of Monroe, he erected the second Palmer House, a hostelry that was to become internationally famous. During these years of struggle, he enjoyed the active sympathy and support of his brilliant wife, Bertha (Honoré) Palmer [*q.v.*], the eldest daughter of a prominent capitalist and real estate owner of Chicago, to whom he was married in 1871 just before the great fire. They had two sons. He spent large sums of money in transforming waste lands along the lake shore, north of the Chicago River, into beautiful building sites and drives. There he built a magnificent home, still a monument to the dominant taste of the day.

He was not too much engaged in his own affairs to give attention to the needs of his community; he was a vice-president of the first board of local directors of the World's Columbian Exposition, the first president of the Chicago Baseball Club, a commissioner during the early years of the South Side park system, one of the original incorporators of the Chicago Association of Commerce and of the Chicago Board of Trade, and an early supporter of the Chicago Young Men's Christian Association. During the Civil War he supported the government by buying heavily of bonds and by cooperating with his fellow townsmen in meeting the requirements for soldiers. He believed in young men, and many were the times that he helped them most generously in business and social ventures. He died in his home in Chicago.

Palmer

[Newton Bateman, Paul Selby, and J. S. Currey, *Hist. Encyc. of Ill.* (2 vols., 1925); D. W. Wood, *Chicago and its Distinguished Citizens* (1881); J. S. Currey, *Chicago* (1912), vols. I, III; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, May 5, 7, 1902.] C. M. T.

PALMER, MRS. POTTER [See PALMER, BERTHA HONORÉ, 1849–1918].

PALMER, RAY (Nov. 12, 1808–Mar. 29, 1887), Congregational clergyman, hymn-writer, was born in Little Compton, R. I., and died in Newark, N. J. The son of Judge Thomas Palmer and Susanna (Palmer) Palmer, he traced his descent back to William Palmer who came to Plymouth Colony in 1621. When only thirteen years old, he became a clerk in a drygoods store in Boston, and attended Park Street Congregational Church, where he was under the influence of Rev. Sereno E. Dwight [*q.v.*]. Having decided to enter the ministry, he spent three years preparing for college at Phillips Academy, Andover, and then entered Yale, where he was graduated in the class of 1830. He taught for several hours a day in a select school for girls in New York City (1830–31), and then at a seminary for girls in New Haven. On Oct. 3, 1832, he married Ann Maria, daughter of Marmaduke and Maria (Ogden) Waud of Newark, N. J. Having studied theology privately, he was ordained and installed as pastor of the Congregational Church in Bath, Me., July 22, 1835, where he remained for fifteen years. In 1847 he made a trip to Europe, sending back letters of travel which were published in the *Christian Mirror,* Portland. From 1850 to 1866 he was the first pastor of the First Congregational Church in Albany, N. Y., and for the twelve years following, 1866–78, he was the corresponding secretary of the American Congregational Union, later the Congregational Church Building Society. One of the principal objects of this organization was to give assistance in the building of meeting houses and parsonages, and during Palmer's incumbency more than six hundred of the former were erected. After 1870 he resided in Newark, and from 1881 to 1884 he was one of the associate pastors of the Bellevue Avenue Church.

He was a man of transparent sincerity, simplicity of faith, and the cheerfulness and confidence which are rooted in untroubled religious convictions. Methodical and of tireless industry, he found time in the midst of parish and sec-

retarial duties to do much writing. Among his published prose works are *Spiritual Improvement, or Aids to Growth in Grace* (1839), reprinted as *Closet Hours* (1851); *Doctrinal Text-book* (1839); *Hints on the Formation of Religious Opinions* (1860); *Remember Me* (1865); *Earnest Words on True Success in Life* (1873). He also contributed much to religious periodicals. A long poem, *Home: or the Unlost Paradise,* appeared in 1872. It is as a hymn-writer, however, that he is best known. His compositions in this field were numerous and are rated by hymnologists as superior to most hymns of American origin (John Julian, *A Dictionary of Hymnology,* 1891). "My Faith Looks up to Thee," which has been translated into many languages, was written soon after he graduated from college and included in *Spiritual Songs for Social Worship* by Thomas Hastings and Lowell Mason in 1832. Some of the other popular hymns which he wrote are "Away from Earth my Spirit Turns," "And Is There, Lord, a Rest?", "O Sweetly Breathe the Lyres Above," and "Take Me, O My Father; Take Me." He published *Hymns and Sacred Pieces* (1865), *Hymns of My Holy Hours* (1867), *The Poetical Works of Ray Palmer* (1876), and *Voices of Hope and Gladness* (1881). His death occurred at Newark from cerebral hemorrhage when he was in his seventy-ninth year.

[*Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ.*, . . . 1880–90 (1890); *The Congregational Year-Book* (1888); S. W. Duffield, *Eng. Hymns: Their Authors and Hist.* (1886); *The Independent,* Apr. 7, 14, 1887; *Musical Herald,* Apr. 1882; *Choir Herald,* Dec. 1919; E. F. Hatfield, *Poets of the Church* (1884); L. F. Benson, *Studies of Familiar Hymns* (1903); Charles S. Robinson, *Annotations upon Popular Hymns* (copr. 1893); W. F. Tillett and C. S. Nutter, *The Hymns and Hymn Writers of the Church* (copr. 1911); E. S. Ninde, *The Story of the Am. Hymn* (1921); C. M. Fuess, *Men of Andover* (1928).] F. J. M.

PALMER, THOMAS WITHERELL (Jan. 25, 1830–June 1, 1913), senator, minister to Spain, was born in Detroit, Mich. His father, Thomas Palmer, removed from Connecticut to Detroit, opened a store, acquired a sawmill, and afterward became interested in the mining industry in the upper peninsula. His mother was Mary Amy (Witherell) Palmer, the daughter of James Witherell, a judge of the supreme court and later secretary of Michigan Territory. In memory of this grandfather Palmer changed his middle name from James to Witherell in 1850. He received his early education in Detroit. At the age of twelve he was sent to Palmer (now Saint Clair), where he entered the private school of O. C. Thompson, a Presbyterian minister, and studied for three years. In 1907 he published a description of these school days, *Mr. Thompson's School at St. Clair in 1842.* In 1845 he matriculated at the University of Michigan, but on account of illness and poor eyesight his studies were twice interrupted, and in 1848 he left Ann Arbor. Sailing with five of his college friends for Spain, he arrived at Cadiz on Dec. 1, 1848, and departed for South America four weeks later. In the summer of 1849 he returned to Detroit. Inspired by the phenomenal success of his father as a merchant, he opened a business office and later a store at Appleton, Wis., but a fire destroyed most of his possessions in January 1852. From 1853 to 1860 he was his father's partner in Detroit. Having married on Oct. 16, 1855, Lizzie Pitts Merrill, the daughter of Charles Merrill, he gradually grew more involved in his father-in-law's extensive lumber interests, and in 1863 he became Merrill's partner. The next year he moved to a suburban home, where he maintained a small farm. When his father died in 1868, he took up the management of the estate's larger tract of land, part of which he donated to the city of Detroit in 1895 for Palmer Park.

In 1873 he was elected a member of the first board of estimates of Detroit. Five years later he won the election for state senator, and in 1883 he became federal senator. Noteworthy are his speeches on woman's suffrage, government regulation of the railroads, and the restriction of immigration. He was chairman of the committee on agriculture. As a debater he was surpassed by few, and he was one of the most popular orators in Michigan. When in 1889 he was appointed minister to Spain, prominent citizens in Detroit honored him with many tokens of esteem. After two years, however, he resigned and soon after his return from Spain was chosen by President Harrison to be a commissioner for the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago. The board elected him president. After the fair he sustained a nervous collapse, which necessitated a long rest. He withdrew from the political arena, although on many occasions he delivered stirring speeches and witty toasts. He also devoted much time to philanthropy, and he was one of the founders of the Detroit Museum of Art. Among the pamphlets and articles written by him may be noted the following: *Detroit Sixty Years Ago: An Address before the Unity Club . . . 1897* (n.d.), "Sketch of Life and Times of James Witherell" in the *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society Collections* (vol. IV, 1906), and "Detroit in its Relation to the Northwest" in *The Bi-Centenary of the Founding of City of Detroit* (1902). He died in Detroit, sur-

vived by his wife. They had no children but had adopted a son and a daughter.

[M. A. Burton, *Thomas W. Palmer* (1914), later published in *Mich. Pioneer and Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. XXXIX (1915); Friend Palmer, *Early Days in Detroit* (1906); *The City of Detroit*, ed. by C. M. Burton (1922), vol. IV; C. McElroy, *Souvenir Hist. of Palmer Park and Sketch of Hon. Thomas W. Palmer*, (1908); *Detroit Free Press* and *Detroit News*, June 2, 1913.] A. H.

PALMER, WALTER LAUNT (Aug. 1, 1854–Apr. 16, 1932), landscape, figure, and still-life painter, born in Albany, N. Y., was the son of Erastus Dow Palmer [*q.v.*], the sculptor, and Mary Jane Seaman. He received his first lessons in drawing from his father; later he studied painting for two years (1870–72) under Frederick E. Church [*q.v.*] at Hudson, N. Y.; and in 1873 he went to Paris, where he was a pupil of Carolus-Duran for a year (1876–77). Upon his return to the United States in 1877 he opened a studio in New York, where he devoted himself to landscape painting. He made his début a year later, sending to the National Academy exhibition "An Interior" and "Montigny-sur-Loing" (1878). He then concentrated upon winter scenes, in the depiction of which he was eminently successful. He was elected an associate of the National Academy in 1887, on the occasion of his taking the second Hallgarten prize, and he became a member of the American Water-Color Society and of the Society of American Artists. In 1891 he moved from New York to Albany, where the greater part of his professional life was passed thereafter. One of his earliest winter landscapes, "January," was bought by Thomas B. Clarke.

Although landscapes were his most popular subjects, he produced from time to time equally excellent figure pieces and interiors. An interior which was at the Academy in 1878, and which was also hung in one of the exhibitions of the Union League Club, New York, was highly praised by a critic for the New York *Evening Post* (Mar. 15, 1878, p. 2). He sent three of his pictures to the Chicago Exposition of 1893—an "Early Snow," "Autumn Morning Mist Clearing Away" (lent by John G. Myers of Albany), and the early "January" which belonged to Clarke's collection. He was awarded a medal at this exhibition. At the St. Louis exhibition of 1904 he was represented by "Evening Lights" and "Across the Fields," and received a bronze medal for his oil paintings and a silver medal for his four water-colors. Among the other honors which came to him may be mentioned the gold medal of the Art Club, Philadelphia, 1894; the Evans prize at the exhibition of the American Water-Color Society, 1895; the first prize at the exhibition of the Boston Art Club, 1895; the second prize at the Nashville exhibition of 1897; silver medals for water-colors at the Buffalo Exposition of 1901 and at the Charleston Exposition of 1902; a silver medal at the Philadelphia exhibition in 1907; a bronze medal at the Buenos Aires Exposition of 1910; the Butler prize, Chicago, 1919; and the DuPont prize, Wilmington, Del., 1926.

Palmer's landscapes are characterized by the keen and luminous effects of the winter season, the forcible contrasts of light and shade which are the results of sharp frosts and unclouded sunlight. He made the winter with its snows his particular province. "It is not," says Isham, "the snow of Europe, damply evaporating into a leaden sky, but the New England article, crisp and dry in the keen cold and shining dazzling white against the blue horizon" (*post*, p. 440). Palmer was twice married: first to Georgianna Myers, and on Dec. 26, 1895, some years after the death of his first wife, to Zoe de V. Wyndham of England. He died at his birthplace, Albany, survived by his widow and a daughter.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; Samuel Isham, *Hist. of Am. Painting* (1905); *Catalogue Official Illustré, Exposition des Beaux Arts, États-Unis d'Amérique, Exposition Universelle de Paris* (1900); *Cat. of the Thos. B. Clarke Collection of Am. Pictures* (1891); *Illustrations of Selected Works . . . Universal Exposition, St. Louis, 1904* (1904); *Art News*, Apr. 23, 1932; *Am. Art Annual*, 1923–24; *Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists* (1924), pub. by Mich. State Lib.; *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 17, 1932.] W. H. D.

PALMER, WILLIAM ADAMS (Sept. 12, 1781–Dec. 3, 1860), lawyer, farmer, and politician, was born at Hebron, Conn., the fourth son in the family of eight children of Stephen and Susannah (Sawyer) Palmer. He was descended from Walter Palmer who settled in Stonington, Conn., in 1653. According to tradition an accident to one hand in his youth unfitted him for farm work and turned him toward a professional career. After a public-school education he entered a law office in Hebron, continuing his studies later at Chelsea, Vt. Admitted to the bar in 1802, he practised law during the next few years in one Vermont village after another. He was living in St. Johnsbury when in 1807 he was elected judge of probate for Caledonia County. To perform the duties of this office he moved to the county seat at Danville where he lived on a farm for the rest of his life except for absences on judicial or political service. While serving as probate judge (1807–08, 1811–17) he was also clerk of his county court from 1807 to 1815. In 1811–12, as well as in 1818, 1825–26, and 1829, he was a member of the

lower house of the state legislature. In the meantime he sat for one year (1816) as a justice of the supreme court of the state. He became a leader in the Democratic party. In October 1818 he was elected to fill the vacancy in the United States Senate caused by the resignation of James Fisk, 1763–1844 [*q.v.*], and at the same time was elected for the full term beginning in 1819. At Washington he acquired a temporary unpopularity among Vermonters by voting for the admission in 1819 of Missouri with her pro-slavery constitution. He disclaimed any friendship for slavery but insisted stanchly upon the maintenance of state rights.

Palmer was serving in his state legislature when the anti-Masonic storm broke. He needed no new political stalking horse; he joined the growing movement from conviction, for his democratic sentiments had always clashed with secret societies. As the anti-Masonic candidate he therefore stood for the governorship in 1830. In a three-cornered contest he ran second in the popular vote, his Masonic rival winning when the election was thrown into the legislature. The same legislature refused him election to the United States Senate that year (1830). For the next two years as the anti-Masonic candidate, he was elected by the legislature to the governorship; in 1833 he won by popular vote; in 1834 again by legislative action. In 1835 even the legislature failed after sixty-three attempts to elect a governor. Palmer was forced to retire while his running mate, the lieutenant-governor, carried on the state administration. When in 1836 the Whig element won control of the anti-Masonic councils, Palmer consented to become the candidate of the Democratic bolters. He was defeated but was elected in that year and in 1837 to the state Senate. His retirement the following year ended his political career save for service in the constitutional convention of 1850.

In spite of the bitterness of party passions at the time Palmer appears to have commanded the respect of his opponents. His opposition to the Masonic organization was prompted by an honest and sincere conviction rather than by a desire for political preferment. His appointments while governor showed no discrimination against the Masons for he detested the spoils system. His long public career proved him, if not a brilliant man, at least able, honest, and courageous. In private life his simplicity and his generosity won the devoted affection of his neighbors. He had married in September 1813 Sarah Blanchard of Danville. They had seven children of whom five sons grew to maturity.

[J. G. Ullery, *Men of Vt.* (1894); J. M. Comstock, *A List of . . . Civil Officers of Vt. from 1777 to 1918* (1918); A. M. Hemenway, *The Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, vol. I (1868); *Records of the Gov. and Council of the State of Vt.*, vol. VIII (1880); E. W. Leavitt, *Palmer Groups: John Melvin of Charlestown and Concord, Mass., and his Descendants* (1901–05); R. A. Wheeler, *Hist. of the Town of Stonington, County of New London, Conn.* (1900); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).]

P. D. E.

PALMER, WILLIAM HENRY (*c.* 1830–Nov. 28, 1878), entertainer, known on the stage as Robert Heller, was born in England. His father was a musician and is said to have served as an organist in Canterbury Cathedral. The boy was given a thorough musical training. In 1848 he saw the French magician, Robert-Houdin, and was fascinated by his performances. When he discovered that his years of practice on the piano had given his fingers a suppleness and dexterity that assisted him in duplicating the tricks of the magician, his interest in music became secondary to an interest in stage magic. Two of the greatest magicians of history played in London in the succeeding period, Compars Herrmann and John Henry Anderson. Studying the performances of these men and imitating their technique he boldly hired the Strand Theatre in London and advertised his program in 1851 or 1852. He hid his youthfulness and English blondness behind a black wig and beard that copied the appearance of Herrmann. He followed the metropolitan performances with a tour of the provinces with some success but competition was strong and he turned to America. His first New York appearance was in the basement of the Chinese Assembly Hall on Broadway near Spring Street. Later he hired the hall above and played for several months. A tour of rural New England and New York state followed.

Palmer was a poor business man and by 1855 he found himself heavily in debt. He reluctantly turned back to music for a living, played the organ for a church in Washington, D. C., and taught music. In 1855 he married Annie Maria Kieckhoefer of Washington. Three children were born to the couple but the marriage was broken in 1862. Freed from family ties Palmer returned to the stage. For a time his show was backed by an enthusiastic young man who wished to have the privilege of appearing with him. Later he hired a handsome young woman to assist him who was billed as Miss Haidee Heller. In 1864 he took as his manager Hingston, the man who had managed the tours of Artemus Ward, and from that time he was most successful. He opened a *Salle Diabolique* at 585 Broadway, New York City; later he went on tour in

the United States; and in 1867 he reported that he had taken in $22,400 in fifteen nights in San Francisco. In 1868 he played in England. On a later tour he went to Australia. In 1876 he returned to America, opening at the Globe Theatre in New York City. From the Globe he went to the Fifth Avenue Hall. In 1878 he played in Washington, Baltimore, and Philadelphia. In Philadelphia he developed pneumonia and died within two days.

After his first New York engagement Palmer abandoned the awesome wig and beard and the French accent, but he did not learn to utilize his natural charm until he came under the influence of Hingston. After his earliest performances he varied his programs by the use of puppets and piano numbers. He first offered classical music but the taste of his audiences, as well as his own prankishness, caused him to substitute comedy numbers. His most famous act in the field of magic was in "second-sight." Although the trick was not new he developed it to an unusual degree. He used both the oral and silent codes and particularly mystified his audiences by using electrical devices. Had he chosen to give his mummery a religious cast his following might have been spectacular, but his lack of seriousness kept the impressionable from believing that his performances entailed anything beyond skilful deception. Dion Boucicault considered him a comedian of the first rank.

[Sources include: Harry Houdini, *The Unmasking of Robert-Houdin* (1908), pp. 205–07; David Devant, *My Magic Life* (1931); H. R. Evans, *Hist. of Conjuring and Magic* (1928); *Conjurers' Monthly Mag.*, Dec. 15, 1906; *M.U.M.*, Aug. 1917, May 1919; *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Nov. 29, 1878; *Times* (London), Dec. 14, 1878. There are a number of Palmer's playbills in the Houdini Collection in the Lib. of Cong. The year of Palmer's birth is variously given. The exact date remains undetermined.] K. H. A.

PALMER, WILLIAM JACKSON (Sept. 18, 1836–Mar. 13, 1909), Civil War soldier and railroad executive, was born near Leipsic, Kent County, Del., of Quaker parents, John and Matilda (Jackson) Palmer. In 1842 the family moved to Philadelphia where William was sent to a private school and later to the public grammar and high school. He then worked as a rodman on the Hempfield Railroad (1853), traveled and possibly studied in England (1856), acted as secretary and treasurer of the Westmoreland Coal Company, and from then until the Civil War (1858–61) was private secretary to J. Edgar Thomson, president of the Pennsylvania Railroad. With the coming of the war Palmer followed his conscience in foregoing his Quaker principles. He organized and became captain of the 15th Pennsylvania cavalry in

Palmer

September 1861 and a year later was commissioned colonel. By the end of the war he was a brevet brigadier-general of volunteers. His record was excellent, in spite of a serious defection among his troops while he was a prisoner in 1862–63, and he was cited for conspicuous service several times, receiving in 1894 the Congressional Medal of Honor. His engagements included Antietam, Missionary Ridge, Chickamauga, the Atlanta campaign, and the final pursuit of Jefferson Davis.

After the war Palmer became treasurer of the Eastern Division of the Union Pacific Railroad, which became the Kansas Pacific in 1869 and later merged into the Union Pacific. He helped further the road's transcontinental ambitions by supervising surveys west of the Rio Grande along the 35th and 32nd parallels to the coast (W. J. Palmer, *Report of Surveys across the Continent, in 1867–'68,* 1869). He also took charge of construction between Sheridan and Denver, Colo. With the completion of the road in 1870 he left it for the new and promising Denver & Rio Grande Railroad, designed to give Denver southern and western connections. As first president of the road he prosecuted the work in spite of the depression of the seventies. A long struggle with the Santa Fé resulted in the loss of a southern outlet and the acquisition of a western route through the Royal Gorge of the Arkansas. A through line to Salt Lake City was opened in 1883. Again Palmer thought his work done; in 1883 he resigned the presidency and the next year his directorship. He found it undesirable, however, to dispose of the Denver & Rio Grande Western (the western part of the through line), for its lease in 1882 was stopped by injunction, a mile of track destroyed, and a receiver appointed. Palmer retained control through the reorganization as the Rio Grande Western in 1889, and finally sold his interest to the parent company in 1901.

Palmer was identified during the eighties with Mexican railroads. A trip through Mexico in 1872 laid the basis for the Palmer-Sullivan concession (1880), which provided monetary aid for the Mexican National Railway, of which he was president from 1881 to 1888. One main line was to run from Mexico city to Laredo, Tex., with a branch to Manzanillo, and another main line was to extend from Mexico city to El Salto. A line to El Paso was lost to the Nickerson interests, but work on the other lines was prosecuted by the Mexican National Construction Company, especially between 1880 and 1883. Active work ended by the late eighties, and a financial reorganization was necessary. Palmer

sold his Mexican National interests in the late nineties and retired from all business interests in 1901. He died at his home near Colorado Springs, in 1909. He had married, in October 1870, Mary Lincoln ("Queen") Mellen. Their three daughters survived him. Palmer was a cultured, intelligent, likable man, with wide business and philanthropic interests. He was a prime mover in the founding (1871) and development of Colorado Springs. He helped found Colorado College (1874) and was one of the first trustees. His philanthropies extended also to Hampton Institute. He was an organizer and first president of the Colorado Coal and Iron Company (1879) and laid out Bessemer, now part of Pueblo.

[See: Mary G. Slocum, ed., "Tributes to the Late Gen. Wm. J. Palmer," *Colo. Coll. Pub.*, Social Sci. Ser., vol. II, no. 2 (1909); Jeannette Turpin, ed., *Gen. Wm. J. Palmer* (n.d.); W. F. Stone, ed., *Hist. of Colo.*, vol. III (1918); Frank Hall, *Hist. of the State of Colo.*, vol. III (1891); *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; J. C. Smiley, *Semi-Centennial Hist. of the State of Colo.* (2 vols., 1913); H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Nev., Colo., and Wyo., 1540–1888* (1890); I. H. Clothier, ed., *Letters, 1853–68, Gen. Wm. J. Palmer* (1906); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; "The General's Story," in *Harper's New Monthly Mag.*, June 1867; *Southern Workman*, July 1929; *Letter of John D. Parry, President of the Union Pacific Railway (Eastern Division)* (1868); *Rocky Mountain News* (Denver), Mar. 14, 1909.] R. E. R.

PALMORE, WILLIAM BEVERLY (Feb. 24, 1844–July 5, 1914), clergyman of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, editor, was born in Fayette County, Tenn., the son of William Pledge and Elizabeth Ann (Hobson) Palmore. When William was only six weeks old his father died, and the boy's early years were a struggle with poverty, suffering, and heartache. When he was fourteen his mother, hoping to improve their living conditions, moved the family to a farm near Malta Bend in Saline County, Mo. William's educational advantages were only such as the simple country schools of Missouri offered. When he was seventeen years of age he joined the Confederate army, serving under General Marmaduke until his surrender at Shreveport, La., in 1865. During much of his service he was standard bearer, but though he was exposed to the enemy's fire constantly, he came through the war without wounds or injuries. Upon being mustered out, he returned to Missouri and entered into business at Waverly, a few miles from the farm at Malta Bend. Here he was converted, joined the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and began to teach in the Sunday school. This experience, coupled with his early religious training, convinced him that he ought to give his life to the ministry. Knowing that he must educate himself for the work, he went in the early seventies to Nashville, Tenn., and entered the new Vanderbilt University. Returning to Missouri upon the completion of his theological education, he was admitted to the Southwest Missouri Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and after being licensed to preach, served churches in Kansas City, Springfield, Independence, Marshall, Jefferson City, and the Boonville District.

In 1890 he purchased the *St. Louis Christian Advocate* and became the editor and manager. Successful in the pastorate, he was even more successful as an editor, becoming recognized as one of the leaders of his denomination. He was a member of the Ecumenical Methodist Conferences at Washington (1891) and London (1901) and was a member of four General Conferences of his church. In 1908 he was nominated for vice-president of the United States on the Prohibition ticket, but declined to be a candidate. He was for some time president of the board of Central College for Women, Lexington, Mo. He traveled widely, going to every section of the world and bringing back interesting accounts of his experiences. Lands in West Virginia which he inherited, though poor and infertile from the point of view of agriculture, turned out to be rich in coal. This wealth he used for the advancement of his church, establishing the Palmore Institute at Kobe, Japan, and the Collegio Palmore at Chihuahua, Mexico. In addition, he aided many individual boys and girls in securing education. He never married, and when he died, in Richmond, Va., at the home of a niece, he left to the church all the property he possessed.

[*Central Christian Advocate* (Kansas City, Mo.), July 15, 1914; *Christian Advocate* (Nashville), July 10, Aug. 28, 1914; *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; M. L. Gray, *The Centennial Vol. of Methodism, Meth. Episc. Ch. South* (1907); *Times-Dispatch* (Richmond, Va.), July 6, 1914; *N. Y. Times*, July 6, 1914.] I. L. H.

PALÓU, FRANCISCO (*c.* 1722–*c.* 1789), Franciscan missionary and historian in Mexico and California, was born in Mallorca, entered the monastery of San Francisco at Palma, and in the Lullian University there in 1740 became a pupil of the famous Junípero Serra [*q.v.*]. Palóu studied and taught at Palma till 1749, when he accompanied Serra to Mexico. After living for five months at the College of San Fernando, the two went in 1750 to serve as missionaries in the Sierra Gorda, northeast of Querétaro. Here, at Jalpan, they spent nine years, Serra as president and Palóu as his companion. At the end of this time they were assigned to the

mission of San Sabá, in Texas. But the plans were changed, Serra returned to Mexico city, Palóu succeeded him as president for a year, and then followed him to the capital, where he worked for seven years. In 1767, when the Jesuits were expelled from Baja California, Serra was head and Palóu a member of the band of Franciscans who replaced them. Leaving the capital in July, they crossed Mexico to the Gulf, and on Apr. 1, 1768, reached Loreto, the capital of California.

For a year Palóu was missionary at San Xavier. When in 1769 Serra went to Alta California with the Portolá expedition, Palóu succeeded him as president in the Peninsula. Four years he held this office, showing great energy both in spiritual administration and in raising and sending supplies to San Diego and Monterey. Meanwhile the Franciscans were replaced in the Peninsula by Dominicans, and Palóu successfully supervised the transfer. This task finished, in May 1773 he started north for San Diego. On the way he set up a cross marking the boundary between Upper and Lower California, at a point which helped fix the boundary between Mexico and the United States seventy-five years later. When he reached Monterey (November 1773), Serra was absent in Mexico and Palóu served as acting president till his return. The next year he explored the San Francisco peninsula, and in 1776 he founded the mission of San Francisco (Dolores), which still stands in the heart of the city of San Francisco. For nine years he was head of this mission and the leading figure in the community. In 1784 Serra called him to Monterey (Carmel) and ordered him to go to Mexico on an urgent errand, but just as he was about to sail, Serra suddenly died and Palóu a third time succeeded him as president. In the next year he became president of the College of San Fernando, in Mexico, where he died about 1789.

Palóu is best known for his writings. His letters and reports are voluminous. While in California he compiled his monumental chronicle of the Franciscans in Old and New California, still the best authority on the subject. After Serra's death Palóu wrote at San Francisco his more widely known *Relación Historica de la Vida y Apostólicas Tareas del Venerable Padre Fray Junípero Serra* (Mexico, 1787), on which Serra's fame has chiefly rested till recent times.

[Palóu's life of Serra, translated by C. S. Williams and G. W. James, is published as *Francisco Palóu's Life and Apostolic Labors of the Venerable Father Junípero Serra* (1913); his chronicle of California was first printed in *Documentos para la Historia de Mexico*, 4 ser. VI–VII (1857), reprinted as *Noticias de la Nueva California* (4 vols., 1874), ed. by James T. Doyle, and translated in H. E. Bolton, *Historical Memoirs of New California by Fray Francisco Palóu, O. F. M.* (4 vols., 1926). For biographical accounts of Palóu, see H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.*, vol. I (1884); C. A. Engelhardt (Fr. Zephyrin), *The Missions and Missionaries of Cal.* (4 vols., 1908–15), and *San Francisco, or Mission Dolores* (1924); H. E. Bolton, *Palóu and His Writings* (1926) and *Anza's California Expeditions* (5 vols., 1930).]

H. E. B.

PAMMEL, LOUIS HERMANN (Apr. 19, 1862–Mar. 23, 1931), botanist and conservationist, the son of Louis C. and Sophie (Freise) Pammel, natives of Germany, was born in LaCrosse, Wis., and died on board a transcontinental train in eastern Nevada. When a young lad he moved with his parents to a farm near LaCrosse, where he lived in a log house and attended a country school. Later he entered a business college and took private lessons in mathematics, the languages, and other subjects, preparatory to entering the University of Wisconsin, which he did in 1881, graduating in an agricultural course four years later.

Deciding to study medicine, he entered Hahnemann Medical College, Chicago, in October 1885, but in December following went to Cambridge, Mass., to become private assistant to Prof. William Gilson Farlow [*q.v.*]. There he remained until September 1886, when he went to St. Louis, Mo., to become assistant to Dr. William Trelease in the Shaw School of Botany, Washington University. In February 1889, in which year he received the degree of M.S. from his alma mater, he moved from St. Louis to Ames, Iowa, to become head of the department of botany of the Iowa State College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts, a position which he held for forty years. In 1898 Washington University, St. Louis, awarded him the doctorate of philosophy.

During the summer of 1888 and 1889 he did special work on the cotton root rot at the Texas Experiment Station, and at various times he served on special commissions for the United States Department of Agriculture and the Iowa Geological Survey. He also was botanist for the Experiment Station at Ames. From his youth he was intensely interested in all forms of plant life, and the herbarium of Iowa State College contains many thousands of specimens collected by him on his numerous vacation trips. As a conservationist he embraced every opportunity to increase public sentiment in favor of wild life preservation and of establishing Iowa's extensive system of state parks, one of which, in Madison County, was in 1930 renamed Pammel State Park in his honor.

As an author his larger works were *The Grasses of Iowa* (2 vols., 1901); *Ecology* (1903); *A Manual of Poisonous Plants* (1910); *Weeds of the Farm and Garden* (1911); *The Weed Flora of Iowa* (1913; revised 1926); "Prominent Men I Have Met," a series of articles published in the *Ames Daily Tribune* over a number of years and reprinted in several pamphlets; and *Honey Plants of Iowa* (1930), with Charlotte M. King. He also wrote numerous Park and Experiment Station bulletins, and a great number of papers published in the proceedings of learned societies, scientific journals, and the daily press. A set—almost complete—of his books and papers, specially bound, fills about six feet of shelf space in the Iowa State College Library. In his later years he gave many talks and lectures on weeds and conservation, also travelogues illustrated with lantern slides.

He was married in Chicago, June 29, 1888, to Augusta Emmel, and to them were born five daughters and one son. In politics he was in early life a Democrat, but later a Republican, and in religion a member of the Episcopal Church, in which he was a lay reader. He was a member of numerous scientific societies, was president of the Iowa State Board of Conservation (1918–27) and was secretary general (1911–23) and president general (1923–27) of Phi Kappa Phi.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Am. Men of Science* (4th ed., 1927); F. C. Pellett, in *Am. Bee Journal*, May 1931; *Des Moines Register*, Mar. 24, 1931; autobiographical notes left with the Department of Botany, Iowa State College.] R. I. C.

PANCOAST, JOSEPH (Nov. 23, 1805–Mar. 7, 1882), anatomist and surgeon, was born near Burlington, N. J., the son of John and Ann (Abbott) Pancoast. His family was English, and had come to America with William Penn. He received his medical education at the University of Pennsylvania, from which he was graduated M.D. in 1828, and began to practise in Philadelphia, specializing in surgery. There was at that time an organization known as the Philadelphia Association for Medical Instruction—a kind of quizzing body—composed of young men of promise, many of whom became distinguished in later life, and with it Pancoast was identified for a short time. Later (1831) he was appointed to conduct the Philadelphia School of Anatomy, founded in 1820 by Dr. Jason Valentine O'Brien Lawrence. In 1835 he was elected physician to the Philadelphia Hospital (Blockley) and in 1838 was made visiting surgeon to the same institution, retaining the connection until 1845. In

Pancoast

1838, also, he retired from the School of Anatomy and succeeded Dr. George McClellan [*q.v.*] in the chair of surgery in the Jefferson Medical College. In 1841 he was transferred from the chair of surgery to that of anatomy, which he held until 1874, when he resigned. Thus for thirty-six years he filled one or another of the most important chairs in the Jefferson Medical College. In 1854 he was elected to the staff of the Pennsylvania Hospital, resigning in 1864.

Among his principal achievements in surgery were an operation for the remediation of exstrophy of the bladder by plastic abdominal flaps with which to replace the missing anterior vesical wall; an operation for soft and mixed cataracts by passing a hook through the front part of the vitreous humor between the margin of the dilated iris and lens without touching the ciliary body, the soft part of the lens being deeply cut and the hardened nucleus withdrawn by a horizontal displacement along the line of entrance of the needle and the fragment being left in the outer border of the vitreous; an operation for empyema in which a semicircular flap of skin over the ribs was raised, the pleura punctured near the base of the flap, a short catheter introduced—fastened with a strong string so as to make a fistula—and then the flap turned down to serve as a valve after the removal of the catheter; an operation for the correction of occlusion of the nasal duct by puncturing the lachrymal sac and introducing a tiny hollow ivory tube that had been previously decalcified, leaving the tube *in situ* to become absorbed; a strabismus operation for the relief of bad cases in which the tendon of the oblique muscle, being surrounded by rigid connective tissue, must be drawn out with a hook before being cut.

His literary work, which was rather voluminous, began with a translation of J. F. Lobstein's *De nervi sympathetici humane fabrica et morbus* (Paris, 1823) published as *Treatise on the Structure, Function and Diseases of the Sympathetic Nerve* (1831). This was followed by his edition of P. J. Manec's *Great Sympathetic Nerves* (n.d.) and *Manec's Cerebro-Spinal Axis of Man* (n.d). He issued three editions (1839, 1843, and 1846) of Caspar Wistar and William Horner's *System of Anatomy* and contributed numerous miscellaneous papers to medical journals. His greatest achievement, however, was his own *Treatise on Operative Surgery*, of which the first edition appeared in 1844 and the third and last in 1852.

On July 2, 1829, he married Rebecca, daughter of Timothy Abbott. He died in Philadelphia, "beloved and honored by all who knew

him." A son, William Henry Pancoast, was also a physician.

[W. S. Miller in *Surgery, Gynecology and Obstetrics*, May 1930; T. H. Shastid in the *Am. Encyc. and Dict. of Ophthalmology*, vol. XII (1918); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); J. W. Crosskey, *Hist. of Blockley* (1929); S. D. Gross, *Autobiog.* (1887), vol. II; J. W. Holland, *The Jefferson Medical Coll. of Phila.* (1909); *Boston Medic. and Surgic Jour.*, Mar. 16, 1882; *Medic. News*, Mar. 18, 1882; *Phila. Medic. Times*, Mar. 25, 1882; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Mar. 8, 1882; for data concerning parents and marriage, *The Friend*, Dec. 31, 1831, and *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), July 4, 1829.] J. McF.

PANCOAST, SETH (July 28, 1823–Dec. 16, 1889), physician, anatomist, and cabalist, descended from one of the settlers who came to America with William Penn, was born in Darby, Pa., the son of Stephen Pancoast, a paper manufacturer, and Anna (Stroud) Pancoast. His preliminary education was gained probably in the local schools. The first few years of his adult life he spent in business, but when he was twenty-seven years of age, in October 1850, he began the study of medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, from which he was graduated M.D. in 1852. The next year he was made professor of anatomy in the Female Medical College of Pennsylvania (now the Woman's Medical College of Pennsylvania). At the end of his first year, however, he resigned to become professor of anatomy in the Pennsylvania Medical College (now nonexistent), in which position he continued until 1859 when he became professor emeritus. In 1855 he wrote *An Original Treatise on the Curability of Consumption by Medical Inhalation and Adjunct Remedies*; in 1858, *Onanism-Spermatorrhoea; Porneio-Kalogynomia-Pathology;* the next year *Ladies' Medical Guide and Marriage Friend* (copr. 1859; subsequent editions, 1864, 1876); and in 1873 *The Cholera: Its History, Cause, Symptoms and Treatment.*

He conducted private practice and continued to teach in the positions mentioned above for only six years; then interested himself in cabalistic literature, in which field he became a noted scholar and built up probably the largest library of books dealing with the occult sciences ever assembled upon the American continents. The ideas gleaned from his cabalistic reading curiously mingled with his medical and scientific knowledge and led to the production of a few extraordinary books. The first of these was *The Kabbala; or the True Science of Light; an Introduction to the Philosophy and Theosophy of the Ancient Sages* (1877), said to be the first book ever written in the English language that attempted to explain the "Ten Sepheroth" and give the mystical interpretation of the Holy

Scriptures as contained therein. This was followed by *Blue and Red Light: or, Light and Its Rays as Medicine; Showing that Light is the Original and Sole Source of Life, as It Is the Source of All the Physical and Vital Forces of Nature, and that Light is Nature's Own and Only Remedy for Disease, and Explaining How to Apply the Red and Blue Rays in Curing the Sick and Feeble* (1877). The title of this work is suggestive of some new and dominating therapeutic idea, but upon examination the book proves to be a cabalistic writing in which mystery, science, religion, and medicine are curiously, and to the average modern reader, incomprehensibly confused.

Pancoast was married three times: first, to Sarah Saunders Osborn; second, to Susan George Osborn; third, to Carrie Almena Fernald. His family included children by all three wives. He died in Philadelphia.

[*A Supplement to Allibone's Critical Dict. of English Lit. and British and Am. Authors* (1891), vol. II; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Dec. 17, 1889.] J. McF.

PANTON, WILLIAM (1742?–Feb. 26, 1801), Indian trader, the son of John and Barbara (Wemys) Panton, was born in Aberdeenshire, Scotland, and emigrated to Charlestown, now Charleston, S. C. His life after his emigration falls naturally into three periods. During at least a part of the first period, from about 1770 to 1775, he resided in Charlestown, obtained a South Carolina land grant, and was for several years a member of the firm of Moore & Panton of Savannah. From 1775 to 1784 he spent most of his time in East Florida, where he organized, with Thomas Forbes as his chief associate, the firm, Panton, Forbes & Company, and built up trade and influence with the Creek Indians. His consistently Loyalist attitude, which brought him into conflict with the South Carolina and Georgia Revolutionary authorities early in the Revolution, culminated in his permanent outlawry by two acts of the Georgia Provincial Congress, in 1778 and 1782, and the confiscation of his property.

In the third period, from 1784 to 1801, the most important historically, he lived mostly in West Florida. After the British evacuation of East Florida, in July 1784, it became evident that Spain needed the friendship of the southern Indians for protection against the aggressive Anglo-American backwoodsmen to the north. Convinced that a well-conducted trade offered the best way to get and hold that friendship and finding no Spanish house available, the Spanish

government temporarily allowed Panton's firm, now Panton, Leslie & Company, to continue their trade without loss of British citizenship or freedom of worship. As no Spanish house ever became available, Panton, Leslie & Company and their successors kept up the Indian trade and allied activities until the close of the Spanish régime. At its greatest extent the business comprised the trade of the Creek, Choctaw, Chickasaw, and Cherokee Indians, conducted by Panton at the Pensacola headquarters through a chain of branches, agencies, and trading posts ranging from Havana and Nassau to New Orleans and from Mobile to the Chickasaw Bluffs, with a "concern" in London to furnish trade goods and to market the peltries and other commodities received from the Indians. He claimed a monopoly under his royal grants; for only a part of the time, however, was he able to make good his claim. To the difficulties common to mercantile undertakings of the time and those that weighed even more heavily in the affairs of the firm after its reorganization by John Forbes, 1769–1823 [*q.v.*], was added the competition of the American trade made possible by the liberal Indian trade policy of the United States, which in Panton's later years almost drove the firm into bankruptcy. None the less, he was able, in spite of his heavy losses in Georgia and in the Florida Indian trade, to keep the business going and to leave his family and friends more than £10,000. He was able, moreover, for the most part to hold his own in the face of international complications.

Seriously ill, he sailed for Havana on the advice of his physician in January 1801. Because of the war then in progress between Great Britain and Spain he, as a British subject, was denied admittance in spite of his passport from the Spanish commandant of Pensacola. Continuing his voyage to Nassau he broke under the strain, died at sea, and was buried at Great Harbours, Berry Islands. Record and tradition agree in ascribing to him a strong personality and an important rôle in American history. He was exceptional in business ability and resourcefulness, hot-tempered and insistent upon his own rights yet diplomatic, careful in money matters yet generous, and loyal to friends and principle. Never married, he showed a fatherly interest in his young relatives and business associates. He influenced, perhaps more than any other one man, the course of Spanish-Indian frontier relations in the Old Southwest in the last years of the eighteenth century.

[Papers in Public Record Office, London, in Lib. of Cong., and privately owned in New Orleans and Washington; *Am. State Papers: Indian Affairs*, vols. I, II (1832–34), *Public Lands*, vols. III–V (1834–60); W. H. Siebert, *Loyalists in East Fla.* (1929), vol. II; *Revolutionary Records of Ga.*, vol. I (1908), ed. by A. D. Candler, pp. 90, 146, 216, 330, 378; *S. C. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. III (1859), pp. 216, 219; A. P. Whitaker, *Documents Relating to the Commercial Policy of Spain in the Floridas* (1931) and *The Spanish-American Frontier* (1927); Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists in the Am. Revolution* (1864), vol. II; C. F. Jenkins, *Button Gwinnett* (1926); P. J. Hamilton, *Colonial Mobile* (1897); R. L. Campbell, *Hist. Sketches of Colonial Fla.* (1892); C. M. Brevard, *A Hist. of Fla.*, vol. I (1924); A. J. Pickett, *Hist. of Ala.*, 2 vols. (1851); J. F. H. Claiborne, *Mississippi* (1880); date and circumstances of death from Papeles de Cuba, legajo 203, Archivo de Indias, Sevilla, photostatic copy in Lib. of Cong., numbered within the legajo as 67, and also from transcript of letter in possession of Mrs. Marie Taylor Greenslade, Washington, D. C., who also furnished other information.] E. H. W.

PARDEE, ARIO (Nov. 19, 1810–Mar. 26, 1892), engineer, coal operator, philanthropist, son of Ariovistus Pardee and Eliza (Platt), was born at Chatham, N. Y. The family genealogy (D. L. Jacobus, *post*) gives his name as Ariovistus, but elsewhere it appears as Ario. The Pardees, according to the family tradition, were of Huguenot extraction, but they had lived in England for at least two generations before George Pardee emigrated to New Haven about 1644. Soon after Ario's birth his father moved to a farm in Stephentown, Rensselaer County, N. Y., where the boy grew up. He attended the district school until he reached the age of fifteen, and thereafter continued to study at home under the direction of Rev. Moses Hunter.

In 1830 he began training as an engineer by becoming a rodman for the surveyors who were locating the Delaware & Raritan Canal in New Jersey. He continued work with the engineers in charge of constructing the canal until 1832, when he went with the chief engineer to locate the Beaver Meadow Railroad connecting the coal mines at Beaver Meadow, Pa., with the Lehigh Canal at Mauch Chunk. His employers soon recognized his ability by placing him in charge of the construction of this road. In 1836 the Hazleton Railroad & Coal Company was organized to exploit the rich vein of anthracite at the present Hazleton. An outlet was needed and Pardee was employed as chief engineer to build a railroad from these mines to the Beaver Meadow road. After its completion he continued as chief engineer of the company.

Resigning in 1840, he began business as an independent coal operator, founding the firm of Pardee, Miner & Company, later known as A. Pardee & Company, which in time became the largest shipper of anthracite coal in the state. As the business grew, Pardee extended his in-

terests until they included mines in various anthracite and bituminous fields, locomotive and car works at Hazleton, iron works at Allentown, in New York state, and in Virginia, and lumber holdings in Pennsylvania, West Virginia, the Carolinas, and in Canada. He also became a director of the Lehigh Valley and other railroads. He first became interested in Lafayette College, Easton, Pa., in 1864. This institution was in financial difficulties, and in 1863 the trustees commissioned the newly elected president, William C. Cattell [*q.v.*], to raise $30,000 in a year as the price of saving the college. After eleven months, having raised only a third of that sum, he preached at Hazleton in the Presbyterian church which Pardee attended, and was the rich man's guest. After hearing of the college's financial embarrassments, Pardee said to Cattell: "Why don't you throw it up if it doesn't pay? That's what we do when we strike a vein of coal that doesn't pay us to work." Cattell then ventured to explain his views of the difference between education and coal mining, and asked Pardee for $20,000. To his amazement, Pardee promptly wrote his note for that amount—said to have been the largest single gift from an individual to an educational institution that had then been made in Pennsylvania. The capitalist, now interested, followed up his investment with larger gifts. As an engineer and businessman he was most interested in the practical type of education. He endowed the "Pardee Scientific Course" in 1866, and in 1871 he offered to erect and equip a building to house it, his total gifts amounting to more than half a million dollars. In 1865 he became a trustee and from 1882 to his death he was president of the board. In this capacity he was noted for his business-like application to the affairs of the institution, for his regular attendance at commencements, for his quiet modesty, and for his consistent refusal to make a long speech on any public occasion. He was reputed to have bestowed many charities so quietly that they were known only to the recipients. In Hazleton he was known as "the silent man"—a familiar but elusive figure, engaged in grand and far-flung business schemes, driving quietly and persistently toward his objectives, and disclosing little of his purposes or personality to any but a few close friends—a little group of financial magnates—and perhaps to President Cattell. He was a presidential elector in 1876, and chairman of the board of commissioners for the second Pennsylvania Geological Survey. He was married in 1838 to Elizabeth Jacobs of Butler Valley, who died in 1847, and on Aug. 29, 1848, to Anna Maria Robison

of Bloomsburg. He died suddenly at Ormond, Fla., survived by ten of his fourteen children.

[D. L. Jacobus, *The Pardee Genealogy* (1927); W. C. Cattell, *Memorial Address Delivered at Lafayette Coll. . . .* (1892); H. C. Bradsby, *Hist. of Luzerne County, Pa., with Biog. Selections* (1893); W. H. Egle, *An Illustrated Hist. of the Commonwealth of Pa.* (1877); M. S. Henry, *Hist. of the Lehigh Valley* (1860); D. B. Skillman, *The Biog. of a Coll. Being the Hist. of the First Century of the Life of Lafayette Coll.* (2 vols., 1932); *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Mar. 28, 1892.]

D. L. M.

PARDEE, DON ALBERT (Mar. 29, 1837–Sept. 26, 1919), Union soldier, Southern jurist, was born in Wadsworth, Medina County, Ohio. His parents were Aaron Pardee, a native of that part of Marcellus which became Skaneateles, N. Y., and Eveline (Eyles) Pardee, of Kent, Litchfield County, Conn. The boy attended the public schools of Medina County, Ohio, and the United States Naval Academy (1854–57) at Annapolis. Resigning before graduation he entered upon the study of law in his father's office at Wadsworth, Ohio, and was there admitted to the bar of Ohio in 1859. He was married, Feb. 3, 1861, to Julia E. Hard, of Wadsworth, who died some years later. He practised law in his native county from 1859 to 1861, when he volunteered in the 42nd Ohio Volunteers. He was commissioned major on Oct. 27, 1861. In 1862 his regiment was transferred to the Army of the Mississippi, where he won distinction at Vicksburg and Port Gibson. In 1863 he was made provost-marshal of Baton Rouge. He remained with his original unit until it was mustered out in Arkansas late in 1864, and in March 1865 he was brevetted brigadier-general.

In January 1865 Pardee moved to New Orleans to practise law. His success was immediate. In 1867 he was made register in bankruptcy and in 1868 he was elected judge of the second judicial district of Louisiana, which embraced the parishes of Jefferson, St. Bernard, and Plaquemines. He held this judgeship for twelve years, being reëlected in 1872 and 1876. He was a delegate in 1879 to the Louisiana constitutional convention, and was Republican candidate for attorney-general of Louisiana in 1880. On May 3, 1881, President Garfield, under whom he had served in the war, appointed him United States circuit judge of the fifth circuit, and from 1891, when the circuit courts of appeals were created, until his death in 1919, he was senior judge of the circuit court of appeals for the fifth circuit. He removed to Atlanta in 1898 and maintained his residence there for the remainder of his life, spending a good part of each winter in New Orleans and a few weeks each summer on his farm in Medina County, Ohio. On June

14, 1898, he was married to Frances (Cunningham) Wells of Atlanta.

Pardee was tall and of massive proportions. He enjoyed riding and presented a striking figure on horseback. He was an expert at chess and a constant reader. Although always dignified and outwardly austere he gave to a few intimate associates a warm friendship. Many anecdotes survive to illustrate his kindly sympathy, his subtle sense of humor, his modest dislike of the limelight. On one occasion he refused to see a pistol fall to the floor of the courtroom from the pocket of a lawyer addressing the court. The attorney, hitherto hostile to the Judge, was completely won over by the incident.

It is remarkable how quickly Pardee overcame the handicaps attendant upon his going to live in the South at the close of the war. That he was no Carpet-bagger was immediately apparent, and he quickly won the respect of his late enemies as he practised his profession in their midst. Within three years he was elected judge of an important state court, retaining that position for three terms, then for thirty-eight years he graced the bench of the federal circuit court, achieving distinction as an admiralty judge and as a fair and able judicial administrator of railroads. A Union army officer become Southern jurist, he was able, courageous, and just, a stanch Republican who believed in the results of the war as written into the Constitution, and yet so understanding conditions in the South as to be able to give no offense. After his death his wife discovered in his billfold a small piece of paper on which he had written that the thing he prized most highly, in the long span of his judicial career, was the fact that he had never in all those years had to rebuke or punish an attorney for contempt.

[Sources include: *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; "Memorial of Don A. Pardee," *Report of the Thirty-Seventh Ann. Session of the Ga. Bar Asso.*, 1920; A. D. Candler and C. A. Evans, *Georgia* (1906), vol. III; D. L. Jacobus, *The Pardee Geneal.* (1927); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; the *Atlanta Jour.*, Sept. 26, 1919; a manuscript biography of Pardee by his associate, the Hon. A. G. Brice; and supplementary information from the Hon. Rufus E. Foster, New Orleans, La.; the Rev. C. B. Wilmer, Atlanta, Ga.; the Hon. John M. Slaton; and Mrs. Frances C. Pardee.] P. E. B.

PARDOW, WILLIAM O'BRIEN (June 13, 1847–Jan. 23, 1909), Jesuit provincial, educator, and preacher, son of Robert and Augusta Garnett (O'Brien) Pardow, was born in New York City. His paternal grandfather, George Pardow, was of an old Lancashire family and came to New York in 1772, where he married Elizabeth Seton, and later, with William Denman, published *The Truth Teller*. His maternal grandfather was William O'Brien, an heir of the Earl of Inchiquin, who as a United Irishman was forced into exile, and coming to New York in 1800 established a successful banking business with his brother John. As good Irish rebels, the O'Briens refused the New York agency of the Bank of England, thus sacrificing financial reward for an impractical ideal. On both sides, there was a deep Catholic tradition which persecution had enlivened.

Trained in a home of refinement, William was educated in St. Peter's school and in the College of St. Francis Xavier, New York, from which he was graduated in 1864 with the expectation of entering the banking house. Refused as a volunteer on account of his youth, he sorrowfully faced separation from his brother, Robert, who joined a New York regiment and who, incidentally, on the death of his wife joined the Society of Jesus, which he served loyally until his death in 1884 from a contagious disease contracted while attending a hospital on Blackwell's Island. William was inspired with a longing for a religious life and finally made up his mind to become a Jesuit. Two sisters, later known as Mother Augusta and Mother Pauline, soon took vows as nuns of the Society of the Sacred Heart, in which they became mothers superior in Manhattanville and Philadelphia. A novice at Sault-au-Recollet, near Montreal, in 1865, William was influenced permanently by his militant master, James Perron, S. J., an aristocrat and ex-officer of the French army. On Sept. 1, 1866, he entered the juniorate in Quebec, from which he was advanced to Fordham, N. Y., for philosophy, and to Woodstock, Md., for theology (1869–71). In the latter year he was assigned as a teacher of Latin and Greek at the College of St. Francis Xavier, New York, prior to a four years' course in theology at Laval, France, where, in the meantime, he was ordained a priest (Sept. 9, 1877). As a result of the law excluding Jesuits from France, his tertianship at Paray-le-Monial was interrupted when the retreat-villa was seized at the point of the bayonet.

Recalled to the United States, he became in 1880 professor at the college of St. Francis Xavier, socius to the provincial (1884), instructor of tertians at Frederick, Md. (1888), and rector of St. Francis Xavier's (1891). In 1893 he was awarded the provincialship of the New York-Maryland province, in which position he served until 1897. Under his administration the spiritual care of Catholics in Jamaica was transferred from England to the United States. Becoming again a humble member of the Society,

he was a teacher at Gonzaga College, Washington (1897–1901), pastor of St. Ignatius Church, New York (1901–03), master of tertians at St. Andrew-on-the-Hudson (1903–06). In the latter year he was a delegate to a general congregation in Rome for the election of the general of the order and associated with the Church of Gesù in Philadelphia. In 1907 he became pastor of the Church of St. Ignatius, New York. His request for missionary service in China (1900) and his offer to go to Tokio when the Jesuits opened their Japanese University did not meet with the approval of superiors.

Pardow was widely known from coast to coast as a preacher of fiery eloquence, clear diction, and magnetic presence, despite a frail, undersized body. Constant appeals came to him to preach in numerous cities, to give retreats for religious and diocesan priests, to deliver missions to non-Catholics, and to explain the church's attitude on marriage, education, divorce, and authority. Ill, but struggling on to complete a mission, he fell a victim to pneumonia and was buried in the characteristic pine box—a final lesson in humility to the crowds who viewed his remains and attended his requiem mass. In 1916, appeared *Searchlights of Eternity*, compiled from notes which he left.

[Justine Ward, *William Pardow of the Company of Jesus* (1914, 1915); *Records Am. Cath. Hist. Soc.*, Mar. 1915; *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 24, 27, 1909.] R. J. P.

PARIS, WALTER (Feb. 28, 1842–Nov. 26, 1906), painter, was born in London, England, and studied in the Royal Academy there, and under T. L. Robotham, Paul Naftel, and Joseph Nash. From about 1866 to 1870 he was an architect in the service of the British government in India. About 1872 he came to the United States and in 1894 became a naturalized citizen. He was known in this country as a painter of water colors rather than as an architect, and as an amateur violinist. For the first few years after arrival in America he lived in New York, occupying a studio in Union Square, then made his home in Washington, D. C., for the rest of his life. It was in his New York studio that the famous Tile Club was organized. This club, picturesquely described by F. Hopkinson Smith in his novel, *The Fortunes of Oliver Horn* (1902), was fashioned after artist clubs in Germany and Austria and numbered among its members such men of later fame as Edwin A. Abbey, Frank D. Millet, Augustus Saint-Gaudens, Elihu Vedder, and Alden Weir.

Walter Paris was a large man, broad-shouldered, well-built, and wore moustache and full

beard squarely cut. He had a dignity which verged on pomposity and was slow and heavy in movement and speech, the latter distinctly British in accent. But his paintings were exquisitely dainty, and although he prided himself on his breadth of style, his work was done painstakingly with minute attention to detail. His subjects to a great extent were rural English scenes painted, doubtless, from his own early sketches and memory, showing picturesque thatched cottages with flowery dooryards or well-kept kitchen gardens, blossoming hedgerows, and neat roadways. Possibly because of popular demand, he painted these over and over again. A notable exception, however, was a picture painted in gouache (which he seldom used) of the great blizzard of 1899, showing the State, War, and Navy Department Building on Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington, in a whirl of snow—a very difficult theme, most skilfully rendered. This painting is now in the permanent collection of the Corcoran Gallery of Art, which also owns Walter Paris' picture of Marcia Burns's cottage, an historical Washington landmark. Perhaps his most important work, however, was a series of flower studies in water color made from nature as aids to design. These were painted with the accuracy of the scientist and the skill and perception of the trained artist.

Walter Paris played on the violin with taste and intelligence, evidencing thorough training and sensitiveness of feeling, the latter again contradicting the impression given by his stiff manner. Of his own work and attainments he held high opinion, not infrequently frankly expressed, and he was intolerant of criticism, but this characteristic also may have been only the armor worn to protect a supersensitive nature. On moving to Washington he purchased land and built an imposing house as a future home, but he did not marry, and the house—never occupied—was eventually sold. He was a member of the Washington Water Color Club and other professional organizations, and exhibited regularly, but he always held himself somewhat aloof from his professional colleagues. He died Nov. 26, 1906, in a hospital in Washington, as the result of a stroke which occurred ten days earlier.

[*Am. Art Annual*, 1907–08; *Am. Art News*, Dec. 1, 1906; Ulrich Thieme and Felix Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler*, vol. XXVI (1932); K. M. Roof, *The Life and Art of William Merritt Chase* (1917); *Evening Star* (Washington), Nov. 26, 1906; catalogues of the annual exhibitions of the Washington Water Color Club; personal acquaintance.] L. M.

PARISH, ELIJAH (Nov. 7, 1762–Oct. 15, 1825), Congregational clergyman, author, was

born in Lebanon, Conn., the son of Elijah and Eunice (Foster) Parish, his mother being descended from the Standish family. He prepared for college at Plainfield Academy and entered Dartmouth with the class of 1785, graduating with high honors. Three years later, perhaps upon his return to Hanover for his master of arts degree, he was admitted to the newly organized chapter of Phi Beta Kappa. Having chosen the ministry as a profession, he studied theology under the Rev. Ephraim Judson of Taunton, Mass. On Dec. 20, 1787, he was installed as pastor of the Congregational church at Byfield, Mass., where he remained until his death.

In his theological views Parish was Hopkinsian and therefore of the strictest Congregational orthodoxy. As a pastor, he was unusually successful and at his death there was not a more united parish in the state. Indeed, he appears to have quite dominated the life of his people, for "it is in no respect an exaggeration to say that any opinion expressed in opposition to their pastor, political, religious, or regarding measures of policy, would have had little chance of finding favour among his people" (Sprague, *post*, II, 270). His preaching had vividness and power. His conversational gifts were also exceptional, and he was noted for his quickness in repartee. In person he was somewhat below middle stature, of a piercing eye, and rapid in his motions. In addition to his parish concerns, he took a warm interest in the political affairs of the country, and, like most of the New England clergy, was a Federalist. Asked to preach the annual election sermon of 1810 before the legislature, he attacked the national administration so acrimoniously that the legislature, gravely offended, refused him the usual compliment of requesting a copy of the sermon for publication. It was published, however, by subscription and widely read (*A Sermon, Preached at Boston, Before his Excellency Christopher Gore . . .* May 30, 1810). Equally vigorous were his published sermons denouncing the War of 1812. In later years, however, his interest in politics waned, and he finally remarked to a friend that "Politics is like the variolus contagion, no man catches it a second time" (*Sermons, post*, p. ix). Eighteen of his sermons and three occasional addresses were published. He also assisted the Rev. Jedidiah Morse [*q.v.*] in his geographical and historical works, publishing in collaboration, *A New Gazetteer of the Eastern Continent* (1802) and *A Compendious History of New England* (1804). In 1810 he published his own *New System of Modern Geography* for schools, and three years later, *Sacred Geography; or, A Gazetteer of the Bible.* He

also wrote, with the Rev. David McClure, *Memoirs of the Rev. Eleazar Wheelock, D.D., Founder and President of Dartmouth College and Moor's Charity School* (1811). A posthumous volume of his sermons with a brief sketch of his life appeared in 1826. On Nov. 7, 1796, he married Mary Hale, daughter of Deacon Joseph Hale of Byfield; they had five children.

[The best sketch of Parish is in *Sermons, Practical and Doctrinal, By the Late Elijah Parish, D.D. With a Biographical Sketch of the Author* (1826); see also Roswell Parish, Jr., "John Parish of Groton, Mass., and Some of His Descendants," in *New England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1909; W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. II (1857); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth College* (1867); *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Oct. 21, 1825.] W. R. W.

PARK, EDWARDS AMASA (Dec. 29, 1808–June 4, 1900), theologian, a descendant of Richard Parke who came to America on the *Defence*, in 1635, was the son of Calvin and Abigail (Ware) Park. He was born in Providence, R. I., and brought up in a home of refinement; his father was a professor in Brown University, his mother, distinguished for her character and culture. His education began early at home; he loved sports, was full of vigor, much given to mischief, and blessed with wit and humor. Growing up under strong religious influence, he reached maturity without the customary conversion crisis, though inclined to gloomy thought. He entered Brown University before he was fourteen years of age, the youngest member of his class; ranked high as a scholar; was assigned the Valedictory Oration, which, however, he declined; and was graduated in 1826. He then taught in the classical schools of Braintree and Weymouth Landing. He was undecided for a time as to his profession; once thought he would be a physician, then was inclined to study law, but finally chose the Christian ministry. In 1828 he entered Andover Theological Seminary, where he distinguished himself as a student and was graduated in 1831. His services were sought by Bangor Theological Seminary and by Congregational churches in Boston and Lowell, Mass., but he declined these offers and became pastor of the Braintree church, being ordained Dec. 21, 1831. As minister he studied hard, preached thoughtful and moving sermons, wrote much, mingled with his people, observed world events, and gained a marked influence.

In 1835 he became professor of mental and moral philosophy and instructor in Hebrew in Amherst College. In 1836 he was called to the Bartlet Professorship of Sacred Rhetoric in Andover Theological Seminary and in the same year, Sept. 21, married Ann Maria Edwards, a great-grand-daughter of Jonathan Edwards. As

a preacher and teacher of the art of preaching he had few peers; he ranked with the greatest preachers and orators of his time. His instruction was marked for its learning, skill, eloquence, and influence. He was himself the best example of his own teaching in respect to speaking, reading the Bible, prayers, and manner. His sermons were events in the lives of his hearers, and some became historic in the annals of the American pulpit; noteworthy examples are "Judas," "Peter's Denials of His Lord," *The Theology of the Intellect and of the Feelings* (1850), and an election sermon, *The Indebtedness of the State to the Clergy* (1851).

In 1847, he was transferred to the Abbot Chair of Christian Theology which he occupied for thirty-four years. He was in the "Hopkinsian succession" and was the last outstanding exponent and champion of the "New England Theology," the aim of which, in his own words, was "to exalt God as a Sovereign and to glorify the eternal plan on which He governs the universe." He remained an eager student, was aware of new developments of thought, familiar with the work of scholars in Germany and elsewhere—he translated and edited German theological treatises—and was cognizant of but uninfluenced by new scientific thought. He was distinguished as a teacher of theology by his power of analysis and his skill in presentation, but was more concerned to make his students convinced holders of his system than independent thinkers. He published several pamphlets and was editor and translator, with Bela Bates Edwards [*q.v.*], of *Selections from German Literature* (1839). In 1844 he became co-editor with Edwards of *Bibliotheca Sacra,* founded the year previous by Dr. Edward Robinson [*q.v.*]. He was editor in chief from 1852 until the removal of the quarterly to Oberlin in 1884, and associate editor thereafter until his death. He wrote several memoirs, including brief biographies prefixed to collected works of his colleague B. B. Edwards, of Samuel Hopkins, and of Nathaniel Emmons [*qq.v.*]. In 1859 he edited *The Atonement: Discourses and Treatises by Edwards, Smalley, Maxcy, Emmons, Griffin, Burge, and Weeks,* for which he wrote the introductory essay; in 1858 he collaborated with Austin Phelps and Lowell Mason in compiling and editing *The Sabbath Hymn Book*; in 1885 he issued his *Discourses on Some Theological Doctrines,* while after his death a *Memorial Collection of Sermons* (1902) was compiled and published by his daughter.

In 1881 he resigned his professorship. The remainder of his life he spent in Andover, laboring to perfect his system of theology and

Park

viewing with alarm the new developments in the Seminary and in the world. His mind was eclectic rather than constructive, dialectical rather than philosophical, apologetic rather than critical, defensive rather than creative, and did not range beyond the narrow confines of the "New England Theology." He lived to see his best students reject his theology and the movement of thought pass beyond him; he recognized that his system of theology upon which he had worked so hard and so long was out of date, and it was never published.

Park was an impressive figure. A former pupil, describing from memory his appearance in the decade of the forties, mentioned "his slight, tall form, his chiselled features, fine, then, as if wrought in marble, his piercing eyes, and his impressive and animating voice" (Storrs, *post*). He was a delightful companion, a great story teller, a remarkable conversationalist, friendly in his personal relations, with some strong prejudices, essentially unworldly, and almost ascetic in personal habits; his mind dwelt on high themes, and his religious life centered on God. He died at Andover in his ninety-second year and was buried in the Chapel Cemetery.

[R. S. Storrs, *Memorial Address* (1900); Alexander Mackenzie, *Memoir of Prof. E. A. Park* (1901); F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New England Theology* (1907), ch. xiii; *Who's Who in America,* 1899–1900; F. L. Mott, *Hist. of Am. Mags.* (1930); F. S. Parks, *Geneal. of the Parke Families of Mass.* (1909); W. H. Edwards, *Timothy and Rhoda Ogden Edwards of Stockbridge, Mass., and Their Descendants* (1903).]

D. E.

PARK, JAMES (Jan. 11, 1820–Apr. 21, 1883), iron and steel manufacturer, was born in Pittsburgh, Pa., of Scotch-Irish parentage. His father, James Park, was a native of Ireland who probably emigrated to the United States in 1812, and his mother, Margaret (McCurdy), was the daughter of a Scotch-Irish physician resident in Pittsburgh at the time of her marriage. Park's early education was obtained in the Pittsburgh elementary schools, and at seventeen he began his business career in his father's china and metal store, rising to partnership in 1840 with a younger brother, David E. Park. The firm, which later achieved national prominence as Park, Brother & Company, became James Park, Jr. & Company on the father's death in 1843, and gradually expanded its personnel and interests under the leadership of the elder brother. John McCurdy and James B. Scott were at different times members of the firm; an interest was acquired in a cotton-goods factory in Allegheny, Pa., and the Lake Superior Copper Works were founded in 1857 for the manufac-

ture of sheathing copper from Lake Superior ore.

Park retained partial control of these and other varied enterprises throughout his life, but it was not until shortly before the Civil War that he entered upon the most significant activity of his career. At that time he became interested in the iron industry and from 1860 to 1883 he had a prominent part in its development. To this he contributed along two distinct lines: he encouraged the introduction of new industrial processes, although not of an inventive type of mind himself; and he was instrumental in increasing the tariff schedules which entrenched steel in its position of special privilege.

The first real impetus to steel-making was due to a political maneuver, for the framers of the Morrill tariff act of 1861, in the hope of making Pennsylvania safe for the Republican party, increased the duties on iron and steel. Before 1860 many attempts had been made on a small scale at Pittsburgh to produce crucible cast steel, but the first to be commercially practicable was that of Hussey, Wells & Company in 1860. Park's firm followed this in 1862 with the establishment of the Black Diamond Steel Works. After preliminary failures, this plant achieved a product of high quality with American iron, and was said in 1883 to have a greater capacity for crucible steel than any other plant in the world. Park was also connected with the development in the United States of the "pneumatic" process of steel making. Although permanently linked with the name of Sir Henry Bessemer, priority of invention of this process has now been generally conceded to William Kelly [*q.v.*]. E. B. Ward of Detroit and Z. S. Durfee [*q.v.*] of New Bedford, Mass., bought control of Kelly's process after experiments had convinced them of its practicability, and in May 1863 they, together with Daniel J. Morrell of Johnstown, Pa., William M. Lyon of Detroit, and James Park, Jr., incorporated the Kelly Pneumatic Process Company. Experimental works were established at Wyandotte, Mich., and there, in the autumn of 1864, the first steel made in the United States by the complete Bessemer process was blown. Park's connection with this enterprise (finally abandoned in 1869) ceased with its purchase by E. B. Ward in 1865.

Park was the first to introduce into the United States the Siemens gas furnace for metal conversion. Invented and patented in England by Charles William Siemens and his brother Frederick, this type of furnace became a vital part of the Siemens-Martin open-hearth steel process. The first Siemens furnace, completed by

Park, McCurdy & Company at their copper works on Aug. 14, 1863, was operated successfully. A second one, built later in the same year to heat steel, was not a success. Both these furnaces were constructed from published drawings, and without securing a license from the Siemens brothers. The first licensed introduction of the regenerative gas furnace was not until 1867, at Troy, N. Y. Another experiment was undertaken in 1877 by Park, Brother & Company when, in conjunction with Miller, Metcalf & Parkin, they tried out a process invented by C. W. Siemens for making refined iron directly from the ore. The results were not encouraging, and the attempt was abandoned in 1879.

In September 1882 Park, a vice-president of the American Iron and Steel Association from 1873 to 1883, presided over a convention of the trade, and was authorized to lay its views before the tariff commission created that year with a view to tariff reduction. He testified effectively in defence of the policy which had made his fortune, and after the hearings were over spent much time in Washington lobbying for the tariff bill. He is said to have had great influence in securing the final result as embodied in the bill approved Mar. 3, 1883. It was a cleverly contrived victory for the protectionists, increases in steel duties being concealed under ostensible changes in classification. It is possible that Park's tariff activities in 1882 and the early months of 1883 hastened his death, which occurred at his home in Allegheny, Pa., following an apoplectic stroke. He was survived by his widow, Sarah (Gray) Park, and their five sons and two daughters.

Typically the entrepreneur, Park sincerely believed that what benefited the manufacturer must inevitably also benefit the workingman and the consumer. One eulogist said of him: "We wonder if the manufacturers of this country and its workingmen fully realize the sacrifices that a few willing and earnest men like James Park, Jr., have always made to secure to them the benefits and the blessings of a Protective tariff. . . . Mr. Park leaves a large estate, estimated at from two to five million dollars" (*The Bulletin of the American Iron and Steel Association*, May 2, 1883, p. 116).

[G. T. Fleming, *Hist. of Pittsburgh and Environs* (1922), vol. IV; J. N. Boucher, *A Century and a Half of Pittsburg and Her People* (1908), vol. II; J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. IX (1918); J. M. Swank, *Hist. of the Manufacture of Iron in All Ages* . . . (1884); *Pittsburg: its Industry and Commerce* (1870); F. W. Taussig, *The Tariff Hist. of the U. S.* (8th ed., 1931); *Report of the Tariff Commission Appointed Under Act of Congress Approved May 15, 1882* (1882), II, 2009–2094; *Pittsburg Dispatch*,

Apr. 23, 1883; *Bull. Am. Iron and Steel Asso.*, May 2, 1883.]

L. P. B—t.

PARK, ROSWELL (Oct. 1, 1807–July 16, 1869), educator, Episcopal clergyman, was born in Lebanon, New London County, Conn., the son of Avery and Betsey (Meech) Park, and a descendant of Robert Parke, who came to Boston from England in 1630. His early childhood was spent in his native town, but when he was about twelve years of age his parents moved to Burlington, Otsego County, N. Y. After a period of preparatory study at the Oxford and Hamilton academies, he matriculated at Hamilton College as a sophomore in 1826, but withdrew in 1827 upon receiving an appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point. He graduated as highest ranking man in the class of 1831, and was commissioned brevet second lieutenant in the corps of engineers of the United States army. In the same summer, he passed the senior examinations at Union College, and received the degree of A.B. His first military duty was in connection with the construction of Fort Adams, at Newport, R. I., 1831. Two years later he was transferred to Fort Warren, Boston, Mass. In 1836 he took charge of the Delaware Breakwater. Deciding to seek a larger field for the expression of his ambitions and talents, he resigned from the army, Sept. 30, 1836, and for the next six years served as professor of chemistry and natural philosophy at the University of Pennsylvania. While here he decided to enter the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and resigned his professorship in July 1842.

Removing to Burlington, Vt., he prepared for holy orders under the guidance of Bishop George W. Doane [*q.v.*]. Admission to the diaconate was granted Sept. 10, 1843, and he was ordained priest on May 28, 1844. In 1843 he was appointed rector of Christ Church at Pomfret, Conn. From 1845 to 1852, while fulfilling his pastoral duties, he conducted the Christ Church Hall preparatory school, and as its headmaster became well known throughout New England. Norwich University, in 1850, invited him to become president, but he declined. Late in the spring of 1852 he resigned from his charges in Pomfret and traveled in Europe for six months. Upon his return, he accepted an invitation to establish and become the first president of Racine College, at Racine, Wis. He opened the institution in November 1852, with a program which included scientific studies, leading to the B.Sc. degree, for those who did not wish to devote themselves exclusively to the usual classical course. Many innovations in administration and instruction were introduced by him. He strengthened the college substantially by uniting with it, in 1859, the St. John's School at Delafield, Wis. His title was then changed to that of chancellor, the former headmaster of St. John's becoming warden. In the enlarged college, the scientific course was discontinued and the elective system established. From 1856 to 1863 Park served, also, as rector of St. Luke's Church, in Racine.

In the latter year, he withdrew from the college and the pulpit, and removed to Chicago, Ill. Here he founded Immanuel Hall, a classical and scientific school, which he conducted as a private venture until his death. He was an original member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and was affiliated with many other scientific and literary societies. His published writings include *Selections of Juvenile and Miscellaneous Poems* (1836), a second edition of which appeared in 1856 under the title *Jerusalem and Other Poems*; *A Sketch of the History and Topography of West Point and of the United States Military Academy* (1840); *Pantology: or a Systematic Survey of Human Knowledge* (1841); *Handbook for American Travelers in Europe* (1853). He was married, Dec. 28, 1836, to Mary Brewster, daughter of Benjamin Franklin and Mary Carter Brewster (Coolidge) Baldwin, of Woburn, Mass. After her death, he married, Apr. 25, 1860, Eunice Elizabeth, daughter of Gardner and Elizabeth (Ward) Niles of Waukegan, Ill.

[F. S. Parks, *Geneal. of the Parke Families of Conn.* (1906); O. F. Adams, *A Dict. of Am. Authors and Others* (1899); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Military Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); *The Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad. Ann. Reunion, 1870*; *Church Reg.*, Aug. 1869; *Chicago Republican*, July 18, 1869.]

R. F. S.

PARK, ROSWELL (May 4, 1852–Feb. 15, 1914), surgeon, was born at Pomfret, Conn., the son of the Rev. Roswell Park [*q.v.*]. His mother was Mary Brewster Baldwin, a descendant of Elder Brewster of the Plymouth colony. Roswell Park obtained his academic education in Connecticut and in Racine, Wis., where he attended Racine College (founded by his father), receiving the degree of B.A. in 1872, and that of M.A. in 1875; his medical course he pursued at Northwestern University (M.D., 1876). The following year he became demonstrator of anatomy in the Woman's Medical College, Chicago, serving as such until 1879, when he was appointed adjunct professor of anatomy in Northwestern Medical School. In 1882 he was lecturer on surgery at Rush Medical College, Chicago, and in 1883 he became professor of surgery in the School of Medicine of

the University of Buffalo, which position he held until his death; he was also surgeon-in-chief at the Buffalo General Hospital. He received various honorary degrees, was president of the Medical Society of the State of New York and of the American Surgical Association (1900), and was a member of various foreign societies.

At a time when skilful operators were not common, Park was a great surgeon. His principal service, however, was in assimilating and then teaching and making popular new discoveries in pathology and bacteriology. The period between the years 1880 and 1890 was marked by amazingly rapid advances in these branches of science. Practitioners in the United States were somewhat slow in understanding and applying the antiseptic technique of Lister for surgical operations, and Park played an important part in making it—and the later modifications of it—known, and in securing its adoption. He devoted himself especially to surgical pathology, in which he pursued studies both in America and Europe. From these studies various lectures and papers resulted, which had a wide influence in making surgeons realize the importance of pathology. In 1890–91 he gave the Mütter lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, Philadelphia, published under the title, *The Mütter Lectures on Surgical Pathology* (1892), a valuable book at that time. Later, he promulgated certain original views with regard to inflammation, that did not meet with general acceptance. He edited, and largely wrote, a textbook, *Surgery by American Authors* (1896), and in 1907 published a large work, *The Principles and Practice of Modern Surgery.* In subsequent years he was greatly interested in tumors, wrote many papers on the subject, and was instrumental in having founded an institution for the study of malignant tumors, first known as the Gratwick Laboratory, which later became the New York State Institute for the Study of Malignant Diseases. In spite of his having come from a long line of Puritan ancestors, Park's interests were broad and the tendencies of his mind liberal. He was attracted by the cultural, as well as by the strictly scientific side of his profession. He wrote *An Epitome of the History of Medicine* (1897), and published a collection of "border line" essays called The *Evil Eye, Thanatology and Other Essays* (1912), the style of which is singularly felicitous. He was a good lecturer, a good story teller, and an accomplished musician, prominently supporting efforts to bring good music to Buffalo. He was one of the surgeons who attended President McKinley after the latter was shot at the Pan-American Exposition in Buffalo in 1901. In 1880 he married Martha Prudence Durkee of Chicago, and of this marriage two sons were born.

[Memoirs by C. G. Stockton, in Roswell Park, *Selected Papers, Surgical and Scientific* (1914), ed. by Julian Park, and in *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. XXII (1918); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Trans. Am. Surgic. Soc.*, vol. XXXII (1914); *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 16, 1914; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13.]

H. U. W.

PARK, TRENOR WILLIAM (Dec. 8, 1823–Dec. 13, 1882), lawyer, financier, was born at Woodford, Vt., near Bennington, to which city his parents, Luther and Cynthia (Pratt) Park, removed three years later. The Park family was descended from Richard Parke who emigrated from England to Cambridge, Mass., in 1635. William Park, the grandfather of Trenor, was a quartermaster of Massachusetts troops in the Revolutionary army. During the boy's childhood his family lived in poverty, and as a consequence his educational opportunities were meager and irregular. At the age of sixteen he entered the law office of A. P. Lyman, was admitted to the Vermont bar soon after he had attained his majority, and began to practise in Bennington. On Dec. 15, 1846, he married Laura V. S. Hall.

When his wife's father, Gov. Hiland Hall [*q.v.*], was appointed on the federal commission to settle land titles in California, Park and his family followed him, in 1852, to that state. Here he became junior partner in the firm of Halleck, Peachy, Billings & Park, which included Henry W. Halleck and Frederick Billings [*qq.v.*]. Park is credited with doing "a very large share of the business created by the controversies on land titles in California" (*New York Tribune*, Dec. 21, 1882). The close relation of the firm to commissioner Hall is suggested by the fact that after Hall was displaced by President Pierce he remained for a time as its "general adviser." With such connections the firm and its junior partner reaped their full share of the profits accruing to the lawyers in the tortuous land title business of that period. An important chapter in Park's business career, and a considerable factor in the building up of his fortune, was his connection with the famous Mariposa estate of Gen. John C. Frémont [*q.v.*]. Park had advanced large sums on the security of the estate, had a mortgage covering one-eighth interest, and was in possession as local manager. When the estate was offered for sale in 1863, he proposed to give possession if his accounts were cleared for $1,400,000. In 1863 a

company was organized and took over the estate at a valuation of $10,000,000, based almost entirely on the showing made by gold mines in operation. Park returned to the East in that year and had a major rôle in forming the company. It was shortly discovered that the output of the mines, which reached $100,000 a month at the maximum, had been achieved by the familiar expedient of exploiting the richest seams to the full and neglecting development and exploration work. The company, not being provided with adequate working capital to meet the actual conditions, shortly collapsed with disastrous loss to its shareholders.

During the remainder of his life Park made his home in Bennington, where he built a handsome residence. He established the First National Bank of Bennington and became interested in Vermont railroads, assisting in the reorganization of the Vermont Central, purchasing the Western Vermont Railroad, and commencing construction of the Lebanon Central. He seems to have had visions of a system of lines centering in Bennington; but the project failed and he lost heavily. He had narrowly failed of election as United States senator from California in 1862, and he now became active in Vermont politics, serving four terms in the legislature (1865–68). He was a delegate to the Republican National Convention in 1868, aiding in the nomination of General Grant, and serving as a member of the national committee.

Going to Utah in April 1871, Park acquired a controlling interest in the famous Emma mine. By his own statement he "worked it vigorously." In early September he went to London, accompanied by Senator William M. Stewart [*q.v.*], and, succeeding in forming an English company to take over the mine, received as his share half the stock. In connection with the sale he had induced Gen. Robert C. Schenck, then ambassador to the Court of St. James's, to become a director in the new company. Park loaned Schenck $50,000, without interest, to invest in shares of the new corporation, guaranteeing him by written contract one and one half per cent. a month return on his investment. At the time of the sale the mine was producing $75,000 in silver monthly. Park sold out his remaining interests at a large profit in the fall of that year, and returned to the United States in July 1872. It speedily became evident that the Emma mine had been exploited and its possibilities grossly overstated. Park was sued for fraud and after a five months' trial acquitted. The caustic comment of the judge in later litigation correctly characterizes these transactions: "In conclu-

sion, it is proper to say, that the evidence discloses many circumstances connected with the sale of the Emma mine, which strongly impeach the honor and morality of the transaction, but which are to be eliminated from the case, except so far as they bear upon the question of fraud in law" (14 *Blatchford,* 420). Later Park was interested in the Pacific Mail Steamship lines, of which he was a director from 1875 to 1882. He bought a controlling interest in the Panama Railroad, administered its affairs, and held the position of president from 1875 to his death. In 1881 he sold it to the De Lesseps Panama Canal Company at $300 per share, having stimulated the purchaser by judicious firmness in maintaining the extremely high passenger and freight rates on the shipment of canal building machinery, labor force, and supplies.

Park's first wife having died in 1875, he married Ella F. Nichols of San Francisco on May 30, 1882. His death occurred on the steamship *San Blas,* while he was making a voyage to the Pacific. His benefactions to his home city included $5,000 toward the establishment of the Bennington Public Library, to the maintenance of which he made liberal gifts later. He donated an art gallery to the University of Vermont, of which institution he was a trustee. When the Civil War broke out he sent a check for $1,000 from California as his contribution to the outfitting of Vermont troops. He was greatly interested in the *New York Tribune* fresh air fund for city children, entertaining over a hundred children at his country home. He was modest and unobtrusive but thoughtful, an inveterate reader and possessed of great mental power. In his career he made many enemies but had the capacity also of maintaining firm friendships. Three children by his first wife survived him.

[F. S. Parks, *Geneal. of the Parke Families of Mass.* (1909); Hiram Carleton, *Geneal. and Family Hist. of the State of Vt.* (1903), vol. II; *N. Y. Tribune,* Dec. 22, 1864, Feb. 5, Apr. 16, 1875, Dec. 21, 1882; A. M. Hemenway, *Vt. Hist. Gazetteer,* vol. V (1891); *The Mariposa Estate. . . . Its Mineral Wealth and Resources* (1873); Benjamin Silliman, Jr., *Review of the Nature, Resources and Plan of Development . . . of the Northern Division of the Mariposa Estate* (1873); L. E. Chittenden, *The Emma Mine. A Statement . . . Prepared for . . . The Committee of Foreign Affairs of the House of Representatives* (1876).] C. E. P.

PARKE, BENJAMIN (Sept. 2, 1777–July 12, 1835), soldier, jurist, was born in New Jersey and grew up there on a farm, acquiring during his youth such education as the common-schools of the time and place afforded. When about twenty years old he migrated to the West, settling first at Lexington, Ky., where he took up the study of law in the office of James Brown [*q.v.*]. After his admission to the bar he re-

moved, in 1801, to the newly organized territory of Indiana, residing first at Vincennes and then at Salem. Vincennes, the first territorial capital, was the scene of rather violent local politics in which Parke participated as the friend and supporter of the governor, William Henry Harrison [*q.v.*]. This allegiance to the most powerful personage in the territory may have paved the way to subsequent preferments. At any rate, in 1804 Parke was made attorney general, and throughout the Harrison régime in Indiana he was from time to time appointed to offices of a military character. While serving as attorney general (1804–08) he was elected in 1805 to the first territorial legislature, and in December of the same year was sent as delegate to Congress, where he served for two terms, resigning in 1808 to accept appointment as territorial judge. In 1816, when delegates were elected to frame a state constitution, he was sent to the convention as a Knox County member, and is credited with being instrumental in securing the adoption of certain educational provisions which became the foundation of the state school system.

Meanwhile, his activity in the local militia at a time when that organization was an arm of real importance in frontier defense was something more than the gratification of a passing ambition for glory. For at least ten years he was in this service, and when the troubles with the Indians culminated in 1811 in the Tippecanoe campaign he raised a company of dragoons and joined the expedition. He participated in the bloody battle of Tippecanoe following Harrison's march, and after that engagement was made commander of the cavalry with the rank of major. The knowledge he acquired of the Indian character made him valuable in a civil as well as a military capacity, and he served as an Indian agent and as a commissioner representing the United States in negotiating various land treaties. The most noteworthy of these treaties was that signed at St. Mary's, Ohio, in 1818, by which the whole central part of Indiana was secured to the whites. The representatives of the federal government on this occasion were Jonathan Jennings, then governor of the state, Lewis Cass [*qq.v.*], and Benjamin Parke.

As a jurist Parke took high rank among the pioneer judges of Indiana. A contemporary said of him: "His honest mind seemed to look through the technicalities of the case, and seize the merits of it almost without an effort. . . . He made a first-rate judge; patient, courteous and kind" (Smith, *post*, p. 147). He was on the bench, all told, about twenty-seven years; first

Parke

as a territorial judge, to which office he was appointed by President Jefferson in 1808, then as United States district judge, under a commission dated Mar. 6, 1817, soon after Indiana was admitted to the Union. In the latter office he served until his death. This long service was the more notable by reason of the arduous character of his duties in the days of large circuits and hard traveling. A story survives of his riding horseback from Vincennes to Wayne County, across the state, to try a man for stealing a twenty-five cent pocket knife.

Educationally Parke was a self-made man, yet he attained to a reputation for learning and is said to have acquired one of the largest private libraries in Indiana Territory. He was a promoter of the first public library in the territory, established at Vincennes, and of a later one at Corydon which was the forerunner of the Indiana State Library. He was also connected with the territory's first school of higher learning, Vincennes University, being at one time chairman of its board of trustees. Historical and antiquarian interests also claimed his attention and he was one of the organizers of a society of that character at Vincennes, and afterwards first president of the Indiana Historical Society, founded in 1830. Throughout his latter years he made unceasing efforts to repay money losses due to unfortunate business reverses caused by others. Through frugal living and work, made harder by the handicap of partial paralysis, he managed before his death to free himself of debts for which others were to blame. He has been described as tall and spare in person, of rather frail physique, dignified in appearance, but affable. He married Eliza Barton at Lexington, Ky., before moving to Indiana, and they had two children, a son and a daughter, both of whom died before their parents.

[W. W. Woollen, *Biog. and Hist. Sketches of Early Ind.* (1883); C. W. Taylor, *Biog. Sketches and Review of the Bench and Bar of Ind.* (1895); O. H. Smith, *Early Ind. Trials and Sketches* (1858); Charles Dewey, *An Eulogium upon the Life and Character of the Hon. Benjamin Parke* (1836); *Am. State Papers: Indian Affairs*, vol. II (1834); "Executive Journal of Indiana Territory, 1800–1816," *Ind. Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. III (1905); "Governors' Messages and Letters," *Ind. Hist. Colls.*, vols. VII, IX (1922), XII (1924); *Indiana Democrat* (Indianapolis), July 24, 1835.]

G. S. C.

PARKE, JOHN (Apr. 7, 1754–Dec. 11, 1789), soldier and poet, was born at Dover, Del., the son of Thomas and Ann Parke. Records in the court house at Dover indicate that Thomas Parke was a well-to-do citizen of that place, a hat-maker by trade and sheriff of Kent County, 1758–60. He died in 1766, leaving, besides his widow, who apparently did not long survive

him, at least three children. John Parke attended Newark Academy and Newark College, which became the University of Delaware, and then was a student at the College of Philadelphia, forerunner of the University of Pennsylvania, where he received the degree of A.B. in 1771 and that of A.M. in 1775. After graduation he studied law with Thomas McKean [*q.v.*] for some four years. In August 1775, recommended by McKean and Caesar Rodney [*q.v.*], he was appointed assistant quartermaster-general of the Continental Army at Cambridge, Mass., and on June 29, 1776, in New York, was appointed lieutenant-colonel of artificers. He resigned from the army, Oct. 29, 1778, and died on his estate, "Poplar Grove," in Kent County, Del., eleven years later.

Parke is remembered chiefly for a work which he published anonymously in Philadelphia in 1786, entitled *The Lyric Works of Horace, Translated into English Verse: to Which Are Added, a Number of Original Poems, by a Native of America.* The printer of this work, Eleazer Oswald, was one of Parke's comrades in the army, also a lieutenant-colonel, who had set up as a bookseller "at the Coffee House" in 1786. In the volume Parke included translations from other classical poets than Horace and both original poems and translations by other hands than his own. Some of the versions of Horace are really paraphrases which adapt the subject matter to the circumstances of American history, substituting George Washington for the Emperor Augustus. Most of the poems are supplied with dedications and notes of the date and place of writing. These notations indicate that some of the translations were made in 1769–70 at college, that in 1772 Parke had made a journey to Hartford, Conn., and that he was at Valley Forge. Together with land records in which he is mentioned they show that his residence after his retirement from the army was Arundel in Murderkill Hundred, a few miles from Dover.

The poet included in his volume, besides a life of Horace, which he addressed to Benjamin Franklin, and his own version of the odes, a pastoral by John Wilcocks, whom he described as "late an officer of the British Army, my most intimate friend and acquaintance," and whose death in 1772 he commemorated in an elegy; poems by Mr. John Pryor, "a young gentleman of Dover"; and translations written between 1720 and 1730 by David French, Esquire, late of the Delaware Counties. The versification is in the manner of Pope, whom Parke greatly admired, and whose translations he sometimes adopted, with acknowledgment, when his own

Parke

seemed inadequate. Bound in the same volume is *Virginia: a Pastoral Drama, on the Birthday of an Illustrious Personage and the Return of Peace, February 11, 1784,* addressed to John Dickinson. The illustrious personage is obviously Washington, and the scene of the action Mount Vernon. Parke is said to have written original poems and satires, including a comedy representing the petty administration of justice, but these are not extant. The dedication of an ode "To my German Flute, Dover, 1770" and another "On hearing Miss Kitty Smith play and sing to the guitar, Philadelphia, 1771" would seem to indicate in the poet at least some taste for music; and the range of his dedications testifies to a wide circle of friends. Deeds in which his name occurs imply that he was unmarried and prove that in 1784 he was the only surviving son of Thomas Parke.

[E. D. Neill in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1876; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Del.* (2 vols., 1888), pp. 1039, 1046, and 1163; *Mag. of Hist.*, Extra No. 91 (1923); J. F. Fisher, in *Memoirs of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.*, vol. II, pt. II (1830); G. H. Ryden, *Letters to and from Cæsar Rodney* (1933), p. 62; three unpublished letters by Parke in the library of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.; the guardians' account of Bertles and Cecilia Shee, Dover, Del.]

J. C. F.

PARKE, JOHN GRUBB (Sept. 22, 1827–Dec. 16, 1900), soldier, son of Francis and Sarah (Gardner) Parke, was born near Coatesville, Chester County, Pa. In 1835 his family moved to Philadelphia, where he attended Samuel Crawford's preparatory academy and the University of Pennsylvania. He entered West Point in 1845 and graduated in 1849, second in a class of forty-three. Brevetted second lieutenant, corps of topographical engineers, he was sent to determine the boundary between Iowa and Minnesota. In 1852–53 he was secretary of the board for improvement of lake harbors, and Western rivers and surveyed for the Pacific Railroad route. On Apr. 18, 1854, he was promoted second lieutenant, and on July 1, 1856, first lieutenant. In 1857–61 he was chief astronomer and surveyor for the determination of the northwest boundary between the United States and Canada. The outbreak of the Civil War interrupted this work.

Parke was promoted captain of engineers, Sept. 9, 1861, and moved from the Pacific Coast to Washington early in October. He was made brigadier-general of volunteers, Nov. 23, 1861, and assigned to command the 3rd Brigade in Burnside's North Carolina expedition, which sailed from Annapolis on Jan. 9, 1862. Roanoke Island and Fort Forest were captured, Feb. 8, and Parke's brigade next helped to capture New Bern, N. C. It then invested Fort Macon, which,

by skilful use of his batteries, Parke forced to surrender. For this achievement he was brevetted lieutenant-colonel, United States Army, Apr. 26, 1862, and major-general of volunteers, July 18, 1862. When the order came from Burnside to join McClellan in Virginia, Parke became Burnside's chief of staff. He fought at South Mountain, at Antietam, at Fredericksburg, and, when Burnside took command of the Ohio Department, Mar. 25, 1863, Parke became commander of the IX Corps at Cincinnati. Early in June he went to reinforce Grant at Vicksburg, his corps holding the extreme right flank until Vicksburg surrendered. The corps next participated in Sherman's capture of Jackson City with its subsequent railway destruction. For meritorious conduct, Parke was brevetted colonel in the Regular Army.

Ill health now incapacitated him until Sept. 15, when the IX Corps marched to reinforce Burnside at Knoxville and operated against General Longstreet until Dec. 4. The Confederates withdrew northward and Parke's command, IX and XXIII Corps, followed. Longstreet turned and forced Parke back to Blain's Crossroads, whereupon both sides went into winter quarters. On Jan. 26, 1864, Parke again took station at Knoxville and was ordered, Mar. 16, 1864, to report to Burnside, who was reorganizing and recruiting the IX Corps at Annapolis. The corps was ordered, Apr. 23, in support of the Army of the Potomac, being constituted a separate unit responsible to Grant until May 24, when it was assigned to Meade. As chief of staff of the IX Corps, Parke fought in the battle of the Wilderness, in battles around Spotsylvania, in the James River campaign, and in the advance against Petersburg. On June 17, 1864, he was promoted major in the engineer corps. From July 4 to Aug. 13, he was prostrated by malaria. Rejoining his command, he engaged in all subsequent operations against Petersburg, fought at Peeble's Farm, Oct. 2, 1864, Hatcher's Run, Oct. 27, 1864, and Fort Steadman, Mar. 25, 1865. For this latter action he was brevetted brigadier-general, United States Army. The IX Corps fought and won its last action at Fort Sedgwick, Apr. 2, 1865, Parke receiving his brevet as major-general. When Meade was absent, Parke commanded the Army of the Potomac.

After hostilities, he commanded the District of Alexandria and, in July 1865, the Southern District of New York. He was mustered out of the volunteers, Jan. 15, 1866, and resumed his duties as major in the engineer corps. From Sept. 28, 1866, to October 1869, he was again

with the Northwest Boundary Commission. In the meantime, June 5, 1867, he married Ellen Blight of Philadelphia; they had one child, a daughter. On June 1, 1868, he was detailed as assistant chief of engineers, serving until his appointment as superintendent of the United States Military Academy in August 1887. He was promoted lieutenant-colonel in the engineer corps Mar. 4, 1879, and colonel, Mar. 17, 1884. Having served forty years, he was retired at his own request on July 2, 1889. Thereafter he engaged in business in Washington, D. C., as director of the Washington & Georgetown Street Railway Company, and of the National Safe Deposit Company. He was secretary of the Protestant Episcopal Cathedral Foundation, manager of the Columbia Hospital, and president of the Society of the Army of the Potomac. He wrote several valuable reports and compilations, of which *Laws of the United States Relating to the Construction of Bridges over Navigable Waters of the United States, from Mar. 2, 1805, to Mar. 3, 1887* (1887), and "Report of Explorations . . . Near the 32d Parallel of Latitude, Lying Between Dona Ana, on the Rio Grande, and Pimas Villages, on the Gila" (*House Executive Document 129*, 33 Cong., 1 Sess., 1855) are the most important. Parke died at Washington, and was buried in the cemetery of the Church of St. James the Less in Philadelphia.

[F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); T. H. S. Hamersly, *Complete Regular Army Reg. of the U. S.* (1880); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1891); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; *Thirty-Third Ann. Reunion, Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1902); *Washington Post*, Dec. 18, 1900.] C. C. B.

PARKER, ALTON BROOKS (May 14, 1852–May 10, 1926), jurist, was born at Cortland, N. Y., the son of John Brooks and Harriet F. (Straton) Parker. He was of New England descent, his grandfather, John Parker, having moved from Massachusetts to Cortland County about 1800. He received his early schooling at the academy and the normal school at Cortland, and at the age of sixteen began to teach. He then studied law, at first in the office of Schoonmaker and Hardenbergh, Kingston, N. Y., and later at the Albany Law School, from which he was graduated in 1873. He began the practice of law at Kingston, N. Y. In his first important case he represented Ulster County in a controversy over assessments with the City of Kingston and won at every point, incidentally gaining much popularity in the rural districts. He was elected surrogate in 1877, and was re-elected by a large plurality in 1883. In both elections he was the only successful Democratic

candidate on the county ticket. His success attracted the attention of the state leaders and made him a member of the National Democratic Convention of 1884. The next year President Cleveland offered him the position of first assistant postmaster-general, which he declined for financial reasons. As chairman of the Democratic state committee, shortly afterward he managed the campaign of David B. Hill [*q.v.*] for governor so successfully that the entire state ticket was elected. He was rewarded by appointment to a vacant justiceship of the supreme court in the third district. He was appointed to the second division of the court of appeals, 1889; to the general term of the first department, 1892; and to the appellate division of the supreme court, 1896. In 1897, a year when Democratic prospects were dark, he was elected chief justice of the court of appeals by the astonishing plurality of more than 60,000 votes.

After 1885 Parker showed a preference for continuing his judicial career by several times refusing to be considered as a candidate for governor. As chief justice, the tendency of his decisions in civil cases was to hold private litigants to the strict letter of their contracts, and in equity cases, to narrow the application of remedies. In labor cases his attitude, expressed in dissenting opinions or in decisions of a closely divided court, was distinctly liberal. For example, he upheld the right of labor unions to obtain a closed shop by threatening to strike (*National Protective Association of Steamfitters and Helpers* vs. *Cumming,* 170 *N. Y. Reports,* 315); and the constitutionality of an act of 1897 limiting the hours of work in bakeries and confectioneries to sixty a week (*People* vs. *Lochner,* 177 *N. Y. Reports,* 144). In general his policy was to uphold legislative acts unless they were forbidden by specific constitutional provisions.

After Bryan's second defeat in 1900 most Democratic leaders believed that the next presidential candidate should be chosen from the eastern wing of the party. Parker was regarded as having exceptional qualifications. He was popular in New York; he had voted for Bryan in 1896; and he had not been embroiled in factional struggles within the party. Prior to the convention of 1904 he refused to make any statements on public questions, and when told that his silence might cost him the nomination, he expressed his willingness to do without it rather than compromise his position as a judge or appear to seek the presidency. David B. Hill and others obtained support for him among most of the delegates and apparently controlled the convention; but they were unable to insert in the

Parker

platform a resolution expressing satisfaction with the gold standard. Parker was nominated on the first ballot. He immediately sent to a delegate, William F. Sheehan, a telegram declaring that he regarded the gold standard as "firmly and irrevocably established," and offering the convention an opportunity, if his opinion was unsatisfactory to a majority, to choose another candidate before adjournment (*Proceedings,* p. 277). The convention sent a reassuring reply.

During the campaign the party managers, in order to contrast Parker sharply with their idea of Roosevelt, neglected his liberal record and presented him as safe and conservative. Parker's activities seem to have been based upon much the same principle. He remained at home in the early months, speaking only when delegations visited him. His addresses impressed the country as honest and sincere, but inspired little enthusiasm for him. Just before the election he became more aggressive, and in the course of a short speaking tour, declared that corporations were making huge contributions to the Republican campaign fund in expectation of receiving substantial favors from Roosevelt if he should be elected. Challenged to furnish proofs, Parker refused to reveal the source of his information, which had been given him in confidence. Later investigations proved his charges to have been, in general, correct. He was badly defeated, receiving only 140 electoral votes in a total of 476.

After the election Parker began practising law in New York City. Among other clients, he represented the American Federation of Labor, before a subcommittee of the House of Representatives (1915) concerning the Danbury Hatters' judgment; Samuel Gompers and other labor leaders in contempt proceedings in the Buck's Stove and Range case (33 *Appeal Reports D. C.,* 83, 516; 40 *Appeal Reports D. C.,* 293); and the prosecution in the impeachment of Gov. William Sulzer of New York. In 1912 he was temporary chairman of the Democratic National Convention, and is said to have been opposed to the nomination of Wilson. He was twice married: on Oct. 16, 1873, to Mary Louise Schoonmaker of Accord, N. Y., who died in 1917; and on Jan. 16, 1923, to Amelia Day Campbell of New York City (*New York Times,* Jan. 17, 1923). He died in New York City, survived by his widow and a daughter by his first marriage.

[The campaign biography by J. R. Grady, *The Lives and Public Services of Parker and Davis* (1904), has only a few pages devoted to Parker. His judicial decisions are analyzed briefly by M'Cready Sykes, in the *Green Bag,* Mar. 1904. Other sketches of his career may be found in the *World* (N. Y.), Dec. 2, 1902; the *Sun* (N. Y.), Feb. 8, 1903; *Albany Law Journal,* May 1904; *Am. Monthly Review of Reviews,* Aug.

1904; *N. Y. Times*, May 11, 1926; *N. Y. Herald, N. Y. Tribune*, May 11, 1926; memoir by M. J. O'Brien, in *N. Y. County Lawyers' Asso. Year Book, 1926*. See also: *Official Report of the Proc. of the Democratic Nat. Convention . . . 1904* (1904); F. R. Kent, *The Democratic Party, A History* (1928); *Proc. of the Court for the Trial of Impeachments. The People of the State of N. Y. . . . against Wm. Sulzer . . .* (2 vols., 1913); *Danbury Hatters' Judgment. Hearing before Subcommittee of House Committee on Appropriations . . .*, 63 Cong., 3 Sess. (1915).] E. C. S.

PARKER, ALVIN PIERSON (Aug. 7, 1850–Sept. 10, 1924), missionary to China, was born on a farm near Austin, Tex., the son of Peter and Mary (Boyce) Parker. Both his father and mother were recently from Virginia. When he was still an infant the family moved to Missouri, where on pioneer farms, first near Hannibal and then in Ralls County, he grew up, sharing in the hard physical labor of frontier agriculture. His parents were earnestly religious, his father having a local preacher's license in the Methodist Church. Opportunities for education were meager, but he had, probably through his father, a passion for learning. He attended country schools and Van Rassler Academy. The money he had saved for college expenses was needed by the family. For a time he taught school in Virginia. Then, after a deep religious experience, he decided to enter the ministry and served several charges.

In 1875 he went to China as a missionary of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. For several years he was stationed at Soochow, where he was largely responsible for the founding of the strong Methodist Church of which he was long the pastor. He also established and was for years at the head of the Buffington School, later the Buffington Institute, one of the forerunners of Soochow University. At least once he was in charge of his mission's hospital in Soochow. He was transferred to Shanghai in 1896 and there became president of the Anglo-Chinese College, serving in that capacity until 1906. For a time he was presiding elder of the Shanghai Conference of his Church. He was a man of scholarly tastes, and, in spite of the deficiencies in his early formal education, he taught himself enough Greek and Hebrew to enable him to use the Bible in the original, and he achieved a remarkable command of the Chinese language. Much of his time was given to the preparation of literature. He assisted in the translation of the Bible into the Soochow and Shanghai dialects, translated into Chinese a course of mathematics from algebra to mechanics, collaborated in the preparation of a hymnal, and translated and prepared notes on the International Sunday-school Lessons. He had a part in compiling a vocabulary of the Shanghai dialect and in the revision of the translation of the Old Testament into classical Chinese. Among his other translations were the *Methodist Discipline*, several books of *The Expositors' Bible*, The American Statesman Series, and *The Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics*. He was long editor of the *Chinese Christian Advocate* and prepared material for both the English and Chinese editions of that periodical. He served as editorial secretary of the China Sunday School Union, and he was book editor of the China Conference. For many of his later years he gave his main strength to the Christian Literature Society for China and for a time was chairman of the editorial staff of that organization. His *Southern Methodism in China* (1924) was going through the press at his death.

In addition to all these literary labors he found time to serve on many of the organizations which had to do with local and national policies of Protestant missions in China, among them the (Christian) Educational Association of China and the National Committee of the Young Men's Christian Association. He preached almost every Sunday of his long career. His counsel was sought by diplomats and other officials and he was offered but declined an advisorship to the Emperor of Korea and a high post in the Chinese ministry of education. In 1923 he returned to the United States on what he hoped was to be merely a furlough but while there died, in Oakland, Cal. In accordance with his wish, he was buried in China. He was twice married, first in December 1878, to Alice Scudder Cooley; and in February 1903, to Susan Williams.

[Annual reports of the Board of Foreign Missions of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South; *Chinese Recorder*, Nov. 1924; *Christian Advocate* (Nashville, Tenn.), Oct. 3, 1924; manuscript life prepared by Mrs. Parker; information from his friends.] K. S. L.

PARKER, AMASA JUNIUS (June 2, 1807–May 13, 1890), lawyer, jurist, educator, was born in Sharon, Litchfield County, Conn. He was a son of Daniel Parker, a Congregational minister, and Anna Fenn, and a descendant of William Parker, one of the first settlers of Connecticut. In 1816 his parents moved to New York. He was educated by private tutors under the supervision of his father. At the age of sixteen he became principal of Hudson Academy in Hudson, N. Y. He never attended college, but in 1825 he took an examination on the entire course of Union College and was granted the degree of B.A. Two years later, having determined upon the law as a profession, he resigned his position and went to Delhi, N. Y., to study in the

office of his uncle, Amasa Parker. In 1828 he was admitted to the bar. In August 1834 he was married to Harriet Langdon Roberts of Portsmouth, N. H., the daughter of Edmund Roberts [*q.v.*]. Their four children survived him.

Shortly after his admission to the bar he engaged actively in politics as a Democrat. He was a representative in the Assembly, 1834; district attorney of Delaware County, 1834–36; regent of the University of the State of New York, 1835–44; and member of Congress, 1837–39. In 1844 he was appointed circuit judge and vice-chancellor of the third circuit and won general approval during the anti-rent episode by disposing of 240 cases against persons accused of rioting within a period of three weeks. In 1847, after the adoption of a new constitution had abolished the circuit judgeships, he was elected justice of the supreme court for the third district for a term of eight years, the last two of which he sat on the court of appeals. Seeking reëlection, he was defeated by a candidate of the Know-Nothing party. In 1856, when his party was weakened by a division between "Hards" and "Softs," he was nominated for the governorship. He was regarded as a strong candidate because he had taken no part in the party dissensions, and he had won a certain degree of popularity through a decision questioning the constitutionality of the state prohibition law. He was defeated by a plurality of 65,000. He was again nominated for the office in 1858 and was defeated by a plurality of 17,000. Early in 1861 he was chairman of the Democratic and Constitutional Unionist convention at Albany which proposed compromise and conciliation as measures to settle the differences between the North and the South. After the firing on Fort Sumter he supported the federal government in prosecuting the war, protesting, however, against arbitrary arrests which appeared to be chiefly for partisan purposes. Though he was an aspirant for the Democratic gubernatorial nomination against Tilden in 1874, and chairman of an anti-Tilden convention in 1880, his political career may be said to have ended with the Civil War. His only later public office was as a member of the constitutional convention of 1867, in which he served on the important committee on the judiciary.

Continuing his early interest in education, Parker became one of the founders of the Albany Law School, 1851, in which he was a lecturer for nineteen years and special lecturer for ten years longer. He was also a member of the board of trustees of the Albany Female Academy and of Union and Cornell universities. As a lawyer, he was highly regarded. He appeared as counsel in cases involving the national bank taxes, the title to the Trinity Church property, and the boundary between New York and New Jersey. He edited *Reports of Decisions in Criminal Cases . . . State of New York, 1823–68* (6 vols., 1855–68) and was one of the editors of the fifth edition of *The Revised Statutes of the State of New York* (1859).

[*Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); A. J. Parker, ed., *Landmarks of Albany County, N. Y.* (1897); D. A. Harsha, *Noted Living Albanians and State Officials* (1891); Martha J. Lamb, "Judge Amasa J. Parker," *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, Sept. 1890; "Amasa Junius Parker," *Report of the Thirteenth Ann. Meeting of the Am. Bar Asso.*, 1890; "Amasa Junius Parker," *Proc. N. Y. State Bar Asso.: Fourteenth Ann. Meeting*, 1891; Jay Gould, *Hist. of Delaware County . . . and a Hist. of the Late Anti-Rent Difficulties in Delaware* (1856); D. S. Alexander, *A Pol. Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, vol. II (1906); *N. Y. Herald*, Aug.–Oct. 1856.]

E. C. S.

PARKER, CARLETON HUBBELL (Mar. 31, 1878–Mar. 17, 1918), economist, labor conciliator, was born in Red Bluff, Cal., the son of William Boyd and Frances (Fairchild) Parker. He grew up in Vacaville, Cal., where he attended public school. Between 1896 and 1913 he studied at the universities of California (B.S. 1904), London, Harvard, Leipzig, Berlin, Heidelberg (Ph.D., *summa cum laude*, 1912), and Munich. Early interested in engineering and mining, he later became absorbed in economics, and attended the seminars of Alfred Weber, Eberhard Gothein, and Lujo Brentano. His studies were repeatedly interrupted by the need to earn a living. He worked as miner in California and British Columbia, newspaper reporter in Spokane, Wash., administrative officer in the University of California, and bond salesman in Seattle, Wash. In 1913 he became assistant professor of industrial economics in the University of California, and in 1917 head of the department of economics and dean of the College of Commerce at the University of Washington.

While in Germany, Parker became interested in the problem of conflict between employers and labor and he later specialized in the study of casual or migratory workers. He sought in psychological maladjustment an explanation for the militant tactics of the I. W. W. and migratory labor in general, and in his psychological analysis of the discontented worker borrowed from such diverse sources as the psychoanalytic school, the behaviorists, Dewey, Veblen, McDougall, and Adler. His principal writings were "The California Casual and His Revolt" (*Quarterly Journal of Economics*, November 1915), and "The I. W. W." (*Atlantic Monthly*, November 1917). These papers are included in *The Casual Laborer and Other Essays* (1920). His

doctoral dissertation on the labor policy of the American trust, completed in 1914, was not published, owing to the interruption of communications with the Heidelberg authorities.

In November 1913, while retaining his connection with the University of California, Parker became executive secretary of the California State Immigration and Housing Commission. The salary of $4,000 represented his first financial success, but he resigned the post after a year, feeling that political influences were hampering his work. It was while he held this post that he made his report on the Wheatland hopfield riot of Aug. 3, 1913, a report which became a model for many investigators of labor militancy. Late in 1914 he conducted a similar investigation for the United States government in Phoenix, Ariz. During the World War, he served repeatedly as United States government labor conciliator and succeeded in preventing or terminating more than a score of important strikes. In October 1917 his analysis of the rise in living costs was adopted by the Shipbuilding Labor Adjustment Board of the United States Fleet Corporation as the basis of awards in Pacific shipyards.

The main factors in his success as a labor conciliator were an intimate practical knowledge of the migratory worker gained during his youth, conviction of his own disinterestedness, and a rare personal charm which disarmed all but the most uncompromising. He was for a time an outstanding practitioner of a method hailed by many as a contribution toward the definitive allaying of labor "unrest." He dealt with specific cases rather than with general principles and his technique was that of compromise. He tried to teach employers to make concessions (shorter hours, better living quarters, opportunities for recreation, etc.), while teaching workers to abjure militant tactics and to be content with limited gains. He skilfully utilized the stirring appeal lent by the war situation to such phrases as "the public interest," and in effect gave an American translation of the "civil peace" doctrine and practice which his German teachers had developed out of their older policies of social reform. His work was a striking illustration of the rôle of the academic expert in public affairs, a wartime development which excited much interest among younger progressive political thinkers and is part of the background of subsequent developments in personnel management and "welfare capitalism" in general.

During the last months of his life he began to speak in terms of a subordinate and an upper class, and to raise the question of a new economic order as opposed to the patching of "a rotten system." His analysis of the key-problem of the state, however, never transcended condemnation of the thieving, vulgar, stupid, or "standpat" politician, and death prevented a flexible and inquiring mind from pushing its investigations further. At the height of his career he contracted pneumonia and died after a brief illness. He was survived by his wife, Cornelia (Stratton) Parker, whom he had married Sept. 7, 1907, and by three children. His body was cremated and the ashes scattered on the waters of Puget Sound.

[Cornelia Stratton Parker, *An American Idyll: The Life of Carleton H. Parker* (1919); R. W. Bruère, "Carleton Hubbell Parker," *New Republic*, May 18, 1918; H. E. Cory, "Carleton H. Parker," *Univ. of Cal. Chronicle*, Apr. 1918; *Post-Intelligencer* (Seattle, Wash.), Mar. 18, 1918; information from Cornelia Stratton Parker.] H. S.

PARKER, CORTLANDT [See PARKER, JOHN CORTLANDT, 1818–1907].

PARKER, EDWIN BREWINGTON (Sept. 7, 1868–Oct. 30, 1929), international jurist, was born in Shelbina, Shelby County, Mo. His grandfather, a substantial Maryland physician, had liberated his 200 slaves some years before the Civil War, but his father, George John Parker, a resident of Missouri, fought in the Confederate army until captured and paroled under oath not to take up arms again. His mother, Emrette (Faulkner) Parker, had been a teacher in Virginia and was a member of the faculty of the college at Fayette, Mo., that later became Howard-Payne College. For a time the boy attended Central College, at Fayette, Mo., but did not graduate. Through the influence of his mother's brother, Alsdorf Faulkner, then a prosperous citizen of Texas, he began the study of law at the University of Texas and received the LL.B. degree in June 1889. Being in debt for his education, he entered the employ of the Missouri, Kansas & Texas Railway and at the end of four years had become assistant general passenger agent. He began the practice of the law in 1893 at Houston, Tex., with the firm of Baker, Botts, Baker & Lovett, one of the largest law firms in the Southwest. On Dec. 27, 1894, he was married to Katherine Putman Blunt, the daughter of Gen. James G. Blunt [*q.v.*]. In ten years he became a member of his firm, the name of which became Baker, Botts, Parker & Garwood. In ten years more he was recognized as a leader not only at the bar but in business as well, serving as director for a number of successful business corporations.

When the United States entered the World War, he became a member of the War Indus-

tries Board and was appointed priorities commissioner. In this latter position he did an enormous amount of work, and in thirteen months his office handled 211,000 applications for priority and issued 192,000 orders. When the war closed, he was made chairman of the Liquidation Commission, and either returned to the United States or sold, principally to France, more than $3,000,000,000 worth of munitions and supplies that had been shipped to France for the use of the United States army. This work finished, he returned to his law practice, as general counsel for one of the great oil companies, the Texas Company, but in 1923 he was again called into the service of the government, this time as umpire of the Mixed Claims Commission, United States and Germany, a position he held until his death. Some 12,400 claims, aggregating $1,480,000,000 were filed with this commission, involving many questions entirely new in international law, such as the use of submarines, airplanes, and poison gas. The published reports of his opinions show a grasp of international law that challenged the admiration of statesmen and experts in international affairs (see especially, United States and Germany Mixed Claims Commission, *Consolidated Edition of Decisions and Opinions,* 2 vols., 1925–26). Before this work was finished, the United States, Austria, and Hungary, with Parker in mind, had drawn a treaty providing for a single commissioner to settle the claims of American citizens against these two parts of the old Austro-Hungarian monarchy. He was selected for this work and before his death had completed the task, disposing of claims aggregating about $41,000,000 (Tripartite Claims Commission, United States, Austria, and Hungary, *Final Report of Commissioner and Decisions and Opinions,* 1933). One other service he was called to render to his country. In 1928 he was named arbiter to determine claims against the United States growing out of the seizure of the German and Austrian vessels that were in American harbors when war was declared. This work was well under way but was not completed at the time of his death in Washington. For his services in these various positions, he was decorated by the United States, France, Belgium, Italy, and Poland. In his will he gave the residue of his estate for a school of international affairs and named a board of advisory trustees, who decided to establish the school at Columbia University.

["Memorial to Edwin Brewington Parker," *Tex. Law Review,* Oct. 1930; Wilhelm Kiesselbach, *Problems of the German-American Claims Commission,* trans. by E. H. Zeydel (1930), esp. p. 2; *Who's Who in America,* 1929–30; *N. Y. Times,* Oct. 31, Nov. 1, Nov. 12, 1929; information from Oswald S. Parker, Beaumont, Tex., and Clarence R. Wharton, Houston, Tex.]

C. S. P.

PARKER, EDWIN POND (Jan. 13, 1836–May 28, 1920), Congregational clergyman, pastor or pastor emeritus of the Second Church of Christ, Hartford, Conn., for sixty years, though born in Castine, Me., was of Connecticut ancestry. He was a descendant in the seventh generation of William Parker who came to Hartford from England in 1636 and in 1649 settled in Saybrook. In entering the ministry he followed the family tradition, for he was the son of the Rev. Wooster Parker whose father, born in Saybrook, was Rev. James Parker, and whose wife, Wealthy Ann, was the daughter of Rev. Enoch Pond [*q.v.*]. Edwin prepared for college in the academy at Foxcroft, Me., graduated from Bowdoin in 1856, and from Bangor Theological Seminary in 1859. While in college he supported himself in part by teaching winters, giving instruction in music in various Maine towns, and in 1856–57 teaching the classics in Auburn Academy. On Nov. 1 of the year he finished his theological course he married Lucy M. Harris, the adopted daughter of one of his professors, Rev. Samuel Harris [*q.v.*]. Called to the Second Church, Hartford, about this time, he was ordained and installed on Jan. 11, 1860. Circumstances connected with this event occasioned a rather acrimonious controversy. The council had ordained him in spite of the fact that his statement of theological belief was not quite satisfactory to a few of the conservative members. In the *New York Observer* for Feb. 23, 1860, appeared an editorial, inspired by a letter to the editor from a Presbyterian minister present at the council, entitled: "New Gospel in New England. False doctrines taught: boldly encouraged: the reformation demanded." A refutation of the charges, by Rev. Joel Hawes and Rev. Samuel Spring, was printed in the issue of Mar. 8, and another by the same clergymen in the *Independent* of Mar. 22. The *Congregationalist* and the *Recorder* also entered the fray. The whole affair was simply a skirmish in the bitter theological warfare which had long been going on in Connecticut, for which Parker had innocently furnished the occasion, but it gave to the opening of his career an unpleasant notoriety.

During his ministry covering more than half a century, Parker became one of the most distinguished citizens of Hartford and one of the leading Protestant clergymen of the state. A friend of Rev. Nathaniel J. Burton, Rev. Joseph H. Twichell, and Samuel L. Clemens [*qq.v.*], he was associated with the coterie which gave to

the Hartford of this period its literary reputation. Parker himself frequently lectured on literary subjects. His general influence, quietly exerted, was varied and substantial. He took little active part in political affairs but his sagacious counsel was a positive, if unobtrusive, factor in matters of civic importance. His ministry, while maintaining the best traditions of New England Congregationalism, had a liberating and broadening effect both locally and outside his own city and state. Theologically he was tolerant and reasonable but not radical. Having an inclination for ritual and a considerable knowledge of music, he contributed to the enrichment of worship in Congregational churches. His own church was perhaps the first of its order in New England to celebrate the Christmas season with a religious service. Many other similar innovations followed. With N. J. Burton and J. H. Twichell he prepared *The Christian Hymnal* (1877). A number of hymns written by himself have come into general use, among them the widely known "Master, no offering." His published addresses include *Biographical Sketch of Horace Bushnell* (1885); and *Historical Discourse in Commemoration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of the Missionary Society of Connecticut* (1898). In 1892 he published *History of the Second Church of Christ in Hartford,* a carefully prepared work of more than four hundred pages, which contains much about the life of Hartford from 1670 to 1892. He also prepared *Family Records, Parker-Pond-Peck* (1892). In 1912 he became pastor emeritus. The following year the *Hartford Courant* began to issue a Sunday edition, to which Parker contributed regularly under the title "Optimus." He was long an influential member of the corporation of Yale College. His first wife died in 1894 and on July 19, 1895, he married Mrs. Lucy A. Gilbert.

[*Gen. Cat. Bowdoin Coll., 1794–1912* (1912); *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; *The Congreg. Year-Book: Statistics for 1920* (1921); *Obit. Record Grads. Bowdoin Coll. for Year Ending 1 June 1920* (1921); *Congregationalist and Advance,* June 17, 1920; *Hartford Courant,* May 29, 1920; *Hartford Times,* May 28, 1920.] H. E. S.

PARKER, EDWIN WALLACE (Jan. 21, 1833–June 4, 1901), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, for more than forty years a missionary in India, was born in St. Johnsbury, Vt., the son of Quincy B. and Electa (McGaffy) Parker. He was a grandson of Nathan Parker who, near the close of the eighteenth century, moved from Massachusetts to Vermont. Edwin was reared in a Methodist home and declared that as soon as he knew anything, he knew that there was a heaven and a hell and that he was free to choose whether he would go to one or to the other. He attended school winters, worked on his father's farm, and for two terms was a student in St. Johnsbury Plain Academy. Converted at twenty, he determined to enter the ministry. After preparatory work in the academies at Newbury and St. Johnsbury, during which he supported himself by farm labor and teaching, in March 1856, with his wife, Lois Lee, whom he had recently married, he entered the Methodist Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H. Completing the three years' course there in two, he graduated in 1858. In the meantime, April 1857, he had been admitted to the Vermont Conference on trial, and in April 1858 he was appointed to the church in Lunenburg, Vt.

The Sepoy Mutiny was an impetus to greater missionary activity in India. New workers were called for, and among the first to respond were Parker and his wife. The former was appointed missionary Feb. 22, 1859, and ordained Apr. 10, at Lynn, Mass., where the New England Conference of the Methodist Church was in session. Six days later the Parkers sailed on the merchant vessel *Boston,* which was bound for Calcutta with a cargo of ice. They arrived at that port on Aug. 21, and reached the mission at Lucknow on Sept. 3. For the remainder of his life Parker was a potent agency in the development of Methodist missionary enterprises in Northern India, much of the time with Moradabad as his base. He was active in almost every branch of the service—preaching and evangelistic work, building operations, management of the press, education, and administration. When the India Conference was organized in 1864, he was appointed presiding elder, and officiated as such, with the exception of some three years, until 1900. While in the United States because of ill health in 1868–70, he and his wife were instrumental in organizing the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society in Tremont Street Church, Boston, and in arranging for the formation of coördinate societies in other great centers of the country. After his return to India he raised funds for the building in Moradabad of a structure combining church and school house, which, after his death, was named the Bishop Parker Memorial High School. With J. M. Thoburn [*q.v.*] he took the lead in establishing the Central Conference of India. In 1884 he was a delegate from the North India Conference to the General Conference, held at Philadelphia. He advised with John F. Goucher [*q.v.*] regarding the village schools in India which this philanthropist financed, and for years gave them his attention.

Always deeply interested in Sunday school work and the training of the young, he formed at Moradabad a young people's society which became the model for many others; and after the Epworth League organization was adopted in India, he served as president of the national society. He was a delegate to the General Conferences of 1892, 1896, and 1900. At the last of these he was elected missionary bishop. Soon after his return to India, however, he became ill and on June 4, 1901, he died at Naini Tal.

[J. H. Messmore, *The Life of Edwin Wallace Parker, D.D.* (1903); *Christian Advocate*, June 13, 1901; *Zion's Herald*, June 12, 1901.] H. E. S.

PARKER, ELY SAMUEL (1828–Aug. 31, 1895), Seneca sachem, engineer and soldier, was born at Indian Falls, Town of Pembroke, Genesee County, N. Y., the son of William and Elizabeth Parker. The English patronymic was adopted from a white friend, but the father, known as Jo-no-es-do-wa to the Seneca, was a Tonawanda Seneca chief and a veteran of the War of 1812. The mother, Ga-ont-gwut-twus, was descended from Skaniadariio, a great Iroquois prophet.

Parker was reared as a reservation Indian, but received liberal schooling at the Baptist mission school of Tonawanda, and at Yates and Cayuga academies. He quit school at eighteen, and for the next twenty years was frequently the representative of his people in prosecuting Indian claims in Washington, where he was received with interest by the most distinguished, becoming the dinner companion of President Polk. In 1852 he became a sachem of his tribe, with the name Do-ne-ho-ga-wa, or Keeper of the Western Door of the Long House of the Iroquois. Throughout his life he was the champion of his people, defending them from dishonest land schemes of the whites. His association with Lewis H. Morgan [*q.v.*] was of particular interest, for he gave Morgan important aid in preparing what was perhaps the first scientific study of an Indian tribe, published as *League of the Ho-de-no-sau-nee or Iroquois* (1851). Parker read law but was refused admission to the bar on the grounds that he was not a citizen. He then turned to civil engineering, taking a course at Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute. As an engineer he was conspicuously successful, holding various important posts until 1857, when he became superintendent of construction for various government works at Galena, Ill. Here he became the friend of a clerk and ex-soldier, Ulysses S. Grant. During this period he held many high offices in the Masonic order.

Parker

When the Civil War broke out he could not, at first, obtain release from his duties in Galena, but in 1862 he resigned, and in accordance with tribal custom returned to the reservation to secure his father's permission to go to war. Neither the governor of New York nor the secretary of war would commission him on account of his race, and Seward even went so far as to tell him that the war would be won by the whites without the aid of the Indians. Finally, in the early summer of 1863, he succeeded in getting commissioned as captain of engineers, and joined Gen. J. E. Smith as division engineer of the 7th Division, XVII Corps. On Sept. 18 he joined his old friend Grant at Vicksburg as a staff officer, and on Aug. 30, 1864, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel and Grant's military secretary. He was present when Lee surrendered at Appomattox Court House, Apr. 9, 1865, and his huge swarthiness was noted by Lee with uplifted brows, but when it came time to draw up the terms of capitulation, the senior adjutant-general, Col. Theodore S. Bowers [*q.v.*], was so nervous he could not write, and it was the Indian, Parker, who at Grant's orders made interlineations in the penciled original and then transcribed in a fair hand the official copies of the document that ended the Civil War.

Following the war he remained as Grant's military secretary, being commissioned a brigadier-general of volunteers as of the date of Appomattox. He was appointed first and second lieutenant in the cavalry of the Regular Army, but his most signal military distinctions were his brevet appointments in the Regular Army, as captain, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel, and brigadier-general, all on Mar. 2, 1867, and all for gallant and meritorious services. On Dec. 25, 1867, he married Minnie Sackett of Washington, from which marriage a daughter was born. He resigned from the army on Apr. 26, 1869, for by one of Grant's first appointments as president, Apr. 13, 1869, he had been made commissioner of Indian affairs. His many changes in the existing system, designed to give justice to the Indians, earned him enemies, and in February 1871 he was tried by a committee of the House of Representatives for defrauding the government. Although entirely cleared of the charges, he was heart-broken, and resigned soon after to go into business. He made a small fortune in Wall Street, but lost it by paying the bond of a defaulter. Later business ventures likewise proved unfortunate, and in his latter years he held positions with the police department of New York City. He died at his country home at Fairfield, Conn. In 1897, with impres-

sive ceremonies, his remains were reinterred in the Red Jacket lot of Forest Lawn Cemetery, Buffalo, N. Y., on land that formerly belonged to his tribe.

[A. C. Parker, *The Life of Gen. Ely S. Parker* (1919); biog. data, including an unfinished autobiog. in *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. VIII (1905); *Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant*, vol. II (1886); *Army and Navy Jour.*, Sept. 7 and Dec. 7, 1895; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I, which gives day of death as Aug. 30; Horace Porter, *Campaigning with Grant* (1897); *Polytechnic* (Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute), Sept. 28, 1895; obituaries, giving Aug. 31 as day of death, in *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune*, Sept. 1, 1895, and *Hartford Courant*, Sept. 2, 1895.] D. Y.

PARKER, FOXHALL ALEXANDER (Aug. 5, 1821-June 10, 1879), naval officer, was born in New York City, the son of Foxhall Alexander and Sara Jay (Bogardus) Parker, and the nephew of Richard Elliot Parker [*q.v.*]. William Harwar Parker [*q.v.*] was a younger brother. His mother was a daughter of Gen. Robert Bogardus, a New York lawyer and infantry officer in the War of 1812. His father, a native Virginian and descendant of George Parker who settled in Accomac County, Va., in 1650, was a distinguished naval officer who served through the War of 1812, rose to command rank, and in 1848 was sent on an important mission to the German Confederation. He died a captain in 1857. The younger Foxhall Alexander was appointed midshipman from Virginia on Mar. 11, 1839. After service in the West Indies and against the Florida Indians, he studied at the naval school in Philadelphia and was made passed midshipman June 29, 1843. He then served in the *Michigan* on the Great Lakes; in coast survey work, 1848; in the *St. Lawrence* on a Mediterranean cruise, 1849–50; in the *Susquehanna* in the East Indies; and again in the coast survey, 1854–55. In the meantime, Sept. 21, 1850, he was commissioned lieutenant. After four years on the reserved list, he was in the Pacific Squadron, 1859–61. As executive officer of the Washington Navy Yard during the first year of the Civil War, he took active part in the naval campaign on the Potomac, and in July 1861, after the battle of Bull Run, manned Fort Ellsworth, Alexandria, with 250 sailors and marines for the defense of Washington. He was promoted to commander July 16, 1862, and in September following took command of the wooden gunboat *Mahaska*, in which he was senior officer in operation against Matthews Court House, Nov. 22, 1862, being commended by Gen. Erasmus D. Keyes for his "admirable manner" of exercising command. During the following winter he was on special duty in Washington, and at work on tactical problems, first set forth in his *Squadron Tactics under Steam* (1864) and later in his *Fleet Tactics under Steam* (1870); this latter book attracted attention at home and abroad for its advocacy of "obliquing into line" to avoid exposure of broadsides and facilitate use of the ram. He also wrote *The Naval Howitzer Ashore* (1865) and *The Naval Howitzer Afloat* (1866), both of which were used as Naval Academy textbooks. In June 1863 he took command of the *Wabash* in Admiral J. A. B. Dahlgren's squadron off Charleston, but during the bombardment of Fort Sumter, Aug. 17–23, 1863, he had charge of the four-gun naval battery on Morris Island. From Jan. 1, 1864, until the end of the war he commanded the Potomac Flotilla, which was then chiefly engaged in patrol, reduction of shore batteries, and small combined operations with the army.

Following promotion to captain, July 25, 1866, he commanded the *Franklin*, European Squadron, 1870–71; served as chief of staff in the North Atlantic Fleet, 1872; and in September of that year drew up a new code of signals for steam tactics. He was made commodore, Nov. 25, 1872, was chief signal officer, 1873–76, and in December 1874 acted as chief of staff in the fleet assembled under Admiral A. L. Case for practice in Florida waters just after the *Virginius* affair. From 1876 to 1878 he had charge of the Boston Navy Yard. His death occurred suddenly from enlargement of the heart at Annapolis, Md., where for a year he had been superintendent of the Naval Academy. At his death bed were gathered all of his ten children. He was married, first, Feb. 10, 1846, to Mary Eliza Greene of Centerville, R. I., who died in 1849; second, Nov. 2, 1853, to Lydia Anna, daughter of Capt. H. S. Mallory, U. S. A., who died in 1862; and third, Oct. 20, 1863, to Caroline, daughter of Thomas Donaldson, a Baltimore lawyer. Parker was an able and highly respected officer, keenly interested in the science of his profession and a prominent writer on naval themes. He was chairman of the committee which organized the United States Naval Institute in 1873, and was its president in 1878. In addition to books mentioned above, he wrote *The Fleets of the World: The Galley Period* (1876), the first of a projected series of three volumes on naval history, and *The Battle of Mobile Bay* (1878).

["The Parker Family of Essex . . .," in *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1898; M. S. B. Gray, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Ancestors and Descendants of Gen. Robert Bogardus* (1927); L. R. Hamersly, *The Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps*

(3rd ed. 1878); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (Navy); *Army and Navy Jour.* (editorial), June 14, 1879; *Washington Post*, June 11, 1879.] A. W.

PARKER, FRANCIS WAYLAND (Oct. 9, 1837–Mar. 2, 1902), educator, son of Robert Parker, a cabinet maker, and Milly (Rand) Parker, a teacher before her marriage, was born in the township of Bedford, N. H. His father died when he was six years of age, and he was bound out by his uncle to a farmer by the name of Moore, who provided him with a home and allowed him to attend district school eight weeks each winter. Parker records in some biographical notes that the best part of his early education was secured from his contacts with nature on the farm and from his reading of the few books available at the Moore house—the Bible, *The Pilgrim's Progress*, Wayland's *Life of Judson*, and some almanacs. At thirteen years of age he went to Mount Vernon, N. H., where he attended a good school. Here he earned his living by working at odd jobs until he was sixteen, when he began teaching.

He taught in New Hampshire until 1859 and was then called to a school in Illinois. Returning to New Hampshire at the beginning of the Civil War, he enlisted in Company E, 4th New Hampshire Volunteers, being commissioned lieutenant, Sept. 20, 1861. He rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and was wounded, Aug. 16, 1864, at the battle of Deep Bottom. During his convalescence he married Phenie E. Hall of Bennington, N. H. After his marriage he returned to his regiment at Port Royal and served to the end of the war. Later, he taught school in several New Hampshire towns and in Dayton, Ohio, where he was put in charge of the normal school. He experimented with new and radical methods of teaching, following the lines suggested by the work of Dr. Edward A. Sheldon [*q.v.*] of Oswego, whose book entitled *Object Lessons* seemed to him to show how to overcome the formalism then common in American schools. His wife and an only child died while he was at Dayton.

In 1872 he went to Europe and studied in Germany, coming into contact with the new methods of teaching geography developed by Ritter and Guyot. He was also inspired by the developments in natural science, by the new methods of the Herbartians, and by what he observed in the kindergartens. Returning to the United States in 1875, he secured an appointment as superintendent of schools at Quincy, Mass. The community and the superintendent were enthusiastic about the introduction of science into the curriculum, the cultivation of freedom and informality in classroom methods, and the complete elimination of the rigid discipline traditional in New England schools. In 1880 he was called to Boston as one of the supervisors of the school system, and in 1883 he was appointed principal of the Cook County Normal School, Chicago, Illinois, which afterwards became a part of the city school system. Here Parker introduced the new ideas and methods which had made him famous in Quincy and Boston. He imported teachers sympathetic with his views and displaced the conservatives whom he found on the faculty. This action brought down a storm of protest, and for years a continuous battle raged between the reformer and his opponents. In the meantime, the Cook County Normal School became a widely recognized center for vigorous, liberal movements in elementary education. In 1883 he married Mrs. Frances Stuart, first assistant in the Boston School of Oratory. She sympathized fully with the reforms which Parker advocated and greatly reinforced him in his work.

In 1899 he was offered the opportunity to establish an independent normal school by Mrs. Emmons Blaine, who gave him a generous endowment for the new Chicago Institute. In 1901 the Institute was transferred to the University of Chicago and Parker became the first director of the School of Education of the University. This transfer was effected in part because of the cordial sympathy between Parker and Prof. John Dewey, and also because of President Harper's conviction that education as a technical field should be cultivated in the University. Parker did not serve long in his new position, however, since he died in 1902. His publications include *How to Study Geography* (1889); *Talks on Pedagogics* (1894); and in collaboration with Nellie L. Helm, *Uncle Robert's Geography* (4 vols., 1897–1904).

[William M. Griffin, *School Days in the Fifties* (1906); "In Memoriam," *Elementary School Teacher*, June 1902; W. S. Jackman, "In Memoriam, Col. Francis Wayland Parker," *National Education Association, Jour. of Proc. . . . 1902* (1902); F. A. Fitzpatrick, "Francis Wayland Parker," *Educational Rev.*, June 1902; I. F. Hall, *In School from Three to Eighty* (copr. 1927); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, Mar. 3, 1902.] C. H. J.

PARKER, HORATIO WILLIAM (Sept. 15, 1863–Dec. 18, 1919), composer, was born in Auburndale, Mass., of American ancestry. Both his parents had artistic tastes. His father, Charles Edward Parker, was an architect of good reputation. The Boston Post-Office building was constructed under his supervision, and several large buildings in Boston and elsewhere in New England were planned by him. He held

the office of superintendent of construction of government buildings in New England. Horatio's mother, Isabella Graham (Jennings) Parker, daughter of a Baptist minister, took a lively interest in literary matters and had a good command of Latin and Greek. She supplied several original poems and verse translations as *libretti* for her son's music. There were besides Horatio a brother, Edward, who later became a surgeon in the navy, and two sisters. Until he was sixteen he attended a private school in Newton, not far from Auburndale. Though this was his only schooling apart from the study of music, his home training and later scholastic environment, from which his unusually alert mind absorbed a full measure of culture, more than made up for the absence of class-room drill. His case is not unlike that of many other artists whose bias towards their chosen art tips the scales against the enthusiastic pursuit of ordinary subjects of study. But like the best of the artists of this class, lack of training made little practical difference, for Parker was exceptionally cultivated in his speech and choice of words, both in English and German, and especially in his mature years had a wide knowledge of matters remote from his profession.

There is no record of musical precocity in Parker. Indeed he did not show much interest in music until after his fourteenth year. His mother, whose tastes embraced music as well as literature, gave him lessons on the piano and organ. When the passion for music once sprang up in him he made up for lost time and at the age of sixteen became organist in a small church at Dedham, Mass., and later at St. John's church in Roxbury, now part of Boston. Not having acquired the ability to read music quickly at sight, he was obliged to commit to memory the whole service of music. During his early period he made studies in theoretical music under various teachers, Stephen A. Emery, the author of a well-known textbook on harmony, John Orth, and George W. Chadwick, all of whom stood high among Boston musicians. In 1882 Parker left Auburndale for study abroad. He was intending to study with the famous composer Joachim Raff, but, owing to the death of Raff, the plan had to be abandoned. Instead Parker went to Munich and enrolled himself in the Hochschule für Musik. He remained there until 1885. He was one of the most prominent and successful students in the school and was admired by the distinguished organist and composer Josef Gabriel Rheinberger, under whom he studdied composition and organ-playing and who exerted a strong influence on Parker's music.

Parker

Rheinberger himself was a natural descendant of the line of classic German composers, and in composition and teaching showed a devotion to contrapuntal and structural perfection that was only slightly weakened by the softer influence of the Romanticism of his time. It is not difficult to account for the peculiar style that Horatio Parker developed during these formative days. Conservatism and a natural feeling for religion, together with the respect for tradition and validity of technique inculcated by Rheinberger's example, tended to crystallize his manner of expression as well as his point of view. In later years, after much experience in conducting choirs, Parker's style received a third element, the simple seriousness of the English choral style.

Parker graduated from the Hochschule in Munich in 1885, his second essay in elaborate composition, *King Trojan* (*opus* 8), being performed by a chorus and orchestra, with soloists, at the graduation exercises. (His first large composition had been a setting of the Twenty-third Psalm, *opus* 3, for women's chorus and organ, written during his Auburndale-Boston period, and later extensively revised.) At this time he became engaged to Anna Plössl, daughter of a bank official at Munich, but he was obliged to teach for a time before he could gather funds enough to return to Munich and marry, and for a year he was at the Cathedral School, Garden City, Long Island. Soon after the marriage, which took place on Aug. 9, 1886, the couple left Germany and settled in New York. Parker resumed his teaching at Garden City and also held a position at the National Conservatory in New York, then enjoying a prestige because of the presence on the faculty of Antonin Dvořák, the Bohemian composer. During this period Parker acted as organist successfully in three churches, St. Luke's in Brooklyn, St. Andrew's in Harlem, and the Church of the Holy Trinity, which stood at the corner of Madison Avenue and Forty-second Street, New York. Most of his smaller compositions for practical use by church choirs date from this time. Many of them are still in current use.

Parker first became known through performances of his *Hora Novissima* (*opus* 30) for chorus, solos, and orchestra, generally regarded as his masterpiece. He made this beautiful musical setting of the Latin poem of Bernard de Morlaix in 1891 and 1892. His mother supplied an English translation. It was first given on May 3, 1893, by the Church Choral Society of New York at the Church of the Holy Trinity. Productions on a larger scale by the Handel and

Haydn Society of Boston and at the Springfield Festival soon followed. This work and the good reports of Parker's record at Munich made him suddenly famous, as fame went in those days. The two most important positions of his career soon fell to him, the post of organist and choir director at Trinity Church, Boston (1893), and the professorship of music at Yale University (1894). The inconvenience of holding positions in two cities geographically so far apart as Boston and New Haven was offset by the pleasure he got from his association with his many friends among the musicians in Boston, notably Arthur Foote, George W. Chadwick, and Arthur Whiting, who with Parker made an interesting and influential group. Even so, the weekly journeys became irksome, and in 1900 Parker resigned from Trinity Church. As Battell Professor of Music at Yale he was virtually organizer of the system of instruction in music that still (1934) is in force in the School of Music. In 1904 he was made dean of the school. But teaching composition and lecturing on music history was far from being his only contribution to music in his community. Soon after his arrival at Yale he was asked to become conductor of the then recently organized New Haven Symphony Orchestra. Through his efforts the orchestra was taken over by the University. With this guarantee of permanence and the building of the fine concert auditorium Woolsey Hall (1901), the orchestra became a useful laboratory for the Department of Music and an important element in the musical life of New Haven.

In addition to his duties at the University, in 1901 he became organist at the Collegiate Church of St. Nicholas, at the corner of Fifth Avenue and Forty-eighth Street, New York. Also, some years later he became conductor of two singing societies in Philadelphia, the Eurydice Club, a chorus of women, and the men's organization, the Orpheus Club. By arranging his various appointments in such a way as to meet the demands of rehearsals and classes he was able to add to his routine the direction of still another out-of-town organization, the Derby (Connecticut) Choral Club. With the conductorship of the Oratorio Society and of the Symphony Orchestra in New Haven itself completing the list, Parker carried a burden of responsibility hardly equaled in the case of any other American composer. In 1902 he received from Cambridge, England, the honorary degree of Doctor of Music. This was the culmination of a series of honors that already had been bestowed upon him by English musical organizations. The program of the Three Choirs Festival for

Parker

1899 at Worcester had included *Hora Novissima,* with Parker conducting. The success was so great that the authorities at Hereford invited him to compose a work for their festival. Parker quickly responded, and the beautiful *Wanderer's Psalm* (*opus* 50) was performed. Other large works of this period were *A Star Song* (*opus* 54), given at the Norwich Festival (1902), and *The Legend of St. Christopher* (*opus* 43), given at Bristol. Parker's mother supplied the poetic text for *St. Christopher.* This work is the most elaborate of his oratorios and contains some of his finest pages. Yet it has not caught the imagination of either English or American audiences as has *Hora Novissima,* upon which his reputation mainly rests. On account of its naturalness and the freshness and beauty of its expression, new and attractive in a dull period of transition in the world's music just after the passing of Brahms and Wagner, this oratorio received the impetus of general approval that still carries it forward.

Parker took a year's leave of absence from Yale in 1901–02, and another in 1912–13. With these exceptions his work at the University went on uninterruptedly from 1894 until his death in 1919. They were busy years, for with all his other duties he composed music incessantly. Throughout his professional life he was honored by one invitation after another to write works for special occasions, and he always filled these commissions promptly. His later period of production is marked by the composition of several large works. His mother, to whom he was attached by especially strong ties of affection, died in 1903. He was from that time on obliged to turn to another writer for texts for his choral compositions. In collaboration with the poet Brian Hooker he produced in 1911 the large and imposing opera *Mona* (*opus* 71). This won a prize (April 1911) offered by the Metropolitan Opera Company, New York, and was lavishly presented the following year. Its austerity and complexity were such as to win for it hardly more than a *succès d'estime.* The composer had grafted upon his earlier and normal manner certain new modes of thought, in which the influence of Richard Strauss may be detected, with the result that his style took on a glamour and harmonic richness which were appropriate to opera but which, with equal appropriateness, had been to some extent excluded from his religious compositions. Yet Parker, with his antecedents and classic training, could not suddenly become "operatic." In 1914 he and Hooker completed a second opera, *Fairyland* (*opus* 77) no less subtle and brilliantly colored than *Mona.* This time the

National Federation of Musical Clubs bestowed the prize and sponsored a performance at Los Angeles. Though the operas have not found a permanent place in the repertory of opera they stand as splendid monuments of the genius of Parker. The orchestration is so skilful and effective as to arouse regret that Parker never found time nor occasion to write pure symphonic music. He seems rather to have been destined to be a master of choral composition, and his most enduring work is in this field. It should be said, however, that no small part of the interest of the oratorios lies in the facile and effective orchestral accompaniment.

Parker spent the long college vacations at his summer home at Blue Hill, Me. He could there compose without interruption, and each year he returned to New Haven with a new work. The wear and tear of composing during the summer after an exhausting season at New Haven broke down his health. For many years he suffered from rheumatism and was occasionally actually incapacitated. The end came in 1919. He had composed an exceptionally beautiful ode, again with Brian Hooker's collaboration, *A.D. 1919* (*opus* 84) which was performed at a ceremony in honor of the Yale men who had fallen in the Great War. This was his final composition. Some of his most poignant and spontaneous music is in this score. He died in December 1919 at the home of his daughter Isabel Parker Semler at Cedarhurst, Long Island. His burial place is in the churchyard of Newton Lower Falls, Mass., near his native village of Auburndale. He was survived by his wife and his three daughters. A memorial service was held at Yale University on Feb. 15, 1920, at which several of his works were performed. Parker had led many classes of Yale men into an appreciation of fine music, and had been of service to the University in a tangible way by composing music for special functions. As early as 1895 he wrote an "Ode for Commencement Day" (*opus* 42), the text by Edmund Clarence Stedman, and in 1901 dedicated a fine setting of Professor Thomas Dwight Goodell's Greek ode "Hymnos Andron" (*opus* 53), to the Yale bicentennial celebration. *Cupid and Psyche* (*opus* 80), a masque with text by John Jay Chapman, was performed in the School of the Fine Arts (1916), and, finally, *A.D. 1919*, which may be regarded as his own memorial. Two of Parker's choral works were composed for the Norfolk (Connecticut) Festival, *The Dream of Mary* (*opus* 82), a Morality, with text by John Jay Chapman, and *King Gorm the Grim* (*opus* 64). For the Centenary of the Handel and Haydn Society of Boston in 1915 he composed the oratorio *Morven and the Grail* (*opus* 79), to a poem of Brian Hooker. He wrote also a large amount of music for organ, the most important being the Concerto in F major (*opus* 55) which he as soloist performed with the symphony orchestras of Boston and of Chicago, and the Sonata in E flat (*opus* 65). In these works the influence of his former master Rheinberger is strong.

Parker's work began in the pioneer days of American music. By the time of his death the pioneer days may be said to have come to an end. His influence was especially valuable during his earlier period when America had just started to educate herself in music. In appearance Parker was notably dignified and commanding, and his features were clean-cut and handsome. He was impatient, but devoted to his friends. In 1905 he was elected to the American Academy of Arts and Letters. He was also a fellow of the American Guild of Organists, and a member of many clubs.

[The most complete and accurate list of Parker's works is that compiled by W. O. Strunk and published in the *Musical Quart.*, Apr. 1930. The library of the School of Music, Yale Univ., has a collection including a nearly complete list of the published works, and all of the manuscripts which were in the composer's possession at the time of his death. The Lib. of Cong. also has an extensive collection of published compositions and a few manuscripts, including the full score of *Hora Novissima*. In each of these libraries are a few works not included in the other. The manuscript full scores of some of the works for chorus and orchestra are in the hands of the publishers of the vocal score. The fullest biographical and critical accounts are G. W. Chadwick, *Horatio Parker* (1921), being the address delivered before the Am. Acad. of Arts and Letters, July 25, 1920; and D. S. Smith, "A Study of Horatio Parker," in the *Musical Quart.*, Apr. 1930. An illustrated article in the *Musical Times* (London), Sept. 1, 1902, gives some additional information. The article in *Grove's Dictionary of Music and Musicians* (3rd ed., 1928), vol. IV, gives the facts of Parker's professional life and a list of the works to which *opus* numbers are assigned. Brief notices in various histories of music in America repeat the facts contained in the works listed, adding some critical comment. The library of the Yale School of Music has a collection of memorabilia including newspaper clippings, contemporary notices of the performance of *Hora Novissima*, *Mona*, and *Fairyland*, programs, obituary notices, correspondence, and copies of published and unpublished essays and lectures.] D. S. S.

PARKER, ISAAC (June 17, 1768–July 25, 1830), jurist, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Daniel Parker, a goldsmith, and Margaret (Jarvis) Parker. He was descended from John Parker, of Bideford, Devon, who emigrated to America in 1629 and whose children settled in Charlestown, Mass. After preparation at the Latin Grammar School, he entered Harvard at the age of fourteen and graduated in 1786 with high honors. For a short time he taught at the Latin School, then he moved to Castine, in what was later the state of Maine. There he set up his

law practice. On June 19, 1794, he married Rebecca Hall, daughter of Joseph Hall of Medford, a descendant of John Hall who settled in Concord in 1658. They had eight children. In 1796, when he was twenty-eight, he was elected to Congress, but after one term of which little record of activity is available he retired voluntarily to become United States marshal for the Maine district. He was displaced upon Jefferson's accession to the presidency and returned to his law practice. He had made his impression, however, and in 1806 he was appointed a judge of the supreme court of Massachusetts. He was shortly called upon to sit in the trial of T. O. Selfridge, charged with shooting the son of Benjamin Austin [*q.v.*] in a political quarrel. Feeling ran high and Parker won a great reputation for impartiality. In 1814 he was elevated to the chief justiceship, which post he held till his death. In 1816 he was inaugurated as first Royall Professor of Law at Harvard. It was not a teaching chair, and in May 1817 he laid before the Corporation a plan for a law school. The plan was adopted and the school established, with Asahel Stearns as first instructor. Parker continued to lecture until 1827. He was also an overseer of Harvard and a trustee of Bowdoin and served as president of the Massachusetts constitutional convention of 1820. His published works were confined to his judicial decisions and to a few orations, revealing a somewhat less florid style than that which characterized the times.

Parker's decisions illuminate both the man's character and the jurisprudence of the period. They indicate a mind of exceptional clarity and penetration, albeit with a sensitivity to the needs of changing times. In the words of Justice Story: "It was a critical moment in the progress of our jurisprudence. . . . We wanted a mind to do in some good degree what Lord Mansfield had done in England, to breathe into our common law an energy suited to the wants, the commercial interests and the enterprise of the age" (Palfrey, *post*, p. 28). It was a time when equity was more important than law. Parker rendered this kind of service, and many of his decisions came to be recognized as authoritative generally through the state and federal courts. "He felt that the rules, not of evidence merely, but of all substantial law must widen with the wants of society" (*Ibid.*). In addition he rendered no small service by skilfully consolidating the reforms in the Massachusetts judicial system, instituted in the early years of the century. His character was eminently suited to his rôle. Above the pettinesses of party strife, free from affectation, at the same time both patient and gay, he carried into his public life the rectitude of an active and sincere religious conviction.

[See: J. G. Palfrey, *A Sermon Preached . . . After the Decease of the Hon. Isaac Parker* (1830); Lemuel Shaw, address in *Am. Jurist*, Jan. 1831; G. A. Wheeler, *Hist. of Castine, Penobscot, and Brooksville, Me.* (1875); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1852; Charles Warren, *Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1908), vol. I; *Jurisprudent*, July 10, 1830; *Boston Advertiser*, July 27, 31, 1830. Parker's decisions appear in 2–17 *Mass. Reports* and 1–9 *Pickering Reports*.]

E. S. G.

PARKER, ISAAC CHARLES (Oct. 15, 1838–Nov. 17, 1896), congressman, judge, was born in Belmont County, Ohio, the son of Joseph and Jane (Shannon) Parker. His mother was a niece of Gov. Wilson Shannon [*q.v.*], and Isaac attributed his success largely to her. He attended a country school and then taught and attended Barnesville Academy alternately. By the time he was twenty-one he had picked up enough law to begin to practise and had opened an office in St. Joseph, Mo. He served successively as city attorney, 1860–64, presidential elector in 1864 (voting for Lincoln), corporal in the local militia, judge of the twelfth circuit 1868–70, and member of Congress, 1871–75. In Congress he was a member of the committee on territories of which James A. Garfield was chairman. Here he showed a great deal of interest in the Indians and sought to improve their condition. During his first term he introduced a bill designed to give them civil government in a territory to be called Oklahoma (*Congressional Globe*, 42 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 2954) and he continued to urge the adoption of such a measure as long as he was in Washington. He also favored woman's suffrage in the territories (*Ibid.*, 681). He introduced a resolution calling for an amendment to the Constitution making members of Congress ineligible for the presidency while members and for two years thereafter.

In 1875 President Grant appointed him chief justice of Utah and the nomination was confirmed, but at the request of the President he resigned to accept appointment as judge of the western district of Arkansas. Probably no appointment ever gave more satisfaction. His jurisdiction extended over the Indian Territory, a country infested by "criminal intruders," renegades and fugitives from justice in other states and foreign countries. His predecessor was a weak man, who had allowed the court to fall into disrepute. On taking office (May 10, 1875) one of Judge Parker's first acts was to appoint 200 deputy marshals. He was to need many fearless men: sixty-five deputies were slain while he was in office. In his first term he tried eighteen murder cases and fifteen convictions were secured.

This record struck terror to the hearts of evil doers and raised the hopes of law-abiding citizens. It is said that he passed sentence of death upon 162, in the course of twenty-one years, of whom eighty were hanged (Harman, *post*, pp. 170–80). Very few judges have a like record. Because of his great number of executions he won a reputation—outside the state, among those who did not know him or the conditions in his district—for great severity, but he was neither harsh nor cruel; his sympathies went out to the victim and his family rather than to the murderer. He was well versed in the English common law, but treated the law as a growing organism and believed that the safeguards thrown around the accused to protect him from savage judges should not be used to protect murderers. Some of his decisions were reversed because he had brushed technicalities aside; one murderer was convicted three times and, after Parker's death, escaped with a prison sentence.

Parker had a keen sense of humor and sometimes yielded to it in the court room. He gave freely to charity and never accumulated much property. He was intensely interested in education and served as president of the school board at Fort Smith, Ark., for several years. He is said to have drawn up the bill, passage of which was secured by John H. Rogers, representative for the district, providing for the donation of the United States Reservation in Fort Smith to the schools of the city instead of to a railroad. He married Mary O'Toole, in St. Joseph, Mo., Dec. 12, 1861, and they had two sons. He was buried in the National Cemetery in Fort Smith.

[W. S. Speer, *The Encyc. of the New West* (1881); Fay Hempstead, *Hist. Review of Ark.* (2 vols., 1911); S. W. Harman, *Hell on the Border* (1898), an interesting account of criminals and criminal trials, which must be used with caution; *Arkansas Gazette* (Little Rock), Nov. 18, 1896; conversation with Judge J. M. Hill, who knew Parker intimately.]

D. Y. T.

PARKER, JAMES (*c.* 1714–July 2, 1770), printer, journalist, born at Woodbridge, N. J., was the grandson of Elisha Parker of Barnstable, Mass., who moved to New Jersey, and Elizabeth Hinckley, sister of Gov. Thomas Hinckley. His father was Samuel Parker, a cooper, who probably married Janet Ford. James married Mary Ballareau and they had two children: Samuel Franklin, who followed his father's business, and Jane Ballareau, who was married to Judge Gunning Bedford, Jr. [*q.v.*], of Delaware. When James was eleven his father died and on Jan. 1, 1727, he was apprenticed for eight years to William Bradford [*q.v.*], prototypographer of New York. In April 1733, when twenty-one months of his indenture remained, Bradford advertised his time for sale; but on May 17, Parker ran away. His master offered a reward for his apprehension, describing the boy in this advertisement as being "of a fresh Complection, with short yellowish Hair." He probably "wandered to Philadelphia and found employment with Benjamin Franklin" (Nelson, *post*, p. 18). On Feb. 26, 1742, Franklin formed a silent partnership with him for carrying on a printing business in New York City for six years, furnishing a press, type, and other appurtenances. Later, while Franklin was abroad, Parker acted as his financial auditor in the business of Franklin & Hall of Philadelphia. On Dec. 1, 1743, Parker succeeded Bradford as public printer of New York, a post he held till about 1760. He had several difficulties with the government. He was censured in 1747 for printing a remonstrance of the Assembly to the governor's message. He was brought before the grand jury for printing on Apr. 27, 1752, a "Speech of an Indian," for which he apologized in an interesting article on the circumstances of printers (*New York Gazette, Revived in the Weekly Post-Boy*, Aug. 3). For printing an article in March 1756 on affairs in Ulster and Orange counties, he and his partner were put under arrest, but discharged on revealing the writer's name, apologizing, and paying fees. Again, in 1770, he printed a paper by "A Son of Liberty," who proved to be Alexander McDougall, 1732–1786 [*q.v.*], for which Parker was arrested; but he died before the case was settled. During the Stamp Act troubles of 1765, his New York newspaper appeared in mourning.

Besides his several printing businesses, Parker had varied public interests. In Woodbridge he was captain of a troop of horse, a lay reader in Trinity Church (Episcopal), and postmaster in 1754. This year he was also made postmaster at New Haven, operating through John Holt, his partner. In 1756 he became comptroller and secretary of the general post-offices of the British colonies, and in 1765, when the territory was divided, he had charge of the northern district, operating from Woodbridge. He was made librarian of the library of the corporation of the City of New York in the autumn of 1746, instituted a system of circulating and fines, and prepared and printed a catalogue of the books under his care (*New-York Weekly Post-Boy*, Oct. 13, 1746). On June 2, 1764, he became judge of the court of common pleas of Middlesex County, N. J., and in that year he compiled and printed a work setting forth the duties and powers of justices, entitled *Conductor Generalis*, which for many years had a vogue with public officials.

He was identified with printing and journalism in New York, New Jersey, and Connecticut. In the first two he was public printer, and in Connecticut he was printer to Yale College. Besides public documents, newspapers, and magazines, he printed poetry, fiction, history, science, almanacs, chap books, and works on religion and husbandry. In his day he was in eminence and efficiency the equal of any printer in English-America. He was a better printer than Bradford or Franklin. Among his apprentices and journeymen were those who afterward established themselves near and far. In January 1753 Parker took William Weyman into partnership at New York, and their relations continued until dissolved with acrimony in January 1759. Weyman managed the New York office while Parker was busy at Woodbridge. The New York printery was assigned in February 1759 to his nephew, Samuel Parker, and so continued till John Holt [*q.v.*] took over the plant in the summer of 1760.

On Apr. 12, 1755, Parker established at New Haven the *Connecticut Gazette,* with Holt as manager and silent partner. The New Haven printery had been set up by Franklin for his nephew, Benjamin Mecom [*q.v.*]. Holt had come to work for Parker at New York in 1754, and when Parker relinquished this office in the summer of 1760, Holt left New Haven to conduct the New York establishment, where he remained a partner till 1762, when he leased the plant for himself, conducting it till Parker resumed control in the autumn of 1766. At Woodbridge, in 1751, Parker set up the first permanent printing office of New Jersey. He gave this plant exclusive attention from 1753. From 1765, when he went to Burlington, it was managed by his son. At Woodbridge he printed more than seventy-five items, consisting of orations, sermons, discourses, and the public documents of the province. His press issued the first newspaper of New Jersey, really a waif, on Sept. 21, 1765, entitled the *Constitutional Courant,* as a protest against the obnoxious Stamp Act. It was in 1765, while business was slack at Woodbridge, that Parker planned to set up a printing office at Burlington, in part to print for Judge Samuel Smith of that city a *History of New Jersey,* and to do the public printing requested by Gov. William Franklin. For this purpose he borrowed from Benjamin Franklin a press and outfit that Mecom had used in Antigua, Boston, and New York. In New York Parker printed four different periodicals, the *Independent Reflector,* edited by William Livingston, from Nov. 20, 1752, to Nov. 22, 1753, fifty-two weekly numbers; the *Occasional Reverberator,* a folio weekly of four

Parker

issues, Sept. 7 to Oct. 5, 1753; *John Englishman,* a folio weekly of ten numbers, Apr. 9 to July 5, 1755; and the *Instructor,* a quarto weekly of ten numbers, Mar. 6 to May 8, 1755. But his greatest venture in periodical literature was printed at Woodbridge, the *New American Magazine,* edited by Samuel Nevill, which ran through twenty-seven numbers from January 1758 through March 1760. This monthly was a financial failure, as all ten predecessors in that field in the colonies had been. In December 1768 Parker offered the remainder for sale at bargain prices to "induce the Curious to preserve some of them from Oblivion" (*New York Gazette, or the Weekly Post-Boy,* Dec. 12, 1768). It was probably on Jan. 4, 1743, that he began the third newspaper of New York, first called the *New-York Weekly Post-Boy,* then the *New York Gazette, Revived in the Weekly Post-Boy,* and finally the *New York Gazette, or the Weekly Post-Boy.* It underwent many vicissitudes till it expired in 1773. Parker suffered greatly for several years from the gout, and death came to him at a friend's house at Burlington on July 2, 1770. He was buried beside his parents in the Presbyterian churchyard at Woodbridge, though he was an Episcopalian. His former partner Holt in an obituary stated that he "was eminent in his Profession"; "possessed a sound judgment & extensive Knowledge"; "was industrious in Business, upright in his Dealings, charitable to the Distressed," and that he "left a fair Character" (Holt's *New York Journal,* July 5, 1770). His estate was executed by his wife (*New York Gazette,* Aug. 6, 1770).

[Parker's newspapers are primary sources for his biography. Family data are best given by W. H. Benedict, in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.,* 4 ser. VIII (1923) and extended in his *New Brunswick in Hist.* (1925). See also J. W. Dally, *Woodbridge and Vicinity* (1873). The best account of Parker's career as a New Jersey printer is Wm. Nelson, "Some N. J. Printers and Printing in the Eighteenth Century," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* n.s. vol. XXVI (1911) and reprinted separately. Pertinent, though not always correct, are Isaiah Thomas, *Hist. of Printing in America* (2 vols., 1874) and C. R. Hildeburn, *Sketches of Printers and Printing in Colonial N. Y.* (1895). For Parker's relations with Franklin see *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser. XVI (1903) and Wilberforce Eames, "The Antigua Press and Benj. Mecom," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* n.s. vol. XXXVIII (1929), also issued separately. On Parker's newspapers see C. S. Brigham, "Bibliog. of Am. Newspapers," in *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* especially n.s. vol. XXVII (1917). The history and bibliography of his magazine ventures are best in L. N. Richardson, *A Hist. of Early Am. Mags.* (1931). The history of his first political trouble is related from records by the present writer in the *Lit. Collector,* Nov. 1903.] V. H. P.

PARKER, JAMES (Mar. 3, 1776–Apr. 1, 1868), legislator, was born in Bethlehem township, Hunterdon County, N. J., the son of James and Gertrude (Skinner) Parker. His father was

a member of the Provincial Council and of the Board of Proprietors of the colony. The family had taken refuge in Hunterdon County during the Revolutionary struggle but returned in 1783 to the ancestral home in Perth Amboy. Here James Parker was educated by the Rev. Joseph I. Bend, Rector of St. Peter's Church, before going to a preparatory school at Amwell, Hunterdon County. He entered Columbia College, New York, in 1790 and was graduated second in the class of 1793. He was placed in the counting house of John Murray, then a leading merchant in New York, but the death of his father in 1797 obliged him to return home to take up the management of the family estate. In 1806 he was elected to the New Jersey Assembly from Middlesex County. He was reëlected annually until 1811, and again in 1812, 1813, 1815, 1816, and 1818. During his legislative career he was particularly interested in the act of 1817 establishing free schools in the state, the act authorizing aliens to purchase and hold real estate in New Jersey, and the act passed in 1820 prohibiting, under the severest penalties, the exportation of slaves from the state.

Parker returned to the legislature in 1827 chiefly for the purpose of promoting the construction of a canal between the Delaware and Raritan rivers. Although the bill which he reported did not pass in the legislative session of 1827–28, he had the satisfaction a few years later of witnessing the actual construction of a canal essentially the same as that which he had proposed. When the Delaware and Raritan Canal Company was organized, he became a director and held this post until his death. His interest in the boundary question between New York and New Jersey led him to serve on the different boundary commissions until a settlement was reached in 1829. In 1815 and again in 1850 he was chosen mayor of Perth Amboy. Although he had always been a Federalist, he supported the candidacy of Andrew Jackson for the presidency and served as presidential elector in 1824. When Jackson became president in 1829, Parker was appointed collector of the port at Perth Amboy, which at that time had considerable foreign trade. While serving in this office, he was elected to the House of Representatives in 1832 and was reëlected in 1834. His distrust of Martin Van Buren led him to align himself with the Whig party in 1840 and to support its candidates until the fifties, when he joined the Republican party. He was one of the most influential members of the convention called in 1844 to frame a new constitution for New Jersey and served as chairman of the committee on the bill of rights. His

interest in education was recognized by his election to the boards of trustees of Rutgers College and of the College of New Jersey. He was elected vice-president of the New Jersey Historical Society at its formation and subsequently became its president. For many years he was a vestryman of St. Peter's Church, Perth Amboy, and usually represented that parish in the Protestant Episcopal Convention of New Jersey. Freed from the necessity of earning his own living by a generous patrimony, he was always willing to answer the call to public service. He was twice married: on Jan. 5, 1803, to Penelope Butler, daughter of a once wealthy Philadelphia merchant, who died in 1823, and on Sept. 20, 1827, to Catherine Morris Ogden, sister of David B. Ogden [*q.v.*]. John Cortlandt Parker [*q.v.*] was a son by the first marriage.

[R. S. Field, "Address on the Life and Character of the Hon. Jas. Parker," *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. I (1869); K. M. Beekman, "A Colonial Capital: Perth Amboy and Its Church Warden, Jas. Parker," *Ibid.*, n.s. III (1918); Jas. Parker, *The Parker and Kearney Families of N. J.* (Perth Amboy, 1925); W. N. Jones, *The Hist. of St. Peter's Church in Perth Amboy, N. J.* (1923); *Daily State Gazette* (Trenton), Apr. 3, 1868.]

W. S. C.

PARKER, JAMES CUTLER DUNN (June 2, 1828–Nov. 27, 1916), composer, organist, teacher of music, was a son of Samuel Hale Parker and Sarah Parker of Boston and a nephew of Richard Green Parker [*q.v.*]. His grandfather was successively rector of Trinity Church and bishop of Massachusetts. His father was long senior warden of Trinity. James attended the Boston Latin School and Harvard College. Graduated in 1848, he studied law for three years, but a taste for music, pronounced in boyhood, led him to become as his friend John S. Dwight phrased it, "the first son of Harvard to forsake a dry profession [the law] and follow the ruling passion of his life" (*post*, p. 442).

Parker went to Leipzig, Germany, in 1851 to pursue academic musical studies with Plaidy, Hauptmann, Richter, and Moscheles. His organ teacher was Johann Gottlob Schneider, II, whose virtuosity on a stiff old organ, at which "one had almost to sit on the keys," greatly impressed him. In September 1854 Parker returned to Boston for a life-time of playing, composing, and teaching for which his thorough professional training and social standing admirably fitted him. He was always the gentleman, courteous, unassuming, scholarly. In 1864 he was chosen organist of Trinity Church. He held this position at the old edifice, destroyed by fire in 1872, and for many years at the new church in Copley Square under its celebrated rector, Phillips Brooks, at whose funeral he played. His church programs were

conservative, as were his own compositions. The latter began with occasional hymns and anthems. His first essay in a large form was the "Redemption Hymn," 1887. In 1890 for the seventy-fifth anniversary of the Handel and Haydn Society Parker wrote a cantata, "St. John." His oratorio, *The Life of Man* (1894) was first sung at the Easter concert of this society in 1895. "The Blind King," his only secular composition of importance, was written for the Apollo Club of Boston. These works were untouched by modernism. One of Parker's younger colleagues wrote of him: "Much . . . that is being done today he had no use for; but his knowledge of the classical composers was something to be envied."

Parker's reputation as a teacher brought him many private pupils, several of whom formed in 1862 the Parker Club, devoted to giving choral and instrumental concerts. Early invited by Dr. Eben Tourjée to teach at the New England Conservatory of Music, Parker was a member of its faculty for thirty-seven years, teaching pianoforte and theory. He gave a notable performance at the school's thousandth concert, May 17, 1882. In his later years at the Conservatory he held the position of examiner, listening with patience to the performances of thousands of pupils whom he regarded with impartiality and discernment. At his death he was the oldest member of the Harvard Musical Association. Resolutions of the New England Conservatory faculty, adopted shortly after his death and signed by Louis C. Elson, Wallace Goodrich, and E. Charlton Black, stressed his honorable share in creating a professional and public regard for the great masters of music. Parker's wife was Maria Derby of Andover, Mass., whom he married on Sept. 6, 1859. He died at his home in Brookline.

[*The New England Conservatory Mag.-Rev.*, Dec. 1916–Jan. 1917, has an extended obituary article. See also: biographical notes by J. S. Dwight in Justin Winsor's *The Memorial Hist. of Boston*, vol. IV (1883); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; *Boston Evening Transcript*, Nov. 28, 1916.] F. W. C.

PARKER, JANE MARSH (June 16, 1836–Mar. 13, 1913), author, was born in Milan, Dutchess County, N. Y., the youngest and third daughter of Joseph and Sarah (Adams) Marsh, who were both descended from native families prominent in the American Revolution. She was christened Permelia Jenny but she later adopted the name Jane. At the time of her birth her father was pastor of the Christian (Campbellite) Church in Milan, and when she was two years old the family moved to Union Mills, Fulton County, N. Y., where Elder Marsh served as pastor of the Campbellite church, editor of the Christian Publishing Association, and of the

Parker

Christian Palladium, the weekly paper of the sect, and was also the local postmaster. In 1843 her parents became followers of William Miller [*q.v.*] and early in 1844 the family moved to Rochester, where her father edited the weekly journal and numerous other publications of the Millerite movement. This experience with religious hysteria and fanaticism injured the spirit of the young girl whose childhood was oppressed by a sense of impending doom. When old enough to be liberated from her father's religious vagaries, she swung to ritualism and orthodoxy and even contemplated entering an Episcopalian sisterhood. She remained for many years a devout Episcopalian, devoting much energy to church work and religious writing. She attended several private schools in Rochester, among which were the Collegiate Institute and the Clover Street Seminary.

In 1854 she began to write for the lay periodicals of the day. Her stories and poems appeared in various publications, including the *Waverley* and *Knickerbocker* magazines, and friendly criticism encouraged her literary ambitions. More than twenty-five articles, tales, poems, and stories were produced during her eighteenth year alone. On Aug. 26, 1856, she was married to George Tann Parker, a lawyer of Rochester. Several volumes, including stories for boys and Sunday-school books, appeared in the next decade. The most important in this group is *Barley Wood* (1860), which deals with a girl's conversion from sectarianism and is significant for implied personal attitude and autobiographical incident. For a few years her writing was interrupted by her care of her children, but after this interlude she applied her pen with renewed activity. She wrote several volumes and articles on the history of Rochester and central New York state. A novel, *The Midnight Cry* (1886), which utilized the events of the Millerite delusion, material to which she returned frequently for later articles and stories, is disappointing in its failure to capitalize her own personal experience. It was, however, considerably altered by her publisher.

Her long life was comparatively uneventful. In the fall of 1889 she accompanied Frederick Douglass and his party to Haiti and wrote several articles on its problems. The work produced after the death of her husband in 1895 was almost completely in the essay form. She became associated with the editor of Burrow's *Jesuit Relations* and was a frequent contributor to *Harper's*, the *Outlook*, and the *Atlantic Monthly*. Her papers in the "Contributor's Club" of the *Outlook* and the "Spectator" columns of the *Atlantic*, are

among her best work. In the fall of 1905 she moved to Escondido, Cal., to live with her daughter. In 1911 they moved to Los Angeles and there she died on Mar. 13, 1913. She was a woman of great personal energy and in addition to her many religious activities engaged herself in women's clubs, patriotic societies, and civic movements. She was particularly interested in the problem of delinquent children and was hostile to woman's suffrage.

[Sources include: Marcelle LeMénager, "The Life and Work of Jane Marsh Parker, 1836–1913," a monograph in the library of Geo. Washington Univ.; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; E. R. Foreman, *Centennial Hist. of Rochester, N. Y.*, vol. II (1932); Los Angeles *Times*, Mar. 14, 1913; information as to certain facts from members of Mrs. Parker's family.] R. W. B.

PARKER, JOEL (Jan. 25, 1795–Aug. 17, 1875), jurist, was born in Jaffrey, N. H. He was descended from Abraham Parker, a native of Wiltshire, England, who had settled in Woburn, Mass., by 1645. His father, Abel Parker, a Revolutionary soldier, was married in 1777 to Edith Jewett of Pepperell and three years later moved from Massachusetts to New Hampshire and cleared a farm. Joel Parker studied at Groton Academy and at Dartmouth, graduating in 1811. He read law in Keene, N. H., and was admitted to the bar in 1817. In 1821 he went to Ohio with a view to opening an office, but he returned in 1822 to resume his practice at Keene. He followed the law with singleness of purpose and achieved a success which was substantial but not sudden. In 1833 he was appointed to the superior court—the highest court in the state—and five years later was promoted to be chief justice. As a trial judge he inspired juries with courage. Lawyers might call him obstinate, but as a colleague explained, this was excusable in a judge who was almost always right. In deciding cases he reasoned to his own conclusions. Upon declining to follow a multitude of decisions sustaining a certain rule, he said: "they are so many that their very number furnishes cause of suspicion that the rule is not quite sound. . . . It would seem, if the rule had a solid foundation, that one fifth, or one tenth, of the number might have settled the question. Its numerical strength, therefore, is weakness" (14 *N. H.*, 215, 228). This independence came to notice through his clash with Justice Story. The New Hampshire court gave one construction to the word *lien* in the Bankruptcy Act of 1841, while Story (who had framed the act) enforced a contrary view in the federal circuit court. Neither would recede, but after Story's death the Supreme Court upheld Parker's construction (14 *N. H.*, 509 and 48 *U. S.*, 612).

In November 1847 Parker was appointed Royall Professor of Law at Harvard. On Jan. 20, 1848, he was married to Mary Morse Parker, of Keene. In June he resigned from the bench after having moved to Cambridge. In his new position he was ill at ease and was tempted to go back to New Hampshire. The moot court was a pleasure, but lecturing required a painful adaptation, and he had to begin with unfamiliar subjects. His method was formal and thorough rather than vivid. The poorer men could not follow. "His law . . . was . . . exasperatingly sound; but he could no more give a comprehensive view of a whole topic than an oyster, busy in perfecting its single pearl, can range over the ocean floor" (Batchelder, *post*, p. 223). Yet such men as Joseph Choate and Henry Billings Brown [*qq.v.*] found him a fountain of knowledge, and Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes, another pupil, referred to him as "one of the greatest of American judges, . . . who showed in the chair the same qualities that made him famous on the bench" (*Speeches by Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr.*, 1891, p. 35). In 1868 he resigned his professorship. For years the great triumvirate, Parker, Theophilus Parsons, and Emory Washburn, had reported that "there have been no new arrangements in relation to the organization of the School or the course of instruction." Unlike Langdell who presently came to invigorate the school, Parker in his methods had not been ahead of his time.

He served in the New Hampshire legislature for three years (1824, 1825, 1826); as delegate from Cambridge to the constitutional convention of 1853, and as commissioner to revise the statutes of Massachusetts. In politics he was Whig, then Republican. When Sumner was attacked he made a speech of protest which, according to a correspondent to the *Edinburgh Review* (October 1856, p. 595), "for earnestness and solemnity of denunciation has not been anywhere surpassed." He opposed the doctrine that secession was constitutional and criticised Taney's opinion in the Merryman case (J. D. Lawson, *American State Trials*, IV, 1918, p. 880). He defended the capture of Mason and Slidell. But as the drama of war and Reconstruction unfolded, his conservative nature recoiled. The Republicans had "dug the grave of the Constitution" (*To the People of Massachusetts*, 1862, p. 10). When Parker's conduct or opinions were impeached, he retaliated. "A good stand-up fight was meat and drink to him" (Batchelder, p. 225). He was especially irritated by clergymen who argued that the president might abolish slavery, saying that their "impudent assumption" that they had a

greater knowledge of constitutional law than men trained to the profession was a "nuisance." "If any of them have D.D. attached to their names, that does not disqualify them from being also ASS, and mischief-makers besides" (*Constitutional Law and Unconstitutional Divinity*, 1863, pp. 6, 10). But he had a more genial side. He read poetry and loved flowers. At home and among friends he was affectionate. Students invited to dine were surprised to find he could regard a glass of wine with real enjoyment, and that he was witty. He published more than a score of articles and pamphlets, among which may be mentioned *Daniel Webster as a Jurist* (1852); *Non-Extension of Slavery, and Constitutional Representation* (1856); *Personal Liberty Laws* (*Statutes of Massachusetts*) *and Slavery in the Territories* (1861); *Habeas Corpus and Martial Law* (1862); *International Law* (1862); *The War Powers of Congress, and of the President* (1863); *Revolution and Reconstruction* (1866); and *The Three Powers of Government ... The Origin of the United States, and the Status of Southern States* (1869).

[G. S. Hale, "Joel Parker," *Am. Law Rev.*, Jan. 1876; Emory Washburn, memoir in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XIV (1876), and in *Albany Law Jour.*, Aug. 28, 1875; C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); Charles Warren, *Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1908), vol. II; *The Centennial Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1918); S. F. Batchelder, *Bits of Harvard Hist.* (1924); *New Eng. Mag.*, July 1912; F. C. Jewett, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Jewetts of America* (1908), vol. I; *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 19, 1875.]

C. F.

PARKER, JOEL (Aug. 27, 1799–May 2, 1873), Presbyterian clergyman, was born at Bethel, Vt. Before entering Hamilton College, from which he graduated in 1824, he had been a district school teacher at Livonia, N. Y. A member of the Presbyterian church there, he organized, under the name of the Catechetical Society of Livonia, what ultimately became a Sunday school. Following two years of study at Auburn Theological Seminary, late in 1826, at the request of several Presbyterian residents of Brighton, near Rochester, N. Y., he undertook to form a new church. This was organized early in 1827 as the Third Presbyterian Church of Rochester, and Parker was installed as pastor. In 1830 the "free-church movement" drew him to New York City, where he became leader of a group of Christians whose aim was to extend church privileges to the poorer people of the city, particularly to those whom they considered excluded from the Reformed Dutch and Presbyterian churches by high pew rents. The First Free Presbyterian Church of New York was organized that year with sixteen members, and

Parker

with Parker as pastor. So marked was the growth of the movement that within six years four other free churches had been formed, including Tabernacle Church. After using the Masonic Hall on Broadway for a time, the First Free Church erected on Dey Street a building, the first floor of which was given over to stores, and the second to an auditorium; all seats were free. Nearly seven hundred members were received during Parker's three-year pastorate.

In 1833 he left New York for New Orleans, where he was pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, but in 1838 he was recalled to New York by Tabernacle Church, with which his Dey Street parishioners had united. For two years, beginning in 1840, Parker was the president of Union Theological Seminary, then in its fifth year, and was also its professor of sacred rhetoric and its financial agent. For a long period the institution's financial condition was precarious, largely owing to the business crisis of 1837, and professors' salaries could be paid only in part and irregularly. Accordingly, when, in 1842, Parker received a call to the pastorate of Clinton Street Presbyterian Church at Philadelphia, he accepted, and the office of president remained vacant until 1873. He retained a deep interest in the institution, however, and was one of its directors from 1857 to 1869. In 1852 he became pastor of Bleecker Street Church, New York. This, his third pastorate in that city, was followed by one of six years at Park Street Church, Newark, N. J., 1862–68. Ill health compelled him to resign and his death occurred five years later in New York.

Three factors seem mainly responsible for Parker's renown—the prominence of his four positions in the country's metropolis, the successes in making converts that marked his pastorates; and his own strong individuality, decided convictions, and aggressive methods. In the famous revivals of his time he was a leader. Particularly in the first half of his ministry he was an unusually vigorous, popular, and effective preacher. During his career he published many pamphlets and several bound volumes, including *Lectures on Universalism* (1830) and *The Pastor's Initiatory Catechism* (1855). He also edited *Sermons on Various Subjects* (1851), by John Watson Adams. On May 9, 1826, he married Harriet Phelps of Lenox, N. Y.

[*Gen. Biog. Cat. of Auburn Theol. Sem.* (1918); F. DeW. Ward, *Churches of Rochester* (1871); *Hist. of Rochester Presbytery* (1889); Jonathan Greenleaf, *A Hist. of the Churches of All Denominations in the City of N. Y.* (1846); E. F. Hatfield, *The Early Annals of Union Theol. Sem. in the City of N. Y.* (1876); G. L. Prentiss, *The Union Theol. Sem. in the City of N. Y.*

(1889); *Alumni Cat. of the Union Theol. Sem.* . . . (1926); *N. Y. Tribune*, May 6, 1873.] P. P. F.

PARKER, JOEL (Nov. 24, 1816–Jan. 2, 1888), jurist, statesman, was born near Freehold, N. J., the son of Charles and Sarah (Coward) Parker. His father was state treasurer, 1821–32, 1833–36, and state librarian, 1823–36. The son received his early education at Trenton and at Lawrenceville High School, after which he entered the College of New Jersey (later Princeton), graduating in 1839. He studied law under Henry Woodhull Green [*q.v.*] and was called to the bar in 1842, establishing himself at Freehold. His practice became increasingly lucrative. From the first he played an active part in politics. In 1844 he campaigned for Polk and in 1847 he was elected as Democratic assemblyman for Monmouth County. For one term (1852–57), he was Monmouth County prosecutor and conducted trials of state and semi-national interest. His activity in the local militia which he reorganized, and in which he attained the rank of major general (1861), helped to bring him to the front in state politics at the outbreak of the Civil War.

Parker voted for Douglas in 1860 and was a Democratic presidential elector. In the autumn of 1862 he was elected governor and served for a three-year term, beginning in January 1863. The chief problems of his first administration arose out of the Civil War. He was a free and outspoken critic of the federal government for he believed that the seceding states had been driven to resistance by the agitation of misguided Northern abolitionists. He was hostile to the Emancipation Proclamation, believing that it would make peace more difficult. But while approving the New Jersey legislature's proposal of a peace conference, he agreed with Lincoln that secession could not be permitted and that the Union must be preserved, with force if need be. He was careful not to surrender any of the state's rights and he regarded any encroachment by the federal government upon the state as intolerable, even when under cover of "war power" or "military necessity." He opposed the move in Congress to secure the use of the roadway of the Raritan and Delaware Bay Railroad for the War Department, after the Department had been restrained from such use by an injunction, and for this he was praised in New Jersey but censured outside the state for supporting state rights against the general good.

At the same time Parker gave prompt aid in supplying troops for military service. By propaganda and a system of bounties he was able to secure volunteers for the New Jersey quota for nearly a year after conscripts were being drafted in other states. His action in caring for the wounded, for soldiers' families, and for the military cemeteries made him very popular in the state. In the matter of state administration he advocated the change in the dates of the fiscal year in order to make it coincide with the sessions of the legislature. He also sponsored the establishment of a sinking fund for the redemption of the war loans. Being ineligible for a second term immediately, he resumed his private law practice in 1866. His name was placed in nomination for president by the New Jersey delegations at the Democratic conventions of 1868 and 1876. In 1871 he was reëlected governor for another three-year term. Although faced with a Republican legislature with which he occasionally clashed, he retained his popularity. From January to April 1875 he served as attorney-general of the state but resigned to return to private practice. In 1880 he was appointed to the state supreme court, which office he was holding by a second appointment at the time of his death. He died suddenly in Philadelphia of an apoplectic stroke.

Parker was an impressive man, very tall and dignified, and courteous in bearing. But he was neither quick of wit nor original of thought. As a governor he was openly partisan, though never mischievously so. As a judge his conduct was marked by caution. He was married in 1843 to Maria M. Gummere, the daughter of Samuel R. Gummere of Burlington. She with two sons and one daughter survived him.

[The memorial of Parker by J. S. Yard, "Joel Parker, the War Gov. of N. J.," in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. X (1890), is included in the *Memorial of Joel Parker* (1889), containing sketches and tributes. Other sources include: Wm. Nelson, ed., *Nelson's Biog. Cyc. of N. J.* (1913), vol. I; *The Biog. Encyc. of N. J. of the Nineteenth Century* (1877); F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State* (1902), vol. IV, and *Geneal. and Memorial Hist. of the State of N. J.* (1910), vol. III; W. E. Sackett, *Modern Battles of Trenton*, vol. I (1895); chapters by C. M. Knapp in I. S. Kull, *N. J., A Hist.* (1930), vol. III; Parker's messages as governor in *Docs. of the Legislatures of the State of N. J.*, 1863–66, 1872–75; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Jan. 2, 1888; *Daily True American* (Trenton), Jan. 3, 1888.] H. M. C.

PARKER, JOHN (July 13, 1729–Sept. 17, 1775), Revolutionary soldier, captain of minutemen, was a native of Lexington, Mass. His parents were Josiah and Anna (Stone) Parker, and he was descended from Thomas Parker who was in New England as early as 1635. He served his military apprenticeship in the French and Indian War, and fought at Louisburg and Quebec. At one period he was probably a member of Roger's noted corps of rangers. On May 25, 1755, he married Lydia Moore, by whom he had seven chil-

dren. In time of peace he was a farmer and mechanic, and held various town offices. On the eve of the Revolution he was captain of a company of minute-men, and he became one of the foremost figures in the opening event of the war at Lexington, Apr. 19, 1775. As the British detachment under Major John Pitcairn [*q.v.*] approached Lexington on the night of Apr. 18, Parker placed a guard around the house which sheltered John Hancock and Samuel Adams, and collected about 130 men. This force he soon dismissed, but as the British column neared the town, he again assembled his men—from forty to perhaps seventy in number. Apparently he had no definite plans; a suggestion has been offered that he was acting under orders from Samuel Adams (Murdock, *post*, p. 24). Modern historians have cast a doubt on the authenticity of the famous words with which Parker is said to have harangued his men, and which are carved upon the modest stone in the green: "Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon. But if they mean to have a war, let it begin here." The events which followed are involved in controversy, but in the skirmish on the green eight Americans were killed and ten were wounded (French, *post*, p. 111). Following the skirmish Parker assembled as many militiamen as possible, marched in the direction of Concord, and had a share in the fighting during the British retreat. As the provincials gathered for the siege of Boston, he conducted a small body to Cambridge, but was too ill to have a part in the battle of Bunker Hill. Nothing further is recorded of his career, and he died in the following autumn.

[A. G. Parker, *Parker in America* (1911), pp. 81, 117; Theodore Parker, *Geneal. and Biog. Notes of John Parker of Lexington and His Descendants* (1893); De Forest Van Slyck, "Who Fired the First Shot?" (MS.); Harold Murdock, *The Nineteenth of April, 1775* (1923); Allen French, *The Day of Concord and Lexington* (1925).] E.K.A.

PARKER, JOHN CORTLANDT (June 27, 1818–July 29, 1907), lawyer, better known as Cortlandt Parker, was born in Perth Amboy, N. J., the son of James [*q.v.*] and Penelope (Butler) Parker. When he was five years old his mother died, and he was brought up by his step-mother, Catherine Morris Ogden. He attended the Perth Amboy Military Academy, and was expected to go into engineering, which at that time did not involve a college education. But by study he prepared for the college entrance examinations and passed them without the knowledge of his father. He entered Rutgers College with the class of 1836 where he led his class and was valedictorian at graduation. The next three years he spent in reading law, first in the office of Theodore Frelinghuysen of Newark, and, upon the retirement of Frelinghuysen, in the office of Amzi Armstrong. He was admitted to the bar as attorney in September 1839, and as counselor in September 1842, continuing in the practice of law until his death. His first public service was as prosecutor of the pleas in Essex County, which office he held from 1857 to 1867.

Parker entered politics in the campaign of 1840 as a Whig, and the Clay-Frelinghuysen campaign of 1844 brought him out in support of his mentor. Although an opponent of the slave trade and the extension of slave territory, he was in favor of the rigid enforcement of the Fugitive Slave Law. He took a prominent part in the organization of the Republican party in New Jersey. Originally a Seward man, he supported enthusiastically the candidacy of Lincoln in 1860 and not only presided at a Lincoln ratification meeting in Newark but also served on a committee to welcome the president-elect when he stopped at Trenton on his way to the inauguration. Meanwhile, on Sept. 15, 1847, Parker married Elizabeth Wolcott Stites, daughter of Richard W. Stites, of Morristown, N. J., thus uniting two well-known families of the state. His interest in the success of Lincoln's administration led him many times to the White House. As president of the state convention in 1864 he worked for the renomination of Lincoln and used his influence to force reconsideration of the Fourteenth Amendment after its first rejection by the New Jersey legislature. He several times declined appointment to the supreme court of New Jersey but in 1871 served with Chief Justice Mercer Beasley and Justice David A. Depue on a commission to revise the laws of the state and in 1873 served on a commission to settle the boundaries between New Jersey and Delaware. In 1872 he declined Grant's offer of a judgeship on the Court of Claims to determine the proper distribution of the *Alabama* award, but in 1876 he accepted an appointment by the President to investigate the Louisiana vote in the Hayes-Tilden election. President Hayes in 1877 sought to name him as minister to Russia and in 1882 President Arthur requested him to represent the United States as minister to Austria, but both offers were declined. He again declined public office when Gov. Foster M. Voorhees in 1902 offered him the United States senatorship made vacant by the death of William Joyce Sewell.

Throughout his life Parker was a devout member of the Episcopal Church, serving for twenty-five years as junior warden of Trinity Church,

Newark, and many times as deputy from his diocese to its general convention. He was always interested in religious and philanthropic work and became president of the board of trustees of the City Hospital in Newark. He served unselfishly the bar associations of his county and state and was in 1883–84 president of the American Bar Association. It is said that he was ambitious for a place on the United States Supreme Court but relinquished his aspirations in favor of his friend Joseph P. Bradley, upon whose life and services he pronounced a eulogy before the Supreme Court at his death. Parker's influence upon the development of law in New Jersey can hardly be overestimated. His work as advisory master of the court of chancery resulted in opinions which have become landmarks in corporate law of the state. For many years before his death in Newark, he was the acknowledged leader of the bar in New Jersey.

[Sources include: E. M. Colie, "Cortlandt Parker, 1818–1907," *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 4 ser. V (1920), with a partial bibliography of Parker's addresses; W. M. Magie, "The Life and Services of the Late Cortlandt Parker," *N. J. State Bar Asso.: Year Book*, 1908–09; "Cortlandt Parker," *Report of the Thirtieth Ann. Meeting of the Am. Bar Asso.*, 1907; *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *N. J. Law Jour.*, Jan. 1908; and *Newark Evening News*, July 30, 1907. A memorial volume containing Colie's account of Parker's Life and commemorative addresses was published under the title: *Cortlandt Parker, Citizen, Lawyer and Churchman* (1908).] W. S. C.

PARKER, JOSIAH (May 11, 1751–Mar. 14, 1810), Revolutionary soldier and politician, was the son of Nicholas and Ann (Copeland) Parker and descended from Thomas Parker, who obtained land grants in Virginia as early as 1647. This ancestor was a member of a landed family of Cheshire, and the family seat in Isle of Wight County, Va., Josiah's birthplace, bore the name "Macclesfield." In 1773 Josiah Parker married Mary (Pierce) Bridger, widow of Col. Joseph Bridger, and they had one daughter. At the beginning of the Revolutionary War, Parker entered the army and also became a member of the local committee of safety and of the Virginia revolutionary convention. He served in Virginia under Lee, and later was attached to the northern army under Washington. He attained the rank of major in 1776 and that of colonel the following year, and at the battle of Trenton he was lieutenant-colonel of the 5th Virginia Regiment. In that battle, as well as at Princeton and Brandywine, he received the commendation of the Commander-in-chief. His figure is included in the group of soldiers in Trumbull's painting, "Capture of the Hessians," and it has been stated that he received the sword of Col. Johann Gottlieb Rall at Trenton. His temper was hasty and impulsive, and in consequence of a controversy he resigned from the army in 1778. Near the close of the war, when his native state became the scene of operations, he was appointed by Governor Jefferson to command the Virginia militia south of the James River, and cooperated with Lafayette. He received large grants of land after the war, was a member of the House of Delegates, and from 1786 to 1788 was naval officer for the port of Norfolk.

Parker was an Anti-Federalist and a strong supporter of Patrick Henry. He presented himself as a candidate for delegate to the Virginia ratifying convention of 1788, but was defeated. He was a member of the First Congress, and with his colleagues he gave his vote for a future capital on the Potomac River. His career in Congress extended from 1789 to 1801, and he was at one time chairman of the naval committee. His death occurred on the family estate in Isle of Wight County.

[A. G. Parker, *Parker in America* (1911), pp. 257–61; W. T. Parker, *Gleanings from Parker Records* (1894), pp. 38–41; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of Officers of the Continental Army* (1893); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Norfolk Gazette and Public Ledger*, Mar. 19, 1810, which gives day of death as Wednesday, Mar. 14.] E. K. A.

PARKER, PETER (June 18, 1804–Jan. 10, 1888), medical missionary and diplomat in China, was born at Framingham, Mass., the son of Nathan and Catherine (Murdock) Parker, and a descendant of Thomas Parker who came to Massachusetts in 1635. Peter's father was a farmer and his mother, a farmer's daughter. On both sides of the house his family, in the language of the time, was "pious," and he was carefully reared in the orthodox Congregational faith. In adolescence he passed through the experience of deep despondency followed by joyous conversion which was regarded as desirable in the religious circles with which he was familiar, and soon afterward he felt that he should prepare for the Christian ministry. His parents needed his help on the farm, and he was delayed in acquiring an education. For a time he both went to school and taught school in Framingham. In 1826–27 he was a student in Day's Academy, Wrentham, and from 1827 to 1830 he was in Amherst College. Dissatisfied with the somewhat meager facilities in that young institution, he went to Yale in 1830, and, graduating from the college in 1831, continued in New Haven the study of medicine and theology, receiving the degree of M.D. in 1834. While in New Haven he devoted much time and energy to assisting in the religious life of the community and the college.

Before entering Yale, Parker had thought seriously of becoming a foreign missionary. In 1831 he formally applied to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions for an appointment, and in due course was accepted and assigned to China. He was ordained to the Presbyterian ministry in Philadelphia on May 10, 1834, and the followng month sailed for Canton, the first Protestant medical missionary to China. Protestant missionaries there were still greatly restricted in their activities, and could pursue their vocation only in Macao and in foreign "factories" at Canton, and even in these places they had to act with circumspectness. Within a few weeks Parker found it advisable to go to Singapore, where there were Chinese and where missionaries had more freedom; here he spent several months studying the language and maintaining a dispensary. By the autumn of 1835 he was back in Canton, and in November of that year, assisted by British and American merchants, he opened the hospital where he was to conduct the practice which became his chief claim to distinction. He specialized on diseases of the eye, particularly on the removal of cataracts, but also performed other operations, including the removal of tumors, and began giving instruction in medicine to Chinese. In 1837 he accompanied to Japan the well-known *Morrison* expedition which tried unsuccessfully to repatriate seven shipwrecked Japanese sailors. In February 1838 there was organized, largely at the instance of Parker, the Medical Missionary Society in China, an organization supported chiefly by the foreign residents in Canton. This soon gave substantial aid to Parker's hospital in Canton, and aided by it, he also opened, for a few months in 1838, a hospital in Macao.

In July 1840, because of the interruption of his work by the war between Great Britain and China, Parker returned to the United States. Here he interviewed members of the administration about developments in China—but probably with little if any effect upon American policy—and here, Mar. 29, 1841, he married Harriet Colby Webster, a relative of Daniel Webster. He visited Europe and both there and in America sought financial support for his hospital. He also attended medical lectures in Philadelphia.

In June 1842 he sailed again for China, where he resumed his medical practice in the Canton hospital. More and more he was drawn into the diplomatic service of the United States. In 1844 he served as one of the secretaries to Caleb Cushing [*q.v.*] in the negotiation of the first treaty between the United States and China. In 1845 he was appointed secretary to the American legation and in interims between commissioners was *chargé d'affaires,* continuing, at the same time, his medical practice. In 1855, ill, he returned to the United States, but that same year he became American Commissioner and Minister to China and was in China until 1857. His tenure of office fell in the particularly difficult years immediately before and in the early part of the second Anglo-Chinese war. In some respects, notably in his desire to occupy Formosa and to join with England and France in a vigorous assertion of foreign claims, his policy was more aggressive than Washington would sanction. Returning to the United States in 1857, he thenceforward made his home in Washington, interesting himself in such enterprises as the American Evangelical Alliance and the Smithsonian Institution.

[Theodore Parker, *Geneal. and Biog. Notes of John Parker of Lexington and His Descendants* (1893); G. B. Stevens, *The Life, Letters, and Jours. of the Rev. and Hon. Peter Parker, M.D.* (1896); *Chinese Repository,* 1836–44, *passim*; Tyler Dennett, *Americans in Eastern Asia* (1922); *Sen. Exec. Doc. 22,* 35 Cong., 2 Sess.; reports of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, 1836–47; letters of Parker in the files of the American Board; S. W. Williams, *The Middle Kingdom* (rev. ed., 1883), vol. II; C. T. Downing, *The Stranger in China* (Phila., 1838), vol. II; Alexander Wylie, *Memorials of Protestant Missionaries to the Chinese* (Shanghai, 1867); *Evening Star* (Washington), Jan. 11, 1888.] K. S. L.

PARKER, QUANAH [See QUANAH, 1845?–1911].

PARKER, RICHARD ELLIOT (Dec. 27, 1783–Sept. 10, 1840), soldier, statesman, and jurist, the eldest of five children of Captain William Harwar and Mary (Sturman) Parker, was born at "Rock Spring," Westmoreland County, Va. He received his elementary education in the local schools and in 1800, at the age of seventeen, entered Washington College (now Washington and Lee University) where he remained for three years. In 1803 he began the study of law under his distinguished grandfather, Judge Richard Parker, of "Lawfield," Westmoreland County. He was admitted to the bar shortly after reaching his majority and a few years later was chosen to represent his native county in the Virginia House of Delegates. The outbreak of the War of 1812 found him already an officer in the Virginia militia and on Aug. 1, 1812, he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the 111th Regiment, composed of troops from Westmoreland and other counties of the Northern Neck, later serving as colonel. He was aroused by General Hull's surrender of Detroit and in an eloquent appeal to Governor Barbour he requested that he be included in any troops sent from

Virginia to the West in order to contribute his "mite of service to retrieve the national honor." Even after it became apparent that no Virginia forces would be ordered to Western duty he continued his pleas, pointing out that the greatest weakness of the militia was lack of training, and that a few officers at least should be sent to the front for experience so that they might return as military instructors, thus anticipating the method of training employed during the World War. But Parker had to rest content with home service, defending the Potomac and Chesapeake regions against British attacks during 1813 and 1814. With the advent of peace he returned to the law which he had abandoned temporarily for the profession of arms but in which he was to gain his greatest recognition.

In 1817 Parker was made a judge of the General Court of Virginia and was a member of that body until 1836. Meanwhile, in 1831, the legislature established the Court of Law and Chancery for Frederick County and he was chosen as its first judge. This necessitated his removal to the Shenandoah Valley and he established his home at Winchester. In 1833 he was recommended by Martin Van Buren for the post of attorney-general in Jackson's cabinet, and in 1836 was chosen to succeed Benjamin Watkins Leigh as senator from Virginia. His senatorial experience was brief, however, for the next year he resigned to become a member of the Supreme Court of Appeals of Virginia, an office which he held until his death in 1840. Although Parker was not a brilliant jurist he was steady and capable, usually in agreement with the majority of the court but not hesitating to dissent when he deemed that circumstances demanded it. His opinions, clear and in general concise, indicate sound scholarship, humanitarianism, and a high sense of judicial responsibility. A member of a prominent family of the planter aristocracy of the Northern Neck of Virginia, he was an Episcopalian by inheritance and by choice. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. William Foushee, the first mayor of Richmond. Parker died at "Soldier's Retreat" in Clarke County, Va., but the legal heritage of his family lived on in his son, Richard Parker, who, at Charles Town in 1859, presided fairly and courageously over the trial of John Brown.

[*Calendar of Va. State Papers*, vol. X (1892); T. K. Cartmell, *Shenandoah Valley Pioneers and Their Descendants* (1909); *Jour. of the Senate of the Commonwealth of Va. . . . 1836–37* (1837); J. C. Fitzpatrick, ed., "The Autobiog. of Martin Van Buren," *Ann. Report of the Am. Hist. Asso. for the Year 1918*, vol. II (1920); S. P. Hardy, *Colonial Families of the Southern States of America* (1911); *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1898, Jan. 1899; *Daily Nat. Intelligencer* (Washington, D. C.), Sept. 17, 1840; records in the Adj.-General's office of the War Dept.]

T. S. C.

PARKER, RICHARD GREEN (Dec. 25, 1798–Sept. 25, 1869), teacher, writer of textbooks, was the youngest son of the Rev. Samuel Parker, rector of Trinity Church, Boston, and later bishop of Massachusetts, and his wife Anne (Cutler) Parker. He was educated at the Boston Public Latin School and Harvard College, where he was graduated A.B. in 1817. He probably began his long teaching career at once, and by 1825 was established in the Boston public school system. He was grammar master successively of the East Roxbury Grammar School (1825–28), the Boylston School for girls and boys (1828), the Mayhew School (1828–29), the Franklin School (1830–36), the Johnson School, organized in 1836 for girls only (1836–48), and the Northern Department of the Johnson School (1848–53). Records of the School Board show that his schools maintained excellent standing. When in 1836 he was transferred from the Franklin to the Hancock School, his former students petitioned the School Board for his return. When he retired, the School Board accorded him the unusual honor of continuation of salary for six months, in consideration of his "long, faithful, and efficient labors." After his retirement from the public schools, he conducted a private school for girls.

Parker is best known as a writer of textbooks of great popularity in their day, some of which passed through many editions. Like most early school-book writers, he covered many fields. His *The Boston School Compendium of Natural and Experimental Philosophy* (1837) was the first of a series of revisions, abridgments, and elaborations which gave an introductory survey of the sciences; while in the field of English composition he published *Progressive Exercises in English Composition* (1832), which had gone through forty-five editions by the end of 1845, *Progressive Exercises in English Grammar* (1834), in which he collaborated with Charles Fox, and *Progressive Exercises in Rhetorical Reading* (1835). The National Series of readers, published by A. S. Barnes & Company, in which Parker collaborated with James M. Watson [*q.v.*], were popular for many years, especially *The National Fifth Reader* (copr. 1858). He also published *Questions Adapted to Hedge's Logick* (1823), sets of questions in geography for use with the textbooks of other writers, *A Sketch of the History of the Grammar School in the Easterly Park of Roxbury* (1826), and *A Tribute to the Life and Character of Jonas Chickering* (1854). Despite the general popu-

larity of his books, he had his troubles: the manuscript records of the Boston School Committee reveal a controversy over the use of his textbooks in the Boston schools, and a vituperative pamphlet, *A Review of Parker and Fox's Grammar, Part I, Published by Several Friends of Real Improvement* (1839), attacked the book and charged the exercise of undue influence in its adoption.

Though Parker was indefatigably industrious, his labors never amassed for him a fortune. He was fond of music, and contributed critiques to the Boston newspapers on operas and concerts. He was also of a mechanical turn, and amused himself by constructing or reconstructing hand-organs and like instruments. On Apr. 20, 1820, he married Mary Ann Moore Davis, daughter of Amasa Davis and his wife Sarah Moore. They had three daughters and two sons. After his wife's death (Aug. 22, 1848) he married her cousin, Catherine (Hall) Payson, who survived him several years. He was buried in the crypt of Old Trinity Church.

[Sources include Boston School Committee Records (MS.); J. B. Pratt, *Seventy-five Years of Book Publishing* (A. S. Barnes & Company, 1913); *The Necrology of Harvard College, 1869–72* (1872); *Boston Transcript*, Sept. 27, 1869. The Harvard College Library Textbook Collection possesses most of Parker's textbooks, but not all editions.] E. W. F.

PARKER, SAMUEL (Apr. 23, 1779–Mar. 21, 1866), Congregational clergyman, missionary, explorer, was born at Ashfield, Mass., a son of Elisha Parker, a Revolutionary soldier, and of Thankful (Marchant) Parker. He was graduated from Williams College in 1806, served for a time as principal of an academy in Vermont, entered Andover Theological Seminary, and graduated in 1810. Home missionary work in western New York then occupied him until 1812, when he became pastor of the Congregational Church of Danby, N. Y., being ordained Dec. 23. Here he continued till 1827. Thereafter, he acted as agent for the Auburn Theological Seminary, preached at Apulia, N. Y., 1830–32, and at Middlefield, Mass., 1832–33, and taught a girls' school at Ithaca, N. Y.

The venture which forms his chief claim to remembrance was his exploring trip to Oregon for the purpose of selecting sites for Indian missions. His decision to become a missionary was evoked by an account, published in the *Christian Advocate* of Mar. 1, 1833, of four "wise men from the West" who had come to St. Louis seeking for their people the white man's religion. Illustrated with the picture of a monstrous flatheaded Indian, this story called forth volunteers for the missionary cause, among whom were

Parker

Parker and Dr. Marcus Whitman [*q.v.*]. Since Parker was fifty-four years old, and not in robust health, his first offer of his services to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions proved fruitless, but later, having secured assurances of financial support from a local organization at Ithaca, he succeeded in obtaining a commission. Prepared to start for Oregon as early as Apr. 10, 1833 (see letter to A.B.C.F.M.), he actually went to St. Louis in the early summer of 1834, but arrived after the fur-trade caravan for the Rockies had departed. He thereupon returned to the East and spent the next few months in an attempt to enlist missionaries for Oregon.

In the spring of 1835, the Board gave him Marcus Whitman as an associate and the two set out, joining at Liberty, Mo., the caravan of the American Fur Company, with whom they continued, from May 15 to Aug. 12, when they reached the rendezvous on Green River. Finding the Flatheads and Nez Percés assembled there eager for missionaries, Parker went forward alone, under their escort, while Whitman returned to the East with the trading caravan to organize a missionary party. Parker spent the winter of 1835–36 at Fort Vancouver. He then explored the interior, selecting sites for proposed mission stations, and in September, before the arrival of Whitman's party, sailed to the Hawaiian Islands and thence, on a whaler, around the Horn. He reached New London in May 1837. The following year his book, *Journal of an Exploring Tour Beyond the Rocky Mountains* (1838), was published at Ithaca. Several later editions were brought out in America and it was also published in Great Britain. The Whitman Mission was fitted into the scheme resulting from Parker's survey.

Parker seems to have been vigorous, but dogmatic and somewhat arrogant, ill-fitted to conciliate men's opposition or to gain their eager cooperation. He displayed good judgment of the Indian character, however, and wisdom in the selection of sites for missionary labors among the tribes. His Yankee shrewdness also guided him in estimating the agricultural, commercial, and manufacturing possibilities of the Oregon country. His first wife was a Miss N. Sears of Ashfield, Mass.; in 1815 he married Jerusha Lord, of Salisbury, Conn., a niece of Noah Webster. By her he had a daughter and two sons, the youngest being Henry Webster Parker, clergyman, scientist, and author.

[H. W. Parker, "Rev. Samuel Parker, Missionary to Oregon," *The Church at Home and Abroad*, Mar. 1895; *Gen. Cat. Theol. Sem. Andover, Mass., 1808–*

1908 (n.d.); W. H. and M. R. Webster, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Webster Family of Conn.* (1915); A. B. Hulbert, "Undeveloped Factors in the Life of Marcus Whitman," in J. F. Willard and C. B. Goodykoontz, *The Trans-Mississippi West* (1930); references listed in C. W. Smith, *A Contribution toward a Bibliog. of Marcus Whitman* (1909); Myron Eells, *Marcus Whitman, Pathfinder and Patriot* (1909); manuscript records, including Parker's tender of his services to the Missionary Board, dated Middlefield, Apr. 10, 1833, and his later correspondence and report, in A.B.C.F.M. collection, Cambridge, Mass.] J. S—r.

PARKER, SAMUEL CHESTER (May 31, 1880–July 21, 1924), educator, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, one of the large family of Samuel B. and Elizabeth Helen (Chappell) Parker. His father was an Ohio-River pilot, whose boat had been in several of the engagements of the Civil War. His mother was a woman of exceptional mental qualities and exercised a large influence over him, guiding his training until he reached mature years. His education began in the public schools. He attended the technical high school, where he came in contact with T. L. Feeney, the principal, who became his life-long friend and model as a teacher. Later the two were associated as members of the faculty at Miami University in Oxford, Ohio. After completing high school, the boy went to the University of Cincinnati, where he graduated in 1901. He took an active part in undergraduate life and was president of the senior class. He first specialized in chemistry, but during his senior year he became interested in the theory and practice of teaching, to which he devoted his career. He pursued graduate courses in education at the University of Cincinnati in 1902 and later at the University of Chicago and at Teachers College, Columbia University, where he received the M.A. degree in 1903. He came in contact during his graduate work with John Dewey and Edward L. Thorndike, both of whom exercised very large influence over his thinking. In 1903 he became professor of the history of education at Miami University and, with some interruptions due to absence for graduate work, continued at that institution until 1909. In that year he was called to the University of Chicago, where he became dean of the College of Education in 1911. He served as professor of education until the time of his death, though he relinquished the deanship in 1916. In 1915 he went on a camping trip in the Hudson Bay region, where he contracted a fever from which he never fully recovered. After some years of partial disability he died in Chicago. He was married on June 4, 1904, to Lucile R. Jones, of Cincinnati, whom he had known in college. They had one son.

He was one of the most successful writers of textbooks on methods of teaching in his generation. He wrote for both elementary teachers and high-school teachers. His books are characterized by lucidity of style and directness of attack. He showed extraordinary ability to assimilate and interpret the results of scientific and historical studies in the field of education. His two most important books are *Methods of Teaching in High Schools* (1915) and *General Methods of Teaching in Elementary Schools* (1919). As an administrator, he was the embodiment of systematic procedure. He organized every detail of the work of his clerical staff and of his associates. The impress of his organizing genius is still strong on the department of education in the University of Chicago and on the National Society for the Study of Education, of which he was secretary from 1911 to 1915. He formulated a program for the activities of this society, which is still followed and which has made it one of the most influential educational organizations in the country. As a teacher, he was exacting in his demands on his students and concrete and vivid in his presentations. As a teacher of teachers, he had no tolerance for mediocrity. He held to the philosophy, which he had learned from Dewey, that education must formulate its methods so as to meet the requirements of a changing civilization. He drew his fundamental psychology from Thorndike. He recognized inherited ability as the chief factor in human life. With him, teaching was a means of bringing to full expression the best powers of an individual.

[*Elementary School Jour.*, Sept. 1924; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, July 22, 1924; *N. Y. Times*, July 23, 1924.] C. H. J.

PARKER, THEODORE (Aug. 24, 1810–May 10, 1860), theologian, Unitarian clergyman, publicist, born in Lexington, Mass., was a descendant of Thomas Parker of Norton, Derbyshire, England, who settled in Lynn, Mass., in 1635, and in 1640 was one of the founders of the town and church of Reading. A grandson removed to Lexington in 1712 and had for grandchild the Capt. John Parker [*q.v.*] who led the Lexington minute-men, Apr. 19, 1775. John (1761–1836), son of the Revolutionary captain, a farmer and mechanic with a vigorous mind and love of knowledge, married Feb. 17, 1784, Hannah Stearns of Lexington, a woman of sensitive religious feeling without concern for doctrinal disputes. Of their eleven children only Theodore, the youngest, became eminent.

The boy's precocious childhood had marks of independent and varied aptitudes. To the end of his life he recalled the thrill of his first discovery of conscience when, in his fourth year, a childish misdeed was checked by a voice within saying

loud and clear, "It is wrong." In advance of all instruction, religious awareness began in a form which in his learned maturity he identified with the unrationalized experience of primitive man. When his New England Primer taught him the doctrine of eternal damnation he wept with terror, but vanquished the distress by trusting the divinations of his own kinder heart. In very early years he had an intense passion for beauty in every form. A child of seven years, he inferred from graduations of lichen, moss, grass, bush, and tree, a hierarchy of ascending forms throughout nature. In growing boyhood his historical lore claimed attention in the political discussions of his elders. These varied propensities, early awakened, prefigured his career.

His schooling was limited to four months of two summers, three months of ten winters in a district school taught by college students, and a few months in Lexington Academy. All other weeks were given to farm work and carpentry, but in leisure hours he read borrowed books with voracious appetite and a phenomenally retentive memory. Discerning teachers taught him Latin and Greek and he undertook modern languages by himself. At ten years he made a botanical catalogue of all vegetables, plants, trees, and shrubs that grew by his home, and when not yet twelve he turned to astronomy and metaphysics. At seventeen he began four years of teaching in neighboring district schools. He walked to Cambridge Aug. 23, 1830, and passed the examination for entrance to Harvard College. Too poor to enroll, he was allowed to take the examinations throughout the course and in 1840 was made an honorary master of arts. In March 1831 he became assistant in a private school in Boston and a year later opened his own school in Watertown. He now gained the friendship of Watertown's learned pastor, Convers Francis [*q.v.*], steeped in German thought, and won the tender love of Lydia Cabot, daughter of John Cabot of Newton. Long hours of teaching, of studying for Harvard examinations, of acquiring Semitic languages and poring over Cousin and Coleridge made a life without play or exercise; they also deprived him of the give-and-take fellowship with other youths that might have trained him to more sustained good humor and more tolerant indifference to praise and blame.

In April 1834 he entered the Harvard Divinity School, where he lived ascetically on scant savings, meager earnings, and a bursary, but prodigally in the expenditure of mental energy—"an athlete in his studies," said his fellow student Christopher P. Cranch [*q.v.*]. His journal shows a knowledge of twenty languages, and of the

Parker

most necessary, the knowledge was exact. In Prof. John Gorham Palfrey's absence, he gave the instruction in Hebrew. Echoing the thought of the faculty, he believed in an inspired Bible, a revelation evidenced by miracles, in Christ as the Son of God supernaturally conceived. Nevertheless, in editing with two classmates *The Scriptural Interpreter* he made use of mild German criticism that brought protests from the readers, and when he graduated, July 1836, he had some doubt of miracles and the virgin birth. A month later he began to translate De Wette's *Einleitung in das Alte Testament,* a work for which America was not yet ready.

Half a dozen churches offered him a settlement, but because of its proximity to libraries he chose the modest parish of West Roxbury, a suburb of Boston, and there, after marriage with Lydia Cabot, Apr. 20, he was ordained June 21, 1837. In his sermons he avoided controversial matters and presented religion only in terms of his inward experience, but this habit led him, in his private reflections, away from dependence on miraculous revelation to a main reliance on the direct, intuitive religious functioning of man's spirit, "the felt and perceived presence of Absolute Being infusing itself in me." Furthermore, the friendships now made were with the progressive spirits of the New England renaissance—Dr. William Ellery Channing and his nephew W. H. Channing, Charles Follen, Frederic H. Hedge, Wendell Phillips, George Ripley, Emerson, and Alcott [*qq.v.*]. He hailed Emerson's Divinity School Address (1838) as "the noblest, the most inspiring strain I ever listened to . . . [though] a little exaggerated, with some philosophical untruths" (Frothingham, *post,* p. 106). To the controversy that followed he contributed a pamphlet under the pseudonym of Levi Blodgett, arguing that an intuitive religious faculty makes external props like miracles unnecessary. Difference of opinion on this question was then creating division in Unitarian circles and rumors of Parker's attitude cost him the customary exchanges with the Boston pastors. From such disfavor, in spite of a militant disposition, he suffered abnormally, and the more keenly since his intense studies were now often interrupted by physical depression and despondent moods. German thought and sympathy with Coleridge, Carlyle, and Emerson, however, were surely developing his native reliance on intuition into a systematic intellectual form. An undesigned rupture came with a sermon on *The Transient and Permanent in Christianity,* preached at an ordination in South Boston, May 19, 1841. In it he demanded that "we worship, as Jesus did, with

no mediator, with nothing between us and the father of all." This was Emerson's lyrical deliverance done with a ruder prose, and a community already irritated by controversy reacted violently. The orthodox denounced him in the press; the liberal clergy withheld all tokens of fellowship; nevertheless, the following winter laymen in Boston arranged for Parker to deliver a series of lectures, which were published under the title *A Discourse of Matters Pertaining to Religion* (1842). In this remarkable work, ill received in America but of large circulation in English editions and German translation, Parker's vast erudition fortifies an eloquent appraisement of Christianity as the highest evolutionary ascent of the universal and direct human experience of divine reality. He demanded a new theology, which should be a science of religion and interpret its data by the immanence of God in nature and human experience.

The Boston Association of Ministers, to which Parker belonged, was disquieted. Its members had relaxed inherited doctrine, but they rested truth on supernatural revelation. Feeling became acute when they read an article by Parker in *The Dial* of October 1842. Some of them had served on a council called to consider the conflict of the Rev. John Pierpont with his church over a sermon on traffic in liquor, and now they found their decision denounced as a Jesuitical document in the interest of the liquor trade. In January 1843 the Association suggested that Parker resign his membership, but he refused on the ground that the right of free inquiry was at stake. Soon after, he published his translation of De Wette's *Einleitung,* and then, to secure needed rest, he spent a year in European travel (September 1843–September 1844). It was a year of rich experience for a mind stored with knowledge of history and literature, and significant in Parker's life since conferences with the scholars of many lands made him confident in his theological position and convinced of a mission to spread enlightened liberalism. Opponents created his opportunity. When Rev. J. T. Sargent invited Parker to speak in his mission chapel the controlling Fraternity of Churches intervened and Sargent resigned (November 1844). The rules for a traditional lecture in the First Church of Boston were revised to exclude Parker from future participation (December 1844). James Freeman Clarke's chivalrous exchange with Parker, January 1845, caused members of his church to secede. A group of men, therefore, resolved "that the Rev. Theodore Parker shall have a chance to be heard in Boston" and secured a hall for Sunday services. Parker was heard,

Parker

and in January, definitely resigning the West Roxbury pastorate, he was installed as minister of the new Twenty-Eighth Congregational Society of Boston, which in November 1852 found nobler quarters in the new Music Hall. Parker defined this church as a union to cultivate love of God and man with a common regard for Jesus as the highest known representative of God. It was to be active in all possible ways for human welfare, and Parker's devotion to its enterprises entailed the sacrifice of a cherished plan to elaborate a true science of religion with its own specific scientific method.

While in Rome in 1844, reflecting on America's historic task, he judged that popular ignorance and corrupt leadership required a campaign of intellectual, moral, and religious education. In his new pulpit and on lecture tours over a wide area, as well as in frequent publications, he discussed problems of war, temperance, prisons, divorce, education, human rights, the careers of American statesmen, always with a wealth of knowledge and a sober practical judgment. His faith was that social wrong would be righted as men attained consciousness of the infinite perfection of God, of the eternal right, of immortal life. Inevitably, the national situation involved him in the agitating discussion of slavery and thus of political parties and political leaders. Bold speech and bold courage gave him enthusiastic followers and bitter enemies, his frequent harsh invectives and ascription of rapacious motives intensifying the social division.

The results of his intensive study of the history and economic aspects of slavery were presented in *A Letter to the People of the United States Touching the Matter of Slavery* (1848) and in articles in the *Massachusetts Quarterly Review* (1847–1850). Webster's Seventh of March speech and the Fugitive Slave Law (1850) created a crisis, and Parker made passionate speeches in Faneuil Hall (Mar. 25, Oct. 14) and as leader of a vigilance committee was dramatically active in the escape of the fugitive slaves William and Ellen Craft (November 1850) and in the foiled plot to rescue Thomas Sims (April 1851). On Oct. 31, 1852, a week after Webster's death, Parker preached a sermon on the statesman's career, recognizing his great abilities but reprobating his character and motives. Believing in the right to secede and not averse to a separation of North and South, Parker failed to comprehend Webster's supreme devotion to national union and laid his policy to ambition for the presidency with Southern support and to financial obligations to Boston capitalists. Two days after the arrest of Anthony Burns [*q.v.*],

another fugitive slave (May 24, 1854), Parker incited Faneuil Hall hearers to rescue the prisoner by an attack on the court house, but the plan miscarried and Burns was deported. With six others, Parker was indicted by the grand jury, but on Apr. 3, 1855, the indictment was dismissed as ill framed. This fact did not hinder Parker from publishing an elaborate *Defence,* valuable for its accounts of the fugitive slave episodes but marred by invectives against the responsible authorities. The Kansas-Nebraska Bill of 1854 occasioned a fresh outburst of sermons and addresses, some passionately rhetorical, others with forceful economic argument. He now foresaw and predicted civil war. With voice and purse he supported the New England Emigrant Aid Society, the Massachusetts Kansas Committee, and as one of a secret committee abetted John Brown's project of a foray in the mountains of Virginia. At Parker's invitation Brown disclosed his plans at a secret meeting in Boston, Mar. 4, 1858, and though Parker predicted failure, he favored the project as likely to precipitate the now inevitable conflict. His political influence is evidenced by his immense correspondence with Sumner, Seward, Chase, John P. Hale, and Charles Francis Adams. Through the mediation of William H. Herndon [*q.v.*] he influenced Abraham Lincoln, who probably derived from him the formula "government of the people, by the people, for the people" (see Chadwick, *post,* p. 323).

Parker's life was strenuous and exciting; sermons, voluminous correspondence, journeys, lectures—in one year as many as ninety-eight—pastoral labor, and publications crowded full each hour. After exposure on a lecture tour in the spring of 1857 he became ill; an operation for fistula, a laming accident, and symptoms of tuberculosis followed. A violent hemorrhage, Jan. 9, 1859, ended all public activity. With wife and friends he sailed for Vera Cruz, Feb. 3, and, much improved, journeyed in June to London and Paris and then on to the home of his friend Edward Desor in Combes Varin, Switzerland. After a winter in Rome, he died in Florence on May 10, 1860, and was buried in the Protestant cemetery outside the Pinto Gate. At a great memorial meeting in Boston, June 17, he was eulogized by Emerson and Phillips. His rich library of nearly 16,000 volumes, bequeathed to the Boston Public Library, is a noble memorial of his far-ranging mind.

Parker's inability to forget social ostracism measures an affectionate man's craving for love. To humble folk and the unworldly great who were his friends, he abounded in beneficence and delightful discourse. Lacking distinguished presence, ungraceful in bearing, unmusical in voice, with little animation of manner, he yet dominated audiences by reasoning power, by full knowledge of facts, by the thrill of his moral idealism, his poetic joy in the world's ineffable beauty, and the glowing ardor of his disclosures of the mystery of communion with God. The sermons of this religious genius have lost none of their kindling power and claim the attention of students of religious experience. The theological views which disturbed his contemporaries have become characteristic of their descendants. His writings are collected in *Theodore Parker's Works* (14 vols., 1863–70), edited by Frances P. Cobbe and published in London; also in the Centenary Edition (15 vols., 1907–11), published by the American Unitarian Association, which includes a valuable introduction and critical notes. A German edition of his writings, *Theodor Parkers Saemmtliche Werke* (5 vols., 1854–61) was prepared by Johannes Ziethen.

[John Weiss, *Life and Correspondence of Theodore Parker* (1864); O. B. Frothingham, *Theodore Parker, A Biog.* (1874); J. W. Chadwick, *Theodore Parker, Preacher and Reformer* (1900); Albert Réville, *Théodore Parker, Sa Vie et Ses Œuvres* (Paris, 1865; English ed., London, 1865); Alfred Altherr, *Theodor Parker in seinem Leben und Wirken* (St. Gallen, 1894). Detailed bibliogs. are in Chadwick's *Life* and in vol. XV of the Centenary Edition of Parker's works.]

F. A. C.

PARKER, THOMAS (June 8, 1595–Apr. 24, 1677), pioneer minister, was born at Stanton St. Bernard, Wilts., the only son of the Rev. Robert Parker, a leading nonconformist (see *Dictionary of National Biography*) who was forced to take refuge in the Netherlands in 1607, and Dorothy (Stevens) Parker. Thomas matriculated at Trinity College, Dublin, in 1610; he proceeded thence to Magdalen College, Oxford, and in 1614 to the University of Leyden, where he studied theology under William Ames. His formal education was completed under Johannes Maccovius at the University of Franeker, where he received the degree of M.Phil. in 1617. There Parker published seventy theses, supralapsarian in character, which precipitated a violent controversy between his teachers and other continental divines. After the Synod of Dort had acquitted Parker of heresy, he settled in Newbury, Wilts., became assistant master of the Free Grammar School there (*The Victoria History of Berkshire,* II, 1907, p. 274), and assistant to the minister. In 1634, with numerous friends and relatives, he emigrated to Massachusetts. The company, after wintering at Ipswich, where Parker assisted the Rev. Nathaniel Ward [*q.v.*], obtained the grant of a nearby township which they named New-

bury, and promptly organized a church of which Parker and his cousin James Noyes were ordained ministers. "So unshaken was their friendship, nothing but death was able to part them. They taught in one school; came over in one ship; were pastor and teacher of one church; and Mr. Parker continuing always in celibacy, they lived in one house, till death separated them for a time . . ." (*Magnalia,* 1855, I, 485). In New England, Parker was an orthodox Calvinist in doctrine, walking forty miles to vote against Governor Vane in 1637 and later hounding the Quakers (J. J. Currier, *History of Newbury, Mass.,* 1902, pp. 41–42, 149); but in matters of ecclesiastical polity, although the son of an eminent English Congregationalist, and the pupil of another, he persuaded himself that Presbyterianism was necessary to restrain the democratic pretensions of the laity, and keep order in the New England churches. He wrote to the Westminster Assembly showing up the weak points of Congregationalism (*The true Copy of a Letter written by Mr. T. Parker . . . declaring his judgement touching the Government practised in the Churches of New England,* London, 1644), and in person argued for Presbyterianism at the New England church synods of 1643 and 1662 (J. G. Palfrey, *History of New England,* II, 1865, pp. 171–72; T. Hutchinson, *History of Massachusetts Bay,* 1795 ed., I, 206 note). Although these decided against him, Parker and his colleagues (Noyes until his death in 1656, and afterward Parker's nephew John Woodbridge) continued to rule the Newbury church in a Presbyterian manner, taking the consent of the congregation "in a silential way." The flock was not always silent: a strong section persistently demanded their rights and privileges under the Congregational dispensation, and frequently appealed to church councils and civil courts; but the Bay authorities consistently declined to discipline Parker, who eventually wore out and outlived his opponents, dying on Apr. 24, 1677. He further departed from majority practice and prejudice in admitting the unconverted to communion (Thomas Lechford, *Plain Dealing,* 1867, p. 56), in denouncing the execution of Charles I, and welcoming the royalist restoration (Dedication and Preface to James Noyes's *Moses and Aaron,* London, 1661). "Mr. Parker excelled . . . in praying, preaching, and singing, having a most delicate sweet voice" (*Magnalia,* 1855, I, 486); he conducted a free school to prepare boys for Harvard (Samuel Sewall was a pupil); and wrote interpretations of Bible prophecies, only one of which, *The Visions and Prophecies of Daniel expounded* (London, 1646), was printed.

Parker

[Cotton Mather's *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1855), I, 480–88, including a memoir by Parker's nephew and pupil, Nicholas Noyes; S. E. Morison, "The Education of Thomas Parker of Newbury," *Pubs. Colonial Soc. of Mass.,* Apr. 1932, 261–67; J. B. Felt, *The Ecclesiastical Hist. of New England* (2 vols., 1855–62); "Diary of Samuel Sewall," *Colls. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 5 ser., vol. V (1878); J. J. Currier, *Hist. of Newbury, Mass.* (1902). The church controversy is related at length in Joshua Coffin, *A Sketch of the Hist. of Newbury* (1845). Parker's *Theses,* originally printed at Franeker in 1617, were reprinted in London in 1657 and at Amsterdam (in Ames's *Disceptatio* and *Opera*) in 1658, calling forth several pamphlets in reply, for titles of which see the Catalogue of the British Museum. *The Copy of a Letter . . . to His Sister, Mrs. Elizabeth Avery,* who had embraced Quakerism, printed in London in 1650, has been reproduced in the American photostat series of the Mass. Hist. Soc. Parker's will is printed in *The Probate Records of Essex County, Mass.,* III (1920), 133–35.]

S. E. M.

PARKER, WILLARD (Sept. 2, 1800–Apr. 25, 1884), surgeon, was born at Lyndeborough, Hillsborough County, N. H., the son of a farmer, Jonathan Parker (b. June 10, 1764) by his wife, Hannah Clark (b. May 8, 1770). His paternal ancestor, Joseph Parker, had settled in Middlesex County, Mass., in 1640. Willard was named for his grandfather, Willard Parker, a descendant of Maj. Simon Willard. His great-uncle, Col. Moses Parker, was fatally wounded at Bunker Hill, and his maternal grandfather, Rev. Peter Clark, fought in the War of the Revolution.

Willard Parker received his primary education in a rural school, and obtained the degree of A.B. at Harvard in 1826, having supported himself during his years at college. Through a chance contact with John Collins Warren, he was diverted from the ministry and took up the study of medicine. He was apprenticed to Dr. Warren and Dr. S. D. Townsend in Boston, attended medical lectures at Cambridge, and graduated M.D. from Harvard in 1830, presenting an inaugural dissertation entitled "A Thesis on Nervous Respiration" (unpublished). During the next eight years he held a succession of titles in various schools: professor of anatomy and surgery, Clinical School of Medicine, Woodstock, Vt., a part of Waterville College, Me. (1830–33), professor of surgery, Berkshire Medical Institution (1833–36), professor of anatomy, Geneva, N. Y. (1834–36), professor of surgery, Cincinnati (1836–37); and he obtained a second doctorate of medicine from the Berkshire Medical Institution. In 1839 he was appointed professor of principles and practice of surgery in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York City, and held this post until 1870.

In 1837 Parker went abroad and had a year at Paris, "walking" the wards of the great hospitals in contact with Chomel, Louis, and other stimulating French clinicians of that period. His excellent diary of this trip has been preserved

by his descendants and was published by Ruhräh (*post*) in the *Annals of Medical History,* May–September 1933; it gives an intimate picture of his experiences, and illustrates his personal characteristics. On returning to New York he developed a large practice in the field of general surgery and became influential in public affairs. In surgery he was courageous and successful. He is credited with having performed cystotomy for irritable bladder (1850), with having tied the subclavian artery for aneurysm on five occasions (1864), and with having been the first in America to operate successfully upon an abscessed appendix (three of four cases survived, *Medical Record,* New York, Mar. 1, 1867). Though Hancock had operated for appendicitis in London in 1848, Parker was unaware of the fact; his contribution was bold and original and it received the enthusiastic commendation of Reginald Heber Fitz [*q.v.*] who first established appendicitis as a clinical and pathological entity. Parker was also an inspiring teacher, lecturing for many years before crowded classrooms on the principles of surgery. He was president of the New York Academy of Medicine in 1856, and was affiliated with the New York, St. Luke's, Roosevelt, and Mount Sinai hospitals. In 1870 he resigned from official responsibilities and became emeritus professor of surgery. The Willard Parker Hospital for Infectious Diseases in New York was named in his honor.

In public life Parker was an active promoter of the temperance movement, despite the fact that he drank in moderation himself. He was also active in public health. Personally he had a commanding but kindly presence which won the confidence and sympathy of both students and patients. He married June 21, 1831, Caroline Sarah, daughter of Dr. Luther Allen of Stirling, Mass. There were two children by this marriage. His second wife was Mary Ann (Bissell) Coit, daughter of Josiah and Henrietta Perkins Bissell, whom he married May 25, 1844, and by whom he had one son and two daughters. His large library was left to the Medical Society of the County of Kings in Brooklyn.

[John Ruhräh, "Willard Parker," *Annals Medic. Hist.* (N. Y.), May–Sept. 1933; S. W. Francis, *Biog. Sketches of Distinguished Living New York Surgeons* (1866); W. H. Draper, in *Trans. Medic. Soc., State of N. Y.,* 1885; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); J. P. Warbasse, "Willard Parker and His Medical Library," *L. I. Medic. Jour.,* Mar. 1907; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* July 1884; *N. Y. Tribune,* Apr. 26, 1884; information about certain facts from a great-grand-daughter.] J. F. F.

PARKER, WILLIAM HARWAR (Oct. 8, 1826–Dec. 30, 1896), naval officer, author, was born in New York City, the son of Foxhall Alexander and Sara Jay (Bogardus) Parker and the nephew of Richard Elliot Parker [*q.v.*]. On Oct. 19, 1841, he was appointed midshipman, and made his first cruise in the *Columbus* to the Mediterranean and Brazil, 1842–44. In the *Potomac* through the Mexican War, he saw active fighting with the naval battery at Vera Cruz and at the capture of Tabasco. In 1847–48 he was at the Naval Academy, graduating first in his class. Subsequent service included an African cruise in the *Yorktown,* ending in shipwreck off the Cape Verde Islands; an instructorship at Annapolis, 1853–57; and duty on the Pacific station in the *Merrimac.* An excellent student and a clear, facile writer, Parker while returning from this station wrote *Instructions for Naval Light Artillery* (1862) and translated a French work, *Tactique Navale,* both used subsequently at the Naval Academy, where he was again instructor, 1860–61. By the time of the Civil War he had been promoted through the various grades to lieutenant.

Unlike his brother, Foxhall Alexander Parker [*q.v.*], he joined the Southern navy, and in command of the gunboat *Beaufort* fought in Lynch's flotilla at Roanoke Island, Feb. 7, 1862, and below Elizabeth City, Feb. 10. In the latter action Parker was ordered to leave his boat, which escaped to Norfolk, and man a battery on shore. He again commanded the *Beaufort* in the battle of Hampton Roads, Mar. 8, 1862, where his ship's force came under heavy fire from shore while alongside the surrendered *Congress.* Parker was an active participant in the post-bellum controversy over the *Monitor-Merrimac* action, of which a valuable record appears in his *Recollections* (*post*). During the winter of 1862–63 he was executive of the ironclad *Palmetto State* at Charleston, took part in the attack on the Union blockading force Jan. 31, and in April–May had charge of two projected torpedo expeditions which were thwarted, once by the withdrawal of the Federal monitors, and again by a deserter's warning. Made captain in 1863, Parker that autumn organized and became superintendent of the Confederate Naval Academy, which consisted of about fifty midshipmen, quartered aboard the gunboat *Patrick Henry,* the ship still remaining part of the James River defense forces. Though commanding the ironclad *Richmond* during the summer of 1864, he continued superintendent of the academy until the close of the war, taking justifiable pride in the quality of its training. In 1863 he published *Questions on Practical Seamanship: Together with Harbor Routine and Evolutions,* and in 1864, *Elements of Seamanship.* On the evacua-

tion of Richmond, he and his cadets were given charge of the government archives and treasure (about $500,000), and guarded them inviolate during the month's retreat southward.

After the war, Parker was captain of a Pacific Mail steamer between Panama and San Francisco, 1865–74, publishing in 1871, *Remarks on the Navigation of the Coasts Between San Francisco and Panama*; president of the Maryland Agricultural College, 1875–83; and minister to Korea in Cleveland's first administration, 1886. His wide reading, charm as a raconteur, and fair-mindedness appear in his *Recollections of a Naval Officer 1841–1865* (1883), one of the most enjoyable books of its type. He also wrote *Familiar Talks on Astronomy* (1889). He died suddenly in Washington, D. C., and was buried at Norfolk, Va. His wife, Margaret Griffin, daughter of Burwell Mosely of Princess Anne County, Va., whom he married Dec. 14, 1853, survived him; he had no children.

[M. S. B. Gray, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Ancestors and Descendants of Gen. Robert Bogardus* (1927); "The Parker Family of Essex . . .," in *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1898; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of the Confederate States Navy* (1887); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Navy)*; *Army and Navy Jour.*, Jan. 9, 1897; *Washington Post* and *Evening Star* (Washington), Dec. 31, 1896.] A. W.

PARKHURST, CHARLES (Oct. 29, 1845–Feb. 27, 1921), Methodist Episcopal clergyman, editor, was a native of Sharon, Vt., and was a son of Chester and Sarah Ann (Barnard) Parkhurst. After preliminary education in the country schools he began the study of the law at an early age, was admitted to the bar, and practised for five years at Claremont, N. H. Becoming convinced that his proper vocation was the Methodist ministry, he began his preparation for college at Kimball Union Academy, Meriden, N. H., being at the same time actively engaged in preaching. He received his first preacher's license in 1873, joined the Vermont Conference in 1875, was ordained deacon in 1877, and in 1879, the year after his graduation from Dartmouth College, was advanced to elder's orders. After two years spent in the study of Theology at Andover Seminary he transferred to Boston University and supplied the Methodist Church at Auburndale while a student in the theological department. The next ten years he spent in prominent appointments in the Vermont and New Hampshire conferences. In 1888 he was called from his pastorate in Dover, N. H., to the editorship of *Zion's Herald*, a weekly newspaper owned and controlled by the Wesleyan Association of Boston and devoted to the promotion of the interests of the Methodist Church in New England. Attention to his literary ability had been attracted by his articles in the religious papers, especially by those written during a tour in Europe.

He entered upon his editorship at the age of forty-three, in the prime of his physical and mental maturity, and maintained the paper as one of the foremost religious journals of the entire country for thirty-one years—until April 1919, when he resigned. During the major part of his term of office he had no associate editor and his paper, whose leading articles he always wrote, became largely his personal organ. He took few vacations and set strict limits to his outside appointments, so that *Zion's Herald* was in a peculiar sense his life work. He had the courage of his convictions, marked qualities of religious and intellectual leadership, and a rare discernment of the vital issues of the day. His successor, in an article occasioned by Parkhurst's death, enumerated five outstanding issues of his editorship (*Zion's Herald*, Mar. 9, 1921). These were the vigorous espousal of the temperance cause; social and industrial reforms; the area plan for episcopal supervision within the Methodist Church; the rights of colored members of that communion, with the appointment of colored bishops; and the reunion of Methodism North and South. All these questions, highly controversial in their nature, he handled with such wisdom that much advance was made. To these at least one other issue of great importance should be added. The period of his editorship was a time of theological transition resulting from the advance of science and the application of historical and critical methods to the study of the Bible. Parkhurst presented to his readers the sure results of modern scholarship and interpreted them in such a way that those questions which caused turmoil in other communions were to a considerable degree avoided. With him the essence of religion was moral and spiritual rather than dogmatic. He was fearless in his discussion of Methodist doctrine and discipline, his view of the church was broad, and under his editorial leadership *Zion's Herald* became more cosmopolitan than most denominational journals.

On Jan. 2, 1868, Parkhurst married Lucia A. Tyler of Sharon, Vt., who survived him with one son and one daughter.

[The issues of *Zion's Herald* for Mar. 2 and 9, 1921, contain much biographical material. The former has a portrait and the latter, memorial contributions from many sources. Further material is found in *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *Boston Transcript*, Feb. 28 and Mar. 8, 1921; *Congregationalist*, Mar. 10, 1921.] F. T. P.

PARKHURST, CHARLES HENRY (Apr. 17, 1842–Sept. 8, 1933), Presbyterian clergyman, reformer, was born in Framingham, Mass., the

son of Charles F. W. and Mary (Goodale) Parkhurst. "My earlier life," he writes in his autobiography, "was that of the ordinary farmer's boy. A single family living half a mile distant made for us our only society" (*My Forty Years in New York*, p. 11). He was not sent to public school until he was twelve years old, and "was thus saved," he says, "the fundamental disadvantage of having cultivated in me a distaste for knowledge." When he was sixteen, he was placed by his father in a grocery store "to sell sugar, molasses and codfish, an experience that was distasteful." His interests were scholarly; and therefore, after a period of special preparation at a local institute, he went to Amherst College, where he was graduated in 1866. In the early fall of this year, he took charge as principal of the Amherst High School. Three years later he went abroad for a year's travel and theological study at Halle, and on his return in 1870 accepted a position as teacher of Greek and Latin at Williston Seminary, Easthampton, Mass. Another trip to Europe took him to Leipzig for a second period of foreign study (1872–73). In 1874 he was ordained by the South Berkshire Association of Congregational Ministers and installed pastor of the Congregational Church in Lenox, Mass. Six years later he was called to the Madison Square Presbyterian Church, New York, where he preached his first sermon on Feb. 29, 1880.

Parkhurst was at this time a studious, sturdy cleric of the distinctly Puritan type. His interests were predominantly scholarly and pastoral. His sermons, read carefully from manuscript, were terse and forceful, but bore little trace of wide popular appeal. In appearance, manner, and habits, he was inconspicuous. Yet in a sermon preached on Feb. 14, 1892, he threw a bomb the detonation of which was heard to the far borders of the land. An unsparing denunciation of "the polluted harpies that, under the pretense of governing this city, are feeding day and night on its quivering vitals . . . a lying, perjured, rum-soaked, libidinous lot," this sermon must ever rank as one of the most famous and effective pulpit utterances in American history (printed in *Our Fight with Tammany*, pp. 8–25). It sprang from years of growing outrage at the alliance of organized politics with vice in New York, and the public indifference to this situation; and more immediately from Parkhurst's work as president of the Society for the Prevention of Crime, to which office he was elected in 1891. "No one was less suspicious than the preacher himself of the disturbing effect it would produce" (*Ibid.*, p. 8). No notice had been given of its delivery, and it became public only through the enterprise of a roving reporter, W. E. Carson, who chanced to be in the congregation on the fateful Sunday. Furthermore, when the attack unexpectedly swept the city with excitement, and not only cynical politicians but press and public demanded proof of the charges presented, Parkhurst found himself with nothing that could stand the test of a court of law. Unprepared for what had occurred, he was face to face with the prospect of failure and humiliation. Resourceful and dauntless, however, he promptly set about securing the proof required. In his own person, and with the help of friends and detectives, he hunted out the haunts of vice —the saloons and dance halls, the gambling dens and houses of prostitution—to get his evidence; and on Mar. 13, 1892, he preached a second sermon, this time with affidavits as his text. He now became the center of furious attack. He was ridiculed, insulted, threatened; he became the butt of ribald songs and indecent jests. Many of his parishioners questioned the wisdom of his activities, and not a few of his professional brethren lamented his "sensationalism." He was armed with facts, however, and the courage to use them. Slowly but surely an aroused public swung to his support, and in due course, as so many results from a single cause, there came the Lexow Investigation (1894), the defeat of Tammany at the polls, and the sweeping reforms of the Strong administration.

This conflict marked the climax of Parkhurst's career. It was the peak to which everything before had swiftly climbed, and from which everything after slowly fell away. The momentum of his great fame held him as one of New York's popular and effective preachers for two decades. Never again in the forefront of civic affairs, he remained always a caustic critic of official corruption. In 1918, on the consolidation of his church with the Old First Presbyterian Church, he retired as active pastor, and entered upon a serene and prolonged period of old age. His last public utterance, on his ninetieth birthday, was an appeal to the people to overthrow the "new Tammany" (*New York Times*, Apr. 17, 1932). He died suddenly of injuries sustained when he walked off the roof of the porch of his home in his sleep.

He was the author of *Analysis of the Latin Verb Illustrated by the Forms of the Sanskrit* (1870), *What Would the World be Without Religion?* (copr. 1882), *The Blind Man's Creed and Other Sermons* (1883), *The Pattern in the Mount* (1885), *The Swiss Guide* (copr. 1890), *Three Gates on a Side and Other Sermons* (copr.

1891), *Our Fight with Tammany* (1895), *Talks to Young Men* (1897), *Talks to Young Women* (1897), *The Sunny Side of Christianity* (1901), *A Brief History of the Madison Square Presbyterian Church and Its Activities* (1906), *A Little Lower Than the Angels* (copr. 1908), *The Pulpit and the Pew* (1913), and *My Forty Years in New York* (1923). Parkhurst was twice married: first, Nov. 23, 1870, to Ellen Bodman, of Williamsburg, Mass., who had been a pupil of his in the Amherst High School; and, second, Apr. 19, 1927, to Mrs. Eleanor Marx, of New York. From 1892 to 1902 he was a trustee of Amherst College.

[In addition to *My Forty Years in N. Y.*, and *Our Fight with Tammany*, see his *Brief Hist. of Madison Square Presbyt. Ch.*; also *Who's Who in America*, 1932–33, and *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 15, 1931, Apr. 17, 18, 1932, Sept. 9, 1933.]

J. H. H.

PARKHURST, JOHN ADELBERT (Sept. 24, 1861–Mar. 1, 1925), astronomer, was born at Dixon, Ill. His parents were Sanford Britton and Clarissa J. (Hubbard) Parkhurst. After the death of his mother, when he was five, he was adopted by Dr. and Mrs. Abner Hagar, his uncle and aunt, of Marengo, Ill. He attended the public schools at Marengo and entered Wheaton College in 1880. At the end of his sophomore year he left college and taught in the public school of Lombard, Ill., for a year, then entered the Rose Polytechnic Institute, Terre Haute, Ind., where he graduated in 1886 with the degree of B.S. in mechanical engineering. In 1897 the degree of M.S. was conferred on him by the same institution, and in 1906 Wheaton College gave him the degree of A.B. as of the class of 1885. After graduation he spent two years as instructor of mathematics at Rose. The death of his uncle made it necessary for him to return to Marengo, where he was engaged in business for the next ten years.

His interest in astronomy had been stimulated by reading the works of Thomas Dick, and while in Terre Haute he had bought a small lens and fashioned his own telescope. As soon as possible after returning to Marengo he bought and set up a modern 6-inch reflector by J. A. Brashear [*q.v.*], and during his ten years there contributed some fifty articles to astronomical periodicals, chiefly on variable stars. During a part of this time he acted as a non-resident computer for the Washburn Observatory. The opening in 1897 of the Yerkes Observatory of the University of Chicago at Williams Bay, Wis., within thirty miles of his home, was an important event in his career. He was a frequent visitor there, and during the summer of 1898 he was a volunteer

Parkhurst

research assistant, assigned to the 12-inch telescope. In 1900 he was appointed assistant and from then on devoted his entire time to astronomy. He was made instructor in 1905, assistant professor in 1912, and associate professor in 1919.

His first piece of work at the Yerkes Observatory was *The Spectra of Stars of Secchi's Fourth Type* (1903; also in *Publications of the Yerkes Observatory*, vol. II, 1904), in collaboration with George E. Hale and Ferdinand Ellerman. His chief work, however, was in photometric research—the measurement of the brightness of stars, both visually and photographically. In 1906 the Carnegie Institution of Washington, which had made special grants toward his salary during his first five years at Yerkes, published his *Researches in Stellar Photometry During the Years 1894 to 1906, Made Chiefly at the Yerkes Observatory*. His "Yerkes Actinometry," published in the *Astrophysical Journal*, October 1912, contained the results of many years of painstaking work in determining the visual and photographic brightness, color indices, and spectral types of all stars not fainter than magnitude 7.5, located within seventeen degrees of the north pole. Parkhurst, for Yerkes, also cooperated with the Harvard, McCormick, and Lick observatories in a campaign to extend the scale of brightness of the bright stars to the faint ones (*Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences*, vol. XIV, no. 4, August 1923). He also collaborated with Father J. G. Hagen, of the Vatican Observatory, on the latter's *Atlas Stellarum Variabilium* (ser. 1–5, 1899–1908). Another important piece of work was his posthumously published determination of magnitudes in one of the zones of Kapteyn's "Plan of Selected Areas" (*Publications of the Yerkes Observatory*, vol. IV, pt. VI, 1927). Other photometric researches of importance were carried on by his many graduate students. He took part in three eclipse expeditions with the chief object of measuring the brightness of the corona.

Although exceedingly modest, he had unusual ability in imparting his knowledge to his students. Never physically strong, he adhered to a strict discipline of body and mind which enabled him, in spite of bodily ills, to accomplish a full lifetime of work. His longest vacation was one of six months in Europe with his wife, Anna Greenleaf of Terre Haute, Ind., whom he married Nov. 21, 1888. He was an active member of the Congregational Church and Sunday School of Williams Bay, and was elected the first supervisor of the Village of Williams Bay.

[R. G. Aitken and E. B. Frost, in *Pubs. Astron. Soc. of the Pacific*, Apr. 1925: E. B. Frost, in *Astronomische*

Nachrichten, Mar. 1925; S. B. Barrett, in *Pop. Astron.*, May 1925; *Astrophysical Jour.*, June 1925; *Observatory*, Apr. 1925; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 3, 1925.]

R. S. D.

PARKMAN, FRANCIS (Sept. 16, 1823–Nov. 8, 1893), historian, was born in Boston, Mass. He came of old New England stock; his father, the Rev. Francis Parkman, was descended from Elias Parkman who had settled at Dorchester by 1633; his mother, Caroline (Hall), was descended from the Rev. John Cotton. The family had wealth, social standing, and a long tradition of culture. Parkman's father was for thirty-six years the pastor of the New North Church in Boston. The historian's grandfather, Samuel Parkman, had become one of the richest merchants in Boston, and it was the share of this fortune which came to Francis that enabled him, in spite of years of invalidism, to carry on his historical writing.

At about eight years of age he was sent to live with his maternal grandfather, Nathaniel Hall, at Medford, and there attended the school kept by John Angier. He does not seem to have got much from his early schooling, but he had some six or seven square miles of wild forest in which to play, and in tramping, exploring, and trapping the small wild animals, he developed his outdoor tastes to the full. When about twelve years old he was taken back to Boston to live with his own family and attended a private school kept by Gideon Thayer, where he was fortunate in having particularly good instruction in English literature and composition. He was greatly interested in experimental chemistry and amateur theatricals. In 1840 he entered Harvard, where he became a member of various college societies and president of the Hasty Pudding Club. His scholarship record was excellent in the subjects that appealed to him but he paid little attention to the others, although he succeeded in being made a member of Phi Beta Kappa. His outside reading probably had more permanent influence upon him than his strictly collegiate courses.

His life work was already beginning to take shape in his mind and as one of his classmates wrote long afterward, he "even then showed symptoms of 'Injuns' on the brain" (Wheelwright, *post*, p. 322). During the vacations he made long excursions, partly on foot and partly by canoe, through the White Mountains, up the Magalloway River, about Lakes George and Champlain, and in other directions wherever there were woods and wilderness. He was a sportsman and a good shot. In attempting to train himself for this outdoor life, he overstrained himself in the new Harvard gymnasium, and, in his senior year, had to leave college for a while. In November 1843 he crossed to Europe in a sailing vessel. He visited Sicily and Italy, and while in Rome spent some days in retreat at a convent of Passionist Fathers, an illuminating episode which he recounted in an article written at the time but not published for many years (*Harper's New Monthly Magazine*, August 1890). From Italy he continued rambling for seven months through Switzerland, France, and Great Britain, returning to Cambridge in June in ample time to take his degree at Commencement in August. Immediately after graduation he entered the Law School—though with no intention of practising—for the sake of the mental training it offered. He continued until January 1846, by which time he had done sufficient work to qualify him for the degree of LL.B. and admittance to the bar, though he never applied for the latter. Meanwhile he had made his first appearance in print by publishing during 1845 in the *Knickerbocker, or New-York Monthly Magazine* five sketches based on his earlier vacation rambles and adventures.

On Apr. 28, 1846, he set out from St. Louis on the one really great physical adventure of his life, his journey along the Oregon Trail. It is certain that by now he had formed a more or less definite idea of what his work in life was to be, although, perhaps from his natural reserve and modesty, he had persistently denied that he had any literary ambitions. The expedition was undertaken with two distinct ends in view, to study the Indians and to improve his health. Not long after leaving St. Louis he fell in with a band of Sioux and lived with them for some weeks, observing their habits, customs, and ways of thought. He also had an opportunity to study the life of the white men on the edge of civilization, which was much like the frontier life of two centuries before. He hobnobbed with hunters, trappers, voyageurs, half-breeds, and all the types with which he was to deal in developing his historical themes. In accomplishing the second object of his journey, however, he was not so successful. His eyesight had begun to trouble him and though his constitution was fundamentally strong, he suffered all his life from having overtaxed it. The strenuous exercise with which he sought to cure his maladies seems to have been the worst method he could have chosen. The physical effort of the trip and especially the poor food, told on him severely, and he returned to Boston in October 1846 much worse in body than he had left, though with invaluable knowledge and experience. He now suffered a complete breakdown, and went to a cure at Brattlebor

Vt. There he dictated to his cousin, Quincy A. Shaw, who had accompanied him on the trip, an account of their adventures. Under the title, "The Oregon Trail" it was published serially in the *Knickerbocker* beginning with the issue of February 1847. The first instalment was signed "A Bostonian," but in those that followed Parkman used his own name. The work was published in book form in 1849 as *The California and Oregon Trail,* and, better known under the shorter title, which was resumed in subsequent editions, has always been one of his most popular writings.

In 1848 he began to write his *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac,* first of the long series of volumes, on the struggle of French and English for the possession of the continent, that was to be his *magnum opus.* In an autobiographical fragment found among his papers he stated that even in his sophomore year in college he had formed the plan of writing a history of the Old French War. That plan had gradually broadened, and the task which he had now set himself would take, he calculated, about twenty years for its completion. At the very outset, however, an obstacle arose on which he had not counted, and the *Pontiac* was begun under what would seem almost insuperable difficulties. The chief ailment from which Parkman suffered had an obscure origin but it appears to have been some weakness of the nervous system. He was later told by one of the most eminent specialists in Paris that he might go insane. When he began the *Pontiac,* "the light of the sun became insupportable, and a wild whirl possessed his brain, joined to a universal turmoil of the nervous system which put his philosophy to the sharpest test it had hitherto known" (Farnham, *post,* p. 324). The difficulties under which he began "were threefold: an extreme weakness of sight, disabling him even from writing his name except with eyes closed; a condition of the brain prohibiting fixed attention except at occasional and brief intervals; and an exhaustion and total derangement of the nervous system, producing of necessity a mood of mind most unfavorable to effort" (*Ibid.,* p. 325). He felt, however, that it was essential that he should have occupation and a motive in life. He was staying with friends on Staten Island at the time, and there were many other friends, mostly feminine, in the nearby city who willingly helped him. He had a frame built in which parallel wires were stretched across his writing paper, and on this, with eyes closed, he made his notes from the volumes and manuscripts read aloud to him. For a while the readings could last only a half hour, and there were days when he could

do nothing. The average rate of progress of his book during this period was six lines a day. After six months he could do better, and was able to complete the part of the work that could be done in Boston. His research had to be continued among books and manuscripts scattered in libraries in Europe as well as in America, the greater part of the material being in French. Still utterly unable to use his eyes for reading, he had as his regular reader a girl from the public schools who did not understand a word of the language. Nevertheless, almost incredible as it may seem, he completed the *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac* in less than two and a half years, and it was published, in two volumes, in 1851. Considering the difficulties there had been to overcome, it was a marvelous intellectual achievement. In the same year Parkman developed an effusion on the knee which confined him for two years, permanently weakened the joint, and hindered his exercise for the balance of his life.

Meanwhile, on May 13, 1850, he had married Catherine Scollay Bigelow, daughter of Dr. Jacob Bigelow of Boston. In 1853 he had a crisis in his nervous disorder, and, compelled to lay aside his historical work for a while, wrote his only novel, *Vassall Morton,* which was published in 1856. It was probably written for relaxation and to give him occupation while he was unable to do more serious work. It had no great success and he himself regarded it slightingly. In these years he also wrote a few book reviews, but his real work suffered a severe interruption. It was always necessary for him to have some object on which to fasten his interest, and after the publication of his novel he took up the study of horticulture. He became so deeply interested in raising new varieties of flowers, especially lilies and roses, that he never gave up the hobby afterward. His great success in this new and unexpected field resulted in his election as president of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society and, much later, in his appointment as a professor of horticulture at Harvard (1871).

A renewed nervous crisis in 1858 following the death, within a year of each other, of his only son and of his wife, determined him to go to Paris to consult a specialist there, Brown Séquard. He remained in Paris for some months but without any gain to his health, and at the beginning of 1859 he returned to Boston by way of Nice and Genoa. It was "about four years," he wrote later, "before the power of mental application was in the smallest degree restored" ("Autobiography," in Farnham, p. 329). His two small daughters had gone to live with their

mother's sister, and he himself lived with his mother and sisters in Boston in the winters and at his own house at Jamaica Pond, in the summers. Here, in his three acres of garden, he carried on his horticultural studies, often in a wheeled chair. In 1862 he formed a partnership to sell the flowers he raised, but the firm did not prosper and lasted only a year. In 1866 he published *The Book of Roses.*

Meanwhile, determined to go on with his histories, as soon as he was slightly better he began once more by sheer will power. In 1865 he published *Pioneers of France in the New World.* By this time, he had also written parts of other volumes and had gathered notes for more. The *Pioneers* at once established his popularity and also his reputation as a historian. Two years later, *The Jesuits in North America* was published, and in 1869 came *The Discovery of the Great West,* better known by the title of the eleventh edition (1879), *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West.* In 1874 he published *The Old Régime in Canada* and in 1877 *Count Frontenac and New France under Louis XIV.* It was now twenty-eight years since he had begun the narrative and he had long been anxious to write of the final scene. Fearing that if he delayed further he might not live to do so, he broke the sequence at this point and in 1884 published *Montcalm and Wolfe* (2 vols.). In 1892 he finally completed the series with *A Half-Century of Conflict* (2 vols.). During these years he had also been a fairly frequent contributor to magazines: twenty articles, many of them chapters from his books, had appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly,* eleven in the *North American Review,* and many shorter papers elsewhere. By this time his fame was well established as the leading American historian. Only a few months after he had successfully brought to conclusion his incomparable task of over forty years, he suffered a severe attack of pleurisy and was not expected to recover. He did so but died less than a year later from an attack of peritonitis.

In spite of Parkman's constant suffering and the great difficulties under which his work and the social intercourse which he so greatly enjoyed were carried on, there was never anything morbid about him. He had wide interests, loved out-door life, plants and animals, poetry and people, as well as history. He had a sense of humor, and the verdict of those who knew him was that he was a delightful companion. He possessed a wide circle of friends. Almost isolated from the world as he had to be at intervals, he always maintained his outside contacts. In 1868 he was elected Overseer of Harvard; he resigned in

Parkman

1871 but was reëlected in 1874 and held the office until his second resignation in 1876. In 1875 he was chosen a fellow of the Corporation and served until 1888, when he resigned. He attended the meetings whenever possible. He dedicated his *La Salle* to his college class, that of 1844, and his *Montcalm and Wolfe* to the College itself. He was one of the founders of the Archeological Institute of America in 1879, and later a member of the executive committee; assisted financially in establishing the American School of Classical Studies at Athens; and was a member or honorary member of a score of societies.

In the conception and execution of his work Parkman was primarily an artist, with the result that his history has an enduring place in literature. He chose to depict the contest of two rival civilizations for the control of a continent, against one of the most picturesque of settings —a background of wilderness and savage man contrasting with the civilization of the nations wrestling for supremacy. Furthermore, he was able to visualize from his own experience the people and scenes he portrayed. When he was preparing himself for his task, the primeval wilderness and the primitive men of the earlier days could still be studied through personal contact, and Parkman, instead of confining himself to books, was wise enough to seize the fast disappearing opportunity. "Faithfulness to the truth of history," he wrote, "involves far more than a research, however patient and scrupulous, into special facts. . . . The narrator must seek to imbue himself with the life and spirit of the time" (*Pioneers of France,* p. xii). By moving geographically westward, he moved historically backward, and his work gained immensely thereby in vividness and authenticity. But he placed his chief reliance upon the study of the original sources as they are to be found in British, French, Canadian, and American depositories. He was one of the first of American historians to insist upon a critical use of original manuscript material, and he brought together an extensive and thoroughly representative collection (now in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society) of transcripts of the essential documents. He also was instrumental in bringing about the publication (1876–86) of the monumental series of documents edited by Pierre Margry, *Découvertes et établissements des Français dans l'ouest et dans le sud de l'Amérique septentrionale.* Those who have followed Parkman's trail through the sources have been impressed by the scholarly use that he made of them and by the accuracy of his statements. The long series of systematic archival

investigations that have been carried on since the completion of his work have supplemented it and have corrected it at certain points but have not impaired its substantial validity. While his history is pure narrative—inimitable narrative—it is not without philosophical implications. Constantly he contrasts the social and political systems of the contending civilizations and seems to find in that contrast a principal cause of the final outcome. He falls short of complete comprehension of the part that the church and the Jesuits had in the contest; neither does he sufficiently take into account the economic and geographic factors, or the vast discrepancy—nearly twenty to one at the close of the struggle—between the compact population of the English colonies and the widely scattered settlements of the French in North America. Finally, he treats his subject as a series of dramatic episodes, each centering around a different group of characters, rather than as the complete story of the struggle lasting for a century and a half between England and France, for the domination of North America and the Caribbean. Nevertheless, the main design of his work is not likely to be superseded, and his fame is secure among the great American historians.

[Collected editions of Parkman's works are *The Works of Francis Parkman* (20 vols., 1897–98) and *Francis Parkman's Works* (12 vols., 1903). C. H. Farnham, *A Life of Francis Parkman* (1900) contains extracts from Parkman's autobiography and a bibliography of his books and articles. See also H. D. Sedgwick, *Francis Parkman* (1904); Edward Wheelwright, "Memoir of Francis Parkman," in *Col. Soc. Mass., Pubs.*, vol. I (1895); *Letters from Francis Parkman to E. G. Squier* (1911); "Letters of Francis Parkman to Pierre Margry," with introductory note by J. S. Bassett, in *Smith College Studies in History*, vol. VIII (Apr.–July 1923); E. F. Wyatt, in *North Am. Rev.*, Oct. 1923; Joseph Schafer, in *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.* and *Wis. Mag. of Hist.*, both Mar. 1924; C. W. Alvord, in *Nation* (N. Y.), Oct. 10, 1923; G. M. Wrong, in *Canadian Hist. Rev.*, Dec. 1923; Waldo G. Leland, in *Ex Libris* (American Library in Paris), Feb. 1924; O. B. Frothingham and others, in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. VIII (1894); *Boston Transcript*, Nov. 9, 1893.]

J. T. A.

PARKS, WILLIAM (*c.* 1698–Apr. 1, 1750), printer and newspaper publisher, was in all probability a native of Shropshire. He established the first presses of Ludlow, Hereford, and Reading in England, and began his unusual record as a pioneer of newspaper publication by establishing, at Ludlow and Reading respectively, the *Ludlow Post-Man* (1719) and the *Reading Mercury* (1723), the earliest journals to be published in those towns. After six years of printing activity in England, he appeared in Annapolis, Md., in March 1725/26, making proposals to the Assembly for the printing of its laws and journals. By an act of October 1727 he was appointed public printer, and from then until 1737 he continued to serve the province of Maryland in that capacity. In the year 1730 he enlarged his business by the establishment of a press in Williamsburg, the first printing office to be put in operation in Virginia since the inhibition in 1683 of the Jamestown press of William Nuthead [*q.v.*]. Appointed public printer of Virginia in 1732, he devoted his principal efforts thereafter to his Virginia business, and five years later gave up entirely his Maryland connection. In 1733 appeared from his Williamsburg press *A Collection of All the Acts of Assembly Now in Force in the Colony of Virginia*, a work of historical importance, which ranks also as one of the typographical monuments of colonial America. He maintained his position as public printer of Virginia until his death, which occurred Apr. 1, 1750, in the course of a voyage to England. His widow, Eleanor, and a married daughter, the wife of John Shelton, survived him.

Parks's accomplishment in his two colonial offices places him high in the rank of American printers. In 1727, he established the *Maryland Gazette*, the first newspaper to appear in the country south of Pennsylvania. In 1736, the *Virginia Gazette* began publication under his able editorship. In addition to his government work and his newspapers, he gave attention to the publication of numerous works of historical or political character, and of many handbooks and compilations of daily utility. But the point of special interest is that, consistently, he made definite and successful effort to encourage local men of letters by the publication of works of purely literary intention. Through his publication in Maryland of poems by Richard Lewis and Ebenezer Cooke, and in Virginia of poems by John Markland, a "Gentleman of Virginia," "Several Gentlemen of this Country," and others, he nurtured a native literary product in those colonies at a time when most other American printers were devoting themselves to the production of works of the strictest utility. He published in 1747 William Stith's *The History of the First Discovery and Settlement of Virginia*; he published also in different years original medical works by Dr. John Tennent; political and economic tracts by various writers; the earliest American sporting book, Edward Blackwell's *A Compleat System of Fencing* (1734); and the first American cook book, E. Smith's *The Compleat Housewife* (1742). The typographical quality of his work was superior to that of most of his American contemporaries, and his decorated bookbindings were unsurpassed by those of other binders of colonial America. About the year

1743, he built, with the encouragement and active aid of Benjamin Franklin, the first paper-mill to be established south of Pennsylvania. He was one of the earliest printers to urge, in his "Advertisement, Concerning Advertisements" (*Virginia Gazette*, Oct. 8, 1736), the efficacy of newspaper advertising, and in general his activities indicated the possession of qualities of business enterprise, public spirit, and literary taste unusual among the printers of his time. The printers of Virginia have placed a tablet to his memory in Williamsburg.

[Original sources of information concerning William Parks are: *Archives of Maryland*, vols. XXXIV–XXXVI (1914–16), XL (1921); Land Office Records, Annapolis, Md.; *Jours. of the House of Burgesses of Va.*, 1727–40 (1910), 1742–49 (1909), 1752–58 (1909); Wills and Inventories, XX: 183, Court House, Yorktown, Va. Information is found also in *Wm. and Mary Coll. Quart.*, July 1898, Apr., July 1922; Wm. Clayton-Torrence, *A Trial Bibliog. of Colonial Va.* (1908), pt. 1. His life, and a bibliography of books, newspapers, etc. printed by him, are found in L. C. Wroth, *William Parks, Printer and Journalist of England and Colonial America* (1926), being William Parks Club Pubs., no. 3.] L. C. W.

PARLEY, PETER [See GOODRICH, SAMUEL GRISWOLD, 1793–1860].

PARMLY, ELEAZAR (Mar. 13, 1797–Dec. 13, 1874), one of the founders of dentistry as an organized profession, was born on a farm in the Town of Braintree, Orange County, Vt., a son of Eleazar and Hannah (Spear) Parmly and a descendant of John Parmelee, an early settler of Guilford, Conn. When he was ten years old, his parents removed to northwestern Vermont. He began his education in the rural schools and from 1810 to 1812 attended a first-class school in Montreal, in which city he became a compositor and reporter for the *Canadian Courant*. In 1814 he taught in his home district; and in the following year, as student assistant to his eldest brother Levi S. Parmly first in Boston and then in Quebec, he began his long dental career. His parents removed to a farm in the town of Perry, Ohio, in 1817, and from that year until 1819, Eleazar practised independently as an itinerant dentist, floating down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers on an "ark" and stopping at the principal settlements. He then proceeded to New York City, and shortly sailed for Europe with a view to perfecting himself in his vocation. He paid for a course of instruction with J. F. C. Maury, a prominent dentist in Paris, and late in 1819 entered a partnership with his brother Levi in London. The latter returned to the United States early in 1820, but Eleazar remained in successful practice in London for a year and a half longer, publishing *An Essay on the Disorders and Treatment of the Teeth* (1821; 3rd ed., 1822).

Late in 1821 he returned to the United States, intending to make only a short visit for the recovery of his health, which had been seriously impaired, but for some forty-five years thereafter, though visiting Europe several times, he practised dentistry in New York City exclusively, rapidly rising to preëminence in his profession. In 1823 he became engaged to marry Eliza, youngest daughter of John Jacob Astor [*q.v.*], but her father opposed the match, and she married Count Vincent Rumpff. After this experience, Parmly kept bachelors' hall for over a year with his brother Samuel W. Parmly and his intimate friend Solyman Brown [*q.v.*]; and on June 17, 1827, married Anna Maria Valk Smith, an heiress whose deceased foster father had been a wealthy broker. Eleazar Parmly then established himself at 11 Park Place, where he was joined in 1829 by his cousins Jahial and Ludolph Parmly as student assistants. Jahial continued his association with Eleazar for the next ten years as prosthetic specialist, while Eleazar devoted himself to operative dentistry. In 1832 Solyman Brown began his dental career with Eleazar and the next year published his *Dentologia* with notes by the latter. In 1834 Eleazar and Jahial were joined by David R. Parmly as student assistant, and several other members of the family subsequently had the benefit of Eleazar's instruction.

Eleazar Parmly was a leader in the early opposition to the use of amalgam for filling teeth—an issue which seems to have precipitated the organization (Dec. 3, 1834) of the first dental association, the Society of Surgeon Dentists of the City and State of New York, with Parmly as its first president and Solyman Brown as its first corresponding secretary. In 1839 both were associated with Chapin A. Harris [*q.v.*] and others in the establishment of the first dental periodical, the *American Journal of Dental Science*, of which Parmly was one of the first nominal editors. In the same year he supplied the notes to a new edition of John Hunter's *Natural History of the Human Teeth*. When the American Society of Dental Surgeons was organized in 1840, he was its second vice-president, and received from it one of the original degrees of D.D.S. The degree of M.D. was conferred upon him by some university medical school at about the same time. He was first vice-president of the society, 1841–44, and president, 1844–53. In 1842 he was one of the first to receive the honorary D.D.S. of the Baltimore College of Dental Surgery, of which he was provost from 1848 to 1852. His son Ehrich (born with a twin sister in 1830) graduated from the Baltimore College and began

practice with his father in 1851. Eleazar Parmly's wife died in 1857. They had nine children; four sons (three died in infancy), and five daughters. One of the latter married Frederick Billings [*q.v.*], best known as the president of the Northern Pacific Railroad. For many years Parmly was a lay preacher in the Church of the Disciples in New York, and in 1861 he published *The Babe of Bethlehem,* in free verse, a harmony of the Gospel stories of Christ. In that year he opened a hotel, the Parmly House (still in operation, 1934), which he built at Painesville, Ohio, near the farm where his parents had finally settled. In 1867 he published *Thoughts in Rhyme,* a collection of verses written by him between 1818 and 1862 which contain much autobiographical material. During his declining years he spent a large part of his time at his estate, "Bingham Place," at Rumson, N. J. He retired from active practice in 1866, but in the same year became the first president of the New York College of Dentistry, and held the position of emeritus professor of the institutes of dentistry in that college until 1869. He died of pneumonia at his New York City residence, and was interred in his family vault in the Rumson Burying Ground. With the most successful practice in the United States, a fortune from his wife and many profitable real-estate investments, he had become a millionaire. He was an affable gentleman, a forceful public speaker, an interesting writer, and a skilful practitioner, and stood in the forefront of his profession for some thirty years.

[L. Parmly Brown, *The Greatest Dental Family* (1923), reprinted from *Dental Cosmos.,* Mar.–May 1923, containing numerous references to original sources; *Dental Cosmos,* Jan. 1875; *N. Y. Times,* Dec. 14, 1874.] L. P. B—n.

PARR, SAMUEL WILSON (Jan. 21, 1857–May 16, 1931), chemist, inventor, and teacher, was born in Granville, Ill., the son of James and Elizabeth Fidelia (Moore) Parr. After preliminary training in the academy at Granville, he entered the University of Illinois. Here he was a leader in both literary and athletic activities and graduated with the degree of B.S. in 1884, valedictorian of his class. The following year he spent at Cornell University, from which he received the degree of M.S. On Dec. 27, 1887, he married Lucie A. Hall of Champaign, Ill.; two children were born to them.

Upon completing his work at Cornell, he went to Illinois College, Jacksonville, where, after serving as instructor for a year, he became professor of general science. In 1891 he was called to the University of Illinois as professor of chemistry, which position he held until 1926, when he became professor emeritus, thereafter devoting his time to research and to a number of business enterprises. During the years 1900–01 he studied in Berlin and Zürich. At the University of Illinois he took a keen interest in the various activities of student life. He furthered outdoor sports, was for some years leader of the university glee club, and was chairman of the board of directors of the university Young Men's Christian Association. An effective teacher, he inspired many students to become diligent investigators and good citizens. He was influential in the organization of the curriculum of chemical engineering and of the chemical club, and in the establishment of the chemical library, the first departmental library of the university. His activities extended outside the institution, and he had a part in organizing the state water survey, of which he was a director (1904–05), and served as consulting chemist for the Illinois geological survey, and as consulting engineer for the United States bureau of mines.

Among his scientific accomplishments was his calorimeter for determining the heat value of coal and other solids, invented in 1900 and used in the scientific laboratories of the world. His peroxide bomb (1912) was also a valuable addition to analytical laboratories. Later, he perfected a third type of calorimeter, by which the heat value of gaseous fuels can be determined continuously and accurately. In carrying out the investigations which led to the perfection of these important inventions he was compelled to take up research in related lines. The tables of constants which he needed to use in calorimetry were inaccurate, so he compiled the data for making better tables. The metals available for use in the bomb calorimeter were easily corroded or expensive; accordingly, he set to work to find an alloy which would resist both acid and alkaline corrosion, and would at the same time possess desirable casting and machining properties. Nearly one hundred mixtures of metals were carefully studied before he found the mixture to which he gave the name "illium" after his native state. This alloy is better than platinum as a lining in the bomb calorimeter, and its use as a general corrosion-resisting metal is increasing daily. He studied boiler waters and their treatment and developed a valuable method for the modification of permanently hard water. His study of the embrittlement of boiler plate is a monument to his patience, perseverance, and skill. For thirty years he investigated the origin, physical and chemical properties, classification, and utilization of coal, and he became an international authority upon all coal and fuel prob-

lems. In spite of the general feeling that Illinois coal could not be used for the production of coke, he worked out a method of low temperature coking, which won the admiration of fuel experts at home and abroad.

He was a member of numerous scientific and engineering organizations and served on many of their technical committees. He was president of the American Chemical Society in 1928 and was reëlected for a second term, but was unable to serve. In 1926 he was awarded the Chandler Medal by Columbia University "in recognition of outstanding achievements in science." He was the author of a well-known book, *The Chemical Examination of Water, Fuel, Flue Gases and Lubricants* (1911), and his contributions to scientific magazines were numerous and covered a wide field. His system of classifying coal is used in the International Critical Tables. He wrote seventeen of the bulletins published by the University of Illinois Engineering Experiment Station, and was American editor of *Fuel in Science and Practice*. He died in Urbana, Ill.

[*Industrial and Engineering Chemistry*, Sept. 1925; *Chemical and Metallurgical Engineering*, May 1926, June 1931; *Science*, July 3, 1931; *Chemical Bull.* (Chicago), June 1931; *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Time*, Mar. 3, 1930; *Chicago Sunday Tribune*, May 17, 1931; *Fuel in Science and Practice*, June 1925.]

B. S. H.

PARRINGTON, VERNON LOUIS (Aug. 3, 1871–June 16, 1929), teacher, philologist, historian, was born at Aurora, Ill., of Scotch and English ancestry, the son of John William and Louise (McClellan) Parrington. His father, a native of New Hampshire, graduated from Colby College in 1855, became a principal of public schools in New York and Illinois, was a Union captain in the Civil War, and finally practised law in Kansas and was a judge of probate. Parrington attended the College of Emporia, a Presbyterian institution, for several years, was admitted as a junior to the class of 1893 at Harvard College and, after graduating, returned home to teach. A Westerner not only by birth but by conviction, he had been unhappy at Harvard and did not revisit Cambridge and Boston for thirty years. He was instructor in English and French at the College of Emporia, 1893–97; instructor in English and modern languages, 1897–98, and professor of English, 1898–1908, at the University of Oklahoma, losing his post as the result of what he called a "political cyclone"; assistant professor of English, 1908–12, and professor of English from 1912 until his death at the University of Washington. On July 31, 1901, he married Julia Rochester Williams, of Norman, Okla., who with two daughters and a son survived him. His esthetic nature was rich and well disciplined. He was an enthusiastic student of architecture; wrote excellent verse, especially in his younger years; and took infinite pains with his prose style, which became a perfect expression of the man himself. He spent fourteen months of 1903–04 in England and France and visited Europe again in 1923 and 1929. He taught in the summer sessions of the University of California in 1922, of Columbia University in 1923, and of the University of Michigan in 1927. As a teacher of literature he was extraordinarily effective. At the University of Washington, where he developed a notable series of courses in the history of American literature and thought, he was worshipped by his pupils, but official recognition of his work came slowly and grudgingly. Outside the University he was little known until the first two volumes of his *Main Currents in American Thought* were published in the spring of 1927. The work was recognized at once as the most scholarly and original study of American literature since Moses Coit Tyler's spacious survey of the Colonial and Revolutionary periods, and for two brief, busy years, Parrington enjoyed his renown. Death overtook him unannounced on a Sunday morning at Winchcomb, Gloucestershire, only a few minutes after he had written a last tribute to his friend, James Allen Smith [*q.v.*], to whose memory he had dedicated the *Main Currents*.

Parrington's publications were: "The Puritan Divines, 1620–1720," *The Cambridge History of American Literature*, vol. I (1917); *The Connecticut Wits* (1926); *Sinclair Lewis, Our Own Diogenes* (1927); *Main Currents in American Thought: An Interpretation of American Literature from the Beginning to 1920* (3 vols., 1927–30), the volumes bearing the subtitles of *The Colonial Mind* (1927), *The Romantic Revolution in America* (1927), and *The Beginnings of Critical Realism in America* (1930), which was published as he left it, incomplete and some of it not in its final form; articles entitled, "American Literature to the End of the Nineteenth Century" and "Nathaniel Hawthorne" in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (14th ed., 1929); the article on Brook Farm in the *Encyclopaedia of the Social Sciences;* the chapter, "The Development of Realism," in *The Reinterpretation of American Literature* (1928), edited by Norman Foerster; the introduction to James Allen Smith's *The Growth and Decadence of Constitutional Government* (1930); and a number of book reviews in the *Nation*, the *Saturday Review of Literature, Books*, and other periodicals.

His fame depends on the *Main Currents in*

American Thought. The publication of the first two volumes marked a fresh beginning in the study of American literature in its relation to the life of the nation: every work written since has felt its influence. Yet the book did not pretend to be a history of American literature, and as a history of American thought it confines itself pretty strictly to the rise of the idea of democratic idealism and to the struggle to make that idea prevail in the political and economic order. As a work of scholarship the *Main Currents* has already fulfilled its mission, but it continues to display the inexhaustible suggestiveness and vitality of a classic. As an account—shrewd, well informed, witty, and understanding—of a great procession of significant Americans in their relation to the ideas prevailing in their time, the book will not easily be superseded, but it is the personal, artistic quality of it, rather than its scholarship, that makes it one of the landmarks of American literature.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *Gen. Cat. Officers, Grads., and Former Students of Colby Coll.* (1920); *Harvard Coll., Class of 1893, Secretary's Report*, 1899, 1910, 1918, 1923, 1933; *Nation*, July 10, 1929; Russell Blankenship, "Vernon Louis Parrington," *Ibid.*, Aug. 7, 1929; J. B. Harrison, *Vernon Louis Parrington, American Scholar* (1929); *Seattle Daily Times*, June 17, 19, 1929. For illuminating criticism of Parrington's work see Charles A. Beard, "Fresh Air in American Letters," *Nation*, May 18, 1927, and Morris R. Cohen, "Parrington's America," *New Republic*, Jan. 28, 1931.] G. H. G.

PARRIS, ALBION KEITH (Jan. 19, 1788–Feb. 11, 1857), senator, governor of Maine, the only child of Samuel and Sarah (Pratt) Parris, was born at Hebron, in what is now the state of Maine, where his father, one time judge of the court of common pleas for Oxford County, was one of the first settlers. His ancestor, Thomas Parris, the son of a dissenting minister near Plymouth, England, emigrated to Long Island and later removed to Pembroke, Mass. Albion's boyhood was spent on his father's farm. He entered Dartmouth College in 1803 with advanced standing, was graduated in 1806, and immediately commenced the study of law with Ezekiel Whitman [*q.v.*] of New Gloucester. He was admitted to the Cumberland bar in September 1809 and started practice in Paris. In 1810 he was married to Sarah Whitman, the daughter of Levi Whitman of Wellfleet, Mass., who with their five children survived him.

After entering politics in 1811 as attorney for Oxford County, he represented Paris in the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1813–14 and Oxford and Somerset counties in the Massachusetts Senate of 1814–15. In November of that year he was elected a representative in the

Parris

Fourteenth Congress and reëlected in 1816, serving until Feb. 3, 1818, when he resigned to accept appointment as judge of the federal district court for Maine. He was active in the Maine convention of 1819, serving on the committee that drafted the new constitution and as treasurer of the convention. The following year he succeeded Samuel Freeman as judge of probate for Cumberland County. When William King [*q.v.*] resigned as governor of Maine in 1821, Parris was elected, after an interim, in a triangular contest that almost split the Democratic party in Maine. He was annually reëlected until 1826, when he refused to be a candidate. His terms as governor were uneventful ones, in which the lands held in common with Massachusetts and the northeastern boundary were the most prominent matters for discussion. On his recommendation the legislature authorized him to collect materials on the boundary question, which was rapidly becoming serious. In 1827 he succeeded John Holmes [*q.v.*] as United States senator but resigned on Aug. 26, 1828, to become associate justice of the supreme court of Maine. Although long absence from legal work forced him to intensive study, he filled this office intelligently though not brilliantly. This post he gave up in 1836 to become second comptroller of the federal treasury, a position he held for thirteen years. He returned to private law practice in Portland, but in 1852 he was elected mayor with the support of the faction opposed to the Maine liquor law. His only defeat at the polls and his last venture into politics came in 1854, when he was the Democratic candidate for governor. Distinguished for common sense more than for brilliance, he was a politician rather than a jurist or statesman. Guided largely by expediency he advanced from office to office, each more highly salaried than the one before; he sacrificed a senatorship for the safety of a judgeship. He was not a fighter and could not face abuse. Urbane, courteous, shrewd, he built up a great following. He wrote skilful and well-placed political letters. He avoided responsibility on momentous issues. In life he was a practical success.

[William Willis, *A Hist. of the Law, the Courts, and the Lawyers of Maine* (1863); W. B. Lapham and S. P. Maxim, *Hist. of Paris, Me.* (1884); *Maine Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. V (1857), pp. xl–xlv; *Eastern Argus* (Portland), Feb. 12, 1857.] R. E. M.

PARRIS, ALEXANDER (Nov. 24, 1780–June 16, 1852), architect and builder, was descended from Thomas Parris, who came to New England from Topsham, England, in 1683, and later served as the first schoolmaster of Pem-

broke, Mass. Alexander's father, Matthew, married Mercy Thompson of Halifax, Mass., in February 1780, and the couple moved at once to Hebron, Me., where Alexander was born. Other families from Pembroke settled in this portion of Maine at about the same time; Paris Hill takes its name from the Parris family, and Alexander's cousin Albion K. Parris [*q.v.*] in time became a United States senator and governor of Maine. Alexander's father died when his son was only three and apparently the widowed mother returned to Pembroke, for the boy was educated in the school there and there apprenticed to a carpenter and builder. He is said at this time to have studied especially Peter Nicholson's *Principles of Architecture*. He married Silvina (or Sylvina) Stetson, Apr. 19, 1801, and for a time was teacher of a common-school.

Between the time of his marriage and the War of 1812 he worked for a while in Portland; the Richard Hunnewell (Shepley) house in Portland, of which his drawings are preserved, dates from 1805. During the War of 1812 he was captain of a company of artificers (engineers) stationed at Plattsburg, N. Y.; and after its close he settled in Boston. Here his most important work was done. The David Sears House, on Beacon Street, now altered and used as the Somerset Club, is dated by a stone in the basement as 1816; Parris' name appears as architect. In 1819, he was the architect of St. Paul's Church on Tremont Street (still extant), which was built by Solomon Willard, the architect of Bunker Hill Monument; this church, the first large classic-revival church of temple type in Boston, marked the end of the colonial tradition and the beginning of the age of revivalism.

During the next decade, Parris' marked engineering skill found scope in his work with Col. Loammi Baldwin [*q.v.*] as consulting engineer in building the masonry dry dock at the Charlestown Navy Yard; at the same time he built various sea walls in Boston Harbor. He appears to have served as superintendent for Charles Bulfinch [*q.v.*] in the construction of the Massachusetts General Hospital (completed in 1823), and in 1825 he was the architect for the market hall and the surrounding buildings of Faneuil Hall Market, a scheme of civic betterment remarkable for its day in its combination of broad practical and esthetic ideals. It was much praised at the time, and its continuing usefulness today bears witness to the soundness of his design and execution. During this period he is also credited with the design of the Marine Hospital in Chelsea, and the arsenal at Watertown; it is possible also that he superintended the erection of the

Boston Customs House, though the plans are known to be the work of Ammi B. Young. Between 1834 and 1836, Richard Upjohn [*q.v.*] was one of Parris' draftsmen; his diary (in the possession of his grandson, Hobart B. Upjohn) shows that in that period he was working on the Boston Court House (usually attributed to Bulfinch), on a fire-engine house, and on further work at the Massachusetts General Hospital and the navy yard in Charlestown. In 1847 (Fentress, *post*) or 1848 (Preble, *post*), Parris was appointed civil engineer of the navy yard at Portsmouth, N. H., a post which he held until his death. Under his direction much levelling was done, the sea wall was completed, and many buildings were enlarged and repaired.

In 1840 Parris had bought the Elisha Briggs estate in the north part of Pembroke, his childhood home. Taken ill in Washington, in the spring of 1852, he was removed to his estate and died there June 16. He was buried in the Briggs cemetery, North Pembroke. His widow died Oct. 3, 1853. Many of his drawings are preserved in the Boston Athenaeum Library; among them "Plans and Elevations of the Massachusetts General Hospital erected under the superintendance of Alexander Parris, 1823"; plans of the Hunnewell House, of a house for Mr. Preble, and of "Pr'th church" (possibly St. John's, Portsmouth, N. H., still standing). The Massachusetts Historical Society owns his competition designs for the Bunker Hill Monument.

[*Columbian Centinel* (Boston), Apr. 30, 1825; W. E. H. Fentress, *1775–1875: Centennial Hist. of the U. S. Navy Yard at Portsmouth, N. H.* (1876); Justin Winsor, *The Memorial Hist. of Boston,* vol. IV (1881); G. H. Preble, *Hist. of the U. S. Navy-Yard, Portsmouth, N. H.* (1892); A. E. Brown, *Faneuil Hall and Faneuil Hall Market* (1900); S. A. Drake, *Old Landmarks and Historic Personages of Boston* (1873); M. V. Tilson, *The Tilson Geneal.* (1911); *Vital Records of Pembroke, Mass. to the Year 1850* (1911); Fiske Kimball, *Domestic Architecture of the American Colonies and of the Early Republic* (1922); C. A. Place, *Charles Bulfinch, Architect and Citizen* (1925); *Commonwealth* (Boston), June 19, 1852.] T. F. H.

PARRIS, SAMUEL (1653–Feb. 27, 1719/20), clergyman, prominently identified with the Salem witchcraft delusion, was born in London, the son of a merchant, Thomas Parris, but probably lived for a time in Barbados, where his father and his uncle owned extensive plantations. Although it has been asserted that he attended Harvard College, he was certainly not a graduate. As early as 1674 he was engaged in mercantile business in Boston. In April 1686 he attended a council of Boston clergymen (*Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, 5 ser. VI, 1879, p. 21*) and in November 1688 a committee from Salem Village (now Danvers) interviewed him

"about taking ministerial office" with them. Since 1672, when after nearly a decade of wrangling, Salem Village had been separated from Salem, three ministers had left because of parish dissensions. Consequently, Parris insisted on an unusually explicit contract before accepting. On Nov. 19, 1689, he took charge, and trouble soon arose over the execution of the contract.

Less than three years later further trouble came to him. In February 1692 his daughter and his niece became subject to curious attacks which physicians and ministers both attributed to "an evil hand." Parris believed that Satan was attacking his flock and that as a faithful pastor he must fight back. Like Cotton Mather [*q.v.*], he was convinced that his best weapons were fasting and prayer (Hale, *post*, p. 23), but the situation got out of his hands when Mary Sibley, a member of his church, gave his West Indian slaves instructions as to how to discover the "witches" and soon the jails were filled with the accused. In the witch trials Parris, like Judge William Stoughton [*q.v.*], accepted "spectral evidence" contrary to the advice of the Boston ministers (cf. Mather, *post*, I, 211). He often acted as court clerk and sometimes as a witness. His testimony against several condemned members of his parish caused disaffection among their relatives, who refused to attend church and drew up a list of grievances against the minister. Parris replied to the charges in his "Meditations for Peace," read to the congregation in November 1694, in which he acknowledged his error in countenancing "spectral evidence" and begged forgiveness. A church council presided over by Increase Mather [*q.v.*] vindicated him, but advised him to leave the village—advice which he did not follow.

In the meantime, another dispute had arisen. The village had set aside some parsonage land in 1691 which Parris soon claimed as his own in lieu of salary arrears. The resulting dispute was taken to the Ipswich court. Parris found his position unbearable and resigned, June 30, 1696, but held the land until the court effected a settlement, September 1697, requiring him to relinquish it and ordering the parish to pay all arrears in salary. His tactless handling of the chaotic affairs of Salem Village had made him odious to many persons, but the Mathers, Judge Sewall, and others did not renounce his friendship when he left the village. Evidently he returned to business in Boston in 1697 (*Suffolk Deeds*, XIV, 1906, p. 423). He was in Concord in 1704/05, in Dunstable in 1711, and spent his last years in Sudbury, where he died. Twice married, he survived both his wives; the first, Elizabeth, died in 1696 at Danvers; the second, Dorothy, in 1719 at Sudbury. They bore him five children.

[*Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, vol. XLIX (1913); H. F. Waters, *Geneal. Gleanings in England* (1901), I, 143–44; J. W. Hanson, *Hist. of the Town of Danvers* (1848); C. W. Upham, *Salem Witchcraft* (2 vols., 1867); *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 3 ser. III (1833); *Pubs. Col. Soc. of Mass.*, XXIV (1923), 168; John Hale, *A Modest Enquiry into the Nature of Witchcraft* (1702); Cotton Mather, *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1702; ed. of 1853); Robert Calef, *More Wonders of the Invisible World* (1700; repr. 1823); *Proc. Essex Inst.*, vol. II (1862); *A Report of the Record Commissioners of Boston, Mass.*, IX (1883), 155, 158; *Vital Records of Sudbury, Mass.* (1903).]

R. P. S.

PARRISH, ANNE (Oct. 17, 1760–Dec. 26, 1800), philanthropist, was the eldest of eleven children of Isaac and Sarah (Mitchell) Parrish, of Philadelphia, Pa. As early as 1637 the Parrish name is on record in Maryland, Capt. Edward Parrish of Yorkshire having emigrated to Anne Arundel County. A branch of the family moved to Philadelphia, for John Parrish (1702–1745), grandfather of Anne, married Elizabeth Roberts of that city and is recorded a citizen. The community into which Anne was born was a Quaker group, known for its good works and for a faith which, while lacking the force of the earlier Society of Friends, was steeped in religious and charitable interests. Anne's youngest brother, Joseph Parrish [*q.v.*], became one of Philadelphia's leaders in medical and philanthropic circles, and Anne is remembered chiefly as a pioneer in two important charities.

On an occasion when her parents were ill with yellow fever, she vowed that if they should recover she would devote the remainder of her life to benevolence and charity. Accordingly she founded in 1796 a school for girls in necessitous circumstances (later called the Aimwell School) and held the first sessions at a private house at the corner of Second Street and Pewter Platter Alley (now 17 North Second Street). The numbers grew, and in the first year of the school the founder associated with herself as "teaching trustees" Catharine W. Morris and Mary Wheeler. By 1799 there was a board of eighteen and a school of fifty. The course offered at the school included domestic science in various branches as well as the conventional studies. A sewing teacher was engaged, and by 1808, with sixty pupils, the trustees turned the school over to professional teachers and were compelled to borrow a room in the Corporation School House on Fourth Street. After several other moves, Aimwell was finally established at 869 North Randolph Street and continued in operation as a school until 1923. It is a tribute to the thoroughness and foresight of the founder that the school went on with

keener annual impetus, though she herself died after its fourth year of existence.

The second institution founded by Anne Parrish was the House of Industry, for the employment of poor women in Philadelphia. This was established in 1795, incorporated in 1815, carried on for a number of years in Ranstead Court, and is still (1934) in active operation. It was the first charitable organization for women in America. Anne Parrish died in 1800 at the age of forty. The only likeness of her is a family silhouette.

[Susanna P. Wharton, ed., *The Parrish Family* (1925); reports of the Corporation of Aimwell School, Philadelphia, 1874, 1902, 1916; original minutes of the Board; Thomas Woody, *A Hist. of Women's Educ. in the U. S.* (1929); *Report of the Female Soc. of Phila.* (1871); Louise G. Walsh and Matthew J. Walsh, *Hist. and Organization of Educ. in Pa.* (1930); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), vol. II.]

R. M. G.

PARRISH, CELESTIA SUSANNAH (Sept. 12, 1853–Sept. 7, 1918), educator, was born on her father's plantation near Swansonville, Pittsylvania County, Va., the daughter of William Perkins Parrish, a country gentleman owning a large estate in both land and slaves, and his second wife, Lucinda Jane (Walker) Parrish. She began at the age of five years to attend a private school on her father's plantation. In 1862 her father died and in 1863 her mother also. There were no schools in Pittsylvania County during the Civil War, but the aunts with whom the three children lived had a library in which Celestia read every book, and she memorized much from Byron and Shakespeare. In the autumn of 1865, when a private school was opened at Callands, she enrolled and walked every day two and a half miles back and forth over a rough mountain road. There she memorized textbooks on botany, biology, and chemistry, along with the limited curriculum of the "three r's." When in 1867 her uncle and guardian, William B. Walker, died, it was discovered that there was left only a very small legacy. Therefore, she became a teacher in a private school and later in the public school at Swansonville with a salary of $40 a month. Teaching and studying wherever the possibility opened, she not only supported herself, her brother, and her sister, but, when her half-brother died leaving five dependent children, assumed part of the expense of their maintenance.

In 1885 she entered the State Female Normal School at Farmville, Va., was graduated in 1886, and was appointed to teach mathematics. In 1891–92 she took special work in mathematics and astronomy at the University of Michigan. In the autumn of 1893 she went to the newly established Randolph-Macon Woman's College to teach mathematics, psychology, and pedagogy. There is abundant testimony to her rare gifts as a teacher and to her unusual and striking personality. She was able to obtain meager equipment for the course in psychology, to improve apparatus, devise experiments, and establish laboratory work as an essential part of the required course in psychology. During these years she attended several summer sessions, took correspondence work, and, after a few months of residence, received the Ph.B. degree from Cornell University in 1896. In January 1895 she had published in the *American Journal of Psychology* an article "The Cutaneous Estimation of Open and Filled Space," the result of some of her work in the laboratory at Cornell. A little later she studied with John Dewey at the University of Chicago. In 1902 she became professor of pedagogic psychology at the State Normal School in Athens, Ga. There she obtained, through funds furnished by George Foster Peabody, the establishment of what was probably the first practice school for normal students in the South. In 1903 she was one of the organizers and became the first president of the Southern Association of College Women. She began the agitation for a more practical expression of industrial and agricultural training in connection with the common-schools. She was interested in the pre-school child long before the importance of that aspect of education was generally recognized. She touched the educational life of the state of Georgia through her teaching and lecturing, but she also touched the educational life of the entire South through her presidency of the Southern Association of College Women. The last position she held was that of supervisor of rural schools of Georgia. From county to county she went on her visits to schools, giving help and inspiration. Her greatest work in her last years was the establishing of schools for adult illiterates. When she died at Clayton, Ga., the Georgia legislature adjourned for her funeral, and on her monument at Clayton are these words: "Georgia's Greatest Woman."

[A brief autobiographical pamphlet published by J. O. Martin, Atlanta, Ga., *The Early Life Story of Miss Celeste Parrish* (1925); material from Miss Mary A. Bacon, Athens, Ga., and from Miss Gillie Larew, Randolph-Macon Woman's College, Lynchburg, Va.; *Atlanta Journal*, Sept. 9, 23, 1918; date of birth from *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19, and from records of the registrar of the University of Chicago.]

L. K. M. R.

PARRISH, CHARLES (Aug. 27, 1826–Dec. 27, 1896), coal operator, was born in Dundaff, Pa., the son of Archippus and Phebe (Miller) Parrish. Shortly after the birth of the child the

family moved to Wilkes-Barre, where the father was proprietor of a hotel. Charles attended the Wilkes-Barre Academy and at fifteen became a clerk in the store of Ziba Bennett of Wilkes-Barre. At twenty-one he became a partner in the firm, but in 1856 he withdrew and began to speculate in coal lands. He founded the Kembleton Coal Company and for years originated and developed important and far-reaching business schemes in the fields of mining and transportation. He was president of the Philadelphia Coal Company, which operated the Empire mine, and was one of the organizers and for twenty years president of the Lehigh & Wilkes-Barre Coal Company. He was also one of the organizers of the Lehigh & Susquehanna Railroad; the Sunbury & Wilkes-Barre Railroad, and the Lehigh Coal and Navigation Company, of which he was a director for thirty years. He was also a director of the Jersey Central Railroad. The Sugar Notch and Pine Ridge mines in the Wyoming Valley coal region were operated by the Parrish & Annora Coal Company. For twenty years Parrish was president of the First National Bank of Wilkes-Barre. He was interested in a number of manufacturing concerns and served as president of the Hazard Manufacturing Company which made wire rope. During the early part of the Civil War he organized troops and made generous contributions of money for the prosecution of the war.

Parrish's name is closely associated with the growth of the Wyoming Valley region of Pennsylvania and with the development of its resources. He had the instinct of the speculator and made and lost large sums of money. He was friendly toward the laboring class and established a system of workingmen's insurance in all his companies. In 1885 he was elected to the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society and in 1889 he became a life member. He was married on June 21, 1864, to Mary Conyngham, the daughter of John Nesbit Conyngham. They had four children, three of whom survived him. He died suddenly at Philadelphia, Pa., although he had been in ill health for some years.

[H. E. Hayden and others, *Geneal. and Family Hist. of the Wyoming and Lackawanna Valleys, Pa.* (1906), vol. I; "Chas. Parrish," *Proc. and Colls. Wyoming Hist. and Geol. Soc.*, vol. IV (1899); *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Dec. 28, 1896.] J. H. F.

PARRISH, EDWARD (May 31, 1822–Sept. 9, 1872), pharmacist, teacher, college president, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the seventh son of Joseph [*q.v.*] and Susanna (Cox) Parrish. He attended the Friends' School until he was sixteen years of age, then was apprenticed to his brother

Dillwyn, who conducted a drug store on the southwest corner of Eighth and Arch streets. During the term of his apprenticeship he attended the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy and graduated from that institution in 1842. A year later he purchased a drug store at the northwest corner of Ninth and Chestnut streets adjoining the building which housed the University of Pennsylvania. This close proximity to the University brought him into intimate contact with the medical students in particular, and no doubt gave him his first desire to teach. He concluded that the medical students were not sufficiently versed in the practical work of pharmacy to enable them to practise medicine to the best advantage, especially in rural communities where there were no drug stores. To overcome this deficiency in their education and training, he decided to begin a school in the rear of his store for the teaching of practical pharmacy, and opened this school in 1849.

The following year he entered into partnership with his brother and moved to Eighth and Arch streets, where he continued to conduct his school until 1864. In the latter year, he was elected to fill the chair of materia medica in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy, which position he gave up in 1867 to take over the professorship of theory and practice of pharmacy, the duties of which were more to his liking. This chair he held until his death. In the same year in which he entered upon his duties at the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy, he secured the passage of the act of incorporation of Swarthmore College, and the subsequent founding of this institution was largely the result of his efforts. He served as secretary of the board of managers from 1864 to 1868 and as president of the college from 1868 to the spring of 1871.

In 1848, he married Margaret Hunt of Philadelphia. Four sons and a daughter were the fruits of this union. His writings were many. In addition to a textbook, *An Introduction to Practical Pharmacy* (copyrighted 1855, revised editions 1859, 1864) and a volume entitled *Summer Medical Teaching in Philadelphia* (1857), he wrote numerous papers on subjects of pharmaceutical interest. More than fifty of these were printed in the *Proceedings* of the American Pharmaceutical Association and the *American Journal of Pharmacy*, others in the *Druggists' Circular* and elsewhere. He was elected a member of the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy in 1843, was elected to the board of trustees in 1845, and served as the secretary of the latter from 1845 to 1852, and as secretary of the College from 1854 to 1864. He became

member of the American Pharmaceutical Association at its first meeting in 1852, was elected recording secretary in 1853, first vice-president in 1866, and president in 1868. He was a delegate to the Pharmacopœal Convention in 1860. He was appointed by the mayor of Philadelphia as one of a commission of five to carry into effect the Pharmacy Act of 1872. In August of the same year, he accepted an appointment from the federal government to visit certain Indian tribes in the present Oklahoma that had been placed under the supervision of the Society of Friends, of which he was a member, and while engaged in performing this service, he contracted malarial fever and died, at Fort Sill, Indian Territory.

[*Am. Jour. Pharmacy*, Oct. 1, 1872, May 1, 1873; *The First Century of the Phila. College of Pharmacy and Science* (1922), ed. by J. W. England; S. P. Wharton, *The Parrish Family* (1925); E. H. Magill, *Sixty-five Years in the Life of a Teacher* (1907); *The Reg. of Swarthmore Coll.* (1914); *Druggists' Circular and Chem. Gazette*, Oct. 1872; *Press* (Phila.), Sept. 16, 1872.] A. G. D—M.

PARRISH, JOSEPH (Sept. 2, 1779–Mar. 18, 1840), physician, teacher, born in Philadelphia, Pa., was the youngest child of Isaac Parrish and his wife, Sarah Mitchell, and a brother of Anne Parrish [*q.v.*]. The first American ancestor of the Parrish family, Edward, came out from England as surveyor-general of the province of Maryland under Lord Baltimore. He and his immediate descendants became the owners of large tracts of land in Maryland and were regarded as wealthy until John Parrish, Joseph's grandfather, lost practically all he owned as the result of guaranteeing a note for a friend. As a consequence Isaac Parrish, Joseph's father, was apprenticed to a hatter and remained in that business throughout his life. He acquired means and gave his eleven children excellent educations. Joseph went to the Friends' School, gained a knowledge of Latin and French, and in his later years studied Hebrew and Greek. After leaving school he served an apprenticeship with his father but in 1802 commenced studying medicine as a pupil of Caspar Wistar [*q.v.*]. He received the degree of M.D. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1805, submitting a thesis which was published under the title, *On the Influence of the Passions upon the Body in the Production and Cure of Disease* (1805). In the same year yellow fever appeared in epidemic form in Philadelphia, and Parrish was appointed resident physician to the emergency hospital which was established by the Board of Health. In 1808 he gave a course of popular lectures on chemistry. He became one of the staff of the Philadelphia Dispensary, and later served that institution as

Parrish

a manager. From 1807 to 1811 he was physician to the Philadelphia Almshouse; in 1811 he was transferred to the surgical staff on which he served until 1821; and from 1816 to 1829 he was a member of the staff of the Pennsylvania Hospital. He was president of the board of managers of the Wills Eye Hospital, 1833–40, and served as vice-president of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia and the Philadelphia Medical Society. When the professorship of anatomy in the University of Pennsylvania was rendered vacant by the death of John Syng Dorsey in 1818, the trustees are said to have chosen Parrish as his successor, but he declined the honor as he deemed it would interfere with his performance of his religious duties. During the cholera epidemic of 1832 he had charge of a cholera hospital, and in recognition of his services was presented by the city authorities with a suitably inscribed silver pitcher.

An interesting episode in his career was his attendance upon John Randolph of Roanoke, when the latter died in Philadelphia in 1833. Parrish was with the dying man almost continuously for four days before his death, during which time Randolph made a will in which he manumitted his slaves. In order that the will might be validated it was necessary for Parrish to make a deposition concerning his patient's mental and physical condition. Parrish was a strong advocate of abolition—served for a time as president of the Pennsylvania Abolition Society—and it is needless to say was only too glad to further Randolph's last wishes. Another object in which Parrish took a deep interest was the abolition of capital punishment. All his life he was a strictly observant member of the Society of Friends.

Parrish made a number of contributions to medical periodicals, chiefly to the *North American Medical and Surgical Journal* and the *Eclectic Repertory and Analytical Review*, of which he was for some time an editor. He edited an American edition of William Lawrence's work on hernia (*A Treatise on Ruptures*, 1811), and in 1836 published *Practical Observations on Strangulated Hernia, and Some of the Diseases of the Urinary Organs*. On Oct. 20, 1808, he married Susanna Cox, daughter of John and Ann Cox, of Burlington, N. J. They had eleven children, all of whom survived their father. Two of them, Isaac and Joseph, became physicians, while Edward [*q.v.*] was a noted teacher of pharmacy.

[S. P. Wharton and Dillwyn Parrish, *The Parrish Family* (1925); G. B. Wood, *A Memoir of the Life and Character of the Late Joseph Parrish, M.D.* (1840); *The Deposition of Dr. Joseph Parrish in John Randolph's Case* (reprinted from the court records for private circulation); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage,

Am. Medic. Biogs. (1920); Henry Simpson, *The Lives of Eminent Philadelphians* (1859); W. C. Posey and S. H. Brown, *The Wills Hospital, Phila.* (copr. 1931); T. G. Morton, *The Hist. of the Pa. Hospital, 1751–1895* (1895); *North American and Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), Mar. 19, 1840.]

F. R. P.

PARROTT, ENOCH GREENLEAFE (Nov. 27, 1815–May 10, 1879), naval officer, was born at Portsmouth, N. H., the son of Susan (Parker) and Enoch Greenleafe Parrott, a prominent merchant and naval agent. He was the cousin of Robert Parker Parrott [*q.v.*]. He was appointed midshipman on Dec. 10, 1831, went to sea in the Brazil Squadron, and after several years in coast survey work was made lieutenant on Sept. 8, 1841. A cruise in the *Saratoga* of the African Squadron, from 1841 to 1843, brought experience in punitive expeditions against coast settlements. In the Mexican War, while attached to the *Congress* of the Pacific Squadron, he was in the naval force accompanying Frémont's march from Monterey to Los Angeles, and he was present at the capture of Guaymas and Mazatlán on the Mexican west coast. In 1852–53 he was in the Mediterranean on the *St. Louis,* celebrated for her rescue in July 1853 of the Hungarian patriot, Martin Koszta, from an Austrian brig of war at Smyrna. A cruise followed in the *St. Mary's* of the Pacific Squadron, then duty at the naval observatory in Washington, 1857–58, and subsequent special work in Washington. He was in the expedition that evacuated the Norfolk navy yard on Apr. 20 and 21, 1861, and was promoted to commander in this month. His first wartime distinction came with his capture, while commanding the brig *Perry,* of the privateer schooner *Savannah,* on June 3, 1861, sixty miles off Charleston. The *Savannah* had a pivot-gun and made some slight resistance. For this first capture of a Southern privateer, Secretary Welles officially commended the ability and energy of captain, officers, and crew. Shortly afterward Parrott was transferred to the steamer *Augusta,* in which he took part in the attack on Port Royal on Nov. 7, 1861, and was later engaged in arduous blockade duty, much of the time as senior officer off Charleston. The *Augusta* went north in August 1862 but was back on the blockade in December and was one of the ships engaged with Confederate rams off Charleston on Jan. 31, 1863, when she was struck by a nine-inch shell. When Admiral Samuel Francis du Pont [*q.v.*] left the blockading squadron in July following, he sailed north with Parrott in the *Augusta,* speaking of her at the time as one of the ships that had seen longest and hardest service. Next year Parrott commanded the ironclad *Canonicus* in the James River, participating in the action on June 21, 1864, with Southern gunboats and battery near Howlett's. Commanding the monitor *Monadnock,* he was in the two attacks on Fort Fisher in the winter of 1864–65 and in the blockade of Charleston until the surrender. Admiral David D. Porter paid high tribute to the personnel of the monitors in this service, "riding out heavy gales on an open coast," and of their commanders declared, "I hope I shall ever keep them under my command" (*Official Records, post,* 1 ser., XI, 259). Parrott in particular seems to have liked monitor duty, remarking of his craft that he "did not see any difference between her and anything else" (*Ibid.,* p. 602). After the war he was made captain on July 25, 1866, commodore on Apr. 22, 1870, and rear admiral on Nov. 8, 1873. He had duty as commander of the receiving ship at Boston from 1865 to 1868, at the Portsmouth navy yard in 1869, as commandant at Mare Island yard from 1871 to 1872, and in command of the Asiatic Squadron until his retirement on Apr. 4, 1874. Being unmarried, he spent subsequent summers with relatives in Portsmouth and winters at the Fifth Avenue Hotel in New York. For some years his health and mind were affected by paralytic strokes, which finally caused his death. He was buried in the graveyard of Saint John's Episcopal Church at Portsmouth.

[Spelling of middle name and names of parents from records of Saint John's Episcopal Church, Portsmouth, N. H.; L. R. Hamersly, *The Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy* (3rd ed., 1878); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Navy),* 1 ser., I, II, V, X–XIII; *Army and Navy Journal,* May 17, 1879; *N. Y. Herald,* May 11, 1879.]

A. W.

PARROTT, ROBERT PARKER (Oct. 5, 1804–Dec. 24, 1877), ordnance inventor, manufacturer, was born in Lee, N. H. He was of English descent and was the eldest son of a prominent ship-owner of Portsmouth, N. H., who served one term as United States senator, John Fabyan Parrott. His mother, Hannah Skilling (Parker) Parrott, was the daughter of Robert Parker of Kittery, Me., a ship-builder and commander of privateers during the Revolution. Parrott attended the Daniel Austin school in Portsmouth and on July 1, 1820, entered the United States Military Academy at West Point, from which he graduated in 1824, third in a class of thirty-one. He was appointed second lieutenant and assigned to the 3rd Artillery. Ordered immediately to duty at the Military Academy, he served there for five years as assistant professor of natural philosophy. Following two years of garrison duty at Fort Constitution, near Portsmouth, N. H., he was promoted to first lieutenant and transferred to Fort In-

dependence, Boston Harbor, Mass., remaining on duty there until 1834, when he was assigned to ordnance duty. After a short staff service in military operations in the Creek Nation, he was promoted to captain of ordnance Jan. 13, 1836, and ordered to Washington as assistant to the chief of the bureau of ordnance. Not long after beginning the duties of this assignment he was detailed as inspector of ordnance in construction at the West Point Foundry, Cold Spring, N. Y. His ability and expert knowledge attracted the attention of Gouverneur Kemble [*q.v.*], president of the West Point Foundry Association, who induced Parrott to resign from the army and become superintendent of the foundry. His resignation went into effect Oct. 31, 1836. Three years later he succeeded Kemble as lessee of the foundry. In order to supply it with charcoal pig-iron, he purchased a tract of 7,000 acres in Orange County, N. Y., and the Greenwood iron furnace, which he operated in partnership with his brother Peter. For almost forty years thereafter Parrott directed these enterprises and at the same time continued his studies of ordnance. He kept himself well informed on the world's activities in this field and, in addition, prosecuted a course of research and experiment of his own. This work covered a rather wide range at first, but upon learning of the secret production in 1849 of a serviceable rifled cannon by Krupp in Germany, he concentrated his attention on rifled ordnance. For upwards of ten years he continued his experiments, his aim being to produce an efficient rifled cannon, simple in construction and cheap. Eventually he patented, Oct. 1, 1861, a design for strengthening a cast-iron cannon with a wrought-iron hoop shrunken on the breech. The unique feature of the invention was the hoop, which was formed of a wrought-iron bar of rectangular section coiled into a spiral and welded into a solid ring. He also devised and patented, Aug. 20, 1861, an improved expanding projectile for rifled ordnance. The expanding device was a brass ring cast upon and secured to the projectile but susceptible of being expanded into the cannon grooves by the action of the explosive gases. These inventions Parrott offered to the government at cost price, and with the beginning of the Civil War he received large orders for both guns and projectiles. "Parrott guns" were present in the field at the first battle of Bull Run and thereafter in every important engagement both on land and sea. They were made by the thousands and in many calibers, and threw "Parrott projectiles" of from 10 to 300 pounds. It is recorded that "the 200 and 300 pounder Parrott guns were the most formidable service guns extant in their time" (Paulding, *post*). Furthermore, their endurance was far in excess of that required of the contemporary rifled cannon of Europe.

With the termination of hostilities, Parrott ceased gun manufacture at the West Point Foundry and in 1867 withdrew from active connection with it. He and his brother continued, however, the operation of the Greenwood furnaces and property until 1877, when Parrott sold his share to his brother and retired. During this latter period he continued his experimental work and invented several improvements in projectiles and fuses. He and his brother also began in 1875, the first commercial production of slag wool in the United States. Parrott held one public office, that of first judge of the court of common pleas for Putnam County, N. Y. (1844–47), an appointment made, no doubt, because of his widely recognized uprightness and sagacity. In 1839 he married Mary Kemble, sister of Gouverneur Kemble and sister-in-law of James K. Paulding [*q.v.*]. At the time of his death, in Cold Spring, he was survived by his widow and an adopted son.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); *Ninth Ann. Reunion Asso. Grads., U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1878); J. N. Paulding, *The Cannon and Projectiles Invented by Robert Parker Parrott* (1879); E. C. Kreutzberg, "Orange County Iron Making," *Iron Trade Rev.*, July 17, 31, 1924; Frederic De Peyster, *Memoir of Robert Parker Parrott* (1878); *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 25, 1877; data from family; patent office records.] C. W. M—n.

PARRY, CHARLES CHRISTOPHER (Aug. 28, 1823–Feb. 20, 1890), botanist, born in Admington, Gloucestershire, the son of Joseph and Eliza (Elliott) Parry, came of a line of clergymen of the Established Church. His family moved from England when he was nine years of age to a farm in Washington County, N. Y. The lad showed promise in the schools and an eager interest in the native plants. He attended Union College (A.B. 1842) and then went as a graduate student to Columbia College, where he came under the influence of the botanist, John Torrey [*q.v.*], and took the degree of M.D. in 1846. In the same year he settled at Davenport, Iowa, and began practice, but the unspoiled flowering prairies led him year by year further and further from what he considered the vexations of a physician's life to an ever-increasing absorption in botanical work. In 1848 he served under David Dale Owen [*q.v.*] in the geological survey of Wisconsin, Iowa, and Minnesota, and in the next year was appointed botanist to the United States and Mexican boundary survey. In this connection he gave the greater part of the next three years to geological and botanical field work

along the boundary from Texas to San Diego, and consequently was well fitted to furnish the introduction, "Botany of the Boundary," to the Survey's report on botany written by John Torrey (*Report on the United States and Mexican Boundary Survey*, 2 vols. in 3, 1857–59). This first-hand experience with the remarkable vegetation of the southwestern deserts, still largely unknown to botanists, confirmed his natural bent. After 1849, for nearly forty years, he devoted his summers chiefly to botanical exploration of the little-known western states and territories, either on his own initiative or as botanist to some surveying expedition or special mission. He was the first to hold the post of botanist in the United States Department of Agriculture and spent three years (1869–71) in Washington at the Smithsonian Institution, organizing the plant collections brought back by government scientific or surveying expeditions.

The alpine flora of the Rocky Mountains in Colorado attracted him, and in his explorations he discovered the species of spruce which he called *Picea Engelmannii* and named Gray's Peak and Torrey's Peak for Asa Gray and John Torrey who visited him in his cabin. In 1874, he took up the old trail of John C. Frémont [*q.v.*] in southern Utah, making discoveries that brought his name to the notice of plant geographers. As the years passed he visited California more and more frequently in connection with his studies of the chaparral. Thorough, cautious, and conscientious, he journeyed in the winter of 1884–85 to the Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew, England, in order to compare his California specimens with types there before publishing his revisions of California manzanitas (*Bulletin of the California Academy of Sciences*, vol. II, 1887) and the species of Ceanothus (*Proceedings of the Davenport Academy of Natural Sciences*, vol. V, 1893). This region was so new to collectors that he turned up many new species, but, what is more important, he was the first investigator of these groups to study living plants in the field in connection with specimens in the herbarium. His many botanical papers were rather brief and mainly of a special character, but his numerous contributions to the newspaper press of Chicago, St. Louis, Davenport, and San Francisco, continued for many years, covered a wider field, dealing with the natural resources of the new West and the general features of the native vegetation of mountains and valleys.

Genial and unaffected in manner and affectionate in disposition, Parry had a capacity for cultivating warm and enduring friendships that stood the tests of camping trips and hundred- or thousand-mile botanical journeys. In the Rocky Mountains of Colorado he had the company of Edward Lee Greene [*q.v.*], and on a wide circuit through the forests of the Pacific Coast that of George Engelmann [*q.v.*]. John Gill Lemmon [*q.v.*] was his companion in a survey of the untouched San Bernardino Mountains, the western Mohave Desert, and the broad plain of the San Joaquin in California, while for two trips into Lower California he chose as a helper Charles Russell Orcutt, whom he brought up to be a notable collector. The wide and easy range of his personal relations furthered his botanical activities in numberless ways. Through J. D. B. Stillman, "forty-niner" and Leland Stanford's personal physician, who had been a fellow student at the medical school, Parry obtained a railway pass on all the Stanford lines, a favor which greatly facilitated his field work. A zest for scraping acquaintance made the little man with the short quick step and delightful ways a welcome figure along routes of travel. Though generally tolerant, Parry could speak boldly at need, as when he printed a sharp denunciation of Katharine Curran, a botanical free lance possessed of talents for personal abuse. The beautiful *Lilium Parryi* of the Southern California mountains, the Lote Bush (*Zizyphus Parryi*) of the Colorado Desert, the Ensenada Buckeye (*Aesculus Parryi*) are but a few of the hundreds of new plant forms—trees, shrubs, and flowers—discovered by Parry in western America. He did his work chiefly at a time when danger of the Indian was largely past, and before herds, the plow, and industrialism had changed or obliterated the native plant societies. His happy personality is, therefore, associated with the most romantic and fruitful period of botanical exploration in the Far West.

In 1853 he married Sarah M. Dalzell, who died in 1858. In 1859 he married a widow, Emily R. Preston, who survived him. During his frequent and prolonged journeys through four decades, the home at Davenport had been steadily maintained and here he died early in 1890.

[Sources include sketch by C. H. Preston, with portrait and bibliography of Parry's writings comp. by his widow, in *Proc. Davenport Acad. Nat. Sci.*, vol. VI (1897); autobiographical letter on early expeditions, *Ibid.*, vol. II, pt. 2 (1880); *The U. S. Biog. Dict. . . . Iowa Vol.* (1878); *Bull. Phil. Soc. of Wash.*, vol. XII (1895); *Botanical Gazette*, Mar. 1890; *Iowa State Register* (Des Moines), Feb. 21, 1890; W. L. Jepson, "Old-time Western Letters" (MS.). Many of Parry's letters are preserved in the herbaria at St. Louis, Ames, and Notre Dame; his large herbarium belongs to the Iowa State College.] W. L. J.

PARRY, CHARLES THOMAS (Sept. 15, 1821–July 18, 1887), locomotive builder, was

born in Philadelphia, the son of Samuel and Mary (Hoffline) Parry. At the age of fifteen he was employed as an apprentice in the pattern shop of the Baldwin Locomotive Works, and after completing his apprenticeship spent several years in the drawing room. He was then advanced through every grade of mechanical labor until 1855, when he was appointed the company's general superintendent in charge of locomotive construction. In 1867 he became a member of M. Baird & Company, the firm that succeeded Matthias W. Baldwin [*q.v.*] in the ownership of the locomotive works. Upon the retirement of Matthew Baird [*q.v.*] in 1873, the firm became known as Burnham, Parry, Williams & Company, which remained its title until after Parry's death.

Parry grew up with the locomotive industry, for the Baldwin Locomotive Works had scarcely produced fifty locomotives when he commenced his apprenticeship. His abilities attracted the attention of his superior officers and his promotion was rapid. Nineteen years after entering upon his apprenticeship, he had become the plant's chief executive in charge of locomotive construction. His first major problem in this position involved the installation of a system of scientific management to replace the rule-of-thumb production methods that prevailed throughout industry in that period. He installed labor-saving devices, commenced having complete drawings of locomotives prepared in advance of their construction, and in general brought the shop methods under which locomotive production was conducted to a much higher level of efficiency. One of his partners attributed "a good deal of the prosperity of the works" to Parry's individual efforts. He was very successful in adjusting his employees' grievances and always endeavored to better their working conditions. He was primarily responsible for the introduction of the piece-work system which was well established prior to his death and more than fifty years later was still in operation in its original form. This wage-payment method, in the opinion of an official of the company, "has been mainly responsible through all these years for the lack of labor troubles for which The Baldwin Locomotive Works has been noted" (Church, *post*). Parry's labor policies were appreciated by the employees, who joined heartily in celebrating the semi-centennial of his connection with the concern.

Parry had few outside interests. He was one of the original founders of Beach Haven, N. J., and paid certain of the village development costs, such as the construction of the Protestant Episcopal Church. He traveled in Europe extensively and about ten years prior to his death was engaged by the Russian government to supervise its locomotive construction program; forty locomotives for Russia were built at the Baldwin Works. Parry was a member of the Franklin Institute and for one year a member of the board of managers, a director of the National Bank of the Republic, and a life subscriber to the publication fund of the Pennsylvania Historical Society. He died at Beach Haven in his sixty-sixth year, survived by his widow, a son, and two daughters.

[*Baldwin Locomotive Works, Illustrated Catalogue* (n.d., 1871?); *Hist. of the Baldwin Locomotive Works, 1831–1923* (n.d.); *Railway Age*, May 16, 1931; *Press* (Phila.), July 19, 1887; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), July 19, 22, 1887; Phila. Register of Wills and Phila. Register of Deaths (MSS.), in Phila. City Hall; correspondence with Arthur L. Church of the Baldwin Locomotive Works and with Mrs. Romer Lee, Parry's granddaughter.] H. S. P.

PARRY, JOHN STUBBS (Jan. 4, 1843–Mar. 11, 1876), obstetrician and gynecologist, was born on a farm in Drumore Township, Lancaster County, Pa. His parents belonged to the Society of Friends. His father, Seneca Parry, died when John was only six years old, but his mother, Priscilla S., continued successfully the management of the farm and the boy received his primary education in the country schools, then spent a few months at the Gwynedd Boarding School. At seventeen, he commenced the study of medicine in the office of the family doctor, J. M. Deaver, with whom he worked for three years. In 1863, he entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania and received his doctorate in medicine two years later. During the next year he held the post of resident physician to the Philadelphia General Hospital. At the completion of this practical internate, he married, Apr. 5, 1866, Rachel P. Sharpless of Philadelphia, and commenced his independent practice. His appointment as district physician to the Philadelphia Dispensary enabled him to make a further study of hospital cases; his first paper, "Vesico-abdominal Fistula," appeared in the *Medical and Surgical Reporter*, Sept. 30, 1865.

In 1867 he became visiting obstetrician to the Philadelphia Hospital, where he reorganized the obstetrical and gynecological departments, presented a wealth of material in this field at Blockley before medical students, and soon earned a considerable reputation as a clinical lecturer. His second paper, "Observations on Relapsing Fever as it Occurred in Philadelphia in the Winter of 1869 and 1870," appeared in the *American Journal of the Medical Sciences*, October 1870.

During the next five years he published twenty-eight papers in various medical journals; these were mainly on obstetrics and children's diseases. His contributions on rachitis (*e.g.*, those in *Proceedings of the Pathological Society of Philadelphia*, 1870, and *American Journal of the Medical Sciences*, January 1872) were especially important and proved the prevalence of this "disease" in Philadelphia, although it had previously been considered rare in the New World. In 1872 he was chosen one of the physicians for diseases peculiar to women at the new Presbyterian Hospital and in the same year assisted in founding the State Hospital for Women and Infants. In the spring of 1873, he suffered a pulmonary hemorrhage and was compelled to spend the subsequent winters in Florida. Always mentally active, he there became interested in conchology and botany and also collected data on the possibilities of a subtropical health-resort. He returned to his work in Philadelphia in the spring of 1874, and once more in 1875, but broke down again each time. Despite his failing health, he finished his additions to the second American edition (1875) of William Leishman's *System of Midwifery*, and his own pioneer work, *Extra-Uterine Pregnancy* (copyrighted 1875; published 1876). He died, when only thirty-three years old, at Jacksonville, Fla. At the time, he was one of the council of the College of Physicians, the president of the Obstetrical Society, and vice-president of the Pathological Society of Philadelphia.

[J. V. Ingham, memoir in *Trans. Coll. of Physicians of Phila.*, 3 ser. II (1876); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Medic. News and Library*, Apr. 1876; *Medic. and Surgic. Reporter*, Apr. 1, 1876; *Phila. Inquirer*, Mar. 16, 1876.] H. B. B.

PARSONS, ALBERT RICHARD (June 24, 1848–Nov. 11, 1887), anarchist, one of the ten children of Samuel and Elizabeth (Tompkins) Parsons, was born in Montgomery, Ala. His parents, both of whom were born and reared in the North, were of colonial ancestry. The mother died when the boy was two years old, and three years later the father. An elder brother, William Henry Parsons, took Albert to his home in Tyler, Tex. After some schooling, the boy became a "printer's devil" in the composing room of the *Galveston Daily News*. At the outbreak of the Civil War, though small of size and but thirteen years old, he joined a local military company, later serving in the cavalry brigade commanded by his brother. After the war, he studied for six months at Waco (now Baylor) University, and then returned to the printing trade. In 1868 he started a weekly newspaper, the Waco *Spectator*, which soon expired, and in the following year he became a traveling correspondent for the Houston *Daily Telegraph*. He was for several years in the service of the internal revenue bureau and at one time was the reading secretary of the state Senate. On June 10, 1871, at Austin, he married Lucy Eldine Gonzalez, and in the fall of 1873 he settled in Chicago.

Here he joined the Typographical Union and was soon active in labor and radical circles. He became a Socialist, and in the spring of 1881 was the candidate of a Socialist faction for mayor. Already, however, he had come to reject political action, and by 1883 he considered himself an anarchist. On Oct. 1, 1884, the International Working People's Association founded, in Chicago, a weekly newspaper, *The Alarm*, and Parsons was chosen as editor. While occupying this post he made many speaking tours and became widely known as an exponent of extreme radicalism. The movement for the eight-hour day, in which he took a leading part, came to a dramatic climax in front of the McCormick harvester works on May 3, 1886, when police fired into a crowd of strikers. Parsons, who was absent from the city, returned in time to speak at a protest meeting in front of the Haymarket on the following evening. It was a peaceable gathering; the tone of the speakers, according to Mayor Carter Henry Harrison [*q.v.*], who was present, was temperate; and Parsons, with hundreds of others, had left the place when a force of 200 policemen appeared and ordered the remainder of the crowd to disperse. Some one threw a bomb, which exploded, killing or mortally wounding seven of the police and injuring about fifty others. A round-up of radical agitators followed. Though the thrower of the bomb was never identified, eight persons were brought to trial (June 15), charged with being accessories to the murder of one of the policemen. Parsons, who had been indicted but not apprehended, voluntarily joined his seven comrades as the case was called. On Aug. 20, a verdict of guilty was rendered, and Parsons, with six others, was sentenced to death. On Sept. 14, 1887, the state supreme court affirmed the verdict, and on Nov. 2, the federal Supreme Court denied an application for a writ of error.

From the beginning the case had aroused an excited interest throughout the country. The complicity of the defendants in the bomb-throwing was denied, the methods employed in the trial were hotly denounced, and efforts were made by citizens in all walks of life to save the prisoners from death. Parsons, by reason of his general reputation, his voluntary surrender, his

eloquent defense at the trial, and the fact that he was the only native American in the group, won an especial degree of sympathy. Appeals were made to Gov. Richard J. Oglesby to commute the sentences, and it is certain that had Parsons consented to apply for clemency, it would have been granted. On the ground, however, that the act would imperil the lives of his comrades he refused. The Governor finally commuted to life imprisonment the sentences of Samuel Fielden and Michael Schwab; Louis Lingg committed suicide in his cell, and Parsons, August Spies, Adolph Fischer and George Engel were hanged. On June 26, 1893, Gov. John P. Altgeld [*q.v.*] made public a severely condemnatory review of the trial and at the same time pardoned the three surviving prisoners.

Parsons' social philosophy was unformulated; usually he employed the terms socialism and anarchism interchangeably; his expressed views on the use of violence were contradictory, and he nursed the fantastic notion that the invention of dynamite had rendered armies and police bodies powerless. He is remembered rather for his part as the central figure in a great social tragedy than for the validity of his doctrines. He was brave, upright, truthful, and passionately devoted to the cause of freedom and justice. He was, moreover, a friendly man, greatly beloved by his intimates. He left a wife and two children.

[Names of mother and wife and date of marriage have been supplied by Mrs. Parsons. Criticisms of the trial from the legal standpoint are given in M. M. Trumbull, *The Trial of the Judgment* (1888) and in J. P. Altgeld, *Live Questions* (ed. of 1899); the police view is given in M. J. Schaack, *Anarchy and Anarchists* (1889); see also L. E. Parsons, *Life of Albert R. Parsons* (1889); *Chicago Tribune*, Nov. 11, 12, 1887.]

W. J. G.

PARSONS, ALBERT ROSS (Sept. 16, 1847–June 14, 1933), musician, teacher, was born in Sandusky, Ohio, the son of John Jehiel and Sarah (Averill) Parsons. He was descended from Joseph Parsons who was in Springfield, Mass., in 1636. The boy was unusually musical and in 1860 he was regularly engaged as organist of a church in Indianapolis. His first instruction in piano was received from teachers in Buffalo. In 1863 he went to New York, where he studied with Frédéric Louis Ritter. In 1867 he went abroad and for two years studied in Leipzig with Moscheles, Wenzel, Reinecke, Papperitz, and Richter. From 1870 to 1872 he was in Berlin, acting as secretary to the American minister, George Bancroft, and studying with Tausig, Kullak, and Weitzmann. During his years in Germany he became acquainted with Richard Wagner and as a result of this association

prepared an English translation of Wagner's *Beethoven* which he published in 1872. He later became an ardent advocate of Wagner's music and philosophy in the United States.

In 1872 Parsons returned to the United States, and for the rest of his long life made his home in the environs of New York. He established himself as a piano teacher in Steinway Hall on Fourteenth Street, New York, where he remained until the building was torn down in 1926. Then he moved to the new Steinway Hall on Fifty-seventh Street, where he had a studio until the time of his death. He lived to become the dean of New York piano teachers. From 1885 he was head of the piano department of the Metropolitan Conservatory of Music (from 1891 to 1900 the Metropolitan College of Music), New York, and continued in this capacity when the institution became the American Institute of Applied Music in 1900. During his early years in New York he was also active as an organist—for four years at Holy Trinity and for nine years at the Fifth Avenue Presbyterian Church. In 1890 he was president of the Music Teachers' National Association, and from 1893 to 1914 president of the American College of Musicians of the State of New York.

Parsons' writings touched various subjects. His most important work on music was *The Science of Pianoforte Practice* (1886). He wrote a number of songs and piano compositions and in 1917 published *The Virtuoso Handling of the Pianoforte . . . Exercises in Advanced Technic.* As a student of philosophy he sought to examine the spiritual significance of Wagner's work in *Parsifal; the Finding of Christ through Art* (1890). He added a supplementary genealogy to H. M. Burt's *Cornet Joseph Parsons, A. D. 1636–1655* (1901) and published *The Garrard-Spencers of London, England, and Cambridge, Mass.* (1897). Others of his works included *The Road Map of the Stars* (1911), *Surf Lines* (1912), a volume of verse, and *An Evening Prayer* (1917), a poem. He often lectured on Dante and gave readings of the Italian poet's writings, and also lectured on the Shakespeare-Bacon controversy. He designed the symbolic pyramid mausoleum in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn. His wife was Alice Eva Van Ness of New York, whom he married Apr. 23, 1874. They had five children. His death occurred at Mount Kisco, N. Y.

[Articles on Parsons may be found in *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29, and in the American Supplement to *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians* (1930). See also Henry Parsons, *Parsons Family* (1912), vol. I; the *N. Y. Herald Tribune* and *N. Y. Times*, June 15, 1933.]

J. T. H.

Parsons

PARSONS, FRANK (Nov. 14, 1854–Sept. 26, 1908), political scientist, was born at Mount Holly, N. J., the son of Edward and Alice (Rhees) Parsons. His ancestry on his father's side was English and on his mother's, Scotch and Welsh. After graduating with the degree of B.C.E. from Cornell University in 1873, he went to work on a railroad. From 1874 to 1881 he lived in Southbridge, Mass., where, after the railroad became bankrupt, he taught a variety of subjects in the district schools and in the high school. Meanwhile he studied law and in 1881 was admitted to the Massachusetts bar. In 1885 he became chief clerk in a Boston law firm. These were critical years in his career. He discovered a talent for writing that was not satisfied with the humdrum task of editing legal textbooks and a talent for public speaking that needed a larger audience than the classes he taught in the law school of Boston University. The social and economic unrest then agitating the whole country stirred him profoundly. In 1895 he was nominated for mayor of Boston on a platform of municipal reform by the Prohibition, Populist, and Socialist parties. Two years later he resigned his position in the law firm and took leave of absence from Boston University to accept the professorship of history and political science at the State College of Agriculture and Applied Science at Manhattan, Kan. While in Kansas he formulated a plan for a college to be devoted entirely to economic and social studies. At a convention in Buffalo in June 1899 the plan was launched and funds were obtained to found the Ruskin College of Social Science at Trenton, Mo. He was made dean of the lecture extension department and professor of history and economics. The venture seems not to have been successful, for shortly afterward he returned east and resumed his teaching at Boston University.

His western experience focused his attention on two problems, currency and the railroads. In October and November 1896 he published articles on currency in the *Arena*. These were followed in 1898 by a book, *Rational Money*, in which he advocated abandoning both gold and silver as standard money and establishing a managed currency with a commodity dollar of constant purchasing power. The arguments were set forth with remarkable clearness and thorough acquaintance with the scientific literature of the subject. The publisher was Charles Fremont Taylor, a Philadelphia physician and editor of *The Medical World* who had become deeply interested in economic and social reform. With Taylor's backing, Parsons now plunged into study of municipal ownership of public utilities, both in the United States and abroad, and published the results in a substantial volume, *The City for the People* (1900). A part of the book was devoted to the advocacy of direct legislation, since it was his theory that municipal ownership must be accompanied by reform in city government. *The Story of New Zealand* (1904) treated comprehensively the history and economic origins of the country as a background for the description of its experiments in state socialism. In 1901 he was sent by the National Civic Federation to England as a member of a commission to study municipal trading. His observations are recorded in part in his chapter, "British Tramway History," in *Municipal and Private Operation of Public Utilities: Report of the National Civic Federation Commission on Public Ownership and Operation* (1907, vol. II). In 1905 he resigned his position at Boston University to devote himself entirely to the study of American railroads. After much traveling and interviewing of railway officials and other interested persons, he published *The Heart of the Railroad Problem* (1906), which was criticized as lacking discrimination and constructive suggestions.

He was now suffering from Bright's disease and, although he had undergone a serious operation, refused to modify his habits of strenuous work. He became associated with Meyer Bloomfield in settlement work in Boston, and with his intimate friend, Ralph Albertson, he founded the Bread-winners' College. With the financial aid of Mrs. Quincy A. Shaw, he established the Vocation Bureau, and as its director he did valuable pioneer work in the field of vocational guidance. His posthumous book, *Choosing a Vocation* (1909), summarizes his methods. Another posthumous publication was *Legal Doctrine and Social Progress* (1911). He died in the solitary bachelor quarters in Saint James Street, where most of his work had been done. A friend, Edwin D. Mead, described his career as an "attempt to make the world over . . . into some sort of reflection . . . of the Kingdom of God" (Letter to the *Public*, Oct. 16, 1908, p. 683). He brought to bear on certain political and social problems to which most of his countrymen were indifferent a logical mind and a passion for justice, truth, and fairness. Simple and unassuming in manner he was an inspiring teacher and an effective public speaker. Although in general lacking in humor, he proved on occasion a spirited and entertaining companion. Scholars respected him, and the poor loved him.

[*Arena*, Nov. 1908; *Public* (Chicago), Oct. 2, 16, 1908; *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; *Boston Herald*, Sept. 27, 1908.] P. W. B.

PARSONS, JOHN EDWARD (Oct. 24, 1829–Jan. 16, 1915), lawyer, was born in New York City, the son of Edward Lamb and Matilda (Clark) Parsons. His father was English; his mother a member of a prominent family of Wallingford, Conn. He received his early education at a private school at Rye, N. Y., and at the University of the City of New York (now New York University), from which he was graduated, third in his class, in 1848. His ambition on leaving college was to become a banker, but he was unable to find a suitable position. To employ his time he read law in the office of James W. Gerard and James N. Platt and fulfilled the requirements for the degree of M.A. at New York University. Shortly after reaching his majority he invested nearly all of a considerable inheritance in stock of a Nicaragua canal company, which soon afterward became worthless. Realizing that he must earn his living he obtained admission to the bar in 1852 and began to practise law. At first he intended to devote his attention to abstracting titles and other routine work, but when offered an appointment as assistant district attorney about 1854 he accepted it after some hesitation. In this position, which required that he draw all the indictments and try nearly all the cases which arose in the county, he gained experience of great value in his subsequent career. At the height of the power of the "Tweed ring" he became one of the original members of the city bar association, formed to combat corruption in the courts. He was of counsel for the association in its proceedings against Justices Barnard, Cardozo, and McCunn, and lawyer for the managers of the impeachment of Barnard. His activities in this period established him as a leading member of the New York bar.

Parsons was an ardent champion of the principle of industrial combination. In 1887 he drew up the trustee agreement which formed the Sugar Refineries Company, and after a state court decision had declared the charter of one of the participating companies forfeited, he originated the American Sugar Refining Company, in 1891, which soon controlled ninety-eight per cent. of the refining of sugar in the United States. He successfully defended the company in anti-trust proceedings before the Supreme Court of the United States (*United States* vs. *E. C. Knight Company*, 156 *U. S.*, 1) which held that manufacturing is not commerce and hence not within the scope of federal powers. In 1903 the American company acquired a controlling interest in the Pennsylvania Sugar Refining Company. Since it was not dissimilar to earlier acquisitions upheld in the Knight case, successive attorneys-general took no action upon it. But in 1909, during the excitement which followed the exposure of frauds in the industry, Parsons and other directors of the company were indicted by a federal grand jury for having made the contract of 1903. After three years the case was brought to trial. It resulted in a disagreement of the jury and was not retried.

Parsons had an almost unerring memory, keen intelligence which enabled him to seize at once upon the essential facts of every case, and the ability to make almost flawlessly logical presentations of cases in the courtroom; but he was somewhat lacking in imagination. In his relations with others he was cold and formal. He was interested in many philanthropic enterprises, including hospitals, civic reform, and Bible and tract societies. In some years he is said to have given more than half his large income to charity. He was twice married: on Nov. 5, 1856, to Mary Dumesnil McIlvaine, who died in 1896, and on Mar. 12, 1901, to Florence (Field) Bishop. By his first wife he had five daughters and a son, Herbert, who became a member of Congress.

[Jos. H. Choate, *Memorial of John Edward Parsons* (pamphlet, 1916); *Gen. Alumni Cat. of N. Y. Univ., 1833–1905*, vol. I (1906); *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *Hearings Held before the Special Committee on the Investigation of the Am. Sugar Refining Company . . . House of Representatives* (1911), vols. II and III; *N. Y. Herald*, July 21–22, 1911; Mar. 12–31, 1912; Jan. 17, 1915; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 17, 1915.] E. C. S.

PARSONS, LEWIS BALDWIN (Apr. 5, 1818–Mar. 16, 1907), lawyer, railroad president, Union soldier, was descended from Joseph Parsons, an emigrant from England, who settled in Springfield, Mass., in 1636, and later moved to Northampton. Lewis was born in Perry, Genesee County, N. Y., the son of Lewis Baldwin and Lucina (Hoar) Parsons. Christened simply Lewis, he later assumed the full name of his father at the latter's request. His early boyhood was spent in Homer, N. Y. At the age of ten, he moved with his family to St. Lawrence County, N. Y. He attended local schools, at sixteen began to teach country school, and two years later entered Yale College. After his graduation in 1840, he took charge of a classical school in Noxubee County, Miss., remaining some two years, then returned to the North and began the study of law in Cambridge, Mass. Receiving the degree of LL.B. from the Harvard Law School in 1844, he went West and began to practise at Alton, Ill., first in partnership with Newton D. Strong and then with Henry W. Billings. From 1846 to 1849 he was city attorney of Alton. On Sept. 21, 1847, in St. Louis, Mo., he married Sarah Green Edwards, a niece of Ninian Ed-

wards [*q.v.*], former governor of Illinois. She died May 28, 1850, leaving two children, both of whom died before their father. On July 5, 1852, Parsons married her younger sister, Julia Maria Edwards, who died June 9, 1857. There were two children by this marriage, both of whom survived their parents.

Moving to St. Louis in 1854, Parsons was persuaded by clients who had acquired a controlling interest in the Ohio & Mississippi Railroad to devote himself to its affairs. After a temporary sojourn in Cincinnati, first as attorney and financial agent and subsequently as treasurer, director, and president, he returned to St. Louis and in 1860 retired from active connection with the railroad. In May 1861 he served as volunteer aid to Francis Preston Blair [*q.v.*] at the capture of Camp Jackson. Recognizing the inevitability of war, he wrote to his personal friend, General McClellan, and offered his services. He went to Washington, was commissioned captain and assigned to duty in the quartermaster's department. Despite his ardent desire to join the fighting forces in the field, he was kept throughout the war in non-combatant positions in which because of his previous experience he was able to render exceptional service. He was ordered back to St. Louis and in December 1861 was given charge of all transportation by river and rail pertaining to the Department of the Mississippi, including a territory which extended from the Yellowstone to Pittsburgh and New Orleans. For the first time in history, railroad transportation was a major factor in the prosecution of a great war. Parsons brought a semblance of order out of the existing chaos, drafting a set of regulations for rail transportation that became the basis of the general rules for army transportation adopted later, then turned his attention to systematizing river transportation. Promoted colonel of volunteers in February 1862, he was assigned as aide to General Halleck in April, and continued in charge of transportation in the Department until August 1864, when he was ordered to Washington and given charge of all rail and river transportation of the armies of the United States. In 1865, he was promoted to brigadier-general. One of his most striking achievements as chief of transportation of the armies was the moving of General Schofield's army and all its equipment from Mississippi to the Potomac within a period of seventeen days.

After Lee's surrender, Parsons was retained in charge of the transportation of discharged soldiers. He was made a brevet major-general and mustered out on Apr. 30, 1866. He spent two years abroad in an effort to regain his health,

broken down by overwork, then returned to St. Louis in 1869, and on Dec. 28 of that year married Elizabeth Darrah of New York City, who died in 1887, without issue. In 1875, Parsons settled on a farm in Flora, Ill., which was his home for the rest of his life. He served as director of several railroads and other corporations and for a time was president of a St. Louis bank. In 1880 he was candidate for lieutenant-governor of Illinois on the unsuccessful Democratic ticket. He was active in the affairs of the Presbyterian Church and a trustee and patron of Parsons College, Fairfield, Iowa, the establishment of which had been made possible by a bequest of $37,000 from his father. In 1900 he published *Genealogy of the Family of Lewis B. Parsons (Second)*; *Parsons-Hoar*. He died in Flora, Ill., and was buried in Bellefontaine Cemetery, St. Louis.

[*In Memoriam General Lewis Baldwin Parsons* (privately printed, 1908); H. M. Burt and A. R. Parsons, *Cornet Joseph Parsons* (1901); Henry Parsons, *Parsons Family* (1912), vol. I; War Dept. records; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ.*, 1907; *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, Mar. 17, 1907.]

R. C. C—n.

PARSONS, LEWIS ELIPHALET (Apr. 28, 1817–June 8, 1895), provisional governor of Alabama, was born at Lisle, N. Y., the eldest son of Erastus Bellamy and Jennett (Hepburn) Parsons. His father was a farmer and was associated with Gov. DeWitt Clinton in the agitation for the building of the Erie Canal. The boy was educated in the public schools of New York and read law in that state and in Pennsylvania. About 1840 he removed to Alabama and settled in Talladega, where he formed a law partnership with Alexander White. On Sept. 16, 1841, he was married to Jane Ann Boyd McCullough Chrisman, who bore him seven children. He was earnest in the practice of his profession and was a methodical, hard-working, but never a brilliant lawyer. The guiding principle of his life during the stormy decade before the Civil War was his ardent belief in the Union. He was much criticized for his political wavering through the period, but every political act seems to have been determined by his hope that some way could be found to preserve the Union. In 1856 he voted for Fillmore. In 1859 he was elected on the American ticket to represent Talladega County in the state legislature, where he attracted attention by his efforts to obtain state aid for internal improvements. In 1860 he was a delegate to the Democratic convention and supported Douglas at Baltimore because he believed that the election of Douglas was the only way to save the country.

While outwardly he submitted to the will of the majority he never gave undivided allegiance to the Confederacy. He was reputed to be the head of the Peace Society during the war, although he had two sons in the Confederate Army. In spite of his Union views he seems to have kept the respect of his neighbors and, when President Johnson appointed him provisional governor of Alabama on June 21, 1865, the appointment was generally approved in the state. He was in hearty sympathy with the president's program of conciliation and made every effort to carry it into effect. He recognized all local and judicial officials who had been in office during the Confederacy and permitted them to perform the duties of their offices if they took the oath of allegiance required by the president. He used his influence in Washington to obtain pardons for those who were exempted from the general amnesty. In spite of the interference of the Freedmen's Bureau and the army officers in the state he was able to reorganize the civil government. Under his supervision a new constitution was framed and on Dec. 20, 1865, he retired from office and handed the government over to a successor chosen by the people. He was elected to the United States Senate in 1865 without opposition but was denied his seat by the Republican majority. He supported Johnson in his fight against Congress and was a delegate to the National Union convention in Philadelphia in 1866. In his own state he was the leader of the movement that resulted in the rejection of the Fourteenth Amendment and was said to have originated "the white man's movement" against the ratification of the constitution of 1867. The constitution failed of adoption by 13,550 votes but was put into effect by an act of Congress. He adapted himself to the situation, and in the session of the Alabama legislature of 1872–73 he was the speaker of the Republican House. That act was political suicide, and he never again held office in the state. He practised his profession in Talladega until his death in 1895.

[T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), vol. IV; Wm. Garrett, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Ala.* (1872); Willis Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); W. L. Fleming, *Civil War and Reconstruction* (1905).]

H. F.

PARSONS, SAMUEL BOWNE (Feb. 14, 1819–Jan. 4, 1906), horticulturist, nurseryman, and landscape gardener, son of Samuel and Mary (Bowne) Parsons, was born at Flushing, Long Island, in a house which had been the home of his family for 150 years. He was educated in a private school and began his career as a clerk in New York City. In 1839 he became infected with the mulberry craze and set out 25,000 mulberry buds. That same year, in partnership with his brother Robert, he established on the ancestral farm in Flushing the nurseries of Parsons & Company. In 1840 he traveled extensively in the West Indies and in 1845 made a voyage to Europe to study the horticulture of the Old World. The following year he added to his experiences by exploring Florida, at a time when most of the state was still a wilderness. Encouraged by what he saw, he bought 160 acres of land near Palatka for $160 and began a citrus plantation and nursery. In 1859, the United States government commissioned him to investigate the horticulture and agriculture of Sicily and the Ionian Islands. The most important consequence of this trip was his importation in 1860 of ten colonies of Italian honey bees, the first to arrive safely and live throughout the winter in the United States. These were turned over to the Rev. L. L. Langstroth [*q.v.*], the noted bee authority, and to the apiary of W. W. Cary & Sons at Colerain, Mass., where the sale of Italian queens began in 1861 (*Gleanings in Bee Culture*, Jan. 15, 1907, p. 106; E. F. Phillips, *Beekeeping*, 1928, pp. 210–13). On Mar. 20, 1862, the nursery firm of Parsons & Company bought from Dr. George R. Hall of Bristol, R. I., a collection he had made representing most of the interesting trees and plants found in Japan, including the first Japanese maples ever brought into the United States. Parsons & Company announced: "A collection so rich and so varied [has] never been obtained from any country, even by the best English collectors" (*Horticulturist*, April 1862). Japanese maples remained one of the Parsons specialties, together with the Asiatic rhododendrons, which they were the first to propagate. In 1870, Samuel Parsons imported the first Valencia oranges from Thomas Rivers, an English nurseryman. These were sent to his Florida nursery, after a few years in his Flushing greenhouses, and were introduced in the early 1870's, especially by Edmund Hall Hart [*q.v.*] of Florida. In 1871, Samuel succeeded to the whole nursery business of Parsons & Company, which was continued as the Kissena Nurseries until within a short time of his death.

Not only was Parsons prominent as an horticulturist, landscape gardener, and nurseryman, but also as a participant in civic activities in Flushing. He was identified with the Flushing school system for twenty-five years and with library work. "In religion, he was a Quaker and in the troublous times previous to the Civil War, he was a staunch abolitionist and took an active part in assisting slaves to liberty" (*Na-*

tional Nurseryman, Feb. 1906, p. 49). He was a charter member of the American Pomological Society and a member of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society from 1856. He was well known as a writer of essays and as a speaker on landscape gardening and horticulture and was offered but declined the editorship of *The Horticulturist,* which had been left vacant by the death of A. J. Downing [*q.v.*] in 1852. His book, *The Rose: Its History, Poetry, Culture, and Classification* (1847 and subsequent editions), is one of the classics of horticulture. In 1869 a new abridged edition appeared, under the title of *Parsons on the Rose,* with much of the poetry and sentiment cut out at the editor's advice. A number of editions of the abridgment were issued, one appearing as late as 1912. Parsons married Susan R. Howland, Nov. 3, 1842, and four children were born to them, one of whom, Samuel B., Jr., became a well-known landscape gardener, at one time superintendent of parks in New York City. The mother died in 1855, and in 1862 Parsons married Mrs. Clara E. Weyman, by whom he had one child.

[L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Agric.* (1909), vol. IV and *The Standard Cyc. of Horticulture* (1915), vol. III; *Portrait and Biog. Record of Queens County, N. Y.* (1896); *Gardeners' Monthly and Horticulturist,* Dec. 1887; *Gardening,* Jan. 15, 1906; *N. Y. Tribune,* Jan. 5, 1906; *Florists' Exchange,* Sept. 1, 1900, Jan. 13, 1906, Jan. 27, 1906; W. M. Emery, *The Howland Heirs* (1919); *Trans. Mass. Hort. Soc.,* 1906, pt. II (1907).]

R. H. S.

PARSONS, SAMUEL HOLDEN (May 14, 1737–Nov. 17, 1789), Revolutionary patriot and soldier, was born in Lyme, Conn. His father, Jonathan Parsons, was a strong-minded and able preacher, a follower and close friend of Whitefield. His mother, Phebe (Griswold) Parsons, was related to the influential Griswold and Wolcott families. When the theology of Whitefield proved unpopular with the Lyme congregation, the family moved in 1746 to Newburyport, Mass. Ten years later, however, Samuel, a Harvard graduate of 1756, returned to Lyme to study law under his uncle, Matthew Griswold [*q.v.*]. In 1759 he received his master's degree from Harvard, was admitted to the bar, and settled in Lyme to practise. There, in September 1761, he married Mehetable Mather. Eight children were born to them, one of whom died young.

When only twenty-five Parsons was elected to the Connecticut General Assembly, where he served until 1774. In that year he moved to New London. Through ability as well as influence he was more than once chosen for important offices and, when the Revolution impended, was active in the Connecticut Committee of Correspondence. He was among the first to favor independence and one of the earliest to suggest a colonial congress (Parsons to Samuel Adams, Mar. 3, 1773, Hall, *post,* pp. 20–21). Meanwhile he had enlisted in the militia and on May 1, 1775, he became colonel of the 6th Connecticut Regiment. Before joining the troops at Boston, he shared in the taking of Fort Ticonderoga. Acting on information from Benedict Arnold, he promoted the northern expedition in Connecticut and with some friends raised funds for sending Ethan Allen and his men. After the siege of Boston he was transferred to New York and on Aug. 9, 1776, was commissioned brigadier-general in the Continental Army. At the battle of Long Island he tasted real fighting and barely escaped capture, but for the remainder of the war skirmishes and foraging expeditions were his lot. Stationed almost continuously on the Hudson River or on the Connecticut shore, with little opportunity for brilliance, he was nevertheless an intelligent and conscientious officer. Washington depended upon him for the defense of Connecticut and the arduous work of raising men, procuring supplies, and maintaining the morale of his troops. Because of his position on the Connecticut shore, he also had charge of an important part of the secret service. In December 1779, when General Putnam was incapacitated, Parsons became commander of the Connecticut division, having been the virtual head for over a year. Not until Oct. 23, 1780, however, did an "ungrateful" Congress commission him major-general, a rank suiting his command.

Parsons' chagrin over the failure of Congress to recognize his services only added to a discontent that had been growing since the early years of the Revolution. On quitting his practice to enter the army he had invested his small fortune in government securities the value of which had rapidly decreased. With protraction of the war and depreciation of the currency, he became alarmed concerning his large family and as early as December 1777 considered returning to civil life. As his fears were increased by a steady decline in his health, he frequently applied for leave to resign. He was outspoken in his discontent and did not conceal his intolerance of Congressional inefficiency. Although Parsons' feelings were no different from those entertained by practically every other Continental officer, William Heron [*q.v.*] made the most of them at British headquarters when he offered to "bring Parsons over." Heron, who found it advantageous to be "loyal" to both sides, was one of Parsons' spies, but there is no evidence to show that Parsons knew anything of his more intricate and lucra-

tive dealings with the enemy. Moreover, despite his dissatisfaction, Parsons' zeal in serving the Revolutionary cause did not slacken, and Congress showed itself not wholly unappreciative of his services by refusing to accept his resignation until hostilities were over (July 22, 1782).

After the war Parsons settled in Middletown, whence he was sent to the legislature more than once. His later years are chiefly notable, however, for his share in the development of the Northwest Territory. He had early seen the advantage of receiving land in exchange for his government pay-certificates. With this in mind he used his influence to secure an appointment that would give him an opportunity to examine government lands to the westward, and on Sept. 22, 1785, Congress named him a commissioner to extinguish Indian claims to the territory northwest of the Ohio. When the Ohio Company was formed to secure lands for the Revolutionary soldiers in exchange for their certificates, Parsons was one of the promoters and on Mar. 8, 1787, was chosen one of three directors. In October of that year he became first judge of the Northwest Territory and the following April left for Adelphia, now Marietta, Ohio. So eager was he to provide for his children that at the age of fifty-one he began the life of a frontiersman, never expecting to return to the East and doubtful whether he would see his family again. Doubts which have been raised as to his honesty when in the Ohio Company, although not substantiated, leave a faint suspicion that he may have been too eager for profits.

Returning from a trip to Connecticut's Western Reserve where he also had an interest, Parsons was drowned when his canoe overturned in the rapids of Big Beaver River. He died too soon to realize the fortune he had anticipated from his lands and left his wife and seven children in needy circumstances.

[MSS. in Wm. L. Clements Library and Conn. State Library; C. S. Hall, *Life and Letters of Samuel Holden Parsons* (1905); G. B. Loring, *A Vindication of Gen. Samuel Holden Parsons* (1888), reprinted with revisions from *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, Oct. 1888; Jonathan Trumbull and J. G. Woodward, *Vindications of Patriots of the Am. Rev.* (1896), containing address of vindication by J. G. Woodward to Conn. Hist. Soc., May 5, 1896; S. P. Hildreth, *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of the Early Pioneer Settlers of Ohio* (1852), containing letters and sketch by Parsons' grandson, S. H. Parsons; Justin Winsor, *The Westward Movement* (1897); *Am. Hist. Rev.*, July 1904, p. 766; Douglas Brymner, *Report on Canadian Archives, 1890* (1891), p. 100; W. P. and J. P. Cutler, *Life, Journals and Correspondence of Rev. Manasseh Cutler* (2 vols., 1888), esp. I, 196–97.]

J. C.

PARSONS, THEOPHILUS (Feb. 24, 1750–Oct. 30, 1813), jurist, was born in Byfield, Mass., the son of Moses Parsons, the parish minister, and Susan (Davis) Parsons, and a descendant of Jeffrey Parsons who settled in Gloucester, Mass., in 1654. At Dummer Academy he was always playing harder or studying harder than any other boy, and at Harvard he continued an insatiable student. After graduating in 1769 he taught school at Falmouth (now Portland), Me., reading law meanwhile with Theophilus Bradbury. He began practice in July 1774, but in October 1775 the destruction of Falmouth by British warships sent him home to Byfield disheartened. What seemed a calamity proved the beginning of his professional success, for in his father's house he found Judge Edmund Trowbridge [*q.v.*], a learned lawyer who had prudently retired there from Cambridge because of his Loyalist sympathies. Trowbridge sent for his whole law library, then much the largest in New England. Thus Parsons acquired an exhaustive knowledge of important English reports and treatises which were inaccessible to most colonial lawyers. His assiduous studies brought on consumption, but he regained his health by a long horseback trip and began practice afresh in Newburyport.

While others were fighting for independence, he was considering what sort of permanent government should follow victory. At the age of twenty-seven he became the dominant member of the Essex County convention opposed to the proposed Massachusetts constitution of 1778 and wrote the convention report, called *The Essex Result*, a pamphlet which not only exposed the weakness of the executive under the abortive constitution, but also outlined the main principles for a republican government which were later adopted by the Federalists. As Parsons was influenced by the writings of John Adams, so his plan was in turn largely followed by Adams in drafting the Massachusetts constitution of 1780. At the Cambridge convention of 1779 which formulated this constitution, Parsons was equally prominent. He and his associates, called by Hancock the Essex Junto, insisted upon strong powers for the governor, a property basis for the Senate, and the virtual establishment of Congregationalism as a state religion. In 1788 Parsons was a delegate to the state convention which ratified the federal Constitution. Although a majority was at first opposed to ratification, sufficient votes were won over by a conciliatory address of the chairman, Hancock, which Parsons wrote, recommending as a condition of ratification several constitutional amendments, some of which were adopted in the federal bill of rights of 1791. Except for a brief service in the legislature (1787–91, 1805),

he held no further political office, published nothing on politics under his own name, and never spoke in public unless required to do so by official duties.

His law practice soon became large, extending to all the New England states and occasionally to New York and the United States Supreme Court. In 1800 he left Newburyport for Boston. In learning and intellect he easily led the bar of his time. He knew all the law and the facts about any case he undertook, particularly the technical details of any trade or business involved. And despite his scholarly attributes, he was very successful before a jury. His law office was crowded with pupils until the jealousy of other lawyers was aroused and a rule was established limiting a lawyer's pupils to three. The volume of precedents, of pleadings and other forms, afterward published by Story and other writers, were largely compiled from forms prepared or adopted by Parsons and copied by his students.

In 1806 Parsons was appointed by Governor Strong to succeed Francis Dana as chief justice of the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts. Parsons was then at the head of his profession in the opinion of all lawyers, and the existing judges wished to have a strong man to clear the dockets, then three years behind. Parsons accepted the office at great pecuniary sacrifice. He immediately insisted upon speedy trials, allowing no delays except for genuine reasons. He required lawyers to state their points before beginning and permitted no argument on points which he thought untenable or which were not based on evidence. Thus the dockets were rapidly cleared. But his most important judicial service lay in forming the law of the new Commonwealth of Massachusetts, and indirectly that of other states. In 1806 there were almost no American reports of judicial decisions, and few copies of the English reports were available to American lawyers. Parsons found the law administered by the Massachusetts courts in a chaotic condition and took the opportunity afforded by each case not only to decide that case but to establish rules of general application. These rules he drew from three sources. The first was the English law, which he had absorbed early in his career. Secondly, he combined the English doctrines with his profound knowledge of the unwritten colonial law, for he believed in establishing a system of law in Massachusetts founded upon the institutions and usages of the state. Finally, he shaped the older English and colonial law to meet the new problems presented by rapidly growing commerce. His decisions were particularly useful in the field

Parsons

of shipping and insurance, where he had the good sense to follow Lord Mansfield's example in learning from merchants what were their usages and establishing the principles embodied in those usages as rules of law. Thus although his opinions lack a philosophical insight or far-reaching analysis of legal principles which would make them interesting to lawyers of a later generation, their learning and sure-footedness gave them great value for his own time. During this critical period when the hostility to British institutions might have led to a rejection of the English common law, probably no man except Story did more than Parsons to carry on the common law and restate it in intelligible form to suit American needs.

Outside working hours, Parsons put the law completely aside and turned to other activities. From boyhood he dipped into mathematics and astronomy. The only composition he ever published under his own name was an "Astronomical Problem" (*Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences*, vol. II, pt. 2, 1793, pp. 12–20). His surviving mathematical papers show much interest in the subject, and his improved method of lunar observations was adopted in Nathaniel Bowditch's *New American Practical Navigator* (1802). He possessed extensive chemical, electrical, and optical equipment, and frightened his servants by his experiments. At thirty he began a lifelong devotion to Greek, reading it for relaxation and insisting that it should be taught before Latin. He wrote a Greek grammar, unpublished only because a similar work was reprinted from England. He was a principal founder of the Boston Athenæum and the Social Law Library. Chosen a fellow of Harvard College in 1806, he was influential in securing the appointment of John Thornton Kirkland, his pastor, as president, and shaped the legislation altering the board of overseers. A political opponent on the faculty wrote: "Our college . . . is under the absolute direction of the Essex Junto, at the head of which stands Chief Justice Parsons, . . . a man as cunning as Lucifer and about half as good. This man is at the head of the Corporation. . . . He is not only the soul of that body, but . . . the evil councellor, the Ahithophel of the high federal party" (S. E. Morison, "The Great Rebellion in Harvard College," *Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts*, vol. XXVII, 1932, p. 59).

Whenever he was thrown by business or accident into the company of any person with special information, Parsons never rested until he had learned all that he could. Blacksmiths, carpenters, and painters, not knowing who he was,

were convinced by his conversation that he had learned their trades. He kept a large stock of carpenters' tools near his office, making furniture and toys for his children. He was devoted to his family and never remained a day from home if he could avoid it. Although he rarely dined out, he delighted in entertaining in his own home and built a dining room holding thirty persons, which was often filled to the limit. A large proportion of his guests were usually young men. In appearance he was tall and of a large build, with penetrating eyes. Becoming bald about thirty, he afterward wore a wig which was usually in disorder, and his complete inattention to his dress gave rise to many anecdotes. His wife usually traveled with him on circuit, saying that otherwise he would not be dressed fit to be seen. After a year of failing health, he died in Boston after a short final illness in 1813. His last words were: "Gentlemen of the jury, the case is closed and in your hands. You will please retire and agree upon your verdict." Parsons had married, on Jan. 13, 1780, Elizabeth Greenleaf, a descendant of Charles Chauncy [*q.v.*]. They had twelve children, one of whom was Theophilus [*q.v.*].

[The main source is *Memoir of Theophilus Parsons* (1859), by his son, Theophilus Parsons. It contains the portrait of Parsons by Gilbert Stuart, and reprints of *The Essex Result*, two mathematical papers, the obituary address of Chief Justice Isaac Parker (also in 10 *Mass. Reports*, 521), and the obituary notice from *New-England Palladium* (Boston), Nov. 2, 1813 (also reprinted in *Boston Gazette*, Nov. 4, 1813, and Boston *Columbian Centinel*, Nov. 6, 1813). Other sources include: F. G. Cook, "Theophilus Parsons," in *Great Am. Lawyers*, vol. II (1907), ed. by W. D. Lewis; S. E. Morison, *The Life and Letters of Harrison Gray Otis, Federalist, 1765–1848* (2 vols., 1913), *A Hist. of the Constitution of Mass.* (1917), and "The Struggle over the Adoption of the Constitution of Mass., 1780," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. L (1917); A. L. Morse, *The Federalist Party in Mass. to the Year 1800* (1909); S. B. Harding, *The Contest over the Ratification of the Federal Constitution in the State of Mass.* (1896). The opinions of Parsons appear in 2–10 *Mass. Reports;* the most important were reprinted in his *Commentaries on Am. Law* (1836).] Z. C., Jr.

PARSONS, THEOPHILUS (May 17, 1797–Jan. 26, 1882), professor in the Harvard Law School, was born in Newburyport, Mass., whence at the age of three he moved with his family to Boston. He was the son of Theophilus Parsons [*q.v.*] and Elizabeth Greenleaf. Entering Harvard College in 1811, he graduated four years later and then read law in the office of William Prescott, father of the historian and friend of the Parsons family. On account of ill health he made a trip to Europe in 1817, where he lived for some months in the family of William Pinkney, then minister to Russia. On his return to Massachusetts he took up the practice of law, from 1822 to 1827 in Taunton, thereafter in Boston. During his earlier years he was also an active journalist, as editor of the *United States Literary Gazette* and joint editor of the Taunton *Free Press* and of the *New-England Galaxy.* During the Jacksonian period he was apprehensive that numbers would rise against property and warned that "the body politic [must be invigorated] with the principle that right is not their creation, and depends not on their will, but on His will who made them free" (*An Address, Delivered before the Phi Beta Kappa Society of Harvard University,* 1835, p. 22).

In July 1848 Parsons was appointed a professor in the Harvard Law School. At the bar he had built up a large practice, especially in admiralty, patent, and insurance law. During his first year as a teacher he had to lecture on contracts and real property, with which he was less familiar. After a short period of adjustment he became the most interesting of the memorable triumvirate which included Professors Joel Parker and Emory Washburn. His pleasing diction, a fund of anecdote, and his social grace made his instruction entertaining if not profound. In addition to their lectures and Socratic discussions the professors on occasion addressed the entire school on subjects of legal and political interest. Parsons' oft-repeated anecdotes at these times became traditional. After going to the law school he became one of the most prolific of legal writers. His work on contracts ran through nine editions. The treatise derived much of its merit from the careful notes prepared by Christopher Columbus Langdell, then an impecunious student whose fees were remitted in exchange for this assistance.

To Parsons, who believed that the work of the constitutional fathers was "near to the perfection of republican government," secession came as a severe shock. Throughout the war he was an ardent supporter of the President's military authority: "In my judgment, [the] Constitution has not yet been violated, in any way or to any extent, greater or less. . . . But, if [the] choice *must* be made [between sacrificing nationality or sacrificing the Constitution], I should still say, our nationality must not be lost, and rebellion must not prevail. . . . I can discern no limits to a nation's right of self-salvation" (*Slavery,* pp. 21–23). Parsons had a son in the army and a daughter who rendered outstanding service as an army nurse. In the Reconstruction period he took the position, notably in presiding at a mass meeting in Faneuil Hall, that "as we are victorious in war, we have a right to impose upon the defeated party any terms necessary for

our security" (*Boston Morning Journal,* June 22, 1865, p. 4). This included negro suffrage; and until this innovation was established he believed that the Southern states should be held in military occupation.

The year 1869 saw a sweeping change at the law school. There was a growing feeling, shared by the new president, Eliot, that the method of instruction, stabilized for the past twenty years, should be invigorated. Parsons felt it was time to retire. He was succeeded by Langdell, who promptly introduced the case method of instruction. In private life Parsons was a man of warm friendship and lively conversation. In 1823 he espoused the Swedenborgian faith and was deeply concerned with the study and exposition of its philosophy. He took an interest in natural history and in reconciling a view of the origin of species with his religious creed. After his retirement he continued to live in Cambridge where he occupied himself with the revision of his various textbooks and in writing religious essays. He enjoyed the society of his friends, the philosophical discourse of the Magazine Club, and his speculations of the nature of the heavenly kingdom. He had married in 1823 Catherine Amory Chandler, by whom he had three sons and four daughters. His legal works include: *The Law of Contracts* (2 vols., 1853–55); *The Elements of Mercantile Law* (1856, 1862); *The Laws of Business* (1857); *A Treatise on Maritime Law* (2 vols., 1859); *The Constitution* (1861); *A Treatise on the Law of Promissory Notes and Bills of Exchange* (2 vols., 1863, 1876); *A Treatise on the Law of Partnership* (1867 and later editions); *A Treatise on the Law of Marine Insurance and General Average* (2 vols., 1868); *A Treatise on the Law of Shipping* (2 vols., 1869); *The Political, Personal, and Property Rights of a Citizen* (1874). He also prepared a *Memoir of Theophilus Parsons* (1859), an *Address Commemorative of Rufus Choate* (1859), and memoirs of Charles Folsom and Charles Greely Loring for the Massachusetts Historical Society. His miscellaneous writings include: three series of *Essays* (1845, 1856, 1862), *The Law of Conscience* (1853); *Slavery* (1863); *Deus Homo* (1867); *The Infinite and the Finite* (1872); and *Outlines of the Religion and Philosophy of Swedenborg* (1875).

[Charles Warren, *Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1908), vol. II; *The Centennial Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1918); memorials of Parsons in the *New Jerusalem Mag.*, Apr., May 1882; the *Albany Law Jour.*, Apr. 10, 1880; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 26, 1882.]

C. F.

PARSONS, THOMAS WILLIAM (Aug. 18, 1819–Sept. 3, 1892), dentist, poet, translator of Dante, was born in Boston, the son of Thomas William and Asenath (Read) Parsons. His father, a native of Bristol, England, received the degree of M.D. from Harvard in 1818 and practised medicine and dentistry in Boston. The son attended the Boston Public Latin School for six years, but did not graduate. In 1836 he made his first trip to Italy and other European countries, and upon returning to Boston in 1837, entered the Harvard Medical School. Although he received no medical degree, he practised dentistry intermittently in Boston and afterwards in London, and was commonly called Dr. Parsons. In 1857 he married Anna (or Hannah) M. Allen (1821–1881) of Boston. The last twenty years of his life were devoted to literary pursuits, chiefly in Boston, Scituate, and Wayland. After a period of failing health, he died while visiting his younger sister in Scituate; his body was found in a well into which he had fallen while suffering, apparently, from a stroke of apoplexy. He was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge.

By nature reserved, sensitive, and deeply religious, Parsons felt himself out of sympathy with the times, and he seldom appeared in general society. T. B. Aldrich (*post,* p. 323) said of him: "He carried his solitude with him into the street." His original poetry is frequently contemplative in tone, dwelling on religion and death, and at times rising to ecstatic fervor, but at other times he could be humorous, personal, and playful. He wrote verses on the death of prominent men and for public occasions such as the opening of the Boston Theatre in 1854, the opening of the Players' Club in New York in 1888. His style was influenced by his study of Dante, an absorbing pursuit with him for more than fifty years. He shared with Dante a horror of slovenly work, and devoted infinite care to perfecting his verses, often rewriting them after they had appeared in print. Nevertheless, he seemed indifferent to the ultimate fate of his poems, which usually appeared in newspapers or magazines, or in small, privately printed volumes.

During his first stay in Italy Parsons started to commit the *Divina Commedia* to memory and to translate it into English. In 1841 he published in the *Boston Daily Advertiser and Patriot* (Oct. 7) the most frequently quoted of his original poems, "On a Bust of Dante," called by Stedman (*post,* p. 55) "the peer of any modern lyric in our tongue." In revised form these verses appeared in a little volume which Parsons printed anonymously in Boston in 1843: *The First Ten Cantos of the Inferno of Dante Alighieri:*

Newly Translated into English Verse. This was the earliest published American translation of any considerable portion of Dante. In 1865 seventeen translated cantos were privately printed by Parsons, and the entire *Inferno,* with Doré's illustrations, was published in Boston in 1867, the year in which Longfellow's version of the entire *Divine Comedy* appeared. Parsons published about two-thirds of the *Purgatorio* between 1870 and 1883 in the *Catholic World.* In 1893, after his death, the whole *Inferno,* all that could be found of the *Purgatorio,* and fragments of the *Paradiso* were issued in one volume. The translation aims to reproduce the spirit rather than the letter of the original; being in rhymed quatrains which correspond to Dante's tercets, the wording is necessarily sometimes extended, yet on the whole the meaning is reproduced with remarkable fidelity. Among rhymed English renderings of Dante's poem, that of Parsons, incomplete though it is, takes high rank for its nobility of style and its verbal felicity. Only his own fastidiousness and desire for perfection prevented him from completing it. Much of Parsons' original verse was inspired by the picturesqueness of the Italian scene; but he had by nature something of Dante's detachment from the world and dwelt, as Louise Imogen Guiney said of him, "in a joyous cloister of the imagination." Among his most finished lyrics are particularly those of religious feeling, like "Paradisi Gloria," which has been called "one of the few faultless lyrics in the language" (Hovey, *post*). Parsons was taken by Longfellow as the model for "the Poet" in his "Tales of a Wayside Inn"; he has been compared to the English writers Gray, Collins, and Landor, and has been called "a poet for poets" (Stedman, *post*).

The poetry of Parsons was collected in two volumes in 1893: *The Divine Comedy of Dante Alighieri,* with a preface by Charles Eliot Norton and a memorial sketch by Louise Imogen Guiney (cf. *Atlantic Monthly,* June 1894); and *Poems,* containing most of his original verse. Smaller volumes of verse had appeared during his lifetime, including: *Ghetto di Roma* (1854); *Poems* (1854); *The Magnolia* (1866); *The Old House at Sudbury* (1870); *The Shadow of the Obelisk* (London, 1872); *The Willey House, and Sonnets* (1875).

[Sources include *Critic,* Sept. 10, 17, 1892; *Boston Transcript,* Sept. 6, 1892; Richard Hovey, *Seaward: an Elegy on the Death of Thomas William Parsons* (1893), which includes a paper reprinted from the *Atlantic Monthly,* Feb. 1893; T. B. Aldrich, "A Portrait of Thomas William Parsons," *Century Magazine,* July 1894; Maria S. Porter, "Thomas William Parsons; with Unpublished Poems by Dr. Parsons, and Letters by Dr. Holmes," *Ibid.,* Oct. 1901; R. W. Griswold, *The Poets and Poetry of America* (1874); E. C. Stedman, *Poets of America* (1885); T. W. Koch, "Dante in America," *Fifteenth Ann. Report of the Dante Soc.* (1896). The name of Parsons' wife appears in the vital records of Boston and Cambridge both as Hannah and as Anna; the latter name is used on her tombstone in Mount Auburn Cemetery.] K. McK.

Parsons

PARSONS, USHER (Aug. 18, 1788–Dec. 19, 1868), physician and surgeon, was born in Alfred, Me., the youngest of nine children. His father was William Parsons, farmer, trader, and lumberman, three of whose brothers were Harvard graduates; his grandfather was the Rev. Joseph Parsons, whose immigrant ancestor of that name was one of the first settlers in Springfield, Mass., in the seventeenth century. His mother, Abigail Frost (Blunt) Parsons, was the daughter of the Rev. John Blunt of New Castle, N. H., and a blood connection of Sir William Pepperell, hero of Louisburg.

Usher Parsons' formal education was meager and desultory, but included one year (1800–01) at Berwick Academy. As a lad he worked in retail stores in Portland and Wells. In 1807 he began the study of medicine under Dr. Abiel Hall of Alfred. In 1809 he attended anatomical lectures at Fryeburg under Dr. Alexander Ramsay and later was in the office of the eminent Dr. John Warren of Boston. He was licensed to practise by the Massachusetts Medical Society, Feb. 7, 1812, when war with England was imminent. He was commissioned surgeon's mate, July 6, 1812. Finding that the *John Adams,* which he had been ordered to join in August, had sailed when he reached New York, he volunteered for service on the Great Lakes. Arriving at Buffalo, he did yeoman service during an epidemic of pleuro-pneumonia, and wrote extensively for the press on the cause and treatment of that disease. In 1812–13 he was in charge of the sick and wounded at Black Rock and, after the arrival upon the scene of Commodore Oliver H. Perry in June 1813, sprang into great prominence for his brilliant surgical work. At the battle of Lake Erie, owing to the disability of his associate surgeons on the *Lawrence,* the whole duty of dressing and attending nearly a hundred wounded, and as many sick, devolved upon young Parsons. In a letter to the Secretary of the Navy, Commodore Perry is said to have written: "It must be pleasant to you, Sir, to reflect that, of the whole number wounded, only three have died. I can only say that, in the event of my having another command, I should consider myself particularly fortunate in having him [Parsons] with me as a surgeon" (Abiel Holmes, *The Annals of America,* 1829, II, 455). On the day of the battle and the following day, the

wounded from the entire fleet having been brought to his ship, he performed six thigh amputations. For this extraordinary service a grateful country awarded him not only prize-money but a silver medal.

After the war, he served under Perry on board the *Java,* and on Jan. 22, 1816, in view of the threatening attitude of Algiers, sailed in the *Java* for the Mediterranean. Returning to Narragansett Bay, Mar. 3, 1817, he proceeded to Providence with letters of introduction from Commodore Perry. After practising in that city for four months, he attended lectures in Boston, and in March 1818 received the degree of M.D. from Harvard Medical College. In October of that year he published "Surgical Account of the Naval Battle of Lake Erie," in the *New England Journal of Medicine and Surgery.* In July, he had sailed as surgeon on the frigate *Guerrière.* On this cruise he came into profitable contact with the leading physicians and surgeons of Paris and London, among whom were Dupuytren, Baron Larrey, Louis, Laennec, and Abernethy. In London, too, he made the acquaintance of Sir Richard Owen, naturalist and anatomist, with whom he kept up a lifelong friendship and correspondence.

In August 1820, he was chosen professor of anatomy and surgery in Dartmouth College, lecturing there one year. At this time he published *The Sailor's Physician* (1820), a medical guide for use on merchant vessels, of which a second edition appeared in 1824, and a third and a fourth in 1842 and 1851 under the title, *Physician for Ships.* In 1822 Parsons was appointed professor of anatomy and surgery in Brown University, and in this year began his continued residence in Rhode Island. On Sept. 23, 1822, he married Mary Jackson Holmes of Cambridge, daughter of Abiel and sister of Oliver Wendell Holmes [*qq.v.*]. She died June 14, 1825, leaving one son who became a physician and survived his father. In April 1823 Parsons resigned his commission in the navy. In 1831 he was appointed professor of obstetrics in Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, and lectured there the following winter. He was several times president of the Rhode Island Medical Society, was one of the organizers of the American Medical Association, and its vice-president in 1853, and was active in founding the Rhode Island Hospital.

Parsons wrote voluminously, his bibliography (1809–67) embracing fifty-six titles. He won the Boylston Prize four times: the prize-winning papers were collected and published as *Boylston Prize Dissertations* (1839). A second edition (1849) included a paper which won the

Parsons

Fiske Fund prize in 1842. Another notable publication was Parsons' summary of his larger surgical operations in the *American Journal of the Medical Sciences,* April 1848. Among his lay writings were *Life of Sir William Pepperrell, Bart.* (1855), *Indian Names of Places in Rhode Island* (1861), and "Brief Sketches of the Officers Who Were in the Battle of Lake Erie" (*New-England Historical and Genealogical Register,* January 1863). One of his biographers (Spalding, *post,* p. 893) says of Usher Parsons: "Taking him all in all it would be difficult to find a man of greater merit in American medicine, for he gave of his entire mind for over fifty years to the advance of medical science." Deservedly his memory, as of one who never worshipped medicine as a milch-cow, but always as a goddess, is cherished with pride by the profession of Rhode Island. He died in Providence.

[C. W. Parsons, *Memoir of Usher Parsons* (1870), containing bibliog.; J. A. Spalding, in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); J. W. Keefe, "Traditions of Medicine in Rhode Island," *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.,* Nov. 12, 1925; F. L. Pleadwell, "Usher Parsons," with complete bibliog., in *U. S. Naval Medic. Bull.,* Sept. 1922; S. G. Arnold, *Greene-Staples-Parsons: An Address Delivered before the R. I. Hist. Soc.* (1869); *Providence Journal,* Dec. 21, 1868.]

G. A. B—r.

PARSONS, WILLIAM BARCLAY (Apr. 15, 1859–May 9, 1932), engineer, the son of William Barclay Parsons and Eliza Glass (Livingston), was born in New York City of old New York stock. He was a great-grandson of Henry Barclay, second rector of Trinity Church. In 1871 he went to school in Torquay, England, and for the four years following studied under private tutors while traveling in France, Germany, and Italy. Returning to the United States in 1875, he entered Columbia College. Graduating in 1879 with the degree of A.B., he continued in the Engineering School, then the School of Mines, and received the degree of C.E. in 1882. During the summer of 1881, he had been engaged as engineer for the Blossburg (Pa.) Coal Company, but upon graduation he turned to railroad work and from 1882 to the end of 1885 he was in the maintenance-of-way department of the New York, Lake Erie & Western Railroad. His first books had to do with railroad problems (*Turnouts; Exact Formulae for Their Determination,* 1884, and *Track; a Complete Manual of Maintenance of Way,* 1886), and this interest in rail transportation continued throughout his life. In 1886 he began practice as a consulting engineer in New York and for the following years devoted much time to studying plans for an underground railway in the city, although he also engaged in other railroad and water-supply work, notably

that of building, as chief engineer, the Fort Worth & Rio Grande railroad in Texas.

In 1891 the legislature of New York created a Rapid Transit Commission and Parsons was appointed deputy chief engineer under William E. Worthen. Three years later, upon the appointment of a new commission with broader powers, under the chairmanship of Alexander Ector Orr [*q.v.*], Parsons became chief engineer, but adverse political pressure and other difficulties caused the commission to suspend its activities in 1898. Thereupon Parsons, acting for an American syndicate, accepted the direction of a survey for some 1000 miles of railway in China, primarily on the line from Hankow to Canton. The party passed through the then "closed province" of Hu-nan, and the success of the entire venture depended not alone on engineering skill but primarily upon the ability of the leader of the expedition to meet the extremely difficult diplomatic problems involved. Nevertheless, the mission was accomplished and the small group of American engineers, to the surprise of many of their friends, returned in safety. Parsons told the story of this adventure in *An American Engineer in China* (1900).

Late in 1899 he was recalled by the Transit Commission, since an opportunity to begin subway construction in New York seemed at last at hand. Construction actually started in March 1900. The first subway, extending from Atlantic Avenue, Brooklyn, to Van Cortlandt Park on the West Side and to Bronx Park on the East, for which Parsons had prepared the plans and which is popularly considered his greatest engineering achievement, was at last under way. Writing of the undertaking later, Parsons said: "Some of my friends spoke pityingly of my wasting time on what they considered a dream. They said I could go ahead making plans, but never could build a practical, underground railroad. This skepticism was so prevalent that it seriously handicapped the work" (Walker, *post*, p. 188). Parsons not only overcame the obstacles involved in this pioneer construction, but in doing so, developed standards of design which have been adopted wherever subways have been built and still remain standard after more than a quarter century of almost continuous subway construction.

After the success of the enterprise had been assured by completion of the first section in 1904, Parsons resigned as chief engineer to devote his energies to his consulting practice. He was appointed to the Isthmian Canal Commission in 1904, and early in 1905 went to Panama as a member of the committee of engineers which subsequently reported in favor of a sea-level canal. Later, appointed to the international Board of Consulting Engineers, he joined the majority of the board in advocating this type of construction, although in 1906 President Roosevelt approved a lock canal. In 1904 Parsons was also appointed, together with the famous British engineers, Sir Benjamin Baker and Sir John Wolfe Wolfe-Barry, to membership on a board to pass on the plans of the Royal Commission on London Traffic. He always considered his selection for the post one of the greatest of the many honors which came to him. Among his other engineering activities in these years were work as consulting engineer to the Massachusetts Railroad Commission, advisory engineer on traffic problems to Cambridge, San Francisco, Toronto, Detroit, and other cities, and consultant on large hydraulic works such as the Salmon River, Mac-Call Ferry (now Holtwood), and Mohawk hydroelectric developments. In 1905 he undertook to carry through the construction of the Steinway Tunnel under the East River in New York. In order to hold the franchise this work had to be completed in a very short time and Parsons, by building an artificial island near the south end of Blackwell's Island and working from four headings, accomplished the difficult task. In 1905, he had also been appointed chief engineer of the Cape Cod Canal. Completed in 1914, it joined Massachusetts and Buzzard's bays and demonstrated that a canal without locks could be built between two bodies of water where considerable tidal differences existed.

In 1916 Parsons was acting as chairman of the Chicago Transit Commission, but upon the entry of the United States into the World War, he became senior member of the first group of American officers to go to France—a board of engineers appointed to report on the military engineering problems and requirements for engineer troops there. In July 1917 he joined his regiment, the 11th United States Engineers, in England, and he served with them as major, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel until the end of the war. He participated in the engagement at Cambrai, where, suddenly attacked by the Germans while making railroad repairs, the engineers fought with picks and shovels, also in the Lys defensive, and the Saint-Mihiel and Argonne-Meuse campaigns. His book, *The American Engineers in France* (1920), is a valuable and interesting record of these activities. He was cited for "specially meritorious services" and received decorations not only from the United States but also from Great Britain, France, Belgium, and the State of New York.

After the war, he was transferred to the Engineers Reserve Corps with the rank of brigadier-general, and again took up his engineering practice. One of the last great works of his firm (Parsons, Klapp, Brinkerhoff & Douglas of New York) was the international vehicular tunnel passing under the Detroit River and joining Detroit with Windsor, Ont. Opened in 1930, it was the third great vehicular tube in America. In its design and construction older methods were used in new ways, and a new design for tunnel lining was developed.

In connection with a trip to Yucatan in the early 1900's, Parsons became interested in the Maya ruins, and later, when he was appointed a trustee of the Carnegie Institution, he encouraged the undertaking of archeological exploration and preservation of these remarkable remains. He also found time to make an exhaustive study of engineering history. Although he published a book entitled *Robert Fulton and the Submarine* (1922), his historical interest centered particularly on engineers and engineering of the Renaissance, and he gathered a remarkable collection of early books and prints relating to this period. A loyal alumnus of Columbia, Parsons became a member in 1897 and chairman in 1917 of the board of trustees of his alma mater. He took an active part in establishing the University on Morningside Heights. Holding that "it is not the technical excellence of a design which governs, but the completeness with which it meets the economic and social needs of the day," he insisted that the duties of the engineer demanded a broad, rather than a narrowly technical type of training, and his influence had much to do with placing engineering education at Columbia on a higher professional plane. Parsons naturally received many honors and was a member of many engineering organizations. He was a trustee of the New York Public Library and of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, and chairman of the administrative board of the Columbia-Presbyterian Medical Center in New York, where his sudden death occurred. On May 20, 1884, he had married Anna De Witt Reed, daughter of the Rev. Sylvanus and Caroline (Gallup) Reed of New York. She, with a son and a daughter, survived him.

[*Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, vol. LIX (1933); *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, vol. LXVIII (1933); *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; J. B. Walker, *Fifty Years of Rapid Transit* (1918); *N. Y. Herald Tribune*, May 10, 12, 1932; data furnished by General Parsons' family and by his office.] J. K. F.

PARTINGTON, MRS. [See SHILLABER, BENJAMIN PENHALLOW, 1814–1890].

PARTON, ARTHUR (Mar. 26, 1842–Mar. 7, 1914), landscape painter, born in Hudson, N. Y., was the fourth of the twelve children of George Parton of Birmingham, England, who settled, quite by chance, in Hudson, and of Elizabeth Woodbridge Parton of Mystic (now Old Mystic), Conn. His father, from whom he undoubtedly inherited his artistic talents, was a cabinetmaker by trade. His mother came from a distinguished Massachusetts and Connecticut family, being a descendant of the eighth generation from Rev. John Woodbridge of Stanton, Wiltshire, whose son, Rev. John Woodbridge of Newbury, Mass., married Mercy Dudley, the daughter of Governor Dudley of Massachusetts Bay Colony. Young Parton began to draw and paint while still a schoolboy. From 1859 to 1861 he studied with William T. Richards of Philadelphia and later at the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts at that city. His first picture was exhibited there in 1862. Three years later he removed to New York, established a studio, and became a regular exhibitor at the National Academy of Design. In 1869 he left for Europe, studying a short while in Paris, but receiving most of his inspiration direct from English and Scottish scenery and from the contemporary landscape painters of those countries. A year after his return to New York in 1871 he was elected an associate of the National Academy of Design, becoming a full academician in 1884. He was also a member of the American Water Color and the Artists' Fund societies. He was an indefatigable worker and his production of landscapes—all of them easel pictures—correspondingly great. He spent his summers in the Adirondacks and later in the Catskills, where he had a small cottage. Something of the character of his work may be derived from typical titles of his canvases: "November"; "A Mountain Brook"; "Delaware River, near Milford"; "Loch Lomond" (Indianapolis Museum); "Nightfall"; "Evening, Harlem River" and "A Night in the Catskills" (both in the Metropolitan); "Misty Morning," "Coast of Maine" (Brooklyn Museum); "Catskill Pines" ("diploma picture," 1884, National Academy of Design); "Buttonball Trees on the Housatonic"; and "June Day in the Catskills."

Parton followed the traditional English landscape practices as modified by the Hudson River school. His work falls below that of his friends Alexander H. Wyant and J. Francis Murphy. In his more romantic aspects it recalls, at times, that of Blakelock and Innis; but for the most part his work is realistic, objective, and, to a later generation, quite out of fashion. The *Yonkers Statesman* describes it as "wholesome, sane,

serene and beautiful," which is just. It is always sound and competent, occasionally genuinely poetic, but sometimes uninspired. He was a typical academic product of his time. His life was devoid of colorful incident. He was extremely modest and hated publicity of any kind. He worked hard and exhibited regularly, being represented in most of the larger exhibitions from the Centennial in Philadelphia of 1876 to that of St. Louis twenty-eight years later. Trout fishing was one of his few recreations. On June 7, 1877, he was married to Anna Taylor of Mystic, Conn. He settled in Yonkers, N. Y., where he lived for some thirty years. He died there, survived by his four children, and was buried at Mystic, Conn. His awards include the following: gold medal, Competitive Prize Fund Exhibition, New York, 1878; gold medal, American Art Association, 1886; Temple silver medal, Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts, Philadelphia, 1889; honorable mention, Exposition Universelle, Paris, 1889; Lotos Club Fund purchase, National Academy, New York, 1896; honorable mention, Paris Exhibition, 1900; and bronze medal, "Louisiana Purchase" Exposition, St. Louis, 1904.

[Sources include: C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century* (1879); J. D. Champlin and C. C. Perkins, *Cyc. of Painters and Paintings* (ed. 1887), vol. III; Mich. State Lib., *Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists* (1924); Gilbert Cranmer, "An Am. Landscape Painter, Arthur Parton," *Monthly Illustrator*, May 1896; *Paintings in the Metropolitan Museum of Art* (1905); Bryson Burroughs, *The Metropolitan Museum of Art, Cat. of Paintings* (1914); *The Woodbridge Record* (1883), ed. by D. G. and Alfred Mitchell; the *Am. Art Annual*, vol. XI (1914); the *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 8, 1914; *Yonkers Statesman*, Mar. 14, 1914; the *Am. Art News*, Mar. 14, 1914; art exhibition catalogues, records of the Nat. Acad. of Design, the Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, the Brooklyn Museum, the John Herron Art Inst., Indianapolis, Ind., and family records in the possession of Parton's son, George F. Parton, Bronxville, N. Y.] T. S—r.

PARTON, JAMES (Feb. 9, 1822–Oct. 17, 1891), biographer, miscellaneous writer, was born at Canterbury, England, the third of the four children of James and Ann (Leach) Parton, and was descended from a Huguenot family of farmers and millers who had settled in Kent after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. In 1827 his widowed mother emigrated to New York with her children. James attended an academy at White Plains, where he acquired an enthusiasm for Homer and a distaste for orthodox Christianity, and, after graduating, stayed on as an assistant teacher. In 1842 he went to England to collect a legacy, which he invested in a year of travel. For the next four years he taught in a private school in Philadelphia. In 1848 he sent to the New York *Home Journal* an essay

demonstrating the feminine authorship of *Jane Eyre*, and Nathaniel Parker Willis, the editor, gave him a place on the staff at ten dollars a week.

He was still drudging for Willis in 1854 when a chance conversation in a restaurant made him a biographer. To Daniel Gregory Mason and Lowell Mason, Jr., who constituted the publishing firm of Mason Brothers, he happened to remark that a life of Horace Greeley would be as interesting and as popular as Franklin's *Autobiography*. Asked why he did not write it, he replied that the job would require a year's time and an outlay of $1000. Two weeks later the Masons advanced the money, and Parton went to the *Tribune* office to meet his subject for the first time. After eleven arduous months in the field and with the files of Greeley's papers, the manuscript was ready. Before publication *The Life of Horace Greeley* (1855) sold 7,000 copies and, within a few months thereafter, 23,000 more. No other living American had been exhibited to the public so realistically, with such an abundance of amusing and intimate detail. Delicate literary palates could detect a Barnum-like flavor in the work, but its vogue was well earned, and it remains a landmark in the history of American biography. Parton, with $2,000 of clear profit from his royalties, and with his reputation established, saw his course straight ahead of him. For the next thirty-five years, he was one of the most industrious, prolific, popular, and well-paid writers in the United States.

His principal separate publications were: *The Humorous Poetry of the English Language from Chaucer to Saxe* (1856); *The Life and Times of Aaron Burr* (copyright 1857; enlarged edition, 2 vols., 1864); *Life of Andrew Jackson* (3 vols., 1859–60); *General Butler in New Orleans* (1863); *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin* (2 vols., 1864); *Life of John Jacob Astor* (1865); *Manual for the Instruction of "Rings," Railroad and Political* (1866); *How New York Is Governed* (1866); *Famous Americans of Recent Times* (1867); *People's Book of Biography* (1868); *Smoking and Drinking* (1868); *The Danish Islands: Are We Bound in Honor to Pay for Them?* (1869); *Topics of the Time* (1871); *Triumphs of Enterprise, Ingenuity, and Public Spirit* (1871); *Words of Washington* (1872); *Fanny Fern: A Memorial Volume* (1873); *Life of Thomas Jefferson* (1874); *Caricature and Other Comic Art in All Times and Many Lands* (1877); *Le Parnasse Français* (1877); *Life of Voltaire* (2 vols., 1881); *Noted Women of Europe and America* (1883); *Captains of Industry* (2 series, 1884, 1891); and *Some Noted Princes,*

Authors, and Statesmen of Our Time (1885). He was a steady, life-long contributor to Robert Bonner's *New York Ledger* and to Daniel Sharp Ford's *Youth's Companion* and wrote a great deal also for the *North American Review* and the *Atlantic Monthly*.

Until 1875 he continued to live in New York. While writing the life of Greeley he was debating with Willis the literary merits of Willis' sister [see Sara Payson Willis Parton], whose work her brother had no desire to publish or to pay for. As a result, Parton left the *Home Journal* and on Jan. 5, 1856, at Hoboken, he married the woman whom he had championed. She was eleven years his senior and hopelessly neurasthenic, and though outward decorum was kept up till the end, Parton was thoroughly unhappy in his marriage. His pent-up affections were lavished on his wife's grand-daughter, Ethel, who had been left an orphan and was reared in the Parton household. They spent their summers in New England, latterly at Newport. Mrs. Parton died in 1872 after six years of painful illness. The next two summers Parton spent at Newburyport, where in 1875 he bought a house of his own. On Feb. 3, 1876, he was married there to his step-daughter, Ellen Willis Eldredge. Two days after the wedding he discovered that the marriage was void under Massachusetts law, and they were remarried in New York on Feb. 10 by the Rev. Stephen Higginson Tyng. A bill to legalize the marriage was passed by the Massachusetts legislature but was vetoed by Gov. Alexander Hamilton Rice. This second marriage brought him the happiness so long denied him. Besides the adopted daughter, Ethel, he had two children, a daughter and a son. Parton himself was a man of great amiability and good sense. Though robust in appearance he was compelled to guard his health and was something of a crank on the subjects of diet, smoking, and drinking. At Newburyport he took an active interest in civic affairs and enjoyed the local society. In his latter years he was seldom in New York. He died at his home after an illness of several weeks.

Parton was the most successful biographer of his generation and a master of the reconstructional method. Writing for a living, he sometimes worked with a haste that made for error and superficiality; yet his errors, such as they are, are seldom misleading, and the superficiality is not often apparent. His preparation for his major undertakings was thorough and elaborate; he was undeviatingly honest, fair, and charitable in his judgments; and he had a positive genius for imparting order and motion to great masses of fact that, in less skilful hands, would have remained inert and stodgy. His great achievements are the lives of Burr, Jackson, Franklin, Jefferson, and Voltaire. None of these is quite obsolete, in spite of the advances made by recent scholarship, and the lives of Franklin and Jefferson are still the best for the general reader. Parton failed occasionally to understand the thought and intellectual background of his heroes, but in presenting them in their habit as they lived he has had no superior.

[C. E. Norton, "Parton's Biog. Writings," *North Am. Rev.*, Apr. 1867; James Parton, autobiog. essay in *Triumphs of Enterprise, Ingenuity, and Public Spirit* (1871); J. C. Derby, *Fifty Years among Authors, Books, and Publishers* (1884); H. A. Beers, *Nathaniel Parker Willis* (1885); *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 18, 1891; Henry Bruce, "Mr. James Parton," *Boston Transcript*, Oct. 20, 1891; C. E. L. Wingate, "Boston Letter," and editorial, *Critic*, Oct. 24, 1891; H. P. Spofford, "James Parton," *Writer*, Nov. 1891; J. H. Ward, "James Parton," *New Eng. Mag.*, Jan. 1893; "James Parton's Rules of Biography," *McClure's Mag.*, June 1893; J. J. Currier, *"Ould Newbury"* (1896); Ethel Parton, "A Defense of James Parton," *Outlook*, Sept. 16, 1911.]

G. H. G.

PARTON, SARA PAYSON WILLIS (July 9, 1811–Oct. 10, 1872), author, known to the reading public as Fanny Fern, was born in Portland, Me., the daughter of Nathaniel Willis [*q.v.*] and Hannah (Parker) Willis. Her father, the pugnacious editor of an anti-Federalist newspaper, was sixth in descent from an English ancestor who settled in Massachusetts about 1630; her mother was a woman of intellect and personal attraction. They were parishioners of the Rev. Edward Payson [*q.v.*], and, for his mother, they first named their daughter Grata Payson, but the name was later changed to Sara. While she was a small child the family removed to Boston. A robust little girl, she attended Catharine Beecher's school at Hartford, where Harriet Beecher was a pupil-teacher. Her nickname in school was "Sal-Volatile" and her reputation was not for studiousness but for thoughtlessness and a tendency to incur bills at local stores. Though the Willis home was frequented by clergymen, Sara never acquired great piety. She was a "natural Universalist" and her teacher wrote regarding her interests, "I fear the world has first place" (Parton, memoir, *post*, p. 37). After school days were over, she contributed occasionally to the *Youth's Companion*, then published by her father.

In 1837 she was married to Charles H. Eldredge, cashier of a Boston bank, and for nine years led a happy life, except for the death of her first child. Her grief over this loss is reflected in many of her essays. After her husband's death, she was obliged to earn a living for her-

self and two children and attempted sewing and teaching without success. The editor of a Boston home magazine paid her fifty cents for a paragraph called "The Model Minister," signed "Fanny Fern." The paragraph was copied in several Boston papers and thereafter she found a ready market for her life essays. On Jan. 15, 1849, she was married to Samuel P. Farrington, a Boston merchant. Their marriage was probably terminated by divorce, since both remarried. Her first volume of collected essays, *Fern Leaves from Fanny's Portfolio* (1853), had a sale of 80,000 copies and established her popularity. James Parton [*q.v.*], on the staff of the *Home Journal*, one of whose publishers was Nathaniel P. Willis [*q.v.*], Sara's brother, wrote to her, not knowing her identity, urging her to come to New York. She went and on Jan. 5, 1856, married Parton. At about the same time she began her connection with the *New York Ledger*, which lasted until her death. For the *Ledger* she wrote a weekly article, and this, together with her contributions to other papers, made her work amount to a story or sketch a day. She thought out her articles while engaged in other occupations and then wrote them rapidly; they show neither deep reflection nor intellectual quality. She wrote spontaneously, from experience and observation, on every-day subjects of human appeal, and was popular because her combination of common sense, sentiment, and occasional religious teaching met the demands of her age. She caustically satirized pretentiousness, cant, snobbery, and heartlessness displayed by wealth toward poverty, but never tired of eulogizing family life, children, old homes, gardens, and country beauties. Her published volumes include: *Ruth Hall* (1855), a novel, severely criticized because of its personal character—her brother N. P. Willis figures in it in a most unfavorable light; *Fern Leaves from Fanny's Portfolio* (second series, 1854); *Little Ferns for Fanny's Little Friends* (1854); *Rose Clark* (1856), a novel; *Fresh Leaves* (1857); *The Play-Day Book: New Stories for Little Folks* (1857); *A New Story Book for Children* (1864); *Folly as It Flies* (1868); *Ginger-Snaps* (1870); *Caper-Sauce: a Volume of Chit-Chat about Men, Women, and Things* (1872). During her last six years she fought a fatal disease. She continued her articles by dictation when she could no longer use her hands; her last, written a month before her death, was a farewell to Newport, where she had spent the summer.

[*Fanny Fern: A Memorial Volume: Containing her Select Writings and a Memoir, by James Parton* (1873); F. E. Willard and M. A. Livermore, *Am. Women* (1897); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1849, p. 195; H. A. Beers, *Nathaniel Parker Willis* (1885); N. Y. *Evening Post*, Oct. 11, 1872; *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Oct. 11, 1872.] S. G. B.

PARTRIDGE, ALDEN (Feb. 12, 1785–Jan. 17, 1854), military educator, was born at Norwich, Vt., the son of Samuel, a farmer and soldier of the Revolution, and Elizabeth (Wright) Partridge. He was a descendant of George Partridge who came to America about 1636. After early education in the district schools, he entered Dartmouth College in 1802, but did not graduate, for on Dec. 14, 1805, he was appointed a cadet in the army and sent to West Point. The United States Military Academy had been established there in 1802, for the reception and training of cadets, but it had no definite course of instruction, no requirements for admission or graduation, and no fixed period of residence. Cadets were received whenever appointed, taught as seemed expedient to the faculty, and sent from the academy at any time. On Oct. 30, 1806, Partridge was commissioned first lieutenant of engineers. He did not leave West Point, however, for he was immediately assigned to duty as an instructor, and there he was stationed throughout his service in the army. He was promoted to captain, July 23, 1810; appointed professor of mathematics, Apr. 13, 1813; and of engineering, Sept. 1, 1813. For more than two years he was acting superintendent of the academy. His administration was lax and unsatisfactory, and he was superseded by Maj. Sylvanus Thayer. Returning from leave, he assumed command over Thayer and attempted to regain his quarters. The struggle between the two was ended by an order from Washington for Partridge's arrest, and he was tried by court martial on numerous charges of neglect of duty and insubordination, and sentenced, Nov. 27, 1817, to be cashiered. The punishment was remitted by the President, however, and Partridge's resignation from the army followed, Apr. 15, 1818.

For a time he was engaged on the survey of the northeastern boundary of the United States, but in 1819 he established the "American Literary, Scientific and Military Academy" at Norwich, Vt. It was removed in 1825 to Middletown, Conn., but in 1829 its buildings there were sold to Wesleyan University and it was moved back to Norwich. In 1834 it was chartered as Norwich University, under which name it still operates although now located at Northfield, Vt. In 1827 Partridge opened a military preparatory school at Norwich, which existed until the return of the principal institution to that place; and in 1835 he established a "young ladies' semi-

nary," likewise at Norwich. He had always hoped to spread the military academy idea throughout the country; with the help of graduates of Norwich University, now becoming numerous, he established such schools—more or less short-lived—at Portsmouth, Va., in 1839, Bristol, Pa., in 1842, Harrisburg, Pa., in 1845, Wilmington, Del., in 1846, Reading, Pa., in 1850, Pembroke, N. H., in 1850, and Brandywine Springs, Del., in 1853. Meanwhile, he had severed his connection with Norwich University, though he retained ownership of its property, the university leasing it from him when he surrendered the presidency in 1843. He resumed possession in 1845—forcing the University to move to another site near by—and opened his own "American Literary, Scientific and Military University," which, however, he discontinued the next year, selling the property to the Norwich University corporation.

In the establishment of these schools Partridge's primary interest was in national defense. In the War of 1812 he had witnessed the appalling results of neglect of military training, and was convinced that for a nation relying upon citizen soldiers it is vitally important that some of these citizens should be imbued with discipline and trained for command. The military training given in his schools was rudimentary, it is true, but in his day the military art was comparatively simple, and the forces which the United States had put, or expected to put, in the field, were very small. Under the conditions of the time the training given in his schools was distinctly valuable. Partridge may fairly be regarded as the founder of the system of military academies of elementary and secondary grade which have since become so numerous. The present Reserve Officers' Training Corps has a different ancestry, but even in this, Partridge's influence may be traced. In other respects his educational ideas were in advance of his age. Norwich University was an engineering school from the first, and so continued through a long period when engineering, in the United States, was treated rather as a trade to be picked up casually than as a profession to be studied in an institution of learning. This university, too, was among the first to offer collegiate instruction in agriculture. Aside from his educational work, Partridge's activities were varied. He served as surveyor general of Vermont in 1822–23, was elected to the legislature in 1833, 1834, 1837, and 1839, and was three times an unsuccessful candidate for Congress. He died at Norwich. His wife, whom he married in 1837, was Ann Elizabeth, daughter of John Swasey of Claremont, N. H. She survived

Partridge

him half a century, dying in October 1902. He had two sons.

[G. H. Partridge, *Partridge Geneal.* (1915), inaccurate in some details; G. M. Dodge and W. A. Ellis, *Norwich Univ., 1819–1911* (1911), vol. I; *The Memoirs of Gen. Joseph Gardner Swift, LL.D., U. S. A.* (1890); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); unpublished records in the War Department; A. C. True, *A Hist. of Agric. Education in the U. S., 1785–1925* (1929); M. E. Goddard and H. V. Partridge, *A Hist. of Norwich, Vt.* (1905); *Vt. Patriot* (Montpelier), Jan. 21, 1854; *N. Y. Daily Times,* Jan. 23, 1854.] T. M. S.

PARTRIDGE, JAMES RUDOLPH (*c.* 1823–Feb. 24, 1884), diplomat and Maryland politician, was the son of the well-to-do merchant Eaton R. Partridge and of Susan (Crook) Partridge, his wife, who had come from Cecil County, Md., to Baltimore, where James Rudolph was born. He received the degree of A.B. from Harvard in 1841 and that of LL.B. from the Harvard Law School in 1843. He appears to have been a capable lawyer, a man of culture and of some literary ability, and the master of four foreign languages. In Baltimore, which remained his home throughout his life, he entered active politics in 1856, when he was elected to the legislature on the American ticket. Gov. Thomas H. Hicks [*q.v.*], in 1858, made Partridge his secretary of state and in 1861, according to Henry Winter Davis [*q.v.*], Secretary Partridge kept Governor Hicks loyal to the Union (undated letter to Lincoln, Department of State). He remained a strong Union man, and his name is to be found upon Governor Bradford's personal list of the prominent Union men of Baltimore in 1861 (*Maryland Historical Magazine,* March 1912, p. 85). Indeed, if his plan for distributing arms from the arsenals and forts within Maryland to loyal men for use against secessionist trouble makers (Andrews, *post,* I, 884, footnote) is any criterion, he ranked with the extremists within the Republican Party.

After declining appointment as consul at Shanghai in 1861, Partridge was appointed in September 1862 commissioner to the Exhibition of the Industries of All Nations to be held in London the next year. Shortly afterwards, Feb. 10, 1862, he received appointment as minister resident to Honduras. In spite of his failure to bring Honduras to ratify a treaty negotiated in 1860 and to prevent the outbreak of war between Salvador and Guatemala, his work in Honduras seems to have won the approval of Secretary Seward. He was commissioned minister resident to Salvador in April 1863, where he served until ill health caused his resignation in March 1866. Meanwhile, the Salvadorean government

had been overthrown and a new régime recognized in due course by the United States.

After an interval of three years he was appointed Apr. 21, 1869, minister, not to the Argentine as he had wished, but to Venezuela. Here he was chiefly concerned with persuading Venezuela to meet the payments which had been awarded by a mixed claims commission. His handling of the claims question received the commendation of Secretary Hamilton Fish. After the death of one of his daughters he returned to Baltimore in the fall of 1870. Less than a year later, May 23, 1871, he was appointed minister at Rio de Janeiro, then known as Petropolis. Here he was called upon in his official capacity to act with the Italian minister as arbitrator of the claims of Lord Dundonald against the government of Brazil. The arbitrators' award (1873) of £38,675 to the British claimant was apparently more satisfactory to Brazil than to the British. Partridge returned to the United States in the summer of 1877. His last diplomatic mission was to Peru (appointed Apr. 12, 1882), which had recently faced both civil and foreign war. He was instructed to cooperate with Cornelius A. Logan [*q.v.*], minister to Chile, in bringing about a peace between Peru and Chile. Partridge seems to have exceeded his instructions in this matter and to have returned to the United States under a cloud. Ill health provided the ostensible reason for his resignation in 1883. His wife, Mary, daughter of Jacob Baltzell, whom he had married Oct. 21, 1847, had died seven years later, and he had lost both his children. These circumstances were perhaps responsible for his suicide at Alicante, Spain, early in 1884 (Baltimore *Sun*, Mar. 1, 1884).

[The account of Partridge's diplomatic career is based upon materials in the archives of the Department of State, especially upon the manuscript volumes of the department's instructions to the Central American States for 1858–65, to Brazil for 1862–75, to Peru for 1863–83, to Salvador for 1865–73, to Venezuela for 1866–76 and to Brazil for 1872–74, and upon the manuscript volumes of dispatches from Partridge to the Department. The department's records and letters relating to the appointment of Partridge contain considerable biographical information. Names of wife and mother were obtained from church records through the courtesy of Louis H. Dielman, librarian, Peabody Inst., Baltimore. See also S. F. Bemis, *The Am. Secretaries of State*, VIII (1928), 13f., for the mission to Peru; James Wingate, *The Md. Reg.*, 1857–60; M. P. Andrews, *Tercentenary Hist. of Md.* (1925); *Sun* (Baltimore), Feb. 26, 1884.]

E. W. S.

PARTRIDGE, RICHARD (Dec. 9, 1681–Mar. 6, 1759), merchant, colonial agent, the eldest child of William and Mary (Brown) Partridge, was born in Portsmouth, N. H. His father, a wealthy merchant and ship-builder, served as council member, treasurer of the province,

and as lieutenant-governor from 1697 to 1703. Quarrels with the representative of the proprietor led him to send his son, Richard, to plead his cause before the Board of Trade. The young man, twenty-one years old, made the voyage across the Atlantic in the summer of 1701 and was destined to marry and remain in England for the rest of his life. Gradually he built up a wide circle of acquaintances. By trade a merchant, by faith a Quaker, and brother-in-law of Jonathan Belcher, who was somewhat of a courtier, Partridge had friends in all walks of life. In 1715 he was appointed agent for Rhode Island, which important post he held for forty-four years. He was also employed at various times as agent for other colonies: for New York in 1731; for the Jerseys in 1733; for Massachusetts in 1737; for the Pennsylvania Assembly in 1740; and for Connecticut from 1750 to 1759. In the course of his work he acted as a clearing house of information for the colonial assemblies, conducted lengthy appeals to the Crown, fought detrimental imperial legislation, and kept in check as far as possible the plans of aggressive neighboring colonies.

For many years he was occupied with boundary controversies which arose from the network of conflicting grants in New England. As a result of his labors, which included formal petitions, hearings before the Board of Trade, and almost daily conferences with men of influence, he succeeded in getting established for Rhode Island boundaries which brought the fertile Narragansett Country and Narragansett Bay with its excellent harbor within her borders. Other controversies which engaged his attention were the Massachusetts-New Hampshire boundary, the Connecticut-Massachusetts line, and Connecticut's litigation over the claims of the Mohegan Indians. From 1730 to 1733 he played an active part in the struggle over the Molasses Act, which, though of much less importance, was not unlike that over the Stamp Act. By interviews, by hearings, and by floods of propaganda, both the West Indian merchants and the agents of the American colonies worked frantically to influence the votes of Parliament. When the Act was finally passed, Partridge was credited by his friends with having been responsible for softening some of the features objectionable to the northern colonies. In addition to his official business, he acted as representative for Governor Belcher, an arduous task because of that gentleman's highly irascible nature, and as Parliamentary agent for the London Meeting for Sufferings the purpose of which was to ameliorate the disabilities of the Quakers. In 1759, while en-

grossed in negotiations arising from the Seven Years' War, he died after a slight illness. His long and full life was occupied almost entirely with protecting the many-sided interests of American colonies in the mother country. On account of his birth and upbringing he understood thoroughly colonial ideals; on account of his long association with men of affairs he understood equally well English traits of character and English habits of thought. Shrewd, resourceful, and genial, he did much to facilitate colonial administration.

[Biographical material on Partridge is scarce. A brief sketch by Marguerite Appleton, "Richard Partridge—Colonial Agent," appears in the *New Eng. Quart.*, Apr. 1932. See also: Rufus M. Jones, assisted by Isaac Shartleff and Amelia Gummere, *The Quakers in the Am. Colonies* (London, 1911); *The Correspondence of Colonial Governors of R. I.* (2 vols., 1902–03), ed. by Gertrude S. Kimball, containing many of his letters to Rhode Island magistrates, and "The Wolcott Papers," *Conn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. XVI (1916), including some of his letters to Gov. Wolcott; *Gentleman's Mag.*, Mar. 1759.] M. A.

PARTRIDGE, WILLIAM ORDWAY (Apr. 11, 1861–May 22, 1930), sculptor and writer, son of George Sidney Partridge, Jr., and Helen Derby (Catlin) Partridge, was of New England colonial ancestry but was born in Paris, France, where his father was at that time foreign representative of A. T. Stewart. The family returned to the United States and the boy studied at Cheshire Military Academy, then at Adelphi Academy, Brooklyn, N. Y., and in 1885 at Columbia College, New York. At the age of twenty-one he was sent abroad for three years and studied art in Florence, Rome, and Paris. When he returned he was interested chiefly in sculpture, but he was always versatile. In youth he appeared for a brief time on the New York stage, playing at Wallack's as Steerforth in *David Copperfield*. At one period, encouraged by Phillips Brooks and Edward Everett Hale, he gave public readings from Shelley and Keats. A studio portrait in his middle years shows him with brush and palette. His pen never rusted, and he published both prose and poetry.

In 1887 Partridge was married to Mrs. Augusta Merriam of Milton, Mass., and took her with him to Rome, where he worked with the Polish sculptor, Pio Welonski. After his return in 1889, his knowledge of art and his ability as a speaker were widely recognized. He gave lectures on esthetics in various places and carried on his work in sculpture in his well-equipped studio at Milton, Mass., and later in New York City. In 1892 he made a character study of an aged woman, a bust called "Nearing Home," now in the Corcoran Gallery, Washington, D. C. The same year found him in London, immersed in Shakespearian lore, and making a bas-relief of Sir Henry Irving, shown at the Royal Academy Exhibition. His first large work was the standing bronze statue of Alexander Hamilton, erected in Brooklyn by the Hamilton Club in 1893. In this figure he sought to express the orator's passion, balanced by restraint. It won high praise from certain critics, notably William H. Goodyear, who in 1894 (*Renaissance and Modern Art*, pp. 264–66) printed an extravagant tribute but withdrew it from the 1908 edition of the work. Other statues are the seated bronze Shakespeare in Lincoln Park (1894), a work of refinement and dignity, without great force; the equestrian statue of General Grant, presented to the city by the Union League Club of Brooklyn in 1896; the Nathan Hale, St. Paul, Minn.; the Samuel Tilden, Riverside Drive, New York, 1926; the Horace Greeley, Chappaqua, N. Y.; and the Pocahontas, erected on Jamestown Island, Va., in 1921. His statues of Jefferson and of Hamilton, as well as his Schermerhorn Memorial, are at Columbia University. Of these works, the Gen. Grant is probably the most successful, both in characterization and in effect.

Partridge was no *animalier* and rightly supplemented his modeling from the living horse by studies of numerous anatomical casts. His modeling was always fluent. It had a certain impressionistic quality which at its best was vivid and poetic but at its worst was slipshod. In his last statue, the Lyon Gardiner for Saybrook, Conn., about to be erected at the time of his death, he apparently departed from methods which had been criticized as giving too sketchy results. His poetic sensitiveness is revealed in the Kauffmann Memorial, Rock Creek Cemetery, Washington (1897), an exedra with seated figure; in his memorial to Joseph Pulitzer, Woodlawn, N. Y., as well as in many religious sculptures, such as the marble Pietà in St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York; the elaborate baptismal font in the Cathedral of St. Peter and St. Paul, Washington; Christ and St. John, Brooklyn Museum; and heads of the Madonna and of Christ, two versions of each. The Metropolitan Museum has his well-known marble head called "Peace." Among his portrait busts are those of Chief Justice Fuller, United States Supreme Court; Dr. S. Weir Mitchell, Philadelphia, Robert Peary, Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Me., the poet Whittier, Boston Public Library. He modeled also a series of imaginative heads—Tennyson, Milton, Burns, Scott, Keats, Shelley, Bryon, Longfellow, Wagner, Beethoven, Carlyle, Velasquez, and Goya. His magazine articles on

sculpture are sound and informative. His long-
er works include: *Art for America* (1894); *The*
Song-Life of a Sculptor (1894); *Technique of*
Sculpture (1895); *The Angel of Clay* (1900);
and *The Czar's Gift* (1906). He was a member
of many clubs and societies, was a frequent ex-
hibitor both in the United States and abroad, and
is represented in many collections. His second
wife was Margaret R. Schott whom he married
on June 14, 1905, in Venice. He spent his later
years in New York City, where he died, sur-
vived by his widow and two children, one the
daughter of his first wife.

[Lorado Taft, *Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (1904, 1924, 1930); Chas. E. Fairman, *Art and Artists of the Capitol* (1927); *New Eng. Mag.*, June 1900; *Internat. Studio*, May 1907; *Munsey's Mag.*, June 1898; *Cat. of the Works of Art Belonging to the City of N. Y.* (1909), vol. I; *The Works in Sculpture of Wm. Ordway Partridge* (1914); *Am. Art Annual*, 1930; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *N. Y. Times*, May 24, 1930.]

A. A.

PARVIN, THEODORE SUTTON (Jan. 15, 1817–June 28, 1901), lawyer, university professor, librarian, was born at Cedarville, Cumberland County, N. J., the eldest of thirteen children. His mother, Lydia Harris, was of Scotch descent; his father was Josiah Parvin, of Scotch-Irish forbears. In 1829 the family moved to Cincinnati, Ohio. Theodore Parvin's formal education, begun at the hands of an elderly widow, was supplemented with independent and extensive reading. He attended the public schools of Cincinnati, and thereafter, with a scholarship from William Woodward, he was admitted to Woodward High School (later Woodward College) in 1831 and remained for two and a half years. In 1835 he was given a teaching position in the public schools of the city. In the same year he began to study law under the Hon. Timothy Walker, and in 1837 he graduated from the law school of Cincinnati College. He then read law in the office of Judge John C. Wright and on Apr. 14, 1838, was admitted to practise as attorney and counselor-at-law in the courts of Ohio. In August of that year he was granted a certificate to practise in the Territory of Iowa. His diary for Nov. 28, 1838, notes his admission to practise before the supreme court of the Territory. His first criminal case was tried on the day after his admission. Though his client was found guilty, Parvin succeeded in reducing the sentence from "ten years' imprisonment and $1,000 fine" to "seven days' imprisonment and $10 fine." In 1839, as district prosecutor for the second judicial district of the Territory, he took part in the first term of court in Johnson County, held in a one-story cabin, with the grand jury assembled upon the prairie. In October he accepted an appointment as United States district attorney. He was probate judge for three terms beginning in 1841, and clerk of the United States district court from 1847 to 1857. He had gone to Iowa in 1838 as private secretary to Gov. Robert Lucas and was soon thereafter appointed by the Governor territorial librarian, acting in that capacity until provision for the office was made by the legislative council. In 1840 he served as secretary of the legislative council, and in 1857 he became register of the state Land Office, serving for two years.

Early in his career Parvin urged the necessity of establishing an adequate system of common schools for Iowa. In 1841 he was offered the position of territorial superintendent of public instruction, which appointment, however, he declined. He was one of the organizers of the Iowa State Teachers' Association and its president in 1867. His connection with the State University of Iowa began at the time of its organization in 1854, when he was made a trustee. He resigned this position in 1859 to become "curator and librarian," which title he exchanged a year later for that of professor of natural history. Upon leaving the University in 1870 he devoted himself wholly to his duties as secretary of the Grand Lodge of Iowa Masons and Grand Recorder of the Grand Encampment Knights Templar of the United States. He instigated the building at Cedar Rapids of "the only great Masonic Library in the world." He was among the first curators of the State Historical Society of Iowa and from his collections he contributed to it as well as to other historical institutions. His meteorological records, the only accurate and available data of their kind in the region of the Territory of Iowa, led to the decision on the part of the federal government to establish the United States arsenal at Rock Island, Ill. His attendance at pioneer reunions and at the meetings of the Old Settlers' Association of Johnson County is indicative of the interest he took in history, especially in the pioneer history of Iowa. From 1864 to 1866 he was secretary of the State Historical Society of Iowa and editor of the *Annals of Iowa*, the first quarterly magazine of history in the United States devoted to state and local history. Parvin was married in 1843 to Agnes McCully. At his death he was survived by four children.

[Joseph E. Morcombe, *The Life and Labors of Theodore Sutton Parvin* (1906); *"Old Woodward"* (1884); *Iowa Hist. Record*, July 1901; *Annals of Iowa*, especially Apr. 1872 and Oct. 1901; manuscript collection relating to Parvin, State Hist. Soc. of Iowa; *Hist. of Johnson County, Iowa* (1883); John C. Parish, *Robert Lucas* (Iowa Biog. Ser., 1907.]

B. F. S.

PARVIN, THEOPHILUS (Jan. 9, 1829–Jan. 29, 1898), obstetrician and gynecologist, was born in Buenos Aires, Argentine, where his father, of the same name, was a Presbyterian missionary. His mother, Mary Rodney, was a daughter of Cæsar Augustus Rodney [*q.v.*]. The boy was sent to Philadelphia for education at an early age and, when eleven, entered the preparatory department of Lafayette College. In 1847 he graduated from Indiana University; during the next three years he taught in the high school of Lawrenceville, N. J., and also studied Hebrew in the Princeton Theological Seminary. In 1852 he finished the two years' medical course at the University of Pennsylvania and received his doctorate in medicine. For a time he was resident physician at the Wills Eye Hospital in Philadelphia. He then began independent practice in Indianapolis and in 1861 he was elected president of the Indiana Medical Society. Three years later he accepted the professorship in materia medica at the Medical College of Ohio, where he taught five years. In 1869 he became professor of obstetrics at Louisville University but, in 1872, transferred to a similar chair in the Indiana Medical College. In 1879 he was president of the American Medical Association and delivered the presidential address at the meeting in Atlanta, Ga. He returned to Philadelphia in 1883 as professor of obstetrics and gynecology at Jefferson Medical College and was with the institution until his death.

Parvin gained an international reputation as an authority on obstetrics. His knowledge of the science and literature of the subject was prodigious. As a practical obstetrician, however, he was without manual dexterity and had less experience as an operator than many of his contemporaries. His *Science and Art of Obstetrics* appeared in 1886, and the following year he edited *A Handbook of Diseases of Women,* translated under his supervision from the original work of von Winkel. He was coeditor of the *Cincinnati Journal of Medicine,* 1866–67; editor of the *Western Journal of Medicine,* 1867–69; and coeditor of the *American Practitioner,* 1869–83. At various times he served as president of the American Medical Journalists' Association, of the American Academy of Medicine, of the American Gynecological Society, and of the Philadelphia Obstetrical Society. He often spent his summer vacations in Europe and was appointed an honorary president of the obstetrical section of the International Medical Congress at Berlin (1890) and of the Periodic International Congress of Gynæcology and Obstetrics at Brussels (1892). Among other honors, he was a

member of the American Philosophical Society, an honorary member of the Washington Obstetrical and Gynecological Society, and honorary fellow of the Edinburgh Obstetrical Society. He died in Philadelphia of cardiac asthma. His wife was Rachel Butler, of Hanover, Ind., whom he married in 1853 and by whom he had two sons and a daughter.

[W. H. Parish, "In Memoriam, Theophilus Parvin, M.D., LL.D.," *Trans. Am. Gynecol. Soc.*, vol. XXIV (1899); J. W. Holland, *The Jefferson Medic. Coll. of Phila., 1825–1908* (1909); *A Biog. Hist. of Eminent and Self-Made Men . . . of Ind.* (1880), vol. II; *Am. Jour. Obstetrics*, Oct. 1918; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Jan. 31, 1898.]

H. B. B.

PASCALIS-OUVRIÈRE, FELIX (*c.* 1750–July 29, 1833), physician, was a native of the South of France. After receiving his degree of M.D. at Montpellier, he practised medicine among the French colonists in Santo Domingo for a number of years, until the slave insurrection in 1793, under Toussaint l'Ouverture, forced him to flee. With many other refugees, he embarked for Philadelphia, where he practised for the next seventeen years. He wrote much on medical subjects. In 1798 he signed his writing Pascalis-Ouvrière, but in 1801 and later called himself Felix Pascalis. He had had experience with yellow fever in the West Indies and was therefore qualified to write on that disease, of which there were several severe outbreaks in Philadelphia during his residence there. In 1796 he published *Medico-Chymical Dissertations on the Causes of the Epidemic Called Yellow Fever, and on the Best Antimonial Preparations for the Use of Medicine, by a Physician, Practitioner in Philadelphia,* and followed this in 1798 by *An Account of the Contagious Epidemic Yellow Fever, Which Prevailed in Philadelphia in the Summer and Autumn of 1797,* to which he signed his name. He was at this time a follower of Benjamin Rush in his belief in the domestic origin of the disease, but later, after a trip to Cadiz and Gibraltar in 1805 to study the diseases of hot climates, he changed his views and held that yellow fever was imported by fomites carried in ships. In 1801 he was vice-president of the Chemical Society of Philadelphia and delivered the annual oration. Two letters by him were published in the first volume (1805) of the *Philadelphia Medical Museum*: "Account of an Abscess of the Liver Terminating Favorably by Evacuation through the Lungs," describing a case in which he himself was the patient, and "On the Nature and Effects of Syphilitic Agonorrhoea."

About 1810 he left Philadelphia and moved to New York, where he lived until his death in

1833. He became a close associate of Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill [*q.v.*] and was one of his co-editors on the staff of the *Medical Repository* from 1813 to 1820. He was greatly interested in botany and was one of the founders and at one time president of the New York Branch of the Linnaean Society of Paris. Another subject which greatly absorbed him was the danger of urban burials; in 1823 he published a book entitled *An Exposition of the Dangers of Interment in Cities,* in which he advocated the construction at a distance from every large city of a "Polyandrum" or general cemetery, where all the dead of the city should be interred in hermetically sealed vaults. The grounds were to be surrounded by high stone walls with deep-laid foundations. As the Polyandrum would be situated at a considerable distance from the city, a series of stations, which Pascalis called "luctuaries," were to be built at suitable intervals to afford opportunities for the mourning cortège to rest. In his book he stated that a company was being organized to carry his ideas into effect.

[Letters (MSS.) in the Coll. of Phys. of Phila.; *Trans. Medic. Soc. of the State of N. Y.*, 1834–35; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920).]

F. R. P.

PASCHAL, GEORGE WASHINGTON (Nov. 23, 1812–Feb. 16, 1878), jurist, author, journalist, was born at Skull Shoals, Greene County, Ga., the son of George Paschal and Agnes Brewer. His father was of French Huguenot descent. Though unsuccessful in business, he had an uncommonly good classical education. Agnes Paschal, a woman of the pioneer type, was a descendant of one of the earliest English families settling in North Carolina. She had a wide reputation in northern Georgia as a sick nurse and practical physician and lived to the age of ninety-four. Paschal was educated at home and in the state academy at Athens, where he earned his way by teaching in the preparatory course and by keeping the books of his landlord. He showed an early taste for the law and in 1832 passed an examination for admission to the bar before the superior court of Walker County. About this time a gold rush had begun in Lumpkin County, which together with the land lottery speculation arising from the seizure of the Cherokee lands, seemed to offer a bonanza to the young and briefless barrister. And so to Lumpkin he went to hang out his shingle. After the treaty of 1835 which was repudiated by the great bulk of the Cherokees, Paschal, who had joined a volunteer company of militia, was ordered to New Echota to serve as aide-de-camp under Gen. John E. Wool in the forcible removal of the Cherokees to Indian Territory. It was on this expedition that he married Sarah, a full-blooded Cherokee, the daughter of Maj. John Ridge, one of the chiefs of the nation.

In 1837 Paschal emigrated to Arkansas and opened a law office, being later joined by his brother. His legal talents soon placed him at the top of his profession and at the age of thirty he was elected by the legislature a justice of the supreme court of Arkansas, for the term of eight years. It was the only office he ever held. A number of his opinions appear in 5 *Arkansas Reports* which are noteworthy for their conciseness, clarity, and learning. Within less than a year on the bench he resigned and returned to the bar of Van Buren, Benton County, just in time to take charge at a critical moment of the Cherokee claims against the United States. Through the efforts of Paschal and his associate counsel the treaty of amnesty of 1846 was adopted. In 1848 he took up his residence in Galveston, Tex., and shortly thereafter moved to Austin where he soon attained first rank at the Texas bar. He was an intense partisan at all times, believing with the faith of a zealot in the right and capacity of the people to govern themselves, but disunion was abhorrent to his conception of state rights. For several years just prior to the war he edited the semi-weekly *Southern Intelligencer,* at Austin, through which he fulminated brilliantly against the Know-Nothings, Free-Soilism, Black-Republicanism, and the abolition of slavery. The crisis of 1860 found him at the head of the Union party of Texas ardently supporting Douglas for the presidency. When the Union party was crushed in the avalanche of secession he retired to his home and devoted the years of the Civil War to writing. During this period, subjected though he was to ostracism and constant danger, he prepared for publication his *Digest of the Laws of Texas* (1866) and *The Constitution of the United States Defined and Carefully Annotated* (1868) both of which works, for their originality and exhaustiveness, added greatly to his fame. Both were republished and the work on the Constitution was translated into Spanish by Nicolás Antonio Calvo, the Argentine jurist.

Impoverished by the war and saddened by the loss of relatives and friends, he left for New York in 1866 to attempt to retrieve his fortunes. In 1869 he opened a law office with his son, George W. Paschal, Jr., in Washington, where his reputation as a jurist and political writer had already been firmly established. He became identified with the Republican party after the war, but in 1872 he supported Greeley for the presi-

dency. He waged a steady fight in the press in favor of the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution. During the last few years of his life he edited as reporter 28–31 *Texas Reports* and compiled *A Digest of Decisions Comprising Decisions of the Supreme Courts of Texas and of the United States upon Texas Law* (3 vols., 1872–75). The latter is a notable accomplishment in American jurisprudence by reason of the complexity of Texas law, with its fusion of the civil and the common law. During his remaining years in Washington Paschal also lectured at the law school of Georgetown University. In addition to his legal works he was the author of *Ninety-Four Years, Agnes Paschal* (1871), and many political pamphlets and magazine articles. He died in Washington and was buried in the Rock Creek Cemetery. Brilliant of mind and facile of pen, he used his talents to the advancement of his profession and his country. He was married three times. His second wife was Marcia Duval, by whom he had a daughter, Betty, who became well known in English political and literary life as Mrs. T. P. O'Connor. His third wife, a widow, Mrs. Mary Scoville Harper, was intellectually most congenial and helpful, often assisting him in his indexing and editing.

[J. H. Davenport, *The Hist. of the Supreme Court of the State of Tex.* (1917); J. S. Easby-Smith, *Georgetown Univ.* (1907), vol. II; H. S. Foote, *The Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest* (1876); Fay Hempstead, *Hist. Rev. of Ark.* (1911), vol. I; C. R. Wharton, ed., *Tex. under Many Flags* (1930), vol. II; *In Memoriam, Hon. Geo. W. Paschal* (n.d.); Mrs. T. P. O'Connor, *I Myself* (1910); *Legal Gazette*, Feb. 9, 1872; *N. Y. Tribune, Washington Post*, Feb. 18, 1878.] J. T. V.

PASCO, SAMUEL (June 28, 1834–Mar. 13, 1917), senator from Florida, was born in London, England, the son of John and Amelia (Nash) Pasco. In 1842 his parents emigrated to Prince Edward Island and in 1846 settled in Charlestown, Mass. He attended the public schools and then entered Harvard College, from which he received the A.B. degree in 1858. Early the next year he went to Jefferson County, Fla., to take charge of the newly organized academy at Waukeenah. Two years in Florida made him an ardent Southerner, and at the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted as a private in Company H of the 3rd Florida Infantry. He rose to the rank of sergeant and, although his duties were largely of a clerical nature, saw heavy fighting. He was wounded and taken prisoner at the battle of Missionary Ridge. Released on parole after almost a year and a half of confinement in hospitals and at Camp Morton, Ind., he was a convalescent at his home in Florida at the end of the war.

Pasco

The fifty years of his life after the Civil War were devoted almost entirely to politics, in which he proved himself an adroit leader of the Democratic party. After the resumption of his teaching at Waukeenah for a year, he served for two years as clerk of the circuit court of Jefferson County, until removed from office by the Carpetbag régime in 1868. He then entered the law office of his old regimental commander, W. S. Dilworth, with whom he shortly afterward formed a partnership. On Oct. 28, 1869, he was married to Jessie, the daughter of William Denham of Monticello. They had five children. He practised law at Monticello, the county seat of Jefferson County, until his election to the United States Senate in 1887. From 1872 to 1878 he was a member of the state Democratic committee, and as its chairman in 1876 he was influential in the compromise that restored home rule to Florida. He was a member of the Democratic national committee from 1880 to 1900 and was elector-at-large in 1880 and in 1908. He was president of the Florida constitutional convention in 1885, was elected a member of the state House of Representatives in 1886, and became speaker of the House when it was organized in 1887. He was an unsuccessful candidate for the Democratic nomination for governor in 1884. He served in the United States Senate from May 20, 1887, to Apr. 19, 1899. A fair estimate of his service in the Senate would seem to be that he was a useful senator but not a distinguished one. During his first term his most important committee assignments were those of claims and of public lands, to the latter of which he was appointed in 1891. With the beginning of his second term in 1893, when his party controlled the Senate, he became chairman of the committee on claims and the next year was appointed to a vacancy on military affairs. His work was chiefly of a routine and local character, and he spoke infrequently on the larger issues then agitating the nation. He was defeated for the nomination for a third term in 1899 but was appointed a member of the Isthmian canal commission, in which capacity he served until 1904. Throughout his life he spoke frequently on various subjects and published occasional pamphlets. He wrote the chapter on Florida in H. A. Herbert's *Why the Solid South?* (1890) and in 1910 wrote "Jefferson County, Fla.," which after his death was published in the *Florida Historical Society Quarterly* (Oct. 1928, Jan. 1929).

[*Harvard Class of 1858. First Triennial Report* (1861); *Report of the Class of 1858 of Harvard College . . . Fortieth Anniversary* (1898); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; Samuel Pasco, Jr., "Samuel Pasco," *Fla. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, Oct. 1928; *Soldiers of Fla. . . .*

Prepared and Published by the Board of State Institutions (n.d.); *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 14, 1917.]

R. S. C.

PASQUIN, ANTHONY [See WILLIAMS, JOHN, 1761–1818].

PASSAVANT, WILLIAM ALFRED (Oct. 9, 1821–June 3, 1894), Lutheran clergyman, editor, philanthropist, was born at Zelienople, Butler County, Pa., of Huguenot and German ancestry, the youngest of the five children of Philip Louis and Zelie (Basse) Passavant. His parents were natives of Frankfurt-am-Main. His grandfather, Detmar Basse, came to the United States in 1802 to retrieve his fortune, bought 10,000 acres of land in the Conoquenessing Valley, but returned to Germany in 1817. On "Bassenheim," his estate at Zelienople, the transplanted comforts and elegance of an older society continued to flourish amidst a primitive environment. Passavant owed much to the wisdom, culture, and unassuming piety of his mother, who drew the reins cautiously on his more rampant enthusiasms, supplied him with money when money was most needed, and taught him to rely on his own judgment and intuitions. After graduating in 1840 from Jefferson College at Canonsburg, he studied for two years under S. S. Schmucker at the Gettysburg Theological Seminary, was licensed by the Maryland Synod in 1842 and ordained in 1843, and was pastor 1842–43 of a small church at Canton, a waterfront suburb of Baltimore. While at Gettysburg he did much missionary work in the adjacent hill country and published a *Lutheran Almanac* for the years 1842 and 1843. He was on the staff of Benjamin Kurtz's *Lutheran Observer,* 1842–48. Early in his career he established friendships, destined to endure for life, with Charles Porterfield Krauth, John Gottlieb Morris, and Joseph Augustus Seiss. He began his ministry as a New Lutheran of Schmucker's school and was a successful practitioner of the revivalistic technique then in vogue, but under Krauth's influence he discarded his old beliefs and methods and became a champion of Old Lutheranism and one of the founders in 1867 of the conservative General Council of the Evangelical Lutheran Church in North America.

For the last fifty years of his life he lived in Pittsburgh and devoted his inexhaustible energies and enthusiasm to the home missionary movement and to the establishment of institutions of mercy. Until 1855 he was pastor of the first English Lutheran Church of Pittsburgh. Through his travels and his extensive correspondence he became the most widely known and influential

clergyman of his denomination in the Middle West. Though his primary object was the work among English-speaking Lutherans, he early came in contact with German and Swedish Lutheran missionaries, gave them substantial aid and advice, and communicated to them his own sustaining faith in the work. In January 1848 he issued the first number of a monthly periodical, the *Missionary,* which he established both to strengthen the missionary movement and to counteract the tendencies of the *Lutheran Observer.* For several years it gave Charles Porterfield Krauth a medium for the propagation of his theology. In January 1856 Passavant enlarged the format of his paper and made it a weekly, and in 1861 it was incorporated with the *Lutheran* of Philadelphia. In 1881 he established another paper, the *Workman,* which he edited, in cooperation with his son, until his death. He was the dominant influence in the Pittsburgh Synod, which he helped to found in 1845.

His interest in Christian philanthropy, always strong, was greatly stimulated by his visit in 1846 to Theodor Fliedner's famous deaconess institute at Kaiserswerth. Two years later Passavant opened a small hospital in Pittsburgh, and in August 1849 Fliedner visited Pittsburgh, bringing with him four deaconesses, who thus introduced the order into the United States. Passavant and William Augustus Muhlenberg [*q.v.*] were friends, and it is likely that in establishing the American branch of the Lutheran order of deaconesses and the Episcopal Sisterhood of the Holy Communion they influenced each other. Subsequently Passavant founded hospitals in Milwaukee, Chicago, and Jacksonville, Ill., and orphan asylums at Rochester and Zelienople, Pa. He took an active part also in founding orphanages at Mt. Vernon, N. Y., Germantown, Pa., and Boston (West Roxbury), Mass. During the Civil War his deaconesses worked under the direction of Dorothea Dix in military hospitals. He may also be regarded as the founder of the Chicago Lutheran Theological Seminary and of Thiel College at Greenville, Pa., but neither of these institutions fulfilled his expectations. Though he was generous with his own money and successful in persuading others to give, his institutions all suffered from their restricted income, but his business acumen and personal devotion sustained them on their meager resources until they became permanently established. His own capacity for work was prodigious. He never employed a secretary, and those closest to him often found it difficult to relieve him of minor responsibilities that he insisted on shouldering alone.

On May 1, 1845, he married Eliza Walter, of Baltimore, who bore him five children and survived him. He died in Pittsburgh after a brief illness. The management of his institutions was carried on by his son, William Alfred Passavant, Jr., who outlived his father, however, by only seven years.

[*Workman*, Nov. 22, 1894 (memorial number); G. H. Gerberding, *Life and Letters of W. A. Passavant, D.D.* (Greenville, Pa., 1906); Zelie Jennings, *Some Account of Dettmar Basse and the Passavant Family* (privately printed, n.d.); G. H. Trabert, *English Lutheranism in the Northwest* (1914); G. M. Stephenson, *The Founding of the Augustana Synod, 1850–60* (1927) and *The Religious Aspects of Swedish Immigration* (1932).]

G. H. G.

PASTOR, ANTONIO (May 28, 1837–Aug. 26, 1908), theatre manager, actor, better known as Tony Pastor, was born in a house on Greenwich Street, New York. His father was a violinist in Mitchell's Opera House. His brothers, William and Frank, were acrobats and fancy riders in small circuses, and Tony himself spent his youth in the shadow of public performance. He began at the age of six singing comedy duets with Christian B. Woodruff, afterward state senator, at a temperance meeting at the old Dey Street Church, and was kept busy for two years thereafter singing at such meetings which were a highly popular form of diversion. In 1846 he made his first stage appearance at Barnum's Museum, singing in "blackface" to the accompaniment of a tambourine. In 1847 he joined Raymond & Waring's Menagerie, in a long tour, during which he learned to know at first hand many of the local types he afterward portrayed and in which he had a varied experience as clown, minstrel, ballad singer, low comedian, and general performer. At fifteen he was ringmaster of John J. Nathan's circus and subsequently he was with Mabie's circus as a singing clown. He opened his own Music Hall at 444 Broadway in the early sixties, singing comic songs with great success, and during the Civil War he developed a form of historical topical song, dealing chiefly with the events of the war, which made some one say of him that he "sang history into the theatre." In 1865 he went into partnership with Sam Sharpley, an old minstrel man, and opened at 201 Bowery, Tony Pastor's Opera House. Here he worked to perfect the form of entertainment later known as legitimate vaudeville. In 1875 he moved to 585 Broadway, a house of many names, best known as the Metropolitan Theatre. In 1881 he acquired the Fourteenth Street Theatre, neighbor to Tammany Hall, which became famous as Tony Pastor's and which he operated as a variety house until 1908.

Tony Pastor was not only a shrewd theatre manager and an actor of many talents, but a good producer and an idealist within his understanding of the theatre's ideals. His performances were intended to be "unexceptionable entertainment, where heads of families can bring their ladies and children," in distinct contrast to most of the music halls of the day. In spite of his own great popularity as a performer and as a song writer (he wrote over two thousand songs), he never absorbed the first place on his programs but was proud to develop other players and give them a leading chance. Many of the most important comedians and comic singers in American theatre history had their first, or their best, opportunity in Tony Pastor's theatre and under his direction. Among the names of those who were at some time in their career closely associated with him are: Nat Goodwin, Billy Emerson, Francis Wilson, Gus Williams, Denman Thompson, Weber and Fields, Lillian Russell, Evans and Hoey, Lettie Gilson, May and Flo Irwin, Maggie Cline, and Marie Lloyd. Pastor died in Elmhurst, L. I., at the age of seventy-one. Josephine Foley, his wife, whom he married in 1877, died Oct. 5, 1923. They had no children.

["Tony Pastor, the Father of Vaudeville," *Harper's Weekly*, Sept. 5, 1908; Montrose Moses, article in *Theatre Guild Mag.*, Apr. 1931; T. A. Brown, *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (n.d.) and *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); G. C. D. Odell, *Annals of the N. Y. Stage*, vol. VII (1931); *Who's Who on the Stage*, 1908; *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, July 27, 1895; *N. Y. Times*, Aug. 27, 1908.]

E. J. R. I.

PASTORIUS, FRANCIS DANIEL (Sept. 26, 1651–*c.* Jan. 1, 1720), lawyer, author, founder of Germantown, Pa., was born in Germany at Sommerhausen, Franconia, the only child of Melchior Adam Pastorius by his first wife, Magdalena Dietz. The Pastorius family was of Westphalian origin, their surname having been originally Scepers (Low German for Schäfer), and for several generations had been prosperous, cultured, and well connected. Pastorius' father (1624–1702) was himself a man of distinction. Educated at the University of Würzburg and the German College at Rome, he embraced the Lutheran faith in 1649, spent ten years as legal counselor to Count Georg Friedrich von Limpurg at Sommerhausen, and later rose to be burgomaster of the Imperial City of Windsheim. He was a prolific writer both in German and Latin, much of his work remaining unpublished. Profound religious feeling elevates some of his verse above the dead level of mere *Gelehrtenpoesie*. Common tastes and aspirations as well as family affection made the relations of father and son unusually sympathetic.

Frantz attended the Windsheim Gymnasium, then under the rectorship of the Hungarian humanist, Tobias Schumberg, and matriculated July 31, 1668, at the University of Altdorf as a student of law and philosophy. He studied also at the universities of Strassburg, Basel, and Jena; was present at the sessions of the Imperial Diet at Regensburg in 1674–75; and returned to Altdorf to take the degree of J.D. under the celebrated jurist, Heinrich Linck, in 1676. He began the practice of law at Windsheim, but at the instigation of his friend, Dr. Johann Heinrich Horbe, a brother-in-law of Philipp Jacob Spener, he removed in 1679 to Frankfurt-am-Main, where he was at once received into Spener's circle and became intimate also with some friends of William Penn. From June 1680 till November 1682 he traveled, as tutor to a young nobleman, in Holland, England, France, Switzerland, and Upper Germany. Religion had, by this time, become his preoccupation; he was dissatisfied with his profession and apprehensive for the future of European society, and was thinking of Pennsylvania as a refuge from the world. In April 1683 a group of Frankfurt Quakers who proposed to buy land in Penn's domain appointed him their agent, and Pastorius set out for America by way of Rotterdam and London. Crossing the Atlantic on the same ship with Thomas Lloyd [*q.v.*], he arrived at Philadelphia Aug. 20, 1683; completed negotiation with Penn for some 15,000 acres; and in October laid out the settlement of Germantown.

Until his death thirty-six years later Pastorius was the chief citizen of the town. He was the first mayor (bailiff) and served continuously as mayor, clerk, or keeper of records until 1707, when Germantown lost its charter. He was the agent of the Frankfort Land Company until 1700, being succeeded by Johann Jawert and Daniel Falckner [*q.v.*]. He was a member of the provincial Assembly in 1687 and 1691. He was in constant demand as a scrivener, taught in the Friends' school at Philadelphia from 1698 to 1700, and was master of a school in Germantown from 1702 till shortly before his death. He allied himself from the beginning with the Quakers, but his Quakerism retained more than a tinge of Lutheranism. In 1688 a protest against the practice of keeping slaves, signed by Pastorius, Garret Hendericks, Dirck Op den Graeff, and Abraham Op den Graeff, was sent to the Monthly Meeting of Friends at Lower Dublin. It was the first protest of the kind ever made in the English colonies, but it had no effect. The Friends at Lower Dublin forwarded it to the Quarterly Meeting at Philadelphia, the Quarterly Meeting at Philadelphia forwarded it to the Yearly Meeting at Burlington, and the Yearly Meeting at Burlington quietly suppressed it. On Nov. 6, 1688, Pastorius married Ennecke Klostermanns (1658–1723) of Mülheim-am-Ruhr, by whom he had two sons. Despite his many activities he led an almost idyllic life, with abundant leisure for his garden, his bees, and his study. His published writings consist of only six books or pamphlets, but he was a diligent writer and left to his descendants an immense quantity of manuscript works. The largest and most famous is his "Beehive," a commonplace-book of encyclopedic proportions and scope. Of the published works the most important was the *Umständige Geographische Beschreibung Der zu Allerletzt erfundenen Provintz Pensylvaniæ* (Frankfurt and Leipzig, 1700). *Four Boasting Disputers of This World Briefly Rebuked* (New York, William Bradford, 1697) was aimed chiefly at Heinrich Bernhard Köster and was Pastorius' contribution to the Keithian controversy; *A New Primmer or Methodical Directions to Attain the True Spelling, Reading & Writing of English* (New York, William Bradford, n.d.) is probably the first schoolbook written in Pennsylvania. Pastorius read and wrote seven languages, owned a considerable library, and was one of the most learned men in the English colonies, his knowledge including not only law and theology but science, medicine, agriculture, and history. He wrote verse in German and Latin, like his father, and also in English. The best of his German verse is direct, sincere, and melodious. He died sometime between Dec. 26, 1719, and Jan. 13, 1720.

[M. D. Learned, *The Life of Francis Daniel Pastorius* (in *Ger.-Am. Annals*, vols. IX–X, 1907–08; sep. pub., 1908) is the fullest biog.; but two earlier treatments are still useful: Oswald Seidensticker, *Die Erste Deutsche Einwanderung in Amerika und die Gründung von Germantown im Jahre 1683* (in *Der Deutsche Pionier*, Cincinnati, July 1870–May 1871; sep. pub., 1883; in *Bilder aus der Deutsch-pennsylvanischen Geschichte*, 1885); and S. W. Pennypacker, *The Settlement of Germantown* (in *Proc. Pa.-Ger. Soc.*, vol. IX, 1899, and sep. pub., 1899). The *Umständige Geographische Beschreibung* is translated, with an introduction by J. F. Jameson, in *Narratives of Early Pa., West N. J., and Del.* (1912), ed. by A. C. Myers; M. D. Learned published extracts from the "Beehive" in *Americana Germanica*, vols. I–II (1897–98). See also Oswald Seidensticker, *The First Century of German Printing in America, 1728–1830* (1893) for his manuscripts and published works.]

G. H. G.

PATCH, SAM (*c.* 1807–Nov. 13, 1829), famous for his spectacular diving feats, was born in Rhode Island, followed the sea for a few years, and then became a cotton-spinner in the Hamilton Mills at Paterson, N. J. There he was the mainstay of his widowed mother and was looked upon as a good workman and likable young man. In the fall of 1827 he announced that he was going to jump into the Passaic River from the

Chasm Bridge, which was then building. The police interfered, but on the day the span was dropped into place Sam appeared on an adjacent precipice, made a short speech—Mr. Crane, the bridge engineer, had done a great feat, and he, Sam Patch, was about to do another—and jumped seventy-five feet into the stream. Later he jumped from the bridge.

Warmed by the notoriety, he then went from town to town diving from cliffs, bridges, and masts. People flocked to witness his performances and contributed satisfactorily when the hat was passed. On his wanderings he picked up a fox and a small bear, and on some of his dives the bear was his forlorn companion. He was generally taciturn but when in his cups would parrot his two apothegms, "There's no mistake in Sam Patch" and "Some things can be done as well as others." To most observers he seemed to be a good-natured automaton. By the time he reached Buffalo in October 1829 and dived into the Niagara River from a shelving rock on Goat Island he was a national celebrity. Returning to Rochester, N. Y., where he had established temporary headquarters, he advertised that "being determined to 'astonish the natives' of the west before he returns to the Jarseys," he would jump 125 feet from a scaffold erected on the brink of the Genesee Falls. For this feat he prepared carefully, taking soundings of the pool below the falls and even making a practice dive without accident. On the scheduled day, Friday, Nov. 13, all western New York lined the banks of the Genesee, and excursionists came by schooner from Oswego and Canada. Sam made his speech and jumped, but in mid-air the arrow-like dive became a fall; he struck the water sidewise and disappeared. For months the newspapers were filled with stories of his last dive and rumors of his reappearance. On Mar. 17, 1830, his body was found broken and frozen in a cake of ice at the mouth of the river and was buried at Charlotte. His mother came to weep at the grave, was kindly received, and provided with transportation home. Sam Patch himself passed into the speech and folklore of the nation. For years Danforth Marble [*q.v.*] played the title rôle in two Yankee comedies, *Sam Patch* and *Sam Patch in France*. Of various dare-devil jumpers who have carried on the tradition the best remembered is Steve Brody.

[The best account is in J. M. Parker, *Rochester* (1884); typical newspaper stories and advertisements appear in *Mass. Spy* (Worcester), Oct. 17, 1827, Nov. 18, 25, 1829; *Buffalo Republican*, Oct. 24, Nov. 21, 1829; *N. Y. Evening Post for the Country*, Nov. 20, Dec. 1, 1829; *Rochester Daily Advertiser and Telegraph*, Oct. 30, Nov. 2, 12, 1829. For the Sam Patch plays see: Falconbridge (J. F. Kelly), *Dan Marble; A*

Biog. Sketch (1851) and G. C. D. Odell, *Annals of the N. Y. Stage*, vols. IV–VII (1928–31); for literary allusions, Robt. C. Sands, "A Monody made on the late Mr. Samuel Patch," *Writings*, vol. II (1835); Nathaniel Hawthorne, "Rochester" (Autograph ed., 1900, vol. XVII); W. D. Howells, *Their Wedding Journey* (1872).]

G. H. G.

PATERSON, JOHN (1744–July 19, 1808), Revolutionary soldier, public official, was born in Newington Parish, Wethersfield, Conn. (now New Britain), the son of Col. John Paterson and his wife, Ruth Bird, and a grandson of James Paterson who emigrated from Scotland to New England some time prior to 1704. John Paterson's taste for military life was doubtless derived from his father who served in the provincial forces during King George's War and the French and Indian War. He graduated from Yale College in 1762, and after teaching school in New Britain for several seasons began the practice of law. On June 2, 1766, he married Elizabeth Lee of Farmington. In 1774, in company with his family and his wife's father, he moved to Lenox, Mass. His gifts for leadership were at once recognized. He was a member of the Berkshire county convention in July 1774 at which the "Solemn League and Covenant" was adopted, whereby the people promised to refrain from consumption of English goods; and he represented Lenox in the first and second provincial congresses in 1774 and 1775.

In the meantime he was engaged in raising a regiment from the middle and southern parts of the county in anticipation of hostilities with England. When the news of the battles of Lexington and Concord arrived, he marched at once to Cambridge, his men being armed and almost completely uniformed. He was commissioned colonel on May 27, 1775, and his regiment, after being reorganized and enlarged, presently became the 15th Continental Infantry. He built and garrisoned Fort No. 3, near Prospect Hill, and during the battle of Bunker Hill protected the American forces from attack in the rear. During the siege of Boston his men had several brushes with the enemy and were complimented by Washington for their alacrity in meeting the foe. In March 1776 he accompanied the army to New York. He was presently ordered to the relief of the American troops in Canada, and after participating in the battle of "The Cedars," retreated by way of Crown Point to Ticonderoga where for a time he was engaged in fortifying Mount Independence. He rejoined Washington's army on the Delaware and participated in the battles of Trenton and Princeton. On Feb. 21, 1777, he was commissioned brigadier-general and in that capacity took part in the operations which

resulted in the capture of Burgoyne. He came near to losing his life when his horse was shot under him by a cannon ball. He wintered at Valley Forge, 1777–78, and was engaged in the operations culminating in the battle of Monmouth. Thereafter till the end of the war he was stationed for the most part in the highlands of the Hudson, commanding West Point at various times, and during these years he formed a close friendship with Kościuszko. He was a member of the court martial appointed to try Major André. On Sept. 30, 1783, he was brevetted major-general, and shortly afterwards retired from the army.

Resuming the practice of law at Lenox, he was elected to various civil offices, including those of moderator, selectman, collector of taxes, member of the school board, and representative in the general court. He helped to organize the Society of the Cincinnati and the Ohio Company. As commander of the Berkshire militia, he assisted in the suppression of Shays's rebellion. He had in the meantime become one of the proprietors of the "Boston Purchase," comprising 230,400 acres in Broome and Tioga counties, New York. In 1791 he emigrated with his family to Broome County. Here, as in Lenox, his talent for public service was soon acknowledged. Besides being chosen to several town offices, he was elected to represent his district in the state legislature (1792–93), in the constitutional convention of 1801, and in Congress (1803–05). In 1798 he was appointed to the bench and served as judge of Broome and Tioga counties. He died at Lisle, N. Y.

Paterson was a man of commanding presence, being over six feet tall and of athletic build. When a county judge, he would often walk eighteen miles to court rather than go to the pasture and catch a horse to ride. His success in both military and civil life was due to the confidence which his probity, ability, and good judgment everywhere inspired.

[*Centennial Celebration at Lenox, Mass.* (1876); E. A. Werner, *Civil List and Constitutional Hist. of N. Y.* (1884); *Hist. of Berkshire County, Mass.* (2 vols., 1885); D. N. Camp, *Hist. of New Britain* (1889); *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors of the Rev. War* (16 vols., 1896–1907); Thomas Egleston, *The Life of John Paterson* (1898); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of the Officers of the Continental Army* (1914); *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, July 1890; F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. II (1896); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).]

E. E. C.

PATERSON, WILLIAM (Dec. 24, 1745–Sept. 9, 1806), jurist, was born in County Antrim, Ireland, the son of Richard and Mary Paterson. The family emigrated to America, landing at New Castle on the Delaware in October 1747. The father spent some time in travel—perhaps as a peddler of tinware made by his uncles in Berlin, Conn.—before settling in Princeton, N. J., where he engaged in the manufacture of tin plate and general merchandising from May 1750 until his removal to Raritan (now Somerville) in 1779. The family fortunes were augmented through real-estate transactions, and William was enabled to enter the College of New Jersey, where he graduated with the Class of 1763. He began the study of law in the office of Richard Stockton [*q.v.*] in the following year. In 1766 he received the degree of master of arts from his college, delivering an oration on "Patriotism" at the annual commencement. With others he founded the "Well-Meaning Society," 1765–68, which in 1769 was revived as the Cliosophic Society, one of the literary societies still active at Princeton. Although he passed the bar examinations in 1768, Paterson could not be admitted to practice until February 1769 because of the absence of Governor Franklin from the colony. He began the practice of law at New Bromley, Hunterdon County, but in 1772 returned to Princeton. His view of the life of the time and place is recorded in *Glimpses of Colonial Society and the Life at Princeton College, 1766–1773, by One of the Class of 1763* (1903), edited by W. J. Mills. Within a short time he removed to South Branch in Somerset County but later (1779) purchased a farm on the north bank of the Raritan River. His residence was generally described as "the Raritan," a name bestowed upon the entire region lying immediately west of New Brunswick.

On May 11, 1775, he attended the New Jersey Provincial Congress as a deputy from Somerset County; he was reëlected the following year and was chosen successively assistant secretary and secretary. In 1776 also he was a member of the convention that formed the state constitution. In the same year he was chosen attorney general and in 1776 and 1777 was a member of the legislative council of the state of New Jersey. He was an officer in the Somerset County battalion of minute men and a member of the council of safety in 1777. While attorney general his work required him to attend the criminal courts in the counties, although to do so he had to make long journeys on horseback. "It unavoidably occupies the far greater part of my time," he wrote, declining to serve in the Continental Congress after he had been elected in 1780; "I feel its weight, and have more than once been ready to sink under it" (*Somerset County Historical Quarterly*, July 1912, p. 176). He continued to act as attorney general of New Jersey until 1783, when he re-

signed to resume the practice of law. At this time he removed to New Brunswick. Meanwhile, he married, Feb. 9, 1779, Cornelia Bell, daughter of John Bell, at Union Farm, Hunterdon County. Three children were born to them. Four days after the birth of the youngest, in November 1783, Mrs. Paterson died. Two years later Paterson married Euphemia White, daughter of Anthony White, in whose house at Union Farm his first marriage had taken place.

Public service again claimed his attention when he was chosen a delegate to the Federal Convention at Philadelphia in May 1787. When the debates on the "Virginia Plan" reached the question of representation, Paterson objected to the preponderance of the large states in the proposed government. "The idea of a national Govt. as contradistinguished from a federal one, never entered into the mind of any of them," he declared, "and to the public mind we must accommodate ourselves. We have no power to go beyond the federal scheme, and if we had the people are not ripe for any other" (Farrand, *post*, I, 178). Pointing to the disadvantages which a scheme of representation on the basis of population gave to the small states, he took the leadership, June 15, 1787, in introducing the "New Jersey Plan," which proposed a federal government consisting of legislature, executive, and judiciary. But the federal legislature, unicameral, was to represent states, and not individuals, and the states were to vote equally, without regard to wealth or population. The result was the compromise whereby the states secured an equal representation in the Senate while the members of the House of Representatives were to be apportioned according to population.

Paterson not only signed the completed Constitution but also advocated its adoption in New Jersey. At the inauguration of the new government he was chosen senator from New Jersey and arrived at New York on Mar. 19, 1789, to await the coming of Washington. He served on the committee to count the returns of the presidential election and was placed on the judiciary committee of the Senate. In the original copy of the Judiciary Act of 1789, the first nine sections are in the handwriting of Paterson and the bulk of the remainder in the hand of Oliver Ellsworth [*q.v.*]. Paterson did not remain long in the Senate. Upon the death of Gov. William Livingston [*q.v.*] in 1790 he was chosen by the New Jersey legislature to succeed him, and became governor and chancellor of the state. In 1792 he was authorized to collect and reduce to proper form all the statutes of England which before the Revolution were in force in the colony

Paterson

of New Jersey, together with all the public acts before and subsequent to the Revolution which remained in force. For his work in preparing the *Laws of the State of New Jersey* (1800), he received the sum of $2,500. He also remodeled the rules of practice and procedure in the common law and chancery courts, drafting what are known as "Paterson's Practice Laws," adopted by act of the legislature in 1799. About 1790 plans were laid for the founding of an industrial town at the falls of the Passaic, and to that end in 1791 the Society for Establishing Useful Manufactures was chartered. In the supplement to the charter the town is referred to as "Paterson."

In 1793 Paterson was appointed associate justice of the United States Supreme Court and thereafter was absent from home the greater part of the year "riding the circuits." A number of his opinions are contained in the report of Dallas and Cranch. He presided over the trials of several of the individuals indicted for treason in the Whiskey Rebellion (Francis Wharton, *State Trials of the United States*, 1849, pp. 102–84), and notably over that of Matthew Lyon [*q.v.*], accused of violation of the Sedition Law of 1798 (*Ibid.*, pp. 333–44). His last appearance in court was in New York, in the summer of 1806, at the trial of Samuel G. Ogden and William S. Smith for violation of the federal neutrality laws, in giving aid to the South American patriot Miranda (Thomas Lloyd, *The Trials of William Smith and Samuel G. Ogden*, 1807). Paterson's health had begun to decline, and he determined to go to Ballston Springs, N. Y., in September 1806, to seek a cure, but stopped at Albany en route and died there in the home of his daughter Cornelia, second wife of Stephen van Rensselaer [*q.v.*]. He was buried in the vault of the Manor House, at Albany. During the time of the Federal Convention, Paterson's colleague William Pierce wrote of him (Farrand, III, 90): "M. Patterson [sic] is one of those kind of Men whose powers break in upon you, and create wonder and astonishment. He is a Man of great modesty, with looks that bespeak talents of no great extent, but he is a Classic, a Lawyer, and an Orator,—and of a disposition so favorable to his advancement that every one seemed ready to exalt him with their praises."

[A few Paterson MSS. are in the Lib. of Cong.; there are copies of some among the Bancroft papers at N. Y. Pub. Lib.; some have been printed in *Somerset County Hist. Quart.*, Jan., Oct. 1913, Jan., Apr. 1914, in *Am. Hist. Rev.*, Jan. 1904, and in Max Farrand, *The Records of the Federal Convention of 1787* (3 vols., 1911). For biographical material see Gertrude S. Wood, *William Paterson of N. J., 1745–1806* (1933), Ph.D. thesis, Columbia Univ.; F. R. North, *Life of William Paterson* (1930), first pub. in *Paterson Morning Call*; *Somerset County Hist. Quart.*, July, Oct. 1912; *N. Y. Geneal. and*

Biog. Record, Apr. 1892; Joseph Clark, *A Sermon on the Death of the Hon. Wm. Paterson* (1806). See also H. L. Carson, *The Supreme Court of the U. S.* (1891); L. Q. C. Elmer, *The Constitution and Govt. of the Province and State of N. J.* (1872); *American Citizen* (New York), Sept. 15, 1806.] W. S. C.

PATILLO, HENRY (1726–1801), Presbyterian clergyman, was born in Scotland. At the age of nine, accompanied by an elder brother, he emigrated to Virginia and found employment as a merchant's clerk. Soon, however, he began to devote himself to teaching and study. Experiencing conversion, he felt called to the ministry, and in 1751 put himself under the instruction of Rev. Samuel Davies [*q.v.*], who was then at Hanover, Va. On Sept. 28, 1757, he was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Hanover, and on July 12, 1758, he was ordained at Cumberland. Three years earlier he had married Mary Anderson. Until October 1762 he was in charge of the churches of Willis Creek, Byrd, and Buck Island, and for two years or more, beginning May 1763, he supplied the churches of Cumberland, Harris Creek, and Deep Creek.

In October 1765 he removed to North Carolina, serving first, 1764 to 1774, at Hawkfields, Eno, and Little River, and later as pastor of the congregations at Nutbush and Grassy Creek, made up largely of emigrants from Virginia, who gave him 300 acres of land on condition that he would remain with them for the rest of his life. He was one of the early members of the Orange Presbytery and when the Synod of the Carolinas was organized, acted as presiding officer. He was a good classical scholar—Hampden-Sidney College conferred the degree of A.M. upon him in 1787—and engaged in teaching along with his pastoral duties. He also made the religious guidance of the negroes one of his special concerns. In political as well as ecclesiastical affairs he took a prominent part. When, in 1768, Governor Tryon's forces were called upon to put down the "Regulators" who were causing disorder in the state, Patillo and Rev. George Micklejohn, rector of St. Matthew's Church, Hillsboro, were appointed to preach to the troops. They also joined in a pastoral letter, having as its text the first two verses of the thirteenth chapter of Romans. Patillo was a delegate to the provincial congress of North Carolina in 1775, and when the congress resolved itself into a committee of the whole to consider joining the confederation of united colonies, was unanimously chosen chairman.

He is described by one in whose father's home he was a frequent visitor as "of large frame and considerably more than ordinary flesh . . . his features were rather large and coarse, though

his face easily lighted up with a smile of goodwill. . . . It seemed natural for him to say droll things; and he would frequently keep a whole company convulsed, apparently without being conscious he was doing it" (Anne E. Rice, in Sprague, *post*, p. 198). He was, however, an eminently devout man. As a preacher he spoke with a loud voice and much earnestness, the attention of his audience being held by the original matter of his discourse. In 1788 he published *Sermons . . . I. On the Divisions among Christians: II. On the Necessity of Regeneration to Future Happiness: III. The Scripture Doctrine of Election: IV. Extract of a Letter from Mr. Whitefield to Mr. Wesley: V. An Address to the Deists.* He was also the author of *A Geographical Catechism . . .* (1796), reprinted in 1909 with a biographical sketch. He died in Dinwiddie County, Va., while on a missionary journey.

[*The Colonial Records of N. C.*, vols. V (1887), VIII (1890), X (1890); S. A. Ashe, *Hist. of N. C.* (1908); J. W. Moore, *Hist. of N. C.* (1880); A. J. Morrison, *Coll. of Hampden Sidney Dict. of Biog.* (n.d.); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, vol. III (1859); Richard Webster, *A Hist. of the Presbyt. Church* (1857); *Alfred Nevin, Encyc. of the Presbyt. Church in the U. S. A.* (1884).] C. L. W.

PATON, LEWIS BAYLES (June 27, 1864–Jan. 24, 1932), Old Testament scholar, and archaeologist, was born in New York City, the son of Robert Leighton Stuart and Henrietta (Bayles) Paton. He was graduated from the University of the City of New York (now New York University) in 1884, ranking high in his class. For one year he was teacher in a boys' school, and for nearly two years traveled widely in Europe, studying German, French, and Italian. From 1887 to 1890 he was a student at Princeton Theological Seminary, winning at his graduation a fellowship in Old Testament. Five semesters were then spent at the University of Berlin. In 1892 he became a member of the faculty of Hartford Theological Seminary, where he remained for the rest of his life, being instructor one year, associate professor seven years, and from 1900 on, professor of Old Testament exegesis and criticism. During the earlier part of his teaching career he completed a thesis, published under the title *The Original Form of the Holiness-Code* (1897), for which he received the degree of doctor of philosophy from the University of Marburg. On Apr. 13, 1890, he was ordained by the Presbytery of Morris and Orange, but transferred to the Congregational Church in 1892. He was married three times: first, in 1896, to Suvia Davison of Hartford, who died in 1904; second, in 1915, to Mrs.

Loraine Seymour (Brown) Calhoun of Hartford, who died in 1924; and third, in 1925, to Katharine Hazeltine of Vassar College.

Paton's paternal ancestors were Scotch Covenanters, while on his mother's side he was descended from English Puritans and early Dutch settlers. In view of this ancestry, it is not surprising, he once wrote, that he was temperamentally a modernist. Despite his conservative instruction at Princeton, he became convinced of the truth of the critical view of the Old Testament before graduation, largely as a result of preparing a thesis on "The Historical Character of the Book of Chronicles." While many institutions in America suffered grievously from the controversies which raged over the Old Testament, Hartford escaped; for although Paton was frank and straightforward in expressing his critical opinions, his thoroughly Christian spirit and attitude were evident to all. It was characteristic of him that when asked to contribute to a series called "Modern Sermons by World Scholars," he should write upon Jesus Christ rather than upon some Old Testament theme.

The chief characteristics of Paton's work as teacher and writer were his keenly logical mind, his determination to get at all the facts and to arrange his treatment in the most orderly fashion. His class-room lectures, as well as his more public utterances and his writings, were marvels of comprehensiveness and lucidity. Students and fellow scholars alike saw in his work an object lesson of scholarly method. He served as director of the American School at Jerusalem in 1903–04, and thereafter kept in close touch with all the new discoveries which bore even remotely upon his work, making much use of this material in his teaching and writing. For many years he was connected with the *American Journal of Archaeology* in an editorial capacity. Much of his literary work appeared in scholarly periodicals and in encyclopedias. He dealt with the background of Hebrew life and religion in many articles contributed to James Hastings' *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics* (1908–26), notably in those entitled "Baal" and "Canaanites." In the *New Standard Bible Dictionary* (2nd ed., 1926) his most important articles were "Excavation and Exploration," "Social Development of Israel," and "Jerusalem." He also published numerous articles in the *Journal of Biblical Literature* and *American Journal of Theology*. His books include *The Early History of Syria and Palestine* (1901); *Jerusalem in Bible Times* (1908); *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Esther* (1908) in the International Critical Commentary Series; *The Early Religion of Israel* (1910); *Spiritism and Cult of the Dead in Antiquity* (1921); and he was the editor of *Recent Christian Progress* (1909).

[Unpublished autobiog. in possession of family; biog. sketch appended to doctor's thesis, Marburg 1897; *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; memorial addresses in *Hartford Sem. Bull.*, May–June, 1932; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 25, 1932.]

E. C. L.

PATRICK, MARSENA RUDOLPH (Mar. 11, 1811–July 27, 1888), soldier and agriculturist, was born near Watertown, in Jefferson County, N. Y., of Scotch-Irish and English colonial and revolutionary stock, the tenth and youngest child of John and Miriam (White) Patrick. His father's family, originally Kil Patrick, had dropped the prefix soon after reaching New England early in the eighteenth century. Running away from home, where his mother's excessive Puritanism dominated, Patrick became a driver on the Erie Canal, taught school, and in 1831 was studying medicine. Entering West Point the same year, as the protégé of Gen. Stephen van Rensselaer [*q.v.*], he graduated in 1835, forty-eighth in a class of fifty-one, and was brevetted second lieutenant of infantry. In 1836, while stationed at Fort Mackinac, he married Mary Madeline McGulpin, niece of an agent employed in the Astor fur trade. The Seminole War, staff duty, General Wool's Mexican expedition, and military routine occupied his life from 1837 to 1850, when (though a captain and brevet major) he resigned and engaged in scientific agriculture at Geneva, N. Y.

In 1859 he became president of the New York State Agricultural College, at Ovid. An antecedent of Cornell University, the institution was chartered in 1853, and the cornerstone of its first building was laid in 1859. The following year, with one wing of the building completed and with a faculty of five, the college opened. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Patrick resigned. Preferring service with volunteers, he declined reappointment in the regular army but was persuaded by Governor Morgan to become inspector general of New York volunteers in May 1861. In March 1862, at McClellan's request, he was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers. As a part of King's Division, McDowell's Corps (recalled to protect Washington), Patrick's brigade saw no service on the Peninsula but participated in the second Manassas and Antietam campaigns, during which the volunteers learned the value of his stern discipline. His tactical skill was recognized by officers of both armies but, to his regret, staff duty again took him from the line, his capacity for great combat leadership untested. With the Army of the Potomac disorganized by battle and change

of leaders, McClellan, in October 1862, appointed him provost marshal-general. Although charged with a host of duties—from maintaining order to securing military information—he was conscientious, vigorous, and capable. Successive commanders in turn found him almost indispensable. In 1864 Grant designated him provost marshal-general of all the armies operating against Richmond, and on Mar. 13, 1865, he was brevetted major-general of volunteers for "faithful and meritorious service," a tardy recognition. The rank and file respected and loved him; the Sanitary and Christian Commissions found him a faithful supporter; while the Southern citizenry counted him a friend albeit a conquering invader. Following Appomattox, he commanded the district of Henrico (including Richmond), but in June 1865 Grant suggested to Halleck that Patrick be relieved lest his kindheartedness "interfere with the proper government of the city." Relieved shortly afterward, at his own request, he resigned from the army, June 12, 1865, and went home.

Disgust for Republican policies now led him momentarily into politics as the unsuccessful Democratic candidate for state treasurer. A few years later, as president of the New York State Agricultural Society (1867–68), he pioneered for conservation and reforestation; to check the migration from country to city, he advocated a cottage system for farm workers. His last years, following his wife's death in 1880, were spent in Ohio as governor of the Central Branch, National Home for Disabled Volunteer Soldiers, Dayton. Ever the disciplinarian, he was denounced as a tyrant but, swayed neither by politics nor expediency, gradually gained the respect and love of veterans and townspeople alike. Of commanding presence, with patriarchal beard and thunderous voice, a self-disciplined Presbyterian fearing God only, he had the air of an Old Testament prophet with a dash of the Pharisee.

[Copy of Gen. Patrick's private journal, 1862–65, together with fragments for other years and genealogical and biographical notes by his son, I. N. Patrick, in the writer's possession; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads., U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1891); Diedrich Willers, *The N. Y. State Agricultural Coll., at Ovid* (1907); J. H. Mills, *Chronicles of the Twenty-first Regiment, N. Y. State Volunteers* (1887); W. P. Maxson, *Campfires of the Twenty-third* (1863); Lemuel Moss, *Annals of the U. S. Christian Commission* (1868); C. W. Bardeen, *A Little Fifer's War Diary* (1910); D. B. Parker, *A Chautauqua Boy in '61 and Afterward* (1912); M. R. Patrick, *Address Delivered at the Ann. Meeting of the N. Y. State Agricultural Soc., Albany, Feb. 12, 1868* (1868); *Twentieth Ann. Reunion, Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1889); *N. Y. Times*, July 28, 1888.]

T. S. C.

PATTEN, JAMES A. (May 8, 1852–Dec. 8, 1928), grain merchant, capitalist, and philanthropist, a first cousin of Simon Nelson Patten [*q.v.*], was born on a farm at Freeland Corners, De Kalb County, Ill. He had no middle name, but used the initial "A" for purpose of euphony. His father, Alexander Robertson Patten, a descendant of William Patten who emigrated to the United States in 1794, was one of a group of hardy Scotch-Irish Presbyterians who moved from Washington County, N. Y., to Illinois in the 1840's; his mother, Agnes (Beveridge), belonged to this same pioneer community, having come to Illinois in 1842, at the age of thirteen, with her father. Abandoning farming, Alexander Patten took charge of a general store at Sandwich, Ill., which he ran successfully until his death in 1863. His widow, left to care for a family of five boys of whom James was the eldest, shortly removed to her father's farm. Here James lived until he was seventeen. During the next two years he attended the preparatory department of Northwestern University at Evanston.

Returning to Sandwich, he worked for a time as clerk in the country store which had been his father's, and then spent a year on the farm of an uncle, John L. Beveridge, at that time governor of Illinois. In 1874 he received an appointment as clerk in the state grain inspection department at Chicago. Here he remained until 1878, when, not wanting to continue longer as a political office holder, he went to work for G. P. Comstock & Company, Chicago grain brokers. He speedily won the confidence of his employers by his ability and his probity, but within two years the firm failed. Patten now went into the cash grain business for himself, taking as partners his brother George and Hiram J. Coon. Soon, however, he joined with his brother in establishing the firm of Patten Brothers. The association of the two in the grain commission business remained unbroken until George Patten's death in 1910. In 1903 both brothers became members of the firm of Bartlett, Frazier & Carrington, grain brokers, later Bartlett, Patten & Company.

As a member of the Chicago board of trade Patten became widely known. He joined the board in 1882, was elected a director in 1897, president in 1918, and remained a member until his death. His early experience as a cash grain dealer laid the foundation of his success as a speculator in the grain futures market. On several occasions, notably in 1908 and 1909, he succeeded in anticipating crop conditions in corn, oats, and wheat so surely that he held virtual "corners" in all three grains successively. Later he was successful in cornering the cotton market. In connection with this venture he and three others were indicted in 1912 by the federal gov-

ernment for conspiracy. Patten elected to pay a fine of $4,000, but the other three fought the case and were acquitted. He always maintained that he did not speculate and that his "corners" were not responsible for unusual increases in the price of grain. He never took a position in the market without first having made a thorough study of supply and demand conditions. In addition to his other responsibilities, he was a director of the Continental and Commercial National Bank, the Chicago Title & Trust Company, Chicago, Rock Island & Pacific Railway, Peoples Gas, and Commonwealth Edison companies.

Patten had a keen sense of the responsibility that goes with wealth. Impressed by the fact that both his father and his brother had died prematurely because of tuberculosis, he gave $500,000 to promote the work of the Tuberculosis Institute and founded the Chicago Fresh Air Hospital. He made numerous gifts to small colleges in the middle West, was a generous benefactor of Northwestern University at Evanston, where he made his home, and provided that half of his estate, estimated at fifteen million, should go to charitable institutions upon the death of his widow. He was a Republican and took a keen interest in local and national politics. From 1901 to 1903 he was mayor of Evanston. Always clean-living and essentially religious, he enjoyed a reputation for integrity and good citizenship in his business and social life. His sound judgment, courage, and common sense made him one of the most capable and successful speculators of his time. On Apr. 9, 1885, he married Amanda Buchanan of Chicago; three children were born to them.

[J. M. Patten and Andrew Graham, *Hist. of the Somonauk United Presbyt. Church Near Sandwich, De Kalb County, Ill., with Ancestral Lives of the Early Members* (Chicago, 1928); J. A. Patten and Boyden Sparkes, "In the Wheat Pit," *Saturday Evening Post*, Sept. 3, 17, Oct. 1, 15, Nov. 5, 19, 1927; *Chicago Sunday Tribune*, Dec. 9, 1928; *Chicago Daily News*, Dec. 9, 1928; *Who's Who in Chicago*, 1926; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29.]

E. A. D.

PATTEN, SIMON NELSON (May 1, 1852–July 24, 1922), economist, was of English and Scotch-Irish stock, the son of William and Elizabeth Nelson (Pratt) Patten, a first cousin of James A. Patten [*q.v.*], and a descendant of William and Martha (Nesbitt) Patten, who came to Argyle, Washington County, N. Y., in June 1794, from Stonebridge, County Monaghan, Ireland. Two years after their marriage, Simon's parents settled on a homestead in what is now Sandwich township, De Kalb County, Ill., and here the boy was born. The father was an elder in the United Presbyterian church, twice a member of the Illinois legislature, and during the Civil War was captain in the 156th Illinois Volunteers. When four years old, Simon had typhoid fever; his mother contracted the disease and died. Soon afterwards his father married Jane Somes, who was an excellent step-mother.

The boy grew up on the Illinois prairie farm, which in the decades of the fifties and sixties typified in itself the bounteousness of nature when directed by man's intelligence. In his teens he had a ruminative turn of mind which detracted from his father's satisfaction in him as a farm hand. Those who knew Patten best, most of them years later, after he had been transplanted to Philadelphia, have been unanimous in attributing much of the optimism which marked his mature thought to his boyish observations of bursting nature. As will appear later, this view omits other and very different influences which helped direct his mind. He passed through the district school; grew rapidly, being six feet, two inches tall by the time he was fourteen; and at seventeen, as preliminary preparation for the law, he entered the nearby Jennings Seminary at Aurora. Here he formed a lasting friendship with Joseph French Johnson [*q.v.*], whose social gifts he (an awkward and ungainly countryman) admired and envied. He graduated in the spring of 1874 and spent the next year on the farm, during which time his desire to study the law receded.

In the autumn of 1875 he entered Northwestern University as a freshman, but his heart was not in his work here, and within a few months, drawn by Johnson's letters telling of study in Germany, he followed his friend to the University of Halle. Besides Johnson, he was in intimate association at Halle with Edmund J. James [*q.v.*] and, most important, with Professor Johannes Conrad (1839–1915), the national economist, statistician, and official counselor who had so large a hand in bringing Germany to industrial maturity. Patten was impressed by the economy of the German people quite as much as by anything he learned in the university. With natural resources far less ample in proportion to population than those of the United States, superior intelligence was employed in their use. Instead of exploitation, there was conservation. Power machinery was a major reliance. Consumption was nicely articulated with production. The mature society of Germany found delight in social amenities, whereas the younger American population derived less pleasure from its wasteful consumption of material things. These lessons were afterwards to be reflected in Patten's teaching and writing, particularly in his emphasis upon the theory of consumption. He

received the degree of Ph.D. at Halle in 1878 and came home by way of England.

His American friends at Halle, on returning to America, realized the expectations which their education raised, but only disappointment and dejection awaited Patten. He could find nothing to turn his hand to except the plow, and this he did for a year, to his disparagement in the eyes of his father. It was concluded finally that he must make another try at the law; in the fall of 1879 he went to Chicago for study, but in a few weeks developed eye trouble which compelled his withdrawal, and for the next two and a half years he was inactive, misunderstood, and miserable. Successful treatment by an eye specialist while he was visiting his friend James in Philadelphia gave him renewed interest in life. He cheerfully undertook to teach the same little district school where he had learned his own letters; the next year he received a better position at Homewood, Ill., and in 1888 was superintendent of schools at Rhodes, Iowa. During these years he had been working on a manuscript which, shorn of its worst crudities by his friends Johnson and James, was published in 1885 as *The Premises of Political Economy*. This was a correction of the work of John Stuart Mill in the light of American conditions, with added dissent from the efficacy of *laissez-faire* to discover and promote social interest.

The book secured Patten's appointment as professor of political economy in the University of Pennsylvania in 1888. His work in Philadelphia may be considered under the heads of his effect upon institutions, his teaching, and his writing. In all three capacities he was teleological; to his farthest speculations he sought to give issue in social betterment. He gave form and spirit to the Wharton School of Commerce and Finance, which was the first effort to supply business training in an academic institution. He invigorated and dignified "social work" not only locally but throughout the country. He was no organizer in the accepted sense, and hated administrative detail. He was a singularly gifted teacher, his informal method being peculiarly his own. At once imaginative and profound, he omitted many steps of conventional reasoning, and pounced upon the problems which invited exploration and answer. He revealed most of himself in small groups where a serious discussion excited his interest. His students were so attached to him by admiration and personal loyalty that the designation "Patten men" has come to be perfectly understood. Each of them captured and perpetuated in himself a measure of his teacher's spirit to a degree quite extraordinary in American

Patten

scholarship. Scott Nearing has said that "students went from his classes as from a refreshing bath" (*post*, p. 16), and that "one standard was set up in these classes—the public welfare" (*Ibid.*, p. 17). Patten wrote with difficulty, though he published a considerable amount in the aggregate. He was an economic optimist. He sought to banish the gloomy forebodings which had been inherited from the English classical writers. In his eyes, it was not nature which was limited in its capacities, but man who was wasteful and bungling. Thus the necessity of resort to poorer and poorer soils, which was an axiom of the Ricardian school, seemed to Patten a fallacy growing out of a wrong emphasis. If the land were intelligently cultivated, if consumption habits were so altered as to set up demand for a great variety of food products, landlords would not be enriched at the expense of capitalists and laborers. The very increase of population which had been viewed as the prime cause of rent, might give rise to new techniques and new standards of consumption which would counteract the crude tendency toward diminishing returns. Abandoning the older view of an unchanging man under differing environments, and not satisfied with the conception, brought forward by the psychological school, of a changing man in an unchanging environment, he preferred to think of "a solid economics, where the problems of a changing man can be treated in connection with changes in the physical world in which the man lives and through which he is conditioned." His thought equations were filled with variables. He showed how the pessimism of the English classical school sprang from an exploitative economic environment, and in contrast set forth the limitless social improvement which must follow economic conservation. This economic conservation involved the releasing of normal human impulses, the notable raising of the standard of living, and so the increase of man's power over nature. He was fond of showing that society had passed from the older deficit economy into the newer surplus economy, or from a pain economy to a pleasure economy. He thought that the saving which was dictated by the former condition of insufficiency should be replaced by spending in an era of growing abundance. Generous and wise consumption, he believed, would do more to reduce economic inequalities than would a more direct redistribution of wealth. At the same time, he was alive to the advantages of cooperative economic action as opposed to competitive practice.

Patten's mind was mainly deductive. His use of observed fact was often unsystematic, and generally for the purpose of illustration rather than

of induction. His thinking process was a compound of gropings and brilliant flashes of recognition. He was apt to be either very inconclusive, or to arrive at an accurate and original judgment as by a stroke of genius. He raised many more economic queries than he ever attempted to solve. The writings of Henry C. Carey [*q.v.*] and others of the "Philadelphia school" were at least of equal influence on his thought with his farm background and his observation of German economy. Carey—nationalist, protectionist, optimist, revolter from the classical tradition—had been dead only a decade when Patten came to Philadelphia; the similarity of Patten's beliefs to those of Carey and of George Friedrich List [*q.v.*], not only in favor of protection, but generally, is obvious. Patten's writing in the field of political economy as such may be said to have closed in 1899 with *The Development of English Thought.* Thereafter his interests expanded, and his speculations showed infusions of sociology, psychology, anthropology, and biology. Of his works in this later period, *The New Basis of Civilization* (1907) has had widest reading. His attempts at verse (for example, *Folk Love,* 1919) and a novel (*Mud Hollow,* 1922, partly autobiographical) were revealing but unsuccessful. After his death a number of his papers were collected and published under the title *Essays in Economic Theory* (1924), edited by R. G. Tugwell.

Patten has not been adequately appraised. One may hazard the guess that time will say he was most of all an appealing and stimulating personality. His books are not a satisfactory record of the man. Except here and there in eloquent passages, they do not reveal the secret of his power, which was communicated rather in personal contacts. He was one of the distinguished company of young Americans who came back in the seventies and eighties after study in Germany. The field of economic teaching, investigation, and application in America invited development and organization. Patten with his friend James proposed a "society for the Study of National Economy," which could "combat the widespread view that our economic problems will solve themselves, and that our laws and institutions, which at present favour individual instead of collective action, can promote the best utilization of our national resources, and secure to each individual the highest development of all his faculties." This project gave way before the less declarative American Economic Association, which, however, owed much in its inception to Patten's influence, and of which, two decades later (1908–09), he was president.

Craving society, Patten utterly lacked social graces, and lived much to himself. He looked not unlike Lincoln; he was even more angular, to the last he retained his country accent, and his clothes were always ill-fitting. When he was fifty-one, Sept. 2, 1903, he married, at Canton, N. Y., Charlotte Kimball, much younger than himself, and six years later they were divorced. In 1917, precisely at the entrance of the United States into the World War, Patten was notified by the University of Pennsylvania that he would be retired on account of having reached the age-limit. He claimed that the real reason was to be found in his liberal views, as just then illustrated in pacifist advocacy. He died five years later at Brown's-Mills-in-the-Pines, N. J., after two paralytic strokes, his last days being marked by extraordinary fortitude.

[Scott Nearing, *Educational Frontiers. A Book About Simon Nelson Patten and Other Teachers* (1925); R. G. Tugwell, "Notes on the Life and Work of Simon Nelson Patten," in *Jour. of Pol. Economy,* Apr. 1923; "Memorial Addresses on the Life and Services of Simon N. Patten," in *Annals Am. Acad. of Pol. and Social Sci.,* May 1923, Supplement, containing a full Patten bibliog.; "Memorial to Former President Simon N. Patten," in *Am. Econ. Rev.,* Mar. 1923, Supplement; J. M. Patten and Andrew Graham, *Hist. of the Somonauk United Presbyt. Church near Sandwich, De Kalb County, Ill.* (privately printed, Chicago, 1928); *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Apr. 6, 1917; *Ibid.,* July 25, 1922; *Phila. Record,* July 25, 1922; Ugo Rabbeno, *The Am. Commercial Policy* (2nd ed., 1895), pp. 384–411; H. R. Seager, "Professor Patten's Theory of Prosperity," in *Annals of the Am. Acad. of Pol. and Social Sci.,* Mar. 1902; introduction by Seager to S. N. Patten, *Essays in Economic Theory* (1924), ed. by R. G. Tugwell; R. H. I. Palgrave, *Dict. of Pol. Economy,* ed. by Henry Higgs, vol. III (1923); *Who's Who in America,* 1922–23.]

B. M.

PATTEN, WILLIAM (Mar. 15, 1861–Oct. 27, 1932), zoölogist and paleontologist, was born at Watertown, Mass., the youngest but one of the fourteen children of Thomas and Mary Low (Bradley) Patten. His father was a harness-maker, in whose shop the son worked with little satisfaction to himself. He acquired however a keen interest in birds and aspired to become, like Audubon, an artist-naturalist. Entering Lawrence Scientific School of Harvard University, he paid his own way, in part by taxidermy and by illustrating scientific books. As a freshman he won the Walker prize of the Boston Society of Natural History by a paper, "Myology and Osteology of the Cat," based on work done for the most part before he had entered college. Under Professor Edward L. Mark he studied zoölogy, specializing in insect embryology; he was also an enthusiastic disciple of the geologist Nathaniel S. Shaler. In 1883 he received the degree of B.S. and a Parker traveling fellowship. After a year with Professor Rudolf Leuckart at the University of Leipzig he received the degree of Ph.D. in 1884. He spent the next two years at

the zoölogical stations at Trieste and at Naples, then returned to America and for three years was assistant to Dr. C. O. Whitman at the Allis Lake Laboratory at Milwaukee. He was professor of biology at the University of North Dakota for four years (1889–93) before his appointment to the faculty of Dartmouth College, where for twenty-five years he taught comparative anatomy, embryology, and a course centering about organic evolution. He also organized (1920–21) an orientation course for freshmen, called "Evolution," of which he was director until his retirement in June 1931.

Patten's earlier papers (1884–89) on the embryology of caddice flies and of the limpet (*Patella*) were followed by others upon the eyes of molluscs and arthropods, illustrated by drawings since widely copied by textbook writers. From this earlier research he developed a theory of color vision. His paper "On the origin of Vertebrates from the Arachnids" (*Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*, August 1890) was followed by a series of brilliant studies (1893–1900) on the anatomy and embryology of the king-crab (*Limulus*), which with scorpions and other arachnids he regarded as closely related to a group of primitive fossil vertebrates (Ostracoderms) about which he published several papers (1902–03). He elaborated the theory further in a book, *The Evolution of the Vertebrates and their Kin* (1912). In 1914 his attention was directed to social philosophy by the idea that harmonious cooperation is necessary for evolutionary progress; this became the theme of *The Grand Strategy of Evolution; the Social Philosophy of a Biologist* (1920).

In search of fossil fishes (Ostracoderms), Patten spent seven summers between 1902 and 1914 in field work in northern New Brunswick, Newfoundland, and Labrador. For scorpions and similar arachnids he traveled to Java, New Guinea, Australia, and Japan (1912), to Costa Rica and Cuba (1921). After reconnoitering for fossil fishes in Sweden, Norway, and Spitzbergen (1925), he made three expeditions to the Island of Oesel, Esthonia (1928, 1930, 1932), where he supervised the excavation of large collections of Ostracoderms. His native talent for drawing and plastic art gave distinction to all his illustrations. His research was always stimulated by his vigorous imagination and his vision of ideal links between great branches of the animal kingdom. Proceeding not by slow processes of induction toward a theory lightly held, he was animated by his theory and pursued it indefatigably. He was skilful at technique, and a keen observer of structural details. The need of harmonious co-

operative action in nature and human affairs was to him not a tradition but a new discovery. He was very sociable, an interesting comrade, fond of outdoor and indoor sports, vigorous, robust, and perennially young. He died at seventy-one, the victim of coronary thrombosis. He married on June 28, 1883, Mary Elizabeth Merrill of Bradford, Mass. Their son Bradley Merrill Patten survived him.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Science*, Nov. 25, 1932; T. W. Baldwin, *Patten Geneal.* (1908); *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 28, 1932; data from the Alumni Record Office, Dartmouth Coll.; information as to certain facts from Mrs. William Patten.] J. H. G.

PATTERSON, DANIEL TODD (Mar. 6, 1786–Aug. 25, 1839), naval officer, was born on Long Island, N. Y., the son of John Patterson, former collector of customs at Philadelphia, and Catharine (Livingston) Patterson, great-granddaughter of Robert Livingston [*q.v.*]. On June 11, 1799, he joined the sloop *Delaware* as acting midshipman and sailed in her on two West Indian cruises during the naval war with France. He was warranted midshipman in August 1800, after his first cruise, and was one of the 159 midshipmen out of 352 retained in the peace establishment of May 1801. He carried on nautical studies till December. Until March 1803 he was in the *Constellation* of the second squadron sent against Tripoli. In May following he sailed again for the Mediterranean in the *Philadelphia* and was a prisoner for more than nineteen months after she was stranded and captured by the Tripolitans on Oct. 31, 1803. Under the excellent tutelage of Capt. William Bainbridge and Lieut. David Porter [*qq.v.*], he was, however, enabled "to profit by the seeming misfortune" (manuscript memoir of his services, November 1813, in Navy Department Library). Upon his return he was stationed at New Orleans from January 1806 to June 1807. He was married in 1807 to George Ann Pollock, the daughter of George Pollock of New Orleans. They had two sons, Carlile Pollock and Thomas Harman [*q.v.*], and three daughters, one of whom, George Ann, was married in 1839 to David D. Porter [*q.v.*].

In March 1808, after a visit to the North, and promotion to the rank of lieutenant, he returned to New Orleans where his friend Porter was in charge. From January 1810 to February 1811 he had a semi-independent command of twelve gunboats, that operated from a base at Natchez and transported most of the troops for the occupation of Baton Rouge in 1810. He was made master commandant on July 24, 1813, and from December following commanded the New Orleans station. Against the Gulf buccaneers his most effective stroke was delivered on Sept. 16,

1814, when, raiding the base of the pirate Jean Laffite [*q.v.*] at Barataria Bay, La., with the schooner *Carolina* and six light gun vessels, he captured six schooners and other small craft. Although it was supported by twenty guns mounted on shore, Laffite's band, about 1,000 strong, fled without resistance, much to Patterson's disappointment (C. F. Goodrich, "Our Navy and the West Indian Pirates," *Naval Institute Proceedings,* Sept.–Oct., 1916, p. 1471). He foresaw clearly the designs of the British against New Orleans in 1814 and indicated the best lines of defense. On Sept. 2, 1814, he refused Jackson's request to send his naval forces to Mobile, and maintained his position at New Orleans where the delay he caused the enemy by the gunboat action on Lake Borgne on Dec. 15 greatly facilitated Jackson's final victory. He was aboard the *Carolina* during her very effective two-hour bombardment of the British camp on the evening of Dec. 23, shouting at the first discharge, "Give them this for the honor of America" (*Niles' National Register,* Sept. 28, 1839, p. 71). The *Carolina* was destroyed by enemy fire on Dec. 27, but with his remaining vessel, the *Louisiana,* he continued to render valuable artillery service, and in the battle of Jan. 8 he commanded a battery of naval guns on the west bank of the river. These had to be spiked and abandoned on the retreat of Morgan's militia but were repaired and ready for action next day. His excellent cooperation throughout the campaign has perhaps not been fully recognized, though he was highly commended by Jackson, received a vote of thanks from Congress, and was made captain on Feb. 28, 1815. Patterson is described at this time as a "stout, compact, gallant-bearing man . . . his manner . . . slightly marked by hauteur" (J. Parton, *Life of Andrew Jackson,* 1860, vol. II, p. 28).

A welcome change from the isolated southern station came finally in 1824 when he was appointed fleet captain and commander of the flagship *Constitution* in Commodore Rodgers' Mediterranean Squadron. Upon his return in 1828, partly no doubt as a warm friend and supporter of Jackson, he was given the important office of one of the three navy commissioners. Afterward he commanded the Mediterranean Squadron from 1832 to 1836. In negotiations to enforce claims against Naples for commercial injuries during the Napoleonic wars, his squadron gave effective support by entering the harbor at Naples one ship after another, until all six were assembled. His death occurred at the Washington navy yard, of which he was commandant, 1836–39, and he was buried in the Congressional Cemetery.

Patterson

[Master Commandants' Letters, 1813, and Captains' Letters, 1814–24, in Navy Dept. Lib.; E. N. McClellan, "The Navy at the Battle of New Orleans," *U. S. Naval Inst. Proc.,* Dec. 1924; *Daily National Intelligencer,* Jan. 30, Feb. 3, 22, 23, Mar. 6, Dec. 2, 1815, Aug. 26, Sept. 23, 1839; E. B. Livingston, *The Livingstons of Livingston Manor* (1910); information from family sources.]

A. W.

PATTERSON, JAMES KENNEDY (Mar. 26, 1833–Aug. 15, 1922), educator, was the first child of Andrew and Janet (Kennedy) Patterson, of Glasgow, Scotland. The father was a calico printer of limited earnings. At the age of four Patterson injured his left knee in such a way as to be lame ever after, a circumstance which doubtless influenced his later choice of career. In 1842 the family emigrated to America, settling eventually in Madison County, Ind. There as a result of his mother's contrivances he received enough preliminary education to enable him to teach a district school. Realizing that a degree was indispensable to advancement, he matriculated at Hanover College in 1851. He was obliged to interrupt his studies and teach again, but he returned to Hanover College and graduated as valedictorian in 1856. In the same year he became principal of the Presbyterian Academy in Greenville, Ky.; in 1859, principal of the preparatory department of Stewart College, Clarksville, Tenn. The closing of the college following the attack upon Fort Sumter left him and his wife, Lucelia W. Wing, whom he had married Dec. 25, 1859, without income, a situation improved by his election as principal of Transylvania Academy in Lexington, Ky., which managed to keep open throughout the conflict. When Kentucky University was organized under John Bryan Bowman [*q.v.*] in 1865 Patterson was made professor of Latin, history, and metaphysics, and in 1869 he became president of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Kentucky which had been established in 1865 as an adjunct of the University.

After a visit to England, Scotland, and France in 1875 he returned to find the affairs of the university so discordant as to make inevitable a separation of the units representing respectively denominational and state interests. After the division Patterson remained in control of the fortunes of the Agricultural and Mechanical College, an institution left by the separation without buildings or a site for them, with an annual income of only $9,900, and with a faculty of but five members. Vigorously setting about organization he succeeded in having the campus established in Lexington and in having the legislature vote a yearly appropriation toward its support. This move, however, united most of the other colleges of Kentucky in opposition to the State

College and in a bitter campaign against the principle of a state-supported institution. To add to the seriousness of the situation the building funds gave out before the completion of the projected dormitories and classrooms. In this crisis Patterson contributed his greatest services to the cause of education in Kentucky. He addressed the General Assembly and a legislative committee in behalf of state aid to higher education and pleaded his case so effectively as to win a full triumph for the College and the law intended to support it. To meet the financial emergency he hypothecated enough of his own securities to assure the continuance of the building program. From that time, despite the fact that Patterson had a predilection for cultural schooling, the evolution of the State College into the University of Kentucky was steady. After forty years as head of the institution he retired, Jan. 15, 1910, upon conditions which revealed his almost possessive interest in the university; the partial nullification of these conditions gave rise to quarrels which darkened his closing years. By his will he left to the University a sum of money to found a school for the training of American diplomats.

[Sources include: Mabel H. Pollitt, *A Biog. of Jas. Kennedy Patterson* (1925); a typewritten biography by W. B. Smith (1925) in the library of the Univ. of Ky.; *Memorial Exercises and Addresses in Honor of Jas. Kennedy Patterson* (1924); the *Courier-Jour.* (Louisville), Aug. 16, 1922; information as to certain facts from friends and relatives of Patterson.] G. C. K.

PATTERSON, JAMES WILLIS (July 2, 1823–May 4, 1893), educator, politician, the second child of William and Frances (Shepard) Patterson, was born at Henniker, N. H. His boyhood was spent for the most part in hard work on his father's farm and in the mills at Lowell, Mass., where the family resided for several years. About 1838 he completed his early schooling, which had been somewhat meager, at the local academy in Henniker. After two years' employment in Lowell, and four years as a teacher, he was able to complete his preparation for college. He graduated from Dartmouth in 1848 with high honors. Planning a legal career, he served as principal of Woodstock Academy in Connecticut (1848–51), studying law in the meantime. For a time he considered the ministry as a career and spent a year in the study of theology at New Haven, but he had already made a reputation as a successful teacher, and in 1852 he received and accepted the offer of a tutorship at Dartmouth. In 1854 he was appointed professor of mathematics and on Dec. 24 of the same year married Sarah Parker Wilder of Laconia,

Patterson

N. H. Five years later he was appointed professor of astronomy and meteorology and held this chair until 1865.

From 1858 to 1862 Patterson was school commissioner of Grafton County. In the latter year he served a term in the New Hampshire legislature and in 1863 he was elected, a Republican, to the national House of Representatives. His House service covered the years 1863–67 and in 1866 he was elected to the United States Senate. Throughout his ten years in Washington he was especially interested in the District of Columbia for which he drafted several education laws, emancipation having created many new problems. As chairman of the joint select committee on retrenchment he submitted notable reports on the consular service (*Senate Report 154*, 40 Cong., 2 Sess.) and on the excessive costs and abuses in the collection of customs revenue (*Senate Report 380*, 41 Cong., 3 Sess.). His career in Washington closed under a cloud created by the Crédit Mobilier scandal, but historians have been puzzled to understand why he was recommended for expulsion when no drastic action was taken in the cases of other more serious offenders. That his conduct had been indiscreet is unquestionable; and his apparent attempt to conceal relevant facts created a bad impression; but many believed the truth of his own statement that he had supposed the stock purchased for him was Union Pacific rather than Crédit Mobilier. His term ended within a few days after the Senate investigating committee had submitted a report recommending his expulsion, and without opportunity for discussion on the floor, a fact which led many to believe that he had been unjustly dealt with. His defense subsequently published, and reprinted in a public document (*Senate Report 519*, 42 Cong., 3 Sess.), is somewhat naïve but strengthens the impression that he was innocent of corrupt motives.

He had been defeated for renomination in 1872 and spent the years following his retirement in Hanover. He traveled extensively and was in frequent demand as a public speaker and lecturer. He again represented Hanover in the legislature for two terms, 1877–78. From 1881 to 1893 he was state superintendent of public instruction. He was largely instrumental in securing the passage of the Act of 1885 substituting the town for the local district as the unit of public-school organization. He resigned in 1893 when again appointed to the Dartmouth faculty, this time as professor of rhetoric and oratory. His reappointment was considered a measure of vindication which he did not live to enjoy fully, his death occurring unexpectedly a few weeks later.

[Sources include: G. W. Patterson, *Jas. W. Patterson as an Educator* (1893), reprinted from *Ann. Report of Supt. of Pub. Instruction . . . of N. H.*, 1893; L. W. Cogswell, *Hist. of the Town of Henniker* (1880); J. O. Lyford, *Life of Edw. H. Rollins* (1906), containing references to Patterson's political career; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Granite Monthly*, Oct. 1892, June 1893; J. K. Lord, *A Hist. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1913); obituary notices in New Hampshire newspapers. There is manuscript material on Patterson in the archives of Dartmouth Coll. and the Dartmouth Coll. Lib. has a large collection of Patterson's printed addresses and miscellaneous pamphlets.] W. A. R.

PATTERSON, JOHN HENRY (Dec. 13, 1844–May 7, 1922), promoter and manufacturer of cash registers, was born near Dayton, Ohio, the seventh of eleven children of Jefferson Patterson and Julia Johnston, and a descendant of John Patterson, of Scotch-Irish stock, who emigrated to Pennsylvania about 1700. Born on a farm of well-to-do parents, and reared in rural surroundings in the neighborhood of the then small town of Dayton, Ohio, he attended the local schools and the Central High School of Dayton, Ohio, then spent a year, 1862–63, at Miami University. In 1864 he enlisted in the 131st Ohio but his regiment got only as far as Baltimore and he saw no active service. Continuing his education, he entered Dartmouth College and graduated with the degree of B.A. in 1867. What he regarded as an acquisition of much useless knowledge at college was the foundation of a lifelong suspicion and dislike of college methods and college men. Upon returning from Dartmouth as a college graduate and veteran of the war, he found nothing to do. He remained upon the family farm for a time, then took a position in 1868 as a canal toll-gate keeper in Dayton. Later he became a coal merchant with his brothers. In 1884, at the age of forty, casting about for a more profitable business than the coal business, he acquired a controlling interest in the National Manufacturing Company at Dayton which manufactured cash registers. The next day after its purchase he was so greatly ridiculed for investing in such a failure that he offered $2,000 to the seller to release him from his bargain, but his offer was refused. The factory of the company, which in December 1884 became the National Cash Register Company, was situated in a dismal slum section of the town of Dayton. There were thirteen employees on the payroll. At an age when most men are consolidating their successes, Patterson started into business with a product that nobody wanted, few knew how to use, and one that met the violent opposition of all those who had to employ it. From this beginning he established eventually a plant whose product became practically indispensable to the commercial world and in a sense revolutionized commercial transactions.

In the first four years of his control of the company Patterson suggested many improvements in the construction of the cash register and took out several patents in his own name. He was not a mechanic, however, and after 1888 left the development of the machine to experts. He devoted his main efforts to the sale of his product and in this field he developed advertising practices which were new and unusual. Sales conventions, sales schools for the education of salesmen and customers, service to customers to maintain the mechanism in operating condition, the establishment of the closed quota territory guaranteeing to salesmen their territory as theirs exclusively, generous payments of large commissions for performance, were all evidences of the new salesmanship that he introduced. At the outset he began to use advertising circulars and always stressed direct mail advertising.

In the factory, he converted the grime and gloom of his original plant into pleasant surroundings. He established an industrial welfare organization to take care of the education, health, and working conditions of his employees and their families, he established a schoolhouse for their education and entertainment, and he converted his factory ground into an industrial garden spot. But his lavish provisions for the health and comfort of his employees were prompted as much by materialistic as humanitarian motives, for he often said: "It pays." His competitive methods were so aggressive that he was left supreme in his field, but he was repeatedly subject to the attacks of government agencies and of other business men. He demanded a maximum of efficiency from his employees and was often merciless in his treatment of them. Physically he was wiry and energetic, and he possessed a highly erratic temperament. He had a genius for management and a mind that retained every detail of his business. Easily obsessed by an idea, he was unhappy until he had converted it into action. After he had been placed on a regimen which included callisthenics in the morning he demanded that the executives in his factory assemble at five o'clock every morning for similar exercises. Good government, aviation, diet, horticulture, horses, education, and invention were but a few of his hobbies. Patterson died on May 7, 1922, at seventy-eight, while he was on his way to Atlantic City. He had retired from the presidency of the company in 1921, but was chairman of the board of directors at the time of his death. He was survived by two children. His wife, Katherine Dudley Beck, of Brookline,

Mass., whom he married on Dec. 18, 1888, died in 1894.

[Sources include: Samuel Crowther, *John H. Patterson, Pioneer in Industrial Welfare* (1923); C. R. Conover, *Concerning our Forefathers . . . Col. Robert Patterson and Col. John Johnston* (1902); R. W. Johnson and R. W. Lynch, *The Sales Strategy of John H. Patterson* (1932); *Fortune*, Aug. 1930; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *N. Y. Times*, May 8, 1922.] H. A. T., Jr.

PATTERSON, MORRIS (Oct. 26, 1809–Oct. 23, 1878), merchant, philanthropist, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the eldest son of John and Rachel (Cauffman) Patterson. The father died in 1819, leaving a family of seven children, and the mother opened a grocery store in order to support herself and the family. Morris worked in the store until 1830, when he went into the grocery business for himself. Shortly before this time he had begun to operate a retail coal wharf and in time he decided to engage in coal mining on his own account. He became a pioneer in the development of the anthracite coal trade of Pennsylvania. His coal was brought to Philadelphia in his own boats on the Schuylkill Canal and from there was shipped to other Eastern cities. In Schuylkill County he built up a large trade in groceries with Pottsville and the mining region, shipping the goods in his canal boats when they returned to the mines. He also engaged in transalleghany trade, sending his goods across the mountains in wagon trains. When the Pennsylvania Railroad was first projected he was one of the canvassers for stock subscriptions and was himself an original stockholder. On Jan. 1, 1840, he turned his retail grocery business over to his younger brothers and formed a partnership with Benjamin S. Janney, Jr., under the firm name of Morris Patterson & Company, to conduct a wholesale grocery business. This partnership continued until Jan. 1, 1857, when it was dissolved. In 1845 he had become associated with Joseph Bailey in the manufacture of plate iron at the Pine Rolling Mill near Douglassville, Pa. A few years later he also became associated with Charles L. Bailey in the construction of the Central Rolling Mill at Harrisburg, Pa., which was completed in 1852. He was connected with this concern as a silent partner until it was sold in 1866, at which time he retired from all business activities.

Patterson was very active in church affairs and was ruling elder of the West Spruce Street Presbyterian Church in Philadelphia, the erection of which he largely financed, from 1856 until his death. He also served as a member of the Presbytery of Philadelphia. He was one of the founders and a member of the board of managers of the Pennsylvania Working Home for Blind Men and was connected with many other charitable and philanthropic institutions. In a quiet and unostentatious way he did a great deal of good with the fortune which he had accumulated. In addition to his other business activities he served as one of the directors of the Western National Bank and of the Montgomery Iron Company. He was also a member of the Presbyterian Board of Education and a trustee of Lafayette College to which he was a generous contributor. On Apr. 8, 1846, he was married to Mary Storm and they had three children. He died suddenly in Philadelphia.

[There is a privately printed memorial of Patterson entitled: *Morris Patterson, Born Oct. 26, 1809, Died Oct. 23, 1878* (n.d.). See also: the *Presbyterian* (Phila.), Nov. 2, 1878; *Phila. Inquirer*, Oct. 24, 1878; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Oct. 25, 1878.] J. H. F.

PATTERSON, ROBERT (May 30, 1743–July 22, 1824), mathematician, was born near Hillsborough in the north of Ireland, the son of Robert and Jane Patterson. His great-grandfather had emigrated from Scotland to escape the persecution of the Presbyterians by the Stuarts. He was sent to school at an early age and distinguished himself for his progress in mathematics. During the wave of martial spirit that spread over Ireland when the French descended upon the coast, Patterson enlisted in a militia company. He was offered a commission in the British army but this he declined. After finishing his education, he emigrated to America in October 1768 and landed in Philadelphia practically penniless. He secured a position as schoolmaster in Buckingham, Bucks County, but left this position to return to Philadelphia, where he taught many of the leading navigators the computation of longitude by means of lunar observations. In 1772, having accumulated the sum of approximately five or six hundred pounds, he opened a country store in New Jersey. He was unfitted for business, however, and seized the first opportunity to close out the enterprise, resuming his former vocation as principal of the academy at Wilmington, Del. His early experiences in Ireland put him in a position to render valuable services as a military instructor upon the outbreak of the Revolution. Three companies were put under his charge. Later he entered the army with the rank of brigade major and served until the British evacuated Philadelphia.

Upon the reorganization of the College and Academy of Philadelphia as the University of Pennsylvania, Patterson was appointed professor of mathematics. He entered the services of the University in December 1779 and served

continuously until 1814 when he resigned and was succeeded by his son, Robert M. Patterson. For a period he was vice-provost of the University. He contributed several scientific papers to the *Transactions* of the American Philosophical Society and was a frequent contributor of problems and solutions to mathematical journals. He also published *Lectures on Select Subjects in Mechanics* (2 vols., 1806), and *Astronomy Explained upon Sir Isaac Newton's Principles* (1806, 1809), revised editions of the works of James Ferguson, the Scotch scientist. In 1808 he published a small book entitled the *Newtonian System of Philosophy* and in 1818 he published *A Treatise of Practical Arithmetic,* elaborated from his lectures on the same subject at the University of Pennsylvania. Though the exposition was clear, the book never reached the circulation it deserved because it was difficult for beginners. In the second volume of Robert Adrain's *Analyst* he set as the prize problem the question as to how to correct the measurements of a polygon whose sides are given in size and direction but which when plotted do not close up. The problem was renewed in Volume III and was finally solved by Nathaniel Bowditch in Volume IV.

In addition to his services at the University Patterson found time for public service. He was a member of Select Council of Philadelphia and was elected its president in 1799. In 1805 he received from President Jefferson the unsolicited appointment as director of the mint. He filled this office with distinction and resigned only at the time of his last illness. He was elected a member of the American Philosophical Society in 1783 and became its president in 1819. He was richly endowed both in mind and body. His especial mental inclination was for exact science. He was not alone interested in the discovery of a mathematical or physical truth but was never satisfied until he could see its application in the world of every-day life. Patterson was married, on May 9, 1774, to Amy Hunter Ewing of Greenwich, N. J. They had eight children.

[Memoir of Patterson in *Trans. Am. Phil. Soc.*, n.s. vol. II (1825); F. Cajori, *The Teaching and Hist. of Mathematics in the U. S.* (1890); J. L. Chamberlain, *Universities and Their Sons: Univ. of Pa.*, vol. I (1901); G. B. Wood, *The Hist. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1834); W. E. Du Bois, *A Record of the Families of Robt. Patterson* (1847); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser*, July 24, 1824.] J. R. K.

PATTERSON, ROBERT (Jan. 12, 1792–Aug. 7, 1881), soldier, industrialist, was born in County Tyrone, Ireland, the eldest son of Francis and Ann (Graham) Patterson. His father took part in the Irish Rebellion in 1798, was sentenced to banishment, and came to America, settling on a farm in Delaware County, Pa. Robert received his early education in the public schools and at fifteen entered the counting house of Edward Thompson in Philadelphia. In the War of 1812, he served successively as captain, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel of Pennsylvania militia; lieutenant, 22nd United States Infantry; captain and deputy quartermaster-general, 32nd Infantry; and captain, 32nd Infantry, being mustered out in June 1815. He returned to Philadelphia and established himself as a grocer, becoming in time a commission merchant with connections in the South. He was married in 1817 to Sarah Ann Engle of Germantown, Pa., who died in 1875. They had eleven children, of whom five died in infancy. In 1835 he visited the upper Mississippi and Iowa, keeping a diary describing the country he saw. Excerpts from this diary were published under the title "Observations of an Early American Capitalist" in the *Journal of American History,* October-December 1907. At first a disciple of Thomas Jefferson, he was one of the five Colonel Pattersons (*North American,* Philadelphia, Dec. 8, 1912) who sat in the state convention of Democratic-Republicans that met at Harrisburg, Mar. 4, 1824, and by acclamation nominated Andrew Jackson for the presidency. He was commissioner of internal improvements in Pennsylvania in 1827; was twice a presidential elector; continued to be a Democrat in politics, but was opposed to free trade.

At the beginning of the Mexican War, he became a major-general of volunteers (July 7, 1846), commanded his division at Cerro Gordo, led the cavalry and advance brigades in the pursuit, and took Jalapa, for which he was honorably mentioned by General Scott. Upon his discharge from the federal service in July 1848, he returned to his business affairs, became prominent in the development of the sugar industry in Louisiana, acquired interests in sugar and cotton plantations, and eventually the ownership of some thirty cotton-mills in Pennsylvania. He was a promoter of the Pennsylvania Railroad and of steamship transportation between Philadelphia and other ports. From 1833 to 1867 he commanded a division of Pennsylvania militia. He was one of the original trustees of Lafayette College from 1825 to 1835 and again from 1874 to 1881, being president of the board from 1876 until his death.

At the beginning of the Civil War he was mustered into federal service, for three months, as a major-general of volunteers, and assigned to command the military department composed of Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, and the

District of Columbia. He crossed the Potomac on June 15, 1861, at Williamsport, Md. Again, on July 2, he crossed the river, pursuing General "Stonewall" Jackson, and on July 3, advanced to Martinsburg, W. Va. In the middle of July he was ordered to hold in check the forces under Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in the neighborhood of Winchester while General McDowell advanced in Virginia. The reason he gave for his failure to give battle to Johnston and to cooperate with McDowell in the battle of Bull Run was that General Scott did not send him the order to attack (*Narrative,* pp. 74–75). At the expiration of his commission, July 27, 1861, he was mustered out of federal service and returned to his business concerns in Philadelphia. After the war he published *A Narrative of the Campaign in the Valley of the Shenandoah in 1861* (1865). His son, Francis Engle Patterson, a brigadier-general of Pennsylvania volunteers, participated in the Peninsular campaign and was killed by the accidental discharge of his own pistol at Fairfax Court-House, Nov. 22, 1862. Robert Patterson died in Philadelphia and was buried in Laurel Hill Cemetery.

[M. V. Agnew, *The Book of the Agnews* (1926); *Niles' Weekly Reg.*, Mar.–Sept. 1824; *Phila. Inquirer,* Aug. 8–12, 1881; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); War Department records; "Report of Joint Committee on Conduct of the War," *Sen. Report No. 108* (vol. 3), 37 Cong., 3 Sess.; *North American* (Phila.), Dec. 8, 1912.] R. C. C—n.

PATTERSON, ROBERT MAYNE (July 17, 1832–Apr. 5, 1911), Presbyterian clergyman, editor, author, was born in Philadelphia and spent practically all his life in or near that city. His parents, John and Margaret (Mayne) Patterson, were natives of the north of Ireland who had come to America early in the eighteenth century. Robert graduated from the Central High School of Philadelphia in 1849, served as official reporter for the United States Senate, 1850–55, and for a time studied law. Turned to the ministry largely by the desire of his parents, he attended Princeton Theological Seminary, graduating in 1859. The same year he was ordained to the ministry by the Presbytery of Philadelphia. In the next forty-seven years he served only two churches as pastor—Great Valley Presbyterian Church, Chester County, Pa., 1859–67 and 1881–1906; and South Presbyterian Church, Philadelphia, 1867–81. His ministry was marked by acceptable preaching and faithful pastoral work. While he was in charge of South Church the membership greatly increased, a burdensome debt was paid, and the building was remodeled. During his second pastorate in Great Valley the church erected a new edifice. When, in 1906, ill health caused his retirement, he was made pastor emeritus, a distinction which he held until his death after a long illness, five years later.

The activity which made him most widely known was his editorship of two religious weeklies, *The Presbyterian,* as associate editor, 1870–80, and *The Presbyterian Journal,* as editor, 1880–93, each published at Philadelphia. His increasing familiarity with church laws and doctrines, which his articles and editorials disclosed, and the character of his many books led to his being called to take a prominent part in the deliberations of the Church throughout the country. In presbyteries and synods and in the General Assembly, his knowledge of ecclesiastical law was continually in demand. He was sent by his presbytery to thirteen sessions of the General Assembly. In 1880 he was a member of a special committee appointed to prepare a plan for consolidation of the synods and for enlargement of their powers; at different times he also served on six other special committees and commissions of the Assembly. He was a member of the Pan-Presbyterian Council at London in 1875; at Philadelphia in 1880; and at Belfast in 1884. For many years, also, he was one of the members of the Presbyterian Board of Publication and Sabbath School Work.

Of his books, which totaled nearly thirty, several were biographical, including *The Character of Abraham Lincoln* (1865), *Elijah, the Favored Man* (1880), and *William Blackwood* (1894); four were local or general church histories, culminating in *American Presbyterianism* (1896); a number were polemic; and most of the remainder dealt with Christian instruction and church methods, of which *Church Extension in Large Cities* appeared in 1880 and *The Angels and Their Ministrations* in 1900. He also edited Withrow's *Which Is the Apostolic Church?* (1874) and *The Second General Council of the Presbyterian Alliance* (1880). In 1861 he married Margaret Maclay Nourse, daughter of Rev. James Nourse, of Washington, Pa.; she died in 1863. His second wife was Rebecca Thomas Malin, daughter of Joseph Malin of Chester Valley, Pa., whom he married in 1867.

[*Necrological Reports and Ann. Proc. of the Alumni Asso. of Princeton Theological Sem.*, vol. IV (1919); W. S. Garner, *Biog. and Portrait Cyc. of Chester County, Pa.* (1893); *Who's Who in America,* 1912–13; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Apr. 6, 1911; two manuscripts in lib. of the hist. dept. of the Presbyterian Church, Phila., recording the actions of the Presbytery of Chester on Patterson's retirement (1906) and death (1911).] P. P. F.

PATTERSON, THOMAS HARMAN (May 10, 1820–Apr. 9, 1889), naval officer, was born

in New Orleans, La., the son of Daniel Todd Patterson [*q.v.*] and George Ann (Pollock) Patterson. He was appointed midshipman Apr. 5, 1836, and served first for seven months in the *Porpoise,* participating in coast survey work, and from 1837 to 1840 in the *Falmouth,* Pacific Squadron. Following a year at the naval school in Philadelphia he was made passed midshipman July 1, 1842, standing sixth in his class of thirty-six. He was at the Naval Observatory in 1843, and then spent a year in the West Indies on board the *Lawrence.* He served again in the coast survey from 1844 to 1848. Promotion to the rank of lieutenant came on June 23, 1849, just before a long Pacific cruise in the *Vandalia.* After his return in October 1852 he was assigned to special duty in Washington. Then followed a cruise in the *Jamestown,* African Squadron, from 1854 to 1857; two years at the Washington navy yard; and another African cruise in the *Mohican.* His Civil War service began in October 1861 when he sailed from Boston for Virginia waters in command of the gunboat *Chocura.* The *Chocura* was in the naval force which cooperated with McClellan during the Peninsular Campaign in the spring of 1862. It was the first gunboat to ascend the Pamunkey River to Whitehouse after the evacuation of Yorktown on May 4, and supported Gen. George Stoneman's advance at that point. Patterson was made commander July 16, 1862, and from June to October of that year he was senior officer in the York and Pamunkey rivers. From November 1862 to June 1865 he commanded the side-wheel gunboat *James Adger* on the southeast coast blockade. His ship assisted in cutting out the blockade-runner *Kate* under the Confederate batteries at New Inlet, N. C., on Aug. 1, 1863, and on Aug. 23 came under heavy fire near this point while destroying the beached vessel *Hebe* (D. D. Porter, *The Naval History of the Civil War,* 1886, p. 427). His captures of blockade-runners in this year included the *Cornubia,* on Nov. 8, the steamer *Robert E. Lee* with valuable arms and stores, on Nov. 9, and the schooner *Ella* on Nov. 26. He was senior officer of the off-shore blockade at Charleston from September 1864 to February 1865, and a month later operated with the convoy fleet in the Mariguana Passage in the West Indies. He was made captain July 22, 1866, commodore in 1871, and rear admiral in 1877. He commanded the *Brooklyn,* flagship of the Brazil Squadron from 1865 to 1867, and during the next ten years was assigned to various shore duties, being commandant of the Washington navy yard from 1873 to 1876. From 1878 to October 1880, he commanded the Asiatic Squadron, and was subsequently engaged in revising the naval regulations. Following his retirement on May 10. 1882, he made his home in Washington where his death occurred after more than three years of ill health. A classmate, Rear Admiral T. H. Stevens, described him as a man "of great dignity of manner and reticent . . . but to those who knew the warm heart beneath the cold exterior . . . of lovable nature, a constant, unswerving friend." He was married in Washington on Jan. 5, 1847, to Maria Montrésor Wainwright, daughter of Col. R. D. Wainwright, U. S. M. C., and had one daughter and four sons.

[L. R. Hamersly, *Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (4th ed., 1890); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Navy*), 1 ser. VI–XVI; *Washington Post,* Apr. 11, 1889; other material from family sources.] A. W.

PATTERSON, THOMAS MacDONALD (Nov. 4, 1839–July 23, 1916), lawyer, editor, senator, the third child and second son of James and Margaret (Mountjoy) Patterson, was born in County Carlow, Ireland. After the removal of the family to America when the boy was about ten years of age, he attended school in New York City and Astoria, L. I. In 1853 he went with his family to Crawfordsville, Ind., where he worked first in a printing office and then in his father's jewelry store. After a short term of service in the Civil War with the 11th Indiana Infantry, he enrolled, in 1862, in Indiana Asbury University (now De Pauw University), but transferred in the following year to Wabash College at Crawfordsville. Leaving in his junior year he began to study law in the office of M. D. White of Crawfordsville and was admitted to the bar in 1867. In 1872 he moved to Denver and soon won the reputation of being one of the best trial lawyers in the West. In 1874 he was made city attorney of Denver and later in the same year was elected, as a Democrat, territorial delegate from Colorado to the Forty-fourth Congress. Although his term of office did not begin until Mar. 4, 1875, he went to Washington in time to use his influence, especially with the Democratic members of Congress, to help secure the passage of the Colorado Enabling Act in the closing hours of the Forty-third Congress. At an election held in October 1876, after Colorado had been admitted to the Union, he was defeated by James B. Belford, Republican, for the unexpired term as representative in the Forty-fourth Congress, and also for the full term of the succeeding Congress. Denying the validity of the latter vote, Patterson ran again, but without opposition, at the regular time for Congres-

sional elections in November. The certificate of election was given to Belford, but Patterson challenged his seat and after a contest that attracted wide attention was seated by the House of Representatives (*Congressional Record*, 45 Cong., 2 Sess., pt. I, pp. 145 ff.).

Patterson was active in state and national councils of the Democratic party and was a delegate to the Democratic National conventions in 1876, 1888, and 1892. As a member of the Committee on Resolutions in the last of those conventions he brought in, singly, a minority report in favor of free silver. Voted down, he bolted the party and helped carry Colorado for the Populist candidate, James B. Weaver. He was a delegate to the Populist National Convention in 1896, and its permanent chairman in 1900. In 1901 he was elected to the United States Senate from Colorado by a combination of Democratic, Populist, and Silver-Republican votes. Although he affiliated with the Democratic party while in the Senate (1901–07), he refused to be bound by the instructions of the party caucus and vigorously asserted his right to independence of action as when, for example, he supported President Roosevelt's policies in the Morocco conference and the Santo Dominican treaty (*Congressional Record*, 59 Cong., 1 Sess., pt. II, pp. 1801–06; *Ibid.*, pt. III, pp. 2207 ff.). He was twice the unsuccessful Democratic candidate for governor of Colorado; in 1888 he was defeated by Job A. Cooper, and in 1914 by George A. Carlson. An important element in his political influence in Colorado was the *Rocky Mountain News*, in which he acquired an interest in 1890, and over which he assumed full control in 1892. Until he sold this newspaper in 1913 it was the principal means through which he carried on his crusades for such governmental reforms as the initiative, the referendum, and the direct primary, and against the corporations that, in his judgment, sought to exploit the public. Although rated a millionaire on account of the fees earned in a lucrative law practice and his shrewd purchases of Denver real estate, he was one of Labor's most outspoken champions in the West. He was versatile, dynamic, aggressive, militant, and domineering. He had strong convictions and expressed himself freely without regard to the consequences or effects on friends and associates. He had warm friends, ardent supporters, and bitter enemies. He was not always sound in his judgments or fair in his criticisms, but he was honest and sincere. He did much to free Colorado from corporate control and to put into the hands of the people the means of direct political action. His wife was Katherine Grafton of Watertown, N. Y., to whom he was married in 1863. He was survived by one daughter.

Patterson

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); J. C. Smiley, *Semi-Centennial Hist. of the State of Colo.* (1913), vol. II; W. F. Stone, *Hist. of Colo.*, vol. II (1918); *Cong. Record*, 65 Cong., 1 Sess., App., pp. 582–85; *Rocky Mountain News* and *Denver Post*, July 24, 1916.] C. B. G.

PATTERSON, WILLIAM (Nov. 1, 1752–July 7, 1835), merchant, was born at Fanad, County Donegal, Ireland, of Scotch-Irish farmer parents, William and Elizabeth (Peoples) Patterson. At the age of fourteen (1766) he was sent to Philadelphia to enter the counting-house of Samuel Jackson, an Irish shipping merchant. "This gave me," said Patterson sixty years later, "an early knowledge and attachment to that business, a passion that has followed me through life" (Scharf, *post*, pp. 482–83). In 1775, foreseeing an excellent sale for munitions in the rebellious colonies, he embarked all of his property in two vessels which went to France for these supplies, Patterson himself sailing in one of them. A single vessel returned, and, according to tradition, when it reached Philadelphia, the army of Washington, then before Boston, had not powder enough to fire one salute. On his way home Patterson tarried two years in the Dutch and French West Indies, which were the principal places of purchase and sale for the colonies. He was eighteen months at St. Eustatius, but finding the governor, Johannes de Graaff, unable to protect American interests, he moved to Martinique. He accumulated a fortune of more than $60,000, half of which he lost by British captures in a month; the remainder he brought to Baltimore (July 1778) in goods and gold.

He prospered from his first settlement in that city. It was his invariable rule to put half of his fortune into real estate, for he regarded "commerce in the shipping line as a hazardous and desperate game of chance" (Scharf, p. 483). If he lost in his shipping ventures his family (he had thirteen children, several of whom died in infancy) would thus have something to fall back upon, and heirs, furthermore, were not so apt to part with land as with securities. He was typical of the Baltimore merchant princes who increasingly in the next fifty years, as the business of American ports flourished, made the clipper schooner and brig, and later the clipper ship, famous around the world. He was one of the Baltimore merchants who supplied Lafayette with 10,000 guineas which were invested in supplies for the Yorktown campaign, and himself, as a member of the 1st Baltimore Cavalry, went to the peninsula. He was the first president of

the Bank of Maryland, established in 1790. In 1799 he was active in raising money to complete the fortification of Whetstone Point (Fort McHenry), gathered supplies for the defense of the place in 1814, and welcomed Lafayette there on his visit in 1824. On Christmas Eve, 1803, his daughter Elizabeth ("Betsey"), eighteen years of age, was married to the nineteen-year-old Jerome Bonaparte, young brother of the First Consul of France [see Elizabeth Patterson Bonaparte]. Her parents gave consent most reluctantly, and were prepared for the adamant opposition of Napoleon, which resulted in Betsey's abandonment by her husband at Lisbon in 1805, the annulment of the marriage by the French Senate, and a divorce by Maryland statute in 1812. Patterson said of his daughter that "she has caused me more anxiety . . . than all my other children put together, and her folly and misconduct has occasioned me a train of expense that first and last has cost me much money" (*Ibid.*, p. 488).

Patterson was one of the organizers of the Merchants' Exchange in Baltimore in 1815, gave two acres of land to the city for a park in 1827, and was one of the incorporators and first directors of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad in the same year. He took delight in riding on the first cars of the railroad, and was given the honor of being the first to cross the Patapsco viaduct, which was named for him. In 1828 he was one of the incorporators of the Canton Company, which has for a century been important in the commercial and industrial life of the city. One of his last public acts was to serve as vice-president of a meeting of Baltimore citizens which condemned the nullification ordinance of South Carolina in 1832. His wife, who died in 1814, was Dorcas Spear, a sister of the wife of Gen. Samuel Smith.

[Autobiographical introduction to Patterson's will in J. T. Scharf, *The Chronicles of Baltimore* (1874); F. A. Richardson and W. A. Bennett, *Baltimore: Past and Present* (1871); *Baltimore American and Daily Advertiser*, July 9, 1835; original receipt book of Patterson, most of the entries being for the decade 1780–90, in lib. of Peabody Institute, Baltimore; E. L. Didier, *The Life and Letters of Madame Bonaparte* (1879); D. M. Henderson, *The Golden Bees* (1928).]

B. M.

PATTIE, JAMES OHIO (1804–1850?), trapper, author, was born in Bracken County, Ky., the son of Sylvester Pattie. The main source of information regarding his father and himself is his dubious *Personal Narrative* (1831), edited (and perhaps largely written) by Timothy Flint. From Kentucky, he says, the family moved to Missouri in 1812. In July 1824, near the present Omaha, father and son joined Silvestre Pratte's Santa Fé expedition, which reached its destination Nov. 5. During the next three years the son, sometimes in company with his father, took part in a number of hazardous trapping journeys. Early in 1828, with his father and six others, he reached Santa Catalina Mission, in Lower California. All were arrested and taken to San Diego, where, according to Pattie, they were subjected to extreme brutalities by Governor Echeandía. Here, on Apr. 24, the elder Pattie died in prison. The son, with his companions, was released early in the following year, and in August 1830, by way of Mexico city, he arrived in Cincinnati. He is assumed to have filed a claim for damages in the Mexican capital, but a recent search (1933) of the papers in the United States Embassy there, as well as in the State Department in Washington, reveals no record of even a complaint by him.

The *Personal Narrative* appeared in the following year, though most of the copies extant bear the date of 1833. A plagiarized version, with the title, *The Hunters of Kentucky*, and purporting to record the adventures of one B. Bilson, was published in New York in 1847. The original text was reprinted as the eighteenth volume (1905) of *Early Western Travels*, with sparse and unsatisfactory annotations by R. G. Thwaites. It was again reprinted, with scanty annotations, by M. M. Quaife, in 1930.

From such knowledge as is available, the elder Pattie appears an estimable person. It is not unlikely, on the other hand, that the son was, as Bancroft characterized him, a conceited and quick-tempered boy with an exceptional capacity for making himself disagreeable. His book, an entertaining narrative of thrilling and painful adventures, has an assured place in frontier literature. It is, however, to be classed as semi-fiction rather than as history. On matters that can be tested by authentic records it usually proves inaccurate as to dates, names, and localities, and it is frequently erroneous, if not untruthful, as to events. Nathaniel M. Pryor, one of Pattie's companions, pronounced it mostly false. Of the later life of Pattie little is known. He is said to have attended Augusta College and to have made his home for many years in the nearby town of Dover. In 1849 he joined the gold rush and appears to have visited San Diego. At some time in the following winter he was at William Waldo's camp in the Sierra, and left there during a spell of tempestuous weather. He was never heard of again.

[See William Waldo, "Recollections of a Septuagenarian," *Mo. Hist. Colls.*, vols. II, III (1880); S. C. Foster, "A Sketch of Some of the Earliest Ky. Pio-

neers of Los Angeles," *Pubs. Hist. Soc. of Southern Cal.*, vol. I, pt. 3 (1887); H. R. Wagner, *The Plains and the Rockies* (1921). The parts of the *Personal Narrative* relating to California are summarized by H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.*, vol. III (1885), with critical comment based on Mexican records. Fresh light on the unveracity of Pattie is given by C. L. Camp, "The Chronicles of Geo. C. Yount," *Cal. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, Apr. 1923; and by J. J. Hill, "Ewing Young in the Fur Trade of the Southwest," *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.*, Mar. 1923. A more favorable view of Pattie appears in R. G. Cleland, *A Hist. of Cal.: The American Period* (1922).] W. J. G.

PATTISON, GRANVILLE SHARP (*c.* 1791–Nov. 12, 1851), anatomist, was the youngest son of John Pattison of Kelvin Grove, Glasgow. He was probably educated at the University of Glasgow. At the age of eighteen he was chosen assistant to Allan Burns, the well-known Scotch anatomist, and later succeeded him in the chair of anatomy, physiology, and surgery in the Andersonian Institution. Here he made for himself a reputation as an interesting lecturer and successful teacher. In 1819, on a hint of the possibility of his being called to the chair of anatomy in the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, he came to the United States. Before sailing he was made a member of the Medico-Chirurgical Society of London and a fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons. Disappointed in his hope of obtaining the professorship at the University of Pennsylvania, he gave a series of private lectures on anatomy in Philadelphia which attracted wide attention. He also published, in 1820, *Experimental Observations on the Operation of Lithotomy.* This brought him notoriety, arousing one of the bitter controversies so often waged by anatomists at that time. In the midst of the controversy he challenged his opponent, Dr. Nathaniel Chapman, professor of the theory and practice of medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, to a duel. Chapman refused the challenge in a famous note. Pattison then posted him "as a liar, a coward, and a scoundrel." Chapman's brother-in-law, Gen. Thomas Cadwalader, accepted the challenge and received a ball in his "pistol arm," which was disabled for the rest of his life. A ball passed through the skirt of Pattison's coat near the waistline. In 1821 he published *A Refutation of Certain Calumnies Published in a Pamphlet Entitled, "Correspondence between Mr. Granville Sharp Pattison and Dr. Nathaniel Chapman."*

In the midst of the controversy, 1820, Pattison was invited to the chair of anatomy, physiology, and surgery at the University of Maryland in Baltimore. While here, 1824, he edited the second edition of Allan Burns's *Observations on the Surgical Anatomy of the Head and Neck.* In 1826 he resigned his professorship at Baltimore and returned to England, where he was appointed professor of anatomy in the newly organized University of London, now University College. There was serious lack of discipline in the institution, and Pattison made the attempt to control his class. The students rebelled and Wakeley, the editor of the *Lancet* (London), intervened. As a result, Pattison was dismissed from the chair on July 23, 1831. The following year he was invited to the professorship of anatomy at the Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, where he acquired the reputation of being the most successful teacher in his subject in the country. He brought great prestige to the new school. Nine years later, on the reorganization of the medical department of the University of the City of New York, he was invited to the chair of anatomy and continued to occupy this position until his death. Gross, in his biographical sketch of him, remarks: "It is no exaggeration to say that no anatomical teacher of his day, either in Europe or in this country, enjoyed a higher reputation" (*post*, II, 257). He devoted himself faithfully to the demonstration of visceral and surgical anatomy and gave very practical lessons in applying knowledge of the subject to the diagnosis and treatment of diseases, accidents, and operations. He was a very popular teacher, for the students felt that they were always securing knowledge that could be applied in the practice of medicine. He spared no pains to arrange clever demonstrations and his teaching produced a deep and lasting impression. He was an editor of the *Register and Library of Medical and Surgical Science* (Washington, 1833–36) and co-editor of the *American Medical Library and Intelligencer* (Philadelphia, 1836).

In addition to his professional work, he was much interested in music and was a leader in the group of music lovers who arranged the production of grand opera in New York City. He was very fond of hunting and fishing, and is said to have been somewhat indolent, for which reason, perhaps, he did not leave more definite remains of his work behind him. He died in New York, survived by his wife.

[S. D. Gross, *Autobiog.* (2 vols., 1887); F. P. Henry, *Hist. of Medicine in Phila.* (1897); Bardeen, *Encyc. of Am. Medic. Biog.* (1912); J. J. Walsh, *Hist. of Medicine in N. Y.* (5 vols., 1919); autobiographical material in *Refutation . . .* (1821), mentioned above; *N. Y. Jour. of Medicine and the Collateral Sciences*, Jan. 1852; *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*; *Gentleman's Mag.*, London, Jan. 1852; *N. Y. Herald*, Nov. 13, 1851.] J. J. W.

PATTISON, JAMES WILLIAM (July 14, 1844–May 29, 1915), painter, writer, lecturer, was born in Boston, Mass. His father was the

Pattison

Rev. Robert Everett Pattison, who taught in various places and twice (1836–39, 1854–57) held the presidency of Colby College at Waterville, Me. His mother was Frances Wilson, of a well-known New England family. At nineteen he enlisted in the 57th Massachusetts Volunteers and served until August 1865. He was at Petersburg during the siege and sent from there and elsewhere letters and illustrative drawings to *Harper's Weekly,* thus beginning his artistic career. After the war he studied art in New York City under James M. Hart, R. Swain Gifford, and George Inness, then he joined his brother, Everett W. Pattison, in St. Louis, where he opened a studio. He also taught drawing (1868–69, 1872–73), at Mary Institute, a school for girls at Washington University. Here he met and married, in 1871, Elizabeth Abbott Pennell, the daughter of the president of the Institute, Calvin S. Pennell. For a time he shared his studio with William M. Chase [*q.v.*], who became his lifelong friend.

In St. Louis, Pattison began lecturing on art, and the interest he aroused in this way and through other channels bore fruit in the establishment of the City Museum of Art. From 1873 to 1879 he was in Europe, first at Düsseldorf, where he studied with Albert Flamm, then in Paris, where he worked under Luigi Chialiva. In Düsseldorf his wife died, and in 1876 he married Helen Searle, a well-known painter of Rochester, N. Y. He and his artist wife both exhibited in the Paris Salons of 1879, 1880, and 1881, and their home at Ecouen became a rendezvous for painters, writers, and other interesting persons. On account of the ill health of his wife, Pattison returned to America and after a brief sojourn in New York took up residence in the flat country of Illinois. From 1884 to 1896 he was director of the School of Fine Arts at Jacksonville, Ill. In the latter year he became faculty lecturer at the Art Institute of Chicago and removed his home and studio to Park Ridge. He was president of the Chicago Society of Artists, and for many years secretary of the Municipal Art League, and a member of the Society of Western Artists, Cliff Dwellers, and National Arts Club. From 1910 to 1914 he edited the *Fine Arts Journal* of Chicago and for a much longer time contributed weekly "Art Talks" to the *Chicago Journal.* He was also the author of a book, *Painters Since Leonardo* (1904). For several years he lectured on the history of art at Rockford College.

His activities as secretary of the Municipal Art League were not only widespread but beneficent. Through his writings in the newspaper, his lectures in schools and clubs in Chicago and other cities of the Middle West, through competitions and the coördination of effort, he was influential in awakening the consciousness of the public to beauty and civic improvement. Believing that the best way to educate people was to show them good things, he used extensively stereopticon slides, made from photographs he himself had taken or collected in Europe and America for the purpose. He was a member of the Chicago Plan Commission. His efforts were appreciated keenly by his fellow workers. His colleague, Walter Marshall Clute, said of him: "The part he is playing in the cultivation of a better art appreciation and civic pride, in making Chicago a more beautiful place to live in, is no small one," adding, "Mr. Pattison in the development and exercise of his art has worked in a great variety of mediums, handling with equal facility water color or oils, pencil or crayon or charcoal—even the witchery of the etching needle has not escaped him."

At the same time that Pattison was teaching, writing, and lecturing, he was also a productive artist. His paintings were shown at the National Academy of Design and in the annual exhibitions of the American Water Color Society, New York; in the Pennsylvania Academy, Philadelphia, and in the Art Institute of Chicago. His awards included a medal from the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanics' Association, Boston, 1881; and a bronze medal, St. Louis Exposition, 1904. One of his best works, a painting entitled "Tranquility," is owned by the Municipal Art League of Chicago, which includes also in its permanent collection a portrait of him by Louis Betts. Pattison as remembered by his friends was tall, slender, and distinguished in appearance, a charming conversationalist, and an able speaker. In 1905 (his second wife having died) he married Hortense Roberts of Columbia, Tenn. Two daughters were born of this marriage. In 1914 because of his failing health the family went to North Carolina to live. He died at Asheville in 1915.

[W. M. Clute, "Jas. Wm. Pattison," *Sketch Book,* May 1906; *Biog. Record of the Alumni of Amherst Coll., 1821–71* (1883); *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; *Am. Art Annual,* vol. XII (1915); *Proc. First Ann. Convention of the Am. Federation of Arts* (1910); *Am. Art News,* June 12, 1915; *N. Y. Times,* May 30, 1915; *Charlotte Daily Observer,* May 31, 1915; information from Miss Lena McCauley of the *Chicago Herald* and from members of Pattison's family.]

L. M.

PATTISON, JOHN M. (June 13, 1847–June 18, 1906), congressman, governor of Ohio, was born near Owensville, Clermont County, Ohio, the son of Mary (Duckwall) and William Patti-

son, a country merchant. His middle initial, which represented no name, was added by himself some time early in life. As a boy he became a clerk in his father's store, and he worked on neighboring farms. In 1864 he joined the 153rd Ohio Volunteer Infantry. At the close of the Civil War he entered Ohio Wesleyan University, from which he graduated in 1869. In order to maintain himself while attending college he taught school and worked in the harvest fields in the summer. Upon graduation he took an agency in Bloomington, Ill., for the Union Central Life Insurance Company, of which he afterward became the head. As the insurance business did not appeal to him at that time he returned to Ohio and studied law in the office of Alfred Yaple of Cincinnati. After his admission to the bar in 1872 he became a member of the law firm of Yaple, Moos & Pattison. For a while he was attorney for the Cincinnati & Marietta Railroad but severed his connection with that corporation from a sense of duty to his constituency, when he was elected in 1873 to the state legislature. He declined renomination and returned to the practice of his profession. From 1874 to 1876 he was attorney for the committee of safety of Cincinnati, a non-partisan organization for civic welfare. On Dec. 10, 1879, he was married to Aletheia Williams of Delaware, Ohio. In 1881 he was elected vice-president and manager of the Union Central Life Insurance Company and in 1891 became president of the company. Under his able management the business of the company was greatly increased owing to his compelling personality, executive capacity, and ability as an organizer.

In 1890, against his personal wishes, he was nominated to fill a vacancy in the state Senate for the Clermont-Brown district. As the redistribution of the congressional districts that was about to be made would determine the complexion of Ohio representation in Congress, his campaign attracted national attention. He was elected and received the largest vote ever given to a candidate for state office in his own county of Clermont. From 1891 to 1893 he was a member of Congress but was an unsuccessful candidate for reëlection. In Congress he helped to obtain one of the first appropriations for rural free delivery. In 1905 he was nominated on the Democratic ticket for governor and after a spirited campaign against Gov. Myron T. Herrick was elected by a majority of 40,000, while the Republican associates of the retiring governor were elected by similar majorities. His victory was a personal achievement, but the strain of the campaign was too great for his health. He lived for five months after his inauguration but was so ill

the whole time that practically his only political act was his inaugural address. He died at his home in Milford, survived by his second wife, Anna (Williams) Pattison, the sister of his first wife.

[*Biog. Directory Am. Cong.* (1928); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Biog. Cyc. and Portrait Gallery of . . . Ohio*, vol. V (1895); T. E. Powell, *The Democratic Party in . . . Ohio* (2 vols. 1913); *Cincinnati Enquirer*, June 19, 1906; information concerning his middle initial from his daughter, Aletheia Eliza Pattison, Cincinnati.]

R. C. McG.

PATTISON, ROBERT EMORY (Dec. 8, 1850–Aug. 1, 1904), lawyer, statesman, was born at Quantico, Md., the son of the Rev. Robert H. Pattison and Catherine (Woolford) Pattison. Before 1860 the family moved to Philadelphia as the elder Pattison had been appointed to the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church. The son received his education in the public schools of that city, graduating from the Central High School as valedictorian of his class in 1870. He immediately registered as a law student in the office of Lewis C. Cassidy and on Sept. 28, 1872, was admitted to the Philadelphia bar. After two unsuccessful attempts to obtain office he was on the point of surrendering his political ambitions when Cassidy, who was the leader of a Democratic faction in Philadelphia, suggested that he become the Democratic candidate for city controller on a reform platform. He was elected to this office on Nov. 7, 1877, and three years later was reëlected. On his record in this office he was made Democratic nominee for governor of Pennsylvania in 1882 and was elected by a plurality of 40,202 over his Republican opponent, Gen. James A. Beaver. He was inaugurated on Jan. 16, 1883. His administration was committed to economy and reform and to strong executive action in reducing the state debt and in holding corporations, particularly railroads and canal companies, to a strict obedience to the constitution and the law. Upon the expiration of his term as governor he was ineligible for reëlection and returned to Philadelphia to resume his law practice. In July 1887 he was elected president of the Chestnut Street National Bank and devoted a considerable part of his time to the management of this institution.

In March 1887 President Cleveland tendered Pattison the auditorship of the United States Treasury but he declined the office. Shortly afterward, however, he accepted an appointment as a member of the United States Pacific Railway Commission, authorized by Congress to investigate the "books, accounts and methods of railroads which have received aid from the United States." He was made chairman of the com-

mission and entered upon his active duties on Apr. 15, 1887. He wrote the minority report of the commission which stands today as one of the most valuable contributions to the financial history of the land-grant railroads (*Report of the Commission . . . of the United States Pacific Railway Commission,* 10 vols. in 5, 1887). In 1890, after an aggressive campaign, he was again elected governor of Pennsylvania by a majority of 16,554 over his Republican opponent, George W. Delamater, for the term extending from Jan. 20, 1891, to Jan. 15, 1895. In his second administration he stressed the policies which had characterized his first tenure of the office and urged the reduction of taxation and reforms in municipal government. On retiring from office he resumed the practice of law in Philadelphia and shortly afterward was elected president of the Security Trust and Life Insurance Company, which position he held until his death. In 1902 he was again Democratic nominee for governor but was defeated. He took an active interest in church work, being a lay delegate to the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1884 and in 1888; fraternal delegate to the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South in 1890; and delegate to the Second Methodist Ecumenical Council in 1891. He was a member of the board of trustees of American University and of Dickinson College. On Dec. 28, 1872, he married Anna Barney Smith and they had three children. He died in Philadelphia, Pa.

[H. M. Jenkins, ed., *Pa. Colonial and Federal* (1903), vol. II; G. P. Donehoo, *Pa., A Hist.* (1926), vol. III; A. K. McClure, *Old Time Notes of Pa.* (1905), vol. II; J. H. Martin, *Martin's Bench and Bar of Phila.* (1883); the *Press* (Phila.), and *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Aug. 2, 1904.]

J. H. F.

PATTISON, THOMAS (Feb. 8, 1822–Dec. 17, 1891), naval officer, was born in Troy, N. Y., the son of Elias Pattison, who owned a large line of freight steamers on the Hudson, and Olivia (Gardiner) Pattison. On his father's side he was descended from Robert Pattison, who came from Ireland to Colerain, Mass., before the Revolution, and on his mother's side from George Gardiner, who settled in Rhode Island in 1638. He was appointed midshipman Mar. 2, 1839, and shortly thereafter sailed in the *St. Louis* on a Pacific cruise which lasted until December 1842. After taking short leave at home, he was assigned to a rigging loft in Boston, and then to the naval school at Philadelphia where he remained until he was promoted to passed midshipman in July 1845. During the Mexican War he served in the steamers *Scorpion* and *Princeton,* the frigates *Raritan* and *Cumberland,* the ordnance ship *Electra,* and the gunboat *Reefer.* He was on coast survey duty from 1850 to 1851, and then went to the China station as sailing master in the sloop *Portsmouth,* being promoted during the cruise to the rank of lieutenant. From 1855 to 1857 he was stationed at Boston on shore duty. While doing service in the Far East on the side-wheeler *Mississippi,* Pattison witnessed the bombardment of the Pei-ho River forts by the French and British in May 1858. A few months later he had occasion to escort from Simoda to Tokio the first American minister to Japan, Townsend Harris [*q.v.*]. It is presumably on the basis of this visit or some slightly earlier official entry that Pattison is said to have been the first American naval officer to enter Tokio.

After duty at the Sacketts Harbor naval station, N. Y., he began his service in the Civil War as executive of the sloop *Perry,* which captured the privateer *Savannah* off Charleston on June 3, 1861. As this was the first privateer taken, the capture drew from Secretary Welles a commendatory letter to officers and crew (*War of the Rebellion: Official Records, Navy,* 1 ser. I, 30). During the next autumn he commanded the steamer *Philadelphia* of the Potomac flotilla and twice in October was engaged with Confederate batteries along the river. From Dec. 17, 1861, he commanded the steamer *Sumter* on the southeast coast blockade, and was senior officer at Fernandina, Fla., during the summer and autumn of 1862. Early in 1863 he was ordered to the *Clara Dolson* of Porter's Mississippi Squadron, and from Mar. 12, 1863, until July 1, 1865, he was commandant of the naval station established in the former Confederate base at Memphis, Tenn. He had been made lieutenant commander July 16, 1862, was advanced to commander Mar. 3, 1865, and received subsequent promotions to the rank of captain in 1870, commodore in 1877, and rear admiral Nov. 1, 1883, three months before his retirement. His sea commands after the war were the *Muscota* of the Atlantic Squadron from 1866 to 1867, the *Richmond,* which he commanded in the West Indies and then took to the Pacific coast in 1872, and the *Saranac* of the Pacific Squadron in 1874. He commanded the receiving ship *Independence* at San Francisco from 1874 to 1877, the naval station at Port Royal, S. C., 1878–80, and the Washington navy yard, 1880–83. He died at New Brighton, Staten Island, N. Y., where he had made his home after retirement. His wife was Serafina Catalina Webster of Cuba, whom he married in Washington, D. C., July 1, 1850. His only child, Maria Webster, married John Randle of New York.

[*War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Navy)*, 1 ser., vols. XXIV–XXVII; L. R. Hamersly, *Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (4th ed. 1890); W. F. Gragg, *A Cruise in the U. S. Steam Frigate Mississippi* (1860); H. F. Andrews, *The Hamlin Family* (1900); W. H. Webster and M. R. Webster, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Gov. John Webster Family of Conn.* (1915); *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 19, 1891.]

A. W.

PATTON, FRANCIS LANDEY (Jan. 22, 1843–Nov. 25, 1932), president of Princeton University, Presbyterian clergyman and theologian, was born at "Carberry Hill," Warwick, Bermuda, the son of George John Bascombe and Mary Jane (Steele) Patton. He learned to read when he was three years old and commenced Latin at the age of seven. After attending Warwick Academy and a grammar school in Toronto he continued his education at Knox College and at the University of Toronto, and then entered Princeton Theological Seminary, from which he graduated in 1865. That same year he was ordained to the Presbyterian ministry, and on Oct. 10, married Rosa Antoinette, daughter of the Rev. J. M. Stevenson, of New York.

During the next sixteen years he obtained a wide experience as preacher, lecturer, and writer for the religious press, and an acquaintance with several chief centers of population in the United States. He was pastor of the Eighty-fourth Street Presbyterian Church in New York, 1865 to 1867; of a church in Nyack, N. Y., 1867 to 1870; of South Church, Brooklyn, 1871; he was Cyrus H. McCormick Professor of Didactic and Polemical Theology at the Presbyterian Theological Seminary of the Northwest (now McCormick Seminary), in Chicago, 1872 to 1881; was pastor of the Jefferson Park Church, Chicago, 1874 to 1881; and edited *The Interior*, a Presbyterian paper, from 1873 to 1876. In 1878 he was chosen to represent America at the Pan-Presbyterian Council in Edinburgh, and was moderator of the General Assembly which met at Saratoga. A year later he was offered a professorship at the Presbyterian Theological College in London, but declined it. In 1881 he returned to Princeton Theological Seminary to occupy a chair founded specially for him by Robert L. Stuart [*q.v.*], which bore the comprehensive name, Professorship of the Relations of Philosophy and Science to the Christian Religion. He was also lecturer on ethics in the College of New Jersey (1883–84), and gave a course on theism to undergraduates. In 1884 he was elected to a college professorship of ethics, and in 1886 was appointed professor of ethics in the seminary also.

When, in 1888, Patton was chosen to follow James McCosh [*q.v.*] as president of the college, he was widely known as a witty and eloquent speaker, a distinguished exponent of theism, and an expert defender of Christian ethics. Whether, in addition to these qualifications and his general character as a man of delightful personal charm, broad classical culture, extensive reading, and humane sympathies, he possessed, or could acquire, the business ability and the specific insight into educational problems which were expected of a college president was uncertain. In the opinion of many of the alumni and friends of the college, moreover, he was handicapped by the fact that in his Chicago days he had been active as prosecutor in the heresy trial which resulted in the withdrawal of the Rev. David Swing [*q.v.*] from the Presbyterian ministry. The college at Princeton was not a sectarian institution, and many felt that the long succession of ministerial presidents should now be broken. Patton was not, at that time, either by training or by reputation the business man whom some desired, nor the man of science or of political experience whom others wished to see made president. He soon demonstrated, however, that, as he declared a college president ought, he knew "an interest-coupon from a railway-ticket" and was "able to understand a balance-sheet as well as to grade an examination-paper" (*Speech, post*, p. 6). From the start his administration was marked by financial success. On the other hand he did not give up for a moment his interest in theology and his belief that education should include religious instruction. "Princeton is too big to be sectarian," he said, ". . . but we mean that . . . he [the student] who comes to us shall have the universe opened to his view and that he shall deal with its facts and the problems of life under theistic conceptions" (*Ibid.*, p. 5).

In no respect did Patton show more tact and foresight than in the important and delicate task of selecting teachers for appointment or promotion. He acted upon the principle that a teacher's personality is more important than the length of his specific preparation and his possession of degrees. With the able assistance of Dean James O. Murray [*q.v.*], Dean Samuel R. Winans, and a faculty devoted to the college's advancement, he managed its internal affairs successfully, but in a manner that would seem amazingly unsystematic to the head of a great institution today. He had no office except his private library; he employed no secretary or stenographer. His dealing with members of the faculty was direct and personal, yet without secrecy or caballing. He continued to lecture on ethics to the senior class and preached in chapel on many Sundays of the academic year, his sermons being of that original and vital kind which exhaust the speak-

er while refreshing the hearer. He also conducted daily morning prayers when his other engagements permitted. Thus were the fears of the alumni allayed, and it was not long before he had their enthusiastic support and affectionate regard. His extraordinary felicity as an after-dinner speaker and as Princeton's representative on public occasions awakened their pride and won their loyalty. His figure was graceful, his countenance refined, his manner courteous and gentle, characteristics which made the keenness of his wit and his extraordinary command of legal terms and logical distinctions to appear the more remarkable. It was soon realized that he was a worthy successor of those other British subjects, John Witherspoon and James McCosh, who had brought strength and honor to Princeton.

From the beginning of his administration the requirements for admission to the faculty were altered. Up to that time a large proportion of the appointees had been ministers, without much special training for the teaching profession; thereafter, appointments were normally given to men who had done graduate work in specific fields, abroad or in America. To make room for the teaching of new subjects and the activities of new men, the curriculum of undergraduate studies was expanded by the introduction of elective courses at the expense of those previously required. At Princeton, as at other colleges, the evils inherent in the new system were experienced, but before the end of Patton's term of office these were in some measure corrected, and a plan of coördination of courses and of reasonable restriction in the choice of electives was formed.

In 1896, the 150th anniversary of its founding, the College of New Jersey changed its name to Princeton University and marked the event by a sesquicentennial celebration. One of the delegates whispered, a little maliciously, that from being the strongest American college, Princeton had become the weakest university. During the remaining years of Patton's administration much was done to remove the sting of this remark. He made it clear to trustees, faculty, and alumni that the essential functions of the university were to give instruction in the liberal arts and sciences and to provide facilities for the increase of knowledge, and with their cooperation he strengthened and reorganized the graduate school and vastly increased the instruments of research. Six new dormitories, an auditorium, a new library building, and new houses for the literary societies were erected in his administration. "From this period," writes Mr. V. L. Collins, "may be dated the modern development of the campus, the introduction of the English collegiate gothic into American university architecture, the opening of the School of Electrical Engineering, the introduction of new entrance requirements, and the revision of the course of study along lines which were to be perfected in the next administration, the stiffening of the requirements for the higher degrees, the adoption of the honor system in the conduct of examinations . . . and the grant of alumni representation on the board of trustees" (*post*, p. 252). The number of undergraduates rose from 603 to 1354, and of the faculty from 40 to 100.

Although so eminently successful, Patton was not fond of administrative work, and in June 1902, he surprised even his intimate friends by resigning the presidency and nominating Woodrow Wilson to take his place, retaining, however, for twelve years longer the professorship of ethics and the philosophy of religion. Almost immediately after his resignation, in 1902, he was made president of Princeton Theological Seminary, which for nearly a century had had no formal head. This position he held till 1913, when, after a short interval, he withdrew to his old home in Bermuda. He returned every year, however, until near the end of his life, to lecture in Princeton and elsewhere. In his last years he was blind.

He published in 1869 a book entitled *The Inspiration of the Scriptures*, and in 1898 *A Summary of Christian Doctrine*. His chief literary production is *Fundamental Christianity*, dedicated to his wife and published in 1926, soon after the sixtieth anniversary of their marriage. In this volume can be found the substance of many of his lectures, though one misses much of the imaginative gleam and witty sword-play that accompanied their delivery. He died in Bermuda in his ninetieth year. His wife and three of their seven children survived him.

[V. L. Collins, *Princeton* (1914); *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, Jan. 1933; *Biog Cat. Princeton Theol. Sem.* (1933); *Speech of Prof. Francis L. Patton . . . at the Ann. Dinner of the Princeton Club of N. Y., on Mar. 15, 1888* (1888); *Who's Who in America*, 1932–33; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 27, 1932; *Princeton Alumni Weekly*, Apr. 25, 1930, Feb. 13, 1931, Dec. 2, 1932.]

G. M. H.

PATTON, JOHN MERCER (Aug. 10, 1797–Oct. 29, 1858), lawyer and statesman, was born at Fredericksburg, Va., the third of eight children of Robert and Anne Gordon (Mercer) Patton. His father, a Scotsman who had emigrated to Virginia prior to the Revolution, made a competent fortune in business. His maternal grandfather, also Scotch, was Gen. Hugh Mercer [*q.v.*]. After studying a year at Princeton, Patton entered the medical school of the University

of Pennsylvania from which he graduated in 1818. He did not practise, however, but returned to Fredericksburg and studied law. Admitted to the bar he began the practice of his second profession in which he soon achieved recognition. On Jan. 8, 1824, he married Margaret French Williams, daughter of Isaac Hite and Lucy Coleman (Slaughter) Williams of Frederick County. Six years later he was sent to Congress to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Philip P. Barbour and was returned in 1831. Although elected as a Democrat he pursued an independent course. But in the controversy which raged over Jackson's withdrawal of deposits from the Bank, he vigorously supported the President. When a copy of the resolutions of the Virginia Assembly disapproving Jackson's action was transmitted by Gov. John Floyd to Patton, he was unyielding and rebuked the Governor for officially intimating the desirability of a different course.

Although successively reëlected to Congress without opposition, Patton resigned in 1838. Removing to Richmond he resumed the practice of law, but public service still claimed him and with both Whig and Democratic support he was elected to the Executive Council or Council of State of Virginia. Unopposed, he was reëlected to this office four times and in 1841, as senior councilor, became acting governor for a brief period following the resignation of Gov. Thomas Walker Gilmer. But the law proved a jealous mistress and Patton's interest in politics waned. On several occasions he declined to be a candidate for public office, but in 1855 he allowed his name to be presented to the electorate for the office of attorney-general of Virginia on the American or Know-Nothing ticket, not because he was eager for the place but because of its relation to his profession. Always independent politically he was attracted strongly by the Know-Nothing movement and in the campaign he declared his firm opposition to the slightest control over Americans by any foreign power, religious or temporal. Defeated in the election he devoted his remaining years to his work at the Richmond bar, of which he was the acknowledged leader. In 1854 he was appointed to the Board of Visitors of the Medical College of Virginia, in Richmond, on which he served as president until his death in 1858. Patton's greatest achievement, perhaps, was the revision of the Virginia code. With Conway Robinson he was appointed in 1846 to revise and digest the civil code of Virginia; the next year revision of the criminal code also was placed in their hands. Systematically and thoroughly prepared, their *Code of Virginia* (1849) was far superior to all previous revisions and, modified only by constitutional and statutory changes, it remained the code of Virginia until 1873. Although Patton died before the Civil War he left six sons who served in the Confederate army.

[H. W. Flournoy, ed., *Calendar of Va. State Papers*, vol. X (1892); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); R. A. Brock, *Va. and Virginians* (1888), vol. I; T. K. Cartmell, *Shenandoah Valley Pioneers and Their Descendants* (1909); W. A. Christian, *Richmond: Her Past and Present* (1912); J. T. Goolrick, *The Life of Gen. Hugh Mercer* (1906); W. E. Ross, "Hist. of Va. Codification," *Va. Law Reg.*, June 1905; J. M. Patton, *Speech of Hon. John Mercer Patton at the African Ch. Tuesday Night Apr. 3* (1855); *Daily Richmond Enquirer*, Nov. 1, 1858; *Daily Nat. Intelligencer* (Wash., D. C.), Nov. 3, 1858.]

T. S. C.

PATTON, WILLIAM (Aug. 23, 1798–Sept. 9, 1879), clergyman and author, was the third son of Col. Robert Patton, who was of Scotch-Irish ancestry, and had come to America when a young man. He had served under Lafayette in the American Revolution, and for more than twenty years, until his death in 1814, was postmaster of Philadelphia. William's mother was Cornelia (Bridges) Patton, who traced her ancestry to the Culpeper and Fairfax families of Virginia and England. She died when William was eight years old. He united at the age of eighteen with the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia, his native city, graduated at Middlebury College in 1818, and studied several months in Princeton Theological Seminary (1819–20). In 1819 he married Mary Weston. After being ordained to the ministry in 1820 by the Congregational Association of Vermont, he removed to New York City, the home of his wife. Impelled by a missionary spirit, he gathered together the members who constituted his first church, the Central Presbyterian, and served it several years without salary.

His pulpit and business ability led to his being called in 1833 to the secretaryship of the Central American Education Society. During the next four years he recruited the ministry and raised money for educational purposes, but in 1837 returned to the pastorate. At Spring Street Presbyterian Church he won much success in revival work, in persuading young men to enter the ministry, and particularly in influencing children. Apparently the first to propose that a Presbyterian theological seminary be established in New York City, Patton in 1836 became one of the four ministerial founders of Union Seminary, and served as a director from the beginning until 1849, and as instructor or "professor extraordinary" for three years. His last pastorate, begun in 1848, was at Hammond Street Congregational Church, New York, a new enterprise initiated by some of his close friends. Financial

difficulties compelled the organization, in spite of increasing membership, to surrender its property in 1852.

During the remaining twenty-seven years of his life his home was in or near New Haven, Conn., and his time was devoted largely to supplying pulpits and to the literary work begun early in his career. In 1834 he had recast a British commentary, Thomas Williams' *Cottage Bible and Family Expositor,* making it substantially a new work. More than 170,000 copies of it were sold in America. In collaboration with Thomas Hastings, he published *The Christian Psalmist* (1839), a hymn book which for a time had a wide circulation, and he prepared British editions of *Edwards on Revivals* (1839) and of C. G. Finney's *Lectures on Revivals of Religion* (1835). Between 1825 and 1879 he made fourteen voyages to Europe, partly on account of his health, which until middle age was precarious. Ambitious to inform Britain of the true spirit of America, in 1861 he wrote articles for English dailies explaining the anti-slavery background of the Civil War, and published in London a pamphlet, *The American Crisis; or, The True Issue, Slavery or Liberty.* In England, as in the United States, he constantly attacked slavery and the alcoholic traffic. He proposed and attended the meeting at London in 1846 which organized the Evangelical Alliance for promoting Christian union and religious liberty throughout the world. During his New Haven days he published additional books, including *The Judgment of Jerusalem Predicted in Scripture, Fulfilled in History* (1877) and *Bible Principles Illustrated by Bible Characters* (1879).

From 1830 to 1870 he was a member of the executive committee of the American Home Missionary Society, and at his death, in New Haven, he left legacies to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, to the American Missionary Association in Aid of the Freedmen, and to Howard University, whose president was his son, Rev. William Weston Patton. Of his ten children, five died early, the survivors being two sons and three daughters. The mother of them all was Mary (Weston) Patton, who died in 1857. In 1860 he married Mrs. Mary (Shaw) Bird of Philadelphia, whose death occurred in 1863. His third wife, whom he married in 1864, was Mrs. Emily (Trowbridge) Hayes.

[W. W. Patton, *A Filial Tribute* (1880); Jonathan Greenleaf, *A Hist. of the Churches of All Denominations in the City of N. Y.* (1850); G. L. Prentiss, *The Union Theol. Sem. in the City of N. Y.* (1889); *Gen. Cat. of the Union Theol. Sem.* (1926); and *Necrological Reports and Ann. Proc. of the Alumni Asso. of Princeton Theol. Sem.*, vol. I (1891); *New Haven Evening Register,* Sept. 10, 1879.]

P. P. F.

PAUGER, ADRIEN de (d. June 9, 1726), engineer of the French colony of Louisiana and the first surveyor of the original town of New Orleans, was a native of France. About all that can be said definitely about him prior to his coming to Louisiana is that he was appointed engineer in 1707 and Chevalier of St. Louis in 1720 and had been captain of the Navarre regiment. He was appointed assistant engineer of Louisiana under Le Blond de la Tour [*q.v.*] in 1720, and arrived in Biloxi, the capital of the colony, on Nov. 24 (*Lettres Edificantes Inedits,* V, October 1818). La Tour arrived in the following month. At the time the council of the colony was undecided as to whether they would rebuild Biloxi, which had been almost completely destroyed by fire in 1719, or transfer the capital to some other place. Bienville, the governor of the colony, wished to move the capital to New Orleans, but the council, under the advice of La Tour, decided to reëstablish it a short distance to the west of Biloxi and give it the name of New Biloxi, and in September 1721 the transfer was made.

In the meantime La Tour had been ordered to send Pauger to New Orleans to make a thorough examination of the site to determine whether the settlement should remain there or be moved to some other spot to avoid the dangers of inundation. Pauger went to New Orleans in March 1721, and deeming the site safe, he began at once to lay out the town. He found that the settlers had built their cabins here and there "among the bushes and the clumps of trees" as they pleased without any regard to alignments. (Dumont de Montigny's drawing of the original settlement has been reproduced in Villiers du Terrage, *Histoire de la Fondation de la Nouvelle Orleans.*) The situation was therefore very difficult for Pauger, but he resolutely set to work and with the assistance of about ten soldiers, whom the commandant of the post had put at his service, he was able to clear enough land within twelve days to make possible the tracing of all the streets on the river front. He drew up a plan for a town of about one mile square, which constitutes the French Quarter of the present city of New Orleans, and sent it to La Tour at Biloxi on Apr. 14. Instead of forwarding the plan on to Paris, La Tour is said to have pigeonholed it for fear the capital of the colony would be moved. Bienville, who was eager for that very thing, procured a copy of the plan and sent it to Paris. Shortly thereafter the capital was ordered moved to New Orleans, and La Tour then officially approved of Pauger's plan. (For a refutation of La Tour's claim that he had drawn up the plan originally, see the sketch of La Tour.)

In plotting the town of New Orleans, Pauger aroused a great deal of opposition on the part of some of the inhabitants, for he had to disarrange existing property divisions. He also incurred the enmity of De Lorme, the chief clerk of the colony. In drawing up his plan of the town, he had indicated on it "grants of a few plots to the oldest inhabitants and those most capable of building along the river bank." De Lorme claimed that he had the exclusive right to make concessions and ordered all of Pauger's grants annulled. The matter was finally adjusted after La Tour had recalled Pauger to Biloxi, and with only a few exceptions all of Pauger's concessions were confirmed. One of the few exceptions was the concession that Pauger had conferred upon himself.

In June 1722 La Tour and Pauger left New Biloxi for New Orleans, and after their arrival in July, La Tour began to carry out Pauger's plan for the development of the town. Pauger was, however, soon replaced by Boispinel and sent down the river to the Balize in January 1723. The death of Boispinel in the following September and of La Tour in October advanced Pauger to the position of chief engineer of the colony. His troubles, however, continued. He asked to sit on the colonial board, and though the company granted his request in November 1724, his enemies long prevented him from taking his seat save for matters directly concerning his work. He was, moreover, not able to get the concession which he had made to himself confirmed until September 1725, and in his disgust he began to think of returning to France. He was not permitted, however, to do so. He was stricken with fever and died in his house in New Orleans on June 9, 1726, four days after he made his will, disposing of his property to his friends in the colony. In the founding of New Orleans, Pauger had a very important part, second only to that of Bienville.

[The chief source of information concerning Pauger is Baron Marc de Villiers du Terrage, *Histoire de la Fondation de la Nouvelle-Orleans (1717–22)* (Paris, 1917). A translation of this monograph appeared in the *La. Hist. Quart.*, Apr. 1920. Scattered references to him are to be found in the *Journal Historique de l'Établissement des Français à la Louisiane* (New Orleans and Paris, 1831), and Pierre Heinrich, *La Louisiane sous la Compagnie des Indies, 1717–31* (n.d.). Pierre Margry's *Découvertes et Établissements des Français dans l'Ouest et dans le Sud de L'Amérique Septentrionale . . . Mémoires et Documents Originaux*, vol. V (Paris, 1883), contains a number of official letters to and from Pauger.] E. M. V.

PAUL, HENRY MARTYN (June 25, 1851–Mar. 15, 1931), astronomer, engineer, and teacher, the eldest of six children of Ebenezer and Susan (Dresser) Paul, was born at Dedham, Mass. His ancestry may be traced directly to Richard Paul (1636), one of the first settlers of Cohannet, now Taunton, Mass. By 1664 Richard's son, Samuel, had moved to Dorchester where his son, another Samuel, acquired a large estate including what was later known as the "Paul Homestead." This was located near Paul's Bridge on the Neponset River in what later became the town of Dedham and still more recently Hyde Park. Here Henry Martyn Paul spent his boyhood in work on his father's farm. He attended the local public schools and after four years at the Dedham High School entered Dartmouth College, from which he received the degree of A.B. in 1873. He won the sophomore prize in mathematics, acted as assistant to his instructors in engineering courses, and during the winter of his sophomore year taught a district school at Waterford, Vt. His extra-curricular activities included editorship, rowing, and music.

In the fall of 1873 he entered the Thayer School of Engineering at Dartmouth and two years later received the degrees of C.E. and A.M. During this period he assisted in teaching astronomy and meteorology in the New Hampshire College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts. Immediately following his graduation from the Thayer School he was for a few weeks assistant to Prof. Elihu T. Quimby, then triangulating the state of New Hampshire for the United States Coast Survey. He was appointed junior assistant at the Naval Observatory at Washington in August 1875 and assigned to work with the transit circle under Prof. John R. Eastman [*q.v.*]. The telegram ordering him to Washington was relayed by heliotrope from Hanover to the triangulation station on Croydon Mountain. In 1878 he declined the professorship of astronomy at Dartmouth, but two years later (1880) resigned his position at the Naval Observatory to become the first professor of astronomy at the University of Tokio, returning to the Naval Observatory in 1883. At Washington he was chiefly occupied with the time-consuming routine of the transit instrument, the equatorial, the care of the library, the publications, and the time service, but he also took part in observing and discussing observations of the transit of Mercury of May 1878, the total solar eclipse of 1878, the longitude of Princeton, the semi-diameter of the moon, and observations of variable stars, while occasionally contributing to scientific journals. In 1897 he became professor of mathematics in the United States Navy and in 1899 was transferred to the Bureau of Yards and Docks with duties of engineer. In this capacity he served until 1905, when he was

assigned to the Naval Academy at Annapolis as teacher of mathematics. Here he remained until 1912, and in the following year he retired from the navy with the rank of captain.

He married, Aug. 27, 1878, Augusta Anna Gray, daughter of Rev. Edgar H. Gray of Washington, and to them was born an only son, who also became an engineer. Paul was a fellow of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, a member of the American Astronomical Society, the Washington Academy of the Sciences, and the Philosophical Society of Washington. His interest in music was lifelong and for many years he was precentor in a Washington church and an officer of the Washington choral society.

[Reports and publications of the United States Naval Observatory, 1876–97; *Gen. Cat. Dartmouth College* (1910–11); *Dartmouth Alumni Mag.*, May 1931; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 17, 1931; J. M. and Jaques Cattell, *Am. Men of Science* (4th ed., 1927); E. C. Paul, "The Paul Homestead in Dedham," *Dedham Hist. Reg.*, Oct. 1899; D. L. Paul, Fulton Paul, and M. C. Crane, *Family Register of Richard Paul* (n.d.); personal letters and genealogical material in the hands of Mrs. Oliver H. Howe of Cohasset, Mass., Henry M. Paul's sister, who kindly supplied certain information concerning family affairs; information from acquaintances.]

J. M. P—r.

PAUL, JOHN [See WEBB, CHARLES HENRY, 1834–1905].

PAULDING, HIRAM (Dec. 11, 1797–Oct. 20, 1878), naval officer, was born on his father's farm in Westchester County, N. Y. He was a descendant of Joost Pauldinck who came from Holland to New York before 1683, the seventh child of John Paulding, celebrated as a captor of Major André in the Revolution, and his second wife, Esther Ward. Country schooling ended with his appointment as midshipman Sept. 1, 1811, after which he studied mathematics and navigation in New York. In 1813 he was ordered to Lake Ontario but was transferred soon afterward to the Champlain Squadron. In recognition of his gallant services in the battle of Lake Champlain as acting lieutenant in the *Ticonderoga*, he received $1500 prize-money and a sword from Congress. He served in the *Constellation* against the Barbary powers, was promoted in 1816 to the rank of lieutenant, and spent the next three years in cruising in the *Macedonian* of the Pacific Squadron. He then took advantage of an opportunity to study at Capt. Alden Partridge's military academy at Norwich, Vermont, graduating with the class of 1823. While on duty again in the Pacific in the *United States*, he carried Admiral Hull's dispatches from Callao to General Bolivar's headquarters in the Andes—a commission which entailed a journey of 1500 miles on horseback. He volunteered the following year, 1825,

for a long cruise in the South Seas as first lieutenant of the *Dolphin*, pursuing mutineers from the whaleship *Globe*. This voyage brought novel and exciting experiences one of which was described by Charles Henry Davis, 1807–1877 [*q.v.*], as "the boldest act he ever witnessed" (C. H. Davis, *Life of Charles Henry Davis*, 1899, p. 32). In the face of several hundred infuriated savages, Paulding seized one mutineer and marched him to a boat, using the body of his captive as a shield. Descriptions of these activities appear in Paulding's *Bolivar in his Camp* (1834) and his *Journal of a Cruise of the United States Schooner Dolphin* (1831). Both narratives reveal a gift for writing and a fondness for poetry and reading.

In 1828 he married Ann Maria, the daughter of Jonathan W. Kellogg of Flatbush, L. I., and in 1837 purchased a farm on the Sound near Huntington, L. I., where with his family of four daughters and two sons, he enjoyed brief intervals of home life. His sea duty, meanwhile, included two Mediterranean cruises in the *Constellation*, 1830–32, in the *Shark*, 1834–37, and, after his promotion to the rank of captain, a China cruise in the *Vincennes* from 1844 to 1847. His sound judgment, conciliatory temper, and fine presence made appropriate his next assignment to command the new frigate *St. Lawrence*, the first American warship to visit Bremen, and, according to her captain, also the first to venture the "experiment of social intercourse with the people of any part of England" (R. P. Meade, *post*, p. 111). Paulding visited Frankfort during the parliament of 1848, and was earnestly consulted on the subject of building up a German navy, in which, it appears, he was offered a high command. In December 1848 his ship went to Southampton, England, where for a month there ensued cordial exchange of hospitalities. Four years in charge of the Washington navy yard were followed by the command of the Home Squadron, 1855–58, operating mainly in the Caribbean. The chief episode of this command was Paulding's seizure of Gen. William Walker [*q.v.*] and about 150 filibusters who had landed in defiance of the United States sloop *Saratoga*, at Grey Town, Nicaragua. Upon his arrival Paulding threw a force of 350 men ashore, compelled Walker's surrender without bloodshed on Dec. 8, 1857, and sent him and his followers home. This bold action met with approval in the North, but the Buchanan administration set Walker free and soon relieved the commodore of his command. The Nicaraguan government demonstrated its gratitude by presenting Paulding with a jewelled sword.

Though above the age for active command, he was appointed head of the Bureau of Detail in March 1861, with the responsibility of selecting dependable officers for wartime duties. Other duties were added, notably that of leading the expedition which on Apr. 21, 1861, evacuated the Norfolk navy yard. In the complete demoralization there—ships already scuttled and lifting shears cut away, Paulding can hardly be blamed for executing his orders, which were to evacuate after removing or destroying whatever possible; but it meant leaving nearly 3,000 cannon in Confederate hands and subjecting himself to severe criticism. On the board for the construction of new ironclads, Paulding, along with Commander Davis and Commodore Joseph Smith [*q.v.*] met his responsibilities creditably by the selection of the *Monitor* and *New Ironsides* models for immediate completion. John Ericsson [*q.v.*], the designer, wrote to Paulding, Nov. 26, 1862, "Without your firm support the *Monitor* would not have been built" (R. P. Meade, *post*, p. 291). He referred chiefly to his advocacy of the design, but commended also his energy in pushing its construction and equipment while head of the New York navy yard, to which he had been appointed in the autumn of 1861. He remained at this post until April 1865, carrying out the important work of supply and repair for the blockading fleets. During the Draft Riots of July 1863, naval forces under his direction aided effectively in protecting lives and government property. Though retired in December 1861 with promotion to rear admiral (retired) the following July, Paulding was thus actively employed throughout the war. Afterwards, he served as governor of the United States Naval Asylum at Philadelphia, 1866–69, and as port admiral at Boston, 1869–70. Death from heart trouble at his Long Island home ended a long and honorable career, at the close of which he was senior on the retired list and the last officer survivor of the engagement on Lake Champlain.

[Rebecca Paulding Meade, *Life of Hiram Paulding, Rear Admiral, U. S. N.* (1910); Commander R. W. Meade, "Admiral Paulding," *Harper's Mag.*, Feb. 1879; J. T. Headley, in *Farragut and Our Naval Leaders* (1880); L. N. Feipel, "The Navy and Filibustering in the Fifties," *U. S. Naval Inst. Proc.*, Aug. 1918; *Army and Navy Jour.*, Oct. 26, 1878; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 21, 1878.]

A. W.

PAULDING, JAMES KIRKE (Aug. 22, 1778–Apr. 6, 1860), author and naval official, the youngest son of William and Catharine (Ogden) Paulding, was born at Great Nine Partners, now Putnam County, N. Y., where the family had taken refuge during the Revolution. After commanding several ships, his father became a merchant at Tarrytown, an influential patriot, and commissary of the New York militia. To provide food for the soldiers, he assumed an obligation of nearly $10,000, which through a miscarriage of justice bankrupted and temporarily jailed him in 1785. In meeting this disaster, the mother by her thrift and magic needle supported and schooled the children so well that Julia married William Irving and a son William became congressman and mayor of New York City. At Tarrytown, a quiet Dutch village overlooking the Hudson, James, like Wordsworth, acquired an early and enduring love for nature and homespun people. There he received scanty schooling, became dreamy and melancholy, hunted, fished, admired Goldsmith's prose, and met Washington Irving. When about eighteen, he joined his brother in New York and worked in a public office. Living with the versatile William Irving and forming pleasant associations, Paulding became happy, read literature, and observed politics. His acquaintance with Washington Irving ripened into a lasting friendship. The city of New York with its varied cultural and commercial activities was his training school, and in due time the shy boy, like Franklin, working out his own scholastic salvation, became a well-bred man, capable official, and popular writer.

In 1807–08 Paulding and Irving collaborated in a whimsical periodical, *Salmagundi,* which entertained the town and attracted widespread interest. Stimulated by the popularity of this venture and Irving's success in comic history, Paulding next wrote *The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan* (1812), which comically depicted the settlement, growth, and revolt of the thirteen colonies. The next year he parodied Scott's verse stories in *The Lay of the Scottish Fiddle,* and, after five years, published his ambitious poem, *The Backwoodsman* (1818). Neither poem enhanced the author's reputation appreciably. Meanwhile, for the *Analectic Magazine* he composed popular sketches of the naval commanders in the War of 1812. Continued British censure of America and a savage review of his poetic parody in English magazines precipitated his impressive defense, *The United States and England,* which was published in 1815. It brought Paulding an appointment by President Madison as secretary of the newly created Board of Navy Commissioners, and to fill this position, he lived from 1815 to 1823 in Washington. On Nov. 15, 1818, he was married to Gertrude Kemble, the sister of Gouverneur Kemble [*q.v.*].

After the Revolution, scores of English travelers visited the United States and returned to

England with gossipy, prejudiced accounts of the new nation. These critics provoked the so-called literary war, to which Paulding contributed five works. His environment explains in part his excusable antipathy to England. Born in exile, he grew up in a region devastated by the British; nine of the Pauldings served in the American army; two of his relatives knew the horrors of British prison ships; his maternal grandfather was cruelly cut across the head by British soldiers, because he had refused to cry, "God save the king!" Besides the two controversial books already mentioned, Paulding wrote *Letters from the South* (1817), which aimed to depict one section truthfully; *A Sketch of Old England* (1822), an unfavorable account based wholly upon his reading; and *John Bull in America* (1825), an effective burlesque. These replies made him famous, and in 1824 President Monroe appointed him navy agent for New York, where with his wife and children he resided till 1838.

Paulding now had adequate income and leisure for writing. Purging his mind of the Anglo-American controversy, he composed realistic tales and novels in consonance with his theory of "rational fiction" based upon Fielding's practice and expounded in 1820. He disliked the inflated English then in fashion, and by his own literary work won Poe's praise and a master's degree from Columbia. Altogether, he published more than seventy tales, six of which were included in Mary Russell Mitford's English collections of 1830 and 1832. Though frequently marred by haste and loose construction, they have distinct merits. They are satiric or witty, wholesome, natural, and national. The best depict Dutch characters and customs; "The Dumb Girl" (1830) resembles and may have influenced *The Scarlet Letter*. Free from romantic extravagance, Hawthorne's gloom, and Poe's melancholy, they exhibit Paulding's fine sense of human values and his love of humor and of life.

In a romantic and sentimental age, he wrote five realistic novels, which appeared in European translations. *Koningsmarke* (1823), an imitative effort, satirizing Scott's romances and internal improvements, depicted the Indians and colonial Swedes of Delaware. After composing a score of tales and a prize-winning comedy, he published his best novel, *The Dutchman's Fireside* (1831), a veracious account of the New York Dutch before the Revolution, admirable for style, description, and characterization. Next came *Westward Ho!* (1832), recounting the adventures of a Virginia family in Kentucky. *The Old Continental* (1846) is a domestic picture of the Revolution in New York, more convincing than Cooper's *The Spy*. *The Puritan and His Daughter* (1849) is a story of Cromwell's England and Virginia.

In *Letters from the South, A Sketch of Old England, Salmagundi* (Second Series, 1819–20), *A Life of Washington* (1835), *Slavery in the United States* (1836), and in magazine articles, Paulding treated nearly every phase of American life, theorized on prose and poetry, and commented on contemporary authors. He shared Carlyle's adverse opinion of Byron, bewailed American imitation of foreign literature, and denounced our want of confidence and self-respect. His liberal Americanism recognized no sectional bounds. While he sincerely revered God and true religion, he was impatient of servility to a narrow ecclesiastical system. "High rents and heavy taxes," he observed, "will spoil even paradise."

Paulding, feeling like "a gentleman of leisure metamorphosed into a pack horse," was secretary of the navy in Van Buren's cabinet. Strife and intemperance in the service he tried to eradicate by rigid discipline, and he sent the South Sea Exploring Expedition on its four-year cruise to the Oregon coast and the Antarctic Continent. In 1841 his wife died, and the next year he accompanied Van Buren on a long western tour. In 1846 he retired to a country estate near Hyde Park, N. Y., where, surrounded by his children and the beauties of the Hudson, he grew old gracefully. Here he died at eighty-two, and was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn, leaving considerable property to his children. His son William described him as above medium height, strongly built, with fine black hair in youth and brown eyes, and a profile resembling an ancient philosopher.

From 1807 to 1850 Paulding was a prominent political and literary figure in American life, but he has faded into the past. His once useful political and satirical writings are almost forgotten. Much of his fiction may be discarded, for, like his contemporaries, he wrote too much and revised too little. He was, however, distinguished for his versatility and independence, and for his contribution to the short story, and, because of his tales and novels, he deserves to be remembered as the chief Dutch interpreter of the New York Dutch.

[E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1856), vol. II, contains a valuable sketch authorized by Paulding. See also: W. I. Paulding, *Lit. Life of Jas. K. Paulding* (1867); P. M. Irving, *The Life and Letters of Washington Irving* (4 vols., 1862–64); *The Letters of Washington Irving to Henry Brevoort* (2 vols., 1915), ed. by G. S. Hellman; J. G. Wilson, *Bryant and His Friends* (1886); Amos L. Herold, *Jas. Kirke*

Paulding, Versatile American (1926), with bibliography; Oscar Wegelin, "A Bibliog. of the Separate Publications of Jas. Kirke Paulding," *The Papers of the Bibliog. Soc. of America*, vol. XII (1918); V. L. Parrington, *Main Currents in Am. Thought*, vol. II (1927).] A. L. H.

PAVY, OCTAVE (June 22, 1844–June 6, 1884), Arctic explorer, physician, naturalist, was born in New Orleans, La., but was educated in France, studying science, art, and medicine at the University of Paris, and giving considerable time to travel on the continent of Europe. In his later twenties he was appointed associate commander with Gustave Lambert in an Arctic expedition projected by the French government. The outbreak of the Franco-Prussian war prevented the departure of this expedition, and Pavy, together with Lieutenant Beauregard, a nephew of Gen. Pierre G. T. Beauregard of the Confederate army, organized and equipped at their own expense an independent Zouave corps composed of veteran soldiers and sailors of French parentage who had been residents of North or South America. After the war, Pavy returned to the United States and began preparations for a north-polar expedition by way of Bering Strait. In 1872, just before the expedition was to leave, the sudden death of a financial supporter compelled the abandonment of the project. Pavy then took a course of lectures at the Missouri Medical College, to familiarize himself with English medical phraseology. In 1878 he married Lilla May Stone of Lebanon, Ill. For two and a half years he lived in St. Louis, serving as physician at the Meyer Iron Works and lecturing on the Arctic regions.

In June 1880 he joined H. W. Howgate's expedition to Greenland as surgeon and naturalist, sailing on the *Gulnare*. When the ship, proving unfit for polar navigation, returned to the United States, he remained in Greenland and for a year explored the coast, studying the fauna and flora of the country and becoming familiar with the technique of Arctic exploration. In July 1881 the Lady Franklin Bay expedition under the command of Lieut. A. W. Greely of the United States Army arrived in Greenland, with a commission for Pavy as surgeon of the expedition. Until his death three years later he served in that capacity and for a time acted also as naturalist. He took part in a number of sledge journeys by which this expedition extended the geographic and meteorological knowledge of the region, and in particular brought to light the fact that the polar region is not the sea of solid immovable ice which until then it had been considered. Under the hardships which the party had to endure it was but natural that friction should develop between Pavy—cognizant of his own abilities and with experience as physician, army officer, and Arctic explorer—and Greely. Pavy questioned some of Greely's decisions, and Greely considered Pavy insubordinate, at one time placing him under arrest (Greely, *Three Years of Arctic Service*, II, 62, 66, 320; for Pavy's side of the case, see *North American Review*, April 1886, pp. 371–80). The expedition comprised twenty-five members and had been provisioned for two years. A relief ship had been expected in 1882, but neither that year nor the following year did it appear, and in August 1883 Greely led his party toward Smith Sound. Here they were forced to winter on short rations, the last ration being issued on May 24. The only food remaining was sealskin thongs. One by one, members of the party died of slow starvation, and on June 6, 1884—sixteen days before the rescue of the six survivors—Pavy died at Cape Sabine. In large part, the health of the party during the three years of exposure and the prolonging of the life of a number of its members at Cape Sabine may be ascribed to his services.

[The best biographical material is found in *St. Louis Courier of Medicine*, Feb. 1886, and "Dr. Pavy and the Polar Expedition" and "An Arctic Journal" published by Pavy's widow, L. M. Pavy, in *North Am. Rev.*, Mar.–Apr. 1886. See also, A. W. Greely, *Three Years of Arctic Service* (2 vols., 1886) and *International Polar Expedition: Report on the Proc. of the U. S. Expedition to Lady Franklin Bay* (1888), being *House Doc. 393*, 49 Cong., 1 Sess. The *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, July 18, 20, 1884, contains some information, not altogether accurate.] H. A. M.

PAYNE, CHRISTOPHER HARRISON (Sept. 7, 1848–Dec. 4, 1925), negro Baptist clergyman, lawyer, United States official, was born of free parents near Red Sulphur Springs, Monroe County, Va. (now West Virginia). His very intelligent mother was the daughter and had been the slave of James Ellison, who taught her to read and write. She in turn imparted the rudiments of education to her son, who was her only child. Her husband was Thomas Payne, a cattle drover, who died when the boy was two years old. From 1861 until 1864 Christopher was compelled to serve as a body servant in the Confederate army. During the next two years he worked as a farm hand near Hinton, W. Va. He next engaged in steamboating on the Ohio River but soon moved to Charleston, W. Va. Here he attended night school until 1868, when he succeeded in passing the examination for a teacher's certificate in Summers County. He then returned to his old home near Hinton and for a number of years taught school in the winter and did farm work in the summer time.

In 1875 he became a convert to the Baptist

faith, was granted a license to preach in the following year, and in 1877 was ordained. The better to equip himself for his new calling he spent the academic year 1877–78 at Richmond Institute (now Virginia Union University). Lack of means then obliged him to return to West Virginia, where he engaged in missionary work. In 1880, however, he was called to the pastorate of the Moore Street Baptist Church in Richmond, and was able to complete his theological course, supporting his family and mother in the meantime. Graduating in 1883, he was appointed missionary for the eastern division of Virginia. In April of the following year he became pastor of the First Baptist Church of Montgomery, W. Va., and subsequently had charge of Baptist churches in Norfolk, Va., and Huntington, W. Va.

For the purpose of disseminating correct information about the achievements of the colored people he founded the *West Virginia Enterprise.* Later on he started *The Pioneer* at Montgomery, W. Va. His third and last weekly he called the *Mountain Eagle.* His ventures in journalism led to his dabbling in politics. He became an active worker for the Republican party and was rewarded with the position of deputy collector of internal revenue at Charleston, W. Va. During his incumbency of this post, 1889 to 1893, he studied law and was admitted to practice in West Virginia. In 1896 he was elected a member of the state legislature, being the first negro to be so honored. From 1898 till 1899 he was a United States internal revenue agent, and on May 1, 1903, was made United States consul at St. Thomas in the Danish West Indies. This position he continued to fill until the purchase of the islands by the United States in 1917. Thereafter he continued to reside in St. Thomas and served first as prosecuting attorney and then, until his death, as police judge.

He was twice married and was survived by six children. His first wife, whom he married in 1866, was Delilah Ann Hargrove, and his second, A. G. Viney of Gallipolis, Ohio. Payne availed himself of every opportunity to improve his mind and was an eloquent preacher and speaker with a fine flow of language. He had a broad forehead and a straight nose and would easily have passed for a white man with dark complexion.

[W. J. Simmons' *Men of Mark* (1887), *The Crisis,* June 1917; *Jour. of Negro Hist.,* Jan. 1926; Byrd Prillerman, in *Bapt. Sunday School Bull.,* Jan., Feb., Mar. 1926; *Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; information from Payne's daughter, Mrs. Martha Adeline Trent, through the courtesy of the Rev. J. J. Turner, Montgomery, W. Va.]

H. G. V.

PAYNE, DANIEL ALEXANDER (Feb. 24, 1811–Nov. 29, 1893), bishop of the African Methodist Episcopal Church, president of Wilberforce University, was born in Charleston, S. C., the son of London and Martha Payne, who were free persons of color. His parents having died before he was ten years old, he was cared for by relatives. For two years he attended a local Minor's Moralist Society School established by free colored men. He next studied under Thomas Bonneau, a private tutor, and not only mastered English and mathematics but made himself conversant with Greek, Latin, and French. Apprenticed first to a shoemaker and later to a tailor, Payne also worked for four years in a carpenter's shop, of which his brother-in-law was foreman. In 1826 he joined the Methodist Episcopal Church and three years later opened a school for colored children, which in a short while became the most successful institution of its kind in Charleston. It flourished until the South Carolina legislature passed a law, on Dec. 17, 1834, imposing a fine and whipping on free persons of color who kept schools to teach slaves or free negroes to read or write. Obliged to discontinue his school, Payne on May 9, 1835, left Charleston for Pennsylvania, where he entered the Lutheran Theological Seminary at Gettysburg. There he supported himself by blacking boots, waiting at table, and doing other menial tasks. In 1837 he was licensed to preach and in 1839 was ordained by the Franckean Synod of the Lutheran Church. He accepted a call to a Presbyterian church in East Troy, N. Y., but in 1840 moved to Philadelphia, where he opened a school. In 1841 he joined the African Methodist Episcopal Church and in 1842 was received as a preacher at the Philadelphia Conference of that denomination. After serving as a traveling preacher he was appointed to the Israel Church in Washington, D. C. In 1845 he was transferred to Baltimore, Md., where he was pastor of Bethel Church.

Chosen historiographer of the African Methodist Episcopal Church in 1848, he traveled extensively in the United States searching for materials. In May 1852 he was elected bishop. As such he exerted himself to raise the cultural standard of the communicants of the denomination by promoting the formation of church literary societies and debating lyceums. During the Civil War he pleaded with Lincoln and other prominent men for the emancipation of the slaves. Without a dollar in hand, on Mar. 10, 1863, he had the temerity to purchase Wilberforce University, an Ohio institution established by the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1856 for

the education of colored youths, to which many natural children of slave holders had been sent prior to the War. He was its president for thirteen years. On the day Lincoln was assassinated the main building of the institution was burned. This loss increased the financial burden he had to assume, but during his administration he was instrumental in securing more than $92,000. The enrollment of students also increased greatly. In 1867 he visited Europe for the first time. A delegate to the first Ecumenical Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, held in London, England, Payne on Sept. 13, 1881, read a paper on Methodism and Temperance, impressing all by his dignified manners. He also took part in the Parliament of Religions, held in 1893 during the World's Columbian Exposition at Chicago.

After his retirement from Wilberforce he devoted himself to writing and to a continuance of his unrelenting fight against the illiteracy of the colored Methodist ministers. He was of a light brown complexion and below the average height. Very thin and emaciated and weighing only one hundred pounds, he looked like a consumptive. He had sharp features, an intellectual forehead, keen, penetrating eyes, and a shrill voice. Among his publications were *The Semi-Centenary . . . of the African Methodist Episcopal Church in the U. S. of America* (1866), *A Treatise on Domestic Education* (1885), *Recollections of Seventy Years* (1888), *The History of the A. M. E. Church from 1816 to 1856* (1891). Payne was married in 1847 to Mrs. Julia A. Ferris, daughter of William Becraft of Georgetown, D. C.; she died within a year thereafter, and in 1853 he married Mrs. Eliza J. Clark.

[C. S. Smith, *The Life of Daniel Alexander Payne* (1894); J. W. Cromwell, *The Negro in Am. Hist.* (1914); G. F. Bragg, *Men of Maryland* (1925); W. J. Simmons, *Men of Mark* (1887); Wm. W. Brown, *The Rising Son* (1874); A. R. Wentz, *Hist. of Gettysburg Theological Sem. . . . 1826–1926* (n.d.).] H. G. V.

PAYNE, HENRY B. (Nov. 30, 1810–Sept. 9, 1896), representative and senator from Ohio, was the son of Elisha and Esther (Douglass) Payne and the descendant of Thomas Paine (or Payne) who settled in Yarmouth, Mass., and was admitted freeman of Plymouth Colony in 1639. Both parents were natives of Connecticut. In 1795 his father removed to Hamilton, N. Y., where Henry was born. His education was carefully directed, and in 1832 he was graduated from Hamilton College at Clinton. Sometime after he graduated from college he added the middle initial "B" to his name to give what he considered a more pleasing effect. For a period

he studied law under John C. Spencer [*q.v.*] of Canandaigua, N. Y., at that time forming an acquaintance with Stephen A. Douglas that deepened into intimate friendship. In 1833 he settled in Cleveland, Ohio, then a village of 3,000 people, continuing his law studies and, after his admission to the bar in 1834, entering a law partnership with his old classmate, Hiram V. Willson, later a federal district judge. In 1836 he was married to Mary, the daughter of Nathan Perry, a merchant of Cleveland. They had five children, among them, Flora, who married W. C. Whitney [*q.v.*], and Oliver H. Payne [*q.v.*]. Sereno Elisha Payne [*q.v.*] was his nephew. His success in the practice of law was phenomenal, but in 1846 he began to have hemorrhages from his lungs, which necessitated his retirement from active practice. During these early years he held various municipal offices; later, he was a member of Cleveland's first waterworks commission; and as a sinking fund commissioner from 1862 to 1896 he rendered noteworthy service in reforming the city's finances. One of the founders of the Cleveland and Columbus railroad in 1849, he served as its president from 1851 to 1854, when he resigned and became interested in the Cleveland, Painesville, and Ashtabula railroad.

Serving in the Ohio Senate from 1849 to 1851, he displayed such skill as a parliamentarian and party leader that he became the Democratic choice for United States senator in 1851. Protracted balloting resulted in a few Free-Soilers eventually turning the balance in favor of Benjamin Wade. In 1857 as Democratic candidate for governor he lost the contest to the incumbent, Salmon P. Chase, by a narrow margin. He helped nominate Buchanan in 1856 and at the Democratic convention of 1860 reported the platform which, when adopted, prompted the withdrawal of delegates from the lower South. During the war he was an ardent Unionist. In 1872 a Greeley supporter, he was chairman of the Ohio delegation to the Democratic convention at Baltimore. Elected to Congress in a normally Republican district two years later, he served on the committees on banking and currency and on civil service reform, and he was instrumental in preventing legislation to regulate interstate commerce. In 1876–77 he was chairman of the House committee on the electoral count at Tilden's request and was influential in the passage of legislation providing for the electoral commission, of which he became a member. Affable and courteous, with kindly eyes, smooth-shaven face, gentle voice, and a clerical-cut coat he appeared more like a minis-

ter than the shrewd, active man of affairs that he was, a director in twenty corporations and a politician devoted to the interests of business. Although a leading presidential candidate at the Democratic convention of 1880, progress in his behalf was thwarted by the commitment of the Ohio delegation to Allen G. Thurman.

Three years later a Payne movement for the senatorship suddenly developed; he received a majority vote in the Democratic legislative caucus and was promptly elected. He served from Mar. 4, 1885, to Mar. 3, 1891. It was asserted that his son, Oliver H. Payne, treasurer of the Standard Oil Company, had spent $100,000 to obtain the election. The Republican lower house of the next state legislature ordered an investigation; fifty-five witnesses were examined, and the evidence was turned over to the federal Senate, which ultimately refused to act. While the charges were never absolutely proved, the absence of satisfactory denials in the face of reiterated accusations, convinced a large portion of the country that Payne's promoters had practically bought his seat (see I. M. Tarbell, *The History of the Standard Oil Company*, 1904, II, 111–19). In the Senate his principal work was as a committee member. Over eighty at the end of his term, he retired to the Euclid Avenue mansion in Cleveland that was his home for sixty years and died of paralysis five years later.

[A few letters in *Ohio Arch. and Hist. Quart.*, Oct. 1913; reference to existence of a valuable diary probably destroyed before Payne's death in J. F. Rhodes, *Hist. of the U. S.*, vol. VII (1906), p. 269; G. I. Reed, *Bench and Bar of Ohio* (1897), vol. II; A. F. P. White, *The Paynes of Hamilton* (1912); *Sen. Misc. Doc. 106*, 49 Cong., 1 Sess. (1886); A. H. Walker, *The Payne Bribery Case* (1886); *John Sherman's Recollections* (1895), vol. II; J. G. Blaine, *Twenty Years*, vol. II (1886); Murat Halstead, *Caucuses of 1860* (1860); *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, *Cleveland Leader*, and *Cincinnati Commercial Tribune*, Sept. 10, 1896; information concerning his middle initial from his granddaughter, Mrs. Chester C. Bolton.] F. P. W.

PAYNE, HENRY CLAY (Nov. 23, 1843–Oct. 4, 1904), railroad executive and postmaster-general, son of Orrin and Eliza (Ames) Payne, was born at Ashfield, Mass. He was educated in the schools there and at the Shelburne Falls academy from which he graduated in 1859. After a short business experience in Northampton, Mass., and after being rejected as a soldier, he moved to Milwaukee, Wis., in 1863. Here he entered the dry-goods house of Sherwin, Nowell & Pratt, and served as cashier until 1867. He then entered the insurance business in which he achieved considerable success. His first appearance in politics was in 1872, in the Grant-Greeley campaign, when he organized the Young Men's Republican Club, serving as its first secretary and later as chairman. In 1876 he was appointed postmaster of Milwaukee by President Grant and held that position for ten years, during which time he brought the office to a high state of efficiency, paying especial attention to the money-order branch through which he was able to serve the large foreign-born population of the city. When the Democrats assumed control of the national government in 1885 Payne left the post office and engaged in a number of business enterprises, being especially interested in the development of local public utilities. He was made vice-president of the Wisconsin Telephone Company in 1886 and president three years later. In the same year, 1889, he became interested in the possibility of consolidating the street railways of Milwaukee. In 1890, when the Cream City Railroad Company and the Milwaukee City Railroad were merged, becoming the Milwaukee Street Railway Company, Henry Villard of New York was made president and Payne vice-president and general manager. From 1892 to 1895 Payne acted as president of the company. By the latter year the consolidation of the city lines was complete and the company had also absorbed the electric lighting companies of the city. In 1896, however, the company was in financial straits. Payne was named receiver and then was made vice-president of the reorganized Milwaukee Electric Railway & Light Company. Shortly after the reorganization, a serious strike broke out among the employees of the company. Payne was criticized for his unyielding attitude toward the workmen, and although the strike was broken, public sympathy was with the strikers.

Payne also organized the Milwaukee Light, Heat and Traction Company, which built and operated the suburban electric lines running out of Milwaukee, and was president of the Fox River Electric Railway Company, an interurban electric system. In 1890 he was elected president of the Milwaukee & Northern Railroad Company but resigned in 1893 when the road was consolidated with the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul. When the Northern Pacific Railroad failed he was appointed one of the receivers and served from 1893 to 1895. From 1894 to 1896 he was president of the Chicago & Calumet Terminal Railway. Meantime he had continued his services in the Republican party organization. He was secretary and chairman of the Republican county committee of Milwaukee County and of the Republican State Central Committee after 1872, and a member of the Republican National Committee from 1880 until his death in 1904. In 1888 and 1892 he served

as delegate to the Republican National Convention, and during the McKinley-Bryan campaign of 1896 he was in charge of the western headquarters in Chicago. Four years later he worked successfully to have Roosevelt nominated as vice-president of the ticket with McKinley. When Roosevelt became president the following year he repaid his political debt by appointing Payne postmaster-general in January 1902. Before he had been in office three years Payne died suddenly in Washington. He had married, on Oct. 15, 1869, Lydia W. Van Dyke, daughter of Richard and Mary (Thomas) Van Dyke of Mount Holly, N. J. He died childless.

[See W. W. Wight, *Henry Clay Payne, A Life* (1907); *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Ann. Reports of the Post-Office Dept.*, 1902–03; the *Railway Age*, Oct. 7, 1904; *Milwaukee Jour.*, Oct. 5, 1904.]

E. L. B.

PAYNE, JOHN HOWARD (June 9, 1791–Apr. 9, 1852), actor, dramatist, editor, diplomat, was born in New York City, the sixth child of William and Sarah Isaacs Payne and a descendant of Thomas Paine (or Payne) who settled in Yarmouth, Mass., and was admitted freeman of Plymouth Colony in 1639. At the age of thirteen he had already prefigured in his imaginative mind his long association with the stage. Though disciplined by the counsel of his family and by hard toil in the New York counting house of Grant and Bennet Forbes, the precocious boy clung to his desire, and from Dec. 28, 1805, to May 31, 1806, published anonymously the first numbers of his *Thespian Mirror*, an eight-page critical review of the New York theatre, which aroused the interest of William Coleman [*q.v.*], editor of the *Evening Post*. He followed this adventure a few weeks later by his first play, *Julia, or The Wanderer*, acted at the Park Theatre on Feb. 7, 1806. Such talents, coupled with his personal charm, had already launched him upon his career in New York society, in which he was to know intimately Henry Brevoort, James K. Paulding, Charles Brockden Brown, and Washington Irving, when he was snatched by friends from the temptations of the stage to enroll in Union College. His father's bankruptcy, two years later, offered him an excuse to go on the stage and on Feb. 24, 1809, he made his début as an actor on the New York stage as Young Norval in John Home's tragedy of *Douglas*.

Young Payne's triumph was instantaneous, and during the first six months of this year he was a theatrical sensation in both New York and Boston, acting not only in standard popular plays but in *Romeo and Juliet*, *Hamlet*, and *King Lear*, and as Frederick, perhaps in his own version, in *Lovers' Vows*. But if Payne as an actor rose with meteor-like speed, he fell almost as swiftly, and though he played at the close of the year 1809 with enormous success in Baltimore and Philadelphia, and with a total profit of about $3,200, he found himself unbooked for engagements for the season of 1810–11. The reasons for the dwindling of his fame are obvious. His beautiful face, his eyes, glowing with animation and intelligence, and his melodious voice could not counterbalance the hard facts that, after all, he was on the stage a transient novelty, that he lacked the depth of study which distinguished the older favorites, that patriotic appreciation of a local prodigy could not last forever, and that he had quarreled with the powerful manager, Stephen Price. Nevertheless, Payne's essential talent on the stage cannot be challenged. By 1811 he had overcome some of the defects of his youth; in its issue of December 1811 the *Mirror of Taste* declared: "That genius, which he unquestionably possesses in a degree superior to any tragic actor on the American stage but Cooke, is now more controlled by judgment and at the same time rendered more active and efficient by study."

Payne, sensitive, petulant, and not yet aware of his gifts as a playwright, suffered keenly from these disappointments, and, as other misfortunes thickened about him, displayed that instability of spirits which was to handicap him throughout his life. His plan to turn bookseller and found in New York a literary exchange failed; he was, in spite of great profits from his acting, heavily in debt; and in 1812 his father died. Yet he still cherished his dream of success on the London boards, and when his friends, including Alexander Hanson, William Gwynn, and Jonathan Meredith, collected a fund of $2,000 to encourage him in an English career, he was confident that he would conquer Drury Lane and Covent Garden and return to America as a renowned tragedian. With such hopes and with numerous letters of introduction he sailed, on Jan. 17, 1813, for Liverpool. He was to remain in Europe for twenty years, a period in his fortunes strangely interwoven with fame and poverty. His friends in England, among them Peter Irving and Benjamin West, conspired for a repetition of his early success. Billed as a "Young Gentleman," he again essayed the part of Young Norval. His English audiences acknowledged his gifts, but what Genest said of the decline of "Master Betty" was also true of Payne, the American Roscius: "the Public had by this time recovered their senses." The applause was audible but not overwhelming, and

after a tour of the provinces in the spring and summer of 1814 he was back in London, penniless and without prospects. He had gained little save his friendship with Charles Kemble, and the knowledge that to earn a living he must return to authorship. He realized apparently that he was never to duplicate as an actor his early attainments of 1809. He now began a long career of dramatic hackwork, interrupted by attempts to act, by quarrels with managers (notably with Douglass Kinnaird, of Drury Lane), and even by imprisonment for debt.

The story of these years reveals all the erratic brilliance of Payne's mind and also his lovable nature, for the sake of which his devoted friend Washington Irving allowed himself to be tormented in Paris and London by Payne's creditors. In these two cities he now lived, writing and adapting plays for the London and New York theatres. In 1814 he sold to Henry Harris, manager of Covent Garden, where it was acted twenty-seven times, *The Maid and the Magpie,* an adaptation of *La Pie Voleuse* by Caigniez and Baudouin, and in the next year he composed various musical pieces and plays which with one exception never quite reached the footlights. For two seasons (1818, 1819) he conducted the correspondence for Harris' theatre, read manuscripts, wrote press notices, distributed orders on the house, and in other ways helped to promote the fortunes of plays and actors. Occasionally, in the midst of this drudgery, he struck fire, as in the popular success, *Brutus, or the Fall of Tarquin,* an historical tragedy in five acts (Drury Lane, Dec. 3, 1818), with Kean as Brutus and Julia Glover as Tullia. Although by Payne's own admission *Brutus* was in debt to seven other dramatists, among them Hugh Downman and Richard Cumberland, it was acted fifty-two times in this season and passed through six editions. The play showed Payne's skill in handling dramatic scenes, though Genest lamented that it "met with success *vastly* beyond its merits" (John Genest, *Some Account of the English Stage,* vol. VIII, 1832, p. 679).

This curious admixture of achievement and failure continued to characterize Payne's career. In 1820 he leased Sadler's Wells Theatre, but the collapse here of his own melodramas landed him at the end of the year in Fleet Street Prison, for debt. From this predicament he obtained release by his *Thérèse, the Orphan of Geneva,* a profitable adaptation of a French melodrama, which had its first English performance at Drury Lane, Feb. 2, 1821. Fleeing to Paris to escape duns, he sent over to London numerous plays for which Irving and possibly Hazlitt served as intermediaries. It seems ironic that while all these ambitious dramas were doomed to oblivion, he was to gain a slender immortality from a single song. *Clari, or, The Maid of Milan* (Covent Garden, May 8, 1823), metamorphosed into an opera at the request of Charles Kemble, contained the lyric "Home, Sweet Home!," which was to be sung throughout the English-speaking world during the remainder of the century. For the play, which was acted only twelve times, Payne received fifty pounds, but for the song not a single penny. About the lyric legends cluster, for example, that Payne heard the air from an Italian peasant girl, or that it symbolized his sad, wandering life. Actually, knowing no music, he wrote the words to the measure of the "Ranz des Vaches," and at the time of its composition he was comfortably established in Paris. Eager for fame as actor and dramatist, he won it paradoxically as the author of a sentimental ballad in a relatively prosperous period of his life.

In the summer of 1823, Irving, who had long been fascinated by Payne's theatrical ventures, returned from Dresden with some unfinished operas and was persuaded to collaborate with his friend. Out of this association resulted at least ten plays, seven of which were produced, and two of which were acted with some success. The three-act comedy, *Charles the Second; or, The Merry Monarch* (Covent Garden, May 27, 1824), with Charles Kemble as the King and Fawcett as Captain Copp, was distinguished for unity of structure, rapidity of action, brilliance of dialogue, and very nearly achieved the quality of high comedy. *Richelieu, A Domestic Tragedy* (Covent Garden, Feb. 11, 1826) was less fortunate, in spite of the efforts of Kemble and Mrs. Glover in the leading rôles; it ran for only six nights. The play revealed for the first time, by its dedication to Irving, the collaboration of the dramatist and the essayist.

Although the meager proceeds from these plays discouraged Irving from further sustained collaboration with Payne, he continued to aid his friend by criticizing his manuscripts and by protecting him from his hordes of creditors. From the fall of 1823 to the summer of 1825 Payne was in London, sometimes under the name of "J. Hayward" in order to escape the attentions of these gentlemen. In the intervals of his troubled dealings with managers, he contrived to fall in love with Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, who told him frankly that she preferred Washington Irving, news which the latter, when Payne later showed him the lady's correspondence, received calmly, if we may judge from an entry in his

journal. No proof exists that in this curious triangle any real passion existed, unless it were the temperamental Payne's for Mrs. Shelley. Certainly it caused no rift in the friendship of Payne and Irving, for at this very time Irving secured for Payne a contract with Stephen Price. Between Oct. 2, 1826, and Mar. 24, 1827, Payne, again in London, brought out the twenty-six numbers of his *Opera Glass,* a weekly paper "for peeping into the microcosm of the fine arts, and more especially of the drama," and for five years more, a period which remains somewhat obscure, he lingered in England. On June 16, 1832, with passage money provided by friends in America, he sailed for home, a disillusioned man of forty-one, rich in experience but as poor as ever in purse.

Yet he found himself an eminent citizen. On Nov. 29 a benefit was arranged for him, offering a program which included *Brutus,* with Edwin Forrest, and *Katherine and Petruchio,* with Charles and Fanny Kemble, both now for the first time in America. The benefit's conclusion was *Charles II,* with James W. Wallack as Captain Copp. Between the plays Payne heard an address of welcome, a rendition of "Home, Sweet Home!," and the finale of *Clari.* This and the public dinner were soothing tributes not only to Payne but also to the army of creditors, who at once swarmed down upon the unlucky dramatist and devoured the slight income from the benefit. Undaunted, Payne at once resumed his magnificent schemes, including one for a magazine to be published in London for the advancement of art, science, and belles-lettres in the United States. Not one issue of the magazine ever went to press.

Payne's make-shift way of life now led him into an adventure which almost caused his death, and which elicited from him the most unselfish act of his career. In Georgia, in September 1835, in search of material for his magazine, he became interested in original material owned by John Ross, head of the Cherokee nation, whose affairs with the United States government were then a subject of stormy controversy. Ross turned over to Payne material which was to furnish a series of articles for the magazine. In the midst of these labors the Georgia Guards arrested Ross and Payne and accused the latter of being an abolitionist and in league with the French. Ultimately released, Payne was advised by his captors never to return to Georgia. On his way home, however, he had the courage to publish, in the *Knoxville* (Tennessee) *Register* two articles: "John Howard Payne to his Countrymen" and "The Cherokee Nation to the People of the United States." Both essays were lively, forceful accounts not only of his own mishaps, which he was always inclined to view with a humorous eye, but of the wrongs of the Indians. Back in New York he began a history of the Cherokee nation. This is still in manuscript, as is a play of this period, *Romulus the Shepherd King* (1839).

Payne

In spite of his misdemeanors Payne was now widely known in America, and when Tyler became president, his advocates secured for him in 1842 through the aid of Daniel Webster an appointment as American consul at Tunis. Recalled by President Polk in 1845, he returned by way of Rome, Paris, and London, reaching New York in the summer of 1847. Once again his creditors made his life wretched. After a struggle against the opposition of Thomas H. Benton, he again obtained in March 1851 the post at Tunis. It was the last act in the drama of his feverish life. During the winter of 1851–52 his health failed rapidly, and he died on Apr. 9, 1852, still beset by unfinished plans and unpaid debts. Thirty-one years later his body was brought to America and interred at Oak Hill Cemetery in Washington.

[A detailed biography of John Howard Payne is in process of composition by E. Allison Grant. The following books throw light upon his career and personality: Gabriel Harrison, *The Life and Writings of John Howard Payne* (1875, 1885); W. T. Hanson, Jr., *The Early Life of John Howard Payne* (1913); Rosa Pendleton Chiles, *John Howard Payne* (1930); *Memoirs of John Howard Payne, the Am. Roscius* (London, 1815); T. S. Fay, "Sketch of the Life of John Howard Payne," *N. Y. Mirror,* Nov. 24, Dec. 1, 1832; A. H. Quinn, *Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923); P. M. Irving, *Life and Letters of Washington Irving* (4 vols., 1862–64); "Correspondence of Washington Irving and John Howard Payne," *Scribner's Mag.,* Oct., Nov. 1910; *The Romance of Mary W. Shelley, John Howard Payne, and Washington Irving* (Boston, 1907); *Jour. of Washington Irving (1823–24)* (1931), ed. by Stanley Williams; T. T. P. Luquer, "When Payne Wrote 'Home! Sweet Home!,'" *Scribner's Mag.,* Dec. 1915.]

E. A. G.
S. T. W.

PAYNE, LEWIS THORNTON POWELL, 1845–1865 [See Booth, John Wilkes].

PAYNE, OLIVER HAZARD (July 21, 1839–June 27, 1917), capitalist, was born at Cleveland, Ohio, the son of Henry B. Payne [*q.v.*] and Mary (Perry) Payne. His mother was a daughter of Nathan Perry, honored pioneer merchant of Cleveland, who had been identified with the city's growth since going there as a fur trader in 1804. Soon after his son's birth the father, already successful in the fields of industry and commerce, entered upon a political career. Oliver was educated at Phillips Academy and at Yale University. A member of the class

of 1863, he left in 1861 to enter the Union army, his father having procured for him a lieutenant's commission in an Illinois regiment. Soon he was advanced to captain and his company took part in the engagements at New Madrid, Corinth, and Booneville, Miss. On Sept. 11, 1862, he became lieutenant-colonel of the 124th Ohio Volunteers and on Jan. 1, 1863, he was promoted colonel. He was seriously wounded at Chickamauga, suffered a long convalescence, and rejoined his regiment to take a gallant part in the battles of Resaca and Pickett's Mill, his conduct winning him the brevet of brigadier-general for "faithful and meritorious services." In depressed mood after the arduous Atlanta campaign, he resigned on Nov. 2, 1864. Apparently his men held their very young colonel in high regard.

Returning to Cleveland and entering business, Payne rapidly gained a place for himself in the iron industry and also in the pioneer field of oil refining. Until the formation of the Standard Oil Company in 1870, Clark, Payne & Company were the largest refiners in Cleveland and the chief of Rockefeller's competitors. Payne, however, became a shareholder in the notorious South Improvement Company (1872), and a few years later allied his oil interests completely with the Standard Oil Company. He was almost immediately made treasurer, which office he held until his removal to New York City in 1884. His holdings in Standard Oil were at one time exceeded only by those of John D. Rockefeller, the Charles Pratt estate, and the Harkness family. While in Ohio he was a heavy contributor to Democratic campaign funds, and through his father was influential in party matters. He also used his wealth to further his father's career and was charged with securing Henry B. Payne's seat in the Senate in 1884 by bribing the Ohio legislature. The charge, though never proved, was the subject of acrimonious dispute for years. In 1886 the Ohio legislature asked the Senate for an investigation and submitted evidence, but the Senate refused to act. During the debates in the Senate over combinations in trade and industry it was frequently charged that Henry B. Payne was there as a representative of Standard Oil. It was also hinted that Payne's support of Cleveland was a factor in the appointment of William C. Whitney, Payne's brother-in-law, as secretary of the navy.

After going to New York Payne gradually divested himself of his oil holdings and invested in other fields, becoming a director in various banking firms and industrial corporations. He was a dominant figure in the affairs of the

American Tobacco Company and its subsidiaries (A. Pound and S. T. Moore, *They Told Barron*, 1930, pp. 49–50) and was influential in the affairs of the Tennessee Coal and Iron Company at the time of its absorption by the United States Steel Corporation. Yachting was his chief recreation, and every summer between 1898 and 1914 he visited Europe in his *Aphrodite*, which when built was the largest, fastest, and most luxuriously appointed steam yacht in the country. At one time it carried him around the world. He lived a bachelor at his Fifth Avenue mansion in winter, but spent other seasons of the year on estates in Ulster County, N. Y., or in Georgia. During his lifetime he was a quiet giver to many causes, his most notable philanthropy being a gift of $500,000 to found Cornell Medical College and further gifts to it totaling over $8,000,000 which enabled it to take front rank among institutions of its kind. In his will he bequeathed $1,000,000 to the New York Public Library, $1,000,000 to Yale University, $1,000,000 to Lakeside Hospital, Cleveland, and smaller amounts to many other medical and educational institutions. The greater part of the remainder of his large estate passed to his favorite nephews, Harry Payne Bingham and Payne Whitney.

[G. W. Lewis, *The Campaigns of the 124th Regiment* (1894); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I; Ida M. Tarbell, *The Hist. of the Standard Oil Company* (2 vols., 1904); H. D. Lloyd, *Wealth against Commonwealth* (1894); *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; A. F. Payne White, *The Paynes of Hamilton* (1912); the *Sun* (N. Y.), *N. Y. Herald* and *N. Y. Times*, June 28, 1917, and *N. Y. Times*, July 7, 1917.] O. W. H.

PAYNE, SERENO ELISHA (June 26, 1843–Dec. 10, 1914), politician, was born at Hamilton, N. Y., the son of Betsy (Sears) and William Wallace Payne, a farmer and one-time assemblyman, and the nephew of Henry B. Payne [*q.v.*]. The family, soon after his birth, removed to Auburn, where the boy attended the academy. After graduation at the University of Rochester in 1864, he entered the law office of Cox & Avery in Auburn and in 1866 was admitted to the bar. He immediately opened a law office in Auburn, which he maintained to the end of his life, gradually acquiring a large practice. On Apr. 23, 1873, he married Gertrude Knapp of Auburn, who bore him one son. From the first he was interested in politics, became an active Republican worker, and held a succession of local offices: city clerk of Auburn, 1867–68, supervisor of Cayuga County, 1871–72, district attorney for that county, 1873–79, and member of the Auburn board of education, 1879–82. In the fall of 1882 he was elected to the Forty-eighth Con-

gress, and two years later was reëlected, but after the Democrats gerrymandered the district he was defeated for the Fiftieth Congress. He was chosen to a vacancy in the Fifty-first Congress caused by the death of Newton W. Nutting and thereafter served continuously until his death. He was proud of his long tenure and achieved a reputation as one of the most faithful, conscientious, and hardworking representatives in Washington.

Though a plodding member, without brilliance or dash, a slow, heavy speaker, and handicapped in later years by partial deafness, he gradually advanced to the position of a leader. In the Fifty-first Congress he became a member of the ways and means committee and thereafter devoted his chief attention to the tariff. He helped draft the McKinley Tariff of 1890 and made his first important speech to the House in its behalf. Four years later he was one of the principal opponents of the Wilson Tariff. When the Dingley Bill was written in 1897 he stood second in rank on the ways and means committee and had served there longer than any other Republican. He prepared whole schedules of this bill and had the distinction of closing the House debate upon it. In 1899 he served as a member of the American-British joint high commission. When Dingley died that year, he succeeded to the chairmanship of the ways and means committee, and he became one of the so-called "Big Five," a controlling group that included Cannon, Tawney, Dalzell, and James Sherman.

His two principal ambitions were to be speaker and to attach his name to some law of lasting importance. He was denied the first when in 1903 Cannon was chosen presiding officer of the House, the New York Republicans splitting their vote between James Sherman and Payne, either of whom might have succeeded had the other withdrawn. Payne was an effective lieutenant of Cannon, often taking charge of floor strategy. His second ambition was realized, when in 1909 he gave his name to the Payne-Aldrich Tariff. His work in connection with this much-denounced measure was far more palatable to the country at large than Senator Aldrich's (F. W. Taussig, *The Tariff History of the United States,* 5th ed., copr. 1910, 368–408). He conducted long and honest hearings before the ways and means committee, with a close critical comparison of foreign and domestic costs. In introducing the bill he made a detailed explanatory speech, the fullness and conscientiousness of which were in striking contrast with the speeches of McKinley and Dingley in 1890 and 1897 and with Aldrich's speeches in the Senate. The House made no important changes in the bill; the Senate made 847, half of them of substantial importance and generally upward in trend. Payne showed some resentment, for he had said that duties should be fixed strictly at the difference between the cost in the United States and the cost abroad, and that the best friends of protection were those who tried to keep the rates reasonably protective. He frankly asserted, for example, that the Senate had gone too far in almost doubling the House rates on shingles. In the conference hearings on the Payne-Aldrich Bill he was distinctly more moderate than Tawney and Dalzell. Yet of the bill as finally passed he was a warm defender. In spite of failing health he remained active in the House, and on the day of his death he not only occupied his usual seat but made a short speech on an appropriation bill.

[*Sereno Elisha Payne . . . Memorial Addresses . . . in the House of Representatives* (1916); N. W. Stephenson, *N. W. Aldrich* (1930); D. S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of . . . N. Y.*, vol. III (1909); A. F. Payne, *The Paynes of Hamilton* (1912); *N. Y. Tribune* and *Evening Post* (N. Y.), Dec. 11, 1914.]

A. N.

PAYNE, WILLIAM HAROLD (May 12, 1836–June 18, 1907), educator, was born in Ontario County, N. Y., near the village of Farmington, the son of Gideon Riley Payne and Mary Brown (Smith). He attended country school during the winter months and by the time he was thirteen had mastered textbooks on algebra and grammar. Since he was of frail constitution, he found farm work heavy as well as irksome, and accordingly his mother, who recognized his bent for study, encouraged him to enter the Macedon Academy in 1852. Here he studied for two years, teaching in country schools part of the time. During the summer of 1854 he attended the New York Conference Seminary at Charlottesville, then gave eighteen months to teaching country schools. On Oct. 2, 1856, he married Sara Evaline Fort, and with her conducted the school at Victor, N. Y., for the next two years. He was then appointed principal of the Union School at Three Rivers, Mich., where his wife's family had settled. Under his administration the school grew from two to six departments in six years, and he won a local reputation. In 1864, he became principal of the union school at Niles, Mich., and from 1866 to 1869 was in charge of Ypsilanti Seminary, resigning that position to become superintendent of public schools at Adrian. He was president of the Michigan Teachers Association in 1866 and editor of its organ, the *Michigan Teacher,* from its first issue, January 1866, to 1870.

During his first year at Adrian he delivered an address, *The Relation between the University and Our High Schools* (published 1871), by which he first attracted attention as an advocate of a coordinated state school system which would permit the pupil to pass by regular steps from the primary grades to the University. He also urged the training of prospective teachers in the technique of teaching. His views met with some opposition, but won the favorable notice of James B. Angell [*q.v.*], president of the University of Michigan, who succeeded, in 1878, in securing the establishment of a chair of education in the University, the first chair of pedagogy in the United States. The following year Payne became its first incumbent. To supply textbooks for his new courses he wrote *Syllabus of a Course of Lectures on the Science and Art of Teaching* (1879); *Outlines of Educational Doctrine* (1882); *Contributions to the Science of Education* (1886); edited D. P. Page's *Theory and Practice of Teaching* (1885), and translated *The History of Pedagogy* (1886) from the French of Gabriel Compayre. He had previously published *Chapters On School Supervision* (1875). The department of education developed under his professorship until it included seven courses offered by the professor himself and four courses in special methods by members of other departments.

In 1887 Payne accepted the dual position of chancellor of the University of Nashville and president of Peabody Normal School, Nashville, Tenn. He reorganized the library; raised the standards of the normal school, which in 1889 was renamed Peabody Normal College; and by 1901 had more than trebled the enrollment. In that year he resigned to resume his old professorship at the University of Michigan, vacated by the death of his successor, Burke A. Hinsdale [*q.v.*]. During the Nashville period he translated *The Elements of Psychology* (1890) and *Psychology Applied to Education* (1893) from the French of Compayre, and *Émile* (1893) from the French of J. J. Rousseau. In 1901 he published *The Education of Teachers*. His first wife had died in 1899, and on July 6, 1901, he married Elizabeth Rebecca Clark. Ill health compelled him to retire from teaching in 1904 and he died in Ann Arbor three years later. He had five children by his first marriage. A colleague (I. N. Demmon, in *Michigan Alumnus*, July 1907) characterized Payne as a perfect disciplinarian, combining gentleness and firmness in a singular degree.

[G. C. Poret, *The Contributions of William Harold Payne to Public Education* (1930), with a bibliog. of printed and manuscript sources: *Report of the Pioneer and Hist. Soc. of Mich.*, vol. IX (1886); *Jour. of Proc. and Addresses . . . Nat. Educ. Asso.*, 1907; *Mich. Alumnus*, Nov. 1901, July 1907; L. C. Aldrich, *Hist. of Ontario County, N. Y.* (1893); *Am. Biog. Hist. of Eminent and Self Made Men, Mich. Vol.* (1878); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Detroit Free Press*, June 19, 1907.]

R. H. E.

PAYNE, WILLIAM MORTON (Feb. 14, 1858–July 11, 1919), teacher, translator, and literary critic, was born at Newburyport, Mass., the son of Henry Morton and Emma Merrill (Tilton) Payne, and the descendant of William Payne, who emigrated from England in 1635 and settled at Watertown. In 1868 his family removed to Chicago, where the remainder of his life was passed. The boy was educated in the public schools of Newburyport and Chicago. Financial reverses of his family made it impossible for him to proceed to Harvard, as had been designed. Instead, he found employment in the Chicago Public Library (1874–76), and then as a teacher of literature in the high schools of Chicago (1876–1919). At the same time, not accepting misfortune supinely, he undertook a course of self-education which involved severe discipline. And his efforts were eminently successful. He became an accomplished linguist, speaking Norwegian, German, and Italian fluently, and French so perfectly that he deceived Frenchmen as to his origin; and attaining besides a competent knowledge of Swedish, Danish, and Spanish. In later years he traveled repeatedly in Europe. By 1883 he was entering upon his career as a critic and man of letters, and had established a connection with the Chicago *Dial*. He presently became literary editor of the *Chicago Daily News* (1884–88), and then of the *Chicago Evening Journal* (1888–92), and thereafter acted as associate editor of the *Dial* until 1915. In addition, he contributed frequently to periodicals, wrote editorials for the *Chicago Journal* (1917–18), edited *English in American Universities* (1895), *American Literary Criticism* (1904), and two volumes of selections from Swinburne (*Selected Poems*, 1905, *Mary Stuart*, 1906), and wrote sixteen essays and made many translations in prose and verse for C. D. Warner's *Library of the World's Best Literature*. His principal translations, however, were careful and felicitous renderings of Björnstjerne Björnson's dramatic trilogy, *Sigurd Slembe* (1888), and of the same author's epic cycle, *Arnljot Gelline* (1917).

His remarkable activity did not render Payne a drudge. Inevitably the usefulness of much of his journalistic work was exhausted when the immediate occasion for it had passed; but, taken together, this work represents a consistent force

through many years in support of the humanities —in support of liberal culture based upon the classical tradition of literature. Payne's criticism was judicial, was concerned more with ideas than with literary form, and was well calculated to maintain tried standards of taste while communicating the significant influences, old and new, which were powerful in the nineteenth century. Though he was less forceful and less individual than Matthew Arnold, he still aimed at the ends which his older English contemporary set before himself; and in so doing he attained a position of more than local influence. For it was he, more than anybody else, who made the *Dial* what it was in its best days. Ninety of his essays for the *Dial* were reprinted in three small volumes—*Little Leaders* (1895), *Editorial Echoes* (1902), and *Various Views* (1902)—which exhibit his critical talent more happily than his two larger, more formal volumes of essays, *The Greater English Poets of the Nineteenth Century* (1907) and *Leading American Essayists* (1910). The former volume was based upon a course of lectures which Payne delivered at the Universities of Wisconsin (1900), Kansas (1904), and Chicago (1904). His work was too quietly performed to gain for him the recognition he deserved in his own day; but the University of Wisconsin made him an honorary LL.D. in 1903, and he became a member of the National Institute of Arts and Letters. At his death after a short illness, he was buried from the home of his lifelong friend, Professor Paul Shorey. He was never married.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; H. D. Paine, ed., *Paine Family Records*, Nov. 1878–Oct. 1883; *Chicago Herald and Examiner* and *Chicago Tribune*, July 12, 1919; information from Mrs. Herbert E. Bradley (in whose possession Payne's library, scrap-books, and correspondence remain), and from Prof. Paul Shorey.]

R. S.

PAYSON, EDWARD (July 25, 1783–Oct. 22, 1827), Congregational clergyman, was a native of Rindge, N. H. His grandfather, Phillips Payson, his father, Seth [*q.v.*], and two uncles, Phillips and John Payson, were all Congregational ministers. Seth Payson was long pastor at Rindge, and although an epileptic, was able intellectually and active in public affairs. He married a relative, Grata Payson, of Pomfret, Conn. Edward, one of seven children, was educated at home and at the academy in New Ipswich. He was ready for college at sixteen, but although he was extremely susceptible to religious influences from early childhood, his father held him back, since he had not made confession of faith, saying, "To give you a liberal education while destitute of religion, would be like putting a sword into the hands of a madman." Edward, nevertheless, entered the sophomore class of Harvard College in 1800, and graduated in 1803. For the next three years he was principal of an academy in Portland, Me.

While here his thought became increasingly concerned with religion. In September 1805 he joined his father's church, and in August of the following year retired to Rindge to study theology. Licensed to preach on May 20, 1807, he supplied the church at Marlboro, N. H., for about three months, and later became colleague of Rev. Elijah Kellogg at the Second Congregational Church, Portland, Me., where he was ordained Dec. 16, 1807. From December 1811 until his death he was sole pastor. On May 8, 1811, he married Ann Louisa Shipman of New Haven, Conn. They had eight children, one of whom, Elizabeth Payson Prentiss [*q.v.*], was a popular writer of religious fiction.

From about his twenty-first year, Payson was a votary of religion in no ordinary degree. His own spiritual experience and the spiritual welfare of others engrossed his every thought and all his energies. The revival spirit was always burning within him. Twelve hours of each day he gave to study, never less than two to devotions, and at least one day a week he spent in fasting and prayer. He was unhealthily introspective, subject to periods of highest elevation and deepest despair. Doubtless his physical inheritance, and the fact that from the beginning of his pastorate he was a victim of what was probably tuberculosis, had much to do with his mental processes. Although his preaching was frequently dark and menacing, and painted human nature in such colors that unregenerate hearers would address each other on a Monday morning as "Brother Devil," his complete abandon in his faith and calling, his genuine spirituality, and his vivid preaching and oratorical ability inspired reverence for him as a man and gave him great effectiveness in the pulpit. Calls came to him from Boston and New York, but he was not persuaded that they emanated from God, and he stayed in Portland, until, after a long period of failing strength, with extreme suffering at the end, he died in his forty-fourth year. Those who came to view his body saw attached to his breast, as he had directed, the admonition, "Remember the words which I spoke unto you while I was yet present with you." They were also engraved on the plate of his coffin.

After his death, both in the United States and in England Payson became one of the most read of American divines. Previously only a few of his sermons were printed, but *The Bible Above*

All Price (1814) had wide circulation and *An Address to Seamen* (1821), still greater, being translated into several foreign languages. A collection, *Sermons by the Late Rev. E. Payson, D.D.*, was published in 1828, and *A Memoir of the Rev. Edward Payson, D.D.*, containing many letters and extracts from his diary, by Asa Cummings, appeared in 1830. Other volumes of selections were issued, and in 1846 there appeared under the editorship of Cummings *The Complete Works of Edward Payson, D.D.* (3 vols.), the first volume of which contains the *Memoir*.

[W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. II (1857); *Our Pastor; or Reminiscences of Rev. Edward Payson, D.D.* (1855); E. L. Janes, *Mementos of Rev. E. Payson, D.D.* (1873); Wm. Willis, *Journals of the Rev. Thomas Smith and the Rev. Samuel Deane, . . . with . . . a Summary Hist. of Portland* (1849); *Christian Observer* (London), Apr., May, June, 1833; *Christian Examiner*, July 1847; *Quart. Reg. and Jour.*, Apr. 1828, Feb. 1831; *Biblical Repertory and Theological Rev.*, Apr. 1831; *Spirit of the Pilgrims*, Nov. 1829, Jan. 1831; *Meth. Mag. and Quart. Rev.*, Oct. 1838; *American Patriot* (Portland), Oct. 26, 1827.] H. E. S.

PAYSON, SETH (Sept. 30, 1758–Feb. 26, 1820), Congregational clergyman, was born in Walpole, Mass., the son of the Rev. Phillips Payson by his second wife, Kezia (Bullen), widow of Seth Morse. As a child he had a feeble constitution with a tendency to epilepsy. Later he enjoyed vigorous health until within a year of his death. He entered Harvard College in 1773, where he had been preceded by his father, and by an elder brother, Phillips, and was followed by another brother, John, all of whom entered the Congregational ministry. Seth graduated from Harvard in 1777, receiving one of the highest honors in his class. Although in his early religious opinions he inclined toward Arminianism, he became eventually a decided Calvinist.

On Dec. 4, 1782, he was ordained pastor of the Congregational church in Rindge, N. H. Here "he laboured with exemplary fidelity and zeal" until his death thirty-eight years later. As a preacher his reputation was excellent, for his "intellect was sharp and vigorous, his imagination lively," and his ideas "admirably arranged in his own mind." Furthermore, "he was able to communicate them to others with great clearness and force." In the discharge of his other parish duties "his unceasing solicitude was to promote the highest interests of the people of his charge." Throughout his long ministry he "possessed, in a high degree, the esteem and affection of his flock" (Sprague, *post*). He also interested himself in religious affairs outside his parish. Early in the nineteenth century his interest in missions led him to undertake a missionary tour of several

months to the new settlements in the Province of Maine. He also served for several years as vice-president of the New Hampshire Bible Society, and was a member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. In 1815 he represented the General Association of New Hampshire in the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Philadelphia. That his activities outside of his parish were not altogether religious, however, is evident from the fact that from 1802 to 1806 he sat in the New Hampshire Senate, and was recognized as one of its ablest members. In June 1799 he preached the annual sermon before the legislature, which was so powerful as to influence the General Court to strengthen the Sunday laws. In 1813 he was made a trustee of Dartmouth College, a position which he held until his death, taking the side of the college in the events that ultimately precipitated the famous Dartmouth College case.

In addition to the publication of a number of occasional sermons he put forth in 1802 his *Proofs of the Real Existence and Dangerous Tendency of Illuminism*, inspired, without doubt, by the appearance in the United States of the works of Robison and Barruel, as well as by the published sermons of the Rev. Jedidiah Morse [*q.v.*] on the same subject. In his *Proofs*, Payson again called attention to the danger to church and state occasioned by the rise of the Illuminati societies in Europe, and to their probable existence in America. Although a somewhat belated exposition of the subject, the work seems to have attracted considerable attention, particularly among the clergy.

In 1819, after a severe attack of epilepsy, his mind gradually failed and he died in February of the following year. His wife, whom he married in 1782, was his cousin Grata Payson of Pomfret, Conn. They had two daughters and five sons, two of the latter entering the ministry, Edward [*q.v.*] settling in Portland, Me., and Phillips in Leominster, Mass.

[W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. II (1857); Isaac Robinson, *The Christian's Knowledge of Christ . . . Sermon Delivered at Rindge, N. H., Mar. 1, 1820, At the Funeral of Rev. Seth Payson, D.D.* (1820); E. S. Stearns, *Hist. of the Town of Rindge* (1875); *Vital Records of Walpole, Mass.* (1902).] W. R. W.

PEABODY, ANDREW PRESTON (Mar. 19, 1811–Mar. 10, 1893), Unitarian clergyman, college professor, author, was born in Beverly, Mass. He was the son of Andrew and Mary (Rantoul) Peabody, and a descendant of Francis Peabody who emigrated from England to Massachusetts as early as 1635. Andrew Peabody desired that his son be educated for the Christian ministry. "He died," writes the latter, "be-

fore I was three years old, and on his death-bed he charged my mother to fulfil his wish, . . . should I be fit for such a calling" (Normandie, *post*, p. 290). The younger Andrew was something of an infant prodigy. He could read at the age of three. He was only twelve when he passed with distinction the entrance examinations of Harvard College. Being "regarded as somewhat immature," he continued for a year under private instruction, with the result that, instead of being retarded, his scholastic advancement was accelerated, "for in this one year's study he anticipated two years of college work" (Peabody, *post*, p. 32). Thus he was only thirteen when he entered college as a member of the junior class. He was graduated at the age of fifteen being "with the exception of Paul Dudley of the class of 1690, the youngest boy . . . that ever received the Harvard degree" (*Ibid.*, p. 32). His scholarship, though excellent, was not exceptional.

Too young to take any steps toward fulfilling his father's dying wish and not old enough to undertake any task commensurable with his scholastic attainments, he ventured upon the work of teaching. At the age of seventeen he was principal of the academy at Portsmouth, N. H. He was hardly successful. In 1829 he entered the Harvard Divinity School, graduating therefrom in 1832, and tutoring during the ensuing year at Harvard College. In October 1833 he was ordained and installed as assistant to Dr. Nathan Parker, minister of the South Parish Unitarian church, Portsmouth, N. H. Two or three weeks later Parker died and young Peabody became pastor of this important church and continued in that position for twenty-seven years. Through a combination of unusual erudition and fineness of character he won an influential following in Portsmouth, while his astonishing literary activities kept his name before an ever widening public. He wrote extensively for the *Whig Review* and in 1853 became editor and proprietor of the *North American Review*, in which relationship he remained for ten years.

In 1860 he was invited to succeed Frederic Dan Huntington [*q.v.*] as Plummer Professor of Christian Morals at Harvard. He served in 1862 and again in 1868–69 as acting president of the college. As Plummer professor it was his duty to conduct daily prayers, to preach two sermons on Sunday, and to exercise pastoral care over the students. He was easily the most beloved of all the professors at Harvard, and in some ways undoubtedly the most influential. It may fairly be said that he made no contribution to scholarship for all his vast learning.

"He was not eloquent as a preacher or inspiring as a teacher; . . . his instruction in ethics was little more than a hearing of stumbling recitations from a memorized text yet, if any one who was in those remote days a student at Harvard College were now asked to name the personal influence which he still recalls as most beneficent, he would almost inevitably single out . . . the friend and counsellor who, by common consent of that generation, was given the title of the College Saint" (F. G. Peabody, *post*, pp. 28, 29).

In temper and outlook, Peabody is best described by the word "conservative." He was a Unitarian partly because of family ties and partly because he valued the wide freedom which that fellowship gave him. Though he prized his Unitarian fellowship very highly and never thought of surrendering it, he had no sympathy with the tendency among his Unitarian associates to depart from the modestly heretical theological position of Unitarian beginnings. It may, quite correctly, be said that he was in closer sympathy with the orthodox Congregationalism of his time than with the prevailing Unitarian thought. He was a prodigious worker. His contributions to the *North American Review* fill 1,600 pages. In the last twenty years of his life, in addition to his college duties, he published 120 books and pamphlets, all of which were written out by his own hand. In the Harvard Library he is credited with 190 titles. His volumes *Conversation; Its Faults and Graces* (1856); *Reminiscences of European Travel* (1868); *A Manual of Moral Philosophy* (1873); *Christian Belief and Life* (1875), and *Building a Character* (1886) suggest the variety of themes he wrote upon. In 1881 he was made professor emeritus, and from 1883 to 1893 was an overseer of the college. On Sept. 12, 1836, he married, in Portsmouth, Catherine Whipple Roberts.

[James de Normandie, in *Heralds of a Liberal Faith*, ed. by S. A. Eliot, vol. III (1910); E. J. Young, *Andrew P. Peabody* (1896), reprinted from *Mass. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, 2 ser., vol. XI (1897); *New World*, June 1893; *Unitarian*, Apr. 1893; *Christian Reg.*, Mar. 16, 1893; C. L. Slattery, *Certain American Faces* (1918); F. G. Peabody, *Reminiscences of Present-Day Saints* (1927); *Harvard Univ. Quinquennial Cat. Officers and Grads.* (1925).] C. G.

PEABODY, ELIZABETH PALMER (May 16, 1804–Jan. 3, 1894), educator and author, the eldest child of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Palmer) Peabody, was born at Billerica, Mass. Her father at the time of her birth was practising medicine and dentistry. Her mother, a daughter of Joseph Palmer [*q.v.*], conducted a private school in which her children were trained and was an early American editor of the poetry of Edmund Spenser. As early as 1820, after a childhood in Salem, the sixteen-year-old Elizabeth had opened

a private school at Lancaster and had begun a life of teaching. Two years later she began a more ambitious project, a private school in Boston, where she herself studied Greek as a pupil of Ralph Waldo Emerson, then teaching in his brother's school during his first year out of college. In 1823 she went to Maine as a governess; but, attracted by the opportunities of Boston, she returned in 1825 to open another school. While conducting this, she became a friend of the William Ellery Channing family and for nine years she acted as Channing's secretary and amanuensis, a relationship which resulted in her becoming familiar with the writings of Coleridge and other European transcendental writers, and which, nearly fifty years later, resulted in her book, *Reminiscences of Rev. William Ellery Channing, D.D.* (1880). Except for a six months' rest in Salem, she continued the double duty of being secretary and teacher until September 1834, when she relinquished both and became Bronson Alcott's assistant in his Temple School in Boston. The journal of her experiences there and of Alcott's unconventional method of teaching was published anonymously in 1835 under the title *Record of a School*. In 1836 she returned to live with her parents at Salem. Keeping her contacts with Boston, she became one of the first members of the so-called Transcendental Club and visited often in the Emerson home in Concord. Meanwhile, in 1837, she discovered that the author of certain stories which had attracted her attention in the *New England Magazine* was the playmate of her Salem childhood, Nathaniel Hawthorne. She introduced Hawthorne to her Boston literary friends and to her youngest sister, Sophia, whom Hawthorne married in 1842. Another sister, Mary, married Horace Mann in 1843.

In 1839 Miss Peabody returned to Boston and opened a bookshop in West Street. Herself responsive to all current social enthusiasms, and her shop the only one in Boston carrying a stock of foreign books, she found herself in the midst of the transcendental ferment of the time. Groups of reformers met in the shop to plan the Brook Farm community, liberal clergymen and Harvard professors came there for their European books, and in the back room she set up a press and published three of Hawthorne's books, several of Margaret Fuller's translations from the German, and for two years, 1842–43, the organ of transcendentalism, the *Dial*, to which she contributed two articles on Brook Farm. After 1845 she began in earnest her career in education. Before she was thirty she had published elementary textbooks of grammar and history. From 1850 to

1860 she turned her entire attention to the advancement of the study of history in the public schools and in 1856 issued her *Chronological History of the United States*. The reading of one of Friedrich Froebel's books and a conversation in 1859 with his former pupil, Mrs. Carl Schurz, inspired Miss Peabody to establish the first American kindergarten, opened in Boston in 1860. Though the experiment was successful in the eyes of her patrons, she herself feared it was not in full accord with Froebel's theories and, closing the school in 1867, she spent a year in Hamburg studying methods and theory. Returning, she published a magazine, the *Kindergarten Messenger*, from 1873 to 1875, and lectured in various parts of the country.

Indian education attracted her attention about 1880 and her enthusiasm culminated in the discovery of Sarah Winnemucca, founder of a school for Piute Indians, who preyed upon Miss Peabody's credulity and for ten years absorbed whatever money Miss Peabody would send or could persuade her friends to send. After this expensive bit of sentimentality, she retired to Jamaica Plain and to Concord, where from 1879 to 1884 she was a member and lecturer at Alcott's Concord School of Philosophy. The vivacious woman had become one who, in Moses Coit Tyler's words, had a "bulky form, puffy face, and watery eyes," but whose charm of personality, especially in reminiscence, did not desert her. Her final book, *A Last Evening with Allston* (1886), recorded some of her reminiscences and reprinted some of her essays from the *Dial*. She died at Jamaica Plain and was buried in Concord near Emerson and Hawthorne.

[There are type-written copies of "Elizabeth Peabody: A Biog. Study" (1918) by Doris Louise McCart in the Chicago Univ. Lib. and in the N. Y. Pub. Lib. Biographical information can be found in Miss Peabody's books and in her magazine article, "The Origin and Growth of the Kindergarten," *Education*, May–June 1882. See also: G. W. Cooke, *An Hist. and Biog. Introduction to Accompany the Dial* (1902); S. H. Peabody, *Peabody (Paybody, Pabody, Paybodie) Geneal.* (1909); and obituaries in the *Academy* (London), Feb. 3, 1894, *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 4, 1894, and *N.-Y. Daily Tribune*, Jan. 5, 1894.] R. W. A.

PEABODY, GEORGE (Feb. 18, 1795–Nov. 4, 1869), merchant, financier, philanthropist, was born in South Danvers, now Peabody, Mass., the son of Thomas and Judith (Dodge) Peabody. His first ancestor in America was Francis Peabody, who emigrated from England in 1635 and settled at Topsfield, Mass. The poverty of his parents prevented George from receiving more than a rudimentary education, and at the age of eleven he was apprenticed to a grocer in Danvers. He subsequently held positions of increasing responsibility in Newburyport, Mass., and

Georgetown, D. C. Here, in 1814, he assumed the management of Elisha Riggs's wholesale dry-goods warehouse and was soon admitted to partnership. The next year Riggs & Peabody moved to Baltimore, and in 1829, upon the retirement of Riggs, Peabody became senior partner. He made various trips to England on the firm's business, and in 1835, while in London, performed the first of his great public services, negotiating a loan of $8,000,000 for the state of Maryland, then on the verge of bankruptcy. For his generous act in refusing a commission he received a vote of thanks from the state legislature.

Peabody was an incorporator and the president of the Eastern Railroad, built in 1836, and his experience in railroad financing showed him the profitable character of capital importation. Hence, in 1837 he settled permanently in London, where he had previously established the firm of George Peabody & Company, specializing in foreign exchange and American securities. So powerful did he become that he competed successfully for American business with the Barings and the Rothschilds; while in the panic of 1857, though in a weakened financial position, he challenged the hostile Bank of England to cause his failure. In 1854 he took Junius Spencer Morgan [*q.v.*] into partnership.

As his business prospered and his wealth assumed large proportions, he added to his intuitive gift of shrewd trading a growing sense of international and social obligation. He became in a way an unofficial ambassador and his great influence was exerted towards preserving Anglo-American friendship. In the years when American credit was much shaken abroad (in 1837 three American houses in London were compelled to suspend payments, and in 1841 nine states suspended interest payments and three repudiated their debts), he used his name and funds to restore confidence. When in 1851 America was humiliated by the failure of Congress to appropriate money for a display at the Crystal Palace exhibition, his gift of $15,000 made it possible to show American products and inventions beside those of other nations. When money was required to fit out a ship to search for Sir John Franklin, the Arctic explorer, Peabody's $10,000 equipped the *Advance,* in 1852, for Elisha Kent Kane [*q.v.*]. His large and elaborate Fourth-of-July dinners, at which the English nobility met American visitors to London, became a feature of the London season.

Peabody's altruistic activities were not limited to international affairs, however. He retained an abiding love for his native land, which he manifested in a succession of munificent gifts.

Peabody

Notable among these were $1,500,000 to found the Peabody Institute at Baltimore, Md., which provides a free library, an endowment for lectures, an academy of music, and an art gallery; $250,000 to found the Peabody Institute, Peabody, Mass., which contains a library and some important memorabilia of George Peabody, and affords an endowment for lectures; $150,000 to establish the Peabody Museum of natural history and natural science at Yale; $150,000 to establish the Peabody Museum of archeology and ethnology at Harvard; $140,000 to found the Peabody Academy of Science in connection with the Essex Institute, at Salem, Mass.; and $3,500,000 (The Peabody Education Fund) for the promotion of education in the South. His bequest to his nephew, Othniel C. Marsh [*q.v.*], enabled the latter to make the collections which established him as one of the leading American paleontologists of his time. Most of Peabody's large fortune was spent in philanthropy, a generosity which was unusual and startling in that age. His most considerable benefaction in England was the donation to the City of London of a sum of $2,500,000 for the erection of workingmen's tenements, which still provide clean, comfortable, and airy quarters for hundreds of poor families at a rent less than they would have to pay for inferior rooms elsewhere.

Peabody's liberality won him love and honor in England as well as in his own country. In 1867 Oxford granted him the honorary degree of D.C.L. In 1869 he was given the freedom of the City of London, and in the same year a statue of him was unveiled by the Prince of Wales on the east side of the Royal Exchange. When he refused to accept either a baronetcy or the Grand Cross of the Bath, Queen Victoria sent him an autograph letter of appreciation and a large miniature of herself. He died in London upon his return from a visit to America in 1869. After a funeral service in Westminster Abbey, his body was placed on board H. M. S. *Monarch* and, escorted by a French and an American naval vessel, was brought to America where, after elaborate ceremonies, it was buried in Danvers, Feb. 8, 1870.

Although he was a shrewd merchant, and for the most part made a point of ignoring all direct requests for charity, Peabody had qualities which made him highly attractive to both men and women and especially to young people. His deeply lined face and snow-white hair seemed an index to his character—acute, strong, yet benevolent. He was kindly, generous both to his numerous relatives (he never married) and to the objects of his great benefactions, and, though

simple in his personal tastes, moved urbanely in London society. Moreover, in his business dealings there was no trace of the dishonorable practices to which the great American financiers of the next generation sometimes stooped.

[Peabody Papers at Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., consisting of Peabody's correspondence as he left it, newspaper clippings, and miscellaneous data; Phebe A. Hanaford, *The Life of George Peabody* (1870), excessively laudatory; Lewis Corey, *The House of Morgan* (1930); J. L. M. Curry, *A Brief Sketch of George Peabody* (1898); *Md. Hist. Soc. Fund Pub. No. 3*, Jan. 1870; S. H. Peabody, *Peabody . . . Geneal.* (1909); *N. Y. Daily Times*, June 1, 1853; *Evening Gazette* (Boston), Oct. 11, 1856; *Times* (London), Nov. 5, 1869; *Dict. Nat. Biog.*]

S. H. P.

PEABODY, JOSEPH (Dec. 12, 1757–Jan. 5, 1844), privateersman, mariner, merchant shipowner, was descended from Francis Peabody who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1635 and settled at Topsfield, about ten miles from Salem. Joseph was born in Middleton nearby, ninth of the twelve children of Francis Peabody, a farmer, and Margaret (Knight) Peabody. A youth at the time of the outbreak of the Revolution, the boy marched toward Lexington with the Boxford minute-men but they arrived too late for the battle. He then served aboard the Salem privateers *Bunker Hill* and *Pilgrim*. Determined to follow the sea, he realized that education was necessary for advancement, so he spent a year ashore studying at Middleton with his future father-in-law, the Rev. Elias Smith. He served for a brief period in the militia without seeing action, and then went to sea again on the privateer *Fishhawk*, which was captured. Exchanged after being imprisoned at St. John's, Newfoundland, he became second officer on the letter-of-marque *Ranger*. One night as the ship lay in the Potomac laden with Alexandria flour, she was attacked by a band of Loyalists who outnumbered the crew three to one. Peabody, in his nightshirt, led so spirited a defense that they were beaten off, though he was severely wounded. At the close of the war he was captain of a Salem merchantman and before long purchased the schooner *Three Friends* which he commanded for several years in the West Indian and European trade.

By 1791 Peabody had amassed enough money to come ashore and engage as a merchant shipowner. From small beginnings he built up a tremendous business under his single control. He owned a large number of vessels, some of which were built to his order and all of which he freighted and operated. He did considerable business with the Baltic, Mediterranean, and West Indies, but his richest ventures were with India, China, and what Morison terms

the "Salem East Indies," dealing in indigo, opium, tea, pepper, and similar products of that region. His little *Sumatra* of 287 tons paid more than $400,000 in duties in three years. His favorite ship, the 328-ton *George* had been built in 1814 for privateering, with unusually fast lines. He bought her at a bargain for $5,250. Between 1816 and 1837 she made twenty voyages to Calcutta and one to Gibraltar, the total duties amounting to $651,743.32. It is likely that the profits were fully equal to the duties. She brought more than half of the 1,500,000 pounds of indigo which Peabody imported from Calcutta between 1807 and 1840. It is said that Peabody employed altogether between 6,500 and 7,000 seamen. He was a generous employer, always ready to reward merit, and thirty-five who entered his service as boys rose to be masters of ships. Practically his only ship to come to grief was the *Friendship*, the crew of which were massacred by the natives at Quallah Battoo in the East Indies, leading to punitive measures by the U.S.S. *Potomac*. He was loyal to Salem even at the expense of profit, building his ships in Salem yards instead of to the eastward, and bringing his cargoes to Salem to be distributed along the coast instead of sending them to the larger markets at Boston or New York. He was a director of the Salem Iron Works but confined himself chiefly to shipping. His wealth was immense for the day, and he paid annual taxes of some $200,000.

Peabody's reputation was such that his credit, it is said, was equal to the government's; he was so fair in his dealings that he never resorted to litigation. In charity, he was generous but unostentatious. In spite of a hasty temper, he generally maintained the dignified reserve reflected in his portrait. He was a devout member of the Unitarian Church. He took no part in politics. In 1812 he helped to frame Salem's petition against war, but once war was declared, supported the government. He married Catherine Smith, daughter of his old tutor, on Aug. 28, 1791, and after her death two years later, married her sister Elizabeth on Oct. 24, 1795, living very happily with her for nearly a half century. He had six sons, two of whom survived him, and one daughter. His death at Salem practically marked the end of Salem's greatness on the sea.

[The sketch of Peabody in Freeman Hunt, *Lives of Am. Merchants* (1858), vol. I, is reprinted from *Hunt's Merchants' Mag.*, Aug. 1845. See also: *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, vol. XII (1904); E. S. Maclay, *A Hist. of Am. Privateers* (1899); S. E. Morison, *The Maritime Hist. of Mass., 1783–1860* (1921); C. S. Osgood and H. M. Bachelder, *Hist. Sketch of Salem* (1879); R. D. Payne, *The Ships and Sailors of Old Salem* (1909); G. G. Putnam, "The Ship 'George,'" *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, Jan., Apr. 1923;

C. M. Endicott, "The Peabody Family," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr., Oct. 1848; S. H. Peabody, *Peabody (Paybody, Pabody, Pabodie) Geneal.* (1909).]

R. G. A.

PEABODY, JOSEPHINE PRESTON (May 30, 1874–Dec. 4, 1922), poet, dramatist, was the second child of Charles Kilham and Susan Josephine Morrill Peabody and a descendant of Francis Peabody who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1635. She was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., and spent her first ten years there and in New York City. A younger sister died; an older by five years was her close companion. The parents gave unusual attention to their children's education. The father, of artistic tastes and interests, implanted in them his keen delight in the theatre, especially in Shakespeare, and trained them in the appreciation of music and poetry. The mother laid stress, in daily details, upon beauty. These early years surrounded her sensitive nature with nobility of feeling, with harmony and with joy. But the lack of these was also to share in her growth. At Charles Peabody's death in 1884 the saddened widow took the children to live in Dorchester, Mass. Lack of means severely limited their enjoyment of the theatre and of music. Josephine found few friends who shared her tastes. Thrown upon her own resources, she read omnivorously. A note book records six hundred books read between 1888 and 1893. These are poetry, novels, essays, history, philosophy and drama. But her's was a creative mind, not content alone with reading. "Expression is my habitual instinct," she wrote in the diary that gave her one channel of expression. For another channel she wrote poetry, experimenting with form.

In 1894–95 and 1895–96, she was aided to study at Radcliffe College. Here she was stimulated by instruction by Harvard University professors. She was especially influenced by study of Dante, by the Miracle and Morality plays, and by the Elizabethan drama. She now found congenial friends. These were years of rapid artistic growth. In 1894 a poem was accepted by the *Atlantic Monthly,* and a helpful friendship began with Horace Scudder, its editor. His advice, critical yet encouraging, influenced her to prune her work, to demand of herself lucidity and exactitude. Her first volume of poetry was published in 1898—*The Wayfarers.* Her poems now appeared frequently in the leading magazines. Evidence of such gift in one so young brought much publicity and many new friends. Her loveliness of form and face—slender, child-like, with beauty of feature and radiance in expression—increased the admiration for her achievement.

Peabody

Few guessed the depression, the physical weakness, and the family anxieties, that weighed her down. Only in her diary are these evident, as are the power of her spiritual life and her urge for poetic expression. In the next eight years, under these difficult conditions and with the addition of a lectureship in poetry and English literature at Wellesley College (1901–03), she wrote and published the following poems and plays: *Fortune and Men's Eyes* (1900); *Marlowe* (1901); *The Singing Leaves* (1903); and *Pan, A Choric Idyl* (1904), a "Novello," with musical setting, produced at a state farewell concert to Lord and Lady Minto at Ottawa, Canada.

In 1906 Miss Peabody married Lionel Simeon Marks, of the engineering department at Harvard University. Her artistic self-expression came to its full development in this happy marriage and in motherhood. In 1908 she published *The Book of the Little Past* and in 1909 *The Piper.* In 1910 *The Piper* won the Stratford Play Competition against three hundred and fifteen competitors and was produced at the Memorial Theatre in Stratford-upon-Avon, England, on July 26, 1910. It was played in London and over England, and was produced at the New Theatre, in New York, on Jan. 30, 1911. Contemporaneous with these was her growing concern for conditions of labor, expressed in *The Singing Man.* She shared in that aroused sense of social responsibility and warmth of feeling characteristic of this period in the United States. She also began to take active part in the movement for woman's suffrage, finally joining the Woman's party. In 1912 *The Wings* was produced at the Toy Theatre, Boston. In 1913, *The Wolf of Gubbio* was published. In 1914, she was elected an honorary member of Phi Beta Kappa and gave the Phi Beta Kappa poem at Tufts College. In 1916 *Harvest Moon* was published. Through these and the following years, her gallant spirit and her urge for expression of beauty in poetic form were increasingly engaged in a losing fight with pain and with the insidious and unrecognized hardening of the minute arteries that feed the brain, which brought her death. In 1921 she contributed a *Song for the Pilgrim Women* for the Plymouth Pageant. *Portrait of Mrs. W.,* a play in prose, was published in 1922, a few months before her death on Dec. 4, 1922.

Her artistic development was from lyrical to dramatic poetry. Her keen interest in metrical design and in symbolism was increasingly subjected to the desire for limpid expression, clear to the general reader, and for dramatic form. With a few companions in her art, she kept alive a passing tradition—the poetic drama. Probably,

however, her reputation is assured not by her dramatic, but by her lyrical achievement. Here she attained a phrasing of beauty that has, at times, inevitability, and that gives her a permanent place among American poets.

[*The Diary and Letters of Josephine Preston Peabody* (1925), edited by Christina H. Baker, gives biographical material and selections from her diary from her sixteenth year to her death. *The Collected Poems of Josephine Preston Peabody*, with a foreword by Katherine Lee Bates, and *The Collected Plays of Josephine Preston Peabody*, with a foreword by George P. Baker, were published in 1927. See also: A. H. Quinn, *A Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Civil War to the Present Day* (1927), vol. II; S. H. Peabody, *Peabody (Paybody, Pabody, Pabodie) Geneal.* (1909); *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 5, 1922.]

C. H. B.

PEABODY, NATHANIEL (Mar. 1, 1741–June 27, 1823), physician and Revolutionary patriot, was born at Topsfield, Mass. He was the son of Jacob and Susanna (Rogers) Peabody and a descendant of Francis Peabody who emigrated to New England in 1635 and later settled at Topsfield. He was educated at home and studied medicine with his father, a popular and successful physician. When about twenty years of age he began practice in that part of Plaistow, N. H., afterward made the town of Atkinson, where he resided most of his life. On Mar. 1, 1763, he married Abigail Little. His public career began in 1771 when he was commissioned justice of the peace and of the quorum of Rockingham County by Governor Wentworth. He was from the beginning, however, a supporter of the Revolutionary movement and is reported to have been the first in the colony to resign his royal commission when the final break impended. In December 1774 he participated, with John Langdon and other prominent patriots, in the capture of the magazines at Fort William and Mary, one of the first overt acts of Revolution. For the next twenty years he was a leader in New Hampshire affairs both in the movement for independence and in the difficult task of reorganizing the government and institutions of the colony to meet the responsibilities of the new commonwealth. In 1776 he served his first term in the legislature, being repeatedly elected, with occasional intermissions, until his withdrawal from public affairs in 1795.

His status among the New Hampshire leaders is apparent in the fact that he served on the Committee on Safety which at times exercised almost dictatorial power in local affairs. He repeatedly represented New Hampshire in conferences held to promote the Revolutionary cause and to seek relief from the economic embarrassments caused by the depreciation of the currency and the dislocation of commerce. In addition to his civil activities he was for a time adjutant-general of the militia and accompanied the New Hampshire contingent on the Rhode Island expedition of 1778. In 1779 he was elected delegate to the Continental Congress, serving until Nov. 9, 1780. He was a member of the medical committee and was active in the various affairs of that body. In 1780 he served on a select committee with Philip Schuyler and John Mathews to consult with General Washington and to report on the dangerous conditions then existing. A long letter which he wrote Josiah Bartlett, from Morristown, N. J., on Aug. 6, 1780, is an interesting memorial of this service and shows that he possessed both a keen mind and the ability to express his ideas. His scathing criticism of the feeble, blundering, military policy of the Revolutionary authorities is worthy of the commander-in-chief himself (*New Hampshire State Papers*, XVII, 1889, pp. 399–403).

On the establishment of peace he continued his activity in New Hampshire affairs, served in the legislature, being speaker of the House in 1793, was a member of the constitutional conventions of 1781–83 and 1791–92, assisted in compiling the laws of the state and adjusting them to the new restrictions of the Federal Constitution, declined an appointment to the Continental Congress in 1785, and was defeated in the first election of United States senators in 1788. In 1795 he returned to private life. He is said to have been a successful physician and in 1791 was one of the organizers of the New Hampshire Medical Society. Suffering heavy property losses, he was obliged to spend his last years in constant struggles with creditors, and at the time of his death he was—technically at least—undergoing imprisonment for debt at Exeter. He is described as a man of fine presence, witty and self-confident, unscrupulous at times, a skeptic in religion, extravagant and lacking in some essential qualities of leadership, but able and patriotic.

[The best sketch of Peabody is in Wm. C. Todd, *Biog. and other Articles* (1901); an earlier one appears in J. Farmer and J. B. Moore, *Collections, Hist. and Miscellaneous*, vol. III (1824). See also C. H. Bell, *Hist. of the Town of Exeter, N. H.* (1888); *N. H. State Papers*, vol. XVII (1889), pp. 386–414, containing interesting correspondence between Peabody and various leaders of the period; J. F. Colby, *Manual of the Constitution of the State of N. H.* (rev. ed., 1912); and C. E. Potter, *The Mil. Hist. of the State of N. H.* (1866). The N. H. Hist. Soc. has Peabody letters and miscellaneous papers, and a sketch of Peabody is included in the William Plumer manuscript collections of the Society.]

W. A. R.

PEABODY, OLIVER WILLIAM BOURN (July 9, 1799–July 5, 1848), lawyer, man of letters, Unitarian clergyman, twin brother of Wil-

liam Bourn Oliver Peabody [*q.v.*], was born in Exeter, N. H., the seventh of the ten children of Oliver and Frances (Bourn) Peabody, and the fifth in descent from Francis Peabody—or Frances Pabody, as he sometimes signed himself—who emigrated from England in 1635 and lived nearly half a century in Topsfield, Mass. His father, a graduate of Harvard College and the first student of law under Theophilus Parsons, was a jurist and politician of some note and for thirty-four years a trustee of Phillips Exeter Academy.

Peabody graduated from Harvard College in 1816 in the same class with his twin brother, to whom he bore a strong resemblance in appearance, manner, and endowments, and in the purity and delicacy of his taste. His own desire was to enter the ministry, but he took up the study of law to gratify his father, received the degree of LL.B. from the Harvard Law School and was admitted to the bar in 1822, opened an office in Exeter, sat as a representative in the legislature, 1824–31, edited at different times the *Rockingham Gazette* and the *Exeter News-Letter,* and delivered poems before the Harvard chapter of Phi Beta Kappa and on various occasions of state. The one recited at Portsmouth May 21, 1823, at the centennial celebration of the first settlement in New Hampshire (published in *Collections of the New Hampshire Historical Society,* vol. VI, 1850, pp. 269–77) was his most applauded performance and is a striking example of the persistence in America of the eighteenth-century poetic style. The personal collisions and asperities of the practice of law were repugnant to him, and in 1830 he moved to Boston to assist his brother-in-law, Alexander Hill Everett [*q.v.*], with the *North American Review,* to which he contributed a number of able articles. For Hilliard, Gray & Company he supervised the preparation of the *Dramatic Works of William Shakespeare* (7 vols., 1836; several times reprinted). Though this edition was little more than an intelligent reworking of Samuel Weller Singer's, Peabody did compare his text with that of the First Folio and adopted some of the Folio readings, showing thereby a certain awareness of critical principles and making himself in a sense the first American editor of Shakespeare. For Jared Sparks's *Library of American Biography* he wrote lives of Israel Putnam (vol. VII, 1837) and John Sullivan (2 ser., vol. III, 1844). He was a member of the Massachusetts legislature, 1834–36, and register of probate for Suffolk County, 1836–42. In the latter year he accompanied Everett to the College of Jefferson at Convent, La., as professor of English literature, but finding the climate enervating he soon returned to Massachusetts.

Peabody

After studying with his brother at Springfield, he was licensed in 1844 by the Boston Association of Congregational Ministers and was settled in August 1845 as pastor of the Unitarian Church of Burlington, Vt. His saintly life and polished scholarship made a deep impression on his congregation, but his health, never robust, soon began to decline. His last work was the preparation of a memoir of his beloved brother. He died, unmarried, after a short illness and was buried in Burlington.

[E. E. Hale, obituary in *Christian Examiner,* Sept. 1848, reprinted in *Sermons by the Late William B. O. Peabody, D.D.* (1849); C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); S. H. Peabody, *Peabody . . . Geneal.* (1909); *The N. H. Reg. and U. S. Calendar,* 1824–31; *The Mass. Reg. and U. S. Calendar,* 1834–42; Jane Sherzer, "Am. Editions of Shakespeare: 1753–1866," *Pubs. Modern Language Asso.,* vol. XXII (1907).]

G. H. G.

PEABODY, ROBERT SWAIN (Feb. 22, 1845–Sept. 23, 1917), architect, was born in New Bedford, Mass., the son of Ephraim Peabody, minister of King's Chapel, Boston, from 1845 to 1856, and of Mary Jane (Derby) Peabody. His father (Bowdoin College, A.B. 1827), son of a blacksmith at Wilton, N. H., and a descendant of Francis Peabody who settled in New England in 1635, was "a man of keen insight, lofty character and much poetic feeling" (Eliot, *post,* p. 1), while his mother was "a Salem Derby, at a time when that family had acquired in world-wide commerce a wealth considerable in those days" (*Ibid.*). Robert Peabody spent his boyhood in Boston and prepared for college at Mr. Dixwell's school, entering Harvard with the class of 1866. In college he ranked well in scholarship, rowed on a victorious crew, and was chosen chief marshal on Class Day. He went from Harvard to Paris, soon passed the entrance examinations to the École des Beaux Arts and entered the Atelier Daumet. When he was not working at the school, he was sketching architecture in France, England, and Italy. His chief friends of the Paris student years were Frank W. Chandler and Charles Follen McKim [*q.v.*]. In 1870 he came back to Boston to earn his own living. Entirely untrained in office practice, but with a background of Paris study, a skill at sketching, and many influential friends, he formed a partnership with John G. Stearns (Harvard, B.S. 1863), who possessed a marked ability for building superintendence and construction.

The firm of Peabody and Stearns lasted with great success for forty-five years, Stearns dying shortly before his partner. Among the many buildings designed by them are Matthews Hall

and the Hemenway Gymnasium at Harvard, the old Providence Railroad Station; the Exchange Building and other downtown office buildings, the Telephone Building, Simmons College, the Wentworth Institute and the Custom House Tower, all in Boston; the Groton School at Groton; the City Hall and State Mutual Life Building in Worcester; the State House at Concord, N. H.; the Union League Club in New York City; The Antlers at Colorado Springs; the Tip Top House at Pike's Peak; Machinery Hall at the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago; buildings at the Buffalo and San Francisco expositions; and numerous private houses at Newport, Lenox, Boston, Philadelphia, New York, and elsewhere. In designing his larger work Peabody tended more and more to a free interpretation of the style of the Italian Renaissance. In domestic architecture his instinctive feeling for the picturesque stood him in good stead. Through his office passed a stream of young draftsmen who later, going out to all parts of the country, were to make names for themselves and to remember his good influence and generosity. The architectural schools at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology and at Harvard owed much to his care and wisdom. He was an Overseer of Harvard from 1888 to 1899.

For many years he served as president of the Boston Society of Architects. In 1906 he led his fellow architects in the preparation of a *Report Made to the Boston Society of Architects by Its Committee on Municipal Improvement* (1907). In 1908, the Society published *A Holiday Study of Cities and Ports,* from Peabody's pen, a valuable contribution to the Boston problem. His "holiday" had comprised a searching visit to the great ports of Europe. For many years as director and then as president (1900–01), he loyally served the American Institute of Architects, the national organization of his profession. He placed public service as the first duty of the Institute, and joined enthusiastically in promoting the crusade for the artistic development of Washington, begun during his term as president.

Like his ancestors, the "Merchant Venturers of Old Salem," Peabody loved the sea, which he followed as an able yachtsman. Among his many sketches there are marine scenes with all kinds of craft as well as stately buildings and picturesque villages. He wrote fluently and published a number of articles and books on travel and architecture, all illustrated by himself. These included *Note Book Sketches* (1873); *A Holiday Study of Cities and Ports* (1908); *An Architect's Sketch Book* (1912). Even in his final years of illness he produced a charming little book of imaginary foreign scenes accompanied by appropriate passages in prose and poetry, *Hospital Sketches* (1916). He died at his summer home at Marblehead, Mass., in 1917. In 1871 he had married Annie, daughter of John P. Putnam of Boston, who died in 1911. Three children of this marriage survived him. In 1913 he married Helen Lee, daughter of Charles Carroll Lee of Washington, D. C. His monument is in King's Chapel, Boston, of which he was warden.

[C. W. Eliot, *Charles Eliot, Landscape Architect* (1902); F. G. and R. S. Peabody, *A New England Romance: The Story of Ephraim and Mary Jane Peabody, Told by Their Sons* (1920); Moorfield Storey, in *Later Years of the Saturday Club* (1927), ed. by M. A. DeWolfe Howe; Charles Moore, *The Life and Times of Charles Follen McKim* (1929); Glenn Brown, *1860–1930: Memories* (1931); C. E. Stratton, in *Harvard Graduates' Mag.*, Dec. 1917; R. E. Peabody, *Merchant Venturers of Old Salem* (1912); *Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; S. H. Peabody, *Peabody . . . Geneal.* (1909); *N. Y. Times,* Sept. 24, 1917.] R. P. B.

PEABODY, SELIM HOBART (Aug. 20, 1829–May 26, 1903), educator, was born in Rockingham, Vt., the son of Charles Hobart and Grace (Ide) Peabody, and a descendant of Francis Peabody, who emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1635. While Selim was still a child, his parents moved to Randolph, Mass. His father, a clergyman, desirous of preparing him for the ministry, supplemented his public school tuition by giving him lessons in Greek and Hebrew. When he was twelve years old, his father died, and a well-to-do friend of the family sent the boy to the Public Latin School in Boston for a year (1841–42). Returning to his home, he was placed upon a farm to work for his board and clothes. At fifteen, he was apprenticed to a carpenter, with whom he remained for two years. During this time, he purchased books and read much in anticipation of entering college; for one term he taught school. In 1848 he matriculated at the University of Vermont, receiving the degree of A.B. in 1852, having met his expenses by teaching during winter vacations. On Aug. 9, 1862, he married Mary Elizabeth, daughter of David Knight and Betsey (Farrington) Pangborn. A month later, he was appointed principal of the Burlington High School, where he served one year, resigning to accept the professorship of mathematics and physics at New Hampton Seminary, Fairfax, Vt.

In 1854 he removed to Philadelphia to become professor of mathematics and civil engineering at the Polytechnic College of the State of Pennsylvania. When the financial panic of 1857 forced the college to suspend payments, Peabody secured an appointment as clerk in a United States land office at Eau Claire, Wis. He remained here two years and then became principal of the

high school in Fond du Lac, Wis. In 1862 he went to Racine, Wis., to serve as principal of the high school and superintendent of schools. The position of director of the Dearborn Observatory, which had just been established in Chicago, was offered him in that year, but he declined it. His success at Racine was recognized by the Wisconsin State Teachers' Association, which elected him president in 1863. As spokesman for this organization, he advocated a state-supported normal school, and the establishment of teachers' institutes. He also recommended a graded system of state schools, including the high school, the normal school and the state university, a scheme that was later adopted. From 1865 to 1871 he was professor of physics at the Central High School, Chicago, and then for a period of three years, professor of physics at the Massachusetts Agricultural College, Amherst, Mass. While here, he conducted a noteworthy series of experiments on the cause of the ascent of sap in trees. Disagreement with the president of the institution, William Smith Clark [*q.v.*], with respect to credit for the results of this work led to Peabody's resignation in 1874 (Girling, *post,* p. 110).

His efforts to reëstablish himself led him to return to Chicago, where he was appointed to his former position at the Central High School, in which he remained until 1878, when he accepted a professorship of mechanical engineering and physics at the Illinois Industrial University. Resigning in February 1880 to serve as editor of *The International Cyclopedia,* he returned in August, as regent (president) *pro tempore.* In March of the following year he was appointed regent. The university was in debt; its endowment from a land grant was small; and its income from tuition meager. Peabody secured the first support which the institution received from the legislature, and increased its endowment by the sale of public lands. In 1885 its name was changed to University of Illinois. He established the agricultural experiment station, in 1887, thereby strengthening his position with the legislature. Meanwhile, he declined the presidency of the Rose Polytechnic Institute and the position of assistant secretary of agriculture under President Harrison.

Resigning in September 1891, he went to Chicago as chief of the department of liberal arts in the World's Columbian Exposition. He was appointed official editor and statistician of the American exhibits at the World's Fair at Paris in 1899; was in charge of the educational exhibits at the Pan-American Exposition, Buffalo, in 1901; and of the South Carolina Interstate and

West Indies Exposition at Charleston in 1902. On Aug. 1, 1902, he went to St. Louis as assistant to the director general of the Louisiana Purchase Exposition, and remained there until his death in the following year.

[S. H. Peabody, *Peabody (Paybody, Pabody, Pabodie) Geneal.* (1909), ed. by C. H. Pope; *The Alumni Record of the Univ. of Ill.* (1913); Paul Monroe, *A Cyc. of Educ.,* vol. IV (1913); Katherine Peabody Girling, *Selim Hobart Peabody* (1923); *Who's Who in America,* 1899–1900; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat,* May 27, 1903; Peabody MSS. in the Univ. of Ill. lib.]

R. F. S.

PEABODY, WILLIAM BOURN OLIVER (July 9, 1799–May 28, 1847), Unitarian clergyman, twin brother of Oliver William Bourn Peabody [*q.v.*], was born in Exeter, N. H., the eighth of ten children of Oliver and Frances (Bourn) Peabody, and fifth in descent from Francis Peabody who emigrated from England in 1635 and settled first at Ipswich and later in Topsfield, Mass. His father, a graduate of Harvard College, was a lawyer and politician, president of the state Senate in 1813 and associate justice of the court of common pleas, 1813–16. Peabody attended Phillips Exeter Academy under Benjamin Abbot [*q.v.*] from 1808 to 1813, graduated from Harvard College in 1816, taught at Phillips Exeter for a year, returned to Cambridge to complete his theological course with the younger Henry Ware [*q.v.*], and was ordained Oct. 12, 1820, as pastor of the Third Congregational (Unitarian) Society of Springfield, Mass., to which he ministered until his death some twenty-seven years later. On Sept. 8, 1824, he married Elizabeth Amelia White, by whom he had a daughter and four sons. Despite a frail constitution and much positive ill health he performed the duties of his office with exemplary tact and devotion and was held in veneration by his parishioners and fellow citizens. Early in life he had resolved to shun dogmatism and the sectarian spirit, but he was a close student of the Bible, and his sermons, painstakingly wrought out with both a religious and a literary conscience, were sermons and not mere essays. His literary work was by no means negligible. To Jared Sparks's *Library of American Biography* he contributed lives of Alexander Wilson (vol. II, 1834), Cotton Mather (vol. VI, 1836), David Brainerd (vol. VIII, 1837), and James Oglethorpe (2 ser., vol. II, 1844). For over twenty years he was a frequent contributor to the *North American Review.* He also wrote a great deal for the *Christian Examiner,* contributed occasionally to annuals, and published nine sermons and addresses. As a commissioner appointed by Gov. Edward Everett he prepared *A Report on the Ornithology of Massachusetts*

(1839) which is notable chiefly for its observations on the economic value of birds and its plea for their preservation. It lists 286 species but is less an independent treatise than an appendix to Thomas Nuttall's *Manual of the Ornithology of the United States and of Canada* (1832–34). Peabody was, incidentally, a friend of John James Audubon. He was also something of a poet, author of a *Poetical Catechism* (1823) and of several occasional poems and hymns. He edited the *Springfield Collection of Hymns for Sacred Worship* (1835). The whole range of his literary work is well displayed in two posthumous volumes, *Sermons by the Late William B. O. Peabody* (1849; 2 ed.) and *The Literary Remains of the Late William B. O. Peabody* (1850). The death of his wife, Oct. 4, 1843, and of his daughter, Jan. 28, 1844, were severe trials to him, and thereafter his health declined steadily. His last sermon, preached twelve days before his death, was on the text, "To be spiritually minded is life and peace." He died at Springfield and was buried in the Springfield Cemetery.

[O. W. B. Peabody, memoir prefixed to *Sermons by the Late William B. O. Peabody* (1849); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Unitarian Pulpit* (1865); *Heralds of a Liberal Faith*, vol. II (1910), ed. by S. A. Eliot; Henry Ware, *Sermon Delivered Oct. 12, 1820, at the Ordination of the Rev. W. B. O. Peabody* (1820); E. S. Gannett, *Discourse Delivered at the Funeral of Rev. W. B. O. Peabody, D.D.* (1847); Geo. Walker, *Address at the Dedication of a Monument to Rev. W. B. O. Peabody, D. D.* (1861); S. H. Peabody, *Peabody . . . Geneal.* (1909).] G. H. G.

PEALE, ANNA CLAYPOOLE (Mar. 6, 1791–Dec. 25, 1878), miniature painter, sister of Sarah Miriam Peale [*q.v.*], was born in Philadelphia, the daughter of Mary Claypoole and James Peale [*q.v.*]. Her grandfather, James Claypoole, was said to be the first native Pennsylvania artist. Her uncle, Charles Willson Peale [*q.v.*], her cousins, and her father provided an artistic family background, and she was reared in one of the most cultivated cities of the early republic at a time when miniature painting was practised and appreciated. She studied with her father the technique of oil painting and also of water color on ivory. Her first picture to be exhibited was a still life of fruit shown in Philadelphia in 1811 when she was twenty years old. Soon afterward she achieved some success as a miniaturist and painted portraits of many persons of social and political eminence. The most active period of her work extended from 1820 to 1840. She was twice married: in 1829 to Dr. William Staughton [*q.v.*], an able minister and educator, who died in the same year, and in 1841 to Gen. William Duncan, whom she also survived. She had no children by either marriage.

Peale

Most of her miniatures were painted in Philadelphia and Baltimore, although she also worked in Boston and Washington. A Baltimore paper of 1822 in announcing that she was prepared to paint portraits in miniature stated that examples of her work were on exhibition at the Museum. She exhibited at the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts and was represented in the early exhibitions of the Boston Athenæum.

Anna Peale painted miniatures of Andrew Jackson and his wife in 1819, two of her earliest known portraits; of Commodore Bainbridge, President James Monroe, Dr. Oliver Hubbard, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Rodenwald (1825), Mr. and Mrs. C. P. Dexler, General and Madame Lallemand; and of such attractive young women as Eleanor Britton, Jane Brown, and Margaret Hart Simmons. Only about thirty miniatures by her are known, but she must have painted several times that number. Most of her work is owned by descendants of her subjects, although a few examples may be seen in museums. Among these are the portraits of Madame Lallemand in the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts and of Mrs. Nathan Endicott in the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. The miniatures are signed with any of her names. On the back of one portrait she wrote: "Miniature of Angelica Vallaye by Anna Peale, widow of Dr. Staughton, also widow of General Duncan." Frequently she signed her miniatures on the front in very small letters "Anna Claypoole Peale" with the date. Sometimes the signature and date are scratched in with a needle. Her technique is detailed and careful. She usually painted flesh surfaces in high colors with great complexity of stroke, a technique which gives somewhat the effect of oil painting. Frequently there are brilliant contrasts of light and shade and the backgrounds are usually dark. Her miniatures are always sprightly and pleasing, though less important artistically than those of her father or of her uncle Charles Willson Peale.

[Sources include: Anne H. Wharton, *Heirlooms in Miniatures* (1898); Harry B. Wehle, *Am. Miniatures* (1927); Theodore Bolton, *Early Am. Portrait Painters in Miniature* (1921); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (3 vols., 1884); R. I. Graff, *Geneal. of the Claypoole Family* (1893); *Phila. Inquirer*, Dec. 26, 1878.] J. L. B.

PEALE, CHARLES WILLSON (Apr. 15, 1741–Feb. 22, 1827), portrait painter, naturalist, patriot, was born in St. Paul's Parish, Queen Anne County, Md., the eldest of five children of Charles Peale (1709–1750), a native of Rutlandshire, England, whose progenitors for several generations were in turn rectors of the parish church at Edith Weston. The elder Peale's classi-

cal education qualified him as master of the public school at Annapolis after coming to Maryland, and following his marriage in 1740 to Margaret (Triggs) Mathews he removed to Queen Anne County as master of the Free School near Centerville. Two years later he was called to Chestertown as master of the Kent County School. Upon his death in 1750 his widow returned to Annapolis. Charles Willson Peale received the common rudiments of schooling until his thirteenth year when he was apprenticed to Nathan Waters, a saddler. He was released from his indenture at twenty and on Jan. 12, 1762, was married to Rachel, the daughter of the late John Brewer of West River. With means advanced by Judge James Tilghman he was established at his trade with materials supplied by his former master on credit. These obligations and his attempts to meet them by diversifying his pursuits soon involved him in difficulties. Having joined the Sons of Freedom during the Stamp Act agitation, in 1764 he was forced by his creditors, who were Loyalists, to abandon his trade. In his memoirs he recalls the incident as the fortunate turning point in his career since the circumstances resulted in his following the art which thereafter was his sole vocation. His attempts at portraits of himself, his wife, and others brought him a commission to execute portraits on terms which offered more congenial and remunerative occupation than his other pursuits and he thereupon sought instruction from John Hesselius [*q.v.*], the painter.

In 1765 he accompanied his brother-in-law, Capt. Robert Polk, on a voyage to New England, where after painting several portraits at Newburyport he made the acquaintance at Boston of John Singleton Copley. Proceeding homeward he met with patronage in Virginia which detained him until the following year, and upon his return to Annapolis in 1766 he was awarded recognition which prompted several gentlemen to advance funds to enable him to visit England. Among letters of introduction he carried one to Benjamin West through which he was accepted as a pupil upon his arrival in London in February 1767. His studies under West, supplemented by modeling, miniature painting, and mezzotint engraving, he pursued with characteristic zeal and diligence. He contributed to his support by painting portraits, chiefly in miniature. Other commissions included that for the full-length portrait of Lord Chatham, sent to Virginia in 1768, from which he made his first known engravings. He was represented in two exhibitions of the Society of Artists prior to the founding of the Royal Academy, and while in

Peale

London he twice posed for West. Returning to Annapolis in June 1769 he was soon in full employment in Maryland and adjacent provinces with frequent and prolonged engagements at Philadelphia. When Copley left Boston to make his home in England Peale's activities extended farther northward and in the spring of 1776 he established his household at Philadelphia. Congress was then in session and Peale's patrons included delegates and other visitors to the city.

He had joined in patriotic activities incident to the Revolution before leaving Maryland, and when settled in Philadelphia enlisted as a private in the city militia. He was elected first lieutenant and was active in recruiting volunteers when the militia was called out in December 1776. He was in action during the engagements at Trenton and Princeton, and in 1777 was commissioned captain of the 4th Battalion or Regiment of Foot. He continued in active service during the campaign ending with the evacuation of Philadelphia by the British. He also served on important military and civil committees, was chairman of the Constitutional Society, and in 1779 was elected one of the Philadelphia representatives in the General Assembly of Pennsylvania. On the expiration of his term he retired from office although he continued to render public service as occasion offered until the close of the war. During the several encampments he was called upon to paint portraits in miniature of his fellow officers, replicas of which in head size were the nucleus of the portrait collection subsequently formed as his record of the war. In the interval at the close of the war when economic conditions were unfavorable to his profession, he undertook to engrave mezzotint plates from his portrait collection. At this time, while he was making drawings of recently discovered bones of the mammoth, it was suggested to him that his gallery be made the repository also of natural curiosities. His interest in the project was thus aroused and he conceived the idea of founding an institution. He wished to make it public rather than private in character and accordingly, when the museum was established, it was governed by a Society of Visitors. It was removed to the hall of the American Philosophical Society in 1794 and in 1802 by act of the Pennsylvania Assembly it was granted the free use of the State House (Independence Hall) recently vacated by the legislature. It was subsequently incorporated as the Philadelphia Museum under the direction of a board of trustees. In scope and character it ranked with the notable museums of the time.

Peale retired from his profession in the seven-

teen nineties although he continued to paint at intervals in order to enlarge his portrait gallery and to acquire means for improving the museum, which was largely dependent upon his resources. After he retired to his country place, "Belfield," in 1810, his sons who were naturalists relieved him of active supervision of the museum. His varied hobbies, his interest in applied science and the arts, and his youthful ventures in trade have created misleading impressions of him and have tended to obscure his career as a painter. In 1791 and again in 1795 he attempted to establish academies of the fine arts. These failed through inadequate encouragement, but he was largely responsible for the successful establishment of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts in 1805. He was thrice married. Of his six children by his first wife who survived infancy, his sons Raphael and Rembrandt [*qq.v.*] were painters, and Titian and Rubens, naturalists. By his second marriage with Elizabeth DePeyster of New York in 1791 he had six children of whom Franklin and Titian Ramsay [*q.v.*] were best known as naturalists. His third marriage (1805) to Hannah Moore, who died in 1821, was without issue. Peale died at Philadelphia and was buried in St. Peter's churchyard. Besides his manuscript memoirs and unpublished writings, he was author of *An Essay on Building Wooden Bridges* (1797); *Discourse Introductory to a Course of Lectures on the Science of Nature* (1800); *Introduction to a Course of Lectures on Natural History* (1800), delivered at the University of Pennsylvania; *An Epistle to a Friend on the Means of Preserving Health* (1803); *An Essay to Promote Domestic Happiness* (1812); and *Address to the Corporation and Citizens of Philadelphia* (1816).

Peale returned to Annapolis in 1769 after two years study under Benjamin West, trained in and accustomed to that school of English painting which often placed the figure in an open-air background beside an altar, a fountain, vase, or statue as required by the classic tradition. His early canvases were usually large, many displaying a full-length figure, and some even whole family groups. For the most part he painted into his backgrounds landscapes, or some incident having a connection with the sitter, and some personal belonging added local color. His figures are somewhat formally placed; the faces solidly and tightly painted; the lips almost uniformly thin, and the hands, while moderately well drawn, are frequently ungraceful. The jabot, shirt-ruffle, the fabric and lace on the women's gowns are painted with scrupulous care, but the eyes, usually oversmall, are the least satisfactory

Peale

feature. His later portraits, painted after his art had become an avocation, are so distinct in style and technique that a presumption is raised that he received some instruction from his son, Rembrandt, after the latter's return from study in Paris. While Peale was never a great painter, his work shows sincerity and trained craftsmanship, and he did for Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia what Copley did for Massachusetts: he left scores of pleasing and highly decorative canvases portraying the distinguished men and gracious women from the representative families of the day; he preserved the flavor and dignity of colonial life at its apogee. Peale will always be known as the painter of Washington, as he not only painted the first portrait of him, but during twenty-three years—1772–95—painted him seven times from life, and his son states that Washington sat on seven other occasions for his father to further the painting of a replica of some one of his originals. There is some uncertainty as to which are Peale's life portraits of Washington, but the better authority is as follows: Three-quarter length in the uniform of a colonel of Virginia militia, painted at "Mount Vernon" in 1772; three-quarter length in Continental uniform painted for John Hancock in Philadelphia in 1776; miniature on ivory, probably painted late in 1777; a bust portrait, claimed to have been begun from life at Valley Forge in 1777 (Many authorities consider this canvas to have been cut down from a full-length portrait. Whether Peale could have had the opportunity to paint so large a canvas while on active service and encamped at Valley Forge is an open question); full length, Continental type portrait, ordered by the Supreme Executive Council of Pennsylvania on Jan. 18, 1779 (This is the familiar portrait of Washington standing, with his left hand resting upon a cannon, Nassau Hall and marching Hessian prisoners being in the background.); a bust portrait painted during the sittings of the Constitutional Convention in Philadelphia in 1787; and a bust portrait of Washington when president, painted in Philadelphia in 1795.

Peale painted about sixty portraits of Washington in all. Lacking that insight which enables a great artist to indicate strongly individual character, Peale conscientiously transferred to canvas what he saw before him, and in the portrait of 1779 he uncompromisingly portrayed Washington's small eyes, his high cheekbones, and his rather ungainly figure—the sloping shoulders, the slightly protruding abdomen, the long arms and thin legs. Yet, when this is compared with Houdon's standing statue in Rich-

mond, the similarity is at once apparent. Houdon, the greatest sculptor of his day, had life sittings from Washington, and, therefore, his statue should be accepted as the canon for comparison. Peale's conception of Washington's face was perhaps uninspired, but this portrait of 1779 represents Washington of the Revolution more truthfully than do later portraits by others, even by so great a master as Stuart, who never saw Washington until four years before his death, when, old before his time, care worn and disillusioned, his appearance had much altered, and the loss of his teeth had entirely changed his expression and the shape of his face.

[The biographical details of this sketch were drawn chiefly from Peale's manuscript memoirs, journals, and correspondence, from 1765 to 1827, in the possession of Horace Wells Sellers at the time the sketch was written. Many biographical references to Peale in published sources have been based upon Wm. Dunlap's biography in the *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (2 vols., 1834), which is inaccurate and somewhat bad-tempered. For printed sources, see especially, Cuthbert Lee, *Early Am. Portrait Painters* (1929); A. C. Peale, *Chas. Willson Peale and His Services During the American Revolution* (n.d.); C. W. Peale and A. M. F. J. Beauvois, *A Sci. and Descriptive Cat. of Peale's Museum* (1796); The Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, *Cat. of an Exhibition of Portraits by Chas. Willson Peale and Jas. Peale and Rembrandt Peale* (ed. 1923); "Extracts from the Correspondence of Chas. Wilson [*sic*] Peale Relative to the Establishment of the Acad. of the Fine Arts, Phila.," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1885; Walter Faxon, "Relics of Peale's Museum," *Bull. of the Museum of Comparative Zoöl.*, July 1915; H. W. Sellers, *Engravings by Chas. Willson Peale, Limner* (1933), reprinted from the *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Apr. 1933, and "Chas. Willson Peale, Artist-Soldier," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1914; C. W. Janson, *The Stranger in America* (1807); H. S. Colton, "Peale's Museum," *Popular Sci. Monthly*, Sept. 1909; J. H. Morgan, *Two Early Portraits of Geo. Washington* (1927); J. H. Morgan and Mantle Fielding, *The Life Portraits of Washington and Their Replicas* (1931); Theodore Bolton and H. L. Binsse, "The Peale Portraits of Washington," the *Antiquarian*, Feb. 1931; C. H. Hart, "Peale's Original Whole-Length Portrait of Washington," *Ann. Report of the Am. Hist. Asso. for the Year 1896* (1897), and "Life Portraits of Geo. Washington," *McClure's Mag.*, Feb. 1897; *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser*, Feb. 23, 1827. The estimate of Peale's work, comprising the last part of the biography, was written at the request of the editor by John Hill Morgan, who, owing to the inability of the author to make a final revision of the article before his death, kindly consented to add an appraisal of the artist.]

H. W. S.

PEALE, JAMES (1749–May 24, 1831), portrait painter in miniature and oils, was born in Chestertown, Md., the fifth and youngest son of Margaret (Triggs) Mathews and Charles Peale and the brother of Charles Willson Peale [*q.v.*]. His father, the eldest son of a Rutlandshire family, had come to the colonies, taught school in Maryland, married, and then kept the Free School in Chestertown. There he died in 1750. The family moved to Annapolis and several years later Charles Willson, who was apprenticed to a saddler, took James under his care to learn the saddlery trade. About 1770, following Charles' example and under his guidance, James Peale gave up his trade to become a painter. His brother taught him the technique of water-color and oil painting and the principles of portraiture. During the Revolution James rendered active service until June 3, 1779, when he resigned. He was first with Smallwood's Maryland Regiment (ensign, Jan. 14, 1776) and later with the 1st Maryland, in which he was commissioned captain Mar. 1, 1778.

After the war he went to Philadelphia to reside with his brother Charles. About 1785 he married Mary Claypoole (1753–1829), daughter of James Claypoole, the artist. Apart from occasional painting trips to the Southern cities he lived most of his life in Philadelphia. He had one son, James, Jr., who became a banker but who in his leisure painted marines and landscapes. Of his five daughters two were Sarah Miriam and Anna Claypoole Peale [*qq.v.*]. He left an abundant pictorial record of himself and of his family. In the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts may be seen "James Peale and his Family," painted in 1795; "Mary Claypoole Peale," his wife, and a "Portrait of the Artist." He has also left several portraits and miniatures of himself and of his family. His achievement in oil painting is uneven; in general the later work is much finer than the early pieces. Portrait groups painted around 1795 are stiff and awkward, both in arrangement and treatment. Ten years later he had mastered technical difficulties and had developed his own style. Such a picture as that of his two daughters, Anna and Margaretta, in the Pennsylvania Academy, shows him at his best. Naturalness of pose, good drawing, and a sympathetic understanding of both his subject and his medium distinguish the work.

James Peale copied the head of Charles Willson Peale's 1787 life portrait of Washington to make a half-length figure with a sword. This he did several times, varying the background. Examples may be seen in the New York Public Library and in Independence Hall, Philadelphia. There is evidence that he was interested in painting still life, landscapes, and even historical subjects. Several of his paintings of fruit are in New York. He sometimes painted landscape detail in the background of his portraits as for instance in the "Ramsay-Polk family." The "View of the Battle of Princeton," "A View of Belfield Farm, near Germantown" (1811), and "A Rencontre between Col. Allen McLane and two British Horsemen" (1814) are attributed to him. But it is as a miniature painter that he is justly best

known. He began by closely following the style of his brother and the miniatures of his first period to about 1795 are on similar small oval or circular pieces of ivory. He was most active in miniature painting between 1782 and 1812. In the former year he painted miniatures of Martha and of George Washington, and again in 1788 he painted another miniature of Washington. Probably both are from life. In the autumn of 1795 when his brother and two nephews were painting portraits of Washington, he also made a small water-color portrait on paper.

From about 1795 his prolific brush produced miniatures which are the work of a finished artist. The drawing is surer, the portraits are developed in fewer and broader strokes, though his lines are always delicate. "Mollie Callahan" (1799) is typical of this period. The size of the ivory is somewhat larger, the color diversified and harmonious, the effect delicate and beautiful. His technique and talent were particularly suited to portrayal of feminine subjects. A mannerism of tucking in the corners of the mouth and drawing the lips in a definite cupid's bow pattern is so common in his miniatures as to become a point of identification. The signature is usually I. P. or J. P. in very small letters with the date.

[For printed sources see: C. W. Bowen, *The Hist. of the Centennial Celebration of the Inauguration of Geo. Washington* (1892); The Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, *Cat. of an Exhibition of Portraits by Chas. Willson Peale and Jas. Peale and Rembrandt Peale* (ed. 1923); Theodore Bolton, *Early Am. Portrait Painters in Miniature* (1921); "Life Portraits of Washington by Members of the Peale Family," *Antiquarian*, Feb. 1931; Harry B. Wehle, *Am. Miniatures* (1927); Cuthbert Lee, *Early Am. Portrait Painters* (1929); R. I. Graff, *Geneal. of the Claypoole Family* (1893); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser*, May 26, 1831.] J. L. B.

PEALE, RAPHAEL (Feb. 17, 1774–Mar. 4, 1825), painter, brother of Rembrandt and Titian Ramsay Peale [*qq.v.*], was born at Annapolis, Md., the eldest child of Charles Willson Peale [*q.v.*] and his first wife, Rachel Brewer of Annapolis. He preferred to spell his name Raphaelle. When he was two years old the family settled in Philadelphia where the boy was to have many advantages. He became his father's pupil and when he was twenty-one painted a water-color profile of Washington. Although not so talented as his younger brother Rembrandt he achieved some success as a miniature painter and after 1815 was favorably known for his still-life pieces. He worked in several mediums: oils and water color on ivory, paper, and vellum. He also used the physionotrace. On May 25, 1797, he was married to Martha McGlathery in Philadelphia. He always made his home there, although he painted in many of the

chief cities of the country. By 1799 he had established himself as a professional miniature painter. At several times during his career he cooperated with his brother Rembrandt in various undertakings. From 1790 to 1799 they were working together in Baltimore attempting to establish a portrait gallery of distinguished persons. In 1803 Raphael painted in Norfolk and the following year with Rembrandt visited Savannah, Charleston, Baltimore, and Boston.

Between 1804 and 1811 Raphael Peale's prices for portraits are said to have declined from fifty to fifteen dollars. For miniatures on ivory and vellum and for profiles his charges also decreased materially. After 1815 when his health began to fail he devoted himself almost entirely to still-life subjects such as fruit, game, and fish. He sometimes signed his miniatures "R. P.," which perhaps accounts for the one-time confusion of his work with that of Rembrandt Peale. He also signed himself "Rap. Peale," "Raph^{e}. Peale," or in full, "Raphael Peale." Occasionally there was no signature. Representative examples of his miniature portraits are those of Doyle Sweeney, Abiah Brown, and Maj.-Gen. Thomas Acheson, all privately owned. Not more than a dozen miniatures by him are known. Several examples of his still-life paintings are owned by the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. His style in miniature painting faintly resembles that of James Peale. He has, however, several distinguishing characteristics of technique such as modeling the features in blue hatching with very little flesh color added. Usually he painted the costume in solid gouache, displaying little variety or interest in color. The backgrounds are light and clear, sometimes painted in delicate cloudlike forms. The drawing is not uniformly skilful but his style was sufficiently personal to permit identification of unsigned pieces. He is said to have been successful in obtaining likenesses. After a lingering illness he died in his fifty-third year, survived by his wife and their seven children.

[For printed sources see Rembrandt Peale's "Reminiscences," in the *Crayon*, Aug. 29, Sept. 19, Oct. 3, 1855, Jan., Apr., June 1856, Feb., Sept., Oct., Nov., Dec. 1857, Nov. 1860; C. H. Hart, "Life Portraits of Geo. Washington," *McClure's Mag.*, Feb. 1897; Harry B. Wehle, *Am. Miniatures* (1927); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (3 vols., 1884); *The Cat. of the Exhibition of Am. Miniatures at the Metropolitan* (1927); Theodore Bolton, *Early Am. Portrait Painters in Miniature* (1921). There is a manuscript Peale genealogy in the possession of the Geneal. Soc. of Pa.] J. L. B.

PEALE, REMBRANDT (Feb. 22, 1778–Oct. 3, 1860), portrait and historical painter, son of Charles Willson [*q.v.*] and Rachel (Brewer) Peale, was born at the Vanarsdalen Farm near

Richboro, Bucks County, Pa., where his father, then with the army at Valley Forge, had found refuge for his family during the British occupation of Philadelphia. According to his memoirs Rembrandt Peale completed his studies at private schools in Philadelphia in advance of students of his own age and showed a special interest in literature and a gift for verse-making. He was likewise precocious in the study of drawing and in his thirteenth year painted a creditable self-portrait—his first attempt in oil colors. Besides studying under his father and copying the paintings in his father's gallery he had the opportunity, when he was seventeen, to practise in the school of design which his father and other artists attempted to form in 1795. In the same year at the exhibition of the Academy, Rembrandt was represented by five portraits and a landscape. In September 1795, when the elder Peale painted the last of his numerous life portraits of Washington, Rembrandt was accorded the same opportunity. He carried his portrait to Charleston, S. C., where he claimed to have made ten copies besides painting the portraits of Generals Gadsden and Sumter and Dr. David Ramsay, the historian, for his father's gallery. In 1796 he joined with his brother Raphael in establishing in Baltimore a gallery in which to exhibit their paintings, including copies they had made of their father's portraits of distinguished persons. To this they added a cabinet of natural history objects, chiefly duplicates from the elder Peale's collection. Three years later this venture was abandoned.

After painting portraits in Maryland Rembrandt Peale returned to Philadelphia and publicly announced in 1800 that to avoid confusion with others of his family he would paint under the name of Rembrandt, an ostentation which he speedily abandoned. At about this time he attended a course of lectures on chemistry at the University of Pennsylvania to perfect his knowledge of pigments. He had married in 1798, when barely twenty, Eleanora Mary Short. Being then largely dependent upon his father's support, he sought other means of employment until his reputation as a painter was established. His father had successfully recovered two skeletons of the mammoth or mastodon and Rembrandt assisted in mounting them and carving the replicas of such bones as were missing. The wide interest in this discovery among naturalists prompted the elder Peale to send one skeleton to Europe in charge of Rembrandt, who was assisted by his younger brother Rubens Peale, then in training as a naturalist. Arriving in England in the autumn of 1802 Rembrandt placed himself under the guidance of Benjamin West and while pursuing his studies painted portraits of Robert Bloomfield, the poet, and Sir Joseph Banks, president of the Royal Society, for his father's collection. In the Royal Academy's exhibition of 1803 he was represented by two portraits. While in London he published his *Account of the Skeleton of the Mammoth* (London, 1802), followed in 1803 by *An Historical Disquisition on the Mammoth.* As the war with France prevented exhibiting the skeleton in Paris as contemplated, the brothers returned to America in November 1803.

In 1804 Peale established a painting room in the State House at Philadelphia, the building having been granted by the legislature as a repository for the elder Peale's gallery and museum. Employed by his father to paint portraits for his collection, he visited Washington where he executed a likeness of President Jefferson and portraits of other prominent characters. In 1805 he assisted in the establishment of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. In that year he exhibited thirty portraits. His reputation was further extended by visits to New York and Boston. Commissioned by his father he visited Paris in the spring of 1808 and painted for the latter's collection the portraits of Houdon, Cuvier, Bernardin de St. Pierre, Abbe Huay, Count Rumford, David, and Denon. Denon, the director-general of museums, offered Peale the government patronage if he would remain in France. Fearing that the disturbed situation in Europe would separate him from his family, he returned to America in October 1808, but to complete his father's commission, again visited Paris in 1809 and remained throughout the following year. He painted largely in encaustic and his work during this and the following decade is generally considered the high point of his art. Upon his return to Philadelphia in November 1810 he painted a large equestrian picture of Napoleon, which was exhibited first at Baltimore in 1811 and later at Philadelphia. He also painted a number of classical subjects.

Although urged by his father to confine his talents to portrait painting, and his exhibitions to Philadelphia, Peale determined to establish a gallery and museum in Baltimore with possibly an academy for teaching the fine arts. Securing support for this venture he erected a building and opened his exhibition in 1814. He aimed to emulate his father by maintaining his museum on a strictly scientific and educational basis, but popular support was insufficient to justify the investment and finally his brother Rubens Peale who had managed the Philadelphia Museum

came to his assistance and relieved him of the establishment. In the meantime he had executed his large canvas, 24′ x 13′, "The Court of Death," which was placed on view in his gallery at Baltimore in 1820 and subsequently exhibited in other cities for a number of years. After leaving Baltimore he practised his art in New York until 1823 when he reopened his gallery and painting room in Philadelphia. During this interval he labored to perfect an ideal likeness of Washington based upon his own and his father's portraits and he then painted a large equestrian picture using his composite studies for the likeness. In 1825 he was again called to New York and during his residence there was elected to succeed John Trumbull as president of the American Academy of Fine Arts. Subsequently his patronage extended to Boston where he resided for a time. While there he became interested in lithography. He executed, among other works, a large head of Washington for which he received the silver medal of the Franklin Institute.

In 1828 Peale again went abroad and for two years traveled, chiefly in Italy, copying the works of notable masters, besides painting original studies and some portraits. During his nine months' residence in Florence he exhibited at the Royal Academy his portrait of Washington, which on his return was purchased by the United States government. Returning to America in September 1830 he published his *Notes on Italy* (1831) and after residing in New York until 1832 he crossed the ocean for the fifth time, having engaged to paint portraits in England. On his return to America in 1834 he resumed his painting at Philadelphia and in his leisure hours perfected a system for teaching drawing and writing described in his *Graphics: A Manual of Drawing and Writing* (1835). In 1839 he published his *Portfolio of an Artist* which contains a number of his original verses. In his last years he devoted much time to his lectures on the portraits of Washington and contributed to magazines articles relating to art and his "Reminiscences." He continued these activities until shortly before his death at Philadelphia in his eighty-third year. He was survived by his second wife, Harriet Caney. By his first wife he had seven daughters and two sons.

It was Rembrandt Peale's misfortune to paint during that half-century when the artistic sense of the English-speaking peoples, at least, almost entirely disappeared. The ugliness of this era was nowhere more manifest than in clothes and household furnishings, and these, perforce, had to appear in Peale's portraits. Technically,

Rembrandt Peale may have been a better painter than his father, but not one of his canvases exhibits the charm and decorative qualities of those of the elder Peale. After his study in Paris, his portraits were painted with that thoroughness then in fashion and in encaustic, so that many almost resemble work in enamel. When in the second decade of the nineteenth century Peale turned to allegorical and historical subjects, and especially after he became obsessed with the idea of exploiting his portrait of Washington, painted in 1823 (known as the "Port Hole" type), as the "ideal" Washington, general portraiture seems to have become a means to an end, and as a result his portraits, while good likenesses, are perfunctory.

[This sketch is based upon the Peale family papers. For printed sources see Rembrandt Peale's "Reminiscences" in the *Crayon*, Aug. 29, Sept. 19, Oct. 3, 1855, Jan., Apr., June 1856, Feb., Sept., Oct., Nov., Dec., 1857, Nov. 1860; C. E. Lester, *The Artists of America* (1846); Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1918), vol. II; The Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, *Cat. of an Exhibition of Portraits by Chas. Willson Peale and Jas. Peale and Rembrandt Peale* (ed. 1923); *Description of the Court of Death, an Original Painting by Rembrandt Peale* (n.d.); and "Original Letters from Paris," the *Portfolio*, Sept. 1810. There are manuscripts in the possession of the Pa. Hist. Soc. relating to Peale. His lectures on portraits of Washington are in the library of Haverford Coll. Suggestions for this sketch have been supplied by John Hill Morgan.] H. W. S.

PEALE, SARAH MIRIAM (May 19, 1800–Feb. 4, 1885), portrait painter, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the youngest of six children of James [*q.v.*] and Mary (Claypoole) Peale. Of her sisters, Anna Claypoole [*q.v.*] attained distinction as a miniature painter, and Margaretta was a professed painter of still life. Reared in an artistic environment, Sarah Miriam Peale began to study and practise painting during early girlhood. She is said to have assisted her father in his pictures by painting details such as lace and flowers. At eighteen she executed her first portrait, a self-likeness which her uncle, Charles Willson Peale, praised at the time as being "wonderfully like." In the annual exhibition of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts in 1818 she was represented for the first time by a portrait of "a lady," described as her "second attempt," and in the following year she exhibited two portraits and four still-life pictures. In subsequent exhibitions her entries included portraits of men in public life, the first being Commodore Bainbridge, U. S. N. Congressman Caleb Cushing, Dixon H. Lewis of Alabama, L. F. Linn of Missouri, H. A. Wise, W. R. D. King (later vice-president), and Senator Benton were also among her patrons.

In 1824 Miss Peale was elected an academi-

cian of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts, her sister Anna being likewise honored. In 1825 the Marquis de Lafayette gave her four sittings during his second visit to the United States and her portrait of him was highly praised as a faithful likeness. In 1826 she exhibited at the Pennsylvania Academy two miniatures—the first of her work in that medium recorded. Following the death of her father in 1831 she removed with her sister, Jane (Peale) Simes, to Baltimore. She painted there and in Washington until about 1847, when she went to St. Louis. In 1877 she returned to Philadelphia to rejoin her sisters, Margaretta and Anna. During her residence in the West she pursued her art, though her pictures rarely, if ever, found their way to exhibitions in the East where Anna Claypoole Peale continued to paint, thus overshadowing the accomplishments of her younger sister. Her paintings displayed greater virility in style than her sister Anna's miniatures, a quality which gave character to her more numerous portraits of men. She died in Philadelphia in the eighty-fifth year of her age. She had never married.

[Sources include: Anne H. Wharton, *Heirlooms in Miniatures* (1898); J. F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.*, enlarged and republished by W. P. Hazard (3 vols., 1898); Theodore Bolton, *Early Am. Portrait Painters in Miniature* (1921); C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century* (2 vols., 1885); the *Phila. Record*, Feb. 6, 1885; Peale family papers; exhibition catalogues, Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts.] H. W. S.

PEALE, TITIAN RAMSAY (Nov. 17, 1799–Mar. 13, 1885), naturalist, artist, mechanician, born in Philadelphia, Pa., was the youngest son of Charles Willson Peale [*q.v.*] and his second wife, Elizabeth DePeyster of New York. He was given the name of his half-brother Titian (1780–1798) whose death during the yellow fever epidemic of 1798 was a heavy blow to his father. When convinced of Titian's talent for mechanics the elder Peale placed him with a manufacturer of spinning machines, intending to establish him with his brother Franklin in the cotton-spinning business. Titian however turned from this to study natural history and in his seventeenth year was placed with his brother Rubens Peale, then curator of the museum founded by their father. He attended lectures on anatomy at the University of Pennsylvania and developed skill in the preservation of specimens for the museum and in making drawings of subjects for its records. In 1818 he joined an expedition to the coast of Georgia and eastern Florida with William Maclure, Thomas Say, and George Ord to study the fauna and collect specimens. In the following year he was appointed as assistant naturalist and painter with the United States Expedition under Maj. Stephen H. Long to the Upper Missouri, and he made many of the sketches used in illustrating the papers by members of the party. In 1821 he was appointed assistant manager of the Philadelphia Museum.

Peale was represented in the exhibition of 1822 at the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts by four water-color paintings of animals. In 1824 he was sent to Florida by Charles Lucien Bonaparte to collect specimens and make drawings for his *American Ornithology* (4 vols., 1825–33), of which the colored plates in volumes I and IV were Peale's work. He also drew some of the plates for Thomas Say's *American Entomology* (3 vols., 1824–28). In 1826 he was again represented by water-color drawings of animals in the Pennsylvania Academy exhibition. While engaged as curator of the Philadelphia Museum he visited the interior of Colombia in 1832 to collect specimens and the following year published *Lepidoptera Americana.* In 1833 he was elected manager of the museum and continued to deliver lectures on natural history in that institution. From 1838 to 1842 he was a member of the civil staff of the United States Exploring Expedition to the South Sea under Charles Wilkes, and it was through Peale's activities that the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia was enriched by its notable collection of Polynesian ethnica. He also made drawings for a number of the plates which appear in the published accounts of the expedition. He was the author of "Mammalia and Ornithology," published in 1848 as Volume VIII of the *Reports of the United States Exploring Expedition, 1838–42,* but the work was later suppressed. After his return to Philadelphia he resumed the managership of the museum. The financial difficulties which finally led to the sale of the institution ended his connection with its affairs and in 1849 he was appointed an examiner in the United States Patent Office at Washington, an office which he held until 1872.

Peale was one of the founders of the club known as the United Bowmen of Philadelphia which was composed originally of six young men of scientific and social proclivities who practised archery. The organization, uniformed, is shown in Sully's engraving, "The United Bowmen." After retiring from office at Washington Peale devoted his remaining years chiefly to the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia where his collection of Lepidoptera is preserved. He was married first in 1822 to Eliza Cecilia Laforgue by whom he had six chil-

dren and second to Lucy Mullen. He died in Philadelphia.

[The author of this sketch used chiefly the Peale manuscripts. For printed sources see: "Titian Ramsey [*sic*] Peale," *Entomol. News*, Jan. 1913; Wm. Churchill, "The Earliest Samoan Prints," *Proc. Acad. Natural Sci. of Phila.*, vol. LXVII (1915); H. B. Weiss and G. M. Ziegler, *Thos. Say, Early Am. Naturalist* (1931); R. B. Davidson, *Hist. of the United Bowmen* (1888); Chas. Wilkes, *Narrative of the U. S. Exploring Expedition* (1845); Edwin James, *Account of an Expedition from Pittsburgh to the Rocky Mountains* (2 vols., 1823); the *Phila. Record*, Mar. 15, 1885. The minutes of Philadelphia Museum are in the manuscript collections of the Pa. Hist. Soc.] H. W. S.

PEARCE, CHARLES SPRAGUE (Oct. 13, 1851–May 18, 1914), painter, born at Boston, Mass., was the son of Shadrach Houghton and Mary Anna (Sprague) Pearce. His father, a native of Ashford, Kent, England, was brought to the United States when he was six years old, and became a China merchant in Boston. His mother was the daughter of Charles Sprague [*q.v.*], the poet, and a descendant of one of the members of the "Boston Tea Party." Young Pearce was educated at the Brimmer School and the Boston Latin School, Boston; worked in his father's office for five years; and met with some success as an amateur painter in his nonage. In 1873 he went to Paris and for three years studied painting under Léon Bonnat. Owing to delicate health, he spent his winters in Italy, Southern France, Egypt, Algiers, or Nubia. He began to exhibit his paintings in the Paris Salon in 1876, and continued to send work there for many years. The greater part of his life was passed in France. He bought a house at Auvers-sur-Oise in 1885 where, with his wife, Louise Catherine Bonjean, whom he married in 1888, he lived for more than thirty years.

Pearce's specialty was the pictorial representation of the peasant life of Northern France with its background of rustic landscape or quaint villages; but he also painted some Oriental scenes, Bible subjects, and a few portraits. His "Beheading of St. John the Baptist," shown at the Salon of 1881 and later at the Panama-Pacific International Exposition at San Francisco, 1915, is now in the Art Institute of Chicago. *"Peines de Cœur,"* exhibited at the Salon of 1885, was awarded the Temple gold medal at the Pennsylvania Academy exhibition of the same year. *"Un Enterrement Civil"* (a village funeral in Brittany), shown at the Salon of 1891, was especially interesting for its rendering of types of Breton character. Pearce's peasant girls, however, generally look more like professional studio models than real peasants. He was one of the American painters called upon to contribute mural paintings for the Library of Congress in Washington, and made a series of six lunettes for the north corridor, symbolizing the Family, Religion, Labor, Study, Recreation, and Rest. These works are well drawn and composed, though the conceptions do not rise above the average level of creative imagination as exemplified in other decorations in the building. Considering the inexperience of the artist in mural work, he acquitted himself creditably in this difficult field. Honors came to him from many sources and in many forms—medals, diplomas, election to high academic distinction in France, Belgium, Denmark, Germany, and the United States. His colleagues showed their esteem for him by making him chairman of the Paris juries for two important international expositions, those at Chicago and St. Louis, 1893 and 1904, and member of the juries of awards for the Paris Exposition of 1889 and the Antwerp Exposition of 1904. His death occurred at his home in Auvers-sur-Oise in his sixty-third year. His work in general is typical of the academic productions of the numerous talented Americans trained in Paris and living in France in the late nineteenth century. It is accomplished school work, well constructed and having many technical merits, but on the other hand it is quite without imagination, poetry, or the "flame of sensibility."

[H. L. Earle, *Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists* (1924); *Art Amateur*, Dec. 1883; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; Cat. of T. B. Clarke coll., 1899; *Cat. of the Thomas B. Clarke Coll. of Am. Pictures* (Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, 1891); C. B. Reynolds, *Washington, the Nation's Capital* (1912); Rand McNally *Washington Guide* (1915); *Boston Transcript*, May 18, 1914.] W. H. D.

PEARCE, JAMES ALFRED (Dec. 14, 1805–Dec. 20, 1862), representative and senator from Maryland, was descended in the fifth generation from William Pearce who emigrated from Scotland to the Eastern Shore of Maryland about 1670. The eldest child of Gideon and Julia (Dick) Pearce, he was born at the home of his maternal grandfather, Elisha Dick [*q.v.*], in Alexandria, Va., then in the District of Columbia. The death of his mother when he was only three years old left his early education under the direction of his grandfather, who is best known as Washington's physician. From a private academy at Alexandria he entered the College of New Jersey (Princeton) at the age of fourteen and was graduated in 1822 with high rank. Then applying himself to the study of law in the office of Judge John Glenn in Baltimore, he gained admission to the bar in 1824. He soon commenced the practice of his profession at Cambridge, Md., but his career was interrupted within a year by his removal to his

father's plantation on the Red River in Louisiana, where for three years he engaged in sugar planting. When he returned to Maryland, it was to resume the practice of law at Chestertown, though he at the same time found expression for his agricultural tastes by cultivating a farm successfully. On Oct. 6, 1829, he was married to Martha J. Laird, who died in 1845.

His legal career was again interrupted in 1831, when he was elected to the legislature of Maryland, from which he passed in 1835 to Congress. With the exception of a single term, that of 1839–41 when he lost his seat by a small majority in the only defeat of his experience, he sat as a Whig member in the House of Representatives from 1835 to 1843. In the latter year he was transferred to the Senate, where he continued through three successive elections to hold his seat until his death. He was reëlected as a Democrat the last time in 1859 after the disruption of the Whig party. It was probably in the committee rooms that his influence as a senator was most felt, for there his analytical mind, the extent of his information, his industry, and his patience for details gave his opinions authority. A man of broad cultural interests, his natural inclinations caused him to give especial attention on matters of education and science. During this long period of service he interested himself in the welfare of the Library of Congress, the Smithsonian Institution, and the Coast Survey. In the decoration of public buildings, sculptors found in him an ever-ready friend. For years he served on the board of visitors and governors of Washington College at Chestertown, Md., where he also lectured on law from 1850 to 1862.

After careful thought he opposed the concessions to Texas concerning the New Mexico territory proposed in the compromise measures of 1850 and succeeded in having the bill amended, an action that resulted in bitter feeling between him and Clay. He was in advance of his time in the firm stand he took against the spoils system and in favor of arbitration of the Oregon boundary dispute with England. Convinced that he was more useful in the Senate, he declined two positions offered him by President Fillmore: a seat on the federal bench of the district court of Maryland and a position as secretary of the interior. The fact that his name was repeatedly mentioned for the presidency, though probably not seriously, indicates a man who rose above the regular senatorial group. During the heated debates of the last slavery years he constantly opposed agitation as calculated to increase the discords that were dividing the country. Confronted with the actual fact of disunion, he deplored secession as ill-advised but equally deplored a union preserved by force. He soon found himself one of a small group which were futile against a dominant majority. Owing to failing health, he did not enter the Senate after Mar. 24, 1862, though he lingered nine months. He was survived by his second wife, Mathilda Cox (Ringgold) Pearce, whom he had married on Mar. 22, 1847. Social, genial, even playful with his intimates, he enjoyed warm and deep friendships. A brilliant conversationalist, he was at his best in a small circle. He was no politician in the ordinary sense of the word, yet he was one of the most successful public men of his period.

[A few letters in *Md. Hist. Mag.*, June 1921; B. C. Steiner, "James Alfred Pearce," *Ibid.*, Dec. 1921–June 1924; *Cong. Globe*, 37 Cong., 3 Sess., pp. 292–94, 298–302; A. B. Bache, "Eulogy," *Ann. Report of . . . the Smithsonian Institution . . . 1862* (1863); G. A. Hanson, *Old Kent* (1876); C. W. Sams and E. S. Riley, *The Bench and Bar of Md.* (1901).] E. L.

PEARCE, RICHARD (June 29, 1837–May 18, 1927), metallurgist, was born near Camborne in Cornwall, England, the son of Richard Donald Pearce and his wife, Jenifer Bennett. He inherited an early interest in mining from his father who was one of the superintendents of Dolcoath, the premier tin mine of Cornwall. A common-school education was terminated at the age of fourteen when he went to work in the tin-dressing plant of Dolcoath. In 1855, when only eighteen years of age, he was appointed assistant in chemistry at the Truro mining school where he taught while continuing his own studies. The school was poorly supported, however, and had to close, and three years later he joined his father at Dolcoath as assayer. After a short interval he was called upon again to start local classes in mining instruction, performing the task so well that he was given the opportunity of entering the Royal School of Mines in London. He equipped himself for further teaching under such distinguished professors as Percy and Hoffman, then went to Freiberg, Saxony, in 1865, for further study at the mining academy where he became interested in metallurgical silver processes, particularly those of Ziervogel and Augustin. On his return he built a copper-smelting plant at Swansea in south Wales, directing the operations himself, but he found it difficult to introduce there any practice that was not Welsh. The business, moreover, was conducted on such unsound principles that he was glad to accept the invitation of a London firm to visit Colorado in 1871 to inspect silver mines. He had to render an unfavorable report on this

occasion, but he was subsequently asked by the same company to take charge of a smelter to be built in Colorado. Since his health had suffered from the damp climate of Swansea, he welcomed the opportunity to enjoy the clear air and the cheerful atmosphere of the Rocky Mountain region.

He sailed from Liverpool with his wife and three children in 1872. The little smelter near Empire in Clear Creek County, Colo., was soon built and ready for business. Its technical operations were successful but the supply of pyritic ores was inadequate and the shipments of matte to Swansea entailed a cost which was excessive. Meanwhile, he had made the acquaintance of Nathaniel Peter Hill [*q.v.*], formerly professor of chemistry at Brown University and at that time manager of a smelter at Blackhawk in the adjoining county of Gilpin. The two metallurgists joined forces in building a reduction works in which Pearce's plan for treating the matte and extracting the precious metals was to be given a fair trial. The new plant was in action at Blackhawk by the end of November 1873. Pearce recognized the great responsibility placed upon him by this new position. In commenting upon the difficulties involved in inaugurating a process hitherto untried in America where many things that he needed were not obtainable, he said, "I found myself obliged from the first to introduce what might be termed makeshifts." Such is the history of technical operations in remote places. Richard Pearce was successful because he was able to adapt his methods to local conditions and to the exigencies of circumstances, and because his experience at Swansea in devising and superintending metallurgic operations performed by comparatively ignorant men taught him how to train unskilled labor to manipulate the intricate devices of a furnace. He was essentially a practical man, that is, a man of educated common sense. During the next thirty years no less than 52 tons of gold (equivalent to $31,200,000) were separated and refined for the Boston & Colorado Smelting Company, first at Blackhawk and later at Argo, near Denver, by the process devised and conducted by Richard Pearce. The larger smelter at Argo was built in 1878, and in the following year a branch smelter was built at Butte to provide matte from the ores of Montana. At this time Pearce lived at Denver, a wealthy man and an honored citizen. In 1885 he was appointed British vice-consul; in 1889 he was elected president of the American Institute of Mining Engineers; and he was twice president of the Colorado Scientific Society,

Pearce

with which he was closely identified as a charter member and to the *Proceedings* of which he contributed a number of valuable papers on geology and mineralogy. The mineral, pearceite, a sulphide of silver and arsenic, is named for him.

In 1902 he retired from the management of the Argo smelter and returned to Cornwall where, in 1908, he associated himself with Williams, Harvey & Company in building a tin smelter at Bootle, near Liverpool. He was engaged in this pleasant professional activity until 1919 when he left the works in charge of his son and changed his residence to London. There he remained, near to the museums and schools of science, both of which continued to command his lively interest. In 1925, at the age of eighty-eight, he received the gold medal of the Institution of Mining and Metallurgy "in recognition of the services which he had so long rendered to the advancement of metallurgical science and practice." He died on May 18, 1927, within a few weeks of his ninetieth birthday. He was twice married, first to Carolina Maria Lean and, second, to Amelia Elisabeth Hawken.

[T. T. Read, "Richard Pearce," *Mining and Metallurgy*, Feb. 1928; H. V. Pearce, "The Pearce Gold-Separation Process," *Trans. Am. Inst. Mining Eng.*, vol. XXXIX (1909); *Times* (London), May 19, Sept. 12, 1927; information from family sources.]

T. A. R.

PEARCE, RICHARD MILLS (Mar. 3, 1874–Feb. 16, 1930), pathologist and authority on medical education, was born in Montreal, Canada. His father, Richard Mills Pearce, and his mother, Sarah Smith, were both from the United States and moved back to New England soon after their son was born. Pearce received his education at Hillhouse High School in New Haven, Conn. (1889–90), the Boston Latin School (1890–91), the Boston College of Physicians and Surgeons (1891–93), Tufts College Medical School (1893–94; M.D., 1894), and finally at the Harvard Medical School (M.D. 1897). His interest was directed toward pathology by F. C. Mallory, and by W. T. Councilman in whose department at Harvard he served as instructor (1899–1900). From 1896 to 1899 he had acted as resident pathologist to the Boston City Hospital, and during 1899 he was pathologist to three other Boston hospitals.

In 1900 he accepted a post in the department of pathology at the University of Pennsylvania under Simon Flexner, and the following year went to Leipzig to work with Marchand. In 1903 he became director of the Bender Hygienic Laboratory at Albany and professor of pathology at Albany Medical College. He was called in 1908 to the chair of pathology at the Bellevue

Hospital Medical College, New York, and in 1910 he went to the University of Pennsylvania to occupy the first chair of research medicine to be created in the United States, which had been endowed by John Herr Musser. This post Pearce held until his appointment as director of the division of medical education of the Rockefeller Foundation (1920). During the War, as major in the medical corps, he helped organize the laboratory section of the army medical department and served as chairman of the division of medicine and related sciences of the Council of National Defense.

His appointment as a research professor of medicine marked the turning point in his career, and he worked unremittingly throughout the rest of his life to improve scientific medicine. In 1912 he delivered the Hitchcock lectures at California, choosing as his subject "Research in Medicine" and giving a vivid and farseeing portrayal of the history of medical experimentation and of present and future problems of medical education. Since he was a modest man of great alertness, tact, and broad human sympathies, it was scarcely surprising that he should have been selected to direct the great program of medical education inaugurated after the World War by the Rockefeller Foundation. His approach to the gigantic problem of improving world medicine was simple and logical, and it reflected his extraordinary combination of aptitudes for administration, teaching, and scientific investigation. His first years were spent largely as an administrator collecting data about the conditions of medicine in every civilized country; his surveys were models of detailed accuracy and clarity, and they form an incomparable body of source material concerning the history of contemporary medicine. On the basis of information thus secured the Foundation devoted considerable attention to medical education, and in administering the large capital funds expended in influential medical centers during the next seven years (1922–29) Pearce's unusual gifts as a teacher were allowed full expression. He concentrated upon the improvement of the preclinical sciences, giving funds for buildings and endowment, and fellowships for the training of promising teachers and investigators. To facilitate the exchange of information and opinion between countries, he established in 1924 an annual publication entitled *Methods and Problems of Medical Education.* With his keen interest in fostering medical research, he welcomed the important change of policy reflected by the fact that on Jan. 1, 1929, the division of medical education became known as the division of medical sciences of the Rockefeller Foundation. "The new undertakings [of the Foundation] differed from earlier programs in being directly aimed at the advancement of knowledge through improvement of clinical facilities or routine teaching laboratories or more fully trained teaching personnel instead of the development of institutions as teaching organizations" (Gregg, *post*).

In addition to many early contributions to pathology and to addresses on medical education (collected in *Medical Research and Education,* 1913) Pearce published a monograph, *The Spleen and Anaemia* (1918). On Nov. 6, 1902, he married May Harper Musser; there were two children, a son and a daughter.

[*Richard Mills Pearce, Jr., M.D. 1874–1930, Addresses Delivered at a Memorial Meeting at the Rockefeller Institute, Apr. 15, 1930* (privately printed); Simon Flexner, in *Science,* Mar. 28, 1930; *Who's Who in America,* 1928–29; Alan Gregg, in *Rockefeller Foundation Quart. Bull.,* Oct. 1931, pp. 538–79; H. T. Karsner, in *Archives of Pathology,* Mar. 1930; G. M. Pierson, in *Am. Jour. Medic. Sci.,* June 1919, May 1930; *N. Y. Times,* Feb. 17, 1930.] J.F.F.

PEARCE, STEPHEN AUSTEN (Nov. 7, 1836–Apr. 8, 1900), musician, was born in Brompton, Kent, England, the son of Stephen and Elizabeth (Austen) Pearce. The father, a postmaster, gave his six children the best educational opportunities. Two sons, Stephen and James, received special training as organists and choirmasters and were so similarly trained that a biography of one to a certain degree involves also the other. Stephen, the elder brother, was the more learned and his influence was therefor more far-reaching. Both boys sang in the Rochester Cathedral and the nearby Chatham Cathedral choirs (Episcopalian), thus taking part daily in two services and spending the remaining time in the cathedral school. Both received their most important organ training under the eminent organist, John Larkin Hopkins, and were therefore fitted for any organ position. Both entered Oxford and took their degrees of B.Mus., Stephen in 1859, and James in 1860. Stephen continued his study and received the degree of D.Mus. in 1864. In that year he visited the United States and Canada. His brother had preceded him and was organist of the Quebec Cathedral. Stephen had held important positions in London churches and returned to give organ recitals at the Hanover Square Rooms and elsewhere, but in 1872 he came to America to reside. Settling in New York, he became an important factor as organist, theorist, and writer. He held church positions at St. George's, St. Stephen's, Zion, Ascension, the Fifth Avenue Collegiate (Dutch Reformed), all in New York City, and at the First Presbyterian in Jersey

City. For one year (1878–79) he was instructor in vocal music at Columbia College. He also taught harmony and composition at the New York College of Music and was lecturer on harmony at the General Theological Seminary, and at the Peabody Institute and The Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. Besides these many activities he gave numerous lectures and recitals in other cities. He had a brilliant technique and was doubtless one of the best organists of his time.

With a tremendous capacity for work, in 1874 he became musical editor of the New York *Evening Post* and on occasion contributed articles to the *Musical Courier* and to various other periodicals. He edited a *Pocket Dictionary of Musical Terms* (1889) in twenty-one languages, including Arabic, Chaldaic, French, German, and Greek. He wrote much church and piano music and made many transcriptions of symphonies and oratorios for organ. Among his more important compositions are the following: a three-act children's opera, *La Belle Américaine*; a dramatic oratorio, *Celestial Visions*; a church cantata, *The Psalm of Praise* (in fugal style for solos, eight-part chorus, full orchestra and organ), performed at Oxford University; an Overture in E minor; an orchestral "Allegro Agitato"; several pieces for piano, and a vocal trio in canon form, "Bright Be Thy Dreams." Pearce died on Apr. 8, 1900, in the Jersey Heights Presbyterian Church. He had begun to play the morning service, but feeling ill, he was obliged to lie down and died almost at once of a stroke of paralysis. In appearance he was dignified and fine-looking. Dr. Waldo Selden Pratt, who frequently heard him play, writes of him: "My impression of him was that he was a most competent and accomplished musician, probably too much so to secure full recognition at the time when he came here."

[Sources include: Theodore Baker, *A Biog. Dict. of Musicians* (1900); *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians: Am. Supp.* (1930); *Musical Courier*, Apr. 11, 1900; *Evening Post* (N. Y.), Apr. 9, 10, 1900; information as to certain facts from Pearce's niece, Miss Ella Gilmore Pearce, Yonkers, N. Y.] F. L. G. C.

PEARSE, JOHN BARNARD SWETT (Apr. 19, 1842–Aug. 24, 1914), metallurgist, was born in Philadelphia, Pa. His father, Oliver Peabody Pearse, a merchant sea-captain, was drowned at Cape May, N. J., while saving a bather, when John was six years of age. His mother, Adelia Coffin (Swett), later married Dr. Edward Hartshorne, a metallurgical expert, whose experiences and influence determined the boy's active business career. His early education was obtained under Prof. Charles Short,

who was connected subsequently with Columbia University. By working as a machinist he also gained a certain amount of information concerning metals. Later he entered Yale University, from which he graduated in 1861, with the degree of B.A.

Returning to Philadelphia, he became connected with Booth and Garrett's chemical laboratory, but in June 1863 assumed complete charge of the chemical division of the United States army's laboratory at Philadelphia, where pharmaceutical products for the hospital service were manufactured. At the conclusion of the Civil War he studied metallurgy for more than a year in the School of Mines at Freiberg, Saxony. He then spent a similar period of time at Neuberg and Leoben, Styria, and other places in Europe, visiting mines and observing methods of metal manufacturing. He returned to the United States in December 1867, and two months later was engaged as chemist by the Pennsylvania Steel Works, near Harrisburg. In 1870 he was promoted to the position of general manager, and this advancement enabled him to build up an enviable reputation as a metal expert, particularly in designing and improving Bessemer steel plants and their products. In addition to other achievements, he was instrumental in developing for the first time the process of manufacturing Bessemer pig-iron from native New Jersey and Pennsylvania ores.

In June 1874 he resigned his position to accept appointment as commissioner and secretary of the second Pennsylvania geological survey, which positions he held until 1881. He was also active on the committee in charge of metallurgical and mining exhibits displayed at the Centennial Exhibition, Philadelphia. In 1876 he became general manager of the South Boston Iron Company, a concern engaged in general machine and foundry work, and particularly in the manufacturing of ordnance and projectiles for the United States government. During the next seven years his keen mind and tireless efforts enabled the company to produce new and better products. In 1883, however, his health broke down and he retired from active participation in metallurgical enterprises. The remainder of his life was spent in cultural vocations and in travel. Until 1889 he lived in England studying music, particularly the violin. During the latter part of his life his home was in Boston. He died at his summer residence in Georgeville, Quebec.

He was the author of several publications prepared during the earlier years of his career. In 1869 he completed a translation of *A Treatise on Roll Turning for the Manufacture of Iron* from

the German of Peter Tunner. He contributed a paper "On the Use of Natural Gas in Iron Work," to *Reports on the Second Geological Survey of Pennsylvania* (1875). His largest single published work was an historical essay entitled *A Concise History of the Iron Manufacture of the American Colonies up to the Revolution and of Pennsylvania until the Present Time* (1876). Three of his papers were printed in the *Transactions of the American Institute of Mining Engineers,* entitled, "The Manufacture of Iron and Steel Rails" (vol. I, 1874), "The Improved Bessemer Plant" (vol. IV, 1877), and "Iron and Carbon, Mechanically and Chemically Considered" (*Ibid.*).

He was married in Arlington, Mass., Nov. 1, 1876, to Mary Langdon Williams, daughter of David W. Williams of Roxbury (part of Boston), Mass. A son and a daughter were born to them.

[*Monthly Bull. Am. Inst. Mining Engineers,* Dec. 1914; *Directory of Living Grads. of Yale Univ.* (1904); *The Fiftieth Anniversary of the Class of 1861, Yale Coll.* (1912); *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ.* (1915); *Boston Transcript,* Aug. 27, 1914; information from Pearse's son, Langdon Pearse.] H. S. P.

PEARSON, EDWARD JONES (Oct. 4, 1863–Dec. 7, 1928), railroad engineer, best known as chief executive of the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad, was born in Rockville, Ind., the son of Leonard and Lucy Small (Jones) Pearson and a brother of Leonard Pearson [*q.v.*]. After preliminary schooling in the West, he entered Cornell University, where he received the degree of B.S. in engineering in 1883. On June 7, 1899, he married Gertrude S. Simmons of Evanston, Ill.; one son was born to them.

Pearson's first railroad experience was with the Missouri Pacific in 1881 as a rodman on the extension from Atchison, Kan., to Omaha, Nebr. The following year he was engaged in construction work in Indian Territory on the line of the Atlantic & Pacific Railroad. In 1883 he was engaged as assistant engineer for the Northern Pacific, to work on the terminal at Portland, Ore., and subsequently was made supervisor of the St. Paul division (1884), supervisor of bridges, buildings, and water supply of the Minnesota and St. Paul divisions (1885), and engineer in charge of construction train service (1890). In the years 1892–94 he was principal assistant engineer of the Chicago terminal lines in which the Northern Pacific was interested. Returning to the exclusive service of the Northern Pacific, he continued to rise in rank, becoming superintendent of the Yellowstone division (1894), superintendent of the Rocky Mountain division (1895), superintendent of the Pacific division (1898), assistant general superintendent of the eastern division (1902), acting chief engineer (1903), and chief engineer (1904).

The transcontinental extension of the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul attracted Pearson in 1905, and he became chief engineer of the Chicago, Milwaukee & Puget Sound Railway, which constructed the Pacific extension for the parent company. During his period of service that road was completed. On June 1, 1911, he became vice-president of the Missouri Pacific and of the St. Louis, Iron Mountain & Southern, having charge of maintenance, operation, and construction. He took a similar vice-presidency of the Texas & Pacific, in March 1915, primarily to direct the construction of a terminal at New Orleans. The following year he accepted still another position of like nature, the vice-presidency of the New York, New Haven & Hartford, with the duty of acting as assistant to the president and of controlling construction, operation, and maintenance. Upon the death of President Howard Elliott, Pearson on May 1, 1917, succeeded him. During the administration of former president Charles S. Mellen [*q.v.*] the "New Haven" had fallen into bad physical and financial condition. The buildings, equipment, and roadbed needed extensive repairs, provision had to be made for a considerable floating debt, rates had to be readjusted, and disposition had to be made of numerous "outside properties." No dividends had been paid on the common stock since December 1913. The task of meeting these and other difficulties had undoubtedly hastened the death of former President Elliott. During Pearson's presidency, which included the war period in which he acted as federal manager, considerable progress was made in restoring the road. Obviously the boom of the 1920's played a part. By 1924 the road showed an operating profit, and the following year Pearson was able to float a bond issue in New England, thus bringing to a successful culmination a long fight to obtain local support. Dividends on the common stock were resumed in 1928. This same year, however, Pearson's health gave way, due in part, no doubt, to his tireless and unsparing efforts on behalf of the road. On Oct. 23 he entered the Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore; on Nov. 26 he tendered his resignation as president, to take effect at the end of the year; and the following month he died.

[*The Biog. Directory of the Railway Officers of America* (1913); *Railroad Gazette,* May 9, 1902; *Railway Age Gazette,* Mar. 26, Apr. 2, 1915, Mar. 17, 1916; *Railway Age,* Dec. 1, 15, 1928; *Who's Who in America,* 1928–29; *N. Y. Times,* Dec. 8, 1928.] R. E. R.

PEARSON, ELIPHALET (June 11, 1752–Sept. 12, 1826), first principal of Phillips Academy, Andover, was born in Newbury, Mass., the eldest son of David Pearson, a thrifty farmer and miller, and his wife, Sarah (Danforth) Pearson. At Dummer Academy, in Byfield, where he studied under the famous Master William Moody, Pearson first met Samuel Phillips [*q.v.*], with whom he formed an enduring friendship. He graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1773, his Commencement part, a disputation with Theodore Parsons, being considered so excellent that it was published as a pamphlet (*A Forensic Dispute on the Legality of Enslaving the Africans,* 1773). He remained at Cambridge for further study, and was later licensed to preach but was never a candidate for a pastorate.

At the outbreak of the Revolution he withdrew to Andover, escorting the widow of President Holyoke of Harvard and her daughter Priscilla. At Andover, he taught in the grammar school, joined his friend Phillips in various projects, and especially aided him in drawing up the constitution of Phillips Academy, of which, at the unanimous request of the trustees, he became the first principal when it was opened in 1778. Described by Oliver Wendell Holmes as having a "big name, big frame, big voice, and beetling brow" (*The Complete Poetical Works,* Cambridge edition, 1895, p. 257), he was a strict disciplinarian, who, through his masterful personality and careful supervision of his students, established confidence in the new institution. But he chafed under the irritating restraints of his position and, when he received in 1786 a call to become Hancock Professor of Hebrew and Oriental Languages at Harvard, he was glad to escape to Cambridge. On July 17, 1780, he married Priscilla Holyoke, twelve years older than he, who brought him a dowry of $8,000; by her he had a daughter. After his wife's death in 1782, he married, Sept. 29, 1785, Sarah Bromfield, by whom he had four children.

At Harvard, Pearson was an influential figure, who, after the death of President Willard in 1804, assumed the duties of president and, but for his orthodox and conservative Calvinistic views, might have been elected as Willard's successor. The growing spirit of Unitarianism being distasteful to him, he resigned in 1806 and returned to Andover, where he was instrumental through his perseverance and tireless energy in founding Andover Theological Seminary, destined to become a citadel of Congregational theology in New England. For one year (1808–09) he was professor of sacred theology in the Seminary, but then retired in favor of Moses Stuart [*q.v.*]. He remained in Andover, however, until 1820, as president of the board of trustees of both the academy and the seminary, an office to which he had been elected on Aug. 17, 1802, and which he did not resign until Aug. 20, 1821. In 1820 he moved to Harvard, Worcester County, Mass. He died in Greenland, N. H., while on a visit to a daughter, and was buried in the local cemetery. He was extraordinarily versatile, being both business man and scholar, musician and agriculturist, preacher and mechanic. Several of his sermons, preached on special occasions, were published. His austerity, intolerance, and explosiveness made him many enemies, but his rugged personality and brilliant, restless intellect played an important part in American educational history. His students called him "Elephant," "because of his ponderous name and figure." A recitation building on Andover Hill is named Pearson Hall in his memory.

[C. C. Carpenter, *Biog. Cat. of . . . Phillips Acad., Andover* (1903); *Phillips Bull.*, Jan. 1914; C. M. Fuess, *An Old New England School* (1917); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. II (1857).] C. M. F.

PEARSON, FRED STARK (July 3, 1861–May 7, 1915), engineer, the son of Ambrose and Hannah (Edgerly) Pearson, was born in Lowell, Mass. He entered Tufts College in 1879, studied during the following year at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and then returned to Tufts where he graduated in 1883. For three years thereafter, while he served at Tufts as instructor in mathematics and applied mechanics, he pursued further studies and conducted investigations for various commercial interests. From 1889 to 1893 he was engaged in the electrification of the West End Street Railway of Boston, Mass. Cars had been run by electricity before, but this was the first system of electric traction to be operated on a great scale and for many years it was the model for all who sought to equip electric railways. The generators at the main power plant were increased at his direction from 120 to 500 horse power—a step so unprecedented that the Westinghouse Company refused to bid on the work. The late George Westinghouse considered this project as epoch-making in the development of the dynamo. Throughout his life Pearson led his profession in making demands upon manufacturers for increasing the size of machinery to the highest practical efficiency.

He was responsible for the introduction of electric street cars in Brooklyn, in connection with which project he designed and erected what was then the largest and most modern electric power station. For the Metropolitan Street Railway Company of New York City with which he

was associated from 1894 to 1899, he devised and put into successful operation the underground conduit or trolley. It still remains practically as he left it. For this company he designed and erected the 96th Street Power House, at the time (1896) the largest in the country with a total generating capacity of 70,000 horse power. During this period he was in great demand as consulting engineer for electric railways and power transmission lines in the United States, in Canada, Cuba, Jamaica, and England. Pearson also served as chief engineer for the Dominion Coal Company, refusing at one time the presidency of that concern.

Pearson's interests were largely transferred to foreign countries after 1899. In Brazil, he undertook the task of furnishing power to the city of São Paulo by developing the Rio Tieté. At the Falls of Necaxa in Mexico, he built a plant transmitting between 100,000 and 200,000 horse power to the city of Mexico ninety-five miles away. Later he constructed a plant of about the same magnitude at Niagara Falls for supplying electric light and power to Toronto 100 miles distant. At Lac de Bonnet, on the Winnipeg River, he built a 25,000 horse power plant for the city of Winnipeg, Canada. The development of a power plant of about 40,000 horse power for the city of Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, was his next great enterprise, and this was followed by his last important work, the development of the Ebro River for the general use of the city of Barcelona, Spain. The World War, however, interrupted this work when it was near completion.

In addition to his achievements in electrical engineering, Pearson directed many enterprises in other fields, mining, railroading, lumbering, and irrigation. To indulge his love of nature he developed and managed a beautiful estate of thousands of acres in the hill country of western Massachusetts. He was married on Jan. 5, 1887, to Mabel Ward, of Lowell, Mass. Both lost their lives when the *Lusitania* was sunk on May 7, 1915. They were survived by two sons and one daughter. "Pearson was a man of tireless energy. . . . Every subject that he touched he seemed to absorb and master as though he had a special aptitude for every science. His versatility of intellect was marked by all who knew him. He possessed a constructive and creative imagination without which he could never have achieved the enormous works he left, involving, as they did, great originality and prompt comprehension of complicated situations" (*Transactions of the American Society of Civil Engineers,* vol. LXXXVII, 1914, p. 1404).

[*Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; *Gen. Electric Rev.,* vol. XVIII, 1915; Frederic I. Winslow, *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Eng.,* vol. LXXXVII, 1924; *Proc. Am. Inst. Electrical Eng.,* June 1915; C. Martyn, *The William Ward Genealogy* (1925); *N. Y. Times,* May 8, 1915.]

B. A. R.

PEARSON, LEONARD (Aug. 17, 1868–Sept. 20, 1909), veterinarian, was born in Evansville, Ind., the brother of Edward Jones Pearson [*q.v.*] and the son of Leonard and Lucy Small (Jones) Pearson, natives of New England. His preliminary education was obtained mostly from his mother. From early boyhood he was interested in animals and when he went to Cornell University at sixteen, he elected all the courses offered in veterinary science. Graduating (B.S.) in 1888, he worked for the federal bureau of animal industry during the summer and in the fall entered the Veterinary School at the University of Pennsylvania. When he received his degree of Doctor of Veterinary Medicine (1890) he accepted a position on the teaching staff, with permission to spend the first year in graduate study abroad. In the course of his studies in Germany, he discovered the thermal reaction produced by mallein in horses infected with glanders, and he became deeply interested in tuberculin (just then discovered by Koch) when, in January 1891, Professor Gutmann, of the Veterinary Institute at Dorpat, Russia, demonstrated that it could be used to discover the presence of tuberculosis in cattle before any physical signs were apparent.

In the fall of 1891, he returned to Philadelphia and began his work in the University of Pennsylvania as assistant professor of veterinary medicine, being promoted to a full professorship three years later. He also engaged in practice, and within a few months, in March 1892, made the first tuberculin test of cattle in the western hemisphere. In the years immediately following, through his addresses and writings, he was one of the chief factors in bringing about the general acceptance of this test. When the State Livestock Sanitary Board was established in 1895, he was appointed state veterinarian, becoming a member of the board *ex officio.* He took office Jan. 1, 1896. His organization of the work of the board, the laws he devised and induced the legislature to pass, and his system of suppressing bovine tuberculosis operated so satisfactorily that they were regarded as models and were copied by other states (see his "The Pennsylvania Plan for Controlling Tuberculosis," *Proceedings of the American Veterinary Medical Association,* 1899). Almost at the beginning of the work, he prevailed upon the board to establish a laboratory for research, the Uni-

versity of Pennsylvania providing the space at the Veterinary School. Here, in collaboration with M. P. Ravenel and S. H. Gilliland, he did work that attracted world-wide attention on the relation of bovine to human tuberculosis and on the vaccination of cattle against tuberculosis (Ravenel, "Comparative Virulence of the Tubercle Bacillus from Human and Bovine Sources," *Transactions of the British Congress on Tuberculosis, 1901,* vol. III, 1902; Gilliland, *The Production of Artificial Immunity against Tuberculosis in Cattle,* Pennsylvania State Livestock Sanitary Board, Circular 32, 1915). In 1908, in recognition of his researches, the University of Pennsylvania conferred on him an honorary doctorate of medicine.

While developing and directing the work of the State Livestock Sanitary Board, he continued his connection with the Veterinary School. His conception of the relation of veterinary medicine to the public health on the one hand and to the economics of agriculture on the other and his revelation of the great opportunities for research inspired his students. In 1897, he was appointed dean of the faculty. Through his efforts the endowment funds of the school were considerably increased, the support of the livestock industry was enlisted, and in the course of eight years a total of $450,000 was appropriated to the University of Pennsylvania to erect and equip buildings for the Veterinary School. Additional funds were secured which made it possible to reorganize and enlarge the teaching staff, providing facilities for instruction and research which were unequaled in the United States.

Pearson was of a robust, vigorous constitution and there seemed to be no limit to his capacity for work but eventually, under the intense strain, his health began to fail. In the summer of 1908, his friends advised him to take a rest, but he continued at work until the following June, when he went away, too late, to rest and recuperate. He died, unmarried, at Spruce Brook, Newfoundland, in September 1909, aged forty-one. During his professional career he held many positions of honor and trust. In 1903, he became a member of the Philadelphia board of health and, in 1905, of the advisory board of the state department of health. He was a member of numerous professional, scientific, and agricultural societies, and was honored with the presidency of all the professional organizations in which he held membership.

[*Leonard Pearson* (1909), repr. from *Am. Veterinary Rev.*, Oct. 1909; *In Memoriam—Leonard Pearson* (n.d.); L. A. Klein, "Pioneer Work in Tuberculosis Control," *Jour. Am. Veterinary Medic. Asso.*, Jan. 1921; *Who's Who in America,* 1908–09; *N. Y. Medic. Jour.*, Oct. 2, 1909; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Sept. 21, 1909; personal acquaintance.] L. A. K.

PEARSON, RICHMOND MUMFORD (June 28, 1805–Jan. 5, 1878), jurist, was born in Rowan County, N. C. His father, Richmond Pearson, who moved from Virginia to North Carolina after service in the Revolution, was a planter and merchant; his mother, Elizabeth, was the daughter of Robinson Mumford, of Connecticut parentage, a descendant of Elder William Brewster [*q.v.*] who had settled in North Carolina after a period in Jamaica (J. R. Totten, *Christophers Genealogy,* 1921, p. 143 and *passim*). Young Pearson was prepared for college in Washington, D. C., and at Salisbury, N. C., and was graduated from the University of North Carolina in 1823. Studying law, he was admitted to the bar in 1826 and began practice at Salisbury. He was a good lawyer, not eloquent, but painstaking in preparation of cases. His presentation of them was simple, logical, and, as he would have phrased it, "full of meat." He began in 1829 four successive terms in the House of Commons. In 1835 he was defeated for Congress, and in 1836 was elected a judge of the superior court. During the next twelve years he gained reputation as an unusually able and efficient trial judge. In 1848, although a Whig, he was elected associate justice of the supreme court by a Democratic legislature. Ten years later he became chief justice. In 1865 he was defeated for the "Johnson" convention, by which all offices were vacated, but he was at once reëlected chief justice, and in 1868, the existing government having been overthrown by congressional reconstruction, he was the choice of both parties for the same position, which he held until his death from apoplexy in Winston while on his way to a session of the court. He was twice married: on June 12, 1831, to Margaret McClung Williams, daughter of Senator John Williams of Knoxville, Tenn., and, after her death, in 1859 to Mary (McDowell), widow of John Gray Bynum.

In 1836 Pearson established a law school at Mocksville. He moved to Richmond Hill in Surry County in 1848 and continued the school there. He proved himself a really great teacher, and more than a thousand students read law under him, whom he filled with enthusiasm for the subject and with lasting personal affection for himself. Three of them were later on the supreme bench with him. He was plain and simple in manner, with a touch of the rough and uncouth, which many thought he cultivated. He had no high degree of culture, was cold and stern in temperament, inclined to be unforgiving in

disposition, and was relentless in his determined ambition. For many years he drank to excess. Cold in temper though he was, in intellect he was blazing. He had strong native powers of mind, and, never a wide reader, achieved his intellectual development through reasoning. As a judge, while a master of the common law, he cared little for precedents. He grasped principles firmly and recognized the most delicate distinctions. A striking characteristic was his ability to cut through the artificial and irrelevant matter in a case and reach directly the matter at issue. His style was terse and pithy, baldly unadorned, clear and strong, and his opinions abounded in homely illustrations drawn from every-day life. All his opinions reflect the clarity of his thinking, his grasp of his subject and the law applicable to it, his power of logical analysis and deduction, and his strong personality. They are more, says one commentator, "than repeated precedents, abstract statements, and tedious details. They glow with life, abound with reason, and clothe the law in rich apparel and endow its precepts with soul and spirit" (Lewis, *post*, p. 254). Comparison of Pearson with Thomas Ruffin [*q.v.*], his great predecessor, is almost inevitable. In equity Pearson did not approach him, but in the common law he was certainly Ruffin's equal, if not his superior. "If Ruffin had more *scope*, Pearson had more *point*. If Ruffin had more *learning*, Pearson had more *accuracy*. If Ruffin was larger, Pearson was finer" (Edwin G. Reade, in 78 *N. C.*, 501). Certainly, too, Pearson was more original.

During the Civil War, Pearson incurred great unpopularity throughout the South by his decisions in *habeas corpus* proceedings growing out of the conscription laws, which his critics declared were designed to injure the Confederate cause. His whole conduct in the matter shows his disregard for precedents and for the opinion of others, but his rulings were in accordance with law and were upheld by his colleagues until in *Gatlin* vs. *Walton* (60 *N. C.*, 325), a case involving the power of Congress to change the terms of exemption, he was overruled. His dissenting opinion is notably weak. He opposed secession on constitutional and moral grounds, and he had no love for the Confederacy, but there was about him no taint of disloyalty toward his state. More open to criticism, however, was his conduct during reconstruction. In 1868 he identified himself with the Republican party, published an appeal for Grant's election, and in other ways was active politically. When the bar under the lead of B. F. Moore signed a protest against the political activity of the judges, he was the

prime mover for disabling the signers from practice (*In the Matter of B. F. Moore and Others*, 63 *N. C.*, 389) and did not thereby add to his legal reputation. In 1870 when the Kirk-Holden war occurred, he issued the writ of *habeas corpus* for those illegally held, but, forgetting his favorite legal maxim, *fiat justitia, ruat coelum*, which he had uttered so often in 1863 and 1864, he sustained the governor—William Woods Holden [*q.v.*]—to the extent of refusing to summon a *posse comitatus* to enforce the writs, but, instead, declared the power of the judiciary exhausted (*Ex parte Adolphus G. Moore and Others*, 64 *N. C.*, 802). When the collapse of the movement came, he was pathetically fearful of impeachment. He engaged counsel and prepared a defense which he submitted to the Senate only to have it rejected. He was not impeached, however; largely, it is supposed, because of the influence of his former students. He presided with outward impartiality in the impeachment trial of Holden, but his sympathies were naturally with the Governor and he privately advised his counsel as to their conduct of the case.

[S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. V (1906); W. D. Lewis, *Great Am. Lawyers*, vol. V (1908); J. G. deR. Hamilton, *Reconstruction in N. C.* (1914), and "The N. C. Courts and the Confederacy," in *N. C. Hist. Rev.*, Oct. 1927; 31–35 and 40–77 *N. C. Reports*; "Proceedings in Memory of Richmond M. Pearson," 78 *N. C.*, 493–509; *Morning Star* (Wilmington), Jan. 8, 1878.]

J. G. deR. H.

PEARSONS, DANIEL KIMBALL (Apr. 14, 1820–Apr. 27, 1912), physician, financier, philanthropist, was born at Bradford, Vt., beside the Connecticut River, in a farmhouse that served also as a wayside inn. His father, John Pearsons, was of Scotch ancestry; his mother, whom he resembled in physical and mental qualities, was Hannah (Putnam) Pearsons, a distant relation of Gen. Israel Putnam. He studied in academies at Bradford and Newbury, and attended Dartmouth College during the freshman year, boarding himself and living on less than one dollar a week, a part of which expense he met by sawing wood at twenty-five cents a cord. Graduating in 1841 from the Vermont Medical College, Woodstock, he entered his profession in Chicopee, Mass., and was promptly successful. In August 1847 he married Marrietta Chapin, daughter of Deacon Giles Chapin of Chicopee; to her at the end of his career he emphatically ascribed much of the credit for his philanthropies.

At her suggestion he sold both their home and his practice in 1851, with a view to entering business, for which she thought he possessed special aptitude. They spent six months in Europe, and then for a few years Pearsons introduced text-

books on physiology, lecturing on the subject in the colleges of several Southern states, in the East, and in the interior. Being asked by acquaintances in Massachusetts to undertake the sale of their farm lands in Illinois, he went to Chicago in 1860 and later became agent for the sale of many thousands of acres held by private owners and by the Illinois Central Railroad Company. An eastern life insurance company also entrusted funds to him for loaning on farm mortgages. Hay was selling at one dollar and a half per ton and corn at ten cents a bushel, but Pearsons inspired possible buyers and despondent farmers with his courage and foresight of future values. In a few years he had sold 200,000 acres. He became a director of Chicago banks and other enterprises, and against the advice of friends invested largely in Michigan pine lands which became very valuable. He served on the Chicago city council, 1873–76, and as chairman of its finance committee gave important assistance in rehabilitating the city's finances which had been demoralized by the devastating fire of 1871. He was one of the founders of the Presbyterian Hospital, 1883, and president of its board for about five years.

In 1885 he removed to Hinsdale, Ill., and in 1889 retired from business to devote himself to giving away his fortune. After making a few preliminary gifts, he sailed with his wife for a year in Europe and the Near East. Returning in 1890 he set himself with characteristic thoroughness and zest to the work he had projected for the next twenty years—for he fully expected to live to the age of ninety. Keenly interested in education from his youth, he was convinced that the colleges of the West and South were of utmost importance to the future of America. At that time they were meagerly endowed and ill able to meet growing educational requirements. Pearsons decided to devote to selected colleges the bulk of his fortune, about five million dollars, by making gifts conditioned upon the securing by the colleges of larger total amounts from others, thus stimulating the institutions to increased exertions and multiplying the number of their supporters. In this way he imparted a powerful stimulus to some forty colleges and several secondary schools. The colleges specially singled out by him for repeated gifts were Whitman (Washington), Pomona (California), Lake Forest (Illinois), Knox (Illinois), Yankton (South Dakota), Berea (Kentucky), Mount Holyoke (Massachusetts), and, for the largest amount of all, Beloit (Wisconsin). He also gave liberally to the Chicago Young Men's Christian Association, Chicago Theological Seminary, Chicago City Missionary Society, and to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions.

Pearsons was as unusual in characteristics as in career. Tall, erect, with piercing black eyes, abrupt and unconventional in speech, caustic in criticisms, adamant in refusals, an iconoclast yet a reverent idealist, a rigid economist and a princely giver, severe in manner but profound in his affections, he was regarded by those who knew him but slightly as an interesting eccentric; those who understood him honored and loved him. He died at ninety-two, having divested himself of all his possessions excepting a small annuity and regarding himself as one of the happiest men in the world.

[E. F. Williams, *The Life of Dr. D. K. Pearsons . . .* (1911); D. K. Pearsons, *Daniel K. Pearsons, His Life and Works* (1912), of much less value; E. D. Eaton, *Historical Sketches of Beloit College* (1928); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Congregationalist*, May 4, 11, 1912; *Literary Digest*, May 11, 1912; *Chicago Evening Post*, Apr. 27, 1912.] E. D. E.

PEARY, ROBERT EDWIN (May 6, 1856–Feb. 20, 1920), Arctic explorer, the only son of Charles Peary and Mary (Wiley) Peary, came of French and British stock long settled in New England. He was born at Cresson, Pa., whither his family had moved from Maine to engage in the manufacture of barrel heads and staves. On the death of the father, when Robert was not quite three years old, mother and son returned to Maine, settling at Cape Elizabeth, not far from Portland. In the rugged surroundings of this region he spent his childhood and youth, developing the splendid constitution which was to stand him in such good stead in his arduous work later. His education he received in the local public schools and in the Portland High School, and in 1873 he entered Bowdoin College. Here he chose the civil engineering course, did well in his studies, and also took a prominent part in athletics.

On graduation, in 1877, he became a country surveyor in Fryeburg, Me. Two years later he entered the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey at Washington, D. C., as a cartographic draftsman, and after two years' service here, he joined the corps of civil engineers of the navy with the rank of lieutenant (Oct. 26, 1881). In 1884 he went to Nicaragua as assistant engineer of the expedition sent to survey a route for the proposed Nicaragua ship canal. He returned to the United States the following summer. That autumn, in the course of casual reading, he came upon a paper describing the inland ice of Greenland. It captured his interest and he began reading all he could find on the subject. The

vast interior of Greenland was at this time still unexplored, and Peary became fired with the ambition to cross the inland ice. Securing six months' leave in the summer of 1886, he embarked as a supercargo aboard a steam whaler, which dropped him off at Godhavn on the west coast of Greenland.

His aim on this expedition was; in his own words, "to gain a practical knowledge of the obstacles and ice conditions of the interior; to put to the test of actual use certain methods and details of equipment; to make such scientific observations as might be practicable" ("A Reconnaissance," *post,* p. 261). He enlisted the interest of a young Danish official at Godhavn, and the two young men with a party of eight natives carried equipment, provisions, and two sledges up to the foot of the ice cap, 1,100 feet above sea level. Here the two explorers started off alone, dragging their sledges. The steep slope was traversed by ridges and gullies with nearly vertical walls and by cracks and crevasses of all widths. They had to contend further with heavy head winds, sleet, and snow. After three weeks they had come about 100 miles from the ice foot, reaching an elevation 7,500 feet above sea level. Another storm now set in and by this time they had rations for but six days, so that return was imperative.

As a result of this reconnaissance, Peary became confirmed in his desire to make Arctic research his life work. On returning to the United States he published an account of his experiences in the *Bulletin of the American Geographical Society* (Sept. 30, 1887) under the title, "A Reconnaissance of the Greenland Inland Ice." The following year his official duties again took him to Nicaragua, this time as engineer in chief of the Nicaragua Canal Survey. On his return he was married, Aug. 11, 1888, to Josephine Diebitsch of Washington, and for the three years following was engaged on naval engineering duties along the Atlantic seaboard, chiefly in New York and Philadelphia. All his spare time was spent in studies dealing with the Arctic and he took advantage of every opportunity to lay before various scientific societies his plans for the crossing of Greenland. He was confident that by starting at the right time of year and following the route of his reconnaissance, he could cover the distance across and back in a single season. To secure financial help for his proposed expedition he stressed the fact that if successful it would give America priority in the crossing of Greenland.

His efforts to enlist help in financing an expedition appeared ready to bear fruit when, early

Peary

in 1889, came the news of the crossing of Greenland by the young Norwegian explorer, Fridtjof Nansen. This was a serious blow to Peary's hopes, for now the mere crossing of the inland ice could no longer be urged to secure help for an expedition. He therefore began stressing the importance of solving the mystery of Greenland and of determining its northern extent. So earnestly did he labor that he received the support of various American scientific and geographical societies, and early in 1891 he secured eighteen months' leave for the purpose of reaching the northern terminus of Greenland by way of the inland ice. On June 6 of that year the party, consisting of six men and Mrs. Peary, left New York aboard the *Kite,* a Newfoundland sealer which had been chartered for the purpose.

On July 11, the *Kite* was ramming a passage through some heavy ice off the west coast of Greenland when a blow from the iron tiller broke both bones of Peary's right leg just above the ankle. Despite the accident he determined to carry on, and two weeks later the party landed, the leader being carried ashore. The *Kite* then left, to return the following summer to bring the explorers home. Scientific observations were begun at once and a house built before the end of August, when the snow began to fall. Peary by this time was able to hobble about on crutches. On Oct. 19, the sun was seen for the last time, and the six men together with Mrs. Peary—the first white woman to winter with an Arctic expedition—settled down for the long polar night. A number of Eskimos, too, had by this time joined the expedition. Under Peary's leadership the party kept constantly occupied so that when the sun returned in the middle of February they were all in good condition. By the middle of May the supplies had been transported to the edge of the inland ice and by May 24 Peary and three of his men had reached a point about 130 miles from their winter camp. From this place, with one companion and sixteen dogs, Peary continued northeastward for a month, when the northernmost limit of the ice cap was passed and one of the objects of the expedition was achieved. Several days later they came to the Greenland shore of the Arctic ocean, pretty well establishing the insularity of Greenland. On his return to base, which took a month, Peary found the *Kite* at anchor and in September the party reached New York.

This expedition established a brilliant record of achievement. By itself, the sledge journey to the northeast coast of Greenland and back—1,300 miles—was an accomplishment of the first magnitude. Furthermore, in addition to determining

the northernmost extension of the ice cap and the insularity of Greenland, this small party had made tidal and meteorological observations, brought back detailed knowledge of hitherto unknown territory, and carried out a careful ethnological study of a little known tribe of Eskimos. On his return Peary received generous recognition, and a lecture tour he made that winter proved successful. The public interest aroused by his achievement as well as the funds from the lecture tour he turned to account in the interest of another expedition to follow up his discoveries, and the month of August 1893 found him again on the west coast of Greenland near his former base. Besides Peary, the party consisted of Mrs. Peary, a nurse, and twelve men. In September the number was increased by the birth of the Pearys' first child, Marie Ahnighito, born farther north than any other white child in the world.

One aim of this expedition was to follow up the land north of Greenland discovered on the previous expedition and reach the Pole if possible. The winter of 1893–94 proved to be a hard one, several of the men broke down, and when in March the trip across the ice cap was begun, a succession of violent storms so crippled the party that after making 120 miles it was necessary to return. By the time they had recuperated, after six weeks, a trip across the ice cap was out of question. In August the steamer appeared to take the explorers home, and all but Peary and two of his men returned. The following spring (1895) the three succeeded in crossing the inland ice, but lack of food and supplies prevented any further exploration on the east coast of Greenland. After considerable hardship they returned to the base camp the latter part of June. In August the steamer arrived and Peary took the opportunity to bring back to the United States two of three large meteorites he had discovered the year before. One of these weighed half a ton and the other three tons. While there was recognition that the expedition had to cope with unusual hardships, the public verdict was that it had met defeat, even if undeserved. The defeat, however, did not lessen Peary's determination to continue in Arctic exploration. While the public mood in the United States was at the moment not favorable to any ambitious Arctic undertaking, he kept interest in the region alive by organizing a party for scientific work along the west coast of Greenland during the summer of 1896. One of the aims of this expedition was to bring back the largest of the meteorites he had discovered, which weighed ninety tons. In this he was unsuccessful and it was only in the following year, on a

Peary

similar expedition, that he succeeded in bringing it back.

As a result of his experiences Peary had come to the conclusion that the only practicable means for reaching the North Pole consisted in pushing a ship as far northward as possible to a winter harbor on the Greenland coast, and then early in spring traveling with dogs and sledges due north until the Pole was attained. In the winter of 1896–97 he went to London, and in a lecture before the Royal Geographical Society outlined his plan for reaching the Pole. It won the interest of Lord Northcliffe, who thereupon presented Peary with the *Windward,* the ship that had recently been used in Arctic exploration by a British expedition. Peary now judged the time ripe for an American Arctic expedition. Interest in polar exploration had become world-wide. The famous Norwegian explorer, Fridtjof Nansen, had just returned from his daring expedition in the *Fram,* during which he made a new record for "farthest north," wresting this record from the American, James Booth Lockwood [*q.v.*], who had held it for twenty years. Peary now took the opportunity to write his *Northward over the "Great Ice,"* which was to appear in 1898 in two volumes, and which gave a record of all his expeditions up to this time. The Navy Department did not look favorably on further Arctic exploration, however, and in April 1897 ordered him to report for duty at San Francisco. Immediately he put in a request for five years' leave of absence, but the efforts of prominent scientists to have the Department rescind its order and grant the leave proved ineffectual. It was only a chance meeting with an influential Republican, Charles A. Moore, a day or two before Peary's scheduled departure for San Francisco, that saved the situation. Moore took the case to President McKinley personally, and it was on the latter's order that the five years' leave was granted.

In the midst of preparations for this ambitious expedition the Spanish-American War broke out. Peary was now forty-two years old, with a number of years of Arctic experience and with preparations for his expedition nearly complete. To drop his enterprise at this juncture would in all probability mean the end of Arctic work for him. Under the circumstances, he felt that his polar task could justly be put ahead of any war service he might render. He therefore continued his preparations, and in July 1898, on board the *Windward,* steamed out of New York Harbor for the north. By August he had pushed the ship across Smith Sound, a little above 79°N., where she became icebound. This was nearly 700

miles from the Pole—200 miles farther south than he had planned.

The next few months were spent in advancing food and fuel by sledge to a base on the shores of the Polar Sea, from which a dash for the Pole might be made in the spring. The sledging was over difficult ice, and as the season advanced the temperature fell considerably below zero. In January 1899, after a particularly difficult sledge journey, Peary found himself with both feet badly frozen, necessitating the amputation of eight toes. In a few weeks, however, he was in the field again. During this winter his sledge journeys, which extended over 1,500 miles, clarified the geography of the region about Smith Sound. Not until the fall of 1902, after four years in the Arctic, did Peary return to the United States. During these four years he carried out an extensive series of explorations, and in the spring of 1902 he attained 84° 17′ N., the nearest approach to the Pole in the American Arctic.

The year following his return he was engaged in various duties with the Bureau of Yards and Docks in the Navy Department, but his spare time was still given to his Arctic projects, and in September 1903 he secured three years' leave for an expedition whose main purpose was the attainment of the North Pole. Heretofore he had been handicapped by the lack of a suitable ship to take him to a base in high latitude. This expedition, therefore, was to make use of a ship capable of forcing its way to winter quarters on the north shore of Grant Land. The plan then contemplated a dash for the Pole with the returning light of February. The distinctive features of the plan were the use of individual sledges drawn by dogs, which gave a traveling unit of high speed, the adoption of Eskimo methods and costume, and the fullest utilization of the Eskimos themselves. Financial difficulties at first appeared insuperable, in spite of the help of the Peary Arctic Club—a group of friends and supporters who had financed his previous expedition. In the summer of 1904, however, two members of this club, Morris K. Jesup and Thomas H. Hubbard [*qq.v.*], each agreed to give $50,000 on condition that the club itself raise not less than $50,000. The sum was finally accumulated and in October the keel of the new ship, the *Roosevelt,* was laid. The vessel was designed by Peary for the specific purpose of forcing its way through the ice fields of the Arctic waters.

In July 1905 the *Roosevelt* left New York with a small party, and early in September had reached the north coast of Grant Land. Here the ship wintered, and by February 1906 Peary had gathered his party at Cape Hecla, the point from

Peary

which the dash to the Pole was to be made. Early in March he started, and for two weeks the journey continued over the broken ice of the Polar Sea, until a region of leads was reached. These were wide cracks in the ice—wide lanes of open water—which checked advance until they closed or were frozen over. By Apr. 21, 1906, Peary had reached latitude 87° 6′ N., only 174 miles from his goal and the nearest approach to the Pole made up to that time. The condition of his dogs and the declining food supply prevented further progress, however, and it was only after a hazardous trip and in an exhausted condition that the party regained the ship. In December of that year the *Roosevelt* returned to New York; and in the following year Peary published the narrative of this journey under the title, *Nearest the Pole* (1907).

In July 1908 Peary left for his final polar expedition. He was now fifty-two years old, but he rightly felt that the disadvantage of his age was more than counterbalanced by nearly a quarter century of Arctic experience during which his skill, endurance, and leadership had been thoroughly tested. He had the further advantage of being able to enlist the services of capable and enthusiastic assistants and well-equipped and well-trained Eskimos who were devoted to him. By September the *Roosevelt* had been pushed to latitude 82° 30′ N., a world's record for a ship under its own steam. The dark months were utilized for making scientific observations, for hunting, and for sledging supplies to Cape Columbia, ninety miles to the northwestward, from which point the attack on the Pole was to be made. On Mar. 1, 1909, the party of six white men, one negro, seventeen Eskimos, 133 dogs, and nineteen sledges set out from Cape Columbia over the sea ice for the Pole. As the main party advanced, the sections which had borne the brunt of trail breaking were turned back, leaving the best dogs and extra supplies with the leader. On the whole the sledging conditions were not very unfavorable, though fourteen days were lost because of leads or open lanes of water. Towards the end of March the previous record of "farthest north"—87° 6′—was broken, and near the 88th parallel of latitude the last supporting party, that under Capt. Robert Bartlett, turned back. From this point Peary, with his negro servant, four Eskimos, and forty dogs, set out for the final dash. On the morning of Apr. 6, although his observations showed him to be in latitude 89° 57′—only three miles from the Pole—he was so nearly exhausted that with the prize actually in sight he could go no further. After a few hours' sleep, however, he covered the remaining miles,

reaching latitude 90° N., and the North Pole was attained.

On his march Peary took three soundings, the last one within five miles of the Pole. Here after paying out all his line—9,000 feet in length—he failed to touch bottom. The North Pole was thus definitely proved to be located in the center of a vast sea of ice. After remaining at the Pole thirty hours, during which astronomic observations were made, the party began the return trip. Forced marches were made by reducing the hours of sleep, and further time was saved by occupying the igloos built during the northern advance. The weather proved favorable, and with the light loads the dogs made rapid progress. The distance from the Pole to the base camp at Cape Columbia was covered in the wonderfully quick time of sixteen days.

By the middle of July 1909 the *Roosevelt* had left her winter quarters with the party aboard and headed south. On Sept. 5 she steamed into Indian Harbor, Labrador, and from this place Peary cabled the news of his attainment of the North Pole. This news, however, came five days after the world had been electrified by the dramatic announcement that Dr. Frederick A. Cook, who had served as surgeon on Peary's expedition of 1891, had reached the Pole on Apr. 21, 1908, or a year earlier than Peary. In the controversy which ensued the large American public was inclined to side with Cook. Peary had won only after many years' striving and planning, and at considerable financial outlay. Cook's sudden appearance from an unheralded expedition, undertaken practically singlehanded, made a much more dramatic appeal to the public at large. Moreover, the press found the latter more amiable in the controversy than Peary, who was certain that the alleged attainment of the Pole by Cook with a small party of Eskimos was an impossibility.

This controversy was a bitter experience to Peary. Instead of receiving the well-merited approbation of his fellow countrymen upon the completion of a heroic task in which he had spent the best years of his life, he was forced to become party to a petty squabble and face the humiliation of having his claims questioned. For it was only natural that after the rejection of Cook's claims on the part of the scientific world, there should arise those who in turn would question Peary's claims. Sinister meaning was read into the fact that on the final dash to the Pole he had taken none of his white assistants, only his negro servant and four Eskimos. Bitter criticism was leveled against him for not having given Capt. "Bob" Bartlett the opportunity to accompany

Peary

him clear to the Pole. The rapid sledging to the Pole after the return of Bartlett's supporting party, and the even more rapid progress from the Pole—the result of years of experience, of painstaking preparation, and favorable weather and ice conditions—were pointed to with suspicion. In the trying situation, however, Peary had the whole-hearted support of a host of friends and of the greater part of the scientific world. In October 1909 a committee of experts appointed by the National Geographic Society examined his records and reported that they were unanimously of the opinion that he had reached the North Pole (*National Geographic Magazine*, November 1909). His friends also worked actively to induce Congress to give adequate recognition to his achievements, and early in 1910 a bill was introduced to promote him to the rank of rear admiral and place him on the retired list. His status in the navy was technically that of civil engineer with the rank of commander, and a number of the regular officers opposed the bill on the ground that it would promote Peary over the heads of line officers who were his seniors; opposition was also registered by those who had taken Cook's part in the North Pole controversy. In March 1911, however, a bill was passed tendering him the thanks of Congress and placing him on the retired list of the corps of civil engineers with the rank and retired pay of rear admiral.

This period of controversy was not without its compensations. While the fight for recognition was going on in Congress, Peary brought out his book, *The North Pole* (1910). The leading American geographic societies invested him with their highest honors. Early in 1910 he went abroad for five weeks, visiting various countries, and the great European geographic societies took this occasion to bestow on him their highest awards. In large part these honors recognized his attainment of the North Pole; but in part, too, they were a recognition of the value of his Arctic work as a whole. As a result of his labors, a highly efficient method of polar exploration had been developed—large parties being discarded in favor of the small party, and Eskimo modes of dress and travel being utilized. His Greenland traverses and his later travels had completely revised the map of a large region. His expeditions had made available to enthnology valuable studies of a little known tribe of Eskimos. The sciences of meteorology and hydrography had been enriched by careful observations in regions from which information had hitherto been wanting. Peary's tidal observations include the most northerly observations ever made and constitute an

important addition to the knowledge of the tides of the Arctic Ocean.

Peary now retired to his home on Eagle Island, in Casco Bay. Here with his wife, daughter, and son, the latter born in 1903, he enjoyed the pleasures of home life to which he had so long looked forward. In 1913 he became interested in aviation and was made chairman of the committee on aeronautic maps and landing places of the Aero Club of America, an office he retained until his death. On the outbreak of the World War he foresaw the importance of aviation in warfare and labored in organizing the National Aerial Coast Patrol Commission which worked out a comprehensive plan for the protection of the coast. With the entry of the United States into the war, he was made chairman of the National Committee on Coast Defense by Air. At this time, too, he accepted the presidency of the Aero League of America. In May 1919 the hardships he had undergone began to tell on his health, and at Washington, D. C., on Feb. 20, 1920, in his sixty-fourth year, he died. The motives which prompted him in his Arctic work he expressed in a simple statement uttered in 1895 (*Bulletin of the American Geographical Society,* vol. XXVII, 1895, p. 375); "To say that my motives were entirely unselfish, or that I was actuated solely by love of science, would be incorrect, but I can say that the desire to win an honorable and lasting reputation went hand in hand with the desire to add to the sum total of human knowledge."

[Fitzhugh Green, *Peary: The Man Who Refused to Fail* (1926), is the only complete biography; the record of his explorations is found in his books mentioned above and in the *Bull. Am. Geog. Soc.*, 1887–1911 (see A. A. Brooks, *Index to the Bull. of the Am. Geog. Soc., 1852–1915,* 1918); a brief appreciation of the man and his accomplishments is found in the *Geog. Rev.*, Mar. 1920; the question of the rapidity of his marches on the North Pole expedition is discussed in the *Geog. Rev.*, Jan. 1929; J. Gordon Hayes, *Robert Edwin Peary* (1929), written with manifest animus, gives a complete summary of the unfavorable views, especially with regard to his attainment of the North Pole.] H. A. M.

PEASE, ALFRED HUMPHREYS (May 6, 1838–July 13, 1882), pianist and composer, was born in Cleveland, Ohio, the second of three children of Sheldon and Marianne (Humphreys) Pease, both natives of Connecticut. He manifested very early his devotion to music and drawing, but in order to prevent his development into a professional musician his parents put him through a rigid course of classical study which fitted him to enter Kenyon College at Gambier, Ohio, at the age of sixteen, where they hoped he would have the wisdom to choose another profession. His painting and drawing, however, attracted the attention of a young German artist, who persuaded the parents to permit Pease to go to Germany. On arriving in Berlin, he began an intensive study of German and then took up other languages. Once having tasted the freedom of self-direction, he began the study of piano under Theodor Kullak but for some time did not reveal the fact in his letters. At length he persuaded his parents to sanction the pursuit of the art for which nature had endowed him. Besides studying piano with Kullak for three years, he studied composition with Wüerst and orchestration with Wieprecht. For a short time he returned to America but immediately returned to Europe and studied three years with von Bülow. Upon his return he began touring in the principal cities of the United States and was immediately acclaimed as a remarkable performer. He had a brilliant technique, combined with a beautiful quality of tone and delicacy of expression, and he played with ease and grace. His tendency was to favor somewhat popular compositions, especially operatic transcriptions. During the last twelve years of his life he resided in New York City, where he moved in a select group.

Pease achieved considerable success as a composer. Nearly a hundred of his songs became great favorites during his lifetime and of those "Hush Thee, My Baby" was one of the most popular. Indeed it is as a song writer that he is remembered, for most of his piano pieces (largely transcriptions of themes from *Lohengrin, Aïda* and other operas) are forgotten. William Treat Upton (*post,* p. 61) gives him credit for surpassing all his contemporaries "in the lavish use of a vividly tinted palette" and adds: "There is no one of his time in America whose harmonic fabric is so sensuously colored." His first songs were published in 1864—"When Sparrows Build," and "Blow, Bugle, Blow"—and each subsequent year brought new ones. Among his best are "Stars of the Summer Night," "Tender and True, Adieu," and "A Year's Spinning." During his life time his orchestral works were considered important, and his "Reverie and Andante," "Andante and Scherzo," and "Romanza" for brass and reed instruments were performed by Theodore Thomas in New York and elsewhere. His best work was undoubtedly his Concerto in E flat, written in 1875 and performed at an all-American concert at the Centennial Exhibition in Philadelphia, with the composer at the piano, on July 19, 1876. Pease toured with Ole Bull in 1879 and was engaged to tour with Christine Nilsson, but that was prevented by his untimely death which occurred in St. Louis in July 1882. He died of alcoholism—

a habit contracted during a period of sorrow over the tragic death of his brother, who with his wife perished in a railroad disaster near New Hamburg, N. Y., in 1871. Pease never married.

[Frederick Humphreys, *The Humphreys Family in America* (1883); W. T. Upton, *Art-Song in America* (1930); *Appletons' Ann. Cyc.*, 1882; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, July 15, 1882; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, July 16, 1882.] F. L. G. C.

PEASE, CALVIN (Sept. 9, 1776–Sept. 17, 1839), Ohio jurist, was one of the many Ohio pioneers of Connecticut birth. Samuel Huntington, George Tod, and Benjamin Tappan [*q.v.*] had been his neighbors in the East and were his associates in frontier Ohio. He was born in Suffield, Conn., the eleventh child of Joseph and Mindwell (King) Pease and the descendant of Robert Pease who emigrated from England in 1634 and settled at Salem, Mass. He studied law in the office of his brother-in-law, Gideon Granger [*q.v.*], and was admitted to the bar in 1798. He practised for a short time in New Hartford, but in 1800 he removed to Youngstown, Ohio, and in 1803 he settled permanently in the neighboring town of Warren. In June 1804 he was married to Laura Grant Risley, the daughter of Benjamin Risley of Washington, D. C. They had four sons and three daughters.

He was made clerk of the common-pleas court and served also as the first postmaster of Youngstown. In the bitter contest waged between the advocates of statehood and Gov. Arthur St. Clair, he opposed the governor. Upon the organization of the judiciary of the new state he was appointed presiding judge of one of the three circuits of the court of common pleas. For the next seven years, until March 1810, he traveled over the difficult roads of eastern Ohio dispensing justice according to schedule. In 1806 he rendered a decision that brought him to the attention of the whole state. The Ohio legislature had passed an act granting jurisdiction in civil suits to the justices of the peace to the limit of fifty dollars. He held this act to be unconstitutional because it impaired the constitutional right of jury trial. Ohio Jeffersonians were fully alive to the threat of legislative supremacy that was involved in this application of John Marshall's formula within their state. Their alarm increased when the state supreme court upheld the decision of Pease in a parallel case. The contest between the legislature and the courts dominated state politics during the years 1808 to 1811 (W. T. Utter, "Judicial Review in Early Ohio," *Mississippi Valley Historical Review*, June 1927). George Tod of the supreme court and Pease were impeached by the legislature and barely escaped removal from office.

When his term expired in 1810 Pease was not reappointed because of legislative opposition. He engaged in private practice and served a term in the state Senate, 1812–13. He also aided the postmaster-general, Gideon Granger, in establishing western postal routes. In 1815 a more conservative Assembly elected him to the state supreme court, where his activity from 1816 to 1830 indicated a mind well-balanced rather than brilliant. He read Sterne and Swift in preference to the legal classics. His written opinions, which are comparatively few, may be found in the first four volumes of *Ohio Reports*. His conduct on the bench was so stern that young attorneys trembled before him, yet when his robes were laid aside he was a jovial companion, for he could tell a story or sing a ballad as well as any other. After his retirement from the bench he led a quiet life in Warren. He served one term in the state House of Representatives, 1831–32, where he sponsored bills for the improvement of the treatment of prisoners in the state penitentiary.

[Letters in Western Reserve Hist. Soc. Lib. at Cleveland and in correspondence of Ohio governors in Ohio State Lib. at Columbus; *Green Bag*, Mar., Apr. 1895; *Western Law Monthly*, Jan. 1863; David and A. S. Pease, *A Geneal. and Hist. Record of the Descendants of John Pease* (1869), p. 61; *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Register*, Apr. 1849, pp. 174, 390.] W. T. U.

PEASE, ELISHA MARSHALL (Jan. 3, 1812–Aug. 26, 1883), governor of Texas, was for nearly fifty years, from the eve of the Texas Revolution to the day of his death, an outstanding figure in the history of the republic and the state. He was born in Enfield, Conn. His father, Lorrain Thompson Pease, was a descendant of Robert Pease who emigrated from England to Salem, Mass., in 1634 and of John Pease, one of the founders of the town of Enfield. His mother was Sarah (Marshall) Pease, of Windsor, Conn. His education was obtained in the public schools of Enfield and in an academy at Westfield, Mass. From his fourteenth year to his twenty-first he was a clerk in a country store and in the post-office at Hartford, where he acquired an elementary knowledge of business and of accounting. He spent the summer of 1834 in the West and in the late fall was in New Orleans on business. There he heard so much of Texas that in January 1835 he removed to Texas and settled at Mina, now Bastrop, and began the study of the law with D. C. Barrett. However, his studies were soon interrupted by the outbreak of the war for Texan independence. He fought in the first skirmish at Gonzales and was then made secretary of the provisional government established by the consultation held at

San Felipe in November 1835. Though not a member of the convention that declared independence in March 1836, he was of great help in drafting the constitution for the new republic. During the struggle for independence he served as chief clerk of the navy and treasury departments and, for a short time, as secretary of the treasury after the death of Hardeman. In November 1836 he became clerk of the judiciary committee of the Congress and drafted the laws to organize the judiciary and define the duties of county officers. Late in 1836 he resumed the study of the law, this time with John A. Wharton of Brazoria. Admitted to the bar in 1837, he formed a partnership with Wharton and, later, with John W. Harris [*q.v.*]. For a short time, during the days of the republic, he served as district attorney. After Texas entered the Union, he served two terms in the House and one in the Senate of the state legislature. In August 1850 he was married to Lucadia Christinia Niles, the daughter of Richard Niles of Windsor, Conn. They had three daughters.

In 1853 he was elected governor and in 1855 was reëlected on a platform opposed to the doctrines of the Know-Nothing party. The period of his two administrations was one of great prosperity to the state. Under his leadership the public debt was paid; a school fund of $2,000,000 was created; railroad building was encouraged; state institutions were established for the care of the insane, the deaf, and the blind; $100,000 was set apart as an endowment for a state university; and steps were taken to put the university in operation. However, the approach of the Civil War put a stop to this development. Like Houston, he opposed secession, but he remained in Texas during the war, taking no part in it. Before the war he had affiliated with the Democratic party, but he now became a Republican. In 1866 he was a delegate and a vice-president of the Philadelphia convention of Southern Unionists, and later in the year he was a candidate for governor but was defeated by J. W. Throckmorton. In the following year, when the latter was removed by the military authorities as an "obstruction to reconstruction," he was appointed provisional governor by General Sheridan, but he resigned in 1869 because of a difference of opinion between the commanding general, J. J. Reynolds, and himself in regard to the reorganization of the state government. In 1872 he represented Texas in the Liberal Republican convention at Cincinnati that nominated Horace Greeley for the presidency. In 1874, he was offered the collectorship of the port of Galveston, but he declined it. When

Pease

a second tender of the same office was made by President Hayes in 1879, he accepted it. This was his last public service. He died in the town of Lampasas, where he had gone for his health. While he did not escape the animosities of the Civil War and Reconstruction, he was respected by his foes as well as by his friends. His appointment as military governor, although it arrayed a majority of the people of the state against him, was a fortunate thing for Texas, for no other member of the "radical party," with the possible exception of Andrew J. Hamilton [*q.v.*], was so sane, so moderate, and so devoted to the welfare of the state.

[J. H. Brown, *Indian Wars and Pioneers of Texas* (n.d.); J. D. Lynch, *The Bench and Bar of Texas* (1885); F. W. Johnson and E. C. Barker, *A Hist. of Texas and Texans* (1914), vols. I, IV; C. W. Ramsdell, *Reconstruction in Texas* (1910); L. E. Daniell, *Personnel of Texas State Government with Sketches of Representative Men* (1892); David and A. S. Pease, *A Geneal. and Hist. Record of the Descendants of John Pease* (1869), p. 143; *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Register*, July 1849, p. 237; *Galveston Daily News*, Aug. 28, 1883.] C. S. P.

PEASE, JOSEPH IVES (Aug. 9, 1809–July 2, 1883), line-engraver, was born in Norfolk, Conn., the son of Earl P. and Mary (Ives) Pease, and a descendant of Robert Pease who emigrated from England in 1634 and settled at Salem, Mass. Joseph's determination to become an engraver was expressed at a very early age, and when, at fourteen, he was placed in a dry-goods store in Hartford, Conn., he began to imitate the labels and other designs he found attached to pieces of fabric, copying them in pencil. His ambition to be an engraver soon became irresistible; he left the dry-goods business and began to practise, in an untrained, amateurish way, his chosen art. He is said, at first, to have used an awl for a graver and a piece of brass from an old thermometer for a plate; and to have produced his impressions on a roll press of his own construction (Baker, *post*, p. 126). He had a strong mechanical bent and showed great ingenuity in making a turning lathe and building a small power loom, with which he succeeded in weaving cloth six inches in width. It is said that he erected this loom before he was aware that similar pieces of machinery had been constructed by others. Since his crude attempts at engraving revealed undeniable talent, he was apprenticed to Oliver Pelton, a prominent line-engraver of Hartford, and remained with him until he became of age, when he set up for himself. His younger brother, Richard H. Pease, who had also become an engraver, had settled in Philadelphia, and in 1835 Joseph followed him thither.

His pure and somewhat intimate style of engraving in line recommended him to Carey & Hart, who published *The Gift* and several other annuals, and for these publications Pease did his most charming work. All his plates that have been seen are small ones, but none the less delightful on that account. For ten years his work appeared regularly in the annuals, and his plates, despite their diminutive size, were much prized for the artistic and technical skill they displayed, as well as for their good taste. Among the best of these little plates are "Mumble the Peg," from the painting by Inman; "Young Traders," after Page; and "Tough Story," after Mount. Pease also engraved an illustration for *The Spy* —a picture of Washington meeting with Harvey Birch—which has been admired. From 1848 to 1850, he adapted the foreign fashions and engraved the fashion plates for *Godey's Lady's Book*. About 1850 he left Philadelphia and went to Stockbridge, Mass., where he devoted himself to banknote engraving. A little later he bought a farm at Twin Lakes, near Salisbury, Conn., where he continued to engrave vignettes for banknotes. He died on this farm, in the summer of 1883. Pease was married to Mary Spencer of Baltimore, Md., Dec. 8, 1841. He was represented in the exhibition of One Hundred Notable American Engravers at the New York Public Library in 1928.

[David and A. S. Pease, *A Geneal. and Hist. Record of the Descendants of John Pease* (1869); *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1849; W. S. Baker, *Am. Engravers* (1875); D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907), vol. I; *One Hundred Notable Engravers* (N. Y. Pub. Lib., 1928); Frank Weitenkampf, *Am. Graphic Art* (1924).] J. J.

PEASLEE, EDMUND RANDOLPH (Jan. 22, 1814–Jan. 21, 1878), physician, was born in Newton, Rockingham County, N. H., eldest of the four children of James and Abigail (Chase) Peaslee. He entered Dartmouth at the age of eighteen years and graduated with honors in 1836. After teaching school for a brief period in Lebanon, N. H., he tutored at Dartmouth from 1837 to 1839 and utilized this time for the study of medicine at Dartmouth Medical School. Following the custom of the older generation of medical men, he became the private pupil of a practitioner, Dr. Noah Worcester of Hanover, N. H., later transferring to the preceptorship of Dr. Dixi Crosby of the same town, and still later to that of Dr. Jonathan Knight [*q.v.*] of New Haven, Conn. In 1839 he entered Yale Medical School, where he received his medical degree in 1840. After a year's study abroad, he returned to Dartmouth to become lecturer in

anatomy and physiology. In 1842 he was made professor. He retained the chair of anatomy and physiology until 1869 and thereafter served as lecturer on diseases of women, 1868–70; professor of obstetrics and diseases of women, 1870–73; and professor of gynecology from 1873 until his death. He was evidently in demand as a teacher, for he held concurrent lectureships or professorships in no less than four other medical institutions. From 1843 to 1860 he was connected as lecturer or professor with the departments of surgery and anatomy at the Medical School of Maine, affiliated with Bowdoin College. From 1852 to 1856 he was professor of pathology and physiology and from 1856 to 1860 professor of obstetrics in New York Medical College. In 1872–74 he taught obstetrics and from 1874 to 1878 was professor of gynecology at the Albany Medical College, while during the latter period he was professor of gynecology at Bellevue Hospital Medical College also. To this work he gave much time and it was his pride that he never permitted other activities to interfere with his scholastic duties. It is no slight indication of a scientific mind that Peaslee, at this early period in the science, was regarded an an authority on microscopy. To the academic field of medicine he made two noteworthy contributions: *Necroscopic Tables for Postmortem Examinations* (1851) and *Human Histology in Its Relations to Descriptive Anatomy, Physiology, and Pathology* (1857).

In 1858 he removed to New York City where he devoted himself to a large and lucrative private practice. His interests now turned largely to gynecology. In 1872 he published his most important work, *Ovarian Tumors; Their Pathology, Diagnosis and Treatment, Especially by Ovariotomy*. This is a comprehensive treatise in which he compiled all the then known facts concerning the anatomy, pathology, diagnosis, and treatment of ovarian cysts. It was especially concerned with the operation of ovariotomy which Peaslee had advocated in New York City in 1864. He made no notable additions to the technique of the operation but compiled carefully and critically practically everything that was known of it, producing a book which was for many years a standard text. It undoubtedly removed many of the objections against ovariotomy which were entertained at that time by the profession, and, although long since displaced by more modern books, retains some historical value, for in it Peaslee established the priority of Ephraim McDowell [*q.v.*] in the methodical and successful removal by surgery of an ovarian cyst. Peaslee was one of the first to advocate

and institute the procedure of peritoneal lavage as a prophylaxis against infection.

He was something of a linguist, speaking no less than four foreign languages. In 1860 he was appointed a trustee of Dartmouth College. His clinical duties were confined to his private practice and service (1858–65) as attending physician to the Demilt Dispensary, New York City. During the Civil War he was surgeon to the New England Hospital and the New York State Hospital. The gynecologist T. A. Emmet (*post*) regarded him as an excellent diagnostician and student but less highly as an operator, a judgment which is probably correct. Peaslee married Martha Kendrick of Lebanon, N. H., in 1841, and they had two children, a son and a daughter. He died in New York City.

[B. M. Emmett, in *Am. Jour. of Obstetrics*, May 1913; T. A. Emmet, *Ibid.*, Apr. 1878; *Medic. Record*, Jan. 26, 1878; F. S. Dennis, in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); Fordyce Barker, in *Trans. Am. Gynecol. Soc.*, vol. III (1879); *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 23, 1878.] H. S. R.

PEAVEY, FRANK HUTCHINSON (Jan. 18, 1850–Dec. 30, 1901), industrialist, was born in Eastport, Me., the son of Albert D. and Mary (Drew) Peavey. His father, who died when Frank was nine years old, and his grandfather were engaged in the lumber trade and ran a line of coasting vessels. They were considered wealthy, but as a boy Peavey determined to make his own way. At the age of fifteen, on money which he had earned, he went to Chicago, where an uncle found him a job as messenger for a grain firm. The next year he worked in a bank, broke down physically, visited his home in Eastport, and in the spring of 1867 was back in Chicago where, in the post-war depression, jobs were scarce. Hearing of an opening in a bank at Sioux City, Iowa, he went to that frontier town, one hundred miles from the nearest railroad. In 1870 he became a partner in an implement firm, Booge, Smith & Peavey, which suffered severe loss by fire the next year. Reorganized as Evans & Peavey, the concern added the buying and selling of grain to its dealings in agricultural implements, and built a small elevator. When, in 1875, the Dakota Southern Railroad reached Sioux City, Peavey, having bought out his partner, extended his grain business and his elevators, obtaining from Minneapolis millers the agency to purchase grain for them. As railroad communications extended, Peavey's elevators increased. Taking Edgar C. Michener as a partner in 1881, and operating as F. H. Peavey & Company, he established the headquarters of the firm in Minneapolis, but did not remove thither himself until 1884.

In the next sixteen years he built up a line of elevators, including one of five million bushels' capacity at Duluth, along the railroad lines of that section. In 1899 he organized the Peavey Steamship Company which, by the summer of 1901, was operating four of the largest freighters on the Great Lakes. He made it a rule "never to embark in an enterprise unless he could control it," and at the time of his death he was the dominating influence in nineteen different concerns—elevator, grain, steamship, land, and piano companies; he was also a director on the boards of two railroads and one large bank. It was his idea that his firm, into which he took his son, George W. Peavey, and his sons-in-law, Frank T. Heffelfinger and F. B. Wells, should survive him; to this end he insured his life for a million dollars, payable to his estate, so that his death might cause no embarrassment to the business. "His mentality was so strong, his energy and business acumen so great, that he insensibly dwarfed his associates. . . . He was the Elevator King, and undoubtedly controlled larger interests in this line than any other man in the world" (*Northwestern Miller*, Jan. 1, 1902, p. 19). In a time when consolidation was the order of the day, he saw and grasped the opportunity to build up in the Northwest a powerful combination of elevators and their appurtenances. He took little active part in civic affairs, although he was a member of the Minneapolis board of education for two years and for a time stood back of a Newsboys' Fund, which was calculated to inculcate thrift. In 1872 he married Mary, daughter of Senator George G. Wright of Des Moines, by whom he had three children. He died in Chicago.

[C. E. Flandrau, *Encyc. of Biog. of Minn.* (1900); *Northwestern Miller*, Jan. 1, 1902; *Minneapolis Jour.*, Dec. 30, 1901.] L. B. S.

PEAY, AUSTIN (June 1, 1876–Oct. 2, 1927), governor of Tennessee, was born near Hopkinsville, Ky., the son of Austin and Cornelia Frances (Leavell) Peay. He was given the middle name, Leavell, but he stopped using it about 1900. He went to Centre College at Danville, Ky. On Sept. 19, 1895, he married Sallie Hurst of Clarksville, Tenn. The following year he began the practice of law in this town, where he made his home for the remainder of his life. Soon he entered politics as a Democrat. In 1900 and 1902 he was elected to membership in the Tennessee House of Representatives. He became chairman of the Democratic state executive committee in 1905. Three years later he was campaign manager for Malcolm R. Patterson, the successful candidate of the anti-Prohibitionists

for the governorship. For the next decade he devoted himself to his legal practice, becoming increasingly popular and prosperous. In 1918 he was defeated by Albert H. Roberts for the Democratic gubernatorial nomination. Four years later, however, he won the nomination against three opponents and easily defeated the Republican candidate, Gov. Alfred A. Taylor. In 1924 he was reëlected with negligible opposition, and in 1926 he broke a tradition of many years by winning election to a third consecutive term.

In his campaigns he attacked the political machine that then dominated the state, and he advocated administrative reforms, the reduction of taxes on land, and the improvement of the state's educational system. His speeches were serious and thoughtful discussions of the state's needs, which appealed to the intelligence of the voters. The legislature was unusually responsive to his wishes, and his administrations were notable for the enactment of a number of laws of progressive character. He procured the enactment of an administrative reorganization bill that centralized responsibility and power by regrouping twenty-seven departments and thirty-seven boards into eight departments, headed by commissioners who were directly responsible to the governor. He obtained a considerable shifting of the burden of taxation from the land owner, but he was unable to obtain an amendment to the state constitution that would have made possible an efficient and equitable system of taxation. He effected a reorganization of the highway department that resulted in the efficient construction of many miles of paved roads, financed largely from the proceeds of a tax on gasoline. He advocated successfully much-needed appropriations for the state university and the enactment of a general education bill that established an eight months' term for schools, higher salaries for teachers, and other improvements in the state's educational system. He obtained also the creation of a park in the Great Smokies and a game preserve at Reelfoot Lake. The most notorious piece of legislation of his administrations, however, was an act, in 1925, which made it "unlawful for any teacher in any of the Universities, Normals and all other public schools of the State . . . to teach any theory that denies the story of the Divine Creation of man as taught in the Bible, and to teach instead that man has descended from a lower order of animals" (*Public Acts of . . . Tennessee,* 1925, pp. 50–51). He had not advocated the passage of this measure, and there are private reports that he was greatly angered when the legislature forced him to commit himself by sending it to his desk. The labored message he sent to the legislature, and through it to an interested world, in justification of his signature, seems to have been dictated by political expediency and by the conventional opinion that religious and moral safety lie in an "old-fashioned faith and belief" rather than along the new ways of exploration and experiment. "Nobody believes that it is going to be an active statute," he added (*Austin Peay . . . A Collection of . . . Papers and . . . Addresses,* comp. by S. H. Peay, 1929, p. 363). Yet, John T. Scopes, a young teacher in Dayton, was soon prosecuted and convicted under it. Peay had no part in the trial, and the anti-evolution law played an insignificant part in his successful campaign in 1926 for a third term. He died at the executive mansion in Nashville, survived by his wife and their two children.

[Biog. by T. H. Alexander, in *Austin Peay, ante*; *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; J. T. Moore and A. P. Foster, *Tenn.: the Volunteer State* (1923), vols. I, IV; *Nashville Banner,* Oct. 3, 1927; information concerning name from Mrs. Austin Peay, Clarksville, Tenn.]

P. M. H.

PECK, CHARLES HORTON (Mar. 30, 1833–July 11, 1917), mycologist, was born at Sand Lake (now called Averill Park), Rensselaer County, N. Y., the son of Joel B. and Pamelia (Horton) Peck. He was of English descent, the first member of the family to come to America being Henry Peck, who settled at New Haven, Conn., in 1638. As a boy, Peck helped in his father's sawmill and attended the proverbial log schoolhouse of the settlement. His interest in plants was kindled by fortunate circumstances during the period of his studies at the State Normal School in Albany, where he pursued the special study of botany before it was included in the curriculum. Upon graduation in 1852 he returned to the home farm, devoting all of his spare time to the collecting and analyzing of plants. He prepared for college at Sand Lake Collegiate Institute, and in 1855 entered Union College, from which he was graduated with high honors in 1859. From 1859 to 1861 he taught the classics, mathematics, and botany at the Collegiate Institute and then taught for the following three years at the Albany Classical Institute. On Apr. 10, 1861, he married Mary C. Sliter, also of Rensselaer County, N. Y. A year later he received the A.M. degree from Union College. His interests centered in moss study at this time and through the friendship of George W. Clinton, himself a distinguished botanist, he was appointed in 1867 to the staff of the New York State Cabinet of Natural History. His report of Jan. 1, 1868, to the regents of the Uni-

versity of the State of New York is the first of a notable series which, appearing annually and dealing with many phases of botanical study, came to be known as "Peck's Reports," and ended only with his physical disability in 1912. In 1883, immediately following the passage of a law establishing the office of state botanist, he was appointed formally to that position. The death of his wife in February 1912, and his own serious illness within a year thereafter, prompted him to resign in 1913, but not until January 1915 was his resignation accepted. He died at Menands, N. Y., in his eighty-fifth year.

As state botanist for nearly half a century, Peck naturally gave much attention to botanical exploration, the building up of a state herbarium, and the publication of taxonomic and distributional studies of nearly all groups of plants as represented in the state of New York. He is chiefly celebrated, however, for his long-continued and acute investigations upon the fungus flora of the United States and Canada, in the course of which he described about 2,500 species as new to science. His work was essentially that of a pioneer, only a very few having preceded him in the field of American mycology. The forty-six annual reports are thus devoted largely to the description of new fungi in many different groups, but they are of equal importance, at least, for the series of synoptical studies of most of the large and important genera of fleshy fungi known as agarics, in which the species are described, keyed, and freely illustrated, largely on the basis of specimens collected through Peck's own indefatigable field-work. Other groups than agarics (*e.g.* Boletaceae, Hydnaceae, Clavariaceae) were similarly treated. A self-trained scientist, Peck brought to these studies a highly analytical mind and keen powers of clear description, and, undaunted by lack of proper support and facilities he succeeded in producing an enormous amount of discriminating work. In the absence of any comprehensive general treatise upon the fungi of North America, his contributions were of incalculable value to younger American students, with whom he stood in peculiarly friendly relation through long correspondence and exchange of specimens. His studies in mycology, which are exceeded in importance by those of no other American student, are regarded as basic. As a memorial to his life and services, an exhibit of fifty-seven exquisite models of edible and poisonous mushrooms has been installed in the State Museum at Albany, N. Y.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; G. F. Atkinson, in *Botanical Gazette*, Jan. 1918; C. E. Bessey, "A Notable Botanical Career," *Science*, July 10, 1914; C. G. Lloyd, *Mycological Notes*, No. 38, Nov. 1912; *Jour. of the N. Y. Botanical Garden*, Oct. 1917; *Albany Evening Journal*, July 12, 1917.] W. R. M.

PECK, CHARLES HOWARD (June 18, 1870–Mar. 28, 1927), surgeon, was born at Newtown, Conn., the son of Albert W. and Louise W. (Booth) Peck, and a descendant of William Peck who emigrated to Boston in 1637 and was one of the founders of New Haven, Conn. Charles Howard received his preparatory education at Newtown Academy, studied medicine at the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Columbia University, and received the degree of M.D. from that institution in 1893. He entered upon the private practice of surgery in New York City in 1895, and on Sept. 2, 1896, married Betsy F. Chaffee of Montreal, Canada, who bore him three sons. In 1900 he was made an assistant instructor in operative surgery at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, subsequently advancing through the intervening grades to full professorship in 1909. He also became surgeon to the Roosevelt Hospital, and consulting surgeon to the French and Memorial hospitals, the Hospital for Ruptured and Crippled, the Stamford (Conn.) Hospital, and Vassar Brothers Hospital, Poughkeepsie, N. Y.

When the United States entered the World War, he offered his services to the government and was commissioned a major in the medical reserve. He organized Base Hospital 15, at Chaumont, France, and expanded it to a capacity of 3,000 beds. In April 1918 he was appointed senior consultant in general surgery in the American Expeditionary Forces and in June he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel. He served in France until 1918, when he returned to America. Thereafter, until February 1919, he acted in rotation with Colonels W. J. and Charles H. Mayo, as chief of the department of surgery in the office of the surgeon general of the army. In August 1918 he was commissioned a colonel. After the war he was awarded the distinguished service medal, and was made Officier de l'Instruction Publique by France, and was accorded honorary membership in the 68th Battalion of Alpine Chasseurs "for services rendered to the French Army" during the battle of Chemin des Dames, Oct. 17, 1917. In France he lost a son who was serving in his father's unit.

After the war Peck continued his career of surgical teaching and practice until he died of pernicious anaemia. His friend, Dr. Charles H. Mayo, wrote of him that "as a surgeon, he was resourceful, meticulous, noted for kindliness to tissue and scrupulous haemostatis, skillful in operative maneuvers, and possessed of a mature

judgment, the fruit of long and ripe experience" (Mayo, *post*, p. 119). A general surgeon, interested in the whole broad field, he was perhaps best known for his work in gastro-intestinal surgery. While he was not a prolific writer, nearly a hundred articles on medicine and surgery were published by him; the majority of them, however, are case reports and are brief, while none is very long. He was a member of many surgical societies and served as president of the Society of Clinical Surgery, and as treasurer of the American Surgical Association and member of its council from 1915 to the time of his death. He was also fellow of the American College of Surgeons and a member of its board of regents, president of the New York Surgical Society, and vice-president of the New York Academy of Medicine.

[Darius Peck, *A Geneal. Account of the Descendants . . . of William Peck, One of the Founders in 1638 of the Colony of New Haven, Conn.* (1877); John Shrady, *The Coll. of Physicians and Surgeons, N. Y.* (n.d.); C. H. Mayo, in *Surgery, Gynecology and Obstetrics*, July 1927; *Am. Jour. of Surgery*, May 1927; *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 30, 1927.] P. M. A.

PECK, GEORGE (Aug. 8, 1797–May 20, 1876), Methodist Episcopal clergyman, editor, was a descendant of Henry Peck who came from England, probably in 1637, and was one of the first settlers of New Haven, Conn. George's parents, Luther and Annis (Collar) Peck, migrated from Danbury, Conn., to Otsego County, N. Y., in 1794, and bought land in what is now Middlefield. Here in a log cabin George was born. At the time of his birth there were four other children, three girls and a boy; later three more girls and three boys were born. All the boys became Methodist ministers, one of them, Jesse Truesdell [*q.v.*], a bishop. As a youngster George attended rebelliously a school where the teaching could hardly have been worse, and common forms of punishment, in addition to the whip, were a gag put between the culprit's teeth, and a split stick stuck upon his nose. He also helped an uncle make shoes, "blew and struck" in his father's blacksmith shop, and worked on the farm. Half-Way Covenant Congregationalists in Connecticut, his parents became Methodists in New York, and when about fifteen years old George was converted. In 1814 the family moved to Hamilton Township, Madison County, and the Peck house became a place where Methodists met regularly for conference and worship. George developed into a class-leader and exhorter, and in July 1816 was admitted to the Genesee Conference on trial. In 1818 he was ordained deacon, and the following year, June 10, he married Mary Myers, daughter of Philip and Martha Myers of Forty Fort, Pa. In 1820 he was ordained elder.

His active service in the Methodist Church covered a period of some fifty-seven years. It began with arduous circuit riding, which was followed by pastorates and numerous terms as presiding elder. From the start he worked diligently to equip himself with the knowledge which others had secured in the schools, and when he was appointed principal of Cazenovia Academy in 1835, a position which he held until 1838, he was able to teach Hebrew, intellectual and moral philosophy, and rhetoric. He had the unusual distinction of being a delegate to thirteen consecutive General Conferences (1824–1872), and through almost a half century of the Church's history he had an important part in shaping its legislation. In 1840 he was elected editor of the *Methodist Quarterly Review* and after conducting it successfully for eight years became editor of the *Christian Advocate*, New York. He was a delegate to the world convention held in London in 1846 at which the Evangelical Alliance was organized. After retiring from the editorship of the *Christian Advocate* in 1852, he was pastor and presiding elder in the Wyoming Conference, Pa., until 1873, when upon his own request a superannuated relation was accorded him. The following year he published *The Life and Times of Rev. George Peck, D.D.*, written by himself. He had previously published numerous books, chiefly controversial or historical, some of which were widely read. Among them are *The Scripture Doctrine of Christian Perfection, Stated and Defended* (1842, 1845, 1848, 1851); *An Answer to the Question, Why are You a Wesleyan Methodist* (1847); *Appeal from Tradition to Scripture and Common Sense; or, An Answer to the Question, What Constitutes the Divine Rule of Faith and Practice* (1844, 1852); *Slavery and the Episcopacy, Being an Examination of Dr. Bascom's Review of the Reply of the Majority to the Protest of the Minority of the Late General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the Case of Bishop Andrew* (1845); *Formation of a Manly Character* (1853), a series of lectures; *Lives of the Apostles and Evangelists* (3rd edition, 1851); *Early Methodism Within the Bounds of the Old Genesee Conference from 1788 to 1828* (1860); *Our Country: Its Trial and Its Triumph* (1865); *Wyoming: Its History, Stirring Incidents, and Romantic Adventures* (1858, 1868, 1872). Peck died in Scranton in his seventy-ninth year and was buried at Forty Fort, Pa. His daughter Mary Helen married Jonathan Townley Crane

[*q.v.*] and became the mother of Stephen Crane [*q.v.*].

[I. B. Peck, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Descendants of Joseph Peck . . . also an Appendix Giving an Account of . . . Deacon William and Henry of New Haven* (1868); J. K. Peck, *Luther Peck and His Five Sons* (1897); F. W. Conable, *Hist. of the Genesee Ann. Conference of the M. E. Ch.* (1876); *First Fifty Years of Cazenovia Sem. 1825–1875* (n.d.); *Ann. Minutes of the Wyoming Conference* (1877); *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), May 25, June 8, 1876.] H. E. S.

PECK, GEORGE RECORD (May 15, 1843–Feb. 22, 1923), railroad attorney, was born on a farm near Cameron, Steuben County, N. Y., youngest of the ten children of Joel Munger and Amanda (Purdy) Peck and a direct descendant of William Peck, one of the founders of the New Haven Colony. When he was about six years old, George moved with his family to a farm near Palmyra, Jefferson County, Wis., where he worked on the farm and attended the common schools until, at the age of sixteen, he became a district school teacher. He spent two terms, 1861–62, in Milton Academy, and on Aug. 21, 1862, enlisted as a private in the 1st Wisconsin Heavy Artillery. He was commissioned first lieutenant Dec. 12, 1862, and captain, July 6, 1864, of Company K, 31st Wisconsin Infantry, and participated in Sherman's march to the sea. From 1865 to 1871 he studied law in the office of Charles G. Williams at Janesville, Wis., and attended lecture courses in the law school of the state university at Madison. He was admitted to the bar in 1866, served as clerk of the circuit court of Rock County from Jan. 1, 1867, to Jan. 1, 1869, then engaged in general practice in partnership with J. M. Kimball.

In December 1871 he removed to Independence, Kan., and entered the office of W. H. Watkins, probate judge of Montgomery County. He studied Kansas law, and in time became a member of the firm of Peck & Chandler. Appointed United States attorney for the district of Kansas in 1874, he moved to Topeka. One of his most notable achievements in this office was the winning of the Osage Ceded Land Case (12 *Kan.*, 124; 1 *McCrary's 8th Circuit Reports*, 610; 92 *U. S.*, 733; 16 *Kan.*, 510). He was reappointed in 1878, but resigned in March 1879, to devote himself to general practice. While in Topeka he was a member of the firm of Peck, Ryan & Johnson and head of the firm of Peck, Rossington, Smith, & Dallas. On Feb. 9, 1882, he became general solicitor of the Atchison, Topeka, & Santa Fé Railroad, which position he held until Jan. 1, 1884, and again from Apr. 15, 1886, until Sept. 16, 1895. In 1891 when the Santa Fé attempted to secure control of St. Louis & San Francisco Railway, a stock-holder of the latter sought to enjoin the sale on the ground that the roads were "parallel and competing lines" and the sale therefore illegal (*Kimball* vs. *Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fé Railroad Co.*, 46 *Fed. Reporter*, 888). Peck's successful handling of the consequent litigation in the circuit court and the Supreme Court gave him a place of first rank among railroad attorneys. When the Santa Fé was forced into receivership in December 1893, he directed the legal proceedings so well that the railroad was successfully reorganized in two years, a notable feat of efficiency. Although a leader of the Republican party in Kansas, Peck did not desire political office, and in 1891 declined Governor Humphrey's offer of a seat in the United States Senate vacated by the death of Senator Preston B. Plumb.

In 1893 when the Santa Fé established general offices in Chicago, Peck moved to that city, becoming a member of the distinguished law firm of Peck, Miller & Starr. After his resignation as general solicitor of the Santa Fé in September 1895, he served as general counsel for the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul Railway until his retirement, Jan. 1, 1911. He was engaged in the foreclosure of the mortgage on the Jacksonville & Southwestern Railroad, was retained in connection with the reorganization of the Northern Pacific, and drafted the articles of incorporation of the Civic Federation of Chicago upon which was modeled the National Civic Federation. In 1896 he was considered by many newspapers as a possible candidate for the Republican presidential nomination.

He was a speaker of unusual ability, much in demand by patriotic societies, private clubs, universities, and colleges. In 1905–06 he was president of the American Bar Association. A lover of literature, history, and biography, he possessed a library of over twelve thousand volumes. He was married, Oct. 24, 1866, to Arabella Burdick of Janesville, Wis., who died Mar. 5, 1896. They had four children. Peck died in Chicago in his eightieth year.

[Darius Peck, *A Geneal. Account of the Descendants in the Male Line of William Peck* (1877); E. A. Bancroft, in *Green Bag*, Sept. 1905, repr. in *Chicago Legal News*, Nov. 18, 1905; J. M. Palmer, *The Bench and Bar of Ill.* (1899), vol. I; *Trans. Kan. State Hist. Soc.*, vol. IX (1906); *Hist. of Montgomery County, Kan.* (1903), ed. by L. W. Duncan; *Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion of the U. S. Commandery of the State of Kan., Circular No. 2, Series of 1923; Santa Fé Employes' Mag.*, Apr. 1923; *Chicago Bar Asso. Record*, Oct. 1924; *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, Feb. 23, 1923; clippings concerning Peck in Kan. State Hist. Soc. Lib.] J. K. W.

PECK, GEORGE WASHINGTON (Dec. 4, 1817–June 6, 1859), author, journalist, music critic, was born in Rehoboth, Mass., the son of

George Washington Peck and his second wife, Hannah Bliss (Carpenter), and a descendant of Joseph Peck who came to Massachusetts in 1638. The first George Washington Peck is described as having "settled, lived, and died on the homestead" (Ira B. Peck, *post*, p. 66); but his son saw much more of the world. He attended Brown University, graduating in 1837, taught for a time in Indiana and Ohio, engaged in journalism in Cincinnati, and returned east to study law in Boston under Richard Henry Dana [*q.v.*]. It may have been literary as much as legal ambition that led him to seek this association with the author of *Two Years Before the Mast*, but he was admitted to the Massachusetts bar on May 19, 1843, and for the next four years is recorded in the Boston Directory as a "counsellor." Yet even during this period he seems to have been most active as a journalist and music critic. He contributed articles on music and the drama to the *Boston Post*, and in 1845 he founded the *Boston Musical Review*, a monthly publication of which only four numbers appear to have been issued. In 1847 he gave up whatever connection he may have had with the law and removed to New York, where he joined the staff of the *Morning Courier and New York Enquirer* and established a rather close connection with the *American Review*, later the *American Whig Review*, which had a brief but rather conspicuous career. In February and May 1847 he published articles on "Music in New York" in this periodical, and from February 1848 to January 1849 was represented by at least one article a month. He was an occasional contributor up to 1850, his subjects including reviews of Longfellow's *Evangeline* and Emily Brontë's *Wuthering Heights*, discussions of Cooper, Dana, Poe, and of Charles Lamb's letters, besides speculations entitled "On the Use of Chloroform in Hanging," fiction, and forty sonnets in two instalments of twenty each. In 1849, under the transparent pseudonym Cantell A. Bigly, he published a volume called *Aurifodina*, describing adventures in California among a strange people whose commonest possession was gold. Obviously modeled on *Gulliver's Travels*, it also suggests Poe's influence and in some ways is like Mark Twain's *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court*.

The ravages of consumption, of which he died, reduced the output of his last years; but he made a trip to Australia in 1853, writing letters to the *New York Times*, and published an account of the journey in his *Melbourne and the Chincha Islands; with Sketches of Lima, and a Voyage Round the World* (1854). After the publication of this book there is little certain trace of him till the official record of his death in Boston. Although his literary product is not impressive in quantity nor marked by any high degree of creative power, it displays a broad culture and an enthusiastic appreciation of literature and music. He died unmarried.

Peck

["Necrology of Brown University," *Providence Journal*, Sept. 7, 1859; *Hist. Cat. Brown Univ., 1764–1904* (1905); autobiographical material in Peck's own writings, especially *Melbourne and the Chincha Islands*; Ira B. Peck, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Descendants of Joseph Peck* (1868).] S. G.

PECK, GEORGE WILBUR (Sept. 28, 1840–Apr. 16, 1916), humorist, journalist, and governor of Wisconsin, was born at Henderson, N. Y., the son of David B. and Alzina Peck. When he was about three years old, his parents removed to Wisconsin and settled on a farm at Cold Spring, Jefferson County. Later they moved to the town of Whitewater, where he attended school. Before he was fifteen, he became a "printer's devil" on the weekly *Register* at Whitewater and thus began a connection with newspaper work that continued throughout the most of his life. In 1860 he was married to Francena Rowley of Delavan, Wis. Shortly after this he purchased a half-interest in the *Jefferson County Republican*, a weekly paper with which he continued until 1863, when he enlisted as a private in the 4th Wisconsin Cavalry. He served with this unit as sergeant and later as second lieutenant until it was disbanded in 1866. He went to Ripon and began the publication of a weekly paper, the *Representative*, to which he contributed the first of his humorous articles. In 1868 one of these skits, a letter in Irish dialect signed "Terence McGrant" that satirized the nepotism at the beginning of President Grant's first term, attracted the attention of Marcus M. Pomeroy [*q.v.*]. As Pomeroy was about to launch a daily paper in New York City, he offered Peck a place on the staff in order to continue the "Terence McGrant" letters. These proved sufficiently popular to be brought together in a volume with illustrations, published in New York in 1871 under the title *Adventures of One Terence McGrant*. In 1871 Peck returned to La Crosse and, with a partner, edited Pomeroy's former paper, the *La Crosse Democrat*, in which he supported the candidacy of Horace Greeley for president in 1872. When he withdrew from the *Democrat* in 1874, he began a new paper, the *Sun*, but after four years' struggle he abandoned La Crosse and moved his paper to Milwaukee. With the motto, "It Shines for All," which had been used earlier by Benjamin H. Day [*q.v.*] for

the New York *Sun*, Peck's new venture immediately proved a success.

It was in Peck's *Sun* that the "Bad Boy" stories first appeared that were to make Peck's reputation as a humorist throughout the country. In 1883 appeared *Peck's Bad Boy and His Pa*, his best-known book, in which were told stories of the practical jokes played on his father by a mischievous youngster. Within a year another collection of these stories entitled *The Grocery Man and Peck's Bad Boy* (1883) came from the press to add to his popularity. The success of these books augmented that of the weekly *Sun*, which attained a nation-wide circulation of 80,000 copies. Humorous sketches of his Civil War experiences, *How Private Geo. W. Peck Put Down the Rebellion*, published in 1887, was his last book for several years.

In the spring of 1890 he was elected mayor of Milwaukee on the Democratic ticket. The enactment of the so-called Bennett Law to compel some teaching of English in all schools in the state aroused the fears of Roman Catholics and Lutherans, whose parochial schools were accustomed to give all instruction in foreign languages. As the Republican party, long dominant in Wisconsin, had been responsible for this legislation, the Democrats took up the issue and nominated Peck for governor. His reputation as a humorist and his success in the Milwaukee mayorality campaign made him a promising candidate. He was elected in November 1890. With his genial personality and humorous speeches, his popularity continued after the law was repealed, and he was reëlected again in 1892 against John C. Spooner. Two years afterward, however, he was defeated in the gubernatorial contest and retired to his home in Milwaukee. He ran again for governor in 1904 against Robert M. LaFollette but was defeated. He continued to be a familiar figure in Milwaukee with his gray moustache and goatee, eye-glasses, and a red carnation as a boutonnière. He also appeared occasionally on the lecture platform. Upon taking office in 1890 he turned over the *Sun* to George W. Peck, Jr., his eldest son, who continued it for four years; but its popularity had waned, and in 1894 it was merged with another weekly paper. In 1899 appeared *Peck's Uncle Ike and the Red Headed Boy*, which was followed by *Sunbeams—Humor, Sarcasm and Sense* (1900), *Peck's Bad Boy with the Circus* (1906), and *Peck's Bad Boy with the Cowboys* (1907); but these books did not attain the success that the original Bad Boy Series enjoyed. The latter furnished material for a popular comedy, *Peck's Bad Boy*, and the original stories were reprinted in paper covers to be sold on trains and at news stands for many years.

[Autobiographical sketch in *Soldiers' and Citizens' Album . . . of Wis.*, vol. II (1890); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; A. J. Aikens and L. A. Proctor, *Men of Progress, Wis.* (1897); W. A. Titus, *Wis. Writers* (1930); *Evening Wisconsin* (Milwaukee), Apr. 17, 1916.] W. G. B—r.

PECK, HARRY THURSTON (Nov. 24, 1856–Mar. 23, 1914), classical philologist, editor, literary critic, was born at Stamford, Conn., of English colonial stock, the son of Harry and Harriet Elizabeth (Thurston) Peck. From his father, a well-known schoolmaster, he acquired his skill as a teacher and the beginnings, at least, of his passion for literature and learning. Excessive reading by candlelight while he was still a mere boy did irreparable damage to his eyes and, by preventing his participation in games and athletics, intensified his bookishness. As a student at Columbia College he won a local renown for intellectual brilliance and wrote prose and verse remarkable for their maturity and polish. Under his editorship *Acta Columbiana* became the most famous undergraduate periodical in the United States. After his graduation in 1881 he studied classical philology in Paris, Berlin, and Rome; was married Apr. 26, 1882, to Cornelia M. Dawbarn, of Stamford, by whom he had two daughters; went in 1883, for some obscure reason, to Cumberland University, Lebanon, Tenn., to obtain the degree of Ph.D.; and in 1884 received the degree of L.H.D. in course at Columbia. He remained in the service of the University for twenty-six years: as tutor in Latin, 1882–86, and in Latin and Semitic languages, 1886–88; as professor of the Latin language and literature, 1888–1904; and as Anthon professor of the Latin language and literature, 1904–10. He was one of the most prominent and useful officers of Columbia during the period of its transformation from a small college into a university of world-wide reputation.

In any society he would have been a man of distinction. A brilliant, versatile, and independent intellect; learning encyclopedic in its range and detail; an astoundingly capacious memory and instant power of association and recall; a ready command of a clear, sparkling prose style; and a faculty for gracious, witty conversation—all these gifts were his, and, though seldom guilty of overt showmanship, he took great delight in their exercise. In professional knowledge, though not in minute accuracy, he was the equal of such Columbia Latinists as Anthon, Drisler, and Short, and he was their superior as a teacher. Like them he insisted that his pupils master their grammar and translate their text

into exact, effective English, but he never forgot the purpose behind the discipline. He was saturated with the very spirit of Latin literature, and he brought his whole mind with him to the classroom. In his hands the great Roman classics became an introduction to the literature, ideas, and manners of the western world. To graduate students he offered courses, also, in Latin metrics, the history of the language, and the literature of the Silver Age. His feeling for the nuances of Latin style was precise and delicate, the product of innate aptitude reënforced by close study. Among his philological publications were a students' edition of Suetonius' *De Vita Caesarum Libri Duo* (1889); *Latin Pronunciation* (1890); a translation of *Trimalchio's Dinner* (1898) from the *Satyricon* of Petronius Arbiter; and a textbook, *A History of Classical Philology* (1911). He was the editor, also, of *Harper's Dictionary of Classical Literature and Antiquities* (1897), which is still the most compendious handbook of its class in English. None of these productions gives any adequate indication of Peck's real powers. For many years he looked forward to the time when he would have leisure to write a history of Latin literature and edit a major edition of Juvenal, undertakings for which he was admirably and in some ways uniquely equipped, but fate cheated him of his masterpieces.

He began his long connection with the publishing house of Dodd, Mead & Company by editing their *International Encyclopædia* (1892). He and Daniel Coit Gilman served jointly as editors of the *New International Encyclopædia* (1900–03), but the brunt of the responsibility was borne by Frank Moore Colby [*q.v.*] as managing editor. Peck also edited several compilations and reference books; contributed articles to various magazines; was literary editor of the New York *Commercial Advertiser,* 1897–1901; and was on the staff of *Munsey's Magazine,* 1907–11. His best vehicle, however, was the *Bookman,* a literary monthly launched by Dodd, Mead & Company in February 1895, of which Peck was editor-in-chief until 1902 and a contributing editor until 1907. For some issues he wrote a good part of the contents himself, and his taste, knowledge, and lightness of touch set the tone of the whole magazine. His "Bookman's Letter-Box" was famous, for he answered his readers' questions both authoritatively and wittily. His criticism for the most part was shrewd and good tempered, impressionistic in method, but founded on a keen appreciation of literary technique and a receptiveness to ideas.

He was relatively free from the provincialism and colonialism that still dominated American criticism. His actual influence on the culture of the period cannot be estimated; but whatever its extent, it was wholly beneficial. His separate publications included: *The Personal Equation* (1897); *What is Good English? and Other Essays* (1899); *Greystone and Porphyry* (1899), a volume of verse, displaying excellent technique but little original poetic insight; *William Hickling Prescott* (1905), a contribution to the English Men of Letters Series; *Literature* (1908), an academic lecture and a characteristic example of his more florid manner; *Studies in Several Literatures* (1909); and *The New Baedeker* (1910), an amusing volume of travel sketches. He also wrote two charming volumes for children, *The Adventures of Mabel* (1896) and *Hilda and the Wishes* (1907). His *Twenty Years of the Republic* (1906), a vivid, pungent history of the United States during the administrations of Cleveland, Harrison, and McKinley, has only recently been displaced as the best summary account of the period. It was an extraordinary feat of literary virtuosity and has become a minor classic. It was characteristic of Peck that he should write his best work in a field so far removed from his professional concerns.

Despite his many activities and incessant reading, he had time to travel extensively and to lead a gracious social life. He bestowed great pains on his more promising pupils, cultivating their personal friendship; wrote sprightly letters to his distant friends; and was an inveterate theatre-goer. His taste in waistcoats and cravats ran to the colorful; his friends attributed his choice of wearing apparel to his defective eyesight. By 1905 or 1906 he began to show signs of mental deterioration and aberration; in September 1908 his wife obtained a divorce from him in South Dakota, and on Aug. 26, 1909, he married Elizabeth Hickman Du Bois, of Philadelphia, a teacher in a New York high school.

In the summer of 1910 the foundations of his security crumbled under him, overwhelming him with disgrace, poverty, and illness. In June of that year Esther Quinn, a former stenographer, brought suit against him for breach of promise, and several sensational newspapers printed as a serial the letters that he had written to the woman. It was his innocence rather than culpability that ruined him. At worst the letters showed that he was an inexpert philanderer, but the obloquy and ridicule excited by their publication brought on a mental collapse. He was dismissed from his professorship and expelled from his clubs; his wife left him; his friends deserted him

almost in a body; and magazines refused to print his articles. In January 1913 he declared himself bankrupt. A few months later he was in a hospital at Ithaca, N. Y., desperately ill in body and mind. His first wife, at this juncture, came to his rescue, took him to her home at Stamford, and nursed him back to a semblance of his former health and spirits. It was only a semblance, however. Her efforts to convert him to Christian Science irked him, and finally, with money that she supplied, he rented a cheap room in a lodging house, ate his meals—gourmet that he had been—in a Greek restaurant, and endeavored to earn his living by revising articles for a new edition of the encyclopedia that he had once edited. But his distraught mind was unequal even to such chores, and on Mar. 23, 1914, he committed suicide.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–13; *Publishers' Weekly*, Mar. 28, 1914; Robert Arrowsmith, in *Columbia Alumni News*, Mar. 27, 1914; N. G. McCrea, in *Columbia Univ. Quart.*, June 1914; G. S. Hellman, "Men of Letters at Columbia," *Critic*, Oct. 1903; Brown Thurston, *Thurston Geneals., 1635–1880* (1880), p. 203; Thomas Beer, *The Mauve Decade* (1926), pp. 180–99; W. G. Kellogg, "Harry Thurston Peck," *Am. Mercury*, Sept. 1933; *N. Y. Times*, numerous references, 1908–14; J. E. Spingarn, "The Fate of a Scholar," *Poems* (1924); letter from M. H. Thomas, concerning material in the Columbiana collection, Columbia Univ. Lib., *Am. Mercury*, Jan. 1934.]

G. H. G.

PECK, JAMES HAWKINS (*c.* 1790–Apr. 29, 1836), jurist, one of twelve children of Adam and Elizabeth (Sharkey) Peck, was born in what was then North Carolina, now Jefferson County, Tenn. His father was a Revolutionary soldier and a member of the legislature of Tennessee. He was educated for the bar in Tennessee, served in the state militia during the War of 1812, and settled in St. Louis, Mo., in 1818. When Congress created the federal district court of Missouri he was appointed judge of that court by President Monroe, upon the recommendation of David Barton, senator from Missouri, and Richard M. Johnson, representative from Kentucky. In this capacity he served for fourteen years, during which time he was impeached and acquitted. He was a painstaking, scholarly, and upright jurist. The arduous task of organizing and maintaining the district court in a new state among a people of diverse race and language required and received his best effort.

His impeachment grew out of the numerous pending cases involving land grants. Many land grants in upper Louisiana were made during the Spanish and the French occupancy, and when Missouri was admitted to the Union the titles to more than three-fourths of the land in the state was in dispute. The task of passing upon their validity was placed upon the district court. A test case was heard in 1825, and, as judge of that court, he rendered an oral opinion finding against the claimant. The decision was of such importance that there was a public demand for the publication of the opinion, and it was published in the *Missouri Republican* on Mar. 30, 1826. Luke Lawless, the attorney for the defeated claimant, published an article in the *Missouri Advocate and St. Louis Enquirer* on Apr. 8, 1826, criticising the opinion of the court. Lawless was cited, convicted, and punished for contempt. This induced the lawyer to file a complaint against the judge before the House of Representatives. The House at two separate sessions failed to impeach, but after the charges had been under consideration for more than three years Peck was impeached in April 1830. The status of the land grants had become a political issue, and from 1822 to 1832 there was a prolonged debate in Congress, during which the federal courts were repeatedly attacked. These circumstances made the impeachment possible. The sole charge was that the court oppressively convicted a lawyer of contempt. The trial before the Senate lasted from Dec. 13, 1830, to Jan. 31, 1831, when the vote for acquittal was obtained. James Buchanan, then a member of the House and afterward president, had charge of the prosecution and William Wirt, formerly attorney-general, represented the defense. The proceedings of the trial probably constitute the most thorough commentary available on the law of contempt. As one result of the trial Congress passed a statute, still in force, to define more clearly the circumstances under which courts may punish for contempt.

Although he was never married, Peck's last years were pleasantly spent in the warmth of the friendship of his associates, the closest of whom was David Barton, also a bachelor. In addition to his judicial labors he took an active interest in the civic and cultural movements in Missouri. He died at St. Charles, Mo.

[C. B. Davis, "Judge James Hawkins Peck," *Mo. Hist. Rev.*, Oct. 1932; J. F. Darby, *Personal Recollections* (1880); Wm. Van Ness Bay, *Reminiscences of the Bench and Bar of Mo.* (1878); E. H. Shepard, *The Early Hist. of St. Louis* (1870), pp. 96, 127; *Report of the Trial of James H. Peck . . . before the Senate*, rept. by A. S. Stansbury (1833); *Missouri Argus* (St. Louis), May 6, 1836.]

C. B. D.

PECK, JESSE TRUESDELL (Apr. 4, 1811–May 17, 1883), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was born at Middlefield, Otsego County, N. Y., son of Luther and Annis (Collar) Peck, brother of George Peck [*q.v.*], and a descendant of Henry Peck, one of the founders of New Haven, Conn. Jesse was the

youngest of five brothers, all of whom became ministers; he also had six sisters. His schooling, which was limited, included a period at Cazenovia Seminary. Early disposed to enter the ministry, he was admitted on trial to the Oneida Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, June 12, 1832, was ordained deacon in 1834, and elder, in the Black River Conference, on Sept. 1, 1836. In the meantime he served churches at Dryden, Newark Valley, Skaneateles, and Potsdam. From 1837 to 1840 he was principal of the Gouverneur, N. Y., high school, which later became Gouverneur Wesleyan Seminary; and from 1841 to 1848 he was principal of the Troy Conference Academy, Poultney, Vt.

Although only thirty-three years old at the time, he was elected a delegate from the Troy Conference to the General Conference of 1844, at which session action was taken which resulted in a division of the Church over the slavery question. A speech which Peck made on this occasion brought him into wide and favorable notice in the North. In 1848 he was appointed to succeed John P. Durbin [*q.v.*] as president of Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa., which position he held until 1852, when he became pastor of Foundry Church, Washington. Two years later, however, he was chosen to fill out the unexpired term of Abel Stevens [*q.v.*] as secretary of the Tract Society of the Methodist Church. In 1856 he took charge of Green Street Church, New York, but in 1858, on account of his wife's health, he went to California, where for the next eight years he served as pastor in San Francisco and Sacramento and as a presiding elder. Returning to the East, he supplied St. Paul's Church, Peekskill, N. Y., for a time; was pastor of Hudson Street Church (now First Church), Albany, from 1867 to 1870; and from 1870 to 1872, of the Methodist church in Syracuse, being prominent among those who were instrumental in the founding of Syracuse University.

At the General Conference of 1872 he was elected bishop. During the remaining eleven years of his life he presided at eighty-three annual conferences, including those in Germany, Switzerland, Denmark, Sweden, and Norway. He also attended the First Ecumenical Methodist Conference, held in London in 1881. In his busy and varied career he found time to write several books which circulated widely. Among them are *The Central Idea of Christianity* (1856, revised edition, 1876), and *The History of the Great Republic Considered from a Christian Standpoint* (1868), an edition of which under the title of *The Great Republic from the Discovery of America to the Centennial, July 4, 1876,* appeared in 1876. He also wrote tracts and pamphlets and contributed to Methodist periodicals and holiness magazines. He was a huge man, weighing over 300 pounds, and possessed great physical strength. His body was seldom at rest and his mind was always on the alert. While not bigoted, he was a great lover and defender of his own church. He preached with much force, and as a presiding officer at ecclesiastical gatherings he displayed marked ability. His wife, whom he married on Oct. 13, 1831, was Persis Wing of Cortland, N. Y.; they had no children.

[I. B. Peck, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Descendants of Joseph Peck* (1868); J. K. Peck, *Luther Peck and His Five Sons* (1897); *Life and Times of Rev. George Peck* (1874), written by himself; Wm. S. Smyth, *The First Fifty Years of Cazenovia Sem.* (1877); T. L. Flood and J. W. Hamilton, *Lives of the Methodist Bishops* (1882); *Minutes Ann. Conferences of the M. E. Church* (1883); John M'Clintock and James Strong, *Cyc. of Biblical, Theological and Ecclesiastical Literature,* vol. XII (1891); J. E. King, "Personal Reminiscences of Bishop Jesse T. Peck," in *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), Sept. 21, 1911; *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), May 24, June 7, July 26, 1883; *N. Y. Tribune,* May 19, 1883.]

S. G. A.

PECK, JOHN JAMES (Jan. 4, 1821–Apr. 21, 1878), soldier and man of affairs, was born at Manlius, N. Y., the son of John Wells and Phoebe (Raynor) Peck. He received liberal schooling and graduated from the United States Military Academy in the same class as Grant in 1843. He was commissioned brevet 2nd lieutenant of the 2nd Artillery and performed garrison duty until the outbreak of the war with Mexico, serving, with distinction, in every battle save one. He engaged in frontier duty in the West and was present at the skirmish with the Navajo Indians at Tuni Cha, N. Mex., on Aug. 31, 1849, afterward being assigned to recruiting and garrison duty. He resigned from the army on Mar. 31, 1853, bearing the high commendation of his superior officers. Peck married Robie Harris Loomis of Syracuse, N. Y., on Nov. 20, 1850, and six children, three boys and three girls, were born to them. Following his resignation he entered upon a very busy and successful life in Syracuse. He was treasurer of the New York, Newburgh & Syracuse Rail Road Company during this period, as well as cashier and manager of the Burnet Bank. From 1859 to 1861 he was president of the Board of Education and for some years was vice-president of the Franklin Institute of Syracuse. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention of 1856 and of 1860, was twice nominated for Congress, and once refused a foreign mission.

At the outbreak of the Civil War he offered his services to the Federal government and refused to aid his friends who were endeavoring to

secure for him a high command in the state forces. By virtue of his past services he was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers Aug. 9, 1861, and served in the defenses of Washington until March 1862. He accompanied McClellan in the Peninsular campaign, serving with such distinction that he was commissioned a major-general of volunteers July 4, 1862. Until September he was in command of all the Federal troops in Virginia south of the James. He rendered his most distinguished military service in the spring of 1863 when he beat off Longstreet's attack at Suffolk, Va. His skill in the disposition of his forces and his personal courage were such that he outwitted Longstreet's attempts to outflank him, beat off his assaults, raised the siege of Suffolk, and ended the campaign by personally leading a small force to capture at Hill's Point five heavy guns which the gunboats of a light flotilla had not been able to silence. For his actions in this area he was highly commended by Dix and Meade. He was seriously injured, however, and was given leave of absence until August 1863, when he assumed command in North Carolina until the end of April 1864. During the following winter he was engaged only in small skirmishes, but his health suffered to such an extent that he was ordered to Washington in the spring and placed on duty in the Department of the East. On Nov. 5 he was given command on the Canadian frontier, remaining at this port until he was mustered out of service on Aug. 24, 1865.

After the war he resumed his civilian interests at Syracuse. He organized the New York State Life Insurance Company in 1867 and acted as president of that organization until his death.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. . . . U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); *Ann. Reunion, Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.*, 1901; Elias Loomis, *Descendants of Joseph Loomis in America* (1909), revised by Elisha S. Loomis; *N. Y. Tribune*, Apr. 23, 1878.] D. Y.

PECK, JOHN MASON (Oct. 31, 1789–Mar. 14, 1858), Baptist preacher and author, was born in Litchfield, Conn., the son of Asa and Hannah (Farnum) Peck. He was the descendant of Paul Peck who probably emigrated to Massachusetts in 1634 and removed to Hartford, Conn., in 1636. His father's poverty and lack of health kept him busy on the farm, and he attended school only a few winter terms. On May 8, 1809, he married Sarah Paine of Greene County, N. Y. With the birth of the first of their ten children both became doubtful of paedobaptism, and soon afterward they left the Congregational for the Baptist Church. Peck was licensed to preach at Windham, N. Y., in 1811 and was ordained in 1813. After about five years in New York pastorates his interest in missions led him to preparatory study for the service under William Staughton [*q.v.*] of Philadelphia. In 1817 with James Welch he established the western mission at Saint Louis; when this was closed in 1820 he remained in the West. In 1822 as missionary of the Massachusetts Baptist Missionary Society he moved to Rock Spring, Ill., where he acquired and cultivated a half-section of land to supplement his appropriation of five dollars a week. Reading as he rode his horse, enduring hunger and cold as part of his routine, he traveled constantly through Illinois, Indiana, and Missouri. To undermine the opposition to missions that he encountered everywhere, he established Bible societies and Sunday schools and by frequent visits kept them alive. Wherever possible he examined schools, the majority of which he considered worse than useless, and he placed good teachers where he could. In 1827 he helped to establish Rock Spring Seminary, the main purpose of which was the training of teachers and ministers. It was soon moved to Upper Alton. In 1835 he raised $20,000 in the East for the institution, half being obtained from Benjamin Shurtleff of Boston, for whom the seminary was renamed Shurtleff College. Peck remained a trustee until his death. A religious periodical, the *Pioneer,* was established at Rock Spring under his editorship in 1829, continuing there or at Upper Alton until 1839, when it was merged with the *Baptist Banner* at Louisville, Ky. He became editor of the *Western Watchman* in 1849. In the meantime his reports and articles were making him known as an authority on the West, and he was led to compile his *Guide for Emigrants,* which appeared in 1831 and again in 1836 and 1837. The first edition of his *Gazetteer of Illinois* (1834) ran to 4,200 copies; it was revised in 1837. In collaboration with John Messinger he prepared a sectional map of Illinois, published in 1835. *The Traveller's Directory for Illinois* appeared in 1840. He wrote a *Life of Daniel Boone* (1847), in 1850 edited a revised and enlarged edition of the *Annals of the West* that had been published in 1846 by James H. Perkins [*q.v.*], and wrote *Father Clark or the Pioneer Preacher* (1855). His large library burned in 1852, but his first sources were his own observations, noted copiously in his diary while he traveled and amplified by a large correspondence and by interviews.

He took little part in Illinois politics except an unsuccessful candidacy for the constitutional convention of 1847–48. He was active in the colonization society (*Pioneer,* Oct. 27, 1837) but deplored the efforts of the extreme abolitionists. His criticism of Lovejoy and the abo-

litionists compelled him to defend his attitude toward the tragedy of Lovejoy's murder (*Pioneer*, June 1, 8, 1838). He favored the enforcement of the Fugitive Slave Law and in January 1851 preached a sermon on the subject in the State House at Springfield, *The Duties of American Citizens* (1851). In 1841 and 1842 he acted as agent for the Western Baptist Publication Society and from 1843 to 1846 as secretary of the American Baptist Publication Society. He held a pastorate in Saint Louis in 1849 and in Covington, Ky., in 1854, after which the failure of his health made necessary his return home. He died at Rock Spring.

[Rufus Babcock, *Forty Years of Pioneer Life, Memoir of John Mason Peck . . . from his Journals and Correspondence* (1864); Coe Hayne, *Vanguard of the Caravans* (1931); A. K. de Blois, *The Pioneer School. A Hist. of Shurtleff College* (1900); I. B. Peck, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Descendants of Joseph Peck* (1868), p. 380.] T. C. P.

PECK, THOMAS EPHRAIM (Jan. 29, 1822–Oct. 2, 1893), Presbyterian clergyman, teacher, was born in Columbia, S. C., the son of Ephraim Peck, a native of Connecticut who had moved South on account of his health and opened a small mercantile establishment in Columbia, and Sarah Bannister (Parke), a daughter of Thomas Parke, professor of the classic languages in the College of South Carolina. The father died when Thomas was ten years of age, after which event the mother lived with her father till his death in 1840. Prepared for college by his mother, and afterwards by John Daniel in the Male Academy of Columbia, Thomas graduated from the College of South Carolina, with distinguished honors, in his eighteenth year. Feeling that he was called to the ministry, he studied, while acting as College librarian, not in the Presbyterian Seminary in the town, but under the personal direction of James Henley Thornwell [*q.v.*], a Presbyterian minister, then professor of metaphysics in the college, who exercised a controlling influence over Peck's mental and spiritual development.

He was licensed by the Charleston Presbytery in 1844, preached for several months to the Salem and Jackson churches in Fairfield County, S. C., then for a year as temporary supply in the Second Presbyterian Church of Baltimore. In 1846 he became pastor of the Broadway Street Church, an offshoot of the Second Church, and in 1857, pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church of Baltimore. On Oct. 28, 1852, he married Ellen Church Richardson, the daughter of Scotch parents, herself a stanch Presbyterian. She bore him seven daughters, three of whom died in infancy and one in early

Peck

womanhood. In 1855–56 he collaborated with Rev. Stuart Robinson in publishing the *Presbyterian Critic and Monthly Review*, a paper designed to maintain strict Presbyterian views in polity and doctrine, in which are found many of his characteristic views.

In 1859 he was elected professor of ecclesiastical history and church government in Union Theological Seminary in Virginia. He declined the call, but when it was tendered him again in 1860 he accepted it, feeling that impaired health was unfitting him for the pastorate. Upon the resignation in 1883 of Dr. Robert L. Dabney [*q.v.*], professor of theology, Peck was promptly and unanimously chosen to fill his place, a position which he continued to hold till his death. In 1878 he was elected moderator of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States. He suffered a marked decline of health in 1892, and in October of the following year died of Bright's disease and attendant complications, survived by three of his daughters, all of whom married clergymen.

He published one small book, *Notes on Ecclesiology* (1892), and a number of articles which, with unpublished sketches and notes, were edited by T. C. Johnson and printed under the title, *Miscellanies of Rev. Thomas E. Peck* (3 vols., 1895–97). He rendered his greatest service to the Church as a teacher at Union Theological Seminary. He held that the Bible was the inerrant Word of God, an absolute rule of faith and practice, to which nothing should be added except by good and necessary inference. He believed that Presbyterian doctrine and polity were clearly set forth in the Scriptures, and that the traditionary beliefs and practices of the Church, being Scriptural, should be maintained. Many who did not know him well thought that he was severe and cold; friends who pierced his reserve, however, found him warmhearted and affectionate, albeit possessed of strong and unyielding convictions.

[C. R. Vaughan, in *Union Sem. Mag.*, Mar.-Apr. 1894, and in *Miscellanies* (vol. III); T. C. Johnson, in *Christian Observer*, July 4, 1894; R. F. Campbell, in *Union Sem. Mag.*, Mar.-Apr. 1898; *The State* (Richmond), Oct. 5, 1893.] E. T. T.

PECK, TRACY (May 24, 1838–Nov. 24, 1921), classicist, teacher, was born at Bristol, Conn., the son of Tracy and Sally (Adams) Peck. Through his father he was descended from Paul Peck who came to Hartford with Thomas Hooker in 1636. His mother was descended from Henry Adams who emigrated in 1636 from Devonshire, England, to Massachusetts. By virtue of his own culture and wide experiences abroad in later life, he became thoroughly cos-

mopolitan in his point of view, but he reflected always in his native integrity, intellectual clarity, and personal simplicity, the force of his colonial New England ancestry. Having prepared for college at Williston Academy, Easthampton, Mass., he entered Yale College, from which he graduated as valedictorian in 1861. During the two years following he studied at Berlin, Jena, and Bonn, traveling also in Italy. Returning to Yale, he received the degree of M.A. in 1864 and was a tutor in Latin for the next three years. From 1867 to 1869 he studied in Rome and Berlin, returning again to a tutorship for the following year. On Dec. 22, 1870, he was married in Brooklyn, N. Y., to Elizabeth Harriet Hall of Hadleigh, England; they had two children, a son and a daughter. During the year 1870–71 he taught Latin and mathematics at the Chickering Classical Institute in Cincinnati. From there he was called to be professor of the Latin language and literature in Cornell University, where he served until he was called to Yale in the same capacity in 1880. He was professor in Yale College for twenty-eight years, retiring in 1908. During the year 1885–86 he was president of the American Philological Association and in 1898–99 director of the American School for Classical Studies in Rome. After retiring from active service he spent most of his time in Rome, where he died and was buried in the English and American Cemetery.

He represented the Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences at the Darwin Centennial in Cambridge and London in June 1909. With Prof. Clement L. Smith of Harvard he edited a series of Latin authors, preparing personally with Prof. James B. Greenough [*q.v.*] one of the volumes of Livy, published in 1893. He also published essays in the *Nation*, the *New Englander*, the *Cornell Review*, the *American Journal of Archæology*, and the *Transactions of the American Philological Association*. He was councilor of the British and American Archæological Society in Rome. A polished and brilliant speaker, he delivered various addresses, the more memorable of which include one at the centennial celebration of the incorporation of Bristol, Conn., in 1885 (see *Centennial Celebration of the Incorporation of the Town of Bristol*, 1885), one at the semi-centennial of Williston Seminary in 1891 (*Baccalaureate Sermon, Oration, and Addresses Delivered at the Semi-Centennial Celebration of Williston Seminary . . . 1891*), and a Latin address before the Phi Beta Kappa Society at Yale in March 1907. His Latin style in both verse and prose was, in the finest sense of the word, elegant; and this Phi Beta Kappa speech was particularly noteworthy for its suggestion of the nomination and election of William Howard Taft as president of the United States.

It is more true of Tracy Peck than of most men that the outline of his life work gives very slight intimation of the real worth of the man. He had an extraordinarily ripe scholarship in the field of Roman life and manners. This resulted from a thorough acquaintance with the more intimate types of Latin literature and with the whole range of Latin inscriptions. Probably no man of modern times has ever known better the ancient city of Rome, especially its peculiar spirit. He also knew all of its material remains: topographical, architectural, and inscriptional. It was his keen understanding of Rome and the Romans and his fine appreciation of their human contributions to civilization that made his classes the delight of all humanistic students. He was intolerant of careless work but his own courtly and chivalrous character made him one of the best-loved and most respected of the scholars of a peculiarly rich period in American classical scholarship. His interest was always in passing on what he had absorbed and his method was that of the teacher rather than the writer. In his latter years in Rome he gave unreservedly of his abundant store of knowledge to all those who came seriously to learn something of that capital of the world. He became deservedly one of the best-known Americans in Rome without ever losing touch with America or ceasing to exert a benign influence on American classical scholarship.

[I. B. Peck, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Descendants of Joseph Peck* (1868), p. 386; *1861–1911: The Fiftieth Anniv. of the Class of 1861, Yale Coll.* (1912); *Yale Univ. Obit. Record*, 1922; *Thirty Year Record: Class of 1890, Yale Coll.* (1922); *Am. Acad. in Rome, Ann. Report*, 1921–22; *Report of the Dean of Yale Coll. to the President*, 1921–22; *Yale Alumni Weekly*, Dec. 2, 1921; *New Haven Journal-Courier*, Nov. 26, 1921; *New Haven Evening Register*, Dec. 11, 1921.]

C. W. M—l.

PECK, WILLIAM DANDRIDGE (May 8, 1763–Oct. 3, 1822), naturalist, was born in Boston. His father was John Peck; his mother, who died when he was seven, was Hannah (Jackson). At the commencement of the siege of Boston in 1776, the family removed to Braintree, Mass., and later to Lancaster. William soon afterwards enrolled at Harvard College, and in 1782 received the degree of bachelor of arts. He then entered the accounting house of a prominent merchant and was destined for commercial pursuits. His father, a naval architect of talent and the designer of ships of war for the government, felt that he was not adequately

paid and retired in disgust to a small farm at Kittery, Me. His son speedily followed him there, and for nearly twenty years led a secluded life, busily engaged, however, in making observations in zoölogy and collecting insects, aquatic plants, and fishes. He made rare trips to Boston and to Portsmouth, but his fame grew, although in a restricted circle.

His friends raised a subscription to establish a professorship in natural history in Harvard College and in 1805 Peck was elected thereto. Though at first strongly resisting all solicitations, he eventually accepted the position. He was then sent to Europe to visit the different scientific establishments in England, France, and the North European countries, largely to gain information which would be helpful in the establishment of a botanic garden in Cambridge. During this trip he purchased many books for the library of the new department, and brought back many specimens of natural history. He was a man of great ability in a number of directions: he constructed his first microscope; he was an artist and made exquisite drawings; he was a classical scholar. In 1812 he was one of the incorporators of the American Antiquarian Society.

Peck was probably the first teacher of entomology in the United States and probably the first writer of scientific attainment to enter the field of economic entomology. He wrote "The Description and History of the Canker-Worm" (*Massachusetts Magazine; or Monthly Museum,* September-October 1795), for which he received a gold medal from the Massachusetts Agricultural Society. In 1799 he published *Natural History of the Slug-Worm,* for which he also received a gold medal, and a premium of fifty dollars. In this paper he described the first egg-parasite noticed in the United States. He wrote about the bark-beetles of the pear and of the pine (*Massachusetts Agricultural Repository and Journal,* January 1817) and about the lepidopterous borers in locust trees (*Ibid.*, January 1818). His last paper dealt with insects that affect the oaks and cherries (*Ibid.*, January 1819). In 1818 he published a catalogue of the foreign and American plants in the Botanic Garden, Cambridge.

[Josiah Quincy, *The Hist. of Harvard Univ.* (1860); *Coll. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser., vol. X (1823); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biog.* (1920); *Boston Daily Advertiser,* Oct 8, 1822.] L. O. H.

PECKHAM, GEORGE WILLIAMS (Mar. 23, 1845–Jan. 10, 1914), teacher, librarian, entomologist, was born at Albany, N. Y., the son of George Williams Peckham, a lawyer, and of

Mary Perry (Watson) Peckham. He was a descendant of John Peckham who was in Rhode Island as early as 1638. In 1853 the family removed to Milwaukee, Wis. Here George was placed in the Milwaukee Academy, but he never cared for Latin, Greek, and mathematics; in fact, he was not interested in any study until, in the early days of the Civil War, he came upon a book of tactics. He and his friend Arthur MacArthur (afterwards a lieutenant-general) worked over this book and determined to enter the army and become great soldiers. His parents, however, did not allow him to enlist until 1863, when he was assigned to Company B, First Regiment, Wisconsin Heavy Artillery. He was mustered out with the rank of first lieutenant at the age of nineteen.

At the earnest wish of his father, he entered the Albany (N. Y.) Law School, living in the family of his uncle, Judge Rufus Wheeler Peckham. After graduation he entered the law office of James T. Brown of Milwaukee. Not caring for the law, he became a student in the medical college of the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor. In 1873 he was called home by his father's death; the college granted him the degree of M.D. in 1881. Asked to take a temporary position as teacher of biology in what at that time was the only high school in Milwaukee—afterwards known as the Eastern High School—he proved an inspiring teacher, and immediately introduced laboratory methods. It is said that he was the first to employ such methods in biological work in any high school in the United States. He immediately engaged in research and was the leading supporter of the so-called Darwinian theory in his community. Elizabeth Maria Gifford, recently graduated from Vassar (1876), came to work in his laboratory, and in 1880 they were married. It was a most fortunate union, and together they carried on investigations almost until his death, publishing very many papers under a joint authorship. In 1888 he was made principal of the high school, and in 1891 was appointed superintendent of public instruction for the city of Milwaukee. He held this post until 1897, when he was made director of the great public library, for which a beautiful building had just been erected. In this position he served until his retirement in 1910. He was a prominent publishing member of the Wisconsin Academy of Sciences, Arts and Letters, and was its president from 1890 to 1893. He had already been president of the Wisconsin Natural History Society.

The Peckhams' scientific work (it is practically impossible to write of them individually in

this connection) was largely confined to spiders and wasps. When Mrs. Peckham first joined the high school laboratory, they began a study of the jumping spiders. Commencing with taxonomic studies, they devoted evenings and holidays to the work and published a number of papers. For a time these were limited to descriptions of species and genera, but long vacations spent in the country gave opportunity for field work, and in December 1887 they published in the *Journal of Morphology* the results of a very interesting investigation of the mental powers of spiders. In 1889 and 1890 they published papers on sexual selection and protective resemblances in spiders (*Occasional Papers of the Natural History Society of Wisconsin,* vol. I).

In the meantime they had been watching a ground nest of *Vespa germanica* close to their country cottage, and from this came their very important study of wasps, culminating in their great work entitled *On the Instincts and Habits of Solitary Wasps* (1898). It is a volume of 249 pages, with fifteen plates, and is not only a sound scientific treatise but an altogether charming book. It was based on years of patient, highly intelligent, and very laborious investigations, and ranks today as one of the most valuable books in that field. The somewhat earlier work of the Frenchmen, Fabre and Ferton, and the later work of Phil and Nellie Rau in the United States, together with that of the Peckhams, explored a fascinating field in comparative animal psychology. In Bouvier's *La Vie Psychique des Insectes* (1918) the work of the Peckhams is considered as authoritative. Moreover, their book is a masterpiece of English writing in its clearness, aptness and simplicity. Three children were born to them, a son and two daughters.

[S. F. Peckham and others, *Peckham Geneal.* (n.d.); *Entomological News,* Apr. 1914; *Trans. Wis. Acad. of Sci., Arts and Letters,* vol. XX (1921); *Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the U. S., State of Wis., Circular 6,* ser. of 1914, Mar. 21; *Milwaukee Sentinel,* Jan. 11, 1914.]

L. O. H.

PECKHAM, RUFUS WHEELER (Nov. 8, 1838–Oct. 24, 1909), judge, was the son of the jurist of the same name and Isabella Lacey, and younger brother of Wheeler Hazard Peckham [*q.v.*]. He was born in Albany, N. Y., attended the Albany Boys' Academy, and continued his education in Philadelphia. After traveling with his brother in Europe he returned in 1857 and began to study law. In the year of his admission to the bar (1859) his father was elected a justice of the supreme court of New York, and to the vacancy caused by his retirement from the firm of Peckham & Tremain young Rufus succeeded. He continued as a member thereof for nearly two decades. On Nov. 14, 1866, he was married to Harriette M. Arnold, daughter of a leading New York City merchant. Two sons were born of the union who predeceased their parents.

From 1869 to 1872 Peckham was district attorney of Albany County, in which capacity he won distinction by his successful prosecution of certain express-car robbers. He was later called to assist the state attorney-general in other prosecutions, meanwhile representing important clients as a private practitioner. In 1876 he was a district delegate to the National Democratic Convention where he strongly espoused the interest of Samuel J. Tilden. He became corporation counsel for the city of Albany in 1881 and two years later was elected a justice of the state supreme court. In 1886 he was elected to the court of appeals of New York and is said to have "shown by his opinions in 1891, in the election controversies of that year . . . his independence of political affiliations by ranging himself with the Republican Judges" (*Proceedings, New York State Bar Association, post,* p. 651). At other times during his preceding career he seems to have taken a stand adverse to that of his local party organization and in favor of good government; but evidently he did not antagonize party leaders as his brother Wheeler had in New York City, for when, in 1895, President Cleveland nominated him for a vacancy on the Supreme Court of the United States, Senator Hill, who had successfully opposed his brother's appointment to a similar position the preceding year hastened to let it be known that this nominee was one toward whom he maintained a different attitude, and the nomination was quickly confirmed.

Peckham assumed his new duties on Jan. 6, 1896, and served for more than thirteen years as a member of the nation's tribunal. "His opinions," observed Chief Justice Fuller, "from the first in Volume 160 of our reports to the last in Volume 214, are all lucid expositions of the matter in hand, and many of them of peculiar gravity and importance in the establishment of governing principles" (*Proceedings, New York State Bar Association,* p. 707). Opinions in the following cases have been especially mentioned as revealing Peckham's "great learning and industry": *United States* vs. *Trans-Missouri Freight Association* (166 *U. S.,* 290); *United States* vs. *Joint Traffic Association* (171 *U. S.,* 505); *Hopkins* vs. *United States* (171 *U. S.,* 578); *Addyston Pipe & Steel Company* vs.

United States (175 *U. S.*, 211); *Maxwell* vs. *Dow* (176 *U. S.*, 581); *Montague & Company* vs. *Lowry* (193 *U. S.*, 38); and *Lochner* vs. *New York* (198 *U. S.*, 45). Peckham died at Altamont, near Albany, N. Y., in the fall of 1909. His memory was honored by special services on the part of the New York State Bar Association, Dec. 9, 1909, and the bar of the federal Supreme Court on Dec. 18, of the same year. Addresses were made on these occasions by Elihu Root, Alton B. Parker, and other distinguished members of the legal profession. The resolutions of the New York State Bar Association describe him as "our ideal of a Judge in ability, character and conduct, . . . always courteous yet dignified. . . . He never seemed conscious of his honor, nor did he feel it necessary to maintain an attitude of judicial reserve."

[See: "Proc. on the Death of Mr. Justice Peckham," 215 *U. S. Reports*, v–xiii; "In Memory of Rufus W. Peckham," *Proc. N. Y. State Bar Asso., 1910* (1910); S. F. Peckham, *Peckham Geneal.* (1922); *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 25, 1909. In some sources Peckham's middle name is given as Williams.] C. S. L.

PECKHAM, STEPHEN FARNUM (Mar. 26, 1839–July 11, 1918), chemist, son of Charles and Hannah Lapham (Farnum) Peckham, and a descendant of John Peckham, who had come to Rhode Island as early as 1638, was born at Fruit Hill near Providence, R. I., and spent his early years on his father's farm. He prepared for college at the Friends' (now Moses Brown) School, Providence, and after two years as a clerk in a drug store, entered Brown University in 1859, taking a special course in chemistry. Two years later, in association with Nathaniel P. Hill [*q.v.*] and others, he began to manufacture illuminating oils from petroleum in a plant at Providence planned and constructed largely by himself. The project did not prove immediately remunerative, however, and was abandoned shortly after the outbreak of the Civil War. Together with many others, Peckham enlisted in the army (Aug. 15, 1862), serving first as a hospital steward of the 7th Rhode Island Regiment and subsequently as chief of the chemical department of the United States laboratory at Philadelphia. He remained in the army until the close of the war, being honorably discharged May 26, 1865. In 1865–66, as an expert for the California Petroleum Company, he spent most of his time studying the occurrence of petroleum in the southern part of that state. This work naturally led him into geology, and during the next year or so he made a geological survey of parts of California with special reference to petroleum and allied materials. He made several reports, including one on the oil interests of Southern California and subsequently an elaborate one on the technological examination of bitumen (prepared in 1867 and published in *California Geological Survey, Geology*, vol. II, 1882), a subject which interested him for many years.

For a number of years, beginning in 1867, he taught chemistry in various institutions: Brown University (1867–68), Washington and Jefferson College, Washington, Pa. (1868–69), State College of Agriculture and the Mechanic Arts, Orono, Me. (1869–71), Buchtel College, Akron, Ohio (1871–72), and the University of Minnesota (1872–80). While teaching in the last-named place he was also chemist of the state geological survey and of the board of health. He had been state assayer of Maine (1869–71), of Minnesota (1873–80), and in 1887 was state assayer of Rhode Island. From 1880 to 1885 he was a special agent of the United States census office and prepared many articles on chemistry, including a *Report on the Production, Technology, and Uses of Petroleum and its Products* (1885), with a bibliography. For the next five years or so he was engaged in various business, scientific, and literary occupations, including the preparation of a long article on petroleum for the *Encyclopædia Britannica* (9th ed., 1875–86). He went to California again in 1893 to serve for a year as chemist of the Union Oil Company. His interest in bitumen led him to visit Trinidad to examine the famous pitch lake. Upon his return he served for four years as an expert on petroleum and asphaltum at Ann Arbor, Mich. In 1898 he entered the service of New York City as chemist, first to the commissioners of accounts and subsequently to the finance department. He held the latter position until January 1911, when ill health compelled him to resign. His scientific work ceased at this time.

In addition to nearly one hundred reports, including those mentioned above, and articles in technical journals, non-technical magazines, and encyclopædias, he wrote *Elementary Treatise on Chemistry* (1876), *Asphalt Paving; Report of the Commissioners of Accounts of the City of New York* (1904); and *Solid Bitumens* (1909). He was interested in New England history, was the chief author of a *Peckham Genealogy* (n.d.) and from 1912 to 1915 was associate editor of the *Journal of American History*. His extended services and fundamental contributions to the petroleum and allied industries were recognized by his election to membership in many scientific societies. On June 13, 1865, he married Mary Chace Peck (died Mar. 20, 1892) and on Aug. 1, 1902, Harriet C. Waite Van Buren, a phy-

sician. There were two sons and two daughters by the former marriage.

[*Hist. Cat. of Brown Univ., 1764–1904* (1905); *Providence Journal*, July 16, 1918; S. F. Peckham and others, *Peckham Geneal.* (n.d.); *N. Y. Times*, July 13, 1918.] L. C. N.

PECKHAM, WHEELER HAZARD (Jan. 1, 1833–Sept. 27, 1905), lawyer, was born in Albany, N. Y., the eldest son of Rufus Wheeler Peckham, and Isabella Lacey, and a brother of Rufus Wheeler Peckham [*q.v.*]. He was descended from John Peckham who was in Rhode Island in 1638. He attended the Albany Boys' Academy, a French boarding-school at Utica, where he learned French, and is said to have spent a year at Union College. Being delicate, he did not complete his college course. Instead he traveled for a year in Europe and returned in 1853 to study law at the Albany Law School, of which he was one of the first students, and with his father's firm, Peckham & Tremain, with which he practised after being admitted to the bar in 1854. On Apr. 30, 1855, he was married to Anne A. Keasbey, whom he had met while traveling in Europe. A hemorrhage of the lungs in 1856 caused him such alarm that he left his business for another tour in Europe, and upon his return, fourteen months later, took up his residence for a couple of years at Dubuque, Iowa, removing to St. Paul, Minn., in 1859 and remaining there until 1864. He then returned to the East with health restored and, in the fall of that year, entered into a law partnership with George M. Miller and John A. Stoutenburgh of New York City. The firm had a large general practice, and Peckham proved amply able to handle the very considerable share of it which fell to him. As early as 1868 he appeared in the federal Supreme Court in cases involving the power of a state to tax "greenbacks" (*The Banks* vs. *The Mayor, 7 Wallace* 16; *Bank* vs. *Supervisors, 7 Wallace* 26). Peckham contended, and was upheld by the Supreme Court, which reversed the holding of the New York court of appeals, that the power did not exist. Among the opposing counsel was Charles O'Conor, who, it is said, was so impressed with Peckham's presentation of the case that he called Peckham to assist him in the prosecution of William M. Tweed and his associates in 1873. There were two trials, the first resulting in a "hung jury," but in the second Tweed was convicted and the heavy work had been done by Peckham.

Like his father before him, he was a vigorous opponent of Tammany Hall, but he never was "in politics" in the sense of seeking office. When appointed district attorney by Governor Cleveland in 1884 he held office less than a year. He was one of the founders of the Association of the Bar of the City of New York in 1869 and served as its president from 1892 to 1894, inclusive. He was also a member of the New York State Bar Association and took a practical interest in law reform. In January 1894 he was nominated by President Cleveland to fill a vacancy on the United States Supreme Court. Senators Hill and Murphy of his own state, both organization Democrats, opposed him because of his independent course, and by invoking the custom known as "senatorial courtesy," prevented his confirmation. But they could not impair the professional standing and reputation which he built up during a half-century at the bar, nor the innumerable friendships which he formed in various parts of the country and in all circles in which he moved. He died suddenly, in September 1905, in his office in New York City.

[The best appreciation of Peckham is Edward Patterson's "Memorial of Wheeler H. Peckham," in *Asso. of the Bar of the City of N. Y.*, 1907. See also: *Proc. of the Twenty-Ninth Ann. Meeting of the N. Y. State Bar Asso.*, 1906; S. F. Peckham, *Peckham Geneal.* (1922); *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 23, 24, 25, and Feb. 17, 1894; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 28, 1905.] C. S. L.

PEDDER, JAMES (July 29, 1775–Aug. 27, 1859), agriculturist, editor, and author, was born in Newport, Isle of Wight, England. He was the youngest of a family of ten children. Little is known of his childhood or of his formal education, but that he was well trained seems certain from his later accomplishments. In the early years of his married life he lived at "Buckberry Farm" on the Isle of Wight. About 1809 he went to London and became an assistant of the celebrated chemist and writer, Dr. Samuel Parks, remaining with him for nearly ten years. During this period he published a little book for children, *The Yellow Shoestrings, or, The Good Effects of Obedience to Parents* (1814), which is said to have gone through seventeen London editions and at least two in the United States. About 1819 Pedder was obliged to give up his position with Dr. Parks on account of his health. He went to the Isle of Jersey where, after his recovery, he took charge of Trinity Manor House near St. Heliers for three years, during the absence of the lord of the manor. During the next two years he was engaged in supervising the erection of the chemical works of Amireux and Le Breton. This position he left to take charge of the vast estate of John Christy, the indigo merchant, who from the extent of his possessions in Brecknockshire, Wales, was familiarly known as "The Prince of Wales." For about seven years Pedder remained in his employ.

Believing that America would furnish better opportunities for his labors, he emigrated to Philadelphia in 1832 and was soon appointed by the Philadelphia Beet Sugar Society to make an investigation of the methods employed by the French in the culture of the sugar beet and the manufacture of beet sugar. After spending six months in France, he laid before the Society his findings, published later in a volume entitled *Report Made to the Beet Sugar Society on the Culture in France of the Beet Root* (1836). Subsequently he was employed for several years by Joseph Lovering, the well-known sugar manufacturer of Philadelphia. From Apr. 15, 1840, to July 1843 he edited the *Farmers' Cabinet,* an agricultural journal of merit and very considerable influence, published in Philadelphia from 1836 to 1848. He was a member of the Philadelphia Society for Promoting Agriculture and was elected librarian on Feb. 2, 1842. About 1844 he became corresponding editor of the *Boston Cultivator,* and in 1848 resident editor, which position he continued to hold until his death.

While he was associated with the *Farmers' Cabinet,* he began the publication in its columns of "Frank; or Dialogues between a Father and Son on the Subjects of Agriculture, Husbandry, and Rural Affairs," intended especially for the children of farmers. This popular series of articles was reprinted in part in other agricultural periodicals of the period, namely, the *American Farmer,* the *Cultivator,* and the *New Genesee Farmer,* was published in book form in 1840, and passed through several editions. A work of a technical character which also enjoyed a considerable popularity for several years was his book entitled *The Farmers' Land Measurer, or Pocket Companion* (1842), reprinted as late as 1890. His last days were spent in comparative retirement, but he continued his editorial work up to a few months before his death, which occurred in his eighty-fifth year, at Roxbury (now part of Boston), Mass. He was buried in Forest Hills Cemetery, Jamaica Plain, by the side of his wife, Eliza, who died July 25, 1854.

[*Boston Cultivator,* Sept. 3, 1859; *Hist. Mag.,* Oct. 1859; *Boston Transcript,* Aug. 30, 1859.] C. R. B.

PEEK, FRANK WILLIAM (Aug. 20, 1881–July 26, 1933), electrical engineer, the son of Frank William and May (Stedman) Peek, was born in Mokelumne Hill, Calaveras County, Cal. He prepared for college in his native town and was graduated in 1905 from Leland Stanford University with the A.B. degree. During his vacations he acquired practical experience with the Standard Electric Company of California and the California Gas & Electric Company. For a year following his graduation he was employed as test man at the Schenectady, N. Y., plant of the General Electric Company and then he assumed direction of a special test in engineering research, joining the power and mining engineering department of the company in 1907. It was in this capacity that he began the research which first drew attention to him as an investigator of high voltage phenomena. In connection with this project he spent the summers of 1907 and 1908 in the mountains of Colorado studying lightning and the protection of electric transmission lines and in 1910 was amongst the first to join the newly formed consulting engineering department of the General Electric Company organized by Charles Proteus Steinmetz [*q.v.*] in Schenectady. During his first two years here he was engaged in studying the problems of electric transmission at 250,000 volts and in the course of this work he established the laws of corona and investigated electric line insulators. At the same time he took graduate work at Union College, receiving the degree of M.E.E. from that institution in 1911. He continued his research in Schenectady until 1916 when he was transferred to the Pittsfield, Mass., works of the company and placed in charge of the general transformer engineering department. He was later made chief engineer, which position he held at the time of his death.

High voltage and power transmission with related developments were subjects of special research for Peek after 1916. He became increasingly active in the investigation of lightning, designing and building several lightning generators one of which was capable of producing a 5,000,000 volt lightning flash. In 1931 he built a machine which produced 10,000,000 volts, the highest voltage ever controlled by man. During his long career in this special field he was a frequent contributor to technical literature, his articles on the laws of corona, high voltage phenomena, transmission lines calculations and allied problems exceeding two hundred in number. He was the author of *Dielectric Phenomena in High Voltage Engineering* (1915), also published in French (1924). For his paper "High Voltage Power Transmission," published in the *Proceedings of the American Society of Civil Engineers,* vol. XLVIII, no. 9, and read in 1922 before the society, he was awarded the Thomas Fitch Rowland prize of that organization. For his paper "Lightning," delivered as an address before The Franklin Institute in 1924, and published in the *Journal* for February 1925, he was awarded the Levy Gold Medal of that society. He was a member of the American Physical Society, the

American Association for the Advancement of Science, and the American Society of Electrical Engineers of which he was also a director, representing the society on the National Research Council for a number of years. Peek married Merle A. Bell of Oswego, N. Y., on Aug. 9, 1913. She survived him at the time of his death when his automobile was struck by a train at Port Daniels, Quebec, Canada.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Stanford University Alumni Directory, 1891–1931* (1932); *Jour. of The Franklin Inst.*, Jan. 1924; *Electrical Engineering*, Sept. 1933; *N. Y. Times*, July 28, 29, 1933.]

C. W. M—n.

PEERS, BENJAMIN ORRS (Apr. 20, 1800–Aug. 20, 1842), educator, was born in Loudoun County, Va., but at the age of three was taken to Kentucky by his father, Valentine Peers, a Revolutionary soldier. First settling in Nicholas County, the Peers family soon removed to Paris, Ky. In 1817 Peers entered Transylvania University, was in 1819 appointed tutor in Latin and Greek there, graduated in 1821, and remained to teach for a year more. Thinking to become a Presbyterian minister he entered the Princeton Theological Seminary but for some unknown reason left at the end of the academic year in 1823. For an equally unknown reason he then withdrew from membership in the Presbyterian church and became an Episcopalian. In 1826 he graduated from the Theological Seminary of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Virginia at Alexandria and that year was ordained a deacon. Attracted by the educational possibilities in connection with religious observances, he established in June 1829 a Mechanics' Institute at Lexington, Ky. In the same year he visited certain eastern states to examine systems of public education and collected data, which he afterward used perhaps too energetically. The result of this survey was his founding in the same city an Eclectic Institute in October 1830, in which he applied Pestalozzi's principles (Lewis, *post*, p. 68). In November 1833 he proposed unsuccessfully that this school be consolidated with Transylvania University.

However, in the next month he became professor of moral philosophy, proctor of Morrison College, and acting-president of the Transylvania University. He entered at once upon an active prosecution of his duties. His published *Inaugural Address Delivered at the Opening of Morrison College* (1833) shows that he looked forward to making of the university something resembling a state normal school. Some of his pronouncements in this speech are surprisingly modern; he held that "the study of no subject, the dead languages, or the more abstruse parts of mathematics for example, need be pursued *solely* on account of the valuable discipline it affords the mind" and declared that so far as liberal education was concerned "the argument from utility is daily acquiring greater strength" (p. 10). He insisted that it should be the object of a teacher not to impose upon a youth a fixed and arbitrary curriculum but to stimulate his intellect to voluntary effort. The local newspapers, reporting the November ceremonies, paid less attention to this address than to the fact that Morrison College was opened for the first time. He likewise was active in a convention of state teachers called to discuss educational programs. However, he soon came into collision with the trustees of Transylvania University, and their differences focused in a quarrel over the power of appointing members of the faculty, on which he insisted that at least he be consulted. Still acting-president, on Feb. 14, 1834, he was informed that his "services . . . are no longer useful" and that he was "removed from said office" (Minutes of the board of trustees). After vainly trying to get the trustees to make open charges against him, he brought suit against them, asserting that his dismissal in an equivocal manner had given rise to doubts regarding his character. In 1837 he was obliged through a legal maneuver to abandon this effort at justification. Meantime he had opened a boys' school in Louisville and had become rector of St. Paul's Episcopal Church there in 1835. He was later called to New York City to be editor of *The Journal of Christian Education* in 1838 and to assume charge of the Sunday-school publications of his denomination. He continued his interest in training the young; one of his favorite projects was that which contemplated bringing up the children of each parish through constant catechetical instruction, family worship, and right example. Failing health forced him to travel to a milder climate in the hope of recovery but, returning from Cuba to Louisville, he died there. His portrait, painted by Peale, now in the Ehrich Galleries in New York, exhibits a sensitive face and slight body. His scheme of Christian education, published in the *Journal of Christian Education* (Nov.–Dec. 1841), was given earnest contemporary attention; it was the outgrowth of an earlier book, *Christian Education* (1836).

[Letters and minutes of the board of trustees of Transylvania Univ. in the lib. of Transylvania Univ.; *Obituary Notice of Rev. Benjamin Orrs Peers* (1842), reprinted from *Jour. of Christian Education*, Oct. 1842; *The Biog. Encyc. of Ky.* (1878); Lewis and R. H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.* (2 vols., 1874); A. F. Lewis, *Hist. of Higher Education in Ky.* (1899); *American Jour. of Education*, Mar. 1866; Robert Peter, *Transylvania Univ.* (1896).]

G. C. K.

PEERSON, CLENG (1783–Dec. 16, 1865), immigrant leader and colonizer, served as the promoter and pathfinder for the first group of nineteenth-century Norwegian immigrants to the United States. He was born on the farm "Hesthammer," in southwestern Norway, Tysvær parish, Stavanger *amt*, the son of Peder Hesthammer, his name originally being Kleng (or Klein) Pedersen Hesthammer. He is said to have traveled as a youth in England, France, and Germany. In 1821 he journeyed to New York in company with Knud Olsen Eide, probably as the agent of a group of Quakers and others in the Stavanger region who were interested in emigration as a way of escape from religious and economic difficulties. He returned to Norway in 1824, made a short visit to his home community, and then hastened back to America to make arrangements in western New York for the purchase of land and the erection of houses for the prospective immigrants. When they arrived at New York on Oct. 9, 1825, on the sloop *Restaurationen,* sometimes called the "Norwegian *Mayflower,*" they were met by Cleng Peerson, and most of them followed him to the Kendall settlement near Rochester. For eight years Peerson remained with this colony, but in 1833 he journeyed westward in search of a new site for settlement. This pedestrian reconnaissance took him into Ohio, Michigan, Indiana, Illinois, and probably Wisconsin. His preference for the Fox River Valley in Illinois determined the location of the first Norwegian settlement in the West. He trudged back to New York and the next year, 1834, led the first contingent of Norwegian pioneers to Illinois. The Fox River colony became a center from which radiated many other immigrant settlements in the West.

Ever restless and ever attracted by new frontiers, he founded a Norwegian colony in Shelby County, Missouri, in 1837. Three years later he resided in the first Norwegian settlement in Iowa at Sugar Creek, Lee County, where the federal census of 1840 recorded him as "Klank Pierson." In 1842 he went once more to Norway, where an influential newspaper berated him as an infectious agent in the spread of "America fever." A contemporary account pictures him sitting in a Norwegian tavern on a spring evening in 1843, clad in a long coat, wearing a fur cap, and expatiating in broken "English-Norwegian" on the glories of America to a group of eager listeners (*Bergens Stiftstidende,* Apr. 27, 1843). Later in the year he returned to the United States and guided an immigrant party to the West. In 1847 he joined the Bishop Hill colony in Henry County, Ill., and, his first wife, Catherine, having died in Norway some years before, he married a young woman called Charlotte Marie, belonging to this Swedish communistic settlement. He soon left, however, both the colony and his wife to rejoin the Fox River settlement. A long-standing interest in Texas prompted him to visit that state in 1849. On his return to Illinois he urged Norwegians to turn toward the Southwest, where they could spread out "so as to have greater freedom in their sphere of action" (*Democraten,* Sept. 7, 1850). Under his guidance a group of Norwegians left Illinois in the fall of 1850 for Dallas County, Texas. In 1854 he removed to Bosque County, and there, in the heart of a Norwegian community, he died on Dec. 16, 1865.

Peerson was a droll and entertaining story teller whose visits were welcomed in frontier homes. He had been attracted by Quakerism in his earlier years, but as an old man he was a pronounced freethinker. He was eccentric, restless, a lover of adventure, in some respects a Peer Gynt, but he was motivated by a genuine interest in the welfare of his countrymen. His claim to historical significance has long been disputed and he has even been characterized as a mere vagabond, but he led the vanguard of Norwegian settlers to the upper Mississippi Valley, and his influence was deeply marked upon the early immigration from his homeland. When he turned to the Southwest, the bulk of the immigrants arriving from northern Europe ignored his counsels but this circumstance does not affect the significance of his earlier efforts.

[T. C. Blegen, *Norwegian Migration to America, 1825–1860* (1931), and "Cleng Peerson and Norwegian Immigration," in *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.,* Mar., 1921; R. B. Anderson, *The First Chapter of Norwegian Immigration (1821–1840): Its Causes and Results* (1895), and *Cleng Peerson og Sluppen "Restaurationen"* (1925); G. T. Flom, *A History of Norwegian Immigration to the United States from the Earliest Beginning Down to the Year 1848* (1909); A. R. Brækhus, "Cleng Peersons Norgesbesøk i 1843," in *Nordmandsforbundet,* Apr. 1925; manuscript letter of Thormod Madland to Mauritz Halvarsen, June 28, 1825, in the possession of the Minn. Hist. Soc., St. Paul.]

T. C. B.

PEET, HARVEY PRINDLE (Nov. 19, 1794–Jan. 1, 1873), educator of the deaf, was a descendant of John Peet who emigrated from England to America in 1635. The son of Richard Peet, a minute-man in 1776, and of Johannah (Prindle) Peet, widow of Zachariah Brinsmade, he was born and spent his early years on a farm among the rough and beautiful hills of northwestern Connecticut, in Bethlehem, Litchfield County. Though his first educational opportunities were limited to the country school, he learned rapidly and became a teacher in the district schools at the age of sixteen. Later he taught

at the private school of Dr. Azel Backus [*q.v.*] in Bethlehem and then in that of Dr. Daniel Parker in Sharon, Conn. Saving his scanty means and adding to them by farm work during the summer, he entered Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., in 1816, and Yale College in 1818, graduating from the latter in 1822 among the first ten in his class. In the fall of that year he was invited by Thomas Hopkins Gallaudet [*q.v.*] to become a teacher in the American School for the Deaf at Hartford, Conn. Here he spent over eight years, in association with Laurent Clerc [*q.v.*], Lewis Weld, and other brilliant educators of deaf children. Such was his success and energy that he was soon put in charge of the entire business affairs of the institution and, with his wife, was given the care of all the children outside of school hours.

In 1831 he moved to New York, accepting a call to take charge of the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb. Here he labored practically all the rest of his life with the greatest success, building up the school from an enrollment of eighty-five to 439 in his thirty-six years of active management. With great foresight he brought about the advantageous sale of the old school site in the city, arranged the purchase of a beautiful new site on the Hudson River at 162nd Street, and erected a then model establishment to accommodate 500 pupils, which was occupied in 1856. He soon sold a small part of the new site at an advanced price, and thus was able to pay off the whole building debt of the new school within a few years. He studied, at first hand, methods of instructing the deaf followed in European schools as well as in American institutions and was a regular attendant and forceful speaker at educational gatherings for instructors of the deaf wherever they were held. He was a man of great vigor, strong convictions, and deep religious feeling. He felt that his pupils were unfitted for life unless they were equipped as Christian workmen to take their places in the world. He was a strict disciplinarian but took a father's interest in all the children under his care. He was a prolific writer on the subject of the deaf, their condition, legal status, number, and education. His *Course of Instruction for the Deaf and Dumb* (3 vols., 1844–49) was used with much success throughout the country. He also wrote a school history of the United States to be used by deaf children. His literary contributions appeared mainly, however, in the *American Annals of the Deaf and Dumb*, in the management of which he assisted for many years.

Peet was married three times: first to Margaret Maria Lewis, Nov. 27, 1823, who died Sept. 23, 1832, leaving three sons, all of whom became teachers of the deaf; second in 1835, to Sarah Ann Smith, who died Dec. 30, 1864; and third, Jan. 15, 1868, to Mrs. Louisa P. Hotchkiss. During his declining years he became blind, but recovered his sight through a skilful operation. He retired from active charge of the New York Institution in 1867, having built it up from a small and poorly equipped school to the largest and best equipped establishment for deaf children in the United States. He continued to reside on the grounds of the school and to give advice to his son and successor, Isaac Lewis Peet [*q.v.*], until his death.

["Memoir of Harvey Prindle Peet," *Am. Annals of the Deaf and Dumb*, Apr. 1873; H. W. Syle, "A Summary of the Recorded Researches and Opinions of Harvey Prindle Peet," with bibliog., *Ibid.*, July, Oct. 1873; J. B. Burnet, "Memoir of Harvey Prindle Peet," *Am. Jour. Educ.*, June 1857; *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Coll.*, 1873; *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 2, 1873; records in the possession of a grand-daughter, Miss Elizabeth Peet, Gallaudet College, Washington, D. C.] P. H.

PEET, ISAAC LEWIS (Dec. 4, 1824–Dec. 27, 1898), educator of the deaf, the eldest son of Harvey Prindle Peet [*q.v.*] and Margaret Maria (Lewis) Peet, was born at the American School for the Deaf, Hartford, Conn. His father was an instructor and business manager of the school, and his mother became the matron in charge of domestic affairs. When he was seven years of age his parents moved to New York, where his father took charge of the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb, of which he remained active head until 1867. Isaac Lewis Peet was brought up, therefore, in close contact with deaf children and in the midst of work for their education. He attended private schools in New York City, was graduated with honor from Yale College at the age of twenty-one, and immediately thereafter became a teacher under his father in the New York Institution. Here he served successively as instructor, vice-principal, principal, and principal-emeritus until his death. In 1849 he graduated from Union Theological Seminary, but he was never ordained. He succeeded his father as head of the school in 1867 and was its chief executive until 1892, when he retired. He spent the remainder of his life in a beautiful residence adjoining the New York Institution.

Peet was a member of the Conference of Superintendents and Principals of American Schools for the Deaf and its president in 1896. From 1868 to 1895 he served continuously as a member of the executive committee of the Convention of American Instructors of the Deaf. He was president of the Medico-Legal Society of New York City, and was interested in other

welfare work. He wrote numerous articles on the instruction of the deaf, mostly published in the *American Annals of the Deaf* or read before meetings of members of his profession. Notable among these essays were "The History of Deaf Mute Instruction during One Hundred Years, 1776–1876" (*Fifty-eighth Annual Report . . . of the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb . . . 1876,* 1877); and "The Psychical Status and Criminal Responsibility of the Totally Uneducated Deaf and Dumb" (*Journal of Psychological Medicine,* January 1872). He also published *Monograph on Decimal Fractions* (1866) and *Language Lessons, Designed to Introduce Young Learners, Deaf Mutes and Foreigners to a Correct Understanding of the English Language on the Principle of Object Teaching* (1875).

Peet was married in 1854 to Mary Toles, daughter of Alvah and Mercy (Fuller) Toles, of Chautauqua County, N. Y., a brilliant young deaf woman who had formerly been his pupil. To them were born a daughter and three sons.

[E. A. Fay and Warring Wilkinson, "Isaac Lewis Peet," *American Annals of the Deaf,* Feb. 1899; *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ.,* 1899; *N. Y. Tribune,* Dec. 29, 1898; information furnished by Peet's daughter, Miss Elizabeth Peet, a professor at Gallaudet College for the Deaf, Washington, D. C.; personal recollections of the writer.] P. H.

PEET, STEPHEN DENISON (Dec. 2, 1831–May 24, 1914), Congregational clergyman, archaeologist, was born at Euclid, Ohio, the son of Stephen and Martha (Denison) Peet. His father was a distinguished clergyman, a man of great energy, who established some thirty churches in the Middle West and was one of the founders of Beloit College and Chicago Theological Seminary. Stephen Denison Peet was graduated at Beloit in 1851, studied for two years in the Yale Divinity School, and completed his theological course at Andover Theological Seminary in 1854. He was married in that year to his first wife, Katherine Moseley. In February 1855 he was ordained to the ministry and became pastor of the Congregational Church, Genesee, Wis. Before he entered upon his first pastorate, he had traveled for a year or two as a field missionary, establishing small churches in rural communities. Until 1866 he ministered to various churches in Wisconsin. In that year, at Elkhorn, Wis., he married Olive Walworth Cutler, who bore him five daughters and two sons. Accepting a call to New Oregon, Iowa, he left Wisconsin for thirteen years, returning in 1879. At various times he was in charge of Congregational churches in New London, Conn.; Ashtabula, Ohio; Clinton, Wis., and Mendon, Ill.

Peet

During his college and seminary days he had been keenly interested in Egyptian, Babylonian and Grecian antiquities and in the course of his travels through the northern Middle West he developed a similar interest in the archaeology of that section. He liked to inspect, externally, the ancient earthworks and mound groups of Wisconsin and Ohio. He attempted no explorations but, walking over the squares, octagons, circles, and effigies, he speculated upon their origin, imagining that he perceived in some small measure the real purpose of their builders.

Throughout his long career he sought to interpret the mysticism not only of the mound builders but also of the ancient peoples occupying a higher cultural plane in Mexico and Central America. In 1875, with Isaac Smucker and Roeliff Brinkerhoff [*q.v.*] he took a leading part in organizing the Ohio Archaeological Association, forerunner of the Ohio State Archaeological and Historical Society, founded in 1885. As a member of the earlier organization he attended in 1877 a meeting of the newly founded American Anthropological Association, and in April of the following year began to issue the *American Antiquarian and Oriental Journal,* antedating by ten years the foundation of the *American Anthropologist.* Notwithstanding limited means, he maintained this publication for thirty-two years. To it he contributed many papers on his favorite themes. His chief works published elsewhere are "Emblematic Mounds in Wisconsin: the Forms which They Present" (*Wisconsin State Historical Society, Report and Collections,* vol. IX, 1882); and *Prehistoric America* (5 vols., 1890–1905). In the light of modern archaeological science, much that he wrote appears visionary and conjectural; yet in this connection it is proper to record that later studies with reference to mound-builder symbolism indicate the correctness of some of Peet's views. His real contribution to anthropology was that of a pioneer. In 1878 when he began to issue his *American Antiquarian* the Peabody Museum had barely been established at Harvard and no other institution, with the exception of the Smithsonian, was interested in American Indian studies. Unquestionably, Peet's journal stimulated research, and while the trail he blazed was faint and irregular, it nevertheless tended in the right direction and encouraged others to follow.

During the latter part of his life Peet lived for some time in Chicago, but in 1908 removed to Salem, Mass., where in 1914 he died. Publication of his *American Antiquarian* ceased the following year.

[*Ohio Archaeol. and Hist. Soc. Quart.*, Apr. 1917; G. Van R. Wickham, *The Pioneer Families of Cleveland* (1914), vol. II; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Wis. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. I–XX, *passim* (see Index, vol. XXI, 1915); *Boston Transcript*, May 26, 1914.] W. K. M.

PEFFER, WILLIAM ALFRED (Sept. 10, 1831–Oct. 6, 1912), journalist, senator from Kansas, was born in Cumberland County, Pa., the son of Elizabeth (Souder) and John Peffer, a farmer. Both parents were of Dutch descent. Although he had slight educational advantages, by the age of fifteen he himself was a teacher. During the gold rush he went to California but returned to Pennsylvania where, on Dec. 28, 1852, he married Sarah Jane Barber, a teacher. The next year the young couple moved to a farm in Saint Joseph County, Ind., and in 1859 to Morgan County, Mo., but during the Civil War, in 1862, they returned to Warren County, Ill. In August 1862 he enlisted as a private in Company F of the 83rd Illinois Infantry. The next year he was commissioned second lieutenant. Most of his service was spent in detached duty. Using the spare time available he read law, and, soon after he was mustered out of the army at Nashville, Tenn., in June 1865, he was admitted to the Tennessee bar. He practised at Clarksville until the close of 1869. Early the following year he removed to Kansas, took up a claim in Wilson County, and combined with its management the practice of law in Fredonia, the county seat. It was not long until he added a third duty, when he purchased a newspaper plant and became editor of the *Fredonia Journal*. In 1875 he removed to Coffeyville, Montgomery County, and there edited the *Coffeyville Journal*. In 1874 he was elected to the Kansas state Senate and in 1880 was a Republican presidential elector.

In 1881 he became editor of the *Kansas Farmer*, at the same time doing some work for the *Topeka Daily Capital*. He transferred his family to Topeka and made that his home. The *Kansas Farmer* became the most powerful farm journal in the state, with non-partisan political interests though with a general tone friendly to the dominant Republican party. When the agricultural distress became acute in 1888 and 1889, Peffer's voice was insistent for rural organization; when the Farmer's Alliance entered the state, he welcomed it, and the *Farmer* became the official paper for one branch. In 1888 he published *Peffer's Tariff Manual*, a pocket-size volume for popular reading. He labored for farmer solidarity and urged remedial legislation, but toward third party activity he was at first hostile. When the creation of the People's party made the alternative unavoidable, he left the Republican party, but he stood as a conservative in the radical party. In 1890 his reputation as a farm leader, his Republican past, and his conservative position combined to win for him election to the United States Senate against more consistent and more radical third party men. In the Senate he was not in either major party organization and so played no important part in legislation. He introduced numerous bills and was a persistent, somewhat tedious speaker on a wide variety of subjects. His tall, well-rounded figure, his unusually long and wavy beard, which he combed constantly with his fingers as he talked, his heavy, dry, excessively statistical speeches, his absence of humor, and his deadly earnestness made him a conspicuous figure in the Senate, and one which in caricature came to typify Populism. For Populism that was unfortunate, since his position was frequently unorthodox and inconsistent. His confusion of thought on financial problems is obvious in his speeches; and his writings, especially his volume *The Farmer's Side* (1891), are undigested summaries of the arguments of various reforming groups, some of them self-contradictory.

He was out of sympathy with the tendency of Populism to unite with the anti-administration Democrats during Cleveland's second term. In 1896 he was not renominated by his own party. He took advantage of the new issue of imperialism to slip back to his first allegiance and published a book on the Philippines to prove his Republicanism, *Americanism and the Philippines* (1900). After the term in the Senate he undertook to prepare an index of discussions of the United States Congress. In 1902 Congress made provision for the purchase of the work as it should be completed but apparently it was never finished. He was the father of ten children, of whom eight lived to maturity. He died at the home of a daughter at Grenola, Kan.

[Brief manuscript autobiographical sketch, dated 1899, in Lib. of Kan. Hist. Soc.; *Hist. of Montgomery County, Kan.* (1903); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Kan. State Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. XVI (1925); *Topeka State Jour.*, Oct. 7, 1912.] R. C. M—r.

PEIRCE, BENJAMIN (Apr. 4, 1809–Oct. 6, 1880), mathematician and astronomer, was the third child and second son of Benjamin Peirce (1778–1831), for several years a member of the Massachusetts legislature, librarian of Harvard from 1826 to his death, who prepared the last printed catalogue of the Harvard library (3 vols. in 4, 1830–31) and left a manuscript history of the university to the period of the Revolution, subsequently edited by John Pickering and published in 1833 (A. C. Potter and C. K. Bolton,

The Librarians of Harvard College, 1667–1877, 1897, pp. 38–39). His mother was Lydia Ropes (Nichols) Peirce, first cousin of her husband and sister of the Rev. Ichabod Nichols, himself versed in mathematics. He was born at Salem, Mass., and was of the purest Puritan stock; on his father's side he was descended from John Pers or Peirce, a weaver of Norwich, Norfolk County, England, who had come to Watertown, Mass., by 1637, and the latter's son Robert who emigrated to America probably in 1634. While in his teens at the Salem Private Grammar School, through a classmate, Henry I. Bowditch [*q.v.*], young Peirce was brought into contact with the latter's father, Nathaniel Bowditch [*q.v.*]. Peirce's estimate of the importance of the acquaintance thus begun may be judged from the dedication of his great work on analytic mechanics, published more than thirty years later: "To the cherished and revered memory of my master in science, Nathaniel Bowditch, the father of American geometry." Peirce entered Harvard in 1825 and graduated in 1829; Oliver Wendell Holmes, James Freeman Clarke, and Benjamin R. Curtis were classmates. For the two years immediately after graduation Peirce was associated with George Bancroft at his noted Round Hill School, Northampton, Mass. Then for forty-nine years he was a member of the faculty at Harvard University, first as a tutor in mathematics in the college, in full charge of the mathematical work; for the nine years (1833–42) as university professor of astronomy and mathematics; and from 1842 till his death as Perkins professor of mathematics and astronomy.

Peirce's earliest mathematical work was in the solution of problems proposed in the *Mathematical Diary* (New York, 1825–32), and in revising and correcting Bowditch's translation, with commentary, of the first four volumes of Laplace's *Traité de Mécanique Céleste* (1829–39). In a paper of the last number of the *Mathematical Diary* he proved the important result that there is no odd perfect number with fewer than four distinct prime factors. During the next few years he published a series of textbooks which, while distinctly inferior to the best current in his time, were certainly stimulating. The plane and spherical trigonometries of 1835–36 were afterward elaborated into *An Elementary Treatise on Plane and Spherical Trigonometry, . . . particularly adapted to explaining the construction of Bowditch's Navigator and the Nautical Almanac* (1840; 3rd ed., with additions, 1845; other eds. or reprints, 1852, 1861). He compiled *An Elementary Treatise on Sound* (1836) based on

Peirce

J. F. W. Herschel's treatise in a volume (1830) of *Encyclopaedia Metropolitana,* and the original bibliography at the beginning was interesting and valuable. *An Elementary Treatise on Algebra* (1837) and *An Elementary Treatise on Plane and Solid Geometry* (1837), of both of which there were many later editions or reprints, were followed by a more advanced work, *An Elementary Treatise on Curves, Functions, and Forces,* vol. I (1841, new ed., 1852) *containing analytical geometry and differential calculus*; vol. II (1846) *containing calculus of imaginary quantities, residual calculus, and integral calculus,* noteworthy for conciseness of style and free use of operative symbols. The projected third volume of this work dealing with applications to analytical mechanics was never published, being doubtless superseded by his characteristic, very notable, and most extensive work, *A System of Analytic Mechanics* (1855), suitably expounded for those who had already achieved a good grounding in the subject. A "masterly" discussion of determinants and functional determinants (Thomas Muir, *The Theory of Determinants,* II, 1911, p. 251), in chapter ten, and numerous other features, were at the time new in English treatises. The general title-page of the work suggests that a much larger scheme of four volumes was in the author's mind. Along with his textbooks may be mentioned the periodical which Peirce started and edited, the *Cambridge Miscellany of Mathematics, Physics, and Astronomy* (April 1842–January 1843), his colleague, Joseph Lovering [*q.v.*], being associated with him as editor of three numbers. About half of the material consisted of problems and solutions, and half of brief articles.

He took an active part in the foundation of the Harvard Observatory, the occasion being afforded by the great comet of 1843. The work which first extended Peirce's reputation was his remarkably accurate computation of the general perturbations of Uranus and Neptune. "In his views of the discrepancy between the mean distance of Neptune as predicted by Leverrier, and as deduced from observation, he was less fortunate, although, when due consideration is given to Leverrier's conclusions, there was much plausibility in the position taken by Peirce" (Simon Newcomb, in *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Edinburgh,* June 5, 1882, vol. XI, 1882, p. 740; see also H. H. Turner, *Astronomical Discovery,* 1904; J. M. Peirce, in Benjamin Peirce's *Ideality in the Physical Sciences,* 1881, pp. 200–11; W. G. Adams, *The Scientific Papers of John Couch Adams,* I, 1896, pp. xxxiii, 57, 64). In 1849 the *American Nautical Almanac*

office was established by a congressional appropriation at Cambridge, where it could have the benefit of the technical knowledge of experts, and "especially of Professor Benjamin Peirce, who was recognized as the leading mathematician of America" (Simon Newcomb, *The Reminiscences of an Astronomer*, 1903, p. 63). Until 1867 he was consulting astronomer for the *Almanac* (after 1860, *Astronomical Almanac for the Use of Navigators*). By this time Europe had joined with America in taking cognizance of his achievements. In 1842 he became a member of the American Philosophical Society, in 1850 an associate of the Royal Astronomical Society, London, in 1858 a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, in 1860 an honorary fellow of the University of St. Vladimir at Kiev, Russia, in 1861 a corresponding member of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, in 1867 an honorary fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and a correspondent in the mathematics class of the Royal Society of Sciences at Göttingen. In 1847 he was one of a committee of five appointed by the American Academy of Arts and Sciences to draw up a "program for the organization of the Smithsonian Institution." He was director of the longitude determinations of the United States Coast Survey 1852–67, and superintendent of this Survey 1867–74, while continuing to serve as professor at Harvard. With reference to his appointment as superintendent, Charles W. Eliot wrote: "Those of us who had long known Professor Peirce heard of this action with amazement. We had never supposed that he had any business faculty whatever, or any liking for administration work. . . . Within a few months it appeared that Benjamin Peirce persuaded Congressmen and Congressional Committees to vote much more money to the Coast Survey than they had ever voted before" (*American Mathematical Monthly*, Jan. 1925, pp. 3–4). Although "the extension of the survey of the coast to a great geodetic system, stretching from ocean to ocean, . . . had been remotely contemplated by his predecessor," it was "first actually commenced by Professor Peirce, thus laying the foundation for a general map of the country entirely independent of detached local surveys" (J. E. Hilgard, *Report of the Superintendent of the U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey . . . June 1881*, 1883, p. 8). While superintendent, Peirce took personal charge of the American expedition to Sicily to observe the eclipse of the sun in December 1870; and for the transit of Venus in 1874 he is often said to have organized the two American expeditions (but see

Peirce

Simon Newcomb, *Reminiscences of an Astronomer*, pp. 160–70). Peirce continued as consulting geometer of the Survey from 1874 until his death. It was doubtless in connection with problems such as those of the Survey that he was led to formulate in 1852 and elaborate in 1878 what is widely known as "Peirce's criterion" (William Chauvenet, *A Manual of Spherical and Practical Astronomy*, 1863, II, 558; W. S. Jevons, *The Principles of Science*, 2 ed., 1877; H. M. Wilson, *Topographic, Trigonometric and Geodetic Surveying*, 1912). The object of the criterion was to solve a delicate and practically important problem of probabilities in connection with a series of observations. From the first there were critics of the criterion, and its fundamental fallacy was finally proved in 1920 (R. M. Stewart, in *Popular Astronomy*, Jan. 1920, pp. 2–3; see also J. L. Coolidge, *An Introduction to Mathematical Probability*, 1925, pp. 126–27).

In 1863 Peirce was one of the fifty incorporators of the National Academy of Sciences, one of the nine members of the committee of organization, and chairman of the mathematics and physics class. During the early years of the Academy's existence, Peirce presented a number of papers in a new field which developed into his *Linear Associative Algebra* (1870), of which one hundred "lithographed" copies were prepared through "labors of love" by persons engaged at the Coast Survey; a new edition, with addenda and notes by C. S. Peirce, in the *American Journal of Mathematics*, IV, 1881, was reprinted in 1882. The oft-quoted first sentence of the work is as follows: "Mathematics is the science which draws necessary conclusions." This was the most original and able mathematical contribution which Peirce made; it was "really epoch-making" (J. B. Shaw, *Synopsis of Linear Associative Algebra*, 1907, pp. 52–55, 101–06). He himself held it in high esteem. In the introduction he wrote: "This work has been the pleasantest mathematical effort of my life. In no other have I seemed to myself to have received so full a reward for my mental labor in the novelty and breadth of results." Charles S. Peirce [*q.v.*], who got out the second edition of his father's work, declared, "I had first put my father up to that investigation by persistent hammering upon the desirability of it" (*American Mathematical Monthly*, Dec. 1927, p. 526). A careful restudy of Peirce's monograph by H. E. Hawkes (*American Journal of Mathematics*, Jan. 1902, pp. 87–95; *Transactions of the American Mathematical Society*, July 1902, pp. 312–30) showed that in a very able manner Peirce had long anticipated work of the prominent Ger-

man mathematicians, Study and Scheffers. This was Peirce's last piece of notably creative work. His other volumes were *Tables of the Moon* (1853), *Tables of the Moon's Parallax* (1856), and the posthumous volume of lectures given at the Lowell and Peabody Institutes, *Ideality in the Physical Sciences* (1881). He was an associate editor of the first volume (1878) of the *American Journal of Mathematics*, founded by the Johns Hopkins University under the direction of J. J. Sylvester [*q.v.*]. About one quarter of the titles of Peirce's publications relate to topics of pure mathematics and three quarters to questions mainly in the fields of astronomy, geodesy, and mechanics. While he read before scientific societies many papers concerning his investigations, the printed reports of them are often mere abstracts. "His mind moved with great rapidity, and it was with difficulty that he brought himself to write out even the briefest record of its excursions" (*Nation*, Oct. 14, 1880, p. 268). The nature of parts of some papers fully printed, may be illustrated by a quotation of the concluding sentences from one of them, a paper of 1851, on Saturn's rings, read before the American Association for the Advancement of Science (of which he was president in 1853): "But in approaching the forbidden limits of human knowledge, it is becoming to tread with caution and circumspection. Man's speculations should be subdued from all rashness and extravagance in the immediate presence of the Creator. And a wise philosophy will beware lest it strengthen the arms of atheism, by venturing too boldly into so remote and obscure a field of speculation as that of the mode of creation which was adopted by the Divine Geometer" (*Astronomical Journal*, II, 1851, p. 19).

Though Peirce was the leading mathematician of America, almost up to the time of his death, he was probably in no wise comparable in scientific ability with many contemporary Europeans. But he was exceptional among American mathematicians, at universities of his time, in that the publications of Europeans were the basis of much of his teaching. In 1848, for example, various works he discussed included certain ones of Cauchy, Poisson, Laplace, Monge, Bessel, Gauss, Neumann, and Hamilton. It is interesting to speculate as to the possible publication harvest of Peirce if throughout his career he could constantly have met his mathematical peers, and if he had always had at hand a capable disciple to put his ideas in a form suitable for publication. Professor Coolidge was probably near the truth in writing, "Much more permanently important papers have been written by

Peirce

men who had only a fraction of his ability" (personal letter, 1933).

Peirce exerted a great influence on the progress of mathematical science in his own country. He was an ardent and enthusiastic friend, ever ready to encourage young men and to promote their work. He had an especial fondness for seeking out comparatively unknown men whose ability had been overlooked, as Newcomb has well remarked. As a teacher he has been termed "a failure," while he was at the same time "very inspiring and stimulating," and profoundly impressive. There was also a delightful abstraction about this absorbed mathematician which endeared him to his students, by whom he was affectionately known as "Benny." President Abbott Lawrence Lowell wrote in 1924: "I have never admired the intellect of any man as much as that of Benjamin Peirce. I took every course that he gave when I was in College, and whatever I have been able to do intellectually has been due to his teaching more than to anything else" (Archibald, *post*, p. 8). Among his pupils were Benjamin A. Gould, Asaph Hall (at the observatory), Simon Newcomb, G. W. Hill (in the *Nautical Almanac* office), William Watson, Charles W. Eliot, and W. E. Byerly. The fascination and magnetism of his personality were alike potent in the lecture-hall, or in a vast seething mass of people at a Jenny Lind concert, when he averted a panic (E. W. Emerson, *post*, p. 100).

He loved children and children loved him "because he was full of humor, with an abounding love of nonsense" (H. C. Lodge, *Early Memories*, 1913, p. 55). In his younger days he enjoyed participating in private theatricals. "As an actor he was apt to be too violent and impetuous; but he was always interesting. He had, indeed, a gift for dramatic expression which served him well in many incidents, both comical and tragical, of his maturer life" (Eliot in *American Mathematical Monthly*, Jan. 1925, p. 4). He was married, July 23, 1833, to Sarah Hunt Mills, daughter of Elijah Hunt Mills [*q.v.*], and had four sons and a daughter. His eldest son, James Mills Peirce [*q.v.*], was a mathematician and administrator at Harvard for half a century. His next son, Charles S. [*q.v.*], was a noted scientist and philosopher. His youngest son, Herbert Henry Davis (1849–1916), was a diplomat. A passport of 1860 describes Benjamin Peirce as of height 5 feet 7¾ inches, and with high forehead, hazel eyes, straight nose, regular mouth, round chin, brown hair, light complexion, and oval face. He was thick set, and wore a full beard and long hair. Two of his portraits are

owned by Harvard University; one was painted by J. A. Ames, and the other by Daniel Huntington.

[Besides references given above, the chief sources of printed information are: H. A. Newton, in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sciences*, vol. XVI, May 1880–June 1881 (1881), and, in slightly different form, in *Am. Jour. of Science*, Sept. 1881; *Benjamin Peirce, A Memorial Collection*, ed. by Moses King (1881); R. C. Archibald, *Benjamin Peirce, 1809–1880* (1925), with a full list of sources, a complete bibliography of Peirce's writings, and reminiscences by C. W. Eliot, A. L. Lowell, W. E. Byerly, and A. B. Chace; *A Hist. of the First Half-Century of the Nat. Acad. of Sciences 1863–1913* (1913); J. Ginsburg, "A Hitherto Unpublished Letter of Benjamin Peirce," in *Scripta Mathematica*, May 1934; T. J. J. See, in *Popular Astronomy*, Oct. 1895; E. W. Emerson, *The Early Years of the Saturday Club 1855–1870* (1918); Florian Cajori, *The Teaching and Hist. of Mathematics in the U. S.* (1890), pp. 133–147; A. P. Peabody, *Harvard Reminiscences* (1888), pp. 180–86; J. L. Coolidge, *Harvard Alumni Bull.*, Jan. 3, 1924, p. 374, and "Mathematics, 1870–1928," in S. E. Morison, Ed., *The Development of Harvard Univ. . . . 1869–1929* (1930); R. S. Rantoul and Henry Wheatland, in *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, vol. XVIII (1881); F. C. Peirce, *Peirce Genealogy* (1880); *Centennial Celebration of the U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, Apr. 5, 6, 1916* (1916); H. C. Lodge, *Early Memories* (1913); *The Harvard Book* (1875), I, 172–73. A considerable quantity of Peirce's manuscripts and correspondence was presented to the Am. Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1913. Many other letters of great value, and many unpublished photographs, are owned by his grandson, Benjamin P. Ellis of Cambridge, Mass.] R. C. A.

PEIRCE, BENJAMIN OSGOOD (Feb. 11, 1854–Jan. 14, 1914), mathematician and physicist, born in Beverly, Mass., was the only son of Benjamin Osgood and Mehitable Osgood (Seccomb) Peirce and a descendant of John Pers, a weaver of Norwich, Norfolk County, England, who emigrated to New England in 1637. For a time his father was professor of chemistry and natural philosophy in Mercer University at Macon, Ga. After an excellent preliminary training including Latin, Greek, and mathematics, young Peirce entered Harvard and graduated in the class of 1876 with highest honors in physics. During the years 1877–80 he was a Parker Fellow in Germany, and in 1879, after two years in Wiedemann's laboratory in Leipzig, he obtained the Ph.D. degree. During the following year he was at Berlin with Helmholtz, from whom he drew much inspiration. Returning to America he taught for a year at the Boston Latin School and was then made an instructor in mathematics at Harvard. In 1884 he was appointed an assistant professor of mathematics and physics, and in 1888 he became Hollis Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy. The course on the Newtonian potential function and Fourier series which he and Professor W. E. Byerly developed marked a new era in mathematical physics in American universities. The first edition of his *Elements of the Theory of the Newtonian Potential Function* was published in 1886, but the third edition, appearing in 1902, was more than trebled in size. His thirty-two-page *Short Table of Integrals* was issued as a pamphlet in 1889 and also bound in with the 1889 edition of Byerly's *Elements of the Integral Calculus* but after prodigious labor this was expanded to a book of 144 pages (1910). Again enlarged, it became the most valuable work of its kind for ordinary use.

Besides graduate courses in pure mathematics and mathematical physics, particularly the theory of electricity and magnetism and hydrodynamics, Peirce developed laboratory courses in electricity and magnetism, and threw himself vigorously into the prosecution of research which he kept up with unabated assiduity to the end of his life. The list of his fifty-six papers published during the years 1875–1915 is appended to the *Mathematical and Physical Papers, 1903–13, by Benjamin Osgood Peirce* (Cambridge, 1926). Apart from those on various parts of mathematical physics the experimental papers nearly all called for an unusual amount of mathematical theory. Perhaps the most notable are the researches on the thermal conductivity of stone and its variation of temperature, and his researches on magnetism, subjects of extreme difficulty. He was an editor of the *Physical Review*. Among the 150 leading physicists of the country in 1903 he was rated by his colleagues as nineteenth (*American Men of Science*, 5th ed., 1933, p. 1270). His affiliations with scientific groups were numerous. He was elected a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1884, of the American Association for the Advancement of Science in 1900, of the National Academy of Sciences in 1906, and of the American Philosophical Society in 1910. He was one of the founders of the American Physical Society and its president just before he died. Harvard conferred on him the degree of D.S. in 1912, at which time President Eliot cited him as a "man of science ignorant only of his own deserts." He was also a member of the American Mathematical Society, of the Circolo Matematico di Palermo, of the Astronomical and Astrophysical Society of America, and of the Société Française de Physique. Absolute self-effacement and devotion to duty were fundamentals of his character. His charm of personality and brilliant intellect drew to him a host of friends among students and colleagues. He was married in Edinburgh, Scotland, July 27, 1882, to Isabella Turnbull Landreth, daughter of the Rev. P. Landreth of Montrose and

Brechin, by whom he had two daughters. He died in Cambridge, Mass.

[Sources include: E. E. Hall, "Biog. Memoir of Benj. Osgood Peirce," *Nat. Acad. Sci. . . . Biog. Memoirs*, vol. VIII (1919); John Trowbridge, "Benj. Osgood Peirce, '76," *Harvard Grads.' Mag.*, Mar. 1914; A. G. Webster, "Benj. Osgood Peirce," *Science*, Feb. 20, 1914, reprinted in the *Nation*, Apr. 23, 1914; J. M. Cattell, ed., *Am. Men of Sci.* (2nd ed., 1910); F. C. Peirce, *Peirce Genealogy* (1880); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 14, 1914.]

R. C. A.

PEIRCE, BRADFORD KINNEY (Feb. 3, 1819–Apr. 19, 1889), Methodist Episcopal clergyman, social worker, editor, was born in Royalton, Vt., the son of Rev. Thomas C. Peirce and Sally, daughter of Bradford Kinne [*sic*]. The mother was a native of Preston, Conn. Bradford prepared for college at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, Mass., and graduated from Wesleyan University in 1841. The following year he was admitted on trial to the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was ordained deacon in 1844, and elder in 1846. In the meantime, he had held brief pastorates in eastern Massachusetts. In 1847, however, he assumed editorship of the *Sunday School Teacher* and of the *Sunday School Messenger*, both publications of the Massachusetts Sunday School Union. He also wrote several question books for use in promoting knowledge of the Bible. In 1850 he became agent for the American Sunday School Union. Although he passed on to other fields of activity, he never lost his interest in the religious education of the young and found time to write a few books for children which found a place in the Sunday school libraries of the period.

Turning to politics for a time, he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate in 1855 and 1856, and in the latter year he edited with Charles Hale *Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts Held in the Year 1788*. His interest in children led him to propose the establishment of the state industrial school at Lancaster, Mass., and he was appointed by the governor a member of the first board of trustees. Soon afterward he was made superintendent and chaplain, serving in these capacities from 1856 to 1862. After a brief pastorate at Watertown, Mass., he was appointed in 1863 chaplain of the House of Refuge, Randall's Island, N. Y., which position he held until 1872. During this period he wrote a valuable history of the institution, containing source material in the form of original documents, under the title *A Half Century with Juvenile Delinquents* (1869).

In 1872 Peirce succeeded Gilbert Haven [*q.v.*] as editor of *Zion's Herald*, a semi-official Methodist weekly, published in Boston, and one of the most influential papers of its kind in New England. For sixteen years he ably occupied the editorial chair, avoiding controversy whenever possible, but defending with vigor any good cause needing his support. He also became a preacher of wide repute, in great demand at dedications, conferences, preachers' meetings, and Sunday school assemblies. His home life was a happy one. On Aug. 5, 1841, he married Harriet W. Thompson of Middletown, Conn., and three of their four children survived him. He had a pleasing and attractive presence and was courtly and genial in manner. For fifteen years he was a member of the board of trustees of Boston University and for a time financial agent of the institution; for fourteen years he was a member of the Wellesley College board. He lived at Newton Center, Mass., and was actively interested in its schools and public library. Among his books not already cited, the following are worthy of mention: *The Eminent Dead, or the Triumphs of Faith in the Dying Hour* (1846), often reprinted; *Notes on the Acts of the Apostles* (1848), edited by D. P. Kidder; *Life in the Woods, or the Adventures of Audubon* (copr. 1863); *Trials of an Inventor; Life and Discoveries of Charles Goodyear* (1866); *The Word of God Opened* (1868).

[A. M. Hemenway, *Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, vol. IV (1882), pp. 727–28; *Alumni Record of Wesleyan Univ.* (1883); *Minutes of the Annual Conferences of the M. E. Church: Spring Conferences of 1890* (n.d.); *Official Minutes . . . New England Conference*, 1890; *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), Apr. 25, 1889; *Zion's Herald*, Feb. 6, Apr. 24, 1889; *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 20, 1889.]

S. G. A.

PEIRCE, CHARLES SANDERS (Sept. 10, 1839–Apr. 19, 1914), philosopher, logician, scientist, the founder of pragmatism, was born in Cambridge, Mass., the second son of Benjamin Peirce [*q.v.*] and Sarah Hunt (Mills) Peirce, daughter of Elijah Hunt Mills [*q.v.*]. He was a brother of James Mills Peirce [*q.v.*]. His father, the foremost American mathematician of his time, an inspiring and unconventional teacher, and a man of forceful character and wide interests, supervised the boy's education to such an extent that Charles could later say, "he educated me, and if I do anything it will be his work." However, Charles had learned to read and to write without the usual course of instruction. He had had independent recourse to encyclopedias and other works for information on out-of-the-way subjects. He showed an intense interest in puzzles, complicated and mathematical card tricks, chess problems, and code languages,

some of which he invented for the amusement of his playmates. At eight he began to study chemistry of his own accord, and at twelve set up his own chemical laboratory, experimenting with Liebig's bottles of quantitative analysis. At thirteen he had read and more or less mastered Whately's *Elements of Logic* (1826). His father trained him in the art of concentration. From time to time they would play rapid games of double dummy together, from ten in the evening until sunrise, the father sharply criticizing every error. In later years this training perhaps helped Charles, though ill and in pain, to write with undiminished power far into the night. His father also encouraged him to develop his power of sensuous discrimination, and later, having put himself under the tutelage of a *sommelier* at his own expense, Charles became a connoisseur of wines. The father's main efforts, however, were directed towards Charles's mathematical education. Rarely was any general principle or theorem disclosed to the son. Instead, the father would present him with problems, tables, or examples, and encouraged him to work out the principles for himself. Charles was also sent to local private schools and then to the Cambridge High School, where he was conspicuous for his declamations. After a term at E. S. Dixwell's school, where he was prepared for college, he entered Harvard in 1855. At college he again had the benefit of his father's instruction. About that time, they also began to have frequent discussions together, in which, pacing up and down the room, they would deal with problems in mathematics beyond even the purview of the elder brother, himself destined to become a mathematician. Charles was graduated from Harvard in 1859, one of the youngest in his class. But his scholastic record was poor. He was seventy-first out of ninety-one for the four years, and in the senior year ranked seventy-ninth. He was apparently too young and of too independent a mind to distinguish himself under the rigid Harvard system of those days.

His father wanted him to be a scientist. Peirce hesitated. Not only was he doubtful whether he should devote himself to a life with so few material benefits, but he was drawn to philosophy as well. At college he had already read Schiller's *Aesthetische Briefe,* and had been led to a study of Kant's *Kritik der Reinen Vernunft* which he knew "almost by heart." In July 1861, however, he joined the United States Coast Survey, with which he remained for thirty years, living wherever his investigations led him. About that time he also spent six months studying the technique of classification with Agassiz. In 1862 he

Peirce

received an M.A. degree from Harvard and the next year the degree of Sc.B. in chemistry, *summa cum laude,* the first of its kind. But the interest in philosophy persisted. In 1864–65 he lectured at Harvard on the philosophy of science, and as one of a select group which included Ralph Waldo Emerson, George Park Fisher, James Elliott Cabot, and John Fiske he gave the university lectures in philosophy, for 1869–70. The next year he was the university lecturer on logic. Meanwhile, from 1869 to 1872, he worked as an assistant at the Harvard Observatory and, from 1872 to 1875, there made the astronomical observations contained in *Photometric Researches* (1878), the only book of his published in his lifetime. It contains material still of value. In 1871 he was in temporary charge of the Coast Survey and the following year became an assistant there, holding the latter position until 1884. In 1873 he was made assistant computor for the nautical almanac and placed in charge of gravity investigations. Two years later, in 1875, he was sent abroad to make pendulum investigations, and to attend, as the first American delegate, the international geodetic conference. His report there that pendulum experiments were subject to a hitherto undetected inaccuracy aroused great discussion and much opposition. But he returned two years later, after the other delegates had had the opportunity to investigate his results, to receive a vote of approval of the congress. Plantamour and Cellérier have acknowledged their indebtedness to him, and his originality in pendulum work has been signalized by Helmert. In that year (1877) he was elected fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and a member of the National Academy of Science. He had charge of the weights and measures of the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey in 1884–85; was a member of the assay commission of 1888, sat on the international commission of weights and measures, and from 1884 to 1891 was retained as a special assistant in gravity research. But in 1891, either because his experiments had proved too costly or his operations too leisurely, or because of his dissatisfaction with the conduct of the Survey, he ceased to work for the government, and terminated his active scientific career. It was he who first attempted to use the wave length of a light ray as a standard unit of measure, a procedure which has since played an important rôle in modern metrology. Though inaccuracies have been reported, his scientific work has, for the most part, been lauded by competent men for its precision.

Peirce said that he had been brought up in a

laboratory, but he always called himself a logician. Originally led to a study of logic by his philosophic problems, he soon saw philosophy and other subjects almost entirely from a logical perspective. In 1847 George Boole, the founder of modern logic, published *The Mathematical Analysis of Logic*, to be followed in 1854 by his definitive work, *An Investigation of the Laws of Thought*. These works, destined to revolutionize the entire science of logic and free it from the thrall of the Aristotelian syllogism, were practically unnoticed in America until Peirce, in 1867, in a short but important paper read before the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (*Proceedings*, Mar. 12, 1867, vol. VII, 250–61; *Collected Papers*, vol. III), referred to Boole's work and made a number of vital and permanent improvements in the Boolean system. He proposed at that time to publish an original logical paper every month, but soon gave up the attempt because insufficient interest was shown in his published work. Nevertheless, for almost fifty years, from 1866 until the end of his life, while with the Survey and after he left it, he occupied himself with logic in all its branches. His technical papers of 1867 to 1885 established him as the greatest formal logician of his time, and the most important single force in the period from Boole to Ernst Schröder. These papers are difficult, inaccessible, scattered, and fragmentary, and their value might never have been known if it had not been that Schröder based a large portion of his *Vorlesungen über die Algebra der Logik* (3 vols., in 4, 1890–1905) on them, and called attention to the high character of Peirce's contributions. He radically modified, extended, and transformed the Boolean algebra, making it applicable to propositions, relations, probability, and arithmetic. Practically single-handed, following De Morgan, Peirce laid the foundations of the logic of relations, the instrument for the logical analysis of mathematics. He invented the copula of inclusion, the most important symbol in the logic of classes, two new logical algebras, two new systems of logical graphs, discovered the link between the logic of classes and the logic of propositions, was the first to give the fundamental principle for the logical development of mathematics, and made exceedingly important contributions to probability theory, induction, and the logic of scientific methodology. He completed an elaborate work on logic but could not get it published. It was too specialized for the publishers, who preferred elementary textbooks and perhaps the writings of a man in an academic chair. Many of his more important writings on logic, among which are his detailed papers on his new science of semiotics, he never published, and the final appreciation of his full strength and importance as a logician awaits the assimilation of the posthumous papers.

Benjamin Peirce, in a public address in the late sixties, said that he expected Charles to go beyond him in mathematics. In the early eighties, J. J. Sylvester, the great mathematician of the day, is reported to have said of Charles that he was "a far greater mathematician than his father." However, Charles published only a few papers on pure mathematics. His concern was with the more difficult and fascinating problem of its foundations. In 1867 in his paper, "Upon the Logic of Mathematics" (*Proceedings of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences*, Sept. 10, 1867, vol. VII, 402–12; Collected Papers, vol. III), he clearly anticipated the method for the derivation and definition of number employed in the epochal *Principia Mathematica* (3 vols., 1910–13) of A. N. Whitehead and Bertrand Russell. He edited with important notes and addenda (*Collected Papers*, vol. III) his father's *Linear Associative Algebra* (in *American Journal of Mathematics*, July, Sept. 1881), having originally, in the sixties, interested his father in that work. He showed, among other things, that every associative algebra can be represented by one whose elements are matrices. He also made a number of contributions, over a period of years, to the theory of aggregates and transfinite arithmetic, his work often anticipating or running parallel with the heralded work of Richard Dedekind and Georg Cantor. Many of his unpublished studies in such subjects as analysis situs were subsequently repeated by other and independent investigators. Had all his mathematical papers been published in his lifetime, he would have been a more important factor in the history of mathematics than he is today. His work on the logical and philosophical problems of mathematics remains, however, among the foremost in the field.

Pragmatism, Peirce's creation, had its origin in the discussions, in Cambridge, of a fortnightly "metaphysical club" founded in the seventies. Oliver Wendell Holmes, the jurist, John Fiske, and Francis E. Abbot were members. But more important for the history of pragmatism were Chauncey Wright [*q.v.*], a philosopher of power with whom Peirce had frequent heated but profitable discussions; William James [*q.v.*], Peirce's lifelong friend and benefactor, in whose honor he seems later to have adopted the middle name "Santiago" ("St. James" in Spanish);

and Nicholas St. John Green, a lawyer and follower of Bentham who had a tendency to interpret doctrines in terms of their effect upon social life. It had been Kant's emphasis on formal logic which drove Peirce to take up that subject, the history of which he studied with characteristic thoroughness. His interest in the history of logic, in turn, was largely responsible for his contact with the schoolmen. By 1871 he was converted to Duns Scotus' version of realism, a position which he held throughout his life. In the very paper in which Peirce first expounded his Scotistic realism and criticized the nominalism of Berkeley, he roughly outlined the pragmatic position (*North American Review,* Oct. 1871, pp. 449–72). The first definite statement of Peirce's or the pragmatic principle, as it is alternatively called, was not given, however, until 1878. It is contained in a paper, originally written in French in 1877 while he was on his way to the international geodetic conference, later translated by him into English, and published in the *Popular Science Monthly* in January 1878, under the title "How to Make Our Ideas Clear." It was the second of a series of six articles dealing mainly with problems in logic (Nov. 1877, Jan., Mar., Apr., June, Aug. 1878; *Collected Papers,* vol. V, book II; vol. II, book III, B; vol. VI, book I). Together with the first paper of that series which he translated into French, it was published in the *Revue Philosophique* (Dec. 1878, Jan. 1879). In that article he formulated, as the most important device for making ideas clear, the principle that we are to "Consider what effects, which might conceivably have practical bearings, we conceive the object of our conception to have. Then, our conception of these effects is the whole of our conception of the object" (*Popular Science Monthly,* Jan. 1878, p. 293; *Collected Papers,* vol. V, par. 402). This formula has been ridiculed for its awkward and somewhat bewildering repetition, but Peirce contended that he chose each word deliberately, wishing to emphasize that it was concerned with concepts and not with things and was a principle of method rather than a proposition in metaphysics. As usual, he was to receive no recognition for his work until another man called attention to it much later. In 1898 William James first publicly used the term "pragmatism" and acknowledged Peirce's priority in the creation of the doctrine and the name it bears. Peirce's pragmatism, however, is not the same as James's; it has more in common with the somewhat independently developed idealism of Josiah Royce and the later views of John Dewey. In fact, when James heard Peirce lecture on pragmatism in 1903 he confessed that he could not understand him. On the other hand, Peirce soon rebelled against the characteristic twists which James and others gave to pragmatism. In 1905 he coined the term "pragmaticism," which was "ugly enough to be safe from kidnappers" (*Monist,* Apr. 1905, p. 166; *Collected Papers,* V, par. 414), to characterize his own views; these included much (such as the idea of an Absolute and a belief in universals) that the other pragmatists were disposed to discard. For his version of the doctrine he had but few supporters, and most of these were not in America.

Peirce did share, though, many of the views characteristic of the pragmatic school, developing them in his own, independent fashion. He was a firm believer in the dependence of logic on ethics, argued as early as 1868 against individualism and egoism, and developed social theories of reality and logic. His most important published philosophical contributions, however, are those that embody his cosmology. They are contained in a series of five articles written for the *Monist* (Jan. 1891–Jan. 1893; *Collected Papers,* vol. VI). There he vigorously opposed the mechanical philosophy, defended the reality of absolute chance and the principle of continuity, attempting to solve the hallowed problem of the relation of mind and body, to explain the origin of law, to account for the impossibility of exactly verifying the laws of nature, and to develop his theory of an evolutionary universe. Dewey, James, and Paul Carus, among others, were quick to recognize their importance. The latter, who was the editor of the *Monist,* engaged Peirce in controversy, providing him with some of the space necessary for the further clarification of his position. Though Peirce's tychism, or theory of absolute chance, received more consideration and favorable attention, it was his synechism, or doctrine of continuity, which he considered his real contribution to philosophy, holding it to be, however, a regulative principle rather than an ultimate absolute metaphysical doctrine. His characteristic metaphysical views do not seem to have been wholeheartedly accepted by any established philosopher during his lifetime, though James, Royce, and Dewey have unmistakably acknowledged his influence.

Peirce was not given the opportunity to teach for more than eight years during his entire life. His longest academic connection was with the Johns Hopkins University where he was a lecturer on logic from 1879 to 1884. Apart from his early Harvard University lectures of 1864, 1869, and 1870, he lectured three times before the Lowell Institute: in 1866 on logic, in 1892 on

the history of science, and in 1903 on logic. The only other official or semi-official contact he seems to have had with students was through a lecture on number at Bryn Mawr in 1896, three or four lectures on "detached topics" delivered at Mrs. Ole Bull's in Cambridge in 1898, his seven lectures on pragmatism at Harvard in 1903, and two lectures on scientific method before the philosophy club at Harvard in 1907. Yet he was an inspiring teacher. Too advanced perhaps for the ordinary student, he was a vital formative factor in the lives of the more progressive ones, who remembered him later with affection and reverence. He treated them as intellectual equals and impressed them as having a profound knowledge of his subject. Of his small class in logic at Johns Hopkins, four, one of whom was Christine Ladd-Franklin [*q.v.*], made lasting contributions to the subject in a book which he edited and to which he contributed (*Studies in Logic. By Members of the Johns Hopkins University,* 1883). His love of precision made it impossible for him to make a popular appeal, and he had no capacity for making himself clear to large numbers. This failing would perhaps have been considerably overcome if he had had the opportunity to come into more contact with students who challenged his statements and demanded explications. There is some justice in James's remark that Peirce's lectures were "flashes of brilliant light relieved against Cimmerian darkness" (*Pragmatism,* 1907, p. 5), though the lectures on pragmatism, which this phrase was supposed to characterize, are lucid when placed against the background of his entire system. He would buttress his ideas with a technical vocabulary, creating odd new terms in his attempt to articulate new ideas, trying to cover vast fields in limited space. He did at times show a sudden gift for clear expression, but he lacked the ability to know where further explanation was necessary.

He was eager to teach, but personal difficulties barred his way. He had described himself when a senior at college as being vain, snobbish, uncivil, reckless, lazy, and ill-tempered. He certainly was not lazy out of college. But he was always somewhat proud of his ancestry and connections, overbearing towards those who stood in his way, indifferent to the consequences of his acts, quick to take affront, highly emotional, easily duped, and with, as he puts it, "a reputation for not finding things." He was irregular in his hours, forgetful of his appointments, and, later, careless of his personal appearance. This dark-bearded man of stocky build and medium height with a short neck and bright dark eyes could, however, be charming at social gatherings, recite with skill and converse delightfully; he was singularly free from academic jealousy, and he could work twenty hours at a stretch on a subject for which he had for years failed to find a publisher. A "queer being" James called him. Peirce himself felt there was something peculiar in his inheritance and put emphasis on the fact that he was left-handed. He could, however, write with both hands—in fact, he was capable of writing a question with one hand and the answer simultaneously with the other. In his years of early promise his peculiar traits were certainly no serious handicap to an academic career. But not only, as he regretted, had his father neglected to teach him moral self-control, so that he later "suffered unspeakably," but he had domestic difficulties as well. On Oct. 16, 1862, when twenty-three years old, he had married Harriet Melusina Fay, three years his senior, a grand-daughter of Bishop John Henry Hopkins [*q.v.*]. She joined him in his early scientific work, was respected in Cambridge circles, and afterward distinguished herself as an organizer and writer. He divorced her on Apr. 24, 1883, in Baltimore, alleging she had deserted him in October 1876. Shortly afterward, he writes that he married Juliette Froissy of Nancy, France, with whom he lived for the rest of his life and who survived him. His difficulties with his first wife seem to have been an important factor in his loss of academic standing and the partial estrangement of his friends and relatives.

Having inherited some money, he retired in 1887, when only forty-eight years old, to "the wildest county of the Northern States" near Milford, Pa. There he secured a house and tract of land, and fortressed by his large and select library of scientific and philosophic works, many of which were of considerable value, he devoted himself to his writings on logic and philosophy. At the same time he wrote all the definitions on logic, metaphysics, mathematics, mechanics, astronomy, astrology, weights, measures, and universities for the *Century Dictionary* (6 vols., 1889–91), and a gradually increasing number of book reviews on a wide range of topics for the *Nation.* He records that he wrote about 2,000 words a day. This was done with care and in a clear hand. Having a remarkable capacity for self-criticism, on which he prided himself, he would work over his copy, rewriting it as often as a dozen times, until it was as accurate and as precisely worded as he could make it. More often than not, the final manuscript, which might have involved weeks of work, would not be published, but together with all the preceding drafts

and miscellaneous scraps incidental to its writing would be allowed to remain on his tables. Immediately, with the same enthusiasm, he would begin another formulation or start on a new topic, to be subjected to the same treatment. He has characterized himself as having the persistency of a wasp in a bottle.

As a young man he had little control over his money; he always remained extravagant. By his retirement from the Survey, he had cut off his government salary of $3,000, and had to live on what he could glean from his occasional lectures, sales of his books, translations, private tutoring, collaboration on dictionaries, work as a consultant, and from private donations. In his home he built an attic where he could work undisturbed or, by pulling up the ladder, escape from his creditors. Though he had been employed by J. M. Baldwin in 1901 to write most of the articles on logic for the *Dictionary of Philosophy and Psychology* (3 vols. in 4, 1901–05), by 1902 he was in debt and on the verge of poverty, doing his own chores and dissipating his energies in small tasks in order to obtain immediate funds. He then applied to the Carnegie Fund for aid in getting his works published. Nine years before he had planned a twelve-volume work on philosophy, which he had to give up, despite many indorsements from leading persons, for lack of subscribers. Now he proposed to submit thirty-six memoirs, "each complete in itself, forming a unitary system of logic in all its parts." These memoirs were to be submitted one at a time and to be paid for when and as approved. Though his proposed memoirs would have dealt with vital issues, and though his application was accompanied by eulogistic letters from the greatest men of the time, his application was rejected, the official reason being that logic was outside the scope of the fund, not being a "natural science." By 1906 he had ceased to review for the *Nation* and had lost most of his other sources of income; the next year he was practically penniless. Under James a small fund, barely enough to keep Peirce and his wife alive, was secured for him through appeals to old friends and appreciative students. He published for three years—papers on logic, pragmatism, epistemology, and religion which are among the best he ever wrote. By 1909 he was a very ill man of seventy, compelled to take a grain of morphine daily to stave off the pain. With undiminished persistency, forming his letters to judge from the tremulous, painstaking script with great difficulty, he kept on writing—or rather rewriting, for by that time he had finally ceased to be original. Five years later he died

Peirce

of cancer, a frustrated, isolated man, still working on his logic, without a publisher, with scarcely a disciple, unknown to the public at large.

After his death his manuscripts were bought from his wife by the Harvard philosophy department (for their publication, see bibliography). There are hundreds of them, without dates, with leaves missing, unpaginated and disordered; there are duplicates and fragments, repetitions and restatements. His interests were not restricted to logic, pragmatism, metaphysics, mathematics, geodesy, religion, astronomy, and chemistry. He also wrote on psychology, early English and classical Greek pronunciation, psychical research, criminology, the history of science, ancient history, Egyptology, and Napoleon, prepared a thesaurus and an editor's manual, and did translations from Latin and German. James called Peirce the most original thinker of their generation; Peirce placed himself somewhere near the rank of Leibniz. This much is now certain; he is the most original and versatile of America's philosophers and America's greatest logician.

[For years futile attempts were made to organize Peirce's papers; he had himself said that he could not have put them together. In 1927, however, Charles Hartshorne and Paul Weiss thought they saw a systematic connection between most of them, and prepared a ten-volume selection, now in process of publication as *Collected Papers of Charles Sanders Peirce* (5 vols., 1931–34). The foregoing sketch is based mainly on these papers, autobiographical notes, and letters and reminiscences of his relatives, friends, and pupils. See also R. S. Rantoul, *Essex Institute Hist. Colls.*, XVIII (1881), 161–76; articles in *Jour. of Philosophy, Psychology and Scientific Methods*, Dec. 21, 1916, by Josiah Royce, Fergus Kernan, John Dewey, Christine Ladd-Franklin, Joseph Jastrow, and M. R. Cohen; *Chance, Love and Logic* (1923), ed. by M. R. Cohen, containing some of Peirce's published philosophical papers, an introduction, and an almost complete bibliography; F. C. Russell, "In Memoriam Charles S. Peirce," *Monist*, July 1914; E. W. Davis, "Charles Peirce at Johns Hopkins," *Mid-West Quart.*, Oct. 1914; *Harvard College. Records of the Class of 1859* (1896); F. C. Peirce, *Peirce Genealogy* (1880); obituary in *Boston Evening Transcript*, Apr. 21, 1914.] P. W.

PEIRCE, CYRUS (Aug. 15, 1790–Apr. 5, 1860), educator, was born in Waltham, Mass., the son of Isaac and Hannah (Mason) Peirce and a descendant of John Pers who was in Watertown in 1637. His father, one of the Waltham minute-men, took part in the engagements at Concord, Lexington, and Bunker Hill. During his early days in the district school, Peirce was a student of exceptional promise. His parents, inspired by his ambition and accomplishments, sent him to the Framingham Academy to prepare for college. Later he was placed with Dr. Stearns, the scholarly pastor of Lincoln, for a term of private instruction. At sixteen he entered Harvard College, graduating with honors

in 1810. His winter-term vacations from college were spent as teacher in the district school at West Newton. Immediately after graduation he took charge of a private school at Nantucket. After completing two years he resigned and entered the Harvard Divinity School, from which he graduated in 1815. He was persuaded, however, to return to his former place of teaching in Nantucket. On Apr. 1, 1816, he married one of his students, Harriet, daughter of William and Deborah (Pinkham) Coffin. He resigned in 1818 to enter the ministry and was ordained on May 19, 1819, becoming pastor of the Congregational Church in North Reading, Mass.

As a teacher he had been eminently successful; in the pulpit he preached a strict conformity in matters of belief and personal conduct that made him rather unpopular. While in Reading, he espoused the cause of temperance and attracted favorable attention by his sermons and occasional discourses on the subject. After eight years of faithful service he resigned from his church, May 19, 1827, and withdrew from the ministry, finally convinced that his talents could find more effective expression in the schoolroom. In the summer of 1827 he removed to North Andover, where he conducted a school for four years in partnership with Simeon Putnam. Then, after repeated invitations from former friends and patrons, he returned to Nantucket. While engaged here in the management of his private school, he became interested in the condition of the local public schools. At the request of the school committee, he outlined a system which provided for a properly related series of public schools, including the primary, intermediate, grammar, and high school. In 1837, when the new scheme was ready to be launched, Peirce was prevailed upon to relinquish his private school and accept the position of principal of the Nantucket High School. His success there attracted the attention of Horace Mann, secretary of the Massachusetts state board of education, who visited Nantucket for the purpose of observing the results of his reforms.

When the first state normal school was established at Lexington, Mass., in 1839, the state board unanimously elected Peirce principal. He entered upon his new duties, July 3, 1839. The institution opened with three pupils, but within three years the enrolment had increased to a satisfactory number. Peirce realized that it devolved upon him to prove the value of the normal school and gave himself unsparingly to his pioneer task. From the beginning he strove to make his pupils masters of the subjects taught in the schools, insisting that this was fundamental to all good teaching. In the "model department," a school composed of children of the neighborhood, his normal pupils engaged in practice teaching under his supervision, thereby testing for themselves the principles in which he had instructed them. As a result of his labors he was obliged to resign, in 1842, to seek recuperation. After spending two years at his former residence in Nantucket, he was persuaded to resume his position. The school, meantime, had been moved to West Newton. Here he remained until April 1849, when ill health again forced him to resign. Fortunately, at this time, he was offered an opportunity to travel: the American Peace Society appointed him delegate to the World's Peace Congress, which convened at Paris, Aug. 22, 1849. Upon his return, in 1850, he became an instructor in an academy conducted by Nathaniel T. Allan, in West Newton. He continued in this position until his death.

[S. J. May, *Memoir of Cyrus Peirce* (1857), reprinted in the *Am. Jour. Educ.*, Dec. 1857; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1860; the *Mass. Teacher*, May 1860; M. S. Lamson, *Records of the First Class of the First State Normal School in America* (1903); A. O. Norton, ed., *The First State Normal School in America: The Journs. of Cyrus Peirce and Mary Swift* (1926); F. C. Peirce, *Peirce Geneal.* (1880); *Vital Records of Waltham, Mass.* (1904); *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 7, 1860.]

R. F. S.

PEIRCE, HENRY AUGUSTUS (Dec. 15, 1808–July 29, 1885), merchant and diplomat, son of Joseph Hardy and Frances Temple (Cordis) Peirce was born in Dorchester, Mass., the eleventh child in a family of thirteen. A descendant of Thomas Peirce who settled at Charlestown in 1634, he numbered among his ancestors Gen. Joseph Warren. After a childhood marked by delicate health, he left school at the age of fourteen to assist in the office of his father, who was clerk of the Boston municipal court. There he learned the rudiments of business, but a desire for travel, nourished by wide reading, grew so strong that in 1824 he shipped before the mast for a voyage to the North-West Coast on the brig *Griffon*, of which his brother was captain. They reached Honolulu after five months, and there Henry was promoted to ship's clerk, in charge of stores and trade goods. For more than three years they cruised between Alaska and Mexico, trading for hides and furs with Indians and Spaniards. Returning to Honolulu in 1828, Henry became a clerk in the employ of James Hunnewell [*q.v.*], a prosperous merchant, whose confidence he so completely gained that two years later the youth of twenty-two was taken into partnership and left with a capital of $20,000 to manage the local business of bartering New-England goods for sandalwood and furs when

the senior member went to Boston. In 1833 Hunnewell withdrew from the firm. During the next two years Peirce opened a triangular trade with China and Siberia, and in 1836 took as partner Charles Brewer [*q.v.*], whom he left in charge at Honolulu when he set sail for Boston in February of that year. Early in the autumn of 1837 he was again in the Pacific with an armed brig which he finally sold at Valparaiso, whence he crossed the continent to Buenos Aires, traveling mostly on horseback. Sailing thence to Boston, he married Susan, daughter of Joseph Thompson, on July 3, 1838. In the following April he sailed for Hawaii as part-owner and master of a schooner and spent the next two years in trading along the Mexican and Californian coasts. In 1842 he sold a vessel and cargo at Mazatlan in Mexico, went overland to Vera Cruz, and sailed thence to the United States.

Retiring from the firm in 1843 with $100,000, Peirce remained in Boston and engaged extensively in the shipping business. At the height of the gold rush in 1849 he took a vessel to San Francisco, where the crew deserted to a man, but he managed to return by way of Hawaii and Canton, arriving in April 1850. For a number of years he was a prominent merchant and shipowner, as well as Hawaiian consul for New England. On the outbreak of the Civil War he contributed $50,000 to equip Massachusetts volunteers and was active in recruiting, but during the war he lost most of his large merchant fleet through the depredations of Confederate privateers. Relatively poor, he invested in 1866 in a Mississippi cotton plantation, which failed badly as a result of floods and bad weather. By selling his Beacon Street mansion he paid all his debts and lived in retirement until appointed in 1869 as minister to the Hawaiian Kingdom. He was responsible for calling in American marines when riots occurred on the election of King Kalakaua in February 1874, and accompanied the latter during the following winter to the United States on a visit which facilitated the conclusion of the reciprocity treaty of 1876. On resigning from his post in October 1877, he was given the order of Grand Commander of Kamehameha in recognition of his services to Hawaii. Illness brought him back to Honolulu in a few months, and on Mar. 1, 1878, he was appointed Hawaiian minister for foreign affairs, a portfolio he held until July, when a quarrel between king and legislature forced his resignation. After a brief visit to Boston he settled in San Francisco, where he died. Enterprising and honorable in business, he lost a considerable fortune through speculation and war. As merchant and diplomat, he believed in American expansion not only to California but also to Hawaii and did all in his power to aid it.

[See: *Biog. of Henry Augustus Peirce* (1880), prepared from a manuscript autobiography; Josephine Sullivan, *A Hist. of C. Brewer and Company, Ltd.* (1926); E. W. West, *The Peirce Family Record* (1894); the *Morning Call* (San Francisco), July 31, 1885. Many of Peirce's dispatches as minister are printed in *House Executive Document 1*, 53 Cong., 3 Sess., pt. 1, App. II.] W. L. W., Jr.

PEIRCE, JAMES MILLS (May 1, 1834–Mar. 21, 1906), educator and mathematician, born at Cambridge, Mass., was the eldest son of Benjamin Peirce [*q.v.*] and Sarah Hunt (Mills) Peirce, brother of Charles S. Peirce [*q.v.*], and grandson of Harvard's librarian and historian Benjamin Peirce. He received the degree of B.A. from Harvard in 1853. After a year in the law school, he was a tutor in mathematics in Harvard College, 1854–58. In 1857, while still a tutor, he entered the Divinity School where he graduated in 1859. During the next two years he preached in Unitarian churches in New Bedford, Mass., and in Charleston, S. C., but he then gave up the ministry and returned as an assistant professor of mathematics to Harvard where he remained in the service of the university until his death. In 1869 he became university professor of mathematics and in 1885 the Perkins Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy. He served as secretary of the Academic Council from its establishment in 1872 until 1889, as dean of the graduate school from its foundation in 1890 until 1895, and as dean of the faculty of arts and sciences from 1895 until 1898. He was one of the pioneers in introducing and expanding the elective system in the College, and during the long administration of his classmate President Eliot he worked shoulder to shoulder with him in fostering graduate study in the university.

In mathematics his chief fields of interest were quaternions, linear associative algebra, and higher plane curves, and for many years he gave popular courses in these subjects. His lectures were exceptionally polished and clear. He was deeply interested in his students, "patient and helpful, . . . understanding and sympathizing with their tastes, their aspirations, and their struggles, as if he were still one of them." His slight published output included: *A Text Book of Analytic Geometry on the Basis of Professor Peirce's Treatise* (Cambridge, 1857), on which Charles William Eliot was an active collaborator; *Introduction to Analytic Geometry* (Cambridge, 1869); *Three and Four Place Tables of Logarithmic and Trigonometric Functions* (Boston, 1871); an article on "Quaternions," in *Johnson's New Universal Cyclopædia* (New

York, vol. III, 1877); a memoir in the *Transactions of the American Mathematical Society* (October 1904); articles in the *Monthly Religious Magazine* (1856), *Harvard University Library Bulletin* (1878–79), *Harvard Register* (1881), and various reports to the President as an administrative officer. He edited with notes his father's Lowell Lectures under the title: *Ideality in the Physical Sciences* (Boston, 1881). He was a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

His interests and gifts were varied. Widely read in literature, he was in particular a lifelong student of the plays of Shakespeare and an enthusiastic admirer of the work of Shelley. He was fond of travel, a lover of the best in art, and a devotee of music; but the stage and whist were his passions. He saw most of the best actors and plays for half a century, and he himself was no ordinary dramatic reader. He was never married. His colleague and intimate friend, Professor Byerly, has made the following characterization: "Careful in dress, dignified in bearing, scrupulously polite to everyone, courteous and kindly, he will be remembered . . . for his friendly greeting, his earnest speech, at once measured and impetuous, his quick indignation at any suggestion of injustice, and his scorn of everything narrow or crooked or mean. . . . His ready interest in everything human, and his keen enjoyment of life made him the most charming of companions." As in the case of his father he died in the seventy-second year of his life and in the fiftieth of his service to the university.

[The chief sources of information concerning Professor Peirce are the following: J. K. Whittemore, *Science*, July 13, 1906; *Report of the Harvard Class of 1853, 1849–1913* (1913); W. E. Byerly and T. S. Perry, *Harvard Grads.' Mag.*, June 1906, excellent portrait; A. S. Hill, *Colonial Soc. of Mass. Pubs.*, vol. X (1907); W. E. Byerly, *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, vol. LIX (1925); C. S. Peirce, *Am. Math. Monthly*, Dec. 1927.] R. C. A.

PEIRCE, WILLIAM (*c.* 1590–1641), shipmaster and compiler of the first almanac in English America, was probably born in England about the year 1590. His name first appears in the colonial records in 1623, his ship, the *Paragon*, having been wrecked in February of that year. In the summer of 1623 he was given command of the *Anne*. Bradford mentions his coming to Plymouth in 1625 in company with Edward Winslow on one of the latter's return trips to America. During the next four years Peirce made constant trips between New England, Virginia, and England conveying emigrants and earning the reputation of having made the largest number of such voyages of his day. He was "for a long period the most noted sail-master

that came into the New England waters" (Roden, *post*, p. 16). In May 1629 he took over the command of the *Mayflower*, described as "of Yarmouth," which was possibly the *Mayflower* of earlier fame.

Peirce was in Virginia at Christmas 1632 on which date he wrote to Boston describing conditions in the southern colony (Bradford, *post*, p. 365). It appears that a short time before that date he was shipwrecked near Feake Isle off the Virginia shore, where presumably he lost the ship *Lyon*. Early in 1633 we find him in command of the *Desire*. During 1634 he explored the island of Nantucket and the shores of Narragansett Bay. On Sept. 3, 1635, he was chosen by the General Court commissioner of military affairs of Massachusetts Bay Colony but served only six months, when he was replaced by Henry Vane. In May 1637 he was chosen, with others, to start a fishery at Cape Ann and the same year was granted two hundred acres of land. At the close of the Pequot War he was sent to the West Indies with a group of Indians, who were sold as slaves. He returned with "cotton, tobacco, and negroes." These were probably the first negroes brought to New England. In 1641 he set out from New England with a party of colonists for Providence in the Caribbean. He found the colony in the possession of the Spanish, who fired upon the ship. Peirce was struck by a bullet and died shortly afterward.

Peirce compiled the first almanac in English America, *An Almanac for the year of our Lord, 1639. Calculated for New England, By Mr. William Pierce, Mariner.* It was a small broadside, printed at Cambridge by Stephen Day. Winthrop describes Peirce as "a godly man and most expert mariner." He also gives a graphic account of his death. By his wife, Jane, Peirce had three children.

[Sources include: *Winthrop's Jour.* (2 vols., 1908), ed. by J. K. Hosmer; *Bradford's Hist. "Of Plimoth Plantation"* (Boston, 1899), printed by order of the General Court of Mass.; R. F. Roden, *The Cambridge Press, 1638–92* (1905); Chas. Evans, *Am. Bibliog.*, vol. I (1903); *Records of the Gov. and Company of the Mass. Bay*, vol. I (1853); E. E. Hale, Jr., ed., "Note-Book Kept by Thos. Lechford, Esq., Lawyer in Boston . . . June 27, 1638, to July 29, 1641," *Trans. and Colls. of the Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, vol. VII (1885); A. P. Newton, *The Colonizing Activities of the English Puritans* (1914); F. C. Pierce, *Pierce Geneal. No. IV* (1889). The date of Peirce's death is uncertain. Winthrop records the event under date of June 21, 1641.] E. L. W. H.

PEIXOTTO, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (Nov. 13, 1834–Sept. 18, 1890), diplomat, publicist, journalist, lawyer, was born in New York City, a son of Daniel L. M. Peixotto and Rachel Seixas. His father was a physician, for some time president of the New York Medical Society.

After the death of his father, the thirteen-year-old boy went to Cleveland, Ohio, where the elder Peixotto had at one time served as president of Willoughly Medical College. He eventually became one of the editors of the *Cleveland Plain Dealer,* and a strong supporter of Stephen A. Douglas. At an early age he became deeply interested in the Independent Order B'nai B'rith, a national Jewish fraternal organization. He was elected grand master of the order in 1863, serving till 1866, and was active in founding the Cleveland Orphan Home connected with it. During the Civil War he served for a time with the de Villiers Zouaves in an Ohio infantry regiment. In 1867 he moved to San Francisco. He was gaining recognition there as a lawyer, when in June 1870 he was appointed by President Grant United States consul to Bucharest. The appointment was made in the hope that the alarming persecutions of the Jews in Rumania might be abated. Thus Peixotto's rôle was described in a personal letter handed to him by President Grant just before his departure for his post, which concluded with the words: "Mr. Peixotto has undertaken the duties of his present office more as a missionary work for the benefit of the people he represents, than for any benefit to accrue to himself. . . . The United States, knowing no distinction of her own citizens on account of religion or nativity, naturally believes in a civilization the world over which will secure the same universal laws." (See Kohler and Wolf, *post,* p. 13.)

Both through official channels and in a German newspaper which he founded at Bucharest, Peixotto denounced Rumanian anti-Semitism and aroused public opinion against Rumanian persecution of the Jews. He induced the Rumanian Jews to undertake the important innovation of organizing modern schools for instruction in the Rumanian language and in other modern, as well as Jewish, subjects. During the six years of his consulship, the anti-Semitic movement there was greatly weakened. Largely as a result of his efforts, followed up by denouncements of Rumanian atrocities in Congress and in the parliaments of Great Britain, France, Germany, and Austria-Hungary, important religious minority protective clauses were inserted in the Treaty of Berlin of 1878. Returning to the United States in 1876, Peixotto took an active part in the presidential campaign of that year. In 1877 he was appointed United States consul to Lyons, France, where he rendered valuable service to American commerce. After his return to the United States, he founded in 1886 *The Menorah, A Monthly Magazine,* an important Jewish periodical, which he edited up to the time of his death. It was the only English Jewish monthly in existence for many years. Peixotto was married, in 1858, to Hannah Strauss of Louisville, Ky.

[Sources include: *Jewish Encyc.*; M. J. Kohler and Simon Wolf, *Jewish Disabilities in the Balkan States: Am. Contributions toward Their Removal* (1916); Isaac Markens, *The Hebrews in America* (1888); M. J. Kohler, "Educ. Reforms in Europe in Their Relation to Jewish Emancipation," *Am. Jewish Hist. Soc. Pubs.,* vol. XXVIII (1922); Luigi Luzzatti, *God in Freedom* (1930); I. S. Isaacs, "Benj. F. Peixotto," in A. C. Rogers, *Our Representatives Abroad* (2nd ed., 1876); Adolf Stern, *Denkrede über Benj. F. Peixotto* (Bucharest, 1891). Peixotto's story of the Rumanian mission begins in the first volume of *The Menorah* and ends abruptly in May 1888. Obituaries of him appear in *The Menorah,* Oct. 1890, and in the *N. Y. Tribune,* Sept. 19, 1890. Information as to certain facts was supplied for this sketch by Peixotto's son, George Peixotto.] M. J. K.

PELHAM, HENRY (Feb. 14, 1748/49–1806), painter, engraver, cartographer, was born at Boston where his father, Peter Pelham [*q.v.*], limner, engraver, and schoolmaster, had married Mary (Singleton) Copley, widow of Richard Copley and mother of John Singleton Copley [*q.v.*]. His father died in 1751, and Henry witnessed in childhood the efforts of his mother at her little tobacco shop to keep the family together until her gifted son Copley brought prosperity to them all through his portrait painting. The home was in Lindall Street, where Exchange Place and Congress Street now meet. Thence Henry attended the Boston Latin School. Drawing and painting he is assumed to have studied with his half-brother. It was a likeness of Henry Pelham, then aged ten or eleven, which with the title "The Boy with the Squirrel" was exhibited at London in 1766 and brought Copley his first fame abroad.

Henry Pelham's many letters reveal a naïve, boyish young man, devoted to his mother and half-brother, an efficient assistant to the latter in practical affairs. He himself painted miniatures at this time, several of which are preserved. They reveal admirable workmanship. A much more violent Loyalist than Copley, he expressed himself vigorously against his neighbors whom he held misguided and rebellious. In the winter of 1775, while making a journey on horseback to Philadelphia, he was mobbed at Springfield, Mass., as one of "a damn'd pack of Torys." His sketch of the redoubts on Bunker Hill is reproduced with the Copley-Pelham letters (*post,* p. 327). His "Plan of Boston" was engraved in aquatint at London in 1777. No historian of the American Revolution can ignore his illuminating letters.

With other Loyalists Pelham left Boston in

August 1776. Arrived at London, where the Copleys were settled, he supported himself by teaching drawing, perspective, geography, and astronomy. In 1777 he contributed to the Royal Academy "The Finding of Moses," which was engraved by W. Ward in 1787 (*Bryan's Dictionary of Painters and Engravers*, IV, 1904, p. 87). In the following year he exhibited some enamels and miniatures. Having married Catherine Butler, daughter of William Butler of Castle Crine, County Clare, Ireland, Pelham went to Ireland. His wife, however, died while bearing twin sons, Peter and William, and the father returned with them to London. He and Copley shared in the estate of their mother, who died at Boston Apr. 29, 1789. Soon after this Pelham was named agent for Lord Lansdowne's Irish estates, a work which he followed with energy and ability. He was a civil engineer and cartographer, and his county and baronial maps are important documents of Irish history. He was drowned from a boat while superintending the erection of a martello tower in the River Kenmare.

[For the best account of Pelham see D. R. Slade, "Henry Pelham, the Half-Brother of John Singleton Copley," *Colonial Soc. of Mass. Pubs.*, vol. V (1902). Pelham's letters make up a large part of "Letters & Papers of John Singleton Copley and Henry Pelham," pub. in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. LXXI (1914). A letter descriptive of Pelham's life in Ireland, written by John Singleton, is in Martha Babcock Amory's *The Domestic and Artistic Life of John Singleton Copley* (1882).] F. W. C.

PELHAM, JOHN (Sept. 14, 1838–Mar. 17, 1863), called the "boy major," was one of the bravest and most capable young officers in Lee's army. Largely because of the glamorous descriptions of him in John Esten Cooke's *Surry of Eagle's Nest* (1894), he became to many Southerners almost as romantic a hero as Rob Roy or Ivanhoe. His family was of good English stock. Peter Pelham [*q.v.*], was the first to emigrate to America, his descendants living successively in Boston, Virginia, Kentucky, and, after 1836, in Alabama. John's great-grandfather, Peter, son of the immigrant, was for nearly fifty years organist of Bruton Church in Williamsburg, Va., and his grandfather, Charles, was a major in the Continental Army. His parents were Atkinson Pelham, a large planter and a country doctor, and Martha McGehee, a native of Person County, N. C. Dr. Pelham was opposed to secession but loyally supported the Southern cause, all six of his sons joining the Confederate army.

John Pelham was born on his grandfather's plantation in Benton (later Calhoun) County, Ala. He entered West Point in July 1856, and resigned Apr. 22, 1861, in order to enter the Confederate army. He was commissioned lieutenant and sent to Virginia. In November Gen. J. E. B. Stuart [*q.v.*] recommended that he organize and be made captain of a battery of horse artillery. This battery formed the nucleus of the famous Stuart Horse Artillery. Under the command of Pelham it soon acquired the ideal qualities of this military branch: quickness and unexpectedness of movement and accuracy of execution. The slender, boyish-looking, modest captain displayed remarkable courage and enterprise at every point, and in posting and firing artillery he showed real genius. Soon he was almost idolized by his men, the fame of the Stuart Horse Artillery attracting to its ranks not only volunteers from his home state, including French creoles from Mobile, but also Virginians, Marylanders, and even foreign adventurers.

In the Seven Days' battles from June 25 to July 1, 1862, he displayed exceptional ability. Though reluctant to lose him, Stuart recommended his promotion with the words, "In either cavalry or artillery no field grade is too high for his merit and capacity" (*War of the Rebellion: Official Records, Army*, 1 ser., XI, part II, 552). On Aug. 16, 1862, he was appointed major. At the second battle of Manassas he rushed up with his horse artillery to protect Jackson's rear from a surprise attack, and at Antietam, while in command of several batteries, he held a point essential to the Confederate position. He continued his brilliant achievements in Stuart's Loudoun County raid, in the fall of 1862, and exercised his unusual ability to keep up with the cavalry in the successful assault on the gunboats at Port Royal and at Fredericksburg. After he had held his position there for about two hours against overwhelming odds, Stuart is said to have sent him the following message: "Get back from destruction, you infernal, gallant fool, John Pelham" (Mercer, *post*, p. 138). Lee recommended him for a promotion to the rank of lieutenant-colonel of horse artillery, but he was mortally wounded at Kelly's Ford, Va., Mar. 17, 1863. He had not only great military ability but a lovable and winning personality as well, and there was wide-spread grief in the South at his death. Stuart named his daughter, born not long afterwards, Virginia Pelham.

[Philip Mercer, *The Life of the Gallant Pelham* (copr. 1929); Heros von Borcke, *Memoirs of the Confederate War for Independence* (2 vols., 1866); H. B. McClellan, *The Life and Campaigns of Major-General J. E. B. Stuart* (1885); John W. Thomason, *Jeb Stuart* (1930); *Daily Richmond Examiner*, Mar. 19, 1863.] R. D. M.

PELHAM, PETER (*c.* 1695–December 1751), limner and engraver, was born in England, a son of Peter Pelham, named "gentleman" in his will. Many reference books give the artist's birth year as 1684, but passages in the Copley-Pelham letters (*post*, especially p. 8), make it certain that Peter Pelham, Sr., was born later than 1671. *The Registers of St. Paul's Church, Covent Garden, London* (vol. I, 1906) show that Peter Pelham, Jr., and his wife Martha had children beginning with the christening of George Pelham, Jan. 20, 1720. It is fairly inferred from these dates that the future artist was born about 1695, when his father would have been in his early twenties. His portrait, painted by his stepson, Copley, presumably from life or from records of his appearance about 1750, is not that of a man of sixty-six years. (See Charles Pelham Curtis, *Loan Exhibition of One Hundred Colonial Portraits*, 1930.) The senior Pelham is revealed in letters to his son in America as a man of some property. He died at Chichester, Sussex, in 1756. He may have been a kinsman of the distinguished Pelhams of Sussex described in Mark Antony Lower's *Historical and Genealogical Notices of the Pelham Family* (1873), but the relationship has not been proved.

The younger Pelham was one of several artists of London who learned the then new technique of the mezzotint engraving. Of his use of the medium one writer has said: "Pelham handled the rocker heavily, and so gave to his prints a darker appearance than usual" (Alfred Whitman, *The Masters of Mezzotint*, 1898, p. 26). He obviously was well trained as a portrait painter, and he must have had influential connections, for between 1720 and 1726 he produced portrait plates of Queen Anne, George I, the Earl of Derby, Lord Wilmington, Lord Carteret, Lord Molesworth, Dr. Gibson, the Bishop of London, and others. Why, amidst such engagements, Pelham should have emigrated is mysterious, if, as seems not to have been doubted, the impecunious schoolmaster, limner and engraver of Boston, Mass., is identical with the well-employed mezzotinter of London. It is possible that he left in disgrace. (See letter of Peter Pelham, Sr., Sept. 12, 1739, in Copley-Pelham letters.) His portrait of Gov. Samuel Shute, of Massachusetts, painted at London, 1724, was brought, according to plausible family tradition, to Boston to serve as introduction to local celebrities.

Though the actual date of his emigration has been given variously, the record of Peter Pelham's activities at Boston is well established. His portrait of the Rev. Cotton Mather, now at the American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, was painted as copy for the very familiar mezzotint engraving, reproduced frequently. "Proposals" for printing this engraving were published in the *Boston News-Letter*, Feb. 27, 1728. Portraits of several other New England clergymen followed. Pelham was seemingly intimate with John Smibert, the Scottish painter, who settled in Boston in 1730, for he painted Smibert's portrait and made several engravings after Smibert's works. Such professional labors did not produce a sufficient living for an ever-growing family, and Pelham opened a school at which he taught dancing, arithmetic, and other subjects. His first wife dying in Boston, he married on Oct. 15, 1734, Margaret Lowrey, and after her death he married, May 22, 1748, Mary (Singleton) Copley, widow of Richard Copley, tobacconist, late of Limerick, Ireland. Their home, school, studio, and tobacco shop were on Lindall Street (*A Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston*, XV, 1886, p. 367). In this household were reared the future artists, John Singleton Copley and Henry Pelham [*qq.v.*]. Peter Pelham died intestate.

[In the "Letters & Papers of John Singleton Copley and Henry Pelham," pub. in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. LXXI (1914), there are nine quite important letters addressed to Peter Pelham in answer to unpreserved letters of his. Pelham's first accurate and painstaking biographer, who, however, did not know of the existence of the correspondence just mentioned, was Wm. H. Whitmore, whose *Notes concerning Peter Pelham, the Earliest Artist Resident in New England* (1867), contains a few inaccuracies, as in its title. Indexes of *Notes and Queries* during the sixties disclose the persistence with which Whitmore sought British aid in his Pelham quest. George Francis Dow's *The Arts & Crafts in New England, 1704–75* (1927) reproduces advertisements inserted by Pelham in Boston newspapers, some of which had not previously been noted. The accounts of Pelham in English works on painters and engravers, from Walpole and Strutt to date, are generally incomplete and inaccurate. For the administration of his estate see the Suffolk County Probate Records, No. 10085.] F. W. C.

PELLEW, HENRY EDWARD (Apr. 26, 1828–Feb. 4, 1923), philanthropist, was born at Canterbury, England, the son of George Pellew, canon in Canterbury Cathedral and later dean of Norwich, and of Frances (Addington) Pellew, the daughter of Henry Addington, first Viscount Sidmouth. He was educated at Eton and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he took his B.A. degree in 1850. At Cambridge he was stroke and captain of his college crew and in his last year was stroke and captain of the varsity crew. In 1854 he was commissioned by Baring's, the London bankers, to visit their agencies in the Americas preparatory to accepting a position in New York. Although the post never materialized, he spent two years in travel over a large part of the United States as well as Cen-

tral and South America. In 1858 he returned to the United States and on Oct. 5 was married at Bedford, N. Y., to Eliza, a daughter of William Jay [*q.v.*]. Returning to England he took up his residence in London, where he was magistrate (J. P.), member of the school board, on the governing boards of such institutions as Hanwell lunatic asylum, Bridewell, Westminster, and other hospitals, and of the Feltenham industrial school. He became secretary of the Keble memorial fund and was instrumental in raising a large amount for the establishment of Keble College, Oxford. During this period three of his children were born, two of whom predeceased him but one of whom became seventh Viscount Exmouth. On Dec. 22, 1869, his wife died and four years later on May 14, 1873, he was married to Augusta Jay, her sister, at the American legation in Vienna, Austria, where her brother John Jay, 1817–1894 [*q.v.*], was at the time United States minister. The issue of this marriage was one daughter.

Since the marriage of a deceased wife's sister was at that time against English law, subsequent to his second marriage he removed with his family to the United States and settled in New York. He later acquired a country place at Bedford, N. Y., which had been part of the Jay estate. Shortly after his arrival he took an active part in coördinating the work of the various charitable organizations then operating in New York City and helped organize the Charity Organization Society, serving on the original central council from 1882 to 1885, on various committees, and as vice-president from 1887 to 1890. He was on the board of managers of the Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor from 1875 to 1887 and was president, 1884–85. He was a commissioner of education in New York, 1880–81, and was helpful in the tenement house reform movement as well as in the establishment of free civic libraries and night refuges. During this period he was also active in Bedford, where his summer home was. He was a member of the vestry of St. Matthew's Church, 1876–77 and 1885–92, and at one time taught a class of boys in the Sunday school. He joined the Bedford farmers' club, an old established institution, in which he took an active interest and of which he was president from 1878 to 1890.

Since the climate of New York did not agree with his health, he moved to Washington in 1885, where he made his home until his death. Selling his country place at Bedford in 1892, he later bought a house at Sharon, Conn., and thereafter spent his summers there. In Washington he served as vestryman of St. John's

Church from 1891 to 1908 and as a delegate to the General Convention of the Episcopal Church in 1891 and 1900. He was one of the incorporators of the national cathedral foundation in 1893 and a delegate to the convention of the diocese of Washington in 1895. He was helpful in establishing King Hall, a theological school for negroes, serving on the board of trustees from 1891 to 1903, was a member and for several years secretary of the commission for work among the colored people, and also a member of St. Monica's league for work among the colored people. The year before his death he fell heir to the title of Viscount Exmouth, but because of his advanced age he made no attempt officially to assume the title, and he died as he had lived for over fifty years, a citizen of his adopted country.

[Personal acquaintance; *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Reports, Constitution, By-Laws and List of Members of the Century Asso. for . . . 1924* (1924); Bernard Burke, *A Geneal. and Heraldic Hist. of the Peerage* (1934); *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 5, 1923.]

T. T. P. L.

PELOUBET, FRANCIS NATHAN (Dec. 2, 1831–Mar. 27, 1920), Congregational clergyman, editor, author, was the eldest son of Louis Michel François Chabrier and Harriet (Hanks) Peloubet. His grandfather and first American ancestor was Joseph Alexander de Chabrier de Peloubet, a French royalist officer who was exiled during the Revolution. Francis was born in New York City, but the family moved to Bloomfield, N. J., where most of his boyhood was spent. Having prepared for college at the Bloomfield Academy, he entered the sophomore class at Williams, where he graduated with honors in 1853. After teaching a year in Bloomfield, he entered Bangor Theological Seminary and graduated in 1857. It had been his purpose to enter the foreign mission field, in preparation for which he had spent much time in the study of the Tamil language. He was actually appointed to India, in fact; but for a variety of reasons he finally decided to enter the home ministry instead, and was ordained at Lanesville, Mass., on Dec. 2, 1857. His pastorates, all in Massachusetts, were at Lanesville on Cape Ann, 1857–60; Oakham, 1860–66; Attleboro, First Church, 1866–71; Natick, 1872–83. In all these communities he labored successfully to lift the social, civic, and educational ideals; during the Civil War he twice visited the front in the service of the Christian Commission.

Peloubet will always rank as a pioneer in the American Sunday school movement. During his Attleboro pastorate he prepared two question books, but was unable to secure a publisher. In

1874, however, after the International Lessons had become almost universally adopted in the Protestant churches, he began a series of question books based on these lessons, which achieved immediate success and soon reached a circulation as high as 116,000 copies a year. In 1880 this publication became a quarterly, with an annual circulation of 150,000 copies. After the wide-spread adoption of the International Lessons, a need arose for a practical commentary for teachers and advanced pupils on the portions of the Bible covered year by year. Accordingly, with a volume for 1875 Peloubet began his *Select Notes on the International Sabbath School Lessons* (*Sunday* was later substituted for *Sabbath*), which ably met that need and achieved immediate success. This publication was issued annually for forty-five years, the veteran editor bidding farewell to his public in the volume for 1921, which appeared in 1920, a few months before his death. Widely used among the Protestant churches of all names and by preachers and teachers on the mission fields, the work is estimated to have had during Peloubet's lifetime a circulation of over a million volumes.

In 1883 he resigned his Natick pastorate and in 1890 established his home in Auburndale, where he spent the remainder of his life in incessant literary activity. He was a prolific contributor to the religious press, and published popular commentaries on the Gospels of Matthew and John and the Acts of the Apostles, *Loom of Life, and If Christ Were a Guest in Your Home* (1900), *The Front Line of the Sunday School Movement* (1904), *Studies in the Book of Job* (1906). In addition he edited *Select Songs for the Singing Service in the Prayer Meeting and Sunday School* (2 vols., 1884, 1893), a revision (1903) of the Oxford University Bible Helps and a revised edition (1912) of William Smith's *International Bible Dictionary,* as well as *Treasury of Biblical Information* (1913) and *Oriental Light Illuminating Bible Texts and Bible Truth* (1914). Peloubet had many interests; he was an enthusiastic devotee of outdoor sports, and his Auburndale home was the center of a large circle of friends. On Apr. 28, 1859, he married Mary Abby Thaxter of Bangor, Me., who with four of their five daughters survived him, one of whom was Mary Alice Peloubet Norton [*q.v.*].

[*Congregationalist and Advance,* Apr. 8, 1920; *Continent,* Nov. 20, 1919; A. R. Wells, in *Select Notes on the International Sunday School Lessons for 1921* (1922); J. Peloubet, *Family Records of Joseph Alexander de Chabrier de Peloubet* (1892); *The Congregational Year-Book, Statistics for 1920* (1921); *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 27, 1920; *Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; information from members of the family.]

F. T. P.

PELZ, PAUL JOHANNES (Nov. 18, 1841–Mar. 30, 1918), architect, the son of Eduard L. and Henriette (Helfensreiter) Pelz, was born in Seitendorf, Waldenburg, Silesia. His father was a historian and writer, and in the revolutionary movement of 1848 was a member of the Frankfort parliament. He found it, therefore, advisable to leave Germany in 1849, and two years later settled in New York, where he wrote copiously on subjects interesting to German immigrants, publishing his work in Chicago, New York, and Germany. Paul remained behind in Germany, receiving his academic education at the colleges of St. Elizabeth and of the Holy Spirit in Breslau. In 1858 he came to New York to join his family. The next year he became an apprentice in the architectural office of Detlef Lienau. Here he stayed until 1866, becoming chief draftsman in 1864. After leaving Lienau, he was briefly employed by an architect named Fernbach; but within a few months left New York and went to Washington, where he entered the service of the United States Lighthouse Board. As its chief draftsman from 1872 until 1877, he was concerned in the designing of a great number of lighthouses, including such beautiful towers as those at Body's Island, N. C., in brick and stone, and Spectacle Reef, Lake Huron, all in stone, with a fine stone balcony cornice. In 1873 he was sent with Maj. George H. Elliot on a tour of inspection to study the lighthouse services of the European powers and contributed many illustrations to Elliot's report (*Senate Executive Document 54,* 43 Cong., 1 Sess.).

Meanwhile, outside of his lighthouse work, he was making designs in association with various other architects. In 1873, with John L. Smithmeyer, he entered the competition for a plan for the Library of Congress, and their design received the first prize. For more than a dozen years thereafter there was vacillation on the part of Congress with regard to the Library, and the plan was studied and restudied; twelve entirely different designs are said to have been prepared. In 1886, the building was authorized and Smithmeyer was appointed architect, but in 1888 the Library Commission was legislated out of existence and the work placed in the hands of Brig.-Gen. Thomas L. Casey, chief of engineers of the army. Smithmeyer was removed but Pelz was retained and directed to prepare a new design, which was followed. In it Pelz returned to the basic ideas of the first competitive scheme. On the completion of the drawings (May 1, 1892) his connection with the building ceased, and it was executed under the

supervision of E. P. Casey, of New York, the General's son. The exterior and interior design of the building are far inferior in dignity to the plan, which was epoch-making in its day; at the time of the competition, when the general lines were determined, there was not a contemporary building to compare with it in monumental conception, clarity of thinking, and functional directness. The arrangements for architectural fees on the work were vague, and Smithmeyer and Pelz brought suit in the Court of Claims for $210,000 (or 3% of the alleged cost of the building—a standard architect's fee). On appeal, the Supreme Court, Jan. 23, 1893, upheld the decision of the Court of Claims, awarding Smithmeyer and Pelz six years' combined salary at $8,000 a year over and above their office and drafting costs.

Besides the lighthouses and the Library, Pelz's work (mainly in association with Smithmeyer) included the Academic Building of Georgetown University; Carnegie Library and Music Hall, Allegheny, Pa.; the federal army and navy hospital, Hot Springs, Ark.; the Chamberlain Hotel, Fortress Monroe, Va.; the Aula Christi, Chautauqua, N. Y.; and the Administration Building of the Clinical Hospital of the University of Virginia. He was married on Feb. 23, 1895, to Mary Eastbourne (Ritter) Meem, daughter of Gen. Horatio Gates Ritter, and they had a son and a daughter. He died in Washington, D. C.

[Sketch of Eduard L. Pelz in *Der Hausfreund* (Leipzig), XIX (1876), 37, 40; *Ann. Report of the Lighthouse Board*, 1872–78; *Smithmeyer* vs. *U. S.*, 147 *U. S. Reports*, 342; *Eminent and Representative Men of Va. and the District of Columbia* (1893); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; Herbert Small, *Handbook of the New Library of Congress* (1897); *Russell Sturgis*, "The New Library of Congress," *Arch. Record*, Jan.-Mar. 1898; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Feb. 25, 1895, Mar. 31, 1918.] T. F. H.

PEMBERTON, ISRAEL (May 10, 1715–Apr. 22, 1779), Quaker merchant and philanthropist, born in Philadelphia, Pa., was the third of the ten children of Israel and Rachel (Read) Pemberton and a descendant of Ralph Pemberton who emigrated to Pennsylvania from Lancashire, England, in 1682. James and John Pemberton [*qq.v.*] were his brothers. His father was a successful merchant and a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly. Israel received a thorough education in Friends' schools. At that of Thomas Makin, where Pastorius was a master, trouble arose between Pastorius and the boy, which resulted in Israel's being so severely punished that he was placed in another school. His education completed, he entered the mercantile business with his father, James Logan, and John Reynell, and became one of the wealthiest merchants of his time. He was able to keep up a home in the city, two country homes on the Schuylkill, and one in New Jersey. He was interested in various benevolent organizations. When the Pennsylvania Hospital was incorporated in February 1751 he was elected a manager, a position which he filled for twenty-eight years, and he contributed generously to its support. He was also a member of the American Philosophical Society, elected in January 1768. The largest share of his time and money, however, went to the Friendly Association for Regaining and Preserving Peace with the Indians by Pacific Measures, sponsored by the Philadelphia Meeting to keep the Delawares and Shawnees from joining the French in 1756. Pemberton was a trustee and an active member.

At an early age he took an interest in public affairs and in 1739 he was arrested for criticizing Thomas Penn, the lieutenant-governor of the province. He was released on bail and eventually the case was dropped. In 1750 he was elected to his father's seat in the Assembly for the county of Philadelphia. The following year he was appointed member of the board of managers for the State House and grounds. He was active in the movement to force the Proprietors to pay a fair share of taxes and signed the non-importation agreement at the time of the Stamp Act, though in general he strongly urged a policy of peace. In 1756 he resigned from the Assembly because of his opposition to the Indian War, but he was returned ten years later. During the first Continental Congress the Massachusetts delegation were invited by the Friends to attend a meeting at Carpenter's Hall. Pemberton addressed them, urging them to grant liberty of conscience to the Friends and Baptists in their province. This incident is said to be one of the chief reasons for John Adams' animosity toward the Quakers. Holding to his religious convictions, Pemberton was opposed to the Revolution. With others of his faith he refused to take the oath of allegiance to the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania or to promise not to give aid to the enemy. Consequently he and nineteen others were arrested early in September 1777 and imprisoned in the Free Masons' Lodge without trial. Their homes were searched and their papers seized. On the eleventh of September they were taken by wagon to Winchester, Va., where they were held until April of the next year. Pemberton's health was undermined during his imprisonment, causing his death one year later. He married, Mar. 30, 1737, Sarah, daughter of Joseph and Sarah (Stacy) Kirkbride. She died in 1746 and on Dec. 10, 1747, he

married Mary, the daughter of Nathan and Mary (Ewer) Stanbury and the widow of Robert Jordan and Capt. Richard Hill.

[F. W. Leach, "Old Phila. Families," Phila. *North American*, July 28, 1907; J. W. Jordan, ed., *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911), vol. I; *Friends' Miscellany*, Apr. 1835; J. P. Parke, *Geneal. Notes Relating to the Families of Lloyd, Pemberton, Hutchinson, Hudson and Parke* (1898), ed. by T. A. Glenn; C. P. Keith, *Chronicles of Pa. . . . 1688–1748* (1917), vol. II; R. M. Smith, *The Burlington Smiths* (1877); Isaac Sharpless, *A Hist. of Quaker Government in Pa.* (2 vols., 1900); Thos. Gilpin, *Exiles in Va.* (1848); E. P. Oberholtzer, *Phila., a Hist.* (1912), vol. I; G. B. Wood, *An Address on the Occasion of the Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Pa. Hospital* (1851); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Apr. 1886, Jan.–Oct. 1913; *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pa.*, vols. IV and VII (1851).]

E. M. B—n.

PEMBERTON, JAMES (Aug. 26, 1723–Feb. 9, 1809), Quaker merchant and philanthropist, the eighth of the ten children of Israel and Rachel (Read) Pemberton, and brother of Israel and John Pemberton [*qq.v.*], was born in Philadelphia, Pa. He was educated in Friends' School. In 1745 he traveled in the Carolinas and in 1748 he went to Europe, primarily for business purposes, as he was associated with his father and brother in the shipping trade. His main interest was in the Society of Friends and in the various religious organizations. An active member of Meeting, he sat at the head of the preacher's gallery for many years. When the Meeting for Sufferings, the executive body of the Friends, was established in 1756 he was appointed a member, a position which he held until 1808. With his brother Israel he was one of the trustees of the Friendly Association for Regaining and Preserving Peace with the Indians by Pacific Measures, and was a liberal contributor to its support. He was one of the founders of the Society for the Relief of Free Negroes, established in 1775. In 1787, when it became the Pennsylvania Society for Promoting the Abolition of Slavery, he became vice-president, and in 1790 he succeeded Franklin as president, holding this office for thirteen years. He was a member of the Board of Overseers of the public schools of Philadelphia, for both the city and the county, and took an active part in establishing secondary education in the Friends' schools. A member of the first board of managers of the Pennsylvania Hospital, he served for twenty-two years on the board and acted as secretary from 1759 to 1772. He was elected a member of the American Philosophical Society in January 1768.

Pemberton was elected to the Assembly for the County of Philadelphia but he resigned in June 1756 with five colleagues because of his opposition to a war with the Delawares. In 1757, as clerk of the Meeting, he signed a petition to the governor protesting against forcing the Friends of the Lower Counties to bear arms. He was reëlected to the Assembly in 1765 and held office for four years. At the time of the Stamp Act, he signed the non-importation agreement. He opposed armed resistance to Great Britain and was arrested, imprisoned in the Free Masons' Lodge, and deported with nineteen other Quakers to Virginia. Since they were not permitted to attend meeting, Pemberton helped to set up one of their own. On his return to Philadelphia he gave up all active interest in politics. As early as 1756 he wrote *An Apology for the People called Quakers, containing some Reasons for their not complying with Human Injunctions and Institutions in matters relative to the Worship of God.* In his capacity as clerk of the meeting he wrote, as well, many documents of a religious nature, one of which was a "Remonstrance vs. Erecting a Theatre and Theatrical Performances in Philadelphia." (See *Votes and Proceedings of the House of Representatives . . . of Pennsylvania*, 1775, vol. V, p. 524.) During the exile in Virginia he kept a journal, but more interesting are his letters, which are descriptive, concise, and filled with comments upon the life in the city and country. He died in 1809, in his eighty-sixth year. He had married, on Oct. 15, 1751, Hannah, daughter of Mordecai and Hannah (Fishbourne) Lloyd. After her death in 1764, he married, on Mar. 22, 1768, Sarah, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Hoedt) Smith of Burlington, N. J. Two years after her death he married, on July 12, 1775, Phoebe (Lewis) Morton, daughter of Robert and Mary Lewis.

[See: F. W. Leach, "Old Phila. Families," Phila. *North American*, July 28, 1907; J. W. Jordan, ed., *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911), vol. I; Isaac Sharpless, *A Hist. of Quaker Government in Pa.* (2 vols., 1900) and *Pol. Leaders of Provincial Pa.* (1919); R. M. Smith, *The Burlington Smiths* (1877); Thos. Gilpin, *Exiles in Va.* (1848); Edward Needles, *An Hist. Memoir of the Pa. Soc. for Promoting the Abolition of Slavery* (1848); G. B. Wood, *An Address on the Occasion of the Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Pa. Hospital* (1851); J. F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.* (1844), vol. I; *Friends' Miscellany*, May 1835; *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Jan. 1889, July 1899, July 1914; *Pa. Archives*, 2 ser. IX (1880); *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pa.*, vol. VII (1851), vol. IX (1852). There are Pemberton manuscripts in the library of the Pa. Hist. Soc.]

E.M.B—n.

PEMBERTON, JOHN (Nov. 27, 1727–Jan. 31, 1795), Quaker preacher, ninth of the ten children of Israel and Rachel (Read) Pemberton and younger brother of Israel and James Pemberton [*qq.v.*], was born in Philadelphia, Pa., where he attended Friends' schools. He entered business with his father and brothers, but soon gave this up so that he might devote

his full time to religious work. In 1750, while traveling abroad for his health, he came into contact with John Churchman, a Quaker minister who was on his way to Great Britain on a religious tour. He persuaded Pemberton to accompany him, and for three years they journeyed through the west counties of England, in Ireland, Scotland, and Holland. During the trip Pemberton was persuaded to preach and on his return to Philadelphia he devoted his time to preaching and to missionary work, visiting in Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Delaware, and Virginia. A member of the Friendly Association for Regaining and Preserving Peace with the Indians by Pacific Measures, he attended the Easton conference in 1756. Ten years later he was chosen with John Penn to present the remonstrance against stage plays, prepared by his brother James, to the governor. Further revealing his religious convictions is the provisional lease which Pemberton granted in 1780 for a Coffee House, in which the tenant promised to "preserve decency," keep the house closed on Sunday, and prohibit swearing and card playing, with a penalty of £100 for the first offense.

Opposed to the war against the Delawares in 1756, he was equally hostile to armed resistance to Great Britain in 1777. Early in September 1777 he was notified that orders had been received to take him prisoner. When he refused to leave the house or give up his keys a guard of ten men took him by force. His desk was broken open and the contents seized. With his brothers he was sent to Winchester, Va., a journey of nineteen days by wagon. The year before he had begun to keep a journal, commenting upon the arrest of Friends for refusing to bear arms, and deploring the loss of life caused by war and sickness. He kept this journal throughout his exile, giving a clear picture of his arrest and imprisonment. His chief complaint throughout his imprisonment was of the cold and rain. On Apr. 21, 1778, he left Winchester, arriving in Philadelphia nine days later, the day after he received his official pardon from Washington. He continued to keep up his journal after his return, but the majority of the entries refer only to the Meeting and to various Friends. At the Quarterly Meeting, Feb. 5, 1781, Pemberton was given a certificate to visit the Friends in England. Despite the fact that it was now against the law to leave the country without a passport, he notified the council that he intended to dispense with the formality. Permitted to leave, he went to England, Ireland, and Scotland, visiting and preaching for five years. He returned to Philadelphia but set out again on

Pemberton

May 30, 1794, for Holland and Germany. He held meetings on shipboard, in Amsterdam, and in several towns in Prussia. Early in September he became ill, but he continued to Pyrmont, Westphalia. Thereafter he referred constantly in his journal and letters to his illness, though he commented also upon his surroundings, the scenery, and the people. His condition rapidly grew worse and he died at Pyrmont on the last day of January 1795. Pemberton's wife was Hannah, the daughter of Isaac and Sarah Zane, whom he married in Philadelphia on May 8, 1766.

[F. W. Leach, "Old Phila. Families," Phila. *North American*, July 28, 1907; J. W. Jordan, ed., *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911), vol. I; Isaac Sharpless, *A Hist. of Quaker Government in Pa.* (2 vols., 1900); J. F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.* (1844), vol. I; Thos. Gilpin, *Exiles in Va.* (1848); G. B. Wood, *An Address on the Occasion of the Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Pa. Hospital* (1851); *Friends' Miscellany*, Jan., Feb., Mar. 1836; *The Diary of John Pemberton for the Years 1777 and 1778* (1867), ed. by E. K. Price; Thos. Wilkinson, *Some Account of the Last Journey of John Pemberton to the Highlands, and Other Parts of Scotland* (1811); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1885, Apr.–Oct. 1917.] E. M. B—n.

PEMBERTON, JOHN CLIFFORD (Aug. 10, 1814–July 13, 1881), soldier, second son of John and Rebecca (Clifford) Pemberton, was born in Philadelphia. He was of Quaker ancestry, great-grandson of Israel Pemberton [*q.v.*], and a descendant of Ralph Pemberton, of Wigan, Lancashire, who came with his son Phineas to Pennsylvania in 1682. John received his early education in the schools of his native city, and was privately tutored in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin. Entering West Point on July 1, 1833, he graduated four years later, twenty-seventh in a class of fifty. As second lieutenant in the 4th Artillery Regiment, he fought in the Florida Indian Wars from 1837 to 1839, and from 1840 to 1842 served on the Canadian border. On Mar. 19, 1842, he was promoted to first lieutenant. In the War with Mexico, as aide-de-camp of Gen. William J. Worth [*q.v.*], he participated in the battles of Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma, Vera Cruz, Monterey, Cerro Gordo, Churubusco, Molino del Rey, Chapultepec, and Mexico city. For bravery throughout these actions, he was brevetted captain, Sept. 23, 1846, and major, Sept. 8, 1847. In recognition of his Mexican services the citizens of Philadelphia presented him with a handsome sword. On Jan. 18, 1848, he married Martha Thompson, daughter of William Henry Thompson of Norfolk, Va.; five children were born to them. Pemberton received his regular captaincy on Sept. 16, 1850. In 1858, under Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, he took part in the operations against the Mormons in Utah,

while the following three years he was occupied with Indian affairs in the northwest.

When the Civil War threatened, he was ordered with troops at Fort Ridgely, Minn., to Washington, D. C. Arrived there, he resigned his commission in the United States Army on Apr. 24, 1861. Gen. Winfield Scott tried to persuade him to accept a commission as colonel in the Federal army, but he refused the offer and proceeded to Richmond. There he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, Apr. 28, 1861, and assigned the duty of organizing the cavalry and artillery of Virginia. On May 8, 1861, he was named colonel, Provisional Army of Virginia; on June 15, major, corps of artillery, Confederate States Army; on June 17, brigadier-general, Provisional Army, Confederate States; and on Feb. 13, 1862, major-general, Provisional Army, commanding the department which included South Carolina, Georgia, and Florida. He early counseled the abandonment of Fort Sumter as having no protective value for the city of Charleston, and built Fort Wagner and Battery "B," which protected the city even after Union fire had levelled Sumter. Many in the South could not forget that Pemberton was a Northerner, and the Confederate secretary of war was even petitioned to remove him from command. There is no question, however, of his complete loyalty to the Southern cause, or that he had the full confidence of his superiors. On Oct. 13, 1862, he was promoted lieutenant-general and given command of the department embracing Mississippi, Tennessee, and eastern Louisiana. He thus became responsible for the defense of the Confederate stronghold of Vicksburg.

Jefferson Davis instructed him to hold Vicksburg at all costs; Gen. Joseph E. Johnston advised cutting loose from Vicksburg and avoiding a general engagement until sufficient concentration could be effected against Grant. Hampered by these conflicting orders and opposed by the ablest soldier of the North, Pemberton had to work out his own salvation. Besieged by land and water, heavily outnumbered, and short of ammunition, he conducted a stubborn defense. Finally the garrison was reduced to eating rats, cane shoots, and bark; men were so exhausted that they could scarcely stand in the firing trenches, and those still capable of resisting were all too few to man the defenses. On the night of July 2, 1863, when the Federals had closed in to assaulting distance, Pemberton knew that defeat was inevitable. On July 4, he accepted the "unconditional surrender" terms imposed by General Grant. When the exchange of prisoners had been effected, Pemberton resigned his commission as lieutenant-general and served until the end of the war as inspector of ordnance with the rank of colonel.

Through the foresight and generosity of his mother, he was provided a farm near Warrenton, Va., whither he retired after the war. In 1876 he moved to Philadelphia, and there lived with his brothers and sisters until his death at Penllyn on July 13, 1881. He was buried in Laurel Hill Cemetery, Philadelphia.

[J. W. Jordan, *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (4 vols., 1887–88); *Thirteenth Ann. Reunion Asso. of Grads., U. S. Military Acad. . . . 1882*; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads., U. S. Military Acad.*, vol. I (1891); C. A. Evans, *Confed. Military Hist.* (1899), esp. vols. I, V, VII; *Army and Navy Jour.*, July 16, 1881; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), July 14, 1881.] C. C. B.

PEÑALOSA BRICEÑO, DIEGO DIONISO de (*c.* 1622–*c.* 1687), governor of New Mexico, soldier of fortune, the son of Alonso de Peñalosa, was a native of Lima, Peru. He went to New Spain about 1654, where, according to his later sworn statements, he was employed "in the higher positions, political and military." In 1661, by appointment of the viceroy of New Spain, he assumed the office of governor and captain-general of New Mexico. Obligated to conduct the *residencia*, or official investigation of the administration of his deposed predecessor, Mendizabal, he sacked the latter's home and threw him into prison, thus patronizingly defying the Tribunal of the Inquisition in Mexico, which had issued a writ for the arrest of Mendizabal and the attachment of his property. The breach thus made between Peñalosa and Father Posadas, *comisario* of the Inquisition in New Mexico, soon widened, and during the spirited contest that ensued, Peñalosa in 1663 imprisoned and threatened to kill Posadas. This rash act brought forth a threat to place the province under an interdict. Peñalosa made frantic efforts to effect a reconciliation, but the entire power of the Inquisition was directed against him, and in June 1665, after he had left New Mexico, a formal complaint was made by the Inquisition against him "as a usurper of the jurisdiction" of that Tribunal. Furthermore, he was charged with rape, incest, robbery, and the enslavement of Indian girls, and with having attempted first to bribe and then to blackmail Mendizabal. In his defense Peñalosa admitted rashness, complained of having been governor "of the off-scourings of the earth," cited alleged services in behalf of his king and his religion, and threw himself on the mercy of the court. His pleas were vain, however; and on Feb. 3, 1668,

he was reprimanded, fined 500 pesos, deprived of the right to hold political and military office, and exiled forever from New Spain and the West Indies.

Embittered, he went to England where he maintained himself by selling to British officials information concerning the defenses of the Indies. He enjoyed the favor of the king, who prevented his arrest when it was requested by the Spanish ambassador. After some time he went to France, where he assumed various fictitious titles of nobility. Between the years 1678 and 1684, he presented three proposals to Louis XIV to attack New Spain in the name of France, capitalizing, in this connection, his personal knowledge of the regions mentioned. On presenting in 1684 his proposal to attack Pánuco, he also submitted a manuscript "Relación" purporting to be an account of an alleged expedition from Santa Fé to Quivira in 1662. This "Relación," published in 1882 by J. G. Shea (*post*), has recently been proved fictitious (Miller and Hackett, *post*). Peñalosa submitted his third proposal just as La Salle arrived from Canada with news of his exploration of the Mississippi River and plans for a settlement near its mouth. The plan of the renowned French explorer superseded that of the exiled Spanish renegade, and the expedition which left France that same year was led by La Salle. After this time nothing more is known of Peñalosa, though, according to Margry (III, 44), he died in 1687, at Paris.

[MSS. in the Archivo General, Mexico City, Sección de Inquisición; transcripts in Univ. of Tex. Lib.; Cesareo Fernández Duro, *Don Diego de Peñalosa* (Madrid, 1882); C. W. Hackett, "New Light on Don Diego de Peñalosa," *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.*, Dec. 1919; Pierre Margry, *Découvertes et Établissements des Français dans l'Ouest et dans le Sud de l'Amérique Septentrionale*, vol. III (1878); J. G. Shea, *The Expedition of Don Diego Dionisio de Peñalosa* (1882), which accepts the authenticity of the fictitious "Relación"; E. T. Miller, "The Connection of Peñalosa with the La Salle Expedition," *Tex. State Hist. Asso. Quart.*, Oct. 1901; W. E. Dunn, *Spanish and French Rivalry in the Gulf Region of the U. S., 1678–1702* (1917).]

C. W. H.

PENDER, WILLIAM DORSEY (Feb. 6, 1834–July 18, 1863), Confederate soldier, was born in Edgecombe County, N. C. His father, James Pender, was a descendant of Edwin Pender who came from England and settled near Norfolk, Va., during the reign of Charles II. His mother was Sarah Routh, daughter of William Routh also of Virginia. He received his preliminary education in the common schools of his county and at the age of fifteen worked as a clerk in his brother's store. At sixteen he was appointed a cadet to the United States Military Academy from which he graduated in 1854, standing nineteenth in a class of forty-six. Upon graduation he was commissioned brevet second lieutenant in the 1st Artillery and during the same year he was made a second lieutenant in the 2nd Artillery. In 1855 he transferred to the 1st Dragoons and in 1858 was promoted to the rank of first lieutenant in that regiment. From 1856 to 1860 he saw active service on the frontier in New Mexico, California, Oregon, and Washington, participating in numerous lively skirmishes with the Indians. He married Mary Frances, daughter of the Hon. Augustine H. Shepperd of North Carolina, on Mar. 3, 1859. Three sons were born of this union, Samuel Turner, William D., and Stephen Lee. In 1860 he was appointed adjutant of the 1st Dragoons with a station at San Francisco, Cal., but the year following he was ordered to return to the East on recruiting duty.

At the outbreak of the Civil War he resigned his commission and threw in his lot with the Confederacy. He was commissioned a captain of artillery in the provisional army and placed in charge of Confederate recruiting in Baltimore, Md. In May 1861, he returned to his native state and acted as an instructor for new regiments formed at Raleigh and Garysburg. He was elected colonel of the 3rd North Carolina Volunteers on May 16, 1861, and on Aug. 15 was transferred to command the 6th North Carolina Regiment. His regiment served in Whiting's brigade of Smith's division under Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in the Peninsular campaign. For brilliant leadership at the battle of Seven Pines (Fair Oaks) he was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general and assigned to command a brigade of North Carolina troops in Gen. Ambrose P. Hill's division. Pender led his brigade ably in the battle of the Seven Days in front of Richmond and again under Jackson at the second battle of Bull Run, in the Maryland campaign, at Fredericksburg, and at Chancellorsville. He was wounded three times during these battles but never relinquished his command. On May 27, 1863, he was promoted to the rank of major-general, being then only twenty-nine years of age but considered one of the ablest officers of the Confederacy. He was placed in command of a division and demonstrated his fitness for his new command at Gettysburg on July 1, 1863, when he drove the Union troops from Seminary Ridge. The second day of the battle he was severely wounded in the leg by a fragment of shell. He was evacuated to Staunton, Va., where he died on July 18, 1863, following an operation for the amputation of his

wounded leg. The loss to the Confederacy of this gallant young officer can be estimated from one of Lee's official reports: "His promise and usefulness as an officer were only equaled by the purity and excellence of his private life" (*War of the Rebellion: Official Records, Army,* 1 ser. XXVII, Part II, p. 325).

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. . . . U. S. Mil. Acad.*; *Confederate Military History* (1899), vol. IV; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1884–1888), vols. II, III; sketch by W. A. Montgomery in W. J. Peele, *Lives of Distinguished North Carolinians* (1898); *Cyclopedia of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas of the Nineteenth Century* (1892), vol. II; *Richmond Daily Whig,* July 20, 1863.] S. J. H.

PENDLETON, EDMUND (Sept. 9, 1721–Oct. 26, 1803), Virginia jurist, Revolutionary patriot, was born in Caroline County, Va. His grandfather, Philip, a schoolmaster of Norwich, England, had emigrated in 1682, and the family became established in Caroline at an early date. One of Philip's daughters, Catherine, married John Taylor, grandfather of the well-known John Taylor of Caroline, while his son Henry married Mary Taylor, sister to John. Edmund was their youngest son. His father and grandfather both died in the year that he was born (*Southern Literary Messenger,* June 1857, pp. 422–24), and his mother married again. Left without paternal care, and apparently without property, he was apprenticed at the age of fourteen to Col. Benjamin Robinson, clerk of the court of Caroline and a kinsman of the powerful "Speaker" Robinson (Caroline County Order Books, volume for 1732–40, p. 282). When the lad was sixteen years of age, he became clerk to the vestry of St. Mary's Parish, and at nineteen was made clerk of the Caroline court martial. During these years he worked diligently to educate himself and at twenty was admitted to practise at the local bar. In 1742 he married Elizabeth Roy, but the bride died in childbirth within the year and the infant son never breathed. On June 20, 1743, Pendleton married Sarah Pollard, with whom he lived happily until her death in 1794.

In 1745 he was admitted to practice before the general court. In 1751 he became a justice of the peace of Caroline County, and the next year was elected to the House of Burgesses. Judging by the number of his committee appointments, he was an active member of this body. In 1765 the financial affairs of Speaker John Robinson [*q.v.*], who was also treasurer of the colony, became involved, and his friends made an effort to relieve him by establishing a state loan office. Pendleton was active in this movement, but it failed. When the Speaker died within the following year, an effort was made by the reforming party to separate the office of speaker from that of treasurer. Pendleton strenuously opposed this move, and again was unsuccessful. It has been said that his stand with the conservative interests on these questions made him leader of the "Cavalier" party in Virginia, to which he was alien by birth. The Stamp Act was passed while these questions were being debated. Pendleton, always conservative and opposed to violent measures, did not favor Patrick Henry's stand on this issue. Nevertheless, he stated it as his view that the House of Commons lacked constitutional authority to pass the offending act, and, as justice of Caroline, he kept the court open and went as far as he could legally to nullify the effect of the legislation (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society, 2* ser. XIX, 1905, pp. 109–12). Though his name does not appear prominently again until the beginning of the Revolutionary struggle, his stand in 1765 clearly indicated what his policy would be when the storm broke.

Immediately upon the approach of the crisis, Pendleton emerged as one of the foremost men in Virginia. His qualifications for leadership were considerable, yet his strategic position doubtless had much to do with his preferment. His place as a leader in the conservative group made his support of the Revolutionary movement highly important. Accordingly, he was selected for membership on the Committee of Correspondence when it was organized in 1773. In 1774 he was sent to represent Virginia in the first Continental Congress. He was a member of all the Virginia Revolutionary conventions, and was president of the two which met in 1775. In that year he was made president of the Committee of Safety, which placed him at the head of the temporary government of the colony. In this position his policy was firm, though not aggressive, since it was his ardent hope that the struggle might be settled by a redress of grievances rather than by war (Lee Papers, University of Virginia Library, Pendleton to R. H. Lee, Apr. 20, 1776; also to delegates in Congress, Oct. 28, 1775). He opposed Patrick Henry's proposal to arm the militia at this time, but when the measure was carried, he, as county lieutenant of Caroline, helped to carry it into effect. When Henry was made commander-in-chief of the Virginia troops, Pendleton was instrumental in giving to Col. William Woodford the active command in the field, thereby bringing down upon himself the enmity of the popular hero of the day. His judgment of the military qualifications of the two men seems to have been just, al-

though there is no question but that Pendleton looked upon Henry as a demagogue, and they were never on the same side of any question. The friction caused by this incident hurt Pendleton's popularity, and though he was reëlected president of the Committee of Safety in December 1775, it was by a reduced majority (H. J. Eckenrode, *The Revolution in Virginia,* 1916, p. 131). It was doubtless on this account, too, that he had to contest with Philip Ludwell Lee election to the presidency of the famous Virginia convention of 1776 (William Wirt Henry, *Patrick Henry,* 1891, I, 333 ff., 356, 389, 445–46). His inaugural speech on assuming the chair foreshadowed a declaration of independence (Rives, *post,* I, 122), and it was he who drew up the resolves instructing Virginia's delegates in Congress to propose the measure. This convention also drew up Virginia's first constitution, and provided for a revision of the laws. Pendleton was placed on the committee charged with the latter function, and the work was completed in 1779 by Jefferson, Wythe, and himself. In the framing of the constitution and in the revision of the laws, Pendleton stood for conservative measures, opposing Jefferson's program of disestablishment of the church and abolition of primogeniture and entail.

On the organization of the new state government, Pendleton became speaker of the House of Delegates. He was returned to that body in 1777, but his attendance was delayed by a fall from his horse, which crippled him for the rest of his life. He returned to the autumn session of the House, and was made presiding judge of the newly organized court of chancery. When the supreme court of appeals was organized in 1779, he became its president and retained this post until his death. From this time forward, his interest in politics was keen but not active. He spent most of his time on his estate, "Edmundsbury," in Caroline, making the journey to Richmond twice each year to attend the sessions of the court (Lee Papers, University of Virginia Library, Pendleton to R. H. Lee, Feb. 21, 1785). Meanwhile he kept up a regular correspondence with his friends in Congress, particularly with James Madison (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 2 ser. XIX, 107–67). This semi-retirement was interrupted in 1788 when a convention was assembled in Virginia to decide upon the adoption of the Federal Constitution. Pendleton was known to favor adoption, but was elected president of the convention without opposition. Despite his lameness and his official position, he took the floor on several occasions to defend the new instrument of government, and his political philosophy is revealed in these speeches as well as in his letters to Madison. Here he maintains his belief in the equality of man before the law, denies that he thinks government should be controlled by the well born, and advocates a liberal suffrage (Jonathan Elliot, *The Debates on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution,* 2nd ed., 1836, III, 293–305).

No one familiar with his character could doubt the sincerity of this defender of established institutions. Upon the formation of the new federal government, Washington offered him a district judgeship, which he declined. The long-standing friendship between the two was maintained, but Pendleton dissented from the foreign policy and the financial measures of Washington's administration (Jared Sparks, *The Writings of George Washington,* vol. X, 1836, pp. 27, 369–72). This attitude brought him into the Republican camp, and in 1799, at the request of Jefferson, he published a campaign document in support of the principles of his party (*An Address . . . on the Present State of Our Country,* Boston, 1799; *Writings of Thomas Jefferson,* Memorial Edition, 1903, X, 86–89, 104–110). The conservative colonist and reluctant revolutionist ended his career as a supporter of the liberals, but his principles had hardly changed. Whatever else he was, he was first a Virginian, and the interests of Virginia as he saw them actuated his every move. He was an individualist, never a partisan, and his decisions were made in the light of his personal judgment.

Edmund Pendleton was a typical gentleman of his generation; tall, graceful, suave (see portrait in L. Pecquet du Bellet, *Some Prominent Virginia Families,* 1907, IV, 226). He was methodical, assiduous, and a close rather than a broad legal student. He wrote as he spoke—clearly and convincingly. Jefferson said he was the most able man whom he had ever met in debate, not bearing his opponent down with words, but forcing him to cover with his tenacious strategy (*Writings,* I, 54–56). As a judge, he was cautious, conservative, and sound. The only decision of his which was ever reversed was reversed by himself (Mays, *post*). There was hardly a greater man in Virginia than was Pendleton, but he was lacking in all qualities of showmanship and aggressiveness, and his fame has suffered because he confined his activities so largely to his native state. He died in 1803, leaving no issue.

[Pendleton's papers are scattered. David J. Mays, of Richmond, to whom the writer is indebted for valuable assistance, has collected all those available, and is preparing a biography. Considerable material is scat-

tered through the published and manuscript writings of Washington, Jefferson, Madison, and the other Revolutionary Virginians. The more complete biographies of such characters—particularly William Wirt, *Sketches of the Life and Character of Patrick Henry* (1817); H. S. Randall, *The Life of Thomas Jefferson* (3 vols., 1858); and W. C. Rives, *Hist. of the Life and Times of James Madison* (3 vols., 1859–68)—furnish some information. The best accounts available are by H. B. Grigsby, *The Va. Conv. of 1776* (1855), pp. 45–55, which refers to an autobiographical sketch by Pendleton printed in the *Norfolk Beacon*, Oct. 3, 1834; and D. J. Mays, *Edmund Pendleton* (1926), repr. from *Proc. . . . Va. State Bar Asso.*, 1925. See also H. B. Grigsby, *The Hist. of the Va. Conv. of 1788* (2 vols., 1890–91), being *Va. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vols. IX, X; Pendleton genealogy in *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, beginning in July 1931; *Examiner* and *Va. Argus*, both of Richmond, Oct. 29, 1803.] T. P. A.

PENDLETON, EDMUND MONROE (Mar. 19, 1815–Jan. 26, 1884), physician, chemist, was the great-grandson of James Pendleton, the brother of Edmund Pendleton [*q.v.*]. He was the third son of Coleman and Martha (Gilbert) Pendleton, who moved to Eatonton, Ga., from Culpeper, Va., in 1800. He was born at Eatonton and his early education was obtained in the private schools there. Owing to financial stress he was, while quite young, forced to discontinue his education and from time to time was engaged in several business undertakings. At one time he became part owner of a jewelry business in Columbus, Ga., and later was engaged in this business in Macon, Ga. While he was working in Macon a copy of Brand's textbook of chemistry gave him his first enthusiasm for this science, and he employed his spare moments in the very careful study of this book, which really laid the foundation for much of his life work. Thus becoming interested in science, he soon decided upon the study of medicine, and obtained a position in a drug store in Macon, Ga. While working as an apprentice, he devoted much time to the reading of medicine under a local physician. He entered the Medical College of South Carolina at Charleston, from which institution he was graduated in 1837. While attending lectures here, he read medicine in the office of Samuel Dickson [*q.v.*]. He also gave much time to a further study of chemistry under the instruction of Charles Upham Shepard [*q.v.*]. While still a student he contributed bits of verse to the Charleston *News and Courier*. He practised medicine in the city of Warrenton, Ga., and there married on Nov. 27, 1838, Sarah Jane Thomas, the sister of James R. Thomas, president of Emory College. They had eleven children. Soon after their marriage they removed to Sparta, Ga., where he practised medicine for thirty years.

During this time he became a slave holder and successfully operated a large plantation. He applied his scientific knowledge to his plantation as well as to his practice. As a pioneer in this field he manufactured fertilizer not only for his own use but for the public market. In 1849 he published an interesting discussion of "The Climate and Diseases of Middle Georgia" (*Southern Medical Reprints*, vol. I, 1849, pp. 314–42). About 1867 he organized the firm of Pendleton & Dozier in Augusta, Ga., for the purpose of manufacturing commercial fertilizer on a large scale. In 1872 he was called to teach agriculture at the University of Georgia, where he remained for four years until he resigned on account of the failure of his health. He did much to organize his department of the university. As a result of his carefully prepared lectures, he published a *Text Book of Scientific Agriculture* (1875) followed by a second edition the next year. He moved to Atlanta in 1877 and founded a corporation for the manufacture of commercial fertilizer, devising and improving formulae in this field. He was one of the first to use cotton seed in the manufacture of fertilizers and to recognize the effect of grain and cotton culture on the phosphoric acid and nitrogen content of the soil.

[Personal papers in possession of grand-daughter, Mrs. G. H. Phillips, Atlanta, Ga.; information from Medical College of S. C. and Univ. of Ga.; *The South in the Building of the Nation*, vol. XII (1909); *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Apr. 1932, p. 181.] J. S. G.

PENDLETON, GEORGE HUNT (July 29, 1825–Nov. 24, 1889), representative and senator from Ohio, minister to Germany, the eldest child of Nathaniel Greene and Jane Frances (Hunt) Pendleton, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio. He was the great-grandson of Nathaniel Greene Pendleton, a brother of Edmund Pendleton [*q.v.*], and through all the rough and tumble of political life in the Middle West, he bore the nickname "Gentleman George" on account of the dignity and manner he inherited from a great Virginia family. He attended the local schools, where he was taught by Ormsby M. Mitchel [*q.v.*], and he was a student in Cincinnati College until 1841. The next three years he studied under private tutors. In 1844 he went abroad and for two years traveled in the principal countries of Europe, studied for a time at the University of Heidelberg, and, making portions of the tour on foot, went to the Holy Land and Egypt. In 1846, upon his return from Europe, he married Alice Key, the daughter of Francis Scott Key and niece of Roger B. Taney [*qq.v.*]. They had two daughters and a son. He studied law in the office of Stephen Fales in Cincinnati, was admitted to the bar in 1847, and until 1852 was a partner of George E. Pugh [*q.v.*]. In 1853 he

was nominated and elected by a large majority to the state Senate on the Democratic ticket. The energy and ability he displayed in the work of adapting the state laws to the new constitution caused his friends to nominate him for Congress in 1854 before his term in the state legislature was finished. Unsuccessful in that year he was again nominated in 1856 and was elected.

He was a member of Congress from Mar. 4, 1857, to Mar. 3, 1865. He supported Stephen A. Douglas in his attack upon President Buchanan over the question of the admission of Kansas under the Lecompton constitution. He was a Douglas supporter in 1860 and during the Civil War was recognized as one of the leaders of the peace wing of the Democratic party. He believed the war could have been averted and favored the Crittenden Compromise. If secession were necessary, he insisted that it should be peaceable; but if the North insisted on war he warned the House to "prepare to wage it to the last extremity" (*Cincinnati Commercial Gazette*, Nov. 26, 1889). He differed widely, however, from the policy of the Lincoln administration during the conflict. He opposed the suspension of the *habeas corpus* and every attempt to make the military arm of the government superior to the civil. He opposed the passage of the legal tender act upon constitutional grounds and quoted with approval Webster's statement that "gold and silver currency is the law of the land at home, the law of the land abroad: there can, in the present condition of the world, be no other currency" (J. G. Blaine, *Twenty Years of Congress*, Vol. I, 1886, p. 413). Nevertheless, his tact and ability earned for him the respect of his political opponents. He was a member of the judiciary committee, of the ways and means committee, and was one of the committee of managers in the impeachment of Judge West H. Humphreys [*q.v.*]. He was nominated for vice-president on the National Democratic ticket with McClellan in 1864. The year following his retirement from Congress he was again nominated for membership in that body but was defeated.

After the war he was a Greenbacker. If he did not originate the "Ohio idea" of paying the 5–20 bonds in Greenbacks instead of coin, he, at all events, early in 1867 sponsored the proposal. This made his name anathema to the eastern Democracy; and in the Democratic convention of 1868, although the platform adopted committed the party unreservedly to his doctrines, he was deprived of the nomination for the presidency owing to the opposition of the New York delegation and the existence of the two-thirds rule. The following year the Democrats nominated him for governor of Ohio, but he was defeated by Rutherford B. Hayes. The same year he was chosen president of the Kentucky Central Railroad, which office he held for ten years. In 1878 he was elected by the Ohio legislature to the United States Senate and served in that body from Mar. 4, 1879, to Mar. 3, 1885. He will be remembered best for his connection with civil service reform. In 1883, as chairman of the Senate committee on civil service, he obtained the passage of a bill drafted by Dorman B. Eaton [*q.v.*], providing for the creation of a federal civil service commission and the introduction of competitive examinations. Nevertheless, he was severely abused by the spoilsmen in his party for advocating such a measure as the Democrats had been victorious in the congressional elections of 1882. In 1884 he was defeated for renomination to the Senate. President Cleveland appointed him minister to Germany on Mar. 23, 1885, and he served in this capacity until his death in Brussels.

[G. M. D. Bloss, *Life and Speeches of George H. Pendleton* (1868); *Biog. Cyc. and Portrait Gallery . . . of Ohio*, vol. I (1883); C. R. Fish, *The Civil Service and the Patronage* (1905); W. C. Mitchell, *A Hist. of the Greenbacks* (1903); T. E. Powell, *The Democratic Party of . . . Ohio* (2 vols., 1913); L. P. du Bellet, *Some Prominent Va. Families* (1907), vol. IV, p. 251; *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Nov. 26, 1889; *Cincinnati Times-Star*, Nov. 25, 1889.] R. C. McG.

PENDLETON, JAMES MADISON (Nov. 20, 1811–Mar. 4, 1891), Baptist minister and educator, was born in Spotsylvania County, Va., the son of John and Frances J. (Thompson) Pendleton. He could not trace his ancestry beyond his grandfather, Henry Pendleton, Jr., of Culpeper County, who served in the Revolution. When James was about a year old, the family moved to Christian County, Ky., where, on a farm near Pembroke, he lived until he was twenty. He attended the local schools, and from 1833 to 1836 an academy at Hopkinsville. At seventeen he had joined the church; he began to preach at nineteen, and was licensed by the Bethel Baptist Church in 1831. For the next two years he preached, taught school, and studied, and on Nov. 2, 1833, he was ordained at Hopkinsville. After some local preaching during the continuation of his studies, he became in 1837 pastor of the Baptist Church at Bowling Green, and the following year, Mar. 13, 1838, he married Catherine Stockton Garnett of Glasgow, Ky. To them four children were born. His twenty-year pastorate at Bowling Green fell during a period when no one could exert an influence in the spiritual and moral life of the community without showing his political proclivities, and Pendleton's development was increasingly adverse to slavery and con-

cerned for the preservation of the Union. He thus supported the proposals of Henry Clay, including that for gradual emancipation of the slaves, a project which did not meet with general approval in Kentucky.

In 1857 Pendleton accepted the chair of theology in Union University at Murfreesboro, Tenn. Here he studied and taught church history as well as Biblical and historical theology, and also served as pastor of the local Baptist Church. At the outbreak of the Civil War his attachment to the Union cause virtually forced him to leave Tennessee, and from 1862 to 1865 he served as pastor at Hamilton, Ohio. A son who had enlisted in the Confederate army was soon killed by accident; but the grief of the father was assuaged by the thought that his son "had never fired a gun at a Union soldier." In 1865 he accepted a call to the Baptist Church at Upland, Pa., where he became one of the original trustees of Crozer Theological Seminary, established three years later. He resigned the Upland pastorate in 1883 and spent the following years with one or another of his children, in Kentucky, Tennessee, and Texas. He died at Bowling Green.

Pendleton won a reputation as a preacher and writer of superior intellectual power, especially during his career at Murfreesboro, when from 1855 to 1861 he was one of the editors of the *Southern Baptist Review Eclectic.* His articles and reviews show a wide range of reading and acute logical powers, based upon certain presuppositions which he never questioned. His later revisions of his early works show little change from his fundamental position (strictly orthodox and essentially "Landmarker"), although in the later works some of his conclusions were not so obtrusively asserted. Among his published works are *Three Reasons Why I am a Baptist* (1853), revised as *Distinctive Principles of Baptists* (1882); *Church Manual* (copyright 1867); *A Treatise on the Atonement of Christ* (1869, revised in 1885); and *Christian Doctrines* (1878), the last two being revisions of articles first published in the *Review and Eclectic.* His autobiography, *Reminiscences of a Long Life* (1891), was published after his death.

[J. M. Pendleton, *Reminiscences* (1891); Wm. Cathcart, *The Bapt. Encyc.* (1881); *Semi-Centennial of Upland Baptist Church, 1852–1902* (n.d.), containing an interpretation by a son, Garnett Pendleton; J. H. Spencer, *A Hist. of Ky. Baptists* (1886), II, 523–25; *Courier-Journal* (Louisville, Ky.), Mar. 5, 1891.]

W. H. A.

PENDLETON, JOHN B. (1798–Mar. 10, 1866), pioneer in commercial lithography in the United States, was the youngest son of Capt. William Pendleton, a native of Liverpool, England, and the commander of a New York and Liverpool packet, who came to America about 1789 and resided in New York City, where he married a widow, and where John and his brother, William S. Pendleton, were born. The father was lost at sea the year John was born, and both boys were early sent to work. William was apprenticed to a copper-plate engraver, and in 1819 went to Washington, D. C., where he practised his craft and the following year was joined by his brother John. Both young men then set out to seek their fortunes in the West, but proceeded no further than Pittsburgh, Pa. Before they had been long in that city, John was invited by Rembrandt Peale [*q.v.*] to exhibit his large painting, "The Court of Death," which was shown in many cities of the country for more than a year. In 1824 William returned to New York but soon went to Boston, where he resumed his business of engraving. About this time John was sent to Europe in the interests of John Doggett, a bookseller, and while he was in Paris, his brother wrote him that he had purchased some lithographic materials and equipment from a merchant named Thaxter, who had imported it, but was unable to use the process successfully. The younger brother's response was to study lithography in Paris, where he purchased abundant supplies which he brought with him upon his return to the United States in 1825. With him he brought also two workmen, Bischbou and Dubois, the latter said to have been the first real lithographic printer in the United States. The firm of W. S. & J. B. Pendleton, Boston, began to print lithographs that same year. Their first work was evidently for the *Boston Monthly Magazine,* December 1825. John continued a member of this firm for five years. In 1826 Rembrandt Peale went to Boston, apparently at the suggestion of John Pendleton, to study lithography, and there drew upon the stone a portrait of Washington which gained a medal in the Franklin Institute exhibition in 1827. In 1829 John Pendleton with Francis Kearny and Cephas Grier Childs [*qq.v.*] founded a lithographing firm in Philadelphia under the style of Pendleton, Kearny & Childs, from which the senior partner withdrew in the same year to found a lithograph house in New York City. Thenceforth until his death, he was a resident of New York. In 1832 he was engaged as a lithographer, and also, in partnership with a man named Hill, as a bookseller and publisher. He was twice married: in 1830 to Eliza Matilda Blydenburgh, who died in 1842; and in 1846 to Hester Travis, who survived him. He died in New York City.

Pendleton

[E. H. Pendleton, *Brian Pendleton and His Descendants . . . and Notices of Other Pendletons of Later Origin in the U. S.* (1910); E. T. Freedley, *Leading Pursuits and Leading Men* (copr. 1856); "Diary of Christopher Columbus Baldwin," *Trans. and Colls., Am. Antiq. Soc.*, vol. VIII (1901); C. H. Taylor, "Some Notes on Early American Lithography," *Proc. Am. Antiq. Soc.*, n.s., XXXII (1923); H. T. Peters, *America on Stone* (1931); Joseph Jackson, "History of Lithography in Phila." (MS.).]

J. J.

PENDLETON, JOHN STROTHER (Mar. 1, 1802–Nov. 19, 1868), legislator and diplomat, was born in Culpeper County, Va., long the home of his branch of the Pendleton family. He was of the sixth generation in America, a descendant of Philip, who settled in Virginia in 1682, and the eldest son of William and Nancy (Strother) Pendleton. After the usual preparatory education he studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1824, and achieved prominence in his practice in Culpeper County. His wife, whom he married in 1824, was Lucy Ann Williams.

Several terms in the Virginia House of Delegates (1831–33 and 1836–39) were followed by his appointment in the summer of 1841 to be chargé d'affaires in Chile. There he accomplished the principal object of his mission by inducing the Chilean government to make payments upon the American claims which it had already recognized. He returned to Virginia in time to secure election as Whig representative of his district in the Twenty-ninth Congress and was reëlected to the Thirtieth, serving from 1845 to 1849. In 1848 he was one of those Virginia Whigs who believed it not expedient to present Clay again as the candidate of the Whig party for the presidency. He and three other Whigs signed a pamphlet entitled *To the Whig Party of Virginia* (Washington, 1848) urging the nomination of Zachary Taylor.

The last phase of his diplomatic career began with his appointment Feb. 27, 1851, to be chargé d'affaires to the Argentine Confederation. He was instructed to secure recognition by that somewhat unstable government of the claims of American citizens and to negotiate with it a commercial treaty. Robert C. Schenck [*q.v.*], United States minister to Brazil, was to act with Pendleton in the negotiation of the Argentine treaty, and the two were also to conclude treaties with Paraguay and Uruguay. Late in 1852 Secretary Everett was able to congratulate Pendleton and Schenck upon their "successful and satisfactory" treaty (of Aug. 28, 1852) with "the Oriental Republic of the Uruguay." The treaty with Paraguay was concluded Mar. 4, 1853, but neither of these treaties was ever proclaimed. The "Treaty of Friendship, Commerce and Navigation" with the Argentine Confederation was signed July 27, 1853, and a treaty for the free navigation of the Paraná and Uruguay rivers, with the same power, was concluded July 10, 1853. The negotiation of the latter treaty, for which Pendleton received the commendation of Marcy, was in keeping with the contemporary American policy of establishing the principle of the free use of international waterways. Both the treaties with the Argentine Confederation were proclaimed in 1855 (W. M. Malloy, *Treaties . . . between the United States and Other Powers,* vol. I, 1910, pp. 18, 20). After his retirement from diplomacy in 1854 Pendleton apparently resumed his law practice (see John S. Pendleton, attorney, *Notes in Relation to the Supply of Water Proposed to be Drawn from the Great Falls of Potomac River for the Use of the National Aqueduct,* 1858). He died in Culpeper County in 1868, without issue.

[*Archives of the Dept. of State*; R. T. Green, *Geneal. and Hist. Notes on Culpeper County, Va.* (1900); E. G. Swem and J. W. Williams, *A Reg. of the Gen. Assembly of Va., 1776–1918* (1918); L. Pecquet du Bellet, *Some Prominent Va. Families,* vol. IV (1907); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *The Am. Ann. Cyc., 1868* (1869).]

E. W. S.

PENDLETON, WILLIAM KIMBROUGH (Sept. 8, 1817–Sept. 1, 1899), minister of the Disciples of Christ, college president, editor, was born at Yanceyville, Louisa County, Va., the son of Edmund and Unity Yancey (Kimbrough) Pendleton. His ancestors had been prominent in Virginia for several generations, the earliest of them in America, on his father's side, being Philip, a schoolmaster, who emigrated from Norwich, England, in 1674, returned in 1680, and came over again in 1682 to stay. His father's grandfather, John, was a brother of Edmund Pendleton [*q.v.*]; and his father's grandmother, Sarah Madison, was the sister of President James Madison. On the maternal side, William was of Welsh descent. In his infancy his parents moved to "Cuckoo House," Cuckoo, Louisa County, which an ancestor had built. Here he spent his early days, receiving instruction in nearby schools, and in 1836 entering the University of Virginia. He finished his course there in 1840, and, having spent the last part of it in the study of law, was that year admitted to the Virginia bar.

In the meantime the elder Pendletons had joined the Campbellite movement and had been among the charter members of Gilboa Church, near Cuckoo. In June 1840 William was baptized by Alexander Campbell [*q.v.*]. From that time until Campbell's death the two were intimately associated. In October 1840 Pendleton married Campbell's daughter, Lavinia, who died

in 1846, and in July 1848 he married her sister, Clarinda. In 1840 Campbell's plans for an institution of learning embodying ideas of his own bore fruit in the establishment of Bethany College, and he persuaded Pendleton to become in 1842 its first professor of natural philosophy. For the remainder of his active career the interests of the college were his chief concern. In 1845, he was appointed vice-president, and, since the president, Campbell, had many extraneous duties, much of the administrative work fell to Pendleton, and no little of the success of the institution during its formative period is attributable to him. After the death of Campbell in 1866, Pendleton was elected president and served as such until 1886.

During the forty-five years he was connected with Bethany, he took part in the cooperative enterprises of the Disciples, being one of the leading members in their first national convention, October 1849, at which the foundations of their organized missionary work were laid. He also exerted a wide influence through his writings. In January 1846 he became an associate of Campbell in editing the *Millennial Harbinger,* and in 1865, its editor-in-chief, continuing as such until the paper was discontinued at the close of 1870. For years many of the leading articles were written by him. From 1869 to 1876 he was associated with William T. Moore [*q.v.*] in the editorial management of the *Christian Quarterly,* and in December 1873 he became a member of the staff of the *Christian Standard,* of which Isaac Errett [*q.v.*] was editor. To both these publications he contributed regularly.

Pendleton also took an active part in the civic affairs of the region in which he lived. He worked energetically for improvement in roads and schools. In 1855 he was the Whig candidate for congressman from his district, opposing the Democratic representative, Zedekiah Kidwell, but was defeated in a spirited campaign. After 1861 he supported the Democratic party. He was a member of the West Virginia constitutional convention of 1872 and was prominent in its proceedings. In 1873 Gov. John J. Jacob appointed him state superintendent of public schools to fill out the unexpired term of Charles S. Lewis, and during his incumbency he framed a school law, which was adopted by the legislature; in 1876 he was elected superintendent and served until 1880. Relinquishing the presidency of Bethany in 1886, he retired to Eustis, Fla., where he had purchased property, and found employment in overseeing his orange groves. Here he was instrumental in establishing a church of the Disciples. He died at Bethany, where he had gone to attend the Commencement exercises. A Virginia gentleman of the old school, neither demonstrative nor aggressive, well and variously informed though not technically a scholar, possessed of marked literary ability, fond of music and a good judge of art, he was perhaps the leading representative of the more intellectual of the Disciples. His second wife died in 1851, and on Sept. 19, 1855, he married Catherine Huntington King of Warren, Ohio. He was survived by seven children.

[L. P. du Bellet, *Some Prominent Va. Families* (1907); F. D. Power, *Life of William Kimbrough Pendleton, LL.D.* (1902); W. T. Moore, *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909); *Christian Standard,* Sept. 9, 1899.] H. E. S.

PENDLETON, WILLIAM NELSON (Dec. 26, 1809–Jan. 15, 1883), Episcopal clergyman, Confederate soldier, was born in Richmond, Va., the son of Edmund Pendleton of "Edmundton," Caroline County, Va., and Lucy (Nelson) Pendleton. His father was a grandson of John, brother of Edmund Pendleton [*q.v.*], member of the Continental Congress and president of the Virginia court of appeals, and his mother was a niece of Gen. Thomas Nelson [*q.v.*], signer of the Declaration of Independence and governor of Virginia in 1781. After instruction by tutors and at a private school in Richmond he was appointed to the United States Military Academy. Graduating July 4, 1830, fifth in his class, he was appointed second lieutenant in the 4th Regiment of Artillery. He served three years in the army, including one as assistant professor of mathematics at West Point, and resigned in 1833 to become professor of mathematics in Bristol College, Pennsylvania. He occupied a similar chair at Delaware College, Newark, Del., from 1837 to 1839. Meantime, having determined to enter the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal Church, he had been made deacon by Bishop Meade of Virginia in 1837 and ordained priest by Bishop Onderdonk of Pennsylvania in 1838.

Recalled to his native state in 1839 to become principal of the newly established Episcopal High School of Virginia at Alexandria, he held that position for five years and brought the school to a high degree of efficiency and success. He removed to Baltimore in 1844 and conducted a private school for three years, during which time he was also in charge of two small congregations. In 1847 he closed his school to devote himself to pastoral work. He served as rector of All Saints Church, Frederick, Md., until 1853, when he accepted a call to Grace Church, Lexington, Va., which charge he held, with the exception of four years of active service in the Army of Northern Virginia, until his death in

1883. At Lexington he ministered not only to the community but to the students of the Virginia Military Institute and Washington College (later Washington and Lee University). He was notably successful in strengthening and building his parish and was a prominent figure in the larger work of the Diocese of Virginia. In 1856 he was elected deputy to the General Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church. He made many missionary preaching tours in the counties west of Lexington and delivered a series of lectures published in 1860 under the title *Science a Witness for the Bible.*

The outbreak of the Civil War brought insistent demand from the citizens of Lexington and Rockbridge County that he place his military training at the service of his state. Consenting, he was elected, May 1, 1861, captain of the Rockbridge Artillery, and was rapidly promoted, being appointed colonel and chief of artillery on the staff of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, July 13, 1861, and brigadier-general in April 1862. He served later under Robert E. Lee as chief of artillery in the Army of Northern Virginia until its surrender at Appomattox in 1865. He took part in all the major engagements of the army from First Manassas (Bull Run) to the siege of Petersburg. He was an exceedingly able and efficient master of artillery but at the same time never lost sight of his calling as a minister of the Gospel. He preached to the soldiers as opportunities offered on Sundays and at weekday prayer-meetings and was prominent in the remarkable religious movement among the Confederate soldiers which sent so many of the ablest of them into the ministry of their respective churches after the war was over.

Upon his return to Lexington in April 1865 he was asked to resume the rectorship of his parish, though in their utter poverty his people could pay no salary. His rank in the Confederate army excluded him from the relief accorded by the first amnesty proclamation and he was subjected to many indignities, not being permitted for nearly a year to hold a public service in his church. Nevertheless, he continued as rector, earning his own living as best he could through the difficult days of collapse of civil government, and relinquished his pastoral work in Lexington only with his sudden death on Jan. 15, 1883.

Pendleton was of commanding appearance, in his later years bearing a striking resemblance to General Lee, for whom he was frequently mistaken. He married, July 15, 1831, Anzolette Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Francis Page, of "Rugswamp," Hanover County, an aunt of Thomas Nelson Page [*q.v.*]. They had one son,

Alexander, who became a colonel in the Confederate army and was killed in battle in 1864, and several daughters, one of whom, Susan, became the wife of Gen. Edwin G. Lee of the Confederate army.

[Susan Pendleton Lee, *Memoirs of William Nelson Pendleton, D.D.* (1893); A. B. Kinsolving, *The Story of a Southern School: The Episcopal High School of Virginia* (1922); *14th Ann. Reunion Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1883); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891), vol. I; *Living Church*, Jan. *27*, 1883; records of the Diocese of Va.]

G. M. B.

PENFIELD, EDWARD (June 2, 1866–Feb. 8, 1925), illustrator, painter, author, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y. His father, Josiah, and his grandfather, Henry L. Penfield, came from Rye, N. Y., their forebears from Fairfield, Conn.; his mother, Ellen Locke (Moore) Penfield, was born in England. Edward Penfield received his elementary education in Brooklyn, but soon left school to become a pupil at the Art Students' League in New York. After several years of study he became, at the age of twenty-four, the art editor of *Harper's Magazine,* and shortly, art editor of *Harper's Weekly* and *Harper's Bazar* also. He served these magazines for more than a decade with great distinction and intelligence, both as editor and as artist, in the former capacity seeking out and encouraging the best talent in the country and directing it into new and interesting channels. He discovered and befriended many a young and struggling artist and did much to raise the standards of magazine illustration. In 1901 he resigned his editorships, however, to devote his entire time to art. He executed a series of mural decorations of outdoor sports in Randolph Hall, Cambridge, Mass., now the property of Harvard University, and in 1903 painted ten panels depicting a fox hunt for the Rochester Country Club. Commercial work, however, absorbed more and more of his interest and time. He made a large number of poster designs, by which he is best remembered, and may be cited as the inaugurator of the brief but golden age of poster art in America.

His work was bold, precise, full of character, and always decorative. His flat tones of solid color bounded by strongly accented black lines are reminiscent of the work of Nicholson, Beardsley, Steinlen, and Toulouse-Lautrec; there is the same forcefulness, directness, and extreme simplicity of means as in a typical Japanese print. He was the pioneer in America of this influence. He retained, however, his individuality; his drawing and even his lettering bear the unmistakable mark of his personality. His knowledge of old forms of dress and uniforms was accurate

to the last buckle; his interest in horses, coaches, and carriages led him into collecting ancient conveyances; his love of felines was as strong as Steinlen's. His work compels attention by its pleasant pattern and easy readability and sustains interest by its quality of draftsmanship and accuracy of detail. That his output was "commercial" and not "artistic" was largely due to the spirit of the times.

Percival Pollard's *Posters in Miniature* (1896), for which Penfield wrote an introduction, contains fourteen examples of his work, including a self-portrait. Other designs were collected in *Country Carts* (1900) and *The Big Book of Horses & Goats* (1901). Several illustrated articles contributed to *Scribner's Magazine* were reprinted in *Holland Sketches* (1907) and *Spanish Sketches* (1911). Other notable magazine contributions include "The Ancestry of the Coach" (*Outing*, July 1901) and illustrations for Caspar Whitney's article, "The Country-Cart of To-day" (*Ibid.*, June 1900). Much of his work was done for the Beck Engraving Company of Philadelphia (*e.g.*, an *Almanack for the Year of Our Lord 1919, redrawn from Old Farmers' Almanacks*, 1918); typical of his book illustrations are those for *The Dreamers* (1899) by John Kendrick Bangs; his best posters were made for *Harper's Magazine*; he designed covers for *Collier's* and *Harper's Magazine*, and advertising matter issued by the Franklin Press and by the clothing firm of Hart, Schaffner & Marx.

Penfield was married on Apr. 27, 1897, to Jennie Judd Walker, daughter of Maj. Charles A. Walker. They had two sons, one of whom died in childhood. He lived most of his married life in Pelham Manor, N. Y. He was quiet, modest, unassuming, and retiring to the point of secretiveness. In matters of dress he was as precise as in his work. His health was not strong, though, paradoxically, his art was always robust. He died in Beacon, N. Y.

[A small collection of Penfield's work is preserved at the Memorial High School, Pelham, N. Y. Reproductions appear in *Am. Art by Am. Artists, One Hundred Masterpieces* (1914); *The Pageant of America* (1927), vol. XII; F. C. Brown, *Letters & Lettering* (1902). For comment and biographical material see *Am. Art Annual*, vols. XX (1923–24), XXII (1925); C. B. Davis, "Edward Penfield and His Art," *Critic*, Mar. 1899; *Internat. Studio*, XXV (1905), xxvi–xxvii, XXVI (1905), lv–lx; C. M. Price, "The Cat and the Poster," *Arts and Decoration*, Sept. 1912; Frank Weitenkampf, *Am. Graphic Art* (1924); *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; S. R. Jones, in *Studio* (London), July 15, 1925; *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 9, 10, 1925; *Art News*, Feb. 14, 1925. Information for the foregoing sketch was also derived from his family and friends, and from the editors of *Harper's Magazine*.] **T. S—r.**

PENFIELD, FREDERIC COURTLAND (Apr. 23, 1855–June 19, 1922), journalist, diplomat, author, son of Daniel and Sophia (Young) Penfield, was born at East Haddam, Conn. He graduated from Russell's Military School, New Haven, and after a period of travel and study in England and Germany, he entered newspaper work, joining the editorial staff of the *Hartford Courant* in 1880. He was appointed vice-consul general at London in 1885, and on May 13, 1893, diplomatic agent and consul general at Cairo, where he remained throughout Cleveland's second administration. For the next sixteen years he was engaged in travel and writing. In addition to numerous articles in periodicals on economic and political subjects of international interest, he published *Present Day Egypt* (1899) and *East of Suez* (1907). He received decorations from several European and Oriental governments and from the Pope. His first wife, Katharine Alberta (Welles), widow of Edward B. McMurdy, whom he had married in 1892, died in 1905, and in 1908 he married Mrs. Anne (Weightman) Walker of Philadelphia, one of the richest women of the country.

His service under the previous Democratic administration, his wealth, and his Catholic faith qualified him for appointment by President Wilson as ambassador to Austria-Hungary, July 28, 1913. Within a year he was attending, as special ambassador, the funeral of the murdered Archduke Francis Ferdinand. His reports during the critical days of June 1914 threw little light on the situation; but, as soon as the task of helping fellow citizens out of difficulties brought on by the war had been cleared up, he began transmitting useful information on conditions in the country. He contributed suggestions for the reply to the Austro-Hungarian government's protests of 1915 against American exports of munitions to the Allies (*Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the United States*, 1915 Supplement, pp. 788–99). He managed to remain on friendly terms with the ministry of foreign affairs despite the feeling engendered by this correspondence, by the enforced recall of the Austro-Hungarian ambassador at Washington, and by the necessity of satisfactions for the sinking of the *Ancona*. Further embarrassment was occasioned by the labors imposed on him as custodian of British, French, Italian, Japanese, and Rumanian interests (*Ibid.*, 1916 Supplement, pp. 816–18). During the period of strained relations between the United States and Germany in the spring of 1916, due to the sinking of the *Sussex*, he contrived, in a conversation with Baron Burian, on Apr. 25, to enlist his government's

influence in behalf of a peaceable solution (*Ibid.*, pp. 269–70). Three weeks later he induced the minister of foreign affairs to take steps ameliorating the tone of the press regarding America, a course repeated in February, 1917 (*Ibid.*, 273–76).

His last weeks in Vienna were occupied in the endeavor to break down the unity of the Central Powers by dissociating Austria-Hungary from Germany's renewal of unrestricted submarine warfare and by engaging her in separate peace negotiations. Messages from Count Czernin transmitted by Penfield, followed by his own report of desperate internal conditions, inspired the President to obtain British approval of a suggestion to the Austro-Hungarian government that, if it would make tangible proposals for peace, the integrity of the monarchy would be substantially assured. In pursuance of instructions dated Feb. 22, the ambassador held half a dozen conversations with Czernin without being able to shake his repudiation of all idea of a separate peace (*Ibid.*, 1917 Supplement, I, 38–44, 55–58, 62–65, 113). Upon the failure of these efforts Penfield was ordered, on Mar. 28, to return to Washington "to consult" with the Department of State. He left Vienna on the day of the declaration of a state of war with Germany. His health never recovered from the strain of the final struggles, and he lived quietly in New York until his death.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; Albert Welles, *Hist. of the Welles Family* (1876); *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 18, June 6, 26, July 8, 29, 1913, June 20, 1922; *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the United States*, 1914–17 Supplements.] J. V. F.

PENFIELD, WILLIAM LAWRENCE (Apr. 2, 1846–May 9, 1909), jurist, was born in Dover, Lenawee County, Mich., the fourth of eight children of William and Lucinda (Felton) Penfield, of Connecticut and Vermont families respectively, who had migrated westward in 1835. His boyhood was spent on his father's farm. He attended neighboring schools and earned his way to a course in Adrian College, whence he entered the University of Michigan, graduating with honors in the class of 1870. At this time, according to the catalogues of the University, his middle name was Lorenzo; later he used the form Lawrence. A classmate was William R. Day [*q.v.*], who later became secretary of state and was instrumental in having him called to Washington. After his graduation Penfield taught Latin and German at Adrian College for two years, during which time he studied law and was admitted to the bar. In 1873 he settled in Auburn, Ind., forming a law partnership with H. H. Moody. He was married there on June 28, 1875, to Luna Walter, and they had four children, of whom two, a son and a daughter, survived. Penfield practised law in Auburn for over twenty years, building up a statewide reputation for skill and rectitude. He discharged various public functions, official and unofficial, such as those of city attorney, member of the Republican State Committee, presidential elector and electoral messenger, and delegate (in 1892) to the Republican National Convention. In 1894 he was elected judge of the 35th judicial circuit of Indiana, by the largest majority ever given in that circuit.

Called by President McKinley in 1897 to the solicitorship of the Department of State, he was plunged at once into delicate and important public questions. Within a year came the war with Spain; in 1900 the Boxer troubles in China broke; in 1904 came the war between Russia and Japan; and in the same year, the prostration of governmental authority in Santo Domingo. The brunt of the political and legal problems arising out of these difficulties fell upon Penfield's shoulders. He was the trusted adviser of Presidents McKinley and Roosevelt and Secretaries Sherman, Day, Hay, and Root. To the promotion of international arbitration he made significant contributions. He represented the United States in 1902 at the first arbitration before the Permanent Court of Arbitration at The Hague, in the celebrated "Pious Fund" claim against Mexico, winning for the United States an award of over one and a half million dollars (*Senate Document 28*, 57 Cong., 2 Sess.). The same year, he represented the United States in the so-called "Preferential Claims" arbitration, arising from the blockade of Venezuelan ports by Great Britain, Germany, and Italy to enforce long-standing grievances against Castro (*Senate Document 119*, 58 Cong., 3 Sess.). It is said that he drafted in one evening the complete protocol of this arbitration, which was accepted by all the Powers. In all, he prepared and argued for the United States before international arbitral tribunals fifteen important cases, including, besides those already mentioned, arbitrations with Santo Domingo, Peru, Haiti, Nicaragua, Guatemala, Salvador, and Mexico. In 1904 he was an unsuccessful candidate for nomination for the governorship of Indiana. In 1905 he was appointed special commissioner to Brazil. Late in that year he retired from the Department of State, entering into law partnership in Washington with his son. He was retained in important international cases, and in this period was also appointed professor of international law and

of the foreign relations of the United States in the postgraduate course of the Law School of Georgetown University. He died in Washington.

Penfield was the author of several notable magazine articles, including: "International Piracy in Time of War" (*North American Review,* July 1898); "British Purchases of War Supplies in the United States" (*Ibid.,* May 1902); "The 'Pious Fund' Arbitration" (*Ibid.,* December 1902); "The Anglo-German Intervention in Venezuela" (*Ibid.,* July 1903); "The First Session of the Hague Tribunal" (*Independent,* Nov. 27, 1902); "The Venezuelan Case at The Hague" (*Ibid.,* Oct. 29, 1903); "The Hague Tribunal" (*Ibid.,* Dec. 17, 1903); and "International Arbitration" (*American Journal of International Law,* April 1907). His opinions and arguments as solicitor of the Department of State have to a considerable extent become source materials and precedents in international law.

[*Extracts from Addresses and a Sketch of the Life of William L. Penfield* (1904); *Am. Jour. International Law,* July 1910; C. S. Carter, *Hist. of the Class of '70 . . . Univ. of Mich.* (1903); *Who's Who in America,* 1908–09; C. W. Taylor, *The Bench and Bar of Ind.* (1895); *Memorial Record of Northeastern Ind.* (1896); *Washington Post, Indianapolis News,* and *Evening Dispatch* (Auburn, Ind.), May 10, 1909.] E. M. B—d.

PENHALLOW, SAMUEL (July 2, 1665–Dec. 2, 1726), merchant, judge, historian, was born at St. Mabyn, County of Cornwall, England, the son of Chamond and Ann (Tamlyn) Penhallow. His father was friendly with the Rev. Charles Morton [*q.v.*], an active dissenter, who removed to Newington-Green, near London, and founded a school for young men which soon became famous. In 1683 Samuel Penhallow was sent to this school for instruction. Since Morton's educational methods and principles were not in harmony with those of the bishops, his school was closed in 1685 and he invited several of his pupils to follow him to America. Penhallow accepted the invitation and in July 1686 landed with his master at Charlestown, Mass.

He was a sober, godly young man and a student of promise. Aware of his intention to enter the ministry and preach the gospel to the Indians, the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts had promised him twenty pounds a year for three years in order that he might study the language of the Narragansetts, and sixty pounds thereafter as long as he followed the ministry and preached to the Indians. Upon his arrival in Charlestown, however, he found the political future of New England so uncertain that he gave up the idea of becoming a minister. He joined the church at Charlestown, the pastorate of which Charles Morton had accepted soon after his arrival, but shortly moved to Portsmouth and on July 1, 1687, married Mary, daughter of John Cutt, president of the Province of New Hampshire. This marriage gave Penhallow entry to the governing class of the colony and opened to him many opportunities for lucrative trading ventures.

On Aug. 25, 1699, he took oath as a justice of the peace, in September was chosen speaker of the general assembly, and in December was appointed treasurer of the province, an office which, except during a year's absence in England, he held until his death. Other offices held by him in the provincial government in 1702 were recorder and privy councillor. In 1714 he became a justice in the superior court, and in 1717, chief justice. When Governor Shute was in Massachusetts in September 1717, Lieutenant-Governor Vaughan pronounced himself in authority, and, in spite of Governor Shute's contrary orders, dissolved the general court. Judge Penhallow, having taken the side of Governor Shute, was suspended from the council by Vaughan, but promptly reinstated by Shute. These proceedings being laid before the King, were found sufficient cause to remove Vaughan from office. In 1719 Penhallow was again elected recorder, and held the office for three years. During the Indian wars from 1702 to 1725 he kept a very careful record of events and in 1726 published *The History of the Wars of New-England with the Eastern Indians, or a Narrative of Their Continued Perfidy and Cruelty from the 10th of August 1703 to the Peace Renewed the 13th of July 1713, and from the 25th of July 1722 to Their Submission 15 December 1725.* It is a volume faithfully stating harrowing facts with no attempt made to soften the ghastly deeds of the savage.

Penhallow left a large estate accumulated by his trading ventures and through the inheritance of his first wife, who died in 1713, having borne him thirteen children. His second wife, whom he married Sept. 8, 1714, was the twice-widowed Abigail (Atkinson); by her he had one son. In his will he ordered the usual scarf and gloves given each of the bearers and ministers, and a pair of gloves to each of the watchers; but no further expense. Instead of authorizing the "wine gloves Tobacco & pipes which are usually expended" he stipulated that five pounds be added to the five already left his church for its poor.

[A brief extract from Penhallow's diary is in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* 2 ser. I (1814), 161; and a short memoir by Nathaniel Adams, in *N. H. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* 1 ser., vol. I (1824); his will is given in H. H. Metcalf, *Probate Records of the Province of N. H.,* vol.

II (1914); an account of a trading expedition to the Penobscot Indians is printed in *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1880; see also Nathaniel Bouton, *Provincial Papers, Documents, and Records Relating to the Province of N. H.*, vols. II–IV (1868–70); P. W. Penhallow, *Penhallow Family* (1885).]

H. R. B.

PENICK, CHARLES CLIFTON (Dec. 9, 1843–Apr. 13, 1914), Protestant Episcopal clergyman, missionary bishop of Cape Palmas, Liberia, was born in Charlotte County, Va., the eldest son of Edwin Anderson and Mary (Hamner) Penick. His early education was received in local schools, in Hampden-Sydney College and Danville Military Academy, and was terminated by the outbreak of the Civil War. He enlisted as a private soldier in the 38th Virginia Regiment, which became part of General Armistead's brigade and General Pickett's division, and was appointed quartermaster sergeant of Company A of his regiment. He was once wounded, but continued in service until the end of the war. He then entered the Theological Seminary of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Virginia, at Alexandria, graduating in 1869. He was ordered deacon June 25, 1869, and advanced to the priesthood June 24, 1870. He was assigned as deacon to Emmanuel Church, Bristol, Va., and shortly after his ordination accepted a call to the rectorship of St. George's Parish, Mount Savage, Md. After a brief ministry here, he became rector of the Church of the Messiah in Baltimore, where he won notable success in reviving and reorganizing the work of a church in the business section of a large city. He was a strong and forceful preacher and writer and an able leader and executive.

On Oct. 30, 1876, he was elected by the House of Bishops of the Protestant Episcopal Church to be missionary bishop of Cape Palmas in Africa, and was consecrated to that office on Feb. 13, 1877. The Missionary District of Cape Palmas had suffered the disorganization of being without a bishop for over three years when Penick undertook his duties. Under his leadership the work was greatly strengthened and extended. The chief effort of his administration was to establish mission stations around Cape Mount. He established there among the Vai people St. John's School, which in its fifty years of existence has trained many of the leaders of Liberian life, both civil and religious, and is today (1934) the outstanding institution in the Missionary District. Penick was a tireless worker. The "confusion worse confounded" which he wrote was the condition when he first landed soon gave place to order, but after five years of service it became apparent that the Bishop could not continue to live in the tropical climate. While delirious with African fever, he was placed aboard a passing ship and brought to the United States. Upon his return to America he resigned his jurisdiction, his resignation becoming effective in October 1883.

After the recovery of his health, he became rector, successively of St. Andrew's Church, Louisville, Ky. (1883–93); St. Mark's Church, Richmond, Va. (1894–99); Christ Church, Fairmont, West Va. (1899–1904); and the Church of the Ascension, Frankfort, Ky. He served also for a number of years as a representative of the Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society attempting to arouse interest in work among the negroes of the Southern States. Resigning his charge in Frankfort in 1912 on account of advancing years and declining health, he lived in retirement until his death, at Baltimore, in 1914.

Penick married, Apr. 28, 1881, Mary Hoge, daughter of Isaac Hoge of Wheeling, W. Va. One daughter was born of this union.

[E. B. Rice, "Historical Sketch of the African Mission," among records of the National Council of the Protestant Episcopal Church, New York; files of the *Southern Churchman* and the *Liberian Churchman*; War Records, Va. State Lib., Richmond; *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *Southern Churchman*, Apr. 18, 25, 1914; *Sun* (Baltimore), Apr. 15, 1914.]

G. M. B.

PENINGTON, EDWARD (Sept. 3, 1667–Nov. 11, 1701), Quaker pamphleteer, surveyor-general of Pennsylvania, youngest son of Isaac and Mary (Proude) Springett Penington, was born in Amersham, Bucks County, England. The family was one of comparative wealth. His grandfather, a London merchant, held several responsible city offices, among them that of lord mayor. As a member of the High Court of Justice which sentenced Charles I, he was sent to the Tower and his property was confiscated at the time of the Restoration. "Chalfont Grange," the home of his son, was seized, but the family was not dispossesed until the year before Edward's birth. Following this loss, Mary Penington began to build a new home at Amersham. As the sole heir of Sir John Proude, she was able to take care of her family comfortably.

Nine years before Edward was born his parents had joined the Society of Friends and meetings were held in their home. Persecutions followed. Isaac Penington served four jail sentences, the last, at Reading, when his youngest son was five years old. He was a prolific pamphleteer, and the list of his writings filled twenty-six pages in the catalogue of Friends' books. Until he was thirteen, a year after his father's death, Edward studied at home under tutors, one of whom was Thomas Ellwood, a recent convert to the Society of Friends. He continued his

education at Edmonton. When he was fifteen his mother died, leaving him "£100 to bind him to some handsome trade that hath not much of labor," and four hundred pounds to be given to him when he had reached the age of twenty-two. Like his father he was a devout Friend. Entering into the religious controversies of his sect, he published in 1695 three pamphlets: *The Discoverer Discovered,* and *Rabshakeh Rebuked, and His Railing Accusations Refuted,* and, bound with the latter, *A Reply to Thomas Crisp,* all of which were answers to the attacks of Thomas Crisp upon George Fox and the Quakers. The next year two more pamphlets appeared: *Some Brief Observations upon George Keith's Earnest Expostulation,* and *A Modest Detection of George Keith's (miscalled) Just Vindication of His Earnest Expostulation Published by him as a pretended answer to a Late Book of mine Entituled, Some Brief Observations, &c.* His writings were argumentative, without unusual literary merit.

On April 26, 1698, Penington was appointed surveyor-general of the province of Pennsylvania, an office which he held until his death. He accompanied William Penn to Philadelphia when the latter made his second trip, arriving Nov. 30, 1698. Penington assumed his duties at once. In 1701 he was appointed with James Logan attorney for the disposition of the property of Letitia Penn, the daughter of William Penn and Gulielma Springett, Penington's half-sister. When Letitia Penn returned to England in the early part of November, Penington's duties began. About one week later he died in Philadelphia. At the Friends' Meeting House in Burlington, N. J., he married on Nov. 16, 1699, Sarah, the daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Ollive) Jennings (or Jenings). Their only child, Isaac, was born Nov. 22, 1700.

[F. W. Leach, "Old Phila. Families," in the Phila. *North American,* Apr. 26, 1908; Jos. Foster, *Pedigree of Sir Josslyn Pennington* (1878); J. W. Jordan, ed., *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911), vol. I; Phila. Soc. of Friends, *Quaker Biogs.,* 1 ser. II (1909); J. H. Lea, "Geneal. Gleanings Contributory to a Hist. of the Family of Penn," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* Apr. 1893; Samuel Needles, "The Governor's Mill and the Globe Mills, Phila.," *Ibid.,* Oct. 1884; Maria Webb, *The Penns and Peningtons of the Seventeenth Century* (1867); J. G. Bevan, *Memoirs of the Life of Isaac Pennington* (1807); Thomas Ellwood, *The Hist. of the Life of Thos. Ellwood, Written by His Own Hand* (1714).]

E. M. B—n.

PENINGTON, EDWARD (Dec. 4, 1726–Sept. 30, 1796), Quaker merchant, the son of Isaac and Ann (Biles) Penington and grandson of Edward Penington [*q.v.*], was born in Bucks County, Pa. His father, justice of the county court, sheriff of the county, and one of the founders of the Philadelphia Public Library Company, was a well-educated man and a large property holder in the county. The son was educated in Friends' schools and then went to Philadelphia, where he became a successful merchant. In 1755 and 1757 he was signing provincial paper money. Four years later, 1761, he was elected a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly and in the same year he became one of the judges of the court of common pleas. He was appointed one of the trustees of the State House and grounds, and in 1762 he was made a member of Sir William Johnson's committee to treat with the Indians. When the Committee of Correspondence was named in Philadelphia in June 1774 Penington was chosen a member and was nominated for the presidency. The following month, July 15, he was elected a deputy for the city and the county of Philadelphia to the first Continental Congress. Opposed to armed resistance, he found himself out of sympathy with the government after the signing of the Declaration of Independence. He has even been considered the author of a piece of Tory poetry, the "Poetical Proclamation," which satirized the committee charged with enforcing the ordinances of the Congress. The poem did appear in his handwriting, but beyond that there is no proof that it was of his composition.

Penington was twice arrested, in 1776 for a few hours, and again in September 1777, when he was sent with a group of nineteen others to the Free Masons' Lodge and later exiled to Winchester, Va., where he remained until April 1778. On his return to Philadelphia he took little active interest in politics until 1790 when he became a member of the city council. The following year he was appointed by the legislature as one of the trustees to distribute money among French refugees living in Philadelphia. He was a manager of the Pennsylvania Hospital from 1773 until his resignation in 1779. He was also a member of the American Philosophical Society, elected on Nov. 25, 1768, and chosen a member of the committee to draft its laws the following January. With the formation of the Society for the Cultivation of Silk, sponsored by the Society, Penington was elected treasurer. He married Sarah, daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (Coates) Shoemaker at Bank Meeting House on Nov. 26, 1754. He died in Philadelphia.

[F. W. Leach, "Old Philadelphia Families," Phila. *North American,* Apr. 26, 1908; J. W. Jordan, ed., *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911), vol. I; C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883); J. F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.* (1844), vol. I; T. G. Morton, *The Hist. of the Pa. Hospital* (1895); *A Hist. of the Schuylkill Fishing Company,* vol. I (1889); G. B.

Wood, *An Address on the Occasion of the Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Pa. Hospital* (1851); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vol. V. no. 1 (1881), vol. VI, no. 3 (1882), Dec. 1884, and Apr. 1908; *Pa. Archives*, vols. I and III (1875).]

E. M. B—n.

PENN, JOHN (July 14, 1729–Feb. 9, 1795), lieutenant governor of Pennsylvania, was the grandson of William Penn [*q.v.*] and the eldest son of Richard (1706–1771) and Hannah (Lardner) Penn. From his father he inherited in 1771 the life use of a quarter of the proprietary rights in Pennsylvania. As prospective heir and later as governor he was largely subject to his uncle, Thomas Penn [*q.v.*], long the principal proprietor and still longer the chief spokesman of the proprietors of the province. He incurred the displeasure of his elders on account of a youthful marriage to a daughter of one James Cox of London, whom he was compelled to repudiate. He was then sent with a tutor to Geneva to study at the University (1747–51) and from 1752 to 1755 was in Pennsylvania, where he was made a member of the provincial council. He attended as commissioner the Congress on Indian affairs at Albany in 1754. Little is known of his life in England in the years that followed, but in 1763 he returned to America commissioned by his father and uncle as lieutenant governor. Upon the death of his father in 1771 he returned to England for about two years, during which time his brother Richard [*q.v.*] held office, but in 1773 he returned in his former capacity and so continued until the revolutionary movement displaced proprietary control and his authority was superseded by the Supreme Executive Council. The end of proprietary government in Pennsylvania may be dated Sept. 26, 1776, with the last adjournment of the provincial assembly. The governor's acts and meetings of the council closed nearly a year earlier.

Penn's official tasks were extremely difficult. There were new boundary disputes with Connecticut and Virginia, while the long-standing controversy with the Lords Baltimore of Maryland was not settled until the running of the Mason and Dixon line in 1767. Indian affairs, though distinctly better after the treaty of Fort Stanwix in 1768, were always troublesome. Penn had to deal with both disgruntled Indians and rabidly vengeful frontiersmen, like the famous "Paxton Boys." Hostility between people and proprietors represented by assembly and council respectively developed as a result of demands of quit rents by the proprietors and claims by the assembly of their right to tax proprietary land. The conflict came to a climax in 1764 when the assembly petitioned the king for the transfer of the colony from the Penns to the Crown. Besides the Anti-Proprietary party, which had the leadership of Benjamin Franklin and the support of the Quakers, there was a strong group in favor of the Penns' control, including Justice William Allen [*q.v.*], whose daughter became John Penn's second wife, and other influential citizens. The Stamp Act soon diverted animosity against the proprietary into hostility against the royal government, but John Penn's position remained difficult. Naturally the proprietors were, like many of the upper class in Pennsylvania, Loyalists in sympathy at the time of the Revolution. In fact, for a few months in 1777, John Penn was held a prisoner on parole, though he was never found guilty of any overt act against the American cause.

Open hostility to the British Crown would have jeopardized their powers of government, yet the Penns were not wholly averse to the more orderly and moderate ambitions of independence. John Penn seems to have yielded gracefully to the course of events. He received his share in the settlement made upon the former proprietors in the divestment act of 1779, which granted to the descendants of Thomas and Richard Penn the retention of all their private estates and proprietary manors and a compensation of £130,000. Except for some years spent abroad, he continued to reside in Philadelphia or at his country estate, "Lansdowne," on the Schuylkill, until his death. On May 31, 1766, he had married Ann, eldest daughter of Chief Justice William Allen of Philadelphia, and grand-daughter of Andrew Hamilton [*q.v.*]. She survived him, dying July 4, 1830. Apparently he left no children. His marriage brought him in touch with the local society and he enjoyed the personal respect of the Philadelphians. He was a member of the Church of England and was buried in Christ Church, Philadelphia. (That he lived in Bucks County in later life and died there and that his remains were subsequently transferred to England was stated in Watson's *Annals*, but the statements are unconfirmed.)

[Besides the general histories of Pennsylvania see H. M. Jenkins, *The Family of William Penn* (1899), with portraits; Arthur Pound, *The Penns of Pa.* (1932), weak in regard to the later Penns; W. R. Shepherd, *Hist. of Proprietary Govt. in Pa.* (1896); C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883); W. C. Armor, *Lives of the Governors of Pa.* (1873); J. F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.* (2 vols., 1830–44). Original records of the proprietary government have been published in part in *Pa. Archives*, in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, and in the *Memoirs of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.*; a large quantity, unpublished, are preserved in the custody of the Hist. Soc. of Pa., Philadelphia.]

H. J. C.

PENN, JOHN (May 6, 1740–Sept. 14, 1788), signer of the Declaration of Independence, was born in Caroline County, Va., the son of Moses and Catherine (Taylor) Penn. His father was well to do, but made no effort to secure any education for his son beyond the little he could obtain in a country school of that day. After the death of his father, Penn's kinsman, Edmund Pendleton [*q.v.*], gave him the use of a fine library in which he studied and read law to such profit that he was licensed at twenty-one. Two years later, July 28, 1763, he married Susannah Lyme.

He practised law with success for some twelve years in Virginia, and in 1774 moved to the neighborhood of Williamsboro in Granville County, N. C., where many of his relatives lived. There, having an attractive personality and ability as a speaker, he became a leader and in 1775 was sent to the provincial congress, where he served on numerous committees and won a reputation for tireless industry. Within a month he was elected to the Continental Congress. He soon lost hope of any adjustment with England and declared: "My first wish is that America may be free; the second that she may be restored to Great Britain in peace and harmony and upon Just terms" (*Colonial Records, post,* X, 456). His service in Congress was performed at great personal sacrifice. Others retired but he held on, writing to his friend, Thomas Person, "For God's sake, my Good Sir, encourage our People, animate them to dare even to die for their country" (*Ibid.,* X, 450). As a member of the provincial congress at Halifax in April 1776, he favored the instruction to vote for independence, and returned to Philadelphia in time to vote for and sign the Declaration. He was a member of Congress until 1777, was elected again in 1778, and served until 1780. The task of the North Carolina delegates was by no means purely legislative; "they combined the functions of financial and purchasing agents, of commissary generals, reporters of all great rumors or events, and in general bore the relation to the remote colony of ministers resident at a foreign court" (E. A. Alderman, *Address . . . on the Life of William Hooper,* 1894, p. 33, quoted by Ashe, *post*). They had to buy military supplies, arrange shipment, and conduct intricate financial operations. All these things Penn did besides attending regularly the sessions of Congress. One contemporary allusion suggests that he found some relaxation from labor in Philadelphia society. Some light is thrown upon his character by his conduct in a certain affair of honor. Henry Laurens, president of Congress, challenged him to a duel, but since they boarded at the same place, they took breakfast together on the morning of the day set for the meeting and then started out together for the meeting place. After Penn had assisted his elderly opponent across an almost impassable street, he suggested that they abandon their foolish proceeding, to which proposal Laurens agreed.

In 1780 Penn became a member of the North Carolina board of war. Upon him fell the major part of the work of that body, and he rendered able service, although the board was unpopular with the army and opposed by the governor, whose constitutional powers it curtailed. It was abolished in 1781 at the insistence of Gov. Thomas Burke. Penn had declined a judgeship in 1777, and in July 1781, on the plea of ill health, he refused to serve on the council of state. Robert Morris appointed him receiver of taxes in North Carolina for the Confederation, but he retained the place only a few weeks. He returned to the practice of law, and little is known of the remainder of his life.

[S. A. Ashe and others, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.,* vol. VIII (1917); *The Colonial Records of N. C.,* vols. X–XI (1890–95); *The State Records of N. C.,* vols. XIII–XVI (1896–98), XIX (1901), XXII (1907); John Sanderson, *Biog. of the Signers to the Declaration of Independence,* vol. VI (1825); *Wm. and Mary Quart.,* Oct. 1903, p. 130; E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Continental Cong.,* vols. I–V (1921–31).]

J. G. deR. H.

PENN, RICHARD (1735–May 27, 1811), lieutenant governor of Pennsylvania, was the second son of the proprietor of the same name (1706–1771) and his wife, Hannah Lardner, and was a grandson of William Penn [*q.v.*], founder of the province. He was a student for a time, though not a graduate, of St. Johns College, Cambridge. For many years he drifted about without settling down to any profession. Coming to Pennsylvania with his brother John [1729–1795, *q.v.*] upon the latter's appointment as governor in 1763, he took some part in public affairs until his return to England in 1769. Two years later, when his father's death called his brother home, he was appointed as lieutenant governor by his brother and his uncle, Thomas [*q.v.*], who were then sole proprietors. In August 1773 he was abruptly superseded by his brother, John. He evidently felt himself wronged either by his removal from office or by the settlement of his father's estate, and was not reconciled to his brother for some months. During his residence with the people of Pennsylvania Richard Penn had secured their confidence, and when he returned to England in 1775 the Continental Congress, then sitting in Philadelphia,

Penn

entrusted to him the delivery of the "Olive Branch," their final address to the King. This petition he presented, and when it was being considered in the House of Lords he was questioned as to the American colonies, for whose claims he had much sympathy and understanding.

For the rest of his life, except for a brief residence in Philadelphia near its close, Richard Penn lived in England. He was returned four times to Parliament, sitting once for Appleby (1784–90), twice for Haslemere (1790, 1806), and once for Lancaster (1796–1802). His financial situation was apparently straitened during the Revolution, when there was little income from sources in Pennsylvania. From 1787 on he began to receive a share in the funds voted by the newly formed state to descendants of its former proprietors, an interest that was at least trebled at the death of his brother John in 1795. The usual view of his character is that he "possessed a fine person, elegant manners, was of a social disposition, and a *bon vivant*. He was the most popular member of his family who visited Pennsylvania after the death of the Founder" (Thompson Westcott, *The Historic Mansions and Buildings of Philadelphia,* 1877, p. 253). On May 21, 1772, while governor of Pennsylvania, Richard Penn married Mary (1756–1829), daughter of William and Mary Masters and grand-daughter of Thomas Lawrence [*q.v.*]. Of their five children, two sons named William and Richard had some distinction of mind, but none left any children.

[See bibliography under John Penn, 1729–1795.]

H. J. C.

PENN, THOMAS (Mar. 9, 1702–Mar. 21, 1775), proprietor of Pennsylvania, son of William Penn [*q.v.*], the Quaker statesman, and of Hannah Callowhill, his second wife, was born in Bristol, England, in the house of his grandfather, Thomas Callowhill, for whom he was named. About 1715 or 1716 he was sent from the home of his parents in Ruscombe, Berkshire, to London to enter a business career, apparently first in the employ of Michael Russell, mercer, and later as partner in a commercial establishment whose name is unknown. In 1718 his father died, leaving the proprietary interests in Pennsylvania to his widow as executrix for their four sons; but her rights were contested and not established until 1727, after she herself and the youngest son, Dennis, had died. The mortgages on the estate made in the founder's lifetime were not extinguished until some years later. The three surviving sons of William and Hannah Penn divided the proprietorship, half going to the oldest, John, and a quarter each to Thomas and Richard. John died in 1746, bequeathing his half share to Thomas. In 1732 Thomas came to Philadelphia, where he managed the proprietary affairs of the province for nine years. In 1741 he went back to England expecting to return to Pennsylvania, but he never did so, and his further dealings with the officials of the province and his own representatives there were carried on by correspondence.

From his correspondence (preserved in great abundance in the Historical Society of Pennsylvania) and from other evidence, Thomas Penn appears to have been a man of energy and ability. The financial difficulties that had overshadowed the last years of his father's life and the widowhood of his mother were gradually relieved by an increased income to the proprietary from sales of land to immigrants. On Aug. 22, 1751, Thomas Penn married Lady Juliana Fermor (1729–1801), fourth daughter of Thomas, first Earl of Pomfret. In 1760 he purchased the well-known estate of Stoke Poges, in Buckinghamshire, England, which remained in the family for eighty years. Of his eight children, four died in infancy. The others were Juliana, John, Granville, and Sophia Margaretta. To heirs of the last named the Penn property in Pennsylvania so far as it was not already lost to the family at last reverted, all other lines descended from William Penn's marriage to Hannah Callowhill having become extinct in 1869.

Thomas Penn's Quaker origin did not determine his religious allegiance in later life. In 1743 he wrote of the Quakers that he "did not hold their opinions concerning defence," adding, "I no longer continue the little distinction of dress" (H. M. Jenkins, *The Family of William Penn*, 1899, p. 145); and after his marriage he accounted himself a member of the Church of England. Yet he did not wish to be estranged from the Friends, and it was because he was a dissenter from the Church of England that he was prevented by the Test Act and the requirement of an oath from assuming, even when on the spot, the actual governorship of Pennsylvania when such office seemed to him both natural and desirable (see unpublished letters from John Penn in 1733, Historical Society of Pennsylvania). But the descendants of William Penn were very early contrasted unfavorably with their ancestor and failed to command the regard in which he was held by whites as well as by Indians. The Indians, particularly, resented what appeared to some of them a fraudulent purchase, in 1737, of the Forks of the Delaware,

made under the terms of the "Walking Purchase." Whatever opprobrium this famous transaction deserves belongs to Thomas Penn, who must have authorized it directly. He was unsuccessful in conciliating even the white colonists, either by personal graciousness during his presence or by effective skill and sympathy in dealing with them through his agents. Nevertheless, as the first Penn to visit the colony after 1704, and as the holder for nearly thirty years of three-fourths of the proprietary and family land in Pennsylvania and Delaware, he was an important figure in the public affairs of Pennsylvania and, except for his father, more influential in its history than any other member of the family. The proprietary form of government was one that could not last, however, and the colony became increasingly intransigent and covetous of complete liberty. It is significant that ten years before Thomas Penn's death and the beginning of the American Revolution the Pennsylvanians were petitioning that jurisdiction over the province be transferred from the proprietors to the Crown.

[See bibliography under John Penn, 1729–1795.]

H. J. C.

PENN, WILLIAM (Oct. 14, 1644–July 30, 1718), founder of Pennsylvania, born near the Tower of London, was the son of Admiral Sir William Penn (1621–1670) and Margaret Jasper, whose father was John Jasper, a merchant of Rotterdam, later of Ireland. Even in childhood Penn was religiously inclined and, although his father adhered to the Anglican faith, the son early came under occasional Puritan influences. After completing about two years at Christ Church College, Oxford, he was expelled in 1662 on account of his non-conformist scruples and activities. This was much to the chagrin and anger of his father, who next sent him on a continental tour to turn him from his extreme religious inclinations. In Paris young Penn seemed for a time to be influenced by court society, as his father desired. Later, however, attending for a time a Huguenot Academy at Saumur, he seems to have received impressions favorable to his later peace principles and to inward spiritual religion (Brailsford, *post,* pp. 120–24). Recalled home by his father at the outbreak of the Dutch War (1665), he had a glimpse of naval activities, sailing with the fleet and returning with dispatches for the King. In this year his mind was again turned to serious contemplation by the horrors of the Great Plague. At this period also he attended Lincoln's Inn for about a year, learning enough law to help him later in business affairs and in meeting the legal issues of religious persecutions. Early in 1666 he went to Ireland, where he took charge of some estates near Cork owned by his father. At this time he again tasted worldly pleasures at the brilliant court of the Duke of Ormonde, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He also showed some military prowess in helping to quell a mutiny—and at this time his well known portrait in armor was made.

The great turning point of his life was, however, at hand. He heard again the powerful preaching of Thomas Loe, an early Quaker apostle, who had influenced him some years before. Continuing to attend the meetings of Friends, he was soon in trouble with the authorities and was for a time in prison—where he composed his first appeal for liberty of conscience (*Works,* 1726, I, 2–3; Janney, *post,* 1 ed., pp. 24–25). Released from prison and summoned sharply to England by his father, he soon became an avowed and active Friend. With tongue and pen he vigorously advocated the doctrines of Friends and of political liberalism. Thus the great convictions of his life were definitely shaped and settled. In 1669, while imprisoned in the Tower of London for publishing his unorthodox work, *The Sandy Foundation Shaken* (1668), he composed the first draft of his famous *No Cross, No Crown* (1669; see also edition 1930, p. X), directed against luxury, frivolity, vicious amusements, and economic oppression. Near this time also, besides many religious tracts, he wrote several on political subjects, which together formed a noble and convincing plea for religious toleration, security of person and property, and other rights of free Englishmen. In 1670, after he and William Meade had been arrested for preaching in Gracechurch Street, the liberties of Englishmen were so ably pleaded by Penn himself that the case (the noted "Bushell's Case") resulted first in an acquittal for the defendants, and later in an outstanding victory for the freedom of English juries from the dictation of judges (Braithwaite, *post,* pp, 70–73, with references). In 1670 Admiral Penn died, with a blessing on his lips for the son who came from prison to his bedside. Soon after this the son made a missionary journey through Holland and parts of Germany, spreading the Quaker faith. Returning to England he married, on Apr. 4, 1672, the beautiful and devoted Gulielma Maria Springett, daughter of Mary (Proude) Penington by her first husband, Sir William Springett.

The next half-decade of Penn's life, 1675–1680, saw a continuation of his activities in religion and politics, and the beginning of his connection with America. He made a second mis-

sionary journey to the Continent in 1677, in the company of prominent Friends, including George Fox. He visited many towns of Holland and western Germany, winning the interest and affection of various groups of Protestant mystics who were later to settle in his American province. He and some of his fellow apostles formed a notable friendship with the learned and pious Elizabeth, Princess Palatine, upon whom the Quaker teachings made a lasting impression. Returning to England, Penn threw himself with renewed zeal into the political struggles of the last troubled years of the Stuart régime. In these labors he received little support and some opposition from the Quakers, who suffered periodic persecutions and tended to withdraw from "worldly" activities. Penn urged them to take their proper part in the struggie for liberal government. He threw himself actively into two political campaigns for the election to Parliament of his Whig friend, Algernon Sidney. Some of his finest political pamphlets are of this period. In spite of the friendly connections at Court, inherited from his father, he was a forthright champion of toleration for dissenters, frequent elections, and uncontrolled Parliaments (see especially "England's Great Interest in the Choice of this New Parliament," *Works*, 1726, II, 678–82).

His first connection with America was with New Jersey. By a series of transactions West Jersey came into the hands of Friends, and Penn became one of the trustees to manage the property. In 1677 the ship *Kent* arrived in the Delaware River with two hundred settlers to found the town of Burlington. The colonists brought with them the famous Concessions and Agreements for their government (W. A. Whitehead, ed., *Archives of the State of New Jersey*, 1 ser., I, 1880, pp. 241 ff.). Historians are in general agreement that this great charter of liberties came largely from the hand of William Penn. It was the first fruit of his hard schooling in English politics, and his first gift to American government. The charter guaranteed to the settlers the right of petition and of trial by jury. It provided against arbitrary imprisonment for debt, and made no provision for capital punishment even for treason. It guaranteed religious freedom, stating that "no Men, nor number of Men upon Earth, hath Power or Authority to rule over Men's Consciences in religious Matters" (*Ibid.*, I, 253). It provided friendly methods for the purchase of Indian lands. In jury trials in which Indians were concerned the jury was to be composed of six Indians and six whites. These guarantees of personal rights and

Penn

of justice formed a rather complete bill of rights, and they were reinforced by the first clear statement in American history of the supremacy of the fundamental law (in the Concessions) over any statutes that might be enacted (*Ibid.*, I, 266). The Assembly was to dominate the government of the province. It was to be freely elected by the settlers and was to serve for one year only —a gesture against the long and controlled Parliaments of the Stuart régime in England. There was to be complete freedom of speech in the Assembly, and the public was to be admitted freely "to hear and be witnesses of the votes." There was no clear and definite provision for an executive, and the Assembly later conceded to the proprietors the appointment of governors. Yet the Assembly was to be "free and supream" and there was no provision for an executive veto. Thus it was not without justification that Penn and his friends said of these Concessions and Agreements: "There we lay a foundation for after ages to understand their liberty as men and Christians . . . for we put the power in the people" (Samuel Smith, *History of the Colony of . . . New Jersey*, 1765, pp. 80–81). Penn later became a member of a large group of proprietaries, a majority of whom were Quakers, who secured title to East Jersey. However, the rights of government held by this proprietorship were soon brought into question, and by another chain of events Penn transferred his chief interest to his great province west of the Delaware River. His greatest gift to the Jerseys was his part in the Concessions and Agreements of 1677, which have been called "the broadest, sanest, and most equitable charter draughted for any body of colonists up to this time" (C. M. Andrews, *Colonial Self-Government*, 1904, p. 121).

Penn's next and greatest venture into the realm of practical politics was in Pennsylvania. He had inherited from his father, besides a considerable fortune immediately available, a large claim for funds loaned by the Admiral to Charles II. On petition of Penn, the King granted him in 1681, as payment for this debt, a great tract of land north of Maryland. Penn wished to call his province New Wales, or Sylvania, but the King insisted that it be named, in honor of the late Admiral, "Pennsylvania." In 1682 Penn secured from his friend the Duke of York the territory of Delaware, which was at first joined to the government of Pennsylvania but later became a separate province. Penn called his new project a "Holy Experiment" and threw himself with enthusiasm into his plans for it. In 1681 he sent over his cousin, William Markham [*q.v.*], to act as his deputy, and himself followed the

next year. He spread broadcast his proposals to settlers, not forgetting his converts on the continent of Europe. His terms for the purchase or rental of land were very liberal and soon attracted large numbers of settlers.

Penn's first Frame of Government for his province was dated Apr. 25, 1682, and appended to it a few days later (May 5) were the Laws Agreed upon in England (Original copy of the Frame of Government in State Library, Harrisburg, Pa.). The government thus provided for was not so strikingly democratic as that of West Jersey described above, the Proprietor being influenced perhaps by the prospective large landholders whom he consulted (W. R. Shepherd, *History of Proprietary Government in Pennsylvania,* 1896, p. 237, note 1). Thus very large powers were given to the Council, as compared with the Assembly. Yet both Council and Assembly were elective, and the governor was given a rather minor place. The fundamental liberties of the individual were guaranteed. Murder and treason were the only crimes made punishable by death. All believers in God "shall in no ways be molested or prejudiced for their religious Persuasion or Practice in Matters of Faith and Worship, nor shall they be compelled at any Time to frequent or maintain any religious Worship, Place or Ministry whatever." Penn's basic belief in a democratic system was tersely expressed in the preface to his great Frame of Government: "Any Government is free to the People under it (whatever be the Frame) where the Laws rule, and the People are a Party to those Laws." Many details of Penn's plan of government were changed upon his arrival in America. The Assembly was self-assertive from the start and the Proprietor was disposed to grant all reasonable requests. He soon learned, however, that he could not please all of the people all of the time, and that the perennial demand of democracy is for more democracy. It was not long before he was driven to write to a group of his contending provincials: "I am sorry at heart for your animosities. . . . For the love of God, me, and the poor country, be not so governmentish, so noisy, and open, in your dissatisfactions" (Robert Proud, *History of Pennsylvania,* 1798, I, 297, note).

The brightest page in Penn's political record is the story of his dealing with the American Indians. Even before his own arrival in Pennsylvania he sent them his message of friendship: "I have great Love and Regard towards you, and I desire to win and gain your Love and Friendship by a kind, Just and Peaceable Life" (*Works,* 1726, I, 122). Perhaps the tradition of the Proprietor's jovial fraternizing with the Indians in their feasts and games has been overemphasized. No doubt the glorification of his Quaker peace policy by uncritical historians has been overdone. Yet the residue of plain truth is a worthy testimonial to William Penn. He did take measures to protect the Indians from the ravages of rum and the rapacity of white traders. He did make every effort to satisfy them in his negotiations for their lands. His best testimonial is that the Indians themselves were deeply loyal to him and always held his name in loving respect (R. W. Kelsey, *Friends and the Indians, 1655–1917,* 1917, pp. 62 ff., *et passim*). Not until his descendants, who forsook his faith and his just policy, had betrayed and defrauded the natives, did the frontiers of Pennsylvania know the terrors of savage warfare. Thus the Indians were faithful on their side to the promises made to William Penn at various treaties with him, "that the Indians and English must live in Love as long as the Sun gave Light." Tradition has fused these treaties into one great treaty "under the elm tree at Shackamaxon," made famous by the brush of Benjamin West, and aptly idealized by Voltaire as the only treaty "between those people and the Christians that was not ratified by an oath, and was never infringed" (*Letters Concerning the English Nation,* 1926 reprint, p. 22).

Penn's first stay in his colony lasted only a year and ten months, but he crowded much into that time. Aside from his cares of government he superintended the laying out of Philadelphia and began the building of his own mansion-house at Pennsbury, some miles up the Delaware River. He made a tour of inspection into the interior of Pennsylvania. He visited New York, Long Island, and the Jerseys. He went to Maryland and later to New Castle to discuss his unhappy boundary dispute with Lord Baltimore. He attended Friends' meetings, and preached when he felt "called." He composed his long and well-known letter (Aug. 16, 1683) to the Free Society of Traders in England, describing with great fulness the woods, waters, animals, men, produce, and all the various possibilities of his great province (*Works,* 1726, II, 699–706). Then, in the midst of his arduous but happy tasks, conditions compelled his return to England, where the Quakers were suffering renewed and bitter persecution and needed his influence at Court. Lord Baltimore, moreover, had already gone to urge his boundary claims in London. Wisdom required Penn to follow, and on Aug. 12, 1684, he sailed for England.

On his arrival there he entered another period

of strenuous activity. His old friend the Duke of York succeeding to the throne in 1685 as James II, Penn was able by his enhanced influence at Court to secure the release from prison of about 1,300 Friends. In 1685 he made his third missionary journey to Holland and Germany, and soon afterward was engaged in a preaching tour of England. As a close friend of the King and a constant advocate of toleration, he was now charged, not for the first time, with being a Jesuit in disguise. Nor was this accusation forgotten by his enemies when King James, in 1687, issued on his own royal authority, his famous Declaration of Indulgence. Penn naturally applauded the new policy, although his political liberalism compelled him to urge the King to buttress the Declaration with the sanction of Parliament. As a loyal friend of James he was greatly compromised by the Revolution of 1688 and the accession of William and Mary. More than once he had to answer accusations of disloyalty before the Privy Council and for a time he went into partial retirement in London until the storm of charges and suspicions abated. For nearly two years (1692–94) his governorship of Pennsylvania was forfeited, but was restored after his full and final vindication of all treasonable activities. Yet during these troublous times he wrote his charming maxims of faith and life, *Some Fruits of Solitude* (1693). Also, in 1693, during a war of alliances in Europe, came his famous *Essay towards the Present and Future Peace of Europe, by the Establishment of an European Dyet, Parliament, or Estates,* a significant early plan for confederation, arbitration, and peace. In 1694 died his devoted and beloved wife Gulielma, and on Mar. 5, 1695/96, he married Hannah Callowhill, who proved to be a loyal and efficient helpmeet. In this period he continued his writing and speaking on religious subjects, influencing among others by his ministry Peter the Great, of Russia, who was visiting England. In 1698 he made a business and preaching journey to Ireland. The effectiveness of his public ministry at this time is indicated by a remark of the Dean of Derry, who heard him preach and afterward said that "he heard no blasphemy nor nonsense, but the everlasting truth . . . [and] his heart said Amen to what he had heard" (Graham, *William Penn,* p. 241).

During these busy and troublous years in England the Proprietor of Pennsylvania was not forgetful of his interests in the New World. In 1697 he drew up and presented to the Board of Trade in London the first thorough-going plan for a union of all the American colonies. In this plan he proposed a central Congress to fix

Penn

quotas of men and money in time of war, and to deal with common problems in time of peace (Copy in E. B. O'Callaghan, *Documents Relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York,* IV, 1854, pp. 296–97). He secured a partial settlement of his boundary dispute with Lord Baltimore, although the main issue remained unsettled during his lifetime and long after his death. He gave orders in 1689 for the establishment of a public grammar school in Philadelphia, which was opened in that year and still exists as the William Penn Charter School. Yet his own presence was called for in Pennsylvania and he had long desired to answer the call. There were religious troubles, including the schism of George Keith [*q.v.*]. There were administrative problems and political disputes that had long demanded his presence. Finally "the way opened" and he embarked, this time with his family, arriving at Chester, Pa., Dec. 1, 1699, after an absence of fifteen years from his beloved "woodlands" and his "fine greene Country Towne" of Philadelphia. On his second visit he showed his continued interest in the Indians by various meetings with them, making new agreements and renewing old covenants of friendship. He did what he could to mitigate the evils of slavery in Pennsylvania and made a will providing for the later emancipation of his own slaves. He continued his religious activities and, on a visit to Tredhaven (Easton), Md., preached in the presence of Lord and Lady Baltimore. He took measures for the suppression of piracy, granted a charter to Philadelphia, and most important of all, granted the Charter of 1701 to Pennsylvania. In this he renewed his old guarantee of religious liberty, but changed the form of government as established, 1682–83, and modified under Governor Markham in 1696. The new charter made possible the early establishment of separate legislatures for the province and the territories (Pennsylvania and Delaware). The Council ceased to be an elective body and became practically an advisory board to the governor. The Assembly became a single-chamber legislature, elected yearly by the people, on a wide suffrage. Although the governor retained the veto power, the Assembly could usually find means to coerce him. Its existence did not depend upon his call, and it could "sit upon its own Adjournments." Thus it continued practically supreme in the legislative field until the Revolution. The Charter of Privileges of 1701 came to be revered by the people of Pennsylvania as the palladium of their liberties (printed in *Votes and Proceedings of House of Representatives of Pennsylvania,* I, 1752, part II, pp. 1–111).

Penn had hoped to remain a resident of Pennsylvania but this hope was not realized. On the outbreak of the War of the Spanish Succession a proposal was made in the English Parliament to annex all proprietary colonies to the Crown. Penn's presence in England thus became essential and late in 1701 he again said farewell to his province, this time not to return. Indeed it appears that the constructive work of his life had now been largely accomplished. He was able to retain his proprietorship but his last years were full of trouble and disappointment. He was harassed by almost endless disputes between his governors and the Pennsylvania Assembly. His own choice of deputies and helpers was not always happy. He had serious pecuniary embarrassments and for a time languished in a debtor's prison. He suffered great humiliation and sorrow because of the dissolute life of his son, William Penn, Jr. Yet he continued to some degree his activities of writing and speaking. In 1709, at sixty-five years of age, he traveled "in the ministry" through several counties of England. In 1712 he had almost arranged for a sale of his proprietary government to the Crown when he suffered an attack of apoplexy which soon destroyed his memory and rendered him incapable of further administering his affairs. His faithful wife, Hannah Penn, ably supervised his business interests until his death in 1718 at the age of seventy-four years. In 1727, after her death and that of their youngest son, the proprietorship of Pennsylvania passed into the hands of the surviving sons, John, Thomas [*q.v.*], and Richard Penn.

As a youth Penn was described as well-built, handsome, athletic, and of courtly manners. In later life he became somewhat corpulent but "using much exercise, retained his activity." The portrait as a youth in armor and the Bevan bust show the strength of his facial features. He was an unusual combination of mystic, courtier, and statesman. Apart from his important religious labors, he founded or helped to found three American commonwealths (New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Delaware), and made a worthy contribution to the political thought of England and Europe. The Quaker "testimony" concerning him (photostat at Haverford College) drawn up after his death by Reading Monthly Meeting of Friends, England, was no doubt a deserved tribute: "He was a Man of great Abilities, of an Excellent sweetness of Disposition, quick of thought, & ready utterance; full of the Quallification of true Discipleship, even Love without dissimulation . . . he may without straining his Character be ranked among the Learned good & great."

[There are two authentic portraits of Penn: the one of him as a youth in armor, of which an original, or an authentic contemporary copy, is in the Hall of the Hist. Soc. of Pa., Philadelphia; and an ivory medallion bust of him in old age, made from memory after his death by his friend, Sylvanus Bevan. Possibly the portrait by Francis Place is also authentic (Graham, *post*, p. 330). There are biographies as follows: "Journal of His Life," prefixed to Joseph Besse, *A Collection of the Works of William Penn* (2 vols., 1726); Thomas Clarkson, *Memoirs of the Private and Public Life of William Penn* (2nd ed., 2 vols., 1814); W. H. Dixon, *William Penn: An Historical Biography* (2nd ed., 1852); S. M. Janney, *The Life of William Penn* (1852); S. G. Fisher, *The True William Penn* (1900), reprinted as *William Penn* (1932); J. W. Graham, *William Penn, Founder of Pa.* (1917), containing a summary, pp. 310–13, of the various refutations of Macaulay's aspersions upon Penn; M. R. Brailsford, *The Making of William Penn* (1930); Bonamy Dobrée, *William Penn, Quaker and Pioneer* (1932); C. E. Vulliamy, *William Penn* (1934). On his relation to Stuart politics, see P. S. Belasco, *Authority in Church and State* (1928). For the family see H. M. Jenkins, *The Family of William Penn* (1899); and Arthur Pound, *The Penns of Pennsylvania and England* (1932). For the setting of his life work see W. C. Braithwaite, *The Second Period of Quakerism* (1919); and R. M. Jones, *The Quakers in the Am. Colonies* (1911). The *Dictionary of National Biography* emphasizes the European side of Penn's life, as the above account does the American side. A small but important contribution by A. C. Myers, "William Penn, His Own Account of the Delaware Indians, 1683," announced for early publication, contains a brief sketch of Penn's life.

The writings of Penn are largely listed in Joseph Smith, *A Descriptive Catalogue of Friends' Books* (2 vols., 1867), and *Supplement* (1893); also M. K. Spence, *William Penn: A Bibliography* (1932). Besides the collection of Joseph Besse (above), may be cited *Select Works of William Penn* (1771); *The Select Works of William Penn* (5 vols., 1782); Deborah Logan and Edward Armstrong, *Correspondence between William Penn and James Logan* (2 vols., 1870–72; Pubs. of Hist. Soc. of Pa., vols., IX, X). The largest collection of Penn materials, printed and manuscript, in England, is in Friends' Library, Euston Road, London. For this and other collections in England see C. M. Andrews and F. G. Davenport, *Guide to the Manuscript Materials for the Hist. of the U. S. to 1783, in the British Museum* (1908). The largest collections in America, including the important private collection of A. C. Myers, are at 1300 Locust St., Phila., Hall of the Hist. Soc. of Pa. The libraries of Haverford and Swarthmore colleges should also be consulted. Some biographers have been at odds as to whether Penn's mother was actually Dutch, as stated by Pepys, or Anglo-Irish. A. C. Myers stands with Pepys and thus holds that William Penn was "half a Dutchman."] R. W. K.

PENNELL, JOSEPH (July 4, 1857–Apr. 23, 1926), etcher, sprang from an unbroken line of Quakers. His ancestors left Nottinghamshire, England, in 1684, for Pennsylvania, and for generations were husbandmen, until Larkin Pennell, Joseph's father, broke the family tradition by becoming a teacher and later a shipping clerk. He married Rebecca A. Barton. Joseph, born in their quiet house on South Ninth Street, Philadelphia, was their only child. He attended Quaker schools in Philadelphia and later in Germantown, to which place his family moved in 1870. He was a nervous, moody child and preferred to be alone to draw pictures. Often ill, he had fre-

quent accidents, becoming left-handed after he broke his right arm.

In 1876 he graduated from the Germantown Friends' Select School and, in spite of the opposition of his parents, tried to enter the school of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts, but was rejected and became a clerk for a coal company at seven dollars a week. It was probably some "perversity" of the romantic, impractical Welsh-Irish blood in his veins that made him, from the first, worship beauty with the same veneration which his sober Quaker relatives accorded to their God, and determined him to become an artist. He joined the night classes of the Pennsylvania School of Industrial Art and soon met Stephen Ferris, who taught him the technique of etching and showed him the work of the Spanish artists Fortuny, Rico, Casanova, and Fabres. Pennell was inspired to imitate the chaste clarity of their pen-and-ink drawings and their brilliant effects of warm, glittering sunshine.

With the Friends' habit of speaking his mind, he severely criticized his school for teaching too much mechanical drawing, and cut so many classes that he was dismissed. One of his instructors, Charles M. Burns, the architect, discerned his promise and persuaded the Pennsylvania Academy School to reconsider and admit him as a pupil; so Pennell abandoned his clerkship and, devoting all his time to art, began to work with the extraordinary industry which never slackened during the rest of his life. Too sensitive to stand the unsympathetic criticisms of Thomas Eakins [*q.v.*], he left the school and about 1880 hired a studio of his own. Almost immediately he became self supporting, for he had not only a good journalistic sense, but also a gift for salesmanship. This was proved when he took his drawings of a picturesque marsh in South Philadelphia to New York and sold them to Alexander Wilson Drake [*q.v.*], then art editor of *Scribner's Monthly*. They appeared in July 1881, and Drake, very much pleased, ordered eight etchings of historical buildings in Philadelphia. Charles Godfrey Leland [*q.v.*] was invited to write the text, but suggested that his niece, Elizabeth Robins, do it instead. This collaboration led to the meeting of Pennell and his future wife. Their first article, "A Ramble in Old Philadelphia," was published in March 1882 in the *Century*, which had succeeded *Scribner's*.

The same year Pennell was commissioned to go to New Orleans to illustrate a series of articles by George W. Cable [*q.v.*], later published in book form as *The Creoles of Louisiana* (1884). Pennell reveled in the insanitary picturesqueness, the good wine, and beguiling cuisine of the old Latin city, and worked with an ecstatic energy, taking time only to write rhapsodic letters to Elizabeth Robins with graphic little sketches on their margins. The New Orleans etchings and drawings made such a stir that Pennell, at twenty-five, had achieved success, and the *Century* asked him to go to Italy to illustrate articles by William Dean Howells [*q.v.*] on Tuscan cities. Early in 1883 he joined Howells in Florence, and in a month had finished all the necessary drawings. Then he wandered over Italy, thrilled by its beauty, and his enthusiasm gave birth to a series of Italian plates that were remarkable for so young an artist. He returned by way of England and Ireland, executing various commissions for magazine articles on the way, and was back in Philadelphia by October, ready to plunge into a mass of hack drawings for the *Century*.

He swept Elizabeth Robins into his welter of work by marrying her in June 1884, and they sailed immediately for Europe. He was to make more illustrations for *Tuscan Cities*, but an outbreak of cholera in Italy decided the pair to go to London. In the beginning of August they set out on a tandem bicycle to ride to Canterbury, stopping often for Pennell to sketch while Mrs. Pennell took copious notes. The result was a small illustrated book, *A Canterbury Pilgrimage* (1885), described by Andrew Lang in a leader in the London *Daily News* as "the most wonderful shilling's worth modern literature has to offer" (*Life and Letters*, I, 149). In October they finally started for Italy and rode a tricycle from Florence to Rome. He sketched and she wrote and they never missed an art museum. This was the pattern of all their "holidays." In succeeding summers they quartered Europe on wheels, and on one trip rode ten in succession of the highest passes over the Alps. They became the most articulate couple alive, for all their reactions to art, life, and beauty were given expression in the wife's poised and cultivated prose and the husband's eloquent graphic illustrations. The record of these "holidays" fills some twelve volumes.

In 1884, in spite of his ardent Americanism, Pennell decided to live in London because most of his commissions, though from America, were for European drawings, and he could not afford either the time or the money for long ocean voyages. His picturesque, earnest personality, his strong, outspoken convictions and his instant willingness to defend them, soon made him a distinctive figure; and Mrs. Pennell's charm and tact drew around them the few Pre-Raphaelites

still living and a group of many of the best known literary men, artists, publishers, and journalists of the day; among them Henley, "Bob" Stevenson, Edmund Gosse, Bernard Shaw, Heinemann, and of course, Whistler.

Pennell's etchings made an immediate impression and were first shown at the Exhibition of the Society of Painter-Etchers in 1885. He had struck his stride and was producing an amazing amount of work, but so great was his artistic integrity that he never slighted a single line. Most of his product was reproduced in the *Century* but some appeared in *Harper's* and in many of the best English magazines. In addition, he illustrated books by P. G. Hamerton, Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer, Justin McCarthy, Washington Irving, Henry James, George W. Cable, F. Marion Crawford, Maurice Hewlett, and many besides. In 1888 he accepted the position of art critic on the *Star,* a London ha'penny daily, but after launching a few attacks—which made London gasp—against the Royal Academy for its pompous shows of huge anecdotal canvases, he was bored by the work and it was Mrs. Pennell who continued it, as she did later on the *Daily Chronicle,* for years conducting both columns.

Pennell believed there was as much art in printing from the plates as there was in making them and that both processes were equally the business of the etcher. In 1892, therefore, he bought a press and from then on, with a few rare exceptions, pulled his own proofs. Always an explorer in new techniques, he experimented with pen, pencil, wash, Russian charcoal, etching, and even mezzotint. When photo-engraving began to replace woodblocks for reproducing illustrations, Pennell, ignoring the contention of William Morris and his disciples that the new process would only vulgarize art, felt it his duty to study the invention to see how it could best be made to serve the cause of illustration, which he felt should be kept alive and contemporaneous.

His close association with Whistler made it only natural that lithography would eventually attract him; but it was not until the approaching centennial of the art had focussed the attention of such artists as Toulouse-Lautrec, Willette, Steinlen, Louis Legrand, and Odilon Redon, and he had seen their lithographs in Paris at the spring Salon of 1895, that Pennell really became enthusiastic over the process. As a result, he persuaded Fisher Unwin to agree to bring out a book on *Lithography and Lithographers* (published in 1898), as a companion to his *Pen Drawing and Pen Draughtsmen,* which had been published in 1889. When he went to Spain in 1896 to illustrate *The Alhambra,* transfer paper and lithographic chalk went with him. These first lithographs were delicate and charming but a trifle anæmic and gray in comparison with the bold ones he was to make later.

Pennell refused to regard illustration as a minor art and fought valiantly to raise it in the public esteem; so when the organization of the Society of Illustrators was suggested in 1895, he threw himself into the project with all his usual steam-engine vigor; but it soon died of inanition and Pennell became a member of the council of the newly formed International Society of Sculptors, Painters and Gravers, and hung the water colors and prints of its first exhibition in 1898. This was so successfully accomplished that he was often invited to serve on committees and juries of international art exhibitions on the Continent, where he worked hard to make the best work of his countrymen known in Europe. He was a devastating critic of anything he considered slipshod, but petty personal jealousy never kept him from extolling the excellent work of others. He searched out Vierge in Paris, made Fisher Unwin arrange a show of his work in London and bring out an English edition of *Pablo de Segovia* with his illustrations, for which Pennell wrote an appreciative preface. For Charles Keene, who contributed subtly humorous illustrations to *Punch,* he did the same thing; and he was the first to praise in print the work of Aubrey Beardsley.

It was during these years that the Pennells' intimacy with Whistler ripened and culminated in his request that they write his biography. To this end he gave them many notes and suggestions before he died in 1903. Three years later, Rosalind Birnie Philip, Whistler's executrix, brought suit to enjoin the Pennells and Heinemann from publishing the *Life.* The trial resulted in their favor, however, and their "authorized edition" of *The Life of James McNeill Whistler* appeared in 1908 and was followed by *The Whistler Journal* in 1921.

Together with other artists Pennell founded the Senefelder Club in London in 1909, to bring lithographers together and hold exhibitions of their prints. The art seemed to him a medium peculiarly well adapted to the portrayal of black masses of factories with their belching smoke, which were beginning to fascinate him as subjects. He described these industrial transcriptions as "The Wonder of Work" (*Joseph Pennell's Pictures of the Wonder of Work,* 1916), and after doing some of them at Birmingham and Sheffield, he sailed in 1912 for Panama to draw the Canal. He never surpassed this series of

lithographs for richness of color and virile strength. From Panama he went to San Francisco where he etched a set of plates, and stopped on his way across the continent to do lithographs of the Yosemite and the Grand Canyon, and a series of Washington, which rivaled those of Panama. Mrs. Pennell joined him in their native city and they devoted some months to the preparation of *Our Philadelphia,* published in 1914.

From 1884 to 1912 Pennell was primarily engaged in familiarizing America with the picturesqueness of Europe through the medium of his illustrations in magazines and books. After his journey across the United States, however, he became progressively obsessed with interpreting the beauty of his own land. Nevertheless he continued for a while to live in London and to do European subjects. In 1913 he made a series of lithographs in Greece, later reproduced in *Joseph Pennell's Pictures in the Land of Temples* (1915). When the World War broke out in 1914 he was in Berlin doing more lithographs, but he returned to England immediately and spent the balance of that year helping stranded Belgian artists and organizing picture sales to aid the refugees. After the Panama-Pacific International Exposition in San Francisco in 1915, where he served on the art jury, he made lithographs and drawings of British plants engaged in war work. The War Ministry, realizing their value as propaganda, arranged to show them in London and they were later published as *Joseph Pennell's Pictures of War Work in England* (1917). He sold his lease of the Adelphi Terrace studio to Sir James Barrie, with the intention of returning to the United States, but before he could leave, the French government invited him to make war drawings, so he crossed the Channel in May 1917, but returned almost immediately, unable to stand at such close range the horrors of war. A little later he tried again, managed to do a few unimportant drawings at Verdun, and, on the verge of a nervous breakdown, took ship for the United States. There he recovered his poise and threw himself into making drawings of the industrial war activities of America and volunteer work for the government as a vice-chairman of the division of pictorial publicity, Committee on Public Information.

In 1921 he went with his wife to Washington to make arrangements for exhibiting the valuable collection of Whistleriana they had presented to the Library of Congress. When the exhibition was over they moved to the Hotel Margaret in Brooklyn, where Pennell was enthralled by the gorgeous panorama of New York and its harbor,

Pennell

visible from their window. On an earlier visit in 1904 to serve on the jury of the Louisiana Purchase Exposition at St. Louis, Pennell had etched his first New York sky-scraper. Now he became even more enthusiastic and spent his time suggesting on paper their overpowering mass and the grandeur of their groupings. By way of relaxation he did water colors of the view from his window in all its different atmospheric changes.

In 1922 he was invited to teach etching at the Art Students' League in New York, and threw himself into the work with the keenest gusto. He shared with his pupils all the secrets of his craft, and, during the four years he served, made an eminently successful teacher, for he had rare ability and fired his students with the ambition to work and to experiment. This success was all the more remarkable because he had earned a reputation for being querulous and fault-finding. He resented and was disheartened by the spirit and manner of the polyglot New York which he found upon his return after thirty-three years abroad. Prohibition, too, increased his pessimism, and his fulminations against it became increasingly lurid, picturesque, and frequent, for he believed that "there can be no art in a Dry Desert filled with drunken Hypocrites which we are become" (*Life and Letters,* II, 303). This railing arose partly from his convictions but more from the fact that he was overworked. Making plates, working at his press, teaching, writing *The Adventures of an Illustrator* (1925) and superintending its typography, serving as art critic on the *Brooklyn Eagle* until his outspokenness was more than the journal could stand, helping run the New Society of Sculptors, Painters and Engravers, fulminating against billboards, and lecturing overtaxed his strength, and in 1923 he had a serious illness. As soon as he recovered he was off again at the same pace, and consequently, when in the spring of 1926 he contracted pneumonia, he had no reserve. He died in the Hotel Margaret in Brooklyn, and was buried in the graveyard of the Friends' Germantown Meeting House. By the terms of his will, at the death of his wife their whole estate was to revert to the Library of Congress to found a Chalcographic Museum, complete the Whistler and Pennell collections, and acquire the prints of etchers living or less than a hundred years dead.

Pennell did more than any other one artist of his time to improve the quality of illustration both in the United States and abroad and to raise its status as an art. His incessant industry produced over nine hundred etched and mezzotint plates, some six hundred and twenty-one litho-

graphs, and innumerable drawings and water colors. He was the first to make the varied aspects of industry recognized subjects for the artist. Aside from their artistic value, his prints and drawings will have an ever-increasing historic interest. Not only has he left his graphic portrayals of war work in America and England, but his pictures of ever-changing American cities, and even of London, will soon be records of a reality that has passed. He was a member of numerous societies both in the United States and Europe, was awarded medals at many expositions, and his work is represented in museums and galleries in various parts of the world, including the Luxembourg, Paris; Uffizi, Florence; British Museum and South Kensington Museum, London; Library of Congress, Washington; Art Institute of Chicago; Brooklyn Museum; Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York; Cleveland Museum of Art; and The Prado, Madrid.

[Pennell said he was born in 1860 and believed his birth records had been destroyed by fire, but after his death they were discovered and proved he had been born in 1857. The sources for his life are his own *Adventures of an Illustrator* (1925), and three books by his wife, Elizabeth Robins Pennell: *The Life & Letters of Joseph Pennell* (1929), *Our House and London out of Our Windows* (1912), and *Nights* (1916). See also L. A. Wuerth, *Catalogue of the Etchings of Joseph Pennell* (1928) and *Catalogue of the Lithographs of Joseph Pennell* (1931); Arthur Tomson, "Joseph Pennell," *Art Journal* (London), Aug. 1900; H. W. Singer, "On Some of Mr. Joseph Pennell's Recent Etchings," *International Studio* (N. Y.), Feb. 1907; Frank Weitenkampf, "Joseph Pennell," *Die Graphischen Künste* (Vienna), Jan. 1910; Grace Irwin, *Trail-Blazers of American Art* (1930); *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 24, 1926. *The Lib. of Cong., Joseph Pennell Memorial Exhibition Catalogue* (1927) has the best bibliography so far printed, but it cannot be entirely relied upon.] E. L. T.

PENNIMAN, JAMES HOSMER (Nov. 8, 1860–Apr. 6, 1931), educator, author, and bibliophile, was born in Alexandria, Va., the son of James Lanman and Maria Davis (Hosmer) Penniman. Both parents were of distinguished colonial ancestry. His father was a graduate of Yale College, as were also a number of relatives. Among his ancestors on his father's side were Roger Wolcott and Matthew Griswold [*qq.v.*], both governors of Connecticut, Judge Charles Church Chandler, a member of the Continental Congress, and Judge James Lanman, senator from Connecticut. On his mother's side were the Rev. Peter Bulkeley [*q.v.*] and James Hosmer, founders of Concord, Mass., and Dr. Jonathan Prescott and his son, Col. Charles Prescott, distinguished colonial gentlemen. His mother grew up in Concord at the time when it was an intellectual center. Thus, through inheritance and environment, she developed ability, character, and charm of personality that undoubtedly exercised a strong influence upon her son. James

prepared for college at the Free Academy of Norwich, Conn., and graduated from Yale College in 1884. After a year spent as a private tutor in Glyndon, Md., he began teaching in DeLancey School, Philadelphia, and became head of the Lower School in 1900, a position which he held until his retirement in 1913. In connection with his teaching he wrote a number of articles and books, including *A Graded List of Common Words Difficult to Spell* (1891); *Prose Dictation Exercises from the English Classics* (1893); *The School Poetry Book* (1894); *Practical Suggestions in School Government* (1899); *New Practical Speller* (1900); *Books, and How to Make the Most of Them* (1911); and *Children and Their Books* (1921).

Meanwhile he became a collector of Washingtoniana and an authority on the history of America in the eighteenth century, writing *George Washington as Commander-in-Chief* (1917); *George Washington as Man of Letters* (1918); *George Washington at Mount Vernon* (1921); *Our Debt to France* (1921); *What Lafayette Did for America* (1921); and *Philadelphia in the Early Eighteen Hundreds* (1923). He had planned and largely completed at the time of his death a two-volume work on George Washington that was to have been published in 1932, and had proposed as a part of the celebration of the bi-centennial of Washington's birth the building of the "Highway of the Thirteen Original States" from Washington to "Mount Vernon." His mother having died in 1914, he founded in her honor in 1915 the Maria Hosmer Penniman Memorial Library of Education at the University of Pennsylvania. In 1920 he established the Penniman Memorial Library of Education at Yale University, which contains more than 80,000 volumes and has become one of the largest libraries of education in the world, and in 1921 he founded the Penniman Memorial Library of Education at Brown University. A man of varied interests, he had a keen relish for sport, especially professional baseball, and a fondness for animals that found expression in a delightful book, *The Alley Rabbit* (1920). He died suddenly at his home in Philadelphia and was buried in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, Concord, Mass.

[*A Hist. of the Class of Eighty-Four, Yale Coll., 1880–1914* (1914); *Bull. of Yale Univ.: Obit. Record of Grads. Deceased During the Year Ending July 1, 1931*; *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Colonial Families of the U. S.*, vol. VII (1920); *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Apr. 7, 1931; *Pa. Gazette*, May 1, 1931.] A. L. L.

PENNINGTON, JAMES W. C. (1809–October 1870), teacher, preacher, and author, was born in slavery on the Eastern Shore of Mary-

land. While he was a slave he was known as Jim Pembroke. In his own story of his early life he recalls the desolate, terrifying days of his childhood, deprived of parental care, lacking education, and shrinking from the tyranny of his master's children and the brutality of the overseers. When he was four years old he was given, with his mother, to his first master's son, Frisbie Tilghman of Hagerstown, and was taken to live in Washington County. At nine he was hired out to a stone mason. Returning two years later to the home plantation, he was trained as a blacksmith and followed that trade until he was about twenty-one, when he decided to run away. After experiencing hunger, exhaustion, and escape from capture, he was welcomed one morning by a Pennsylvania Quaker with the friendly greeting, "Come in and take thy breakfast, and get warm" (*The Fugitive Blacksmith, post*, p. 41). He spent six months in this home, and under the guidance of his Quaker teacher, laid the foundation of an extensive education. Some months later he found work on western Long Island, near New York City; he attended evening school, and was privately tutored. Five years after his escape he qualified to teach in colored schools, first at Newtown, L. I., then at New Haven, Conn. While at New Haven he studied theology, and pastorates in African Congregational churches at Newtown, L. I. (1838–40) and at Hartford, Conn. (1840–47) followed. His scholarship and pulpit eloquence attracted favorable attention in Hartford, and he served twice as president of the Hartford Central Association of Congregational Ministers, the membership being all white except himself. During this time he examined two candidates (one a Kentuckian) for their licenses to preach. Closely identified with measures to help his race, he was five times elected a member of the General Convention for the Improvement of Free People of Colour, and in 1843 was sent to represent Connecticut at the World's Anti-Slavery Convention at London. He was also the delegate of the American Peace Convention to the World's Peace Society meeting in London the same year. While in Europe he lectured or preached in London, Paris, and Brussels.

Until a short time before the passage of the "Fugitive Slave Law" (1850) he kept secret, even from his wife, the fact that he was a runaway slave. Fearing recapture, he appealed to John Hooker, of Hartford, to negotiate for his freedom and went abroad until his status should be determined. After many discouragements, a payment of $150 to the estate of his one-time master brought a bill of sale, and a deed of manumission was recorded in the town records

Pennington

of Hartford, June 5, 1851. In the meantime Pennington had become the first pastor of the First (Shiloh) Presbyterian Church on Prince Street in New York City. This pulpit he occupied for eight years (1847–55). During this time his story of his early life, *The Fugitive Blacksmith* (preface dated 1849; 3rd ed., 1850) was published in London, the proceeds of the sale of the same being intended to aid in financing the new church. He had previously published *Text Book of the Origin and History, &c, &c of the Colored People* (1841). A few of his sermons and addresses survive, including *Covenants Involving Moral Wrong Are Not Obligatory upon Man: A Sermon* (1842), and *The Reasonableness of the Abolition of Slavery* (1856). In 1859 he contributed to the *Anglo-African Magazine* several articles on the capabilities of his race. After 1855 he is listed in the *Minutes* of the Presbyterian General Assembly as a member of the Third New York Presbytery, without a pastorate, his address appearing as New York, Hartford, occasionally Maine. During his last years his usefulness was much impaired by the excessive use of intoxicants (Brown, *post*). In 1869 or early in 1870 he went to Florida, hoping to benefit his health, and at Jacksonville he gathered together a colored Presbyterian church, but he died there soon after.

[In addition to *The Fugitive Blacksmith*, see John Hooker, *Reminiscences of a Long Life* (1899); Wilson Armistead, *A Tribute for the Negro* (1848), containing an autographed portrait; W. W. Brown, *The Rising Son; or, The Antecedents and Advancement of the Colored Race* (1874); W. J. Simmons, *Men of Mark* (1887); Hartford (1843–49) and New York City (1848–68) directories; Hartford Town Records; references in the Tappan Papers, *Jour. of Negro Hist.*, Apr.-July 1927; *Minutes of the Gen. Assem., Presbyt. Ch. in the U. S. A.*, 1871, p. 601, which gives date of death as Oct. 20; *N. Y. Observer*, Nov. 10, 1870, which gives date of death as Oct. 22.] A. E. P.

PENNINGTON, WILLIAM (May 4, 1796–Feb. 16, 1862), governor of New Jersey, congressman, was the son of Phoebe (Wheeler) and William Sandford Pennington [*q.v.*]. He was born in Newark, N. J., received an elementary education in the local schools, and was graduated from the College of New Jersey (Princeton) in 1813. After studying law with Theodore Frelinghuysen [*q.v.*] he was licensed as attorney in 1817, as counselor in 1820, and as sergeant-at-law in 1834. While his father was district judge in New Jersey he acted as clerk of the district and circuit courts from 1817 to 1826. Meanwhile his geniality, candor, and oratorical powers were bringing him an ever-enlarging and remunerative practice as well as making numerous political friends for him. In 1828 he was a member of the state Assembly from Essex Coun-

ty as an Adams Democrat. Later the Pennington became Whigs, and when in 1837 the Whigs controlled the state legislature he was elected governor and chancellor of New Jersey. He was reëlected annually five times. An imposing man of six feet two, he was known as a genial companion, somewhat of a "character" but possessing, nevertheless, a good deal of common sense. Contemporaries testify that both juries and assemblies fell an easy prey to his eloquence. His decisions as chancellor (1, 3 *Green Chancery Reports*) are brief but clear and pointed. He was not a learned jurist and is said to have bragged in early life that he would get along with as little study as possible. Yet his good judgment preserved him from grave mistakes; only one of his decisions as chancellor was reversed.

Out of the fact that New Jersey had been a doubtful state from the very beginning of the century there developed the chief political excitement of his tenure as governor, namely the "Broad Seal" War. He had been elected governor in 1837 over the Democratic incumbent, Philemon Dickerson [*q.v.*]. The following year Dickerson and four other Democrats claimed to have been elected in five of six congressional districts. One seat was not challenged; it was admittedly Whig. The county clerks certified all six Whigs as elected. In spite of the accusations of corruption Pennington held that he had no authority to go behind the returns and placed the great seal of New Jersey upon the certificates of the six Whigs. In the federal House of Representatives the parties stood so nearly equally divided that the admission of one or the other group of claimants would determine its organization. After ten days of acrimonious debate, it organized with a compromise speaker and three months later admitted the Democratic claimants. Pennington was bitterly attacked for his partisanship in not investigating the questionable returns, and, on the other hand, he was defended loyally by those who resented the refusal of Congress to accept without question the official certificates bearing the state seal.

When in 1843 a Democrat replaced him as governor he withdrew from politics to practise before the higher courts of the state. His ambitions to be chancellor, which had become an appointive office under the new constitution, or to be a minister in Europe were not realized, and he refused posts as governor of Minnesota Territory and as claims judge under the Mexican treaty. His last venture in politics led to another exciting episode in congressional history. He was elected to Congress in 1858, when the House was again deadlocked over its organization, and

it was only after eight weeks of debate, balloting, and negotiation that the moderates of both parties were able to agree upon him as a compromise speaker. As a newcomer he was totally unfamiliar with the procedure, and many were the stories told of his ignorance. He died in Newark, survived by his wife, Caroline (Burnet) Pennington, the daughter of Dr. William Burnet, 1730–1791 [*q.v.*].

[L. Q. C. Elmer, "The Constitution and Government of . . . New Jersey," *N. J. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. VII (1872); *N. J. Law Jour.*, July, Aug. 1897; F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State* (1902), vol. III; J. T. Nixon, "The Circumstances Attending the Election of Wm. Pennington . . . as Speaker," *N. J. Hist. Soc. Proc.*, 2 Ser., vol. II (1872); A. C. M. Pennington, *The Pennington Family* (1871), reprinted with additions from *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1871. *Newark Daily Advertiser*, Feb. 17, 1862.] H. M. C.

PENNINGTON, WILLIAM SANDFORD (1757–Sept. 17, 1826), governor of New Jersey and jurist, was the son of Mary (Sandford) and Samuel Pennington. He was the descendant of Ephraim Pennington who emigrated from England to New Haven, Conn., before 1643 and whose son, also named Ephraim, was one of the early settlers of Newark, N. J., where William Sandford Pennington was born three generations later. His Revolutionary War diary, 1780–81, written while he was an officer of artillery stationed at and near West Point and now preserved in the library of the New Jersey Historical Society at Newark, shows a facility of language that bears witness to a good education. There is reason to believe that he learned the trade of a hatter. On the breaking out of Revolutionary hostilities he joined the Continental Army. He became a sergeant in the 2nd Regiment of Artillery on Mar. 7, 1777, second lieutenant in 1780 to rank from Sept. 12, 1778, and at the end of the war was mustered out as a captain by brevet. He entered business at Newark, and he was elected to the state Assembly in 1797 and reëlected in 1798 and 1799. He read law in the office of Elias Boudinot [*q.v.*].

In 1801, while still serving his clerkship, he was elected a member of the council, which, in addition to its legislative functions, acted with the governor as a final court of appeals and court of pardons. In 1802 he was licensed as an attorney-at-law, in the same year was reëlected to the council, and in 1803 was appointed county clerk of Essex County. In February 1804, before he had completed the three years of practice as an attorney necessary to qualify him for license as a counselor-at-law, he was elected by joint meeting of the Council and Assembly to fill a vacancy in the supreme court, the chief justice of which was Andrew Kirkpatrick [*q.v.*]. Notwithstand-

ing Pennington's short experience as a practitioner, his mature age, natural abilities, and strong common sense supplemented by diligent study enabled him from the beginning to perform the duties of the office to the entire satisfaction of the bar and public. In 1806 he published a *Treatise on the Courts for the Trial of Small Causes,* which he revised and published in a second edition in 1824. In 1806, under a new statute, he was appointed reporter to the supreme court and served as both justice and reporter until 1813. The two volumes of his reports (*2, 3 N. J. Reports*) contain the opinions of the supreme court, including his own, from 1806 to 1813 and are still essential to any New Jersey law library. In 1812 he was put forward by the Republican party for the office of governor but was defeated by a vote of twenty-two to thirty. In 1813 he defeated his former opponent by a vote of thirty to twenty, and he was reëlected in 1814. As governor he was also chancellor and presided in the court of chancery. In 1815 he was appointed by President Madison as judge of the federal district court for New Jersey and held that office until his death. He was married twice: first, about 1786, to Phoebe, the daughter of James Wheeler, an officer of the Revolution, and second, after her death, to Elizabeth Pierson.

[L. Q. C. Elmer, "The Constitution and Government of N. J.," *N. J. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. VII (1872); F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State* (1902), vols. III, IV; W. S. Stryker, *Official Register of the Officers and Men of N. J. in the Rev. War* (1872); A. C. M. Pennington, *The Pennington Family* (1871), reprinted with additions from *New-Eng. Hist. & Geneal. Register,* July 1871; *N. J. Law Jour.*, July, Aug. 1897; *Fredonian* (New Brunswick), Sept. 20, 1826; *True American* (Trenton), Sept. 23, 1826.]

C. W. P.

PENNOCK, ALEXANDER MOSELY (Oct. 1, 1814–Sept. 20, 1876), naval officer, was born in Norfolk, Va., the son of a prominent Norfolk shipping merchant and naval agent, William Pennock, of the firm of Pennock and Myers. Though left an orphan early in life, he received a good education, and on the recommendation of Capt. James P. Preston and others, was appointed midshipman to fill a Tennessee vacancy Apr. 1, 1828. His promotion to passed midshipman came in June 1834, after he had made cruises in the *Guerrière* of the Pacific Squadron and the *Natchez* of the Brazil Squadron. He then served in the *Potomac* in the Mediterranean and in the *Columbia* in the East Indies, where he led a ship's division in an expedition against the pirates of Quallah Battoo, Sumatra, on New Year's day, 1839. He was advanced to the rank of lieutenant the following March, and in this capacity served in the *Decatur* of the Brazil Squadron from 1843 to 1846, and in the store-ship *Supply* during the Mexican War. Following a second eastern cruise in the *Marion,* 1850–52, he had his first extended shore duty as lighthouse inspector, 1853–56, and again, after commanding the steamer *Southern Star* in the Paraguay Expedition, he was lighthouse inspector at New York.

In spite of his Southern family connections and property interests, he remained loyal to the Union in the Civil War, and on Sept. 20, 1861, was among the senior officers detailed under Capt. A. H. Foote [*q.v.*] to take over the building of gunboats at St. Louis for the Mississippi flotilla. The following October Foote made him fleet captain in special charge of flotilla equipment, and from the beginning of 1862 until the end of 1864, he commanded the naval base established at Cairo, Ill., where he gained a reputation as one of the best wartime executives of the navy. In estimating his work Charles Henry Davis, 1807–1877 [*q.v.*], Foote's successor, wrote, "I cannot use any language too strong to convey a just idea of Capt. Pennock's private and official merit. He is devoted to all his duties, with a simple, honest, straightforward zeal, which gives to the performance of them the zest of pleasure" (*Confidential Correspondence of Gustavus Vasa Fox,* II, 1919, 67). David Dexter Porter [*q.v.*], who followed Davis, declared him "a trump . . . and worth his weight in gold" (*Ibid.,* 140). His command was "literally afloat in wharf boats, old steamers, flatboats, or even rafts, as the government owned no land at that point . . ." (D. D. Porter, *The Naval History of the Civil War,* 1886, p. 135). In addition to the multifarious duties of supply and repair for the distant flotilla, the scope of which is revealed in the mass of his correspondence in the official records of the Civil War, he had immediate command of boats operating in the Tennessee and Cumberland rivers. He was made captain on Jan. 2, 1863, and when Porter left the flotilla in September of the following year, Pennock exercised general command for two months.

After the war he was stationed at the Brooklyn navy yard and then sailed on June 28, 1867, in command of the *Franklin,* flagship of Admiral Farragut's European Squadron, to visit French, Russian, Scandinavian, English, and Mediterranean ports. Both Mrs. Farragut and Mrs. Pennock, who were cousins, accompanied their husbands on this cruise, which proved a constant round of celebrations and entertainments for the distinguished admiral (J. E. Montgomery, *Our Admiral's Flag Abroad,* 1869). Pennock was

made commodore on May 6, 1868, and succeeded Farragut in command of the European Squadron from October 1868 to February 1869. He was commandant of the Portsmouth navy yard, 1870–72, and, after promotion to the rank of rear admiral in 1872, was in command of the Pacific Squadron from May 1874 to June 1875. He died suddenly of heart trouble at the Rockingham Hotel, Portsmouth, N. H. Pennock's wife was Margaret, daughter of George Loyall of Norfolk, Va., and he was buried in the Loyall family plot in that city.

[The birth-date accepted in this sketch has been taken from Pennock's tombstone in Norfolk, though Nov. 1, 1813, appears in naval records. For additional biographical data, see: L. R. Hamersly, *The Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (1870); Henry Walke, *Naval Scenes and Reminiscences of the Civil War* (1877); *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Sept. 21, 1876.] A. W.

PENNOYER, SYLVESTER (July 6, 1831–May 31, 1902), governor of Oregon, was born at Groton, N. Y., the son of Justus P. and Elizabeth (Howland) Pennoyer, both natives of New York. His father was a well-to-do farmer, a community leader, and at one time member of the state legislature. The son went to Homer Academy and at intervals taught several short terms in rural schools. He graduated from the Harvard Law School in 1854. The next year he went by way of Nicaragua to San Francisco and then to Puget Sound, where for a brief period he attempted the practice of law, but he soon removed to Portland, Ore. In 1856 he married Mrs. Mary A. Allen. After six years of teaching he entered the lumber business in 1862, which, together with shrewd investments in Portland real estate, in a few years made him a wealthy man. In 1868 he purchased the *Oregon Herald*, a Democratic newspaper that he continued to edit until 1871. His political career began in 1885, when he suffered a severe defeat as a candidate for mayor of Portland. In that same year he gained a state-wide reputation as a leader in a movement against Chinese laborers, which brought him the Democratic nomination for governor in 1886. He was elected and was reëlected for a second term in 1890. In 1896 he was elected for a two-year term as mayor of Portland.

During his long career he did and said many things that made him seem "peculiar, eccentric, and demagogic" to his more conservative contemporaries (*Morning Oregonian*, May 19, 1890). During the Civil War he had openly sympathized with the Confederacy and afterward advocated the payment of government bonds with federal notes and the issuance of "fiat money." While he was governor he made many recommendations for what seemed to him the necessary liberalization of government. However, throughout his two terms he was confronted by legislative assemblies controlled by his Republican opponents, and in consequence few of his recommendations received legislative approval. He was also severely criticized for too liberal use of his pardoning power. He recommended compulsory arbitration for labor disputes. In 1888 in a threatened conflict between railroad workers and their employers over arrears of wages he intervened to effect a settlement satisfactory to both sides. This experience led him to advocate "a most stringent law" to compel all contractors to make weekly payment to their employees. In his messages to the legislature he asserted that the practice of courts in nullifying legislative enactments was a usurpation of power. He asked for strong legislation against monopoly; he protested against the growing practice of delegating the governor's authority to commissions; and he advocated abolishing the numerous commissions and boards, such as the fish and railroad commissions and the immigration board. He vigorously urged appropriations for the common schools, while at the same time opposing further state support for the state university and agricultural college since that was a tax on all the people for the benefit of the few. He advocated the removal of debt exemptions in tax assessments that had been approved by the legislature in 1891, the taxing of all incomes in excess of $1,000 on a graduated scale, a poll tax of two dollars on every male over twenty-one, a tax upon the gross receipts of express, telegraph, and insurance companies, and anticipated the establishment of a state tax commission in asking for state control of the county tax assessors. He repeatedly vetoed a Portland water bill, finally passed over his veto in 1891, because it provided for the sale of tax-exempt bonds. This action gained him such popularity as to be accounted, by the opposition press, the principal cause of his reëlection as governor in 1890. By 1892 he had passed over to the Populist party. He wrote an article for the *North American Review* (Oct. 1892) on "The Paramount Questions of the Campaign." By this time he had become bitterly hostile to President Cleveland. In his Thanksgiving message of 1893 he recommended to the people that they pray that the President and Congress be guided to restore silver to the position of full legal-tender money, and at Christmas 1893 he addressed a long letter to President Cleveland on this same theme. In 1894 he pro-

claimed a Thanksgiving day a week later than the one set by Cleveland.

[H. W. Scott, *Hist. of the Ore. Country* (1924), vols. I, III–V, comp. by L. M. Scott; H. K. Hines, *An Illustrated Hist. of Ore.* (1893); Joseph Gaston, *Portland, Ore.* (1911), vol. I; *Oregon State Jour.* (Eugene), May 22, 1886, May 17, 1889, May 3, June 7, 1890, May 2, Oct. 24, 1891, Mar. 11, June 17, 1893; *Morning Oregonian* (Portland), May 31, 1902.] R. C. C—k.

PENNYPACKER, ELIJAH FUNK (Nov. 29, 1804–Jan. 4, 1888), reformer, was born in Schuylkill Township, Chester County, Pa. He was the son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Funk) Pennypacker and the descendant of Heinrich (or Hendrick) Pannebäcker, a Mennonite who came from the Low Countries to Pennsylvania before 1699. He was the uncle of Galusha Pennypacker [*q.v.*]. The family was prosperous, and he was educated at the boarding school of John Gummere [*q.v.*] of Burlington, N. J., where he followed the bent of his master toward mathematics, surveying, and such practical studies. He married, first, Sarah W. Coates in 1831 who had no children and who died ten years later. In 1843 he married Hannah Adamson, who bore him nine children. Both wives were members of the Society of Friends, which he too joined in 1841, being drawn not only by such family ties but also by the anti-slavery sentiment that was a ruling factor in his life. In his early life he taught for a few years, practised surveying, and devoted himself to farming. Between 1831 and 1836 he served several sessions in the state legislature, where his reputation for uprightness and ability attracted the attention of such men as Thaddeus Stevens and Joseph Ritner. His loyalty to what he thought right must have become irksome at times in legislative halls, for Stevens was once minded to tell him not "to be so damned honest" (Still, *post*, p. 689). While in the legislature he served ably in many ways: as secretary to the board of canal commissioners in 1836 and 1837 and a member of that board in 1838, as chairman of the committee on banks, as sponsor for the bill for incorporation of the Philadelphia Reading Railroad, and as collaborator with Thaddeus Stevens in the establishment of the common-school system of Pennsylvania. A career in politics was undoubtedly open to him, but he declined to continue in this path, being unwilling, as one has said, "to hold office under a government that sanctioned human slavery" (Jordan, *post*, p. 492).

After his retirement from public affairs, in 1839, he joined heartily in the abolition movement, serving from time to time as president of the local society and also as head of the Chester

Pennypacker

County and the Pennsylvania state anti-slavery societies. His house near Phoenixville, Pa., became one of the stations on the Underground Railroad, and his two-horse wagon was a frequent carrier of black-skinned human freight that sought its way toward the North Star and to freedom. Of the "Railroad" he said, whimsically, when the work was done, that its "stock was never reported in money circles, nor dividends declared, but means were ready as long as necessity required. The Emancipation Proclamation of Abraham Lincoln dissolved the Corporation" (Jordan, *post*, p. 492). He was also prominent in the temperance movement and its candidate for state treasurer in 1875. Woman's emancipation and her equal education also found in him a hearty supporter. His character did not fail to impress his fellow citizens. Whittier said of him, "In mind, body, and brave championship of the cause of freedom he was one of the most remarkable men I ever knew" (statement of Isaac R. Pennypacker in letter Jan. 27, 1931); and another declared, "If that is not a good man, there is no use in the Lord writing His signature on human countenances" (Still, *post*, p. 688).

[Wm. Still, *The Underground Rail Road* (1872); J. W. Jordan, *Colonial Families of Philadelphia* (1911), vol. I; J. S. Futhey and Gilbert Cope, *Hist. of Chester County, Pa.* (1881); S. W. Pennypacker, *Annals of Phoenixville* (1872); *Village Record* and *Local News* of West Chester, Pa., both of Jan. 5, 1888; date of birth from Pennypacker's daughter.] T. W.

PENNYPACKER, GALUSHA (June 1, 1844–Oct. 1, 1916), soldier, was born in Schuylkill Township, Chester County, Pa., the son of Joseph J. and Tamson Amelia (Workizer) Pennypacker and the nephew of Elijah Funk Pennypacker [*q.v.*]. His first American ancestor was Heinrich (or Hendrick) Pannebäcker who emigrated to Pennsylvania before 1699. His grandfather had fought in the Revolution, and his father was an officer in the War with Mexico. When Galusha was still in his fourth year, his mother, a French Canadian, died, and his father went to California leaving the boy in care of his grandmother, Elizabeth Funk Pennypacker. He was educated in the private schools of Phoenixville and Schuylkill Township. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he enlisted for three months in the 9th Regiment of the Pennsylvania Volunteers serving as quartermaster-sergeant. On the expiration of his term of enlistment, he returned home and recruited Company A, 97th Pennsylvania Volunteers, of which he was elected captain on Aug. 22, 1861. He was promoted rapidly and attained the rank of colonel by Aug. 15, 1864. On Feb. 18, 1865, he

was appointed brigadier-general of Volunteers, the youngest officer of that rank in the war, and less than a month later was made major-general. He served with distinction at Fort Wagner, Drewry's Bluff, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Green Plains, and Fort Fisher, being wounded seven times in eight months. At Fort Fisher, on Jan. 15, 1865, he led his brigade in a charge across a traverse of the work and planted the colors of one of his regiments on the parapet where he fell seriously wounded. For this act of gallantry he was awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor in 1891.

He resigned from the service on Apr. 30, 1866, but the following July he was appointed colonel in the regular army and assigned to the 34th Infantry. He was again brevetted brigadier and major-general for his conduct at Fort Fisher and for his services during the war, and on Mar. 15, 1869, he was transferred to the 16th Infantry which he commanded until his retirement in 1883. From 1869 to 1877 his regiment was established in the South with headquarters at Nashville, Tenn., and was engaged in assisting the civil authorities in carrying out the Reconstruction Act of Congress. Pennypacker exercised endless patience and tact in executing this very delicate mission and, without departing from his duty, he won the respect and affection of the Southern people and did much to reconcile them to the Federal government. After 1877 he did frontier duty in the Indian country of the West. He was finally retired for disability as the result of his wounds. Urged to be a candidate for governor of Pennsylvania in 1872 he declined on the ground that he had no taste for politics. He never married but spent the last years of his life in lonely retirement at his home in Philadelphia. He died on Oct. 1, 1916, and was buried with the simple rites of the Society of Friends in the Philadelphia National Cemetery.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903); Hamilton H. Gilkyson, "The Life and Services of General Galusha Pennypacker," in G. M. Philips, *An Account of Twenty-One Citizens of West Chester, Penn.* (1919), vol. I; J. S. Futhey and G. Cope, *Hist. of Chester County, Penn.* (1881); *Press* (Phila.), Oct. 2, 1916.]

C. E. T. L.

PENNYPACKER, SAMUEL WHITAKER (Apr. 9, 1843–Sept. 2, 1916), lawyer, judge, governor of Pennsylvania, bibliophile, historian, was born at Phoenixville, Pa. the son of Anna Maria Whitaker and Isaac Anderson Pennypacker and a descendant of Heinrich (or Hendrick) Pannebäcker, who emigrated to Pennsylvania before 1699. The father was a practitioner and university teacher of medicine. Unable to go to college, Samuel left school in 1859. After working in a country store, teaching in a country school, and serving for a few weeks in the army of 1863, he studied law and was admitted to the bar on May 19, 1866. The following July he graduated in law from the University of Pennsylvania. Prompt election to successive offices in the Law Academy (of which he became president at the age of twenty-four) attested the respect he commanded among his young fellow practitioners. For many years his practice was small; but sound judgment, and learning acquired by exceeding industry and evidenced in professional publications, eventually brought him important clients. He was appointed judge in Common Pleas No. 2 of Philadelphia in 1889 (qualified, Jan. 12), to which office he was elected in November for a ten-year term and reëlected in 1899, after having become president judge of the court two years previously. Patient attention to counsel, ample learning, sound sense, and promptitude in disposal of his cases made his judicial service very satisfactory to the bar. Especially as a *nisi prius* judge he was highly praised. On the bench he was no innovator, nor did his many convictions and strong prejudices deflect his legal judgments, but as governor he later sought to curb what he regarded as particular abuses in the administration of the law. From 1885 to 1889 he served on the Board of Public Education of Philadelphia.

Nominated in June 1902 for governor, he was immediately attacked for "Quayism." Matthew S. Quay [*q.v.*] was a relative; they had common literary interests; they were friends. Pennypacker was always loyal in friendship, nor would he deny every virtue to political bosses. After talking with complete frankness with the people, he was elected by an unprecedented vote. He immediately declared publicly his purpose to consult with all persons, but "especially with . . . politicians," believing this both unavoidable and desirable for popular government. His record, however, was marked by entirely reasonable independence in appointments and measures, and by many excellent accomplishments. Nevertheless, his administration (Jan. 20, 1903–Jan. 14, 1907) was stormy. From judicial life he had derived strong convictions that legislation was excessive, that many statutes were absurd, and that there was an inordinate disposition to multiply statutory crimes. By pressure, vetoes (63 in 1903, 123 in 1905), and threats to veto, he cut by half the legislative output and improved its quality. Every attempt to create a new crime was blocked. He had other convictions: that corporations should not be chartered with

nominal capital as mere trial-balloons, or with capitalization too small to protect the public; that water companies should not be delegated powers of eminent domain; nor coal companies (or other corporations) select and pay state-commissioned police utilizable in labor disputes. He corrected all these abuses. He forced a long-delayed reapportionment of representation in the legislature, as required by the constitution; established a department of health; sponsored direct primaries and improved the election laws, curbing corrupt practices; advanced conservation of forest land and historic sites; paid the state debt, and left a large balance in the treasury, without new taxation and despite the cost of a state capitol.

This last caused one of the two great political turmoils of his gubernatorial term. The furnishings of the capitol involved corruption on a great scale, but nobody ever hinted or believed that he was corrupt, though many thought he should have detected "jokers" in the contracts. The second turmoil arose from his conviction that a sensational press hampered the administration of justice. His "libel bill" of 1903 and his supporting message roused tremendous opposition. The statute merely authorized actions for damages against newspapers for publication of untruths as facts when there was negligent failure to discover their falsity, and required newspapers to publish the names of their editors and publishers. It was repealed in 1907, but the last-mentioned requirement was reënacted. His only public service after his gubernatorial term was as a member of the railroad, and later the public service commission.

Pennypacker's serious historical studies began before 1872, when he became an active member of the Pennsylvania Historical Society. He formed an unrivaled collection of some 10,000 items on Pennsylvania history. He served as president of the Philobiblon Club (1898–1916), as trustee of the University of Pennsylvania (1886–1916), and as president of the Pennsylvania Historical Society (1900–16). To this last position, particularly, he gave unstinted and devoted service. His reading, of which he kept records, was varied in character and vast in quantity and not a little was in foreign languages. In appearance and voice he was decidedly rural. His language, however, immediately showed the scholar. His conversation combined wide information, humor, practical philosophy, and charm. Perfectly simple in his personal tastes and life, by nature informal and unconventional, he maintained well official dignity when occasion required it. He had abundant self-confidence where it was justified, and this doubtless contributed to his successes, but he was modest otherwise, nor did his many strong opinions, or even prejudices, alienate associates. Great vigor, intense interest and endeavor, and extreme conscientiousness were characteristic of him in every undertaking and office. His numerous published writings touch upon his interests in local history and the law. His work as reporter-in-chief of Common Pleas No. 3, 1876–88, is in the *Weekly Notes of Cases* (vols. II–XXIII, 1876–88), but he did work for all the forty-five volumes thereof. His decisions are in the *Pennsylvania County Court Reports* and *Pennsylvania District Courts*, 1889–1902. He died at Pennypacker's Mills, near Schwenksville, Pa., survived by his wife, Virginia Earl Broomall, whom he had married on Oct. 20, 1870, and by their four children.

[See Pennypacker's *Autobiog. of a Pennsylvanian* (1918); H. L. Carson, *An Address Upon the Life and Services of Samuel Whitaker Pennypacker . . . Jan. 8th, 1917* (1917), with bibliography, not complete, of 94 items, and *Samuel W. Pennypacker, An Address Delivered before the Philobiblon Club, Oct. 26, 1916* (1917); *The Pedigree of Samuel Whitaker Pennypacker, Henry Clay Pennypacker* (1892); the *Legal Intelligencer* (Phila.), Dec. 15, 1916; *Report of the Twenty-third Ann. Meeting of the Pa. Bar Asso.* (1917); C. R. Woodruff, "The Paradox of Gov. Pennypacker," *Yale Rev.*, Aug. 1907; *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; T. M. F., "Hon. Samuel W. Pennypacker," *Searchlight Mag.*, Aug. 1912; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Sept. 3, 1916.] F. S. P.

PENROSE, BOIES (Nov. 1, 1860–Dec. 31, 1921), lawyer, political leader, senator, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Richard A. F. and Sarah Hannah (Boies) Penrose. His father, the son of Charles Bingham Penrose [*q.v.*], was a prominent physician, the descendant of a Pennsylvania family long noted for wealth and culture; his mother, who came from a Delaware family of the same type, formed the character of her son along Spartan lines. Boies was prepared for college by private tutors, also at the Episcopal Academy and in the public schools of Philadelphia; he graduated, *magna cum laude* and with honorable mention in political economy, from Harvard in 1881. For two years thereafter he read law under Wayne MacVeagh and George Tucker Bispham, becoming upon admission to the bar a member of the law firm of Page, Allinson and Penrose. Even as student, however, his interest was in public administration rather than in private practice; from this period dates a scholarly treatise, *The City Government of Philadelphia*, published in 1887 in the Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, written by Penrose in collaboration with his law partner, Edward P. Allinson, the later chapters of which contained a

sympathetic appraisal of the Bullitt reform charter of Philadelphia. Such promise as he may then have given of becoming a reformer soon vanished; instead he neglected clients in order to make the acquaintance of the very practical Republican politicians of his own district, the eighth, becoming in 1884 its representative in the lower house of the state legislature, whence after one term he was advanced to the state Senate, serving continuously in the latter from 1887 to 1897. In 1895 he was defeated by Charles F. Warwick for the Republican nomination for the mayoralty of Philadelphia; but two years later with the support of Matthew Quay, the state leader, he defeated John Wanamaker for the nomination to the United States Senate, in which he served from 1897 until his death, being elected three times by the legislature and twice by direct popular vote. As senator his interest was chiefly in higher tariff rates; membership on the finance committee and, after the retirement in 1911 of Nelson W. Aldrich [*q.v.*], its chairmanship, greatly enhanced his influence. He became known also as an opponent of prohibition, woman's suffrage, and Progressive policies generally, yet upon occasion he befriended the direct primary in Pennsylvania. After Quay's death in 1904 Penrose succeeded to the leadership of the Republican organization in the state, retaining it, with the exception of the Progressive interregnum of 1912, to the end of his career. He was a member of the Republican National Committee and played a prominent part in the national conventions of that party in 1900, 1904, 1908, and 1916. During 1912 Penrose became involved in a bitter controversy over campaign contributions which was instigated by William R. Hearst and participated in vigorously by Former-President Roosevelt. At this time attacks upon him as a cynical boss of the lowest type, which were more or less current during his whole political life, reached a climax.

In his prime Penrose was a giant physically, six feet, four inches in height, powerfully built, and a lover of vigorous outdoor sports, particularly big-game hunting. He was not an orator, never speaking when it could be avoided and then only on subjects which he had mastered thoroughly. However, he was extremely effective in private conferences and committee work; he stumped Pennsylvania successfully in his own behalf after senatorial elections were transferred to the people; and in the course of legislative debates was capable of brief but powerful rejoinder, not infrequently lighted up by sardonic humor and a devastating frankness. Personally, Penrose was inclined to be aloof and dignified; he

Penrose

was at ease in converse with gentlemen but when with his political cronies capable of conduct and utterances which caused the judicious to grieve and moved the pious to indignation. Like most leaders of his type he could be depended upon to keep his word absolutely; unlike them he cared only for power, not for pelf. Through inheritance and fortunate mining investments he was provided with a sufficiency for his moderate needs early in his career; he is said never to have gained a dollar from politics. Master of the Republican machine in his state for eighteen years, in reality Penrose was dominated by it; absorbed as he was by the minutiae of an organization with nearly 5,000 election divisions and from twenty to twenty-five thousand active and hungry workers, it was impossible for him to devote himself to broad national questions and to leave an imprint upon the policy of the country. Thus although qualified by education and ambition, if not by ideals, he failed to achieve statesmanship; nevertheless he was considerably more intelligent and less grasping than his associates and, at times, his opponents, the local Republican leaders, particularly those known as "contractor bosses." He died in Washington, D. C. He had never married. Richard A. F. Penrose, 1863–1931 [*q.v.*] was a younger brother.

[The numerous public and party offices held by Penrose are listed in the *Cong. Directory* and in *Smull's Legislative Hand-Book of Pa.* for 1921 and earlier years. Character sketches are presented by C. W. Gilbert in *The Mirrors of Washington* (1921), pp. 228–41; in articles by C. W. Thompson on "The Senate's Last Leader," *Am. Mercury*, June 1924; and by Talcott Williams on "After Penrose, What?" *Century*, Nov. 1922. The Philadelphia *Public Ledger*, Jan. 1, 1922, contains an obituary article; a number of memorial addresses delivered in the Senate and House, 67th Cong., are reprinted in a government publication entitled *Senators from Pennsylvania . . .* (1924). Walter Davenport, *Power and Glory; The Life of Boies Penrose* (1931), a popular biography, is in reality little more than a *chronique scandaleuse*. For genealogy, see J. G. Leach, *Hist. of the Penrose Family of Philadelphia* (1903).]

R. C. B.

PENROSE, CHARLES BINGHAM (Oct. 6, 1798–Apr. 6, 1857), lawyer and political leader, was born at Philadelphia, the son of Clement Biddle and Anne Howard (Bingham) Penrose, and a descendant of Bartholomew Penrose who emigrated from Bristol, England, to Pennsylvania about 1700. Charles received his education in his native city, where, after studying in the office of Samuel Ewing, he was admitted to the bar on May 9, 1821. Establishing himself in Carlisle, Pa., he practised for a score of years and became prominent in local politics. On Mar. 16, 1824, he was married to Valeria Fullerton Biddle.

In collaboration with Frederick Watts (Wil-

liam Rawle's name also appears on the title page of the first volume) he published *Reports of Cases Adjudged in the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania* (3 vols., 1831–33) covering the period from 1829 to 1832, which became widely known to the legal profession. In 1833 Penrose was elected a member of the state Senate, and continued as such until 1841, serving for a time as speaker. His term thus coincided with the rise of the anti-Masonic movement in Pennsylvania, which figured prominently in the state and county elections in 1838. It was charged that the anti-Masonic Whigs, of whom Penrose was one, were bent on seating senatorial candidates from Philadelphia who had not been elected, and when the session opened on Dec. 4, Speaker Penrose found himself confronted with a crowd in the galleries which included some who were determined to thwart that attempt. When he tried to silence one who, on the face of the returns appeared to have been elected, Penrose and his associates were threatened with violence from the crowd, and were obliged to escape, the speaker, according to a Harrisburg paper, having "jumped out of the window, twelve feet high, through three thorn bushes and over a seven-foot picket fence" (quoted by Egle, *post*, p. 146). By way of defense to the opposition's criticism, he issued an *Address to the Freemen of Pennsylvania* (1839), also included in *Address of the Hon. Charles B. Penrose, Speaker of the Senate; and the Speeches of Messrs. Fraley (City), Williams, Pearson, and Penrose, Delivered . . . December 1838* (1839). When the first national Whig administration came into power in 1841, Penrose was appointed solicitor of the United States treasury, and he served until the close of the Tyler régime in 1845. He then opened an office in Lancaster, Pa., where he practised until 1847, removing thence to Philadelphia. In 1856 he was again elected to the state Senate, this time as a "Reform" nominee, and it was while serving there that he died at Harrisburg. Two days later a meeting of the Philadelphia bar was held at which resolutions were adopted deploring the loss of one "whose sudden death, in the midst of honorable labors, has ended a career of distinction and usefulness" (*Legal Intelligencer, post*, p. 117). He had six children, among whom were Richard Alexander Fullerton Penrose, father of Boies and Richard A. F. Penrose [*qq.v.*]; and Clement Biddle Penrose, for many years associate judge of the Philadelphia orphans' court.

[J. G. Leach, *Hist. of the Penrose Family of Phila.* (1903); Alfred Nevin, *Centennial Biog.: Men of Mark of Cumberland Valley, Pa. 1776–1876* (1876); J. H. Martin, *Martin's Bench and Bar of Phila.* (1883); W. H. Egle, "The Buckshot War," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1899; *Legal Intelligencer* (Phila.), Apr. 10, 1857; *Daily Pennsylvanian* (Phila.), Apr. 7–11, 1857.]

C. S. L.

PENROSE, RICHARD ALEXANDER FULLERTON (Dec. 17, 1863–July 31, 1931), geologist, was born in Philadelphia. He was the fourth of seven sons of Richard Alexander Fullerton Penrose (1827–1908) and Sarah Hannah (Boies) and was a younger brother of Boies Penrose [*q.v.*]. Entering Harvard University in 1880, he graduated in 1884, remaining for further work and receiving the degree of Ph.D. in 1886. In 1885–86 he accompanied Professor N. S. Shaler [*q.v.*] on a geological exploration. His years at Harvard were noteworthy not only for high scholarship but for an active interest in athletics; in 1885 and 1886 he was stroke on the University crew.

His serious work in his chosen field, applied geology, began with the preparation of his thesis, "The Nature and Origin of Deposits of Phosphate of Lime" (published in 1888 as *Bulletin of the United States Geological Survey*, no. 46). From 1886 to 1888 he was manager of mines for the Anglo-Canadian Phosphate Company and was subsequently appointed to undertake surveys of mineral deposits for the states of Texas (1888–89) and Arkansas (1889–92). The results of this work appeared in eight published reports, the most significant of which were "A Preliminary Report on the Geology of the Gulf Tertiary of Texas from Red River to the Rio Grande," *First Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas, 1889* (1890), vol. I; "Manganese, its Uses, Ores and Deposits," *Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Arkansas, for 1890* (1891), vol. I; "The Iron Deposits of Arkansas," *Ibid., 1892*, vol. I (1892). In 1892, with the founding of the University of Chicago, he was offered and accepted an associate professorship of economic geology. Promoted to full professor in 1895, he held the position until 1911, when the pressure of growing responsibilities in his mining enterprises made it impossible for him longer to devote any of his time to teaching. From 1893 to 1911 he was an associate editor of the *Journal of Geology*. Noteworthy papers not previously mentioned include: "The Superficial Alteration of Ore Deposits" (*Journal of Geology*, April–May 1894) and "Some Causes of Ore Shoots" (*Economic Geology*, March 1910). Meanwhile, in 1894 he was appointed a special geologist of the United States Geological Survey to examine the gold district of Cripple Creek, Colo., then in its active period of development. The results of this study were published by the government ("Min-

ing Geology of the Cripple Creek District, Colorado," in *Sixteenth Annual Report of the United States Geological Survey . . . 1894–95*, pt. 2, 1895). In 1895 he became one of the founders of the Commonwealth Mining & Milling Company at what is now Pearce, Ariz., of which he was president from 1896 to 1903. In the latter year he was associated with his brother Spencer Penrose, D. C. Jackling, and others in the founding of the Utah Copper Company at Bingham, Utah, which was eventually to develop into the largest copper producing property in North America.

Clear and constructive but not profuse as a scientific author, shunning publicity, modest to the point of diffidence, Penrose was nevertheless an active member of most of the learned societies that were related to his chosen interests. He was a founder and first president (1920–21) of the Society of Economic Geologists and the year before his death was chosen president of the Geological Society of America. His loyalties to his scientific associates were shown during his lifetime by many gifts, always unostentatious, for the support of scientific work—he established the Penrose Gold Medal of the Geological Society of America and of the Society of Economic Geologists—and were evidenced at his death by munificent bequests to the Geological Society of America and to the leading American journals of pure and applied geology by virtue of which he became the foremost patron of his science.

In his native city he served as trustee of the University of Pennsylvania (1911–27), president (1922–26) of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia, member of the Fairmount Park Commission (1927–31), and trustee of the Free Public Library of Philadelphia. He never married. He died in Philadelphia of chronic nephritis and arteriosclerosis.

[J. G. Leach, *Hist. of the Penrose Family of Phila.* (1903); manuscript sketch furnished by Miss Marion L. Ives, Penrose's secretary for many years; H. Foster Bain, in *Mining and Metallurgy*, Sept. 1931; Joseph Stanley-Brown in *Science*, Nov. 13, 1931, and *Bull. Geol. Soc. of America*, Mar. 1932, with bibliog.; R. T. Chamberlin, in *Jour. of Geol.*, Nov.–Dec. 1931; *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Phila. Inquirer*, Aug. 1, 1931.]

E. S. B—n.

PENTECOST, GEORGE FREDERICK (Sept. 23, 1842–Aug. 7, 1920), clergyman and author, was born in Albion, Ill., the son of Hugh L. and Emma (Flower) Pentecost. In 1856 he went to Kansas Territory where he became secretary to the governor and clerk of the United States district court. He was a student at Georgetown College in Kentucky from 1860 to 1862, when he was converted and enlisted in the army to serve for two years as chaplain of the 8th Kentucky Cavalry, United States Volunteers. He entered the Baptist ministry in 1864 and served congregations at Greencastle and at Evansville, Ind., for three years. He was then called to Covington, Ky., where he preached for another year. On leaving Covington he entered upon the first of the two important Baptist pastorates of his career, Hanson Place church, Brooklyn, 1869–1872, and Warren Avenue church, Boston, 1872–1878. His ability as a pulpit orator and his persuasiveness in making converts attracted the attention of Dwight Lyman Moody [*q.v.*] with whom he occasionally joined in evangelistic work during the following two years. He returned to Brooklyn to become pastor of Tompkins Avenue Congregational church in 1880 and remained in this charge until 1887. By this time he had become well known because of his preaching, his evangelism, and his writings. In 1875 he had published *The Angel in the Marble*; in 1879, *In the Volume of the Book*; and, in 1884, *Out of Egypt*. These religious books were written in the prevailing style of the day and were second only to his twelve volumes of *Bible Studies* (1880–89) in popularity. He was now sought as a religious leader in other countries. He conducted evangelistic campaigns in several of the large cities of Scotland in 1887 and 1888; he traveled in India from 1888 to 1891, delivering special lectures to English-speaking Brahmans; and for six years, beginning in 1891, he was minister of Marylebone church, London. In 1897 he published *The Birth and Boyhood of Christ* and *Forgiveness of Sins*. He was pastor of First Presbyterian church in Yonkers, N. Y., during the next five years and published in 1898 *Systematic Beneficence* and *Precious Truths*.

In 1902 he visited Japan, China, and the Philippine Islands, as a special commissioner of the Presbyterian and Congregational Boards of Foreign Missions, to study Christian work in the Orient. For eleven years after his return from Asia he lived in retirement, but in 1914, at the age of seventy-two, he was persuaded by his lifelong friend, John Wanamaker, to become the stated supply of Bethany Presbyterian church of Philadelphia in which Wanamaker was the senior elder. Two years later the aged minister was formally installed as pastor and continued his evangelistic preaching with vigor and fire. During the World War he conducted many patriotic services and meetings and spoke vehemently against all pacifist propaganda. He remained actively at work until his sudden death in 1920. He was survived by two children and his wife,

Ada (Webber) Pentecost, whom he had married in Hopkinsville, Ky., on Oct. 6, 1863. Though his fame as a preacher and writer was greater before 1900 than afterward, he was held in high esteem by many church leaders. He was recognized as a stalwart supporter of Biblical authority, as a pulpit orator whose preaching was marked by deep feeling and unusual breadth of treatment, and as a man of great physical vigor, tireless energy, and sensitive spirit.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; P. C. Headley, *George F. Pentecost: Life, Labors, and Bible Studies* (1880); *In Affectionate Memorial of George F. Pentecost* (pub. by Bethany church, Phila., 1920); *Presbyterian*, Aug. 12, 1920; *N. Y. Times*, Aug. 9, 1920.]

P. P. F.

PEPPER, GEORGE SECKEL (June 11, 1808–May 2, 1890), philanthropist, was born in Philadelphia, the son of George and Mary Catharine (Seckel) Pepper; William Pepper, 1810–1864 [*q.v.*], was a brother. Their grandfather, Henry Pepper (Heinrich Pfeffer), born near Strasburg, Germany, had come to America with his wife Catharine about 1769 and settled in Lebanon County, Pa. In 1774 he moved to Philadelphia, where he made a fortune and died in 1808. His extensive business interests were taken over by his second son, George, who became one of the richest men in the city. In business ability he was probably equaled by no other Philadelphian of the time except Stephen Girard [*q.v.*]. He is said to have had the first greenhouse in Philadelphia and was one of the founders of the Pennsylvania Horticultural Society. Thus George S. Pepper, in the third generation, inherited wealth that gave him ample opportunity to promote the cultural development of his native city, especially since he never married.

He was admitted to the bar Oct. 23, 1830, but gave much of his time to civic interests. For thirty-four years, from 1850 to 1884, he served on the board of directors of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts and was its president from 1884 until his death, when the Academy became one of the beneficiaries under his will. In 1853 he was one of a group of public-spirited citizens who decided to erect a building where music could be suitably heard; several of their early meetings were held in his office. The American Academy of Music (now simply the Academy of Music), seating nearly 3,000 and with unusually fine acoustic properties, was opened Jan. 26, 1857, and at once became the center in Philadelphia for musical performances and important public gatherings. Pepper did much to insure the success of the undertaking, not only as a generous subscriber, but also as chairman of the building committee, for a time of the finance committee, and from 1857 to 1870 of the executive committee. Among the many philanthropies that he fostered was the Henry Seybert Fund, for the care of indigent children, of which he was a trustee.

At his death in 1890 the greater part of his estate of about $2,000,000 went to public benefactions, including legacies to ten hospitals, the Franklin Institute, the Zoölogical Society, the Pennsylvania Museum and School of Industrial Art, the Rittenhouse Club, for the purchase of a library, and the Philadelphia, Commercial, and Apprentice libraries. To the University of Pennsylvania he gave $60,000 which was used to endow the George S. Pepper Professorship of Hygiene. In addition to $150,000, a share in the residuary estate was set aside to found a free city library; for although Philadelphia had led in the eighteenth century in the establishment of lending libraries, these had remained close corporations. Pepper realized the inadequacy of his legacy for the purpose intended, but his hope that this might serve as a nucleus was soon realized, largely through the enthusiastic support of the project by his nephew, Provost William Pepper [*q.v.*], and other members of his family. By 1927, when its handsome new building was opened on the Parkway, the Free Library of Philadelphia had twenty-nine branches in the city and about 750,000 books.

[J. W. Jordan, *Colonial Families of Phila.* (1911); F. N. Thorpe, *William Pepper, M.D., LL.D.* (1904); *The Free Library of Philadelphia, First Annual Report*, Oct. 1896; *Exercises at the Opening of the Main Building of the Free Library of Phila. . . . June 2, 1927* (1927); *Public Ledger* (Phila.), May 3, 1890; *North American* (Phila.), May 7, 1890; records of the Pa. Acad. of the Fine Arts, and of the Acad. of Music.]

A. L. L.

PEPPER, WILLIAM (Jan. 21, 1810–Oct. 15, 1864), physician, teacher, was born in Philadelphia, the son of George and Mary Catharine (Seckel) Pepper, and a brother of George Seckel Pepper [*q.v.*]. He received his early education in a school at Holmesburg, from which he went to the College of New Jersey, graduating in 1828. He then began the study of medicine with Dr. Thomas T. Hewson, and in 1829 entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, where he was graduated in 1832, the title of his thesis being "Apoplexy." Soon after his graduation there was an outbreak of Asiatic cholera in Philadelphia, during which he rendered good service as a resident in the Bush Hill Hospital. In the autumn of 1832 he went abroad for further study, working in Paris, particularly with Pierre Louis and Guillaume Dupuytren. At this time Paris attracted the most brilliant of the young American physicians, and he was one of a

celebrated group which included Oliver Wendell Holmes [*q.v.*].

Returning to Philadelphia, he took up the practice of medicine. His first professional position was with the Philadelphia Dispensary, and, given charge of a district, he soon attracted attention by the character of his work. In 1839 he was appointed to the staff of the Wills Eye Hospital and in 1841, to the Institute for Instruction of the Blind. In 1842 he was elected a physician to the Pennsylvania Hospital, a position which he held until 1858, and took a prominent part in the teaching carried on there. He was known as a keen diagnostician and was celebrated for his clear and practical instruction, especially in his clinical lectures. In 1860 he was appointed professor of medicine in the University of Pennsylvania, succeeding George B. Wood [*q.v.*], which position he held for four years, ill health compelling his resignation. He is described as of delicate frame and quick and active in his movements. His portrait, in the Medical School of the University of Pennsylvania, suggests a keen, kindly personality. During his stay in Paris he suffered from illness and spent part of a winter in the south of Europe. His health apparently was not robust; he suffered from hemoptysis from which he died.

In 1840 he married Sarah Platt of Philadelphia. There were seven children, of whom two became physicians, George and William [*q.v.*]. He was a member of many medical societies and the American Philosophical Society. He contributed a considerable number of articles to medical journals, but his influence seems to have been exerted more through his knowledge of disease and his excellent teaching than through his writings.

[T. S. Kirkbride, "Biog. Memoir of William Pepper," in *Quart. Summary, Trans. Coll. Physicians and Surgeons, Phila., 1865–66* (1867), reprinted separately (1866); F. P. Henry, *Standard Hist. of the Medic. Profession of Phila.* (1897); T. G. Morton, *The Hist. of the Pa. Hospital* (1895); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Phila. Inquirer*, Oct. 18, 1864.]

T. M.

PEPPER, WILLIAM (Aug. 21, 1843–July 28, 1898), physician, educator, and public benefactor, was born in Philadelphia, the son of William [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Platt) Pepper, and a nephew of George Seckel Pepper [*q.v.*]. He was a great-grandson of Heinrich Pfeffer who came to America in 1769, and a grandson of George Pepper, Philadelphia merchant, who laid the foundation of the extensive family fortune. The elder William Pepper was one of the foremost physicians of Philadelphia. His frail health and his extensive practice and teaching responsibilities relegated the care and training of the children to their mother, who came of a New Jersey Quaker family. Her calm influence on her son William probably contributed an element of repose to an individuality characterized by mental vigor and tireless energy. His early education was obtained in the school conducted by the Rev. Ormes B. Keith, later in that of Dr. John W. Faries. In September 1858, although as he says his knowledge at the time "consisted largely of Latin and Greek with a small fluency in expression and English composition," he entered the University of Pennsylvania, where four years later he graduated, second in his class. In 1862 he entered the Medical Department, the faculty of which included besides his father, Dr. Joseph Leidy [*q.v.*], and Dr. Richard A. F. Penrose, professor of obstetrics. Following his graduation in 1864, he devoted some months to the care of his father who had been forced to resign his chair in the Medical School and who died in October of the same year. Subsequently, he served one year as resident physician to the Pennsylvania Hospital, and soon afterward was appointed pathologist and visiting physician to the same institution. He later received similar posts at the Philadelphia Hospital, Blockley. Because of his sound pathological training and his growing clinical ability, he was appointed in 1868, lecturer on morbid anatomy at the Medical School of the University of Pennsylvania, and two years later was named to a similar post in clinical medicine. These early teaching appointments were followed by thirty years of service to the University.

In order to enlarge the scope of his knowledge, he spent several months in Europe in 1871, studying methods in medical education and institutional administration and incidentally laying the foundation for his future development as an executive and broad-visioned educator. Upon his return, he threw himself at once into the novel project of establishing a teaching hospital in connection with the University Medical School. A committee was formed of which this young man of twenty-seven was the most active member. The ingenious methods by which he awakened the support of conservative Philadelphia merchants and exploited the city council and the state legislature marked an epoch in the development of the Medical School, the University, the city and the man. Largely through his efforts there was founded in 1874 the first hospital in America intimately associated with a university medical school in which the faculty acted as the staff. Throughout his life he continued to labor for the development of the University Hospital. In 1887 he founded the nurses' training school, placing it

under the guidance of a trained director and arranging for a definite course of instruction, and in 1894, as a memorial to his father, he established and endowed the William Pepper Laboratory of Clinical Medicine, the first laboratory in America for the prosecution of advanced clinical studies into the causation of disease.

In 1875 he was made medical director of the Centennial Exhibition to be held in Philadelphia the following year. Under his supervision a model hospital was erected, problems of hygiene and sanitation were solved, and the bureau of medical service displayed such efficiency that he was personally honored by the English and Norwegian governments. During this same period, his professional reputation increased greatly and consequently, in 1876, he was elected to the chair of clinical medicine, newly created. On Oct. 1, 1877, as an introduction to his course of clinical lectures, he delivered a notable address, *Higher Medical Education, the True Interest of the Public and the Profession,* which was published by the trustees. His position as medical director of the Centennial had offered him additional opportunities to acquaint himself with the methods of medical instruction used abroad, and this address dealt with the evils prevalent in American medical education, reviewed the sounder European systems, and suggested correction and new concepts for the American schools. Together with the efforts of President Eliot at Harvard, it paved the way for drastic reforms in American medical education.

In 1884, although in 1880 Pepper had become provost of the University, he was called upon to accept in addition to that office the professorship of the theory and practice of medicine, succeeding to a chair vacated by his father twenty years before. The latter position he filled with distinction until his death. Numerous professional honors came to him. He was a founder (1884) and president (1886) of the American Climatological Society, president (1886) of the American Clinical Association and (1891) of the Association of American Physicians, and a member of the executive committee of the American Medical Association. In 1893, as president of the first Pan-American Medical Congress, he did much to promote international relationships and to endear himself to his Latin-American colleagues.

During his active professional life, he published several hundred papers on medical topics, most of them being transcriptions of his clinical lectures and reports of unusual cases. Some of his contributions are of extreme interest: in one early paper, *The Morphological Changes of the Blood in Malarial Fever* (1867), prepared in collaboration with Edward Rhoads and J. F. Meigs, the pigmented bodies in the erythrocytes, later shown to be the malarial parasites, were accurately described. In a contribution on pernicious anemia (*American Journal of the Medical Sciences,* October 1875), he was the first to call attention to the involvement of the bone marrow. At various times he published observations on the treatment of pulmonary cavities incident to phthisis and on the climatological treatment of that disease (notably in *The Climatological Study of Phthisis in Pennsylvania,* 1887). His shrewd conclusions paved the way for the modern therapeutics of tuberculosis. His better known contributions to medical literature, however, were *A Practical Treatise on the Diseases of Children* (1870), which was a fourth, revised, edition of a work by John F. Meigs [*q.v.*]; *A System of Practical Medicine* (5 vols., 1885–86), issued under his editorship; and a more condensed *Text-Book of the Theory and Practice of Medicine* (2 vols., 1893–94). His fame could rest securely, however, upon two addresses on medical education, that delivered in 1877, mentioned above, and another bearing the same title, delivered in 1893 (*Higher Medical Education, the True Interest of the Public and the Profession; Two Addresses,* 1894). The one formulated fundamental principles, the other described their fruition and offered still loftier conceptions for future accomplishment.

Soon after the resignation of Provost Charles J. Stillé [*q.v.*] in 1880, William Pepper was called upon to undertake the administrative burden of the entire University, in addition to his professorship of medicine and his private practice. Inaugurated as provost Feb. 22, 1881, he made his first report to the trustees in 1883. In the next three years he obtained additional land from the city by arranging for the award of certain scholarships to local high school graduates and reorganized the faculties and curricula of the College, the Dental School, the Law School, and the Towne Scientific School. During this time also he was concerned in the founding of the Wharton School of Finance, the Veterinary School and additions to the University Hospital. By the end of a decade of his provostship, the University had grown greatly; most of the departments were self-supporting or had insignificant deficits, and the funded debt had been reduced through numerous gifts and bequests inspired by Pepper. On land previously acquired, a library and a school of hygiene had been erected and additional property had been secured for future developments. A biological school and a de-

partment of physical education had been started, many scholarships and fellowships had been founded, and the College and the Graduate School of Philosophy had been further developed. Partly as the result of the Provost's vigorous example the annual bibliography of the faculties totaled hundreds of publications. In addition, he had introduced the University Extension Lectures by the faculty and other famous scholars and had supported the acquisition of archeological treasures by sponsoring an expedition to Babylonia under the direction of John Punnett Peters [*q.v.*]. Aside from his University duties, he had founded (1886) the College Association of Pennsylvania, forerunner of the Association of Colleges and Secondary Schools of the Middle States and Maryland.

During the last four years of his tenure as provost, a School of Architecture was founded, and on newly acquired land were built the Wistar Institute of Anatomy and Biology, a gymnasium, a chemistry building, an engineering building, and a central heating and lighting station. The medical course was increased to four years, the College curriculum was modified by the adoption of the group elective system, and in 1892 the Bennett School for the graduate instruction of women was opened, marking a radical departure from the traditional policy of the University. Pepper's teaching in the Medical School, his enormous consulting practice, his duties as provost, and the multitudinous outside demands made upon him by virtue of this office made serious inroads on his health and vitality, and in April 1894 he presented his resignation to the trustees, accompanying it with a large gift to the Hospital. In fourteen years, from a loosely organized group of schools, he had raised the University to eminence in academic circles. Some conception of this accomplishment can be obtained by reading the gloomy reminiscences of his predecessor and then turning to his own final report and the tributes paid to him when he retired.

Aside from his professional and University interests, Pepper advanced the welfare of the community by his zealous promotion of any cause directed toward civic betterment or the elevation of the cultural ideals of the public. The University Extension Lectures grew in popularity, and in 1892 the scope of the experiment was enlarged by the founding of the American Society for the Extension of University Teaching. Pepper lived to see this pioneer effort in adult education spread into 343 cities of the Eastern states. The death of his uncle, George S. Pepper, in 1890 revealed a bequest of $250,000 to found a Free Library in Philadelphia, and the nephew directed the utilization of the money in developing an institution capable of unlimited expansion. From a temporary central library at City Hall and two small branches, grew during his lifetime the Philadelphia Free Library.

The resources of his waning strength Pepper devoted to promoting the cause of the Philadelphia museums. The Commercial Museum is a monument to his organizing ability expended in spite of bodily suffering and the press of other exhausting duties. Once recognizing the relation of archeological discoveries to education, he gave his powerful support to the excavations near ancient Nippur and organized the Archeological Association of the University which subsequently (1892) developed into a University department. Vast treasures of unique interest poured into the limited space at the disposal of the University and after his resignation from the office of provost, he was induced to throw the weight of his influence into the creation of an adequate museum, with the result that the University Museum, an edifice of noble proportions, was erected on what had been a smoke-swept dump heap overlooking the Schuylkill.

It was eminently fitting that this nineteenth century citizen and benefactor of Philadelphia should associate himself in marriage with a great-grand-daughter of Benjamin Franklin. On June 25, 1873, he married Frances Sergeant Perry, sister of Thomas Sergeant Perry [*q.v.*], whose mother was a grand-daughter of Sarah (Franklin) and Richard Bache [*q.v.*]. To Pepper and his wife were born four sons, three of whom lived to maturity. To few men has it been given to accomplish so much in so many fields of effort in so short a lifetime. Pepper attained the pinnacle of success in his chosen profession, whether that success be judged by scientific ability or by personal emoluments. The latter were merely a means to an end; he dared not curtail his enormous practice, for by its returns he promoted his larger projects at the University. His personality was magnetic, his enthusiasm contagious. He had the true physician's tenderness and sympathy for his fellow mortal. The demands made upon his time by his practice, his consultation work—which took him all over the Eastern states—his teaching and administrative duties, called forth the utmost reserves of bodily and mental vigor for their accomplishment. For years he slept only for short intervals and enjoyed only momentary relaxation. Even during the last five years of his life, his body racked by the torture of recurring attacks of angina pectoris, he never relaxed his exhausting mode of living, but at length his physical resources were

completely spent and he died, in Pleasanton, Cal., in his fifty-fifth year.

[F. N. Thorpe, *William Pepper, M.D., LL.D.*, (1904); *Trans. Coll. of Physicians of Phila.*, 3 ser. XXIII (1901); C. J. Stillé, *Reminiscences of a Provost, 1866–1880* (n.d.); *Annual Reports of the Provost and Treasurer of the Univ. of Pa.*, 1883–94; *Addresses Made at the Meeting Held in Memory of William Pepper . . . in the Chapel of the Univ. of Pa.* (1899); *The Free Lib. of Phila. . . . Ann. Report*, 1896, 1897; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), July 30, 1898; MSS. and clippings in the possession of Pepper's son, Dean William Pepper, School of Medicine, Univ. of Pa.]

J. H. P—n.
E. S. T.

PEPPERRELL, Sir WILLIAM (June 27, 1696–July 6, 1759), colonial merchant and soldier, was born in the Pepperrell house at Kittery Point, Me. His father, also William Pepperrell, was a native of Tavistock, near Plymouth, England. As a penniless lad, he had been apprenticed to the captain of a fishing vessel sailing to the New England coast. At the age of twenty-two he had settled on the Isle of Shoals as a merchant. He prospered, married Margery Bray, and ultimately moved to the home of his wife's family, Kittery Point on the mainland. Here he became a justice of the peace and, in time, one of the most prosperous of the New England merchants of his day. Young William's education consisted of the three R's, knowledge picked up while helping in his father's store, and the frontier lore naturally acquired by a boy growing up on the edge of civilization. Indian outrages in the neighborhood were not infrequent, and he was a member of the militia at sixteen. When his only brother died, his father took him into partnership and the firm became known as the William Pepperrells. They dealt in lumber and fish; built ships which they dispatched with cargoes to the southern colonies, the West Indies, the Mediterranean countries, and England, selling vessels as well as cargoes; and imported European products which they sold in Boston. Their constantly increasing profits were invested in real estate, rapidly advancing in value. By 1729 young William had acquired, among other holdings, almost the entire townships of Saco and Scarboro. The firm's large business made it an important factor in foreign exchange, and the younger William spent much of his time in Boston managing affairs there. His business brought him into contact with the leading public men and the good society of town. On Mar. 16, 1723, he married Mary Hirst, grand-daughter of Samuel Sewall [*q.v.*].

At home, advancement in the militia was rapid and at thirty he had become colonel in command of all the militia in the Province of Maine. In 1726 he was elected representative to the Massachusetts General Court from Kittery, and the next year became an assistant, or member of the Council, an office to which he was annually reappointed until his death. For eighteen years he was chosen president of the Council. In 1730 Gov. Jonathan Belcher [*q.v.*], for political reasons, removed the incumbents of the judicial bench and appointed Pepperrell as the new chief justice. The latter at once ordered some books from London and started to study law. It is typical of the happy star which shone over him throughout his career that he could reverse the usual order, becoming chief justice first and reading law afterwards. Upon the death of his father in 1734, he inherited the bulk of the estate. He was now a power in New England, head of the militia of Maine, president of the Massachusetts Council, his ability as a "captain of industry" recognized, connected by marriage with the socially elect, and possessed of one of the largest fortunes in the colony. He had had four children, of whom only two, Elizabeth and Andrew, survived infancy. The young heiress married Nathaniel Sparhawk, and Andrew, after graduating from Harvard with high honors, became his father's business partner in 1744.

Pepperrell's close friend, Governor Belcher, whom he had steadily supported in the continuous salary controversy, was succeeded by William Shirley [*q.v.*], and in the year that Andrew entered business, Great Britain declared war on France. The colonies were at once involved, and Shirley conceived the scheme of capturing Louisbourg, the French stronghold on Cape Breton. A descent by the commander of Louisbourg on a British outpost at Canso Island enraged the English; Shirley pushed his plans rapidly; the help of other colonies was enlisted; and Commodore Sir Peter Warren [*q.v.*], cruising in the West Indies, received orders from England to cooperate with the provincial forces. Between three and four thousand men were dispatched from the colonies, about a third of them from Maine, and Pepperrell was chosen commander of the expedition.

The flotilla bearing the American troops arrived Apr. 30 and found the British fleet waiting at the rendezvous. The troops were disembarked with skill. Pepperrell's experience in the militia had given him no knowledge of Continental methods of attacking fortresses; nevertheless, the siege began. The French garrison, inefficient and corrupt, observing the uncouth movements of the invaders, became suddenly panic-stricken and abandoned the grand battery without striking a blow. The Americans took possession of the enemy's cannon and, with great

difficulty, brought up more. It was said by some of the survivors of the siege that it resembled a "Cambridge Commencement," being only half a siege and half an uproarious holiday (Jeremy Belknap, *The History of New Hampshire*, 1812, II, 170). The American supplies ran short, though by the capture of a French frigate sent to relieve the fortress the navy replenished the powder and ammunition; and at times half the attacking force was on the sick list. To the relief of everybody, including the French, the garrison surrendered on June 17.

Though it cannot be claimed that Pepperrell displayed much military skill, he had qualities which greatly helped the enterprise to its successful conclusion. He held the undisciplined colonial troops at their posts by his personal popularity. The cooperation of the British fleet was essential and British and colonials rarely got on well together, but Pepperrell was patient and tactful and for the successful cooperation that was achieved deserves a good share of the credit.

The capture of the fortress was warmly welcomed in England and the leading participants were all honored. Pepperrell was commissioned colonel (Sept. 1, 1745), with authority to raise and command a regiment in the regular British line and in November 1746 was created a baronet, an honor never before conferred on a native American. After the capture he acted jointly with Warren as governor of the conquered territory, raised his regiment, and remained at Louisbourg until late in the spring of 1746. He sat in the Council at Boston in June and then returned to his affairs at Kittery. In September 1749 he went to London, where he was received by the King, and was made something of a social lion. The City of London presented him with a service of plate as a token of respect for his military exploit. He remained there nearly a year, then returned to Kittery. Soon afterward his only son died, unmarried.

His landed property had become very great and he now gradually wound up his mercantile affairs. In 1753 he was one of the commissioners, as he had frequently been before, to negotiate a treaty with the Maine Indians. When the French and Indian War broke out, he was ordered by the King to raise a regiment of 1000 men. Shortly afterward he went to New York on the concerns of his regiment, which was employed in the Oswego expedition with Shirley's. Pepperrell, who had been made a major-general, Feb. 27, 1755, did not accompany them but at Shirley's order took command of the eastern frontier. Early in February 1755 Shirley suggested that Pepperrell lead an expedition against

Crown Point but later changed his mind, and a coolness developed between them. After Shirley went to London in 1756, and the lieutenant-governor died, the Massachusetts government was administered by the Council, and Pepperrell as president of that body was *de facto* governor. He was appointed commander of Castle William and of all the military forces of the colony. On the arrival of the new governor, Thomas Pownall [*q.v.*], in August 1757, Pepperrell was ordered to proceed to Springfield or other parts of the frontier and raise troops for the defense of the province. On Feb. 20, 1759, he was commissioned lieutenant-general in the royal army, but his health was failing, he did not take part in the remaining operations of the war, and on July 6, 1759, he died.

With his death, his baronetcy became extinct. The bulk of his estate was left to his grandson, William Pepperrell Sparhawk, on condition that he take the name Pepperrell, and in 1774 this William Pepperrell was created baronet. He was a Loyalist and fled to England on the outbreak of the Revolution; his property was confiscated, and his only son died unmarried.

[Usher Parsons, *The Life of Sir William Pepperrell, Bart.* (rev. ed., 1856); J. F. Sprague, *Three Men from Maine* (1924); C. A. Harris, in *Dict. Nat. Biog.*; C. H. C. Howard, "The Pepperrell Portraits," *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, vol. XXXI (1894–95); C. H. C. Howard, *The Pepperrells in America* (1906), repr. from *Essex. Inst. Hist. Colls.*, article on William Pepperrell appearing in vol. XXXVII (1901); "The Pepperrell Papers," *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 6 ser. X (1899); "The Journal of Sir William Pepperrell Kept during the Expedition against Louisbourg, Mar. 24–Aug. 22, 1745," *Proc. Am. Antiq. Soc.*, n.s., vol. XX (1911); *An Accurate Jour. and Account of the Proceedings of the New-England Land Forces during the Late Expedition* (1746), official journals, pub. in London; *Louisbourg Journals, 1745* (1932), ed. by L. E. deForest; *Correspondence of Wm. Shirley* (2 vols., 1912), ed. by C. H. Lincoln; instructions and letters relating to the Cape Breton expedition, *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. I (1792); G. E. Cokayne, *Complete Baronetage*, vol. V (1906); *Gentleman's Mag.* (London), Sept. 1759; Benjamin Stevens, *A Sermon Occasioned by the Death of the Hon. Sir Wm. Pepperrell* (1759).] J. T. A.

PERABO, JOHANN ERNST (Nov. 14, 1845–Oct. 29, 1920), pianist, teacher, and composer, was born in Wiesbaden, Germany, the son of Michael and Christine (Hübner) Perabo. The father was a school teacher and, according to German requirements, also an organist, pianist, and violinist, hence he was well qualified to train his nine children, all of whom became musicians. Ernst, the only child by Michael Perabo's second wife, proved to be the most gifted, and he began the study of piano with his father when he was five years old. In 1852 the family emigrated to America, settling first in New York, where they remained for two years. Ernst received instruction in violin and piano from sev-

eral teachers and during his second year in New York appeared at a concert given by a teacher named Heinrich. A great future was predicted for him. His parents removed to Dover, N. H., and then to Boston, where they remained for only one year. In Boston he took violin lessons from William Schultze, of the Mendelssohn Quintet Club, and played at a concert under the direction of Carl Zerrahn. The next move took the family to Chicago. Soon thereafter they went to Washington, D. C., solely to obtain an interview with President Buchanan, in the hope that through him they could secure assistance from the government to send the talented child to Europe. They were granted an interview but were not successful in securing funds. They did, however, win the ear of William Scharfenberg, a prominent musician in New York, who formed a committee to defray the expenses of the boy's education in Europe. He sailed for Hamburg in 1858 and spent four years there, but he had to struggle against ill health, which prevented serious music study.

In 1862 he entered the Leipzig Conservatory where he studied piano with Moscheles and Wenzel, harmony with Papperitz, Hauptmann, and Richter, and later composition with Reinecke. In 1865 he won the Helbig prize, and, at the public examination of the Conservatory, he played two movements of the Burgmüller concerto in F# minor, which had just been published. He returned to the United States the same year (1865). He established himself first in New York, as teacher and pianist, and gave a number of concerts that were so successful that he decided to give a series of matinées, at which he performed the sonatas of Schubert. His parents, meantime, had gone to Sandusky, Ohio, to live. He gave several successful concerts there and also at Lafayette, Cleveland, and Chicago. In 1866 he transferred his residence to Boston and remained there until his death. He never gave concerts on a large scale but devoted himself more particularly to teaching, in which he was most successful. For many years he played annually at the Harvard concerts at which he gave many works unknown at that time in America. He was especially commended for his playing of Beethoven, and for his interpretation of the Schubert pianoforte works. Besides having a fluent technique, he was a remarkable sight-reader. He was a zealous conservative, but he approached new works in a spirit of open-mindedness. He married Louise Schmidt of Boston from whom he soon separated. His death occurred at West Roxbury, Mass., in the homestead in which his parents had lived. He wrote

numerous compositions, for the most part forgotten, and many transcriptions, including the first movement of Rubinstein's "Ocean Symphony," parts of Beethoven's *Fidelio,* the first movement of Schubert's "Unfinished Symphony," and several of the Loewe ballads. Of his own compositions, the following are probably the most important: "Moment Musical" (*opus* 1); Scherzo (*opus* 2); Prelude (*opus* 3); Waltz (*opus* 4); "Pensées" (*opus* 11); Prelude, Romance and Toccatina (*opus* 19).

[W. S. B. Mathews, *A Hundred Years of Music in America* (1889); *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians: Am. Supp.* (1930); *Boston Transcript,* Oct. 29, 1920; information as to certain facts from Mr. George A. Burdett of Newton Center, Mass., and from Miss Clementine Miller, Alton, N. H.]

F. L. G. C.

PERALTA, PEDRO de (*c.* 1584–1666), third governor of New Mexico, founder of Santa Fé, was connected with a noble family which originated in Navarre during the middle ages. There is some evidence that he was a university graduate and trained in canon law; also that he had seen military service. He is believed to have been unmarried and about twenty-five years of age in the winter of 1608–09 when he arrived in the city of Mexico. On Mar. 5, 1609, the viceroy appointed him governor of New Mexico, to supersede Juan de Oñate [*q.v.*] and his son Cristóbal, and instructed him "before all else" to see to the founding of a new *villa* with a view to order and permanence. From April to October 1609, Peralta was at Zacatecas, assembling building supplies, foodstuffs, weapons, clothing, carts and livestock, missionaries, soldiers, Indian servants. Probably, therefore, he did not reach Oñate's colony at San Gabriel until March 1610; at least, Oñate and his son did not depart before May.

The name selected by Peralta for the new *villa,* Santa Fé, would suggest a strong piety in his character, yet, as governor, it was his duty to maintain the king's authority as superior to that of the Church, and he was soon crossing swords with the Franciscan missionaries. In the spring of 1612, the *comisario,* Fray Isidro de Ordoñez, was in Mexico city getting the next three years' supplies for the missionaries; and upon his return, late that year, he represented that he had been made *comisario* of the Holy Inquisition also—a false claim for which he was later rebuked by the king and disciplined by his own order. Apparently Peralta required him to show his credentials; Ordoñez refused, called the governor a "schismatic heretic," and posted an excommunication of him. When Peralta disregarded the excommunication, he was seized by Fray Ordoñez with the help of some of the sol-

diers and colonists and was held prisoner for nearly a year in the convent at Sandía pueblo. Early in December 1612 he managed to escape, "in the dead of winter, and half naked, covered with a buffalo skin like an Indian." His jailer, Fray Estévan de Perea, pursued him with a large force of Indians to a ranch five miles away, but he had escaped to Santa Fé. There he was again seized and brought back "in irons and seated on a beast like a woman." But from Santa Fé, Dec. 13, 1612, he had managed to send a report of his situation to Mexico city; and nearly a year later peremptory orders arrived which effected his release.

Official approval of Peralta's defense of crown prerogatives appeared in his passing a satisfactory *residencia.* Also he was next appointed lieutenant-commander at the port of Acapulco; and in 1621–22 he was alcalde of the royal warehouse in Mexico city. In 1637 he arrived in Caracas, Venezuela; and the following year he married a widow of means, sister of Pedro de Paredes, and bought a half-interest in a trading vessel. From 1644 to 1645 he was auditor of the royal treasury at Caracas; later, he was acting treasurer; and from February 1651 to August 1652, was treasurer, having purchased that office. Late in the latter year he arrived in Madrid, "old and infirm and almost blind, maimed in the right hand and totally incapacitated" through injuries inflicted by enemies in Caracas from whom he had required moneys due the king. He petitioned and was granted (1654) leave to resign, and that his wife and two children be shielded from his enemies and allowed to join him in Spain. Until his death, which occurred in Madrid in 1666, his lot may have been happier, yet his estate was attached by the Jesuit order, and in 1671 the Alférez Pedro de Paredes was striving to salvage something for his widowed sister and her two children.

[Data supplied by France V. Scholes from Staatsbibliothek, Munich: *Codex Monacensis, Hisp.* 79; and data gathered by the writer in Madrid, Seville, and Mexico city; "Instructions for Don Pedro de Peralta," *El Palacio,* June 16, 1928; another translation in *N. Mex. Hist. Rev.,* Apr. 1929; "When Was Santa Fé Founded?" *Ibid.,* Apr. 1929; "Fray Estevan de Perea's Relacion," *Ibid.,* July 1933; L. B. Bloom and T. C. Donnelly, *N. Mex. Hist. and Civics* (1933).]

L. B. B.

PERCHÉ, NAPOLEON JOSEPH (Jan. 10, 1805–Dec. 27, 1883), Roman Catholic prelate and editor, was born at Angers, France. A precocious child, he could read at four; at eighteen he was a professor of philosophy; and at twenty-four he was ordained a priest, after graduating from the Seminary of Beaupréau. He served in various pastorates in France until 1837, when he went to America to assist Benedict J. Flaget [*q.v.*], bishop of Bardstown, Ky., in his missionary work at Portland.

Wishing to raise money to build a church for his parishioners, who were poor, he secured permission to go to New Orleans. There, in the St. Louis Cathedral, he preached such eloquent sermons in French that the Creoles soon subscribed the money he needed, and the Archbishop, Antoine Blanc [*q.v.*], offered him an appointment. Perché, however, asked to be allowed first to go back to Kentucky and finish his church. This work accomplished, he returned to New Orleans, and, in 1842, became almoner of the Ursuline Convent, a post he filled for twenty-eight years. In 1842 began the long drawn-out controversy between Blanc and the wardens of the St. Louis Cathedral over the right to appoint the curate. It became so bitter that it was taken to the courts and the wardens retained the three leading lawyers of the city—Soulé, Roselius, and Mazureau—to represent their side. In order to mobilize public opinion in favor of his church's stand, Perché founded a French weekly called *Le Propagateur Catholique,* which made its initial appearance on Nov. 12, 1842. Although it contained an announcement that it was "published by a society of literary men," Perché himself did most of the writing and struck some doughty blows in defense of his ecclesiastical superior, Archbishop Blanc, whose cause was eventually sustained in the supreme court. The good Abbé was a fearless fighter, and his editorials were so vehemently partizan and pugnacious that they lacked the calm judicial quality which might have been expected of his cloth. He continued, nevertheless, to edit the paper successfully until, in 1857, he resigned on account of his health.

Pope Leo XIII called him the "Bossuet of the American church" on account of his services as a propagandist; and in 1870 Pope Pius IX appointed him coadjutor to Archbishop John Mary Odin [*q.v.*]. At Odin's death in 1870 Perché became the third archbishop of New Orleans. He introduced the Carmelite Order of nuns into the diocese, and in 1872 inaugurated an annual service of thanksgiving for victory at the battle of New Orieans on Jan. 8, 1815. Some of his articles from the *Propagateur Catholique* were reprinted in a small pamphlet entitled *De l'Importance du Marriage sous le rapport social et religieux* (1846). This and a few pastoral letters constitute his literary remains.

[E. L. Tinker, *Les Écrits de Langue Française en Louisiane au XIXe Siècle* (Paris, 1932); Charles Testut, *Portraits Littéraires de la Nouvelle-Orléans* (1850); L. J. Loewenstein, *Hist. of the St. Louis Cathedral of*

New Orleans (1882); J. M. Augustin and T. H. Ryan, *Sketch of the Cath. Church in La. on the Occasion of the Centenary of the Erection of the See of New Orleans in 1793* (1893); R. H. Clarke, *Lives of the Deceased Bishops of the Cath. Church in the U. S.* (1888), vol. III; J. G. Shea, *The Hierarchy of the Cath. Church in the U. S.* (1886); *Times-Democrat* (New Orleans), Dec. 28, 1883.]

E. L. T.

PERCIVAL, JAMES GATES (Sept. 15, 1795–May 2, 1856), poet, geologist, was born in Kensington, Hartford County, Conn., the son of Dr. James and Elizabeth (Hart) Percival. On the paternal side he was descended from James Percival, who settled in Sandwich, Mass., in 1670. His mother, descended from Stephen Hart, one of the Hartford proprietors, had a sensitive, nervous temperament and was inclined to melancholy, a trait transmitted to her sons, Edwin, a painter, and James. An attack of typhoid in 1807 permanently impaired the latter's voice. On the death of his father in the same year, the shy, sickly, studious boy was sent to private school. In later life he complained of "a neglected orphanage" (manuscript letter, dated New Haven, Feb. 16, 1823, unaddressed). An omnivorous reader, he was in childhood exceptionally well informed in geography, and his youthful epic, "The Commerciad," written in 1809, was a versified gazetteer. His career at Yale, interrupted for a year in 1812, was brilliant scholastically; he delved into chemistry and mineralogy under the elder Benjamin Silliman [*q.v.*] and into botany under Eli Ives [*q.v.*], and attained a reputation as a poet. For the graduation exercises in 1815 he wrote and took part in a tragedy, later published under the title "Zamor." During the next three years he vacillated between teaching and the professions of law and medicine, finally entering the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania in 1818. The following year he transferred to the Medical Institution of Yale College and graduated with distinction in 1820. After a brief interval of practice in his native village, he closed his office. Rejection of a marriage proffer and failure to win a lucrative clientele drove him to attempt suicide; but in the same year the publication of several of his poems in *The Microscope*, a New Haven magazine, prompted him to attempt a career as a poet. Into *Poems* (1821) he emptied his portfolio, with the result that his long, Spenserian "Prometheus" was acclaimed the equal of Byron's *Childe Harold*, and his poetic gifts hailed as the most classical in America. The appearance of *Clio I* and *II* (1822), collections of weak lyrics, and of *Prometheus Part II with Other Poems* (1822) did not alter his reputation. The darkly sententious and autobiographic "Prometheus," though suffering the weakness of improvization, is a meritorious work. Many of his poems were pleas for Greek freedom. A selection from these four volumes appeared as *Poems* (New York, 1823; London, 1824).

For brief periods he edited the *Connecticut Herald*, a New Haven newspaper, taught chemistry at West Point, and served as surgeon in the Boston recruiting office. These positions he resigned because of fancied unjust treatment. His sudden withdrawal as the Harvard Phi Beta Kappa poet in 1824, his petulance as Phi Beta Kappa orator at Yale in 1825, and his resignation as editor of George Bond's *American Athenæum* (New York) in August 1825 aroused a storm of newspaper disapproval, in consequence of which he withdrew from his literary career, publishing only *Clio No. III* (1827), dream-haunted soliloquies, and *The Dream of a Day, and Other Poems* (1843), metrical experiments and translations. Although Percival remained the ranking American poet until the appearance of Bryant's *Poems* (1832), his work is now read only in anthologies, and he was soon forgotten.

While editing Vicesimus Knox's *Elegant Extracts* (6 vols., 1825) and Malte-Brun's *System of Universal Geography* (1827–34), he began a systematic study of languages, translating from a dozen poetic literatures. By reason of his linguistic attainments, he was employed in 1827–28 to assist Noah Webster [*q.v.*] in revising the manuscript and reading the proof of *An American Dictionary of the English Language* (1828).

In 1835 he was appointed state geologist of Connecticut. After presenting two reports (1836 and 1838), which he stipulated must not be published, he planned a comprehensive natural history survey of the state. Gov. William W. Ellsworth [*q.v.*] refused to credit his seriousness and in 1838 blocked a further grant of funds. After vainly attempting to have appropriations renewed, Percival presented "a hasty outline" of his bulky materials in the *Report on the Geology of the State of Connecticut* (1842). This volume is almost unreadable because of its mass of details and the failure to differentiate between important and unimportant matters. It is mainly lithological description, remarkable for the accurate discrimination of crystalline rocks, but in it Percival made a noteworthy contribution to geology in demonstrating the crescent shape of trap dikes, and gave "the best and fullest exemplification" of the laws governing the subterranean forces by which mountains were formed.

During the geological survey, Percival composed many original German poems; translated

from Russian, Serbian, and Hungarian; wrote political songs in support of Harrison (*The New Haven Whig Song Book,* 1840); and developed a theory of music, now lost. Poverty-stricken as a result of his unpaid work as geologist and his lavish purchase of books, he took quarters in the State Hospital, New Haven, where he lived as a recluse, engaged occasionally during the next ten years as a railroad surveyor and geologist. For the American Mining Company, between 1851 and 1854 he surveyed the lead-mining district of Illinois and Wisconsin, and in the latter year he was appointed state geologist of Wisconsin but died at Hazel Green, Wis., after the publication of one annual report.

Percival was "an inexhaustible, undemonstrative, noiseless, passionless man . . . impressing you, for the most part, as a creature of pure intellect" (*Atlantic Monthly,* July 1859, p. 59). Unyielding and eccentric, utterly impractical and living alone with his ten thousand books, he was one of the most learned men of his time.

[H. R. Warfel, "James Gates Percival, a Biographical Study" (unpublished dissertation in Yale Univ.); J. H. Ward, *The Life and Letters of James Gates Percival* (1866), somewhat inaccurate and incomplete; W. N. Rice and H. E. Gregory, *Manual of the Geology of Conn.* (1906); James Russell Lowell, in *North Am. Rev.,* Jan. 1867 (1871), an essentially unfair caricature; Timothy Dwight, in the *New Englander,* Apr. 1867, the best characterization of the man; *Cambridge Hist. of Am. Lit.,* I (1917), 279, 523; H. E. Legler, *James Gates Percival: An Anecdotal Sketch and a Bibliog.* (1901); G. P. Merrill, *The First One Hundred Years of Am. Geology* (1924); Alfred Andrews, *Geneal. Hist. of Deacon Stephen Hart and His Descendants* (1875).]

H. R. W.

PERCIVAL, JOHN (Apr. 5, 1779–Sept. 17, 1862), naval officer, was born at West Barnstable, Mass., the son of Capt. John and Mary (Snow) Percival, and a descendant of John Percival who was born in France in 1658 and who settled at Barnstable in 1685. At the age of thirteen he went to sea, and at twenty, commanded vessels in the West Indian and transatlantic trade. He was impressed into the British navy at Lisbon on Feb. 24, 1797, and served in H. M. S. *Victory* and then in a naval brig, but about two years later escaped at Madeira to the American ship *Washington.* During the naval conflict between the United States and France, he served a year as master's mate in the U. S. S. *Delaware* (Recommendation of Capt. Thomas Baker, Navy Library *Misc. Letters,* Feb. 24, 1809), was warranted midshipman on May 13, 1800, and was discharged at the peace establishment in July 1801. He reëntered the merchant service as mate and master, and according to his own statement as reported by B. F. Stevens who later became his ship's secretary, was imprisoned for several months and robbed of his ship at Santa Cruz, Teneriffe, "about 1805" (*United Service,* May 1905, p. 595). Many legends accumulated about these early years before he rejoined the United States navy as sailing master in 1809. "Mad" or "Roaring Jack," as he was called, became a celebrated character in the old navy, humorous, irascible, a superb seaman, the half-fictitious, heroic figure created by Harry Gringo (H. A. Wise) in his *Tales for the Marines* (1855). It is said that he once navigated his ship from the African coast to Pernambuco with his entire crew sick or dead of fever.

In the War of 1812 his first exploit was at New York on July 5, 1813, when he loaded the fishing smack *Yankee* with vegetables and livestock, hid thirty-two volunteers under hatches, and surprised and captured the British tender *Eagle,* overpowering her crew of thirteen, killing her two officers, and towing her into the Battery "amidst the plaudits of thousands . . ." (*The Naval Monument,* rev. ed. 1840, p. 230). As sailing master of the sloop *Peacock* in her victory over the *Epervier* on Apr. 29, 1813, he handled his craft, according to her commander Lewis Warrington [*q.v.*], "as if he had been working her into a roadstead" (*Ibid.,* 132). For his constant attention to duty and for his professional knowledge, Warrington recommended his promotion to the rank of lieutenant in 1814.

After cruises in the *Porpoise* against West Indian pirates he sailed to the Pacific in 1823 as first lieutenant in Hull's flagship *United States,* and in 1825–26, he commanded the schooner *Dolphin* in the South Seas, pursuing mutineers from the whaleship *Globe.* The *Dolphin* was the first American warship to visit Hawaii, and here Percival fell afoul of the missionaries over anti-prostitution ordinances, but during the difficulties which ensued, he curbed a sailors' riot against the restrictions, and was cleared later by a court of inquiry at Charlestown (Navy Library, *Court Martials,* vol. XXIII, no. 531). Made commander in 1831, and captain in 1841, he commanded the *Cyane* in the Mediterranean, 1838–39, supervised repairs to the *Constitution* at Norfolk, 1841–43, and then commanded her in a cruise round Africa to China and back by Hawaii and California from 1844 to 1846. On this memorable voyage he carried in his cabin a stout oak coffin which he later converted into a watering trough at his home in Dorchester. A jeweled sword, given him on the cruise by the Imam of Muscat figured in subsequent litigation for its ownership (*Boston Transcript,* May 20, 1911; Dec. 23, 24, 1912;

Jan. 8, 9, 1913). He was put on the reserved list in 1855. In later years he presented to friends several silver cups, one of which bore the legend: "This Cup, with the Donor, has made three cruises to the Pacific, one to the Mediterranean, one to the Brazils, two to the West Indies, and once around the world, a distance of about 150,000 miles. Has been 37 years in service and never refused duty." He was married in 1823 to Maria, daughter of a Dr. Pinkerton of Trenton, N. J., but they had no children.

[Hiram Paulding, *Jour. of a Cruise of the U. S. Schooner Dolphin* (1831); C. O. Paullin, *Diplomatic Negotiations of Am. Naval Officers, 1778–1883* (1912); I. N. Hollis, *The Frigate Constitution* (1900); B. F. Stevens, "Around the World in the U. S. Frigate Constitution," *United Service*, May 1905; G. W. Allen, ed., *Commodore Hull: Papers of Isaac Hull* (1929); W. D. Orcutt, *Good Old Dorchester* (1893); *Saturday Evening Gazette* (Boston), Aug. 24, 31, 1861; *Boston Evening Transcript*, May 20, 1911.] A. W.

PERCY, GEORGE (Sept. 4, 1580–*c.* March 1632), governor of Virginia, author, was the eighth son of Henry Percy, eighth earl of Northumberland, by his wife Catherine, daughter of John Neville, Lord Latimer. After some service in the Dutch wars he joined the Virginia expedition which sailed Dec. 20, 1606, his lack of office under the first charter being due perhaps to the cloud under which his brother, Northumberland, then lay. His "Discourse of the Plantation of the Southern Colonie in Virginia," presenting the fullest account of the voyage and the events of the settlement down to Newport's departure, was subsequently abridged and printed by Purchas (*post*, XVIII, 403–19). A resolute and honorable descendant of Hotspur, he soon won the good opinion of his fellows through his industry, courage, and character, while Newport, Smith, and other officers early learned to rely implicitly upon him (Edwin Arber, *Capt. John Smith . . . Works*, 1884, pp. xl, 127, 131–45, 434, 438, 468, 476).

In September 1609, he succeeded Smith as governor, the urgency of Ratcliffe, Archer, and Martin—who may have fixed upon him as their catspaw—and the importunity of the soldiers having prevailed upon him to relinquish his intention of returning to England for his health. For his fame's sake, the decision to remain was unfortunate. Granted that he was a fighting man rather than a skilled executive and disciplinarian, it is unjust to assume, as his detractors have done, that the destitution which befell the colony during "the starving time" was attributable chiefly to Percy's maladministration. He erected a new fort at Point Comfort and otherwise planned for the general welfare, but his illness—he was

"so sicke he could not goe nor stand" (Arber, p. 170)—hampered his authority and curtailed his activity. The successive blundering or dereliction of Martin, Sicklemore-Ratcliffe, and Francis West destroyed the morale of the settlers and antagonized the Indians; famine and fever completed the work; and when Gates reached Virginia in May he found only three score of the population of five hundred. The London Company's "varnished reports" inevitably pointed to incompetence on Percy's part, and, indeed, years afterward Sir Thomas Smythe was reproved "for stating the fact that the trouble was really 'the sickness' and not 'misgovernment'" (Alexander Brown, *The Genesis of the United States*, 1890, II, 617), but the confidence of his associates was unshaken. Delaware, upon arriving at Jamestown, appointed him councilor and commandant, and a month later, during a temporary absence, left him in charge. When Delaware returned to England, Mar. 28, 1611, he designated Percy deputy governor, to preside until the arrival of Dale (May 19); and that stern worthy likewise made Percy his representative while he himself was at Henrico.

In April 1612 Percy left Virginia, and, although retaining landed interests there for several years, apparently never returned. Some time after 1622 he wrote for his generous brother, Northumberland, "A Trewe Relacyon of the ꝑcedeinges and Ocurrentes of Momente wch have Hapnd in Virginie . . ." to justify himself against an account by an unnamed author, presumably Smith. First printed entire in *Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine* (April 1922, pp. 259–82), it is valuable for its new light on certain phases of events in Virginia between 1609 and 1612. Of his later life little is known, save that about 1625 he was fighting again in the Netherlands, where in 1627 he commanded a company, and that he died, unmarried, in England.

[Alexander Brown, *The First Republic in America* (1898); Samuel Purchas, *Hakluytus Posthumus, or Purchas, His Pilgrimes* (Glasgow ed., 1906), vols. XVIII, XIX; William Stith, *Hist. of the First Discovery and Settlement of Va.* (1747); E. D. Neill, *Virginia Vetusta* (1885); P. A. Bruce, *Virginia*, I (1924); A. W. Weddell, *A Memorial Vol. of Va. Hist. Portraiture* (1930), reproducing the painting of Percy now at Syon House, Middlesex, England, dated 1615, which supports the assertion that he lost a finger in the Indian Wars, and not in his later Dutch campaign as often stated.] A. C. G., Jr.

PERHAM, JOSIAH (Jan. 31, 1803–Oct. 4, 1868), showman, originator of the railroad excursion system, first president of the Northern Pacific Railroad, was the son of Josiah Perham and Elizabeth (Gould). He was born in Wilton, Franklin County, Me., where he was educated

and spent his early life; he married Esther Sewell. By successive stages he made a considerable fortune as a store-keeper and woollen manufacturer, but this he soon lost through a bad investment; and only by moving to Boston in 1842 was he able to accumulate enough to pay off his creditors.

Forced for a second time into bankruptcy in 1849, he was saved from despair by an idea which only a man of his character could have turned to profit. What he did was, in effect, to anticipate the cinema. He bought in 1850 a panorama of the Great Lakes, established it in Melodeon Hall, Boston, and by an ingenious device which caused the pictures to move across an illuminated screen, he managed to arouse popular curiosity. The surrounding countryside flocked into Boston to see the performance, while the railroads did a roaring business. Perham was a shrewd man, and it occurred to him that if he could induce the railroads to grant a cheap round-trip fare to people coming from neighboring towns to Melodeon Hall, his profits, as well as those of the railroads, would be increased. His plans met with such approval that for years after the Panorama had ceased to exist he was an active agent for cheap fares and the organization of round-trip tours. During the Civil War he published a pamphlet entitled *Gen. Perham's Platform: The Most Feasible Plan Yet Offered for Suppressing the Rebellion* (1862), in which he recommended that the Northern soldiers make conquest of Southern territory and settle permanently there, volunteering, himself, to "arrange with the railroads for tickets at excursion prices for all who emigrate to settle in the conquered territory." To the Army of the Potomac, encamped near Washington, he sold excursion tickets to the capital.

In the course of his work with the New England railroads he became convinced of the need for a transcontinental line; and with commendable energy he formulated plans for a People's Pacific Railroad, "to be owned," as he put it, "by the people in small sums" (Smalley, *post*, p. 103). After an abortive attempt to secure a charter for his company in Massachusetts, he turned to his native state of Maine, where, on Mar. 20, 1860, he was successful. Then, hurrying to Washington, he sought the cooperation of Thaddeus Stevens [*q.v.*] for the purpose of obtaining the passage of a bill giving recognition to his company and granting land to meet the construction expenses of the line. Strong opposition from the Union and Central Pacific railroads was sufficient, however, to crowd Perham's efforts out of existence, and until Stevens prevailed upon him to obviate all danger of competition with the southern railroads by changing to a northern route, the bill had no chance of success. Even then, as amended, it was defeated by opposition to the Maine charter. But Stevens was not discouraged. He assured Perham that if the Maine charter were relinquished, the bill would pass. On May 23 a new draft was introduced, creating the company by direct charter, and this time it was successful. President Lincoln's signature was affixed to it on July 2, 1864.

Perham's charter provided for a capital stock of $100,000,000, and though no mention of a government subsidy had been made, a munificent land grant was bestowed upon the company. The corporators formed a board of commissioners who, after collecting $2,000,000 as security, chose directors and elected Josiah Perham the first president of the Northern Pacific Railroad. He held the post for a year—just long enough to see the failure of his scheme for popular subscriptions. Illness overtook him and he was forced to make settlement of his debts by transferring, in December 1865, the presidency and the franchise of the company to John Gregory Smith [*q.v.*] of Vermont.

Perham died in extreme poverty in East Boston on Oct. 4, 1868. With his ideas for cheap fares and his labors for the Northern Pacific he conferred two great benefits on future railroad expansion. His fight for a charter had not been in vain; his courage and steadfastness were qualities which his successors were not slow to emulate. He and his friends had given the company an organization; it remained for others to make the railroad a reality.

[E. V. Smalley, *Hist. of the Northern Pacific Railroad* (1883); G. J. Varney, *A Gazetteer of the State of Me.* (1886); *Maine Genealogist and Biographer*, Dec. 1875; H. H. Tyndale Collection of Northern Pacific Pamphlets 1860–1870, in the Baker Library, Harvard University; files of the *Boston Traveller*, *Boston Transcript*, *Boston Courier*, and *Railway Times*, for the years 1850–68; *Cong. Globe*, 1862–66.] F. E. H—e.

PERIAM, JONATHAN (Feb. 17, 1823–Dec. 9, 1911), horticulturist, agricultural writer, born in Newark, N. J., was one of the ten children of Joseph and Phoebe O. (Meeker) Periam. His father, an officer during the War of 1812, conducted an academy for boys and girls and undertook his son's education. In 1838 the family moved to a large farm on the Calumet River, fourteen miles south of Chicago, where the father started a small nursery from seeds, and set out the first orchard of grafted fruit in Cook County. In the autumn of 1839 the father died and the management of the family's holdings devolved on Jonathan.

At this time he was interested in commercial dairying, but his success in marketing watermelons in Chicago turned him to a long career of gardening and gave him claim to the distinction of being the first professional market gardener in northern Illinois. Eventually his gardens occupied 100 acres. He also specialized in blooded road horses, Devon cattle, and Berkshire hogs. (See his articles in *Transactions of the Illinois State Horticultural Society,* n.s., vols. XI, 1878, XIV, 1881, XXXIX, 1905; and the Chicago *Inter Ocean,* Jan. 24, 1909.) In 1849 he went overland to California on a gold-seeking expedition, returning by sea in 1853 (see his "The Argonaut's Trail," in the *Prairie Farmer,* Feb. 1–Apr. 15, 1912). Some time afterward he married Mary Wadhams, daughter of Carlton Wadhams, and they had four children. During the Civil War he served on the staff of the provost marshal at Chicago. In 1868 he became head farmer, superintendent of practical agriculture, and first recording secretary of the board of trustees at the newly organized Illinois Industrial University, now the University of Illinois. About two years later he became manager of the sugar beet farm and factory at Chatsworth, Ill. From 1873 to 1878 he was a member of the Illinois State Board of Agriculture, serving as its vice-president during that period. When the Chicago Veterinary College was organized he joined its staff and remained a member of it for two years.

As early as 1842 Periam began to correspond with western agricultural periodicals. During the early seventies he served the *Western Rural,* the *Interior,* and *Farm, Field and Fireside* in various editorial capacities. His chief work in this field, however, was his editorship of the *Prairie Farmer* from 1876 to 1884 and from 1887 to 1893. He also edited or wrote a number of compendiums, chief of which are *The American Encyclopaedia of Agriculture* (1881), *The Farmers' Stock Book* (1885); *Pictorial Home and Farm Manual* (1885), adapted to the Australasian colonies by R. W. Emerson MacIvor; *The Prairie Farmer Horse Book* (1891); *The American Farmer's Pictorial Cyclopedia of Live Stock* (1882); *The New American Farmer's Pictorial Cyclopedia of Live Stock* (1900); and *Live Stock; A Complete Compendium for the American Farmer and Stock Owner* (1906), the last three prepared in collaboration with A. H. Baker. He wrote many essays for various agricultural publications and the Chicago dailies, two novels, and a pastoral poem. Notable among his publications is *The Groundswell* (1874). In this book, designed to be sold by subscription to

farmers, he attempted to present the farmers' side of the various questions which were prominent during the decade of the Granger movement. Considerable documentary material, especially with reference to the movement in Illinois, is included. His interest in horticulture resulted in his being a life member of the Illinois Horticultural Society, the Horticultural Society of Northern Illinois, the American Pomological Society, and the Wisconsin Horticultural Society, and a frequent contributor to their proceedings; he was the first president of the Chicago Agricultural and Horticultural Society. As a speaker he was effective and pleasing. His last years were spent in cultivating flowers.

[*Ill. Farm and Fireside,* Dec. 1, 1895; *Orange Judd Farmer,* May 23, 1896; *Farmers' Rev.,* May 5, 1906; *Ann. Report of the Wis. State Horticultural Soc. for the Year 1901*; *Trans. Ill. State Horticultural Soc. for the Year 1911*; *Chicago Tribune,* Dec. 10, 1911; *Prairie Farmer,* Jan. 1, 1912.] E. E. E.

PERKINS, CHARLES CALLAHAN (Mar. 1, 1823–Aug. 25, 1886), art critic, organizer of cultural activities, had from his parents, James Perkins and Eliza Greene (Callahan) Perkins, both the material inheritance and the temperament that naturally made him an influential friend of the arts of design and of music in Boston, his native city. The father, descended from Edmund Perkins who emigrated to New England in 1650, was a wealthy and philanthropic merchant; the mother was a gracious, cultivated woman. From the family home in Pearl Street Charles attended several schools before entering Harvard College. The prescribed academic course he found irksome, but he was graduated in 1843. He had previously drawn and painted and, declining chances to enter business, he went abroad soon after graduation, determined to study art. At Rome he became friendly with the sculptor Thomas Crawford [*q.v.*], then struggling against poverty, and gave him encouragement. In 1846 he took a studio at Paris, where he had instruction from Ary Scheffer. Later he was at Leipzig, pursuing studies in the history of Christian art. During a second residence at Paris he took up etching with Bracquemond and Lalanne. He made many etchings to illustrate his own books.

Circumstances led Perkins, a wealthy man, to devote his life to interpreting the art of others rather than to creative art. His love of music competed with his enthusiasm for painting and sculpture. In 1850–51 and from 1875 until his death he was president of the Handel and Haydn Society, Boston, whose concerts he sometimes conducted and for which he wrote meritorious music. He married, June 12, 1855, Frances D.

Bruen, daughter of the Rev. Matthias Bruen, of New York. At their home many concerts and recitals were given. Perkins was the largest subscriber toward the Boston Music Hall, to which he also contributed the great bronze statue of Beethoven, modeled by his friend Crawford—the work which since 1902 has stood in the entrance hall of the New England Conservatory of Music, Boston. An invitation extended to Perkins in 1857 to give some lectures at Trinity College, Hartford, on "The Rise and Progress of Painting," started him as a lecturer. He possessed charm and magnetism on the platform. After a second period of European residence, ending in 1869, he lectured frequently on Greek and Roman art before Boston school teachers, and at the Lowell Institute on sculpture and painting. Thirteen years' service on the Boston school committee amplified his educational work. He brought to Boston the South Kensington methods of teaching drawing and design to children, and he was instrumental in founding the Massachusetts Normal Art School, now the Massachusetts School of Art. As a committeeman he was also assigned the third division of the school system, comprising the North and West Ends. He took pains to know personally all teachers of his division, often entertaining them at his home.

Prior to 1850 Perkins had proposed an art museum for Boston but had found the plan premature. When others twenty years later revived this project he supported it gladly. He was second among the incorporators of the present Museum of Fine Arts, securing for its opening a gift of Egyptian antiquities and making valuable suggestions as to arrangement of exhibits. Among the directors he advocated showing contemporary work as well as the arts of antiquity. He had, meantime, been elected to the presidency of the Boston Art Club, which he held for ten years, and to which he gave much time. He systematically devoted part of each day to writing. *Tuscan Sculptors*, published in London in 1864, brought him a European reputation. It was followed in 1868 by *Italian Sculptors*, with illustrations drawn and etched by the author. He edited, with notes, Charles Locke Eastlake's *Hints on Household Taste* (1872), and *Art in the House* (1879) from the original of Jakob von Falke. In 1878 he brought out, with illustrative woodcuts which he had designed, *Raphael and Michaelangelo*, dedicated to Henry W. Longfellow, whose previously unpublished translations of the sculptor's sonnets were included in the book. His *Historical Handbook of Italian Sculpture* appeared in 1883, and in 1886, in French, *Ghiberti et Son École*. At the time of his death he had nearly finished his closely documented *History of the Handel and Haydn Society of Boston, Massachusetts*, which other hands completed. He liked society and good fellowship. These he particularly enjoyed at his summer home at Newport, R. I. He was killed instantly by the overturning of a carriage in which he was riding near Windsor, Vt., on Aug. 25, 1886.

[There are tributes to Perkins by Robert C. Winthrop, Thos. W. Higginson, and Samuel Eliot, with a biography by the last-named, in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. III (1888). See also: Justin Winsor, *The Memorial Hist. of Boston*, vol. IV (1881); A. F. Perkins, *Perkins Family* (1890); *Dwight's Jour. of Music*, Mar. 1, 1856; and *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 26, 1886.]

F. W. C.

PERKINS, CHARLES ELLIOTT (Nov. 24, 1840–Nov. 8, 1907), railroad executive, son of James Handasyd Perkins [*q.v.*] and Sarah Hart (Elliott), was born in Cincinnati, Ohio. He was educated in the public schools of Cincinnati and at Milton, Mass. After a short time as clerk in a store, he was advised by his cousin, John Murray Forbes [*q.v.*] of Boston, who was financially interested in railroad developments in the Mississippi Valley, to enter this field. He therefore moved to Burlington, Iowa, and in 1859 became clerk at thirty dollars a month in the office of the Burlington & Missouri River Railroad. This road had received a federal land grant in 1856 and after the panic of 1857 had been purchased by the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, of which James F. Joy [*q.v.*] of Detroit was president. Together the two roads eventually gave a through route between Chicago and Omaha, but at the moment the Burlington & Missouri River of Iowa was built only seventy-five miles west from Burlington. Perkins was soon made cashier of the road and within a year was promoted to the position of assistant treasurer and secretary, and in 1865 was appointed acting superintendent and later general superintendent, thus serving a valuable apprenticeship for larger tasks in the future.

By 1869 this line had been completed, and immediately the Burlington & Missouri River Railroad in Nebraska was chartered to extend the road west from Omaha. Aided by a federal land grant, the company was able by 1873 to build to Fort Kearny, where a junction with the Union Pacific was formed. In the promotion and construction of this road Perkins was active, being an incorporator and director from the beginning. In 1872 he was elected vice-president of the Iowa line and when this was consolidated with the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy in 1873 he continued in the employ of the combined lines as vice-president and general manager of the roads west of the Missouri River. He was also made direc-

tor (1875) and vice-president (1876) of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy. With its 1,343 miles of trackage, its valuation of $50,000,000, and its strong financial and physical condition, the road was one of the longest and best in the country at this time. In 1880 the Burlington & Missouri River Railroad in Nebraska was consolidated with the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, and the following year Perkins was chosen president of the whole system, succeeding his cousin John M. Forbes, with whom he had worked closely for five years.

Because of his thorough knowledge of the conditions of Western railroading, and of the confidence reposed in him by the Eastern directors and stockholders, Perkins was able to organize the road on a sounder basis and to develop it in conformity with the complex needs of expanding markets and areas of production. The unique position which it held on the railway map of the country was well expressed by Charles Francis Adams [*q.v.*] in a letter which he wrote in 1882: "The Chicago, Burlington and Quincy and the Union Pacific together constitute the Broadway or Washington street of this continent. They will always be the chief commercial thoroughfare between Chicago and San Francisco." Some of the less profitable enterprises into which the previous management had been drawn, like the so-called River roads to the north of Burlington, were disposed of, and other lines more necessary to the logical expansion westward were built or purchased. Thus, during the next twenty years, to the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy were added, among others, the Republican Valley, the Grand Island & Wyoming Central, the Grand Island & Northern Wyoming, the Big Horn Southern, and the Chicago, Burlington & Northern railroads. By Feb. 21, 1901, when Perkins resigned the presidency, the system contained 7,661 miles and was financially one of the strongest of the major railroads. Of him F. A. Delano, president of the Wabash, wrote: "As a railroad builder he was perhaps as great a strategist as any man this country has produced" (*post*). He remained, until his death, a director of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, his work being primarily in the financial department. In his business dealings he was guided by the highest principles of personal integrity and of careful administration of other people's property. He was a big man physically and was untiringly active, but was uniformly courteous and inspired affection in those with whom he worked. On Sept. 22, 1864, he married his cousin Edith, daughter of Capt. Robert Bennet Forbes [*q.v.*] of Milton, Mass. Three or four years after his

Perkins

retirement from the presidency of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, he established his home in Westwood, Mass., where he died. He left three sons and four daughters.

[*Geneal. of the Descendants of John Eliot* (1905); F. A. Delano, "Perkins of the Burlington," *Appleton's Mag.*, Mar. 1908; W. W. Baldwin, *Story of the Burlington* (1925), reprinted from *Shipper and Carrier*, May 1925; H. G. Pearson, *An Am. Railroad Builder: John Murray Forbes* (1911); R. E. Riegel, *The Story of the Western Railroads* (1926); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Boston Transcript*, Nov. 9, 1907.]

E. L. B.

PERKINS, ELI [See LANDON, MELVILLE DE LANCEY, 1839–1910].

PERKINS, ELISHA (Jan. 16, 1741–Sept. 6, 1799), physician, called by one of his biographers a "celebrity par excellence in the quack line," was born in Norwich, Conn., a descendant of John Perkins who came to New England in 1631 and in 1633 settled in Ipswich. His father was Dr. Joseph Perkins, an eminent practitioner in Norwich; his mother, Mary (Bushnell) Perkins. Elisha is said to have studied at Yale, and it is certain that he was given the necessary education for medical practice by his father. He first settled in Plainfield, Conn., where he achieved a considerable reputation. He established an academy there and, according to report, because of the lack of adequate boarding accommodations took many pupils into his own home; he also received patients there for treatment—a common practice in that day. In 1792 he became one of the incorporators of the Connecticut Medical Society and he served as chairman of the Windham County Medical Association for several terms. On Sept. 23, 1762, he married Sarah Douglass of Plainfield, and had by her ten children—five sons and five daughters.

Today his name is known only through his so-called "metallic tractors." These instruments were devised by him in an attempt to apply to medical practice the principles of the discovery of Galvani. They were called "tractors" because of the method of application, being alternately drawn or stroked over the affected part. They consisted of two pieces of metal about three inches long, seemingly of brass and iron, and were quite similar to the modern horse-shoe nail, being rounded at one end and pointed at the other. One side was half round, while the other was flat, with the name "Perkins' Patent Tractors" stamped thereon. Perkins made these magic instruments at his home, in a small furnace concealed in the wall of his house, and sold them for five guineas a pair. In the year 1795 he reported his discovery to the Connecticut Medical Society, but gained little encouragement there from his professional brethren. A short

time after, he went to Philadelphia, where he met with a most enthusiastic reception. Here he is said to have made extensive tests in the public hospitals, infirmaries, and other institutions. Congress was then in session, and some of the most distinguished men in the country, as well as physicians, were witnesses. On Feb. 19, 1796, he took out a patent for his tractors, receiving the exclusive right of making them for a period of fourteen years. The following year he was expelled from membership in the Connecticut Medical Society, on the ground that he was "a patentee and user of nostrums" (*Medical Repository*, vol. I, no. 1, 1798).

Besides the invention of the celebrated tractors, Perkins also introduced a remedy which was a combination of common vinegar saturated with muriate of soda. In 1799, during an outbreak of yellow fever in New York, he visited that city for the purpose of using this remedy. After four weeks of assiduous effort, during which time the remedy proved of no avail, Perkins himself contracted the fever and died in his fifty-ninth year.

"Perkinism," as the application of the tractors came to be known, did not, however, succumb with its originator. In 1795 his son, Benjamin Douglas Perkins, a Yale graduate in the class of 1794, went to England to exploit the sale of the tractors. He opened an office at 18 Leicester Square—a house formerly occupied by John Hunter—and immediately established a thriving trade. Three years later, he published a treatise, entitled *The Influence of Metallic Tractors on the Human Body* (1798). In 1803 he established the Perkinean Institution in London, with the Right Honorable Lord Rivers as president, and Sir William Barker as vice-president. It is said that 5,000 cases were treated here. In Copenhagen, where the tractors were extensively used, eleven well-known physicians reported so favorably that the records were printed in an octavo volume. An English translation by Benjamin D. Perkins, *Experiments with the Metallic Tractors*, from a German version of the Danish, was published in 1798. In 1800, however, the doom of Perkinism was sounded by Dr. John Haygarth, of Bath, England, who in that year published *On the Imagination as a Cause and as a Cure of Disorders of the Body*, and declared that he had effected as many cures with tractors made of painted wood.

[G. A. Perkins, *The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich* (1889); James Thacher, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1828); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); W. R. Steiner, "Dr. Elisha Perkins of Plainfield, Conn., and His Metallic Tractors," in *Bull. Medic. Hist. Soc., Chicago*, vol. III (1923); P. G. Perrin, *The Life and Works of Thomas Green Fessenden* (1925), pp. 50–71.]

H. T.

PERKINS, FREDERIC BEECHER (Sept. 27, 1828–Jan. 27, 1899), editor, author, librarian, son of Thomas Clap Perkins and Mary Foote (Beecher) Perkins, was born in Hartford, Conn. On his father's side he was a descendant of John Perkins who emigrated to Boston in 1631 and settled in Ipswich in 1633; his maternal grandfather was the distinguished theologian, Lyman Beecher [*q.v.*]; his sister Emily became the wife of Edward Everett Hale [*q.v.*]. Frederic entered Yale with the class of 1850, but left college in the autumn of 1848 and began the study of law in his father's office in Hartford. He did not return to college but in 1860 Yale conferred on him the degree of master of arts.

During 1849 and 1850 he taught school in New York City and Newark, N. J., at the same time continuing the study of law. He was admitted to the bar in Hartford in 1851, but seems to have practised little, if any. He taught school, did editorial work in Hartford, and from 1854 to 1857 was one of the editors of the *New York Tribune*. Returning to Hartford, he became assistant editor of Barnard's *American Journal of Education*, and from 1857 to 1861 was librarian of the Connecticut Historical Society. For more than a decade thereafter he steadily engaged in literary and editorial work. He was editor of the early volumes of the *Galaxy*, was on the staff of the *Independent*, assisted his uncle, Henry Ward Beecher, in editing the *Christian Union*, and from 1870 to 1873 helped his brother-in-law, Edward Everett Hale, edit the magazine *Old and New*. In May 1874 he became assistant in the Boston Public Library, working as bibliographer and special cataloguer there until December 1879. In the summer of the following year he became chief librarian of the San Francisco Public Library, holding that position until November 1887. For seven years thereafter he was engaged in editorial work in San Francisco, returning East in 1894. He died five years later in Morristown, N. J., after a lingering illness.

Perkins was one of the earliest and most energetic workers in the field of library organization and his contributions to library literature were many and varied. He contributed to *Public Libraries in the United States of America, Their History, Condition and Management* (1876), issued by the Bureau of Education, and was an associate editor of the *Library Journal* from 1877 to 1880. Much of his literary work is anonymous and buried in the files of the periodicals with which he was connected. His more important books were, *Charles Dickens* (1870), a biography; *Scrope; or, the Lost Library* (1874), a novel; *Check List for American Local History*

(1876); *Devil-Puzzlers and Other Studies* (1877); and *The Best Reading* (1872), a classified bibliography which went through several editions and was long a standard reference book in public libraries. Brander Matthews ranked "Devil-Puzzlers" among the ten best American short stories. Perkins had an encyclopedic mind. Edward Everett Hale once said that he had never asked him a question without being told the answer or where the answer was to be found. He had a roving disposition, changed positions often, was restless if long in a place, and dissipated his undoubtedly brilliant mentality by not concentrating on one particular vocation. He was tall, straight, imposing looking, outspoken, proud, sternly honest, and a hard worker. In Civil War days, during the New York riots, he once courageously faced a mob to protect a negro. He was married twice; first, on May 21, 1857, to Mary Anne, daughter of Henry and Clarissa (Perkins) Westcott of Providence, R. I.; she died in 1893 and in May 1894, he married Frances, daughter of Samuel C. Johnson of Guilford, Conn., and widow of his uncle, the Rev. James C. Beecher. By his first wife he had two sons and two daughters.

[*Biog. Record of the Class of 1850 of Yale Coll.*, 1861, 1877, and 1901; *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ.*, 1899; G. A. Perkins, *Family of John Perkins of Ipswich, Mass.* (1889); *Lib. Jour.*, Feb. 1899; *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 4, 1899; data from the librarians of the Conn. Hist. Soc., Boston Pub. Lib., and San Francisco Pub. Lib., and from Perkins' daughter, Charlotte Perkins Gilman.] G. B. U.

PERKINS, GEORGE CLEMENT (Aug. 23, 1839–Feb. 26, 1923), ship-owner, banker, governor of California, United States senator, was born in Kennebunkport, Me., the son of Clement and Lucinda (Fairchild) Perkins. His father owned a small farm but was chiefly employed as a sailor and officer on vessels trading with the West Indies and the New-England coast. The son's early childhood was spent in cheerless work on the unproductive farm, varied with a few months each year in the district school. Inheriting his father's fondness for the sea, he became, at the age of twelve, cabin-boy on a vessel bound for New Orleans, and followed a seafaring life for the next four years, making several voyages to Europe interrupted only by six months more of schooling at home. When not yet sixteen, he sailed for San Francisco, where he arrived in the autumn of 1855. In a few days he went by boat to Sacramento and tramped from there to Oroville (then called Ophir). For the next two years he worked at placer-mining in Butte and adjoining counties. Meeting with indifferent success, he returned to Oroville and soon became clerk in a country store. By practising the most rigid economy for over two years, he was able to save $800. This, with $1200 borrowed capital, he invested in a ferry at Long Bar on the Feather River, and a year later sold the ferry at a profit of $1000. Returning to the Oroville store, he gradually saved enough to purchase the business, which was now becoming highly remunerative. During this period he built the Ophir flourmill, invested in mining and sheep-raising, and constructed sawmills, most of which investments proved profitable. He also assisted in the establishment of the Bank of Butte County in Chico, and was one of its directors.

In 1860 Perkins cast his first presidential vote for Abraham Lincoln, and throughout the Civil War he was a stanch supporter of the Union cause, as a member of the Oroville National Guards and an aide-de-camp to Gen. John Bidwell. When barely thirty years of age he was elected to the state Senate (1869) as a Republican from a strongly Democratic district (Butte County), and served in that body until 1876. While in the legislature he met Charles Goodall, and in 1872 became a member of the San Francisco firm of Goodall & Nelson. Transferring his Oroville interests to his brother, he moved to San Francisco about 1876 and shortly afterward purchased the interest of his partner Nelson. Thereupon the firm became Goodall, Perkins & Company, and soon was incorporated as the Pacific Coast Steamship Company. The Company acquired most of the coast-line steamers plying between Alaska and Central America; also the Oregon Railway & Navigation Company, the Pacific Steam Whaling Company, and the Arctic Oil Company.

Although an outspoken opponent of the California constitution of 1879, Perkins was elected (September 1879) the first governor under it by a plurality of more than 20,000. As governor from Jan. 8, 1880, to Jan. 10, 1883, he took most pride in the fact that during his administration the state prisons had become practically self-supporting through the establishment, at his recommendation, of the jute-mill at San Quentin and the quarry at Folsom. After careful investigation in each case, he pardoned and commuted the sentences of more prisoners than any other governor of California prior to 1918, and only one of those pardoned was ever returned to prison. In 1886 he was a candidate for the United States Senate but was defeated by Leland Stanford. He reached the Senate, however, through appointment by the governor (July 1893) immediately after Stanford's death. By successive reëlections he remained a senator for nearly

twenty-two years. Upon the expiration of his term (March 1915), he returned to his home in Oakland and lived in retirement until his sudden death in 1923. His knowledge of maritime affairs made him prominent in connection with legislation dealing with the navy and ocean traffic, and for four years (1909–13) he was chairman of the Senate committee on naval affairs. He opposed Japanese immigration, had a warm controversy with President Roosevelt over the latter's message proposing naturalization of the Japanese, supported the Panama Canal project, and advocated a protective tariff.

Perkins' interests in California embraced banking institutions as well as railroad and land companies. He was the owner of a large cattle-ranch in southern California, and a heavy investor in quartz and gravel mines throughout the mining sections of California, and in iron mines near Puget Sound. He had a conspicuous part in the preparations for the Panama Pacific International Exposition of 1915; was president of the San Francisco Art Association; a trustee of the California Academy of Sciences, the State Mining Bureau, and of the State Institution for the Dumb and Blind at Berkeley; and for thirty years was the acting president of the Boys and Girls Aid Society. He held high office in the Masonic order and was a member of the Loyal Legion. In 1864 he married Ruth A. Parker of Marysville, who died in 1921. To them were born three sons and four daughters.

[H. H. Bancroft, *Chronicles of the Builders* (1892), vol. II; T. H. Hittell, *Hist. of Cal.*, vol. IV (1897); G. C. Mansfield, *Hist. of Butte County, Cal.* (1918); J. E. Baker, *Past and Present of Alameda County, Cal.*, vol. II (1914); J. M. Guinn, *Hist. of the State of Cal. and Biog. Record of Oakland and Environs* (copyright 1907), vol. I; *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *San Francisco Bull.*, Feb. 26, 1923; *San Francisco Chronicle*, Feb. 27, 1923.] P. O. R.

PERKINS, GEORGE DOUGLAS (Feb. 29, 1840–Feb. 3, 1914), Iowa congressman and editor, was born in Holley, Orleans County, N. Y. His father, John D. Perkins, a lawyer, was a native of Connecticut; his mother, Lucy Forsyth Perkins, was born in Albany, N. Y. The family moved to Indiana and later to Wisconsin, where the father died in 1852, leaving his wife with four children, two sons and two daughters. The elder son, Henry A. Perkins, became a printer, and George followed his example. In 1860 the brothers founded the *Cedar Falls* (Iowa) *Gazette* and published it until 1866, when they sold it, and engaged in business in Chicago for a few years. In 1869 they purchased the *Sioux City Journal* and converted it into a daily newspaper. After the death of his brother Henry in November 1884, George D. Perkins remained as editor and publisher until his death in 1914. For many years also he took part in politics. In 1873 he was chosen state senator. He was state commissioner of immigration from 1880 to 1882, United States marshal from 1882 to 1885, and a member of Congress from 1891 to 1899. He was also delegate to the Republican National conventions in 1876, 1880, 1888, 1908, and 1912. In 1906 he was a candidate for nomination as governor of Iowa against Gov. Albert B. Cummins [*q.v.*] who was seeking a third term. A strenuous preconvention campaign resulted in his defeat by the manipulation of party leaders on the pretext of party necessity. At the convention, according to custom, the nominee was called upon for a speech. Governor Cummins, extremely hoarse from the effect of campaign speaking, responded. Perkins, the defeated candidate, followed Cummins. His opening sentence was: "I thank God that although defeated I am still in possession of my voice and my conscience."

His public service and office-holding Perkins regarded as incidental to his work as a journalist. Probably no feature of the *Sioux City Journal* under his management was more characteristic than the "lay sermons" that appeared every Sunday morning for many years. His humor, his mastery of idiomatic English, and his religious convictions were freely expressed. The familiar Bible stories were explained by reference to modern conditions and the old Biblical figures were made real. Once in 1912 he tried to give them up, but there was so much protest that he continued them. He was a public speaker of great force as well as a trained and effective writer. A solemnly serious face only made his whimsical humor more irresistible. His most expressive features were the eyes which were "large, keen and deep" and met everyone with absolute directness. Perkins was married to Louise E. Julian of Chicago on July 2, 1869. Five children were born to them, two daughters and three sons. His portrait painted by Nicholas R. Brewer hangs in the building which houses the Historical Department of the state government in Des Moines. He was one of the last of the pioneer editors in Iowa and was known throughout the state as "Uncle George."

[See: *Annals of Iowa*, July 1914; the *Sioux City Jour.*, Feb. 4, 1914; the *Reg. and Leader* (Des Moines), Feb. 4, 1914; the *Palimpsest* (Iowa City, Iowa), Aug. 1924; the *Register* (Des Moines), Jan. 4, 1931; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13.] F. E. H—s.

PERKINS, GEORGE HAMILTON (Oct. 20, 1836–Oct. 28, 1899), naval officer, was through his father, Hamilton Eliot Perkins, de-

scended from an old Warwickshire family, the Rev. William Perkins coming to Boston in 1632. His mother, Clara Bartlett (George) Perkins, was also of English stock. He was born in Hopkinton, N. H., had his schooling at Hopkinton and Gilmanton academies, and when he was nearly fifteen entered the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis. He had already shown a greater liking for outdoor life and adventure than for books, and at the Academy he but narrowly escaped "bilging" because of scholastic difficulties. He lengthened the four-year course to five, showing superiority only in target practice with the big guns on the summer cruises. After graduation his first duty was in the sloop *Cyane,* dispatched to Nicaragua and Panama, and in the bark *Release,* sent to Paraguay. As acting master of the *Sumter* he was ordered to the dreaded West African coast in 1859 to suppress the slave trade—a duty which lasted for two years and which provided him many an adventure. On Feb. 2, 1861, he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant.

When he returned to the United States the Civil War had already begun, and he was ordered as first lieutenant to the gunboat *Cayuga* assigned to the West Gulf Blockading Squadron under Farragut. As the attack on New Orleans developed, the *Cayuga* was made the flagship of Capt. Theodorus Bailey [*q.v.*], the second in command, and on the morning of Apr. 24, 1862, it led the entire fleet in the passage of the forts. When the fleet reached New Orleans, Captain Bailey asked Lieutenant Perkins to go ashore with him under a flag of truce. Surrounded by a hostile and threatening mob, the two officers made their way to the mayor's office to demand the surrender of the city. Perkins took part in the subsequent operations between New Orleans and Vicksburg, and then as commanding officer of the *Sciota* served seven months of blockade duty on the Texas coast. He was then granted a leave of absence, but when he learned that Farragut was preparing to attack the forts defending Mobile, he volunteered his services again and was promptly assigned to the command of the new river monitor *Chickasaw.* In passing the forts and in his engagement with the Confederate ironclad ram *Tennessee,* he handled the monitor with consummate skill, receiving highest praise from his superiors. He was employed in further operations against the forts and became so valuable that he was continued in command until after the close of the war.

His subsequent service afloat was almost entirely in the Pacific. He had command of the *Ashuelot* on the Asiatic Station, 1877–79, and of the *Hartford* off South America, 1884–85. He was promoted to the rank of commander in 1871, and to the rank of captain in 1882, being retired in 1891 only because of ill health. Five years later he was promoted commodore on the retired list. Farragut said of him, only a month before his own death, "Perkins was young and handsome, and . . . no braver man ever trod a ship's deck; . . . his work in the *Chickasaw* did more to capture the *Tennessee* than all the guns of the fleet put together" (Alden, *post,* p. 205). He was married to Anna Minot Weld, daughter of William Fletcher Weld of Boston, on July 25, 1870. They had one child, Isabel, who later became Mrs. Larz Anderson. The last years of his life were spent largely in Webster, N. H., where he purchased several farms, bred fine cattle and race horses, and indulged the whims of a gentleman farmer. He spent the winters at his home in Boston, where he died a few days after his sixty-third birthday.

[Personal letters in the possession of Mrs. Larz Anderson of Brookline, Mass.; C. S. Alden, *George Hamilton Perkins* (1914); *Letters of Capt. Geo. H. Perkins,* edited by Susan G. Perkins, with biog. sketch by G. E. Belknap (3d ed. 1908); *Official Proceedings at the Dedication of the Statue of Commodore G. H. Perkins at Concord, N. H.* (1903); Isabel Anderson, *Under the Black Horse Flag, Annals of the Weld Family* (1926); *Boston Globe,* Oct. 29, 1899.] C. S. A.

PERKINS, GEORGE HENRY (Sept. 25, 1844–Sept. 12, 1933), geologist, educator, administrator, was born at Cambridge, Mass., the son of Frederick Trenck Perkins, a Congregational minister and a graduate of Yale in both College and Seminary. Through his father he was descended from John Perkins who emigrated to New England in 1631 and settled in Ipswich. His mother was Harriet T. Olmsted, a niece of Denison Olmsted [*q.v.*], through whom he was descended from Joseph Olmsted who died in Connecticut in 1644. George Henry Perkins had two years of college study in Knox College at Galesburg, Ill., then entered Yale College and graduated with honors in 1867. For post-graduate work in geology he received the Ph.D. degree in 1869. In the autumn of that year he became a member of the faculty of the University of Vermont at Burlington and was continuously active as teacher and administrator to the day of his death, sixty-four years later. He first taught "animal and vegetable physiology," then representing botany and zoölogy. In 1881 he became Howard Professor of Natural History. In 1898 his chair was changed to geology, and he was given added duties as dean of the newly created department of natural sciences. In 1907 he became vice-president and dean of the College of Arts and Sciences, positions which he occupied

until near the close of his life. He was acting-president during the years 1917–19. For fifty-six years he was the curator of the university museum. Because of physical disability he relinquished most of his work of teaching, but classes in anthropology met at his residence until three months before his death. For more than thirty years he was the academic balance-wheel of the institution. Combined with a kindly disposition and understanding, he possessed the ability to make prompt and wise decisions. With these gifts he held the confidence and affection of faculty, students, and alumni for many years.

In 1880 Perkins entered public service as state entomologist, which position he held to 1895. He was made state geologist in 1898 and retained the position until his death. The state survey dated from 1845, and seven men had preceded him in the office. The only important survey publication by his predecessors is the inclusive two-volume report by Edward Hitchcock. Perkins' work for the state survey is on record in eighteen biennial volumes of state reports, which contain, besides geological data, much information of varied scientific interest. Perkins was a fellow of the American Anthropological Association, of the American Ethnological Society, and of the Geological Society of America. He had been active in the American Association for the Advancement of Science, as fellow, honorary life member, secretary of the section on anthropology (1883), and as vice-president and chairman of the section on geology (1917). He was a naturalist, in the proper sense of the term, and his wide and lively interest in nature is evidenced by his non-geologic writings, which classify as follows: botany, twenty-one papers; zoölogy, sixteen; archeology, ten; and entomology, nine. Several of his geological papers were published in scientific journals, and about fifty articles in the biennial reports of the Vermont Geological Survey. Perkins was married, in 1870, to Mary Judd Farnham, of Galesburg, Ill. A son, Henry Farnham Perkins, survived him.

[The *Vt. Alumni Weekly*, Oct. 4, 1933, is devoted to the memory of Perkins. See also: G. A. Perkins, *The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich, Mass.* (1889); *Burlington Free Press*, Sept. 13, 1933. A memoir, with bibliography, is to be printed in the *Bull. of the Geol. Soc. of America.*] H. L. F.

PERKINS, GEORGE WALBRIDGE (Jan. 31, 1862–June 18, 1920), banker, was born in Chicago, a descendant of John Perkins, who emigrated to New England in 1631, and the son of George Walbridge and Sarah Louise (Mills) Perkins. His father had been in business in Buffalo before moving to Chicago, where he entered the life insurance field and became distinguished for his public spirit and philanthropy. The boy did not attend the Chicago public schools until he was ten years old. At fifteen he left school and became an office boy for the New York Life Insurance Company. Rapidly advanced, he became first vice-president by the time he was forty-one. Among other reforms he revolutionized the company's agency system. The practice had been to farm out territory to middlemen or general agents, who appointed those that did the actual soliciting for policies. These solicitors were often underpaid and improvident, frequently made misrepresentations in order to get initial premiums, and transferred their allegiance as the general agent did his. To end this shifting of personnel Perkins, in 1892, began to dispense with the general agents as fast as their contracts expired. He made the local agents and solicitors a loyal and permanently attached force by employing them directly and by introducing on Jan. 1, 1896, the so-called "Nylic" system of benefits based on length of service and amount of policies written. He also made various trips abroad and obtained permission for his company to do business in Russia and other leading European countries. When he, after repeated solicitations, joined the banking house of J. P. Morgan & Company on Jan. 1, 1901, he relinquished most of his duties with the New York Life but remained connected with it until 1905. In the field of finance he proved himself a skilful business organizer, taking a leading part in the formation of the International Harvester Corporation, International Mercantile Marine Company, and Northern Securities Company. He further devised a working organization for the United States Steel Corporation and the scheme, in force since 1903, of annual offerings of preferred stock to employees on advantageous terms.

At the close of 1910 he withdrew from Morgan & Company to devote himself to work of a public nature and to the dissemination of his views on the correct solution of the business problems of the day. He believed that competition should be replaced by cooperation in the business world; that great corporations properly supervised were more efficient than small competing units; and that workers should receive retirement pensions and share in corporate profits. He made numerous addresses, many of which were later published. Of these perhaps the most important were "The Modern Corporation" in *The Currency Problem. . . . Addresses Delivered at Columbia University* (1908), *National Action and Industrial Growth* (1914); *The Sherman Law* (1915), and *Profit Sharing* (1919). He had an original mind and expressed himself concisely, forcibly,

and convincingly in his writings, although he was an ineffective speaker. He had already done notable public service by serving as chairman from 1900 of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission, which under his able direction developed the park from a few hundred acres to fifty square miles of playground. In 1912 he became nationally prominent by joining the Progressive party. He was chairman of its national executive committee and furthered its cause with all his dynamic energy. During the World War he was chairman of a joint state and municipal food supply commission for which he drew up an admirable report on marketing conditions in New York City (*Joint Report on Foods and Markets of Governor Whitman's Market Commission,* 1917). As chairman of a finance committee of the Young Men's Christian Association, he raised $200,000,000 for welfare work among American soldiers abroad. He belonged to some forty societies devoted to various causes. He had an engaging presence and in Andrew Carnegie's words, sweetened "sordid business dealings by the amiability of his manners" (*New York Times, post*). A rare executive, who could inspire his subordinates with enthusiasm, he had no recreations but worked incessantly with tireless activity, not even taking time to read books. He died at Stamford, Conn., survived by his wife Evelyn (Ball) Perkins, to whom he was married in 1889, and by their two children.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; B. C. Forbes, *Men Who Are Making America* (1917); G. A. Perkins, *The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich* (1889); *Pearson's Mag.*, July 1907; *Current Literature*, Apr. 1911; *Century Mag.*, Apr. 1915, pp. 944–53; *Sun* (N. Y.), June 18, 1920; *Printers' Ink*, June 24, 1920; *Natural Hist.*, May–June 1920; *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune*, June 19, 1920.] H. G. V.

PERKINS, JACOB (July 9, 1766–July 30, 1849), inventor, was born in Newburyport, Mass. He was the son of Matthew and Jane (Noyes) Dole Perkins, and a descendant of John Perkins, who came from England in 1631 and later settled in Ipswich, Mass. Little is known of the first ten years of Perkins' life except that he had meager schooling but showed unusual inventive talent. When he was thirteen years old he became a goldsmith's apprentice and when his master died two years later, Perkins carried on the business. He continued to follow this calling until 1787, producing many novel designs in gold beads and inventing a method of silver-plating shoe buckles. He was then employed for a short time by the State of Massachusetts to make dies for the copper coins struck at the Massachusetts mint. About 1790 he devised a machine to cut and head nails and tacks in a single operation. He organized a manufacturing company, but after patenting the machine, Jan. 16, 1795, he was involved in a lawsuit respecting the invention which continued for seven years and brought about his financial ruin. During the subsequent years of hardship, he turned his attention to bank-note engraving, and devised a steel check plate for printing bank notes which made counterfeiting extremely difficult. In 1809 the State of Massachusetts passed a law compelling banks in that state to adopt the form of note invented by Perkins.

About 1808 or 1810, in partnership with the bank-note engraver Gideon Fairman, he is said to have published a series of school copybooks entitled *Perkins and Fairman's Running Hand*, possibly the first books using steel plates to be printed in America (Stauffer, *post*, I, 209). After spending several years working for engravers in Boston and New York, Perkins rejoined Fairman in Philadelphia in 1814 and with him worked for several years endeavoring to improve Perkins' method of bank-note engraving. Failing to have their process adopted in the United States, they sailed for England in 1818 with many cases of their machinery to compete for the contract for the Bank of England notes then about to be awarded. They were supported by the country banks, but were unsuccessful in the competition. Nevertheless, with capital and influence furnished by the Heath family Perkins proceeded to establish a factory in England for making plates and printing bank notes. The firm of Perkins, Fairman & Heath began business in 1819, and two years later published an account of their process ("Prevention of Forgery," *Transactions of the Society for the Encouragement of Arts*, vol. XXXVIII, London, 1821). In 1840 they were entrusted with the production of the first penny postage stamps, and during the following forty years produced many millions of British postage stamps by the process invented by Perkins.

Shortly after getting his firm definitely established, Perkins began, about 1823, a series of unique experiments with high-pressure steam boilers and engines, which work he continued for the balance of his life. His experiments in this field were numerous and varied and revealed his fearless spirit. In 1827 he had attained working steam pressures of from 800 to 1400 pounds per square inch. He perfected a boiler and single-cylinder engine using steam at 800 pounds pressure and devised a special alloy to be used in conjunction with the engine pistons which became so highly polished as to require no lubricant. That same year he built a compound steam

engine of the Woolf type using steam at 1400 pounds pressure and expanding it eight times. In 1829 he patented an improved paddle wheel and in 1831 invented a method of securing free circulation of water in boilers which led the way to the modern water-tube boiler. About 1836 he patented a high-pressure boiler and engine for a steam vessel using steam at two thousand pounds pressure, and while he had difficulties when salt water was used in the boiler, he overcame them by using distilled or rain water. As early as 1820 he had been elected to membership in the Institution of Civil Engineers (London) and in subsequent years he read many papers descriptive of his experimental work not only in high pressure steam but in other fields. These included a plenometer for measuring the speed of vessels, a ship's pump, a method of warming and ventilating rooms and a method of ventilating the holds of ships. For this last invention he was awarded a medal by the Society for the Encouragement of Arts and for the pump invention he received the Vulcan gold medal. He received recognition in various countries, particularly in England, but he was a hundred years ahead of his time. On Nov. 11, 1790, he married Hannah Greenleaf of Newburyport. He died and was buried in London, survived by six children.

[G. A. Perkins, *The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich, Mass.* (1889); R. D. Spear, "High Pressure Steam," in *Wheeler News* (house organ of the Wheeler Condenser & Engineering Company, N. Y. City), Dec. 1926; H. P. Vowles and M. W. Vowles, "Jacob Perkins, 1766 to 1849," *Mechanical Engineering*, Nov. 1931; R. H. Thurston, *A Hist. of the Growth of the Steam Engine* (1878); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), vol. III; Henry Howe, *Memoirs of the Most Eminent American Mechanics* (1844); J. J. Currier, *Hist. of Newburyport, Mass.*, vol. II (1909); Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 3 vols., 1918), ed. by F. W. Bayley and C. E. Goodspeed; D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel*, vol. I (1907); *Minutes of Proc. of the Inst. of Civil Engineers* (London), vol. XXV (1866); *The Times* (London), July 31, 1849.]

C. W. M—n.

PERKINS, JAMES BRECK (Nov. 4, 1847–Mar. 11, 1910), lawyer, congressman, and historian, was of seventeenth-century Massachusetts stock. His parents, Hamlet Houghton and Margaret Ann (Breck) Perkins, joined the westward movement soon after their marriage in 1836 and left Concord, N. H., for Tremont, Ill. They eventually settled, with other New Englanders, at a Rock River (Illinois) colony called Como. In 1847, with two daughters, the family migrated again, moving on to St. Croix Falls, Wis., where James Breck Perkins was born. After her husband's death in 1851, Mrs. Perkins took her children back to Como, where the childhood of her son was spent in roaming

the woods and fields and acquiring a devotion to nature which he never forsook. Without formal schooling, he was taught to read by his family; he reveled in Scott, Dickens, and stories from Roman and English history. In 1856 his mother returned to the East, settling near her parents, at Rochester, N. Y. Her son now had his first experience of systematic education; his record in high school won him a scholarship at the University of Rochester. Entering in 1863, he became a student of marked excellence. While a freshman he endeavored to enlist in the Union army but was rejected because of his youth. He won first honors in Greek and Latin, and as a junior, upon the advice of President Martin Brewer Anderson, borrowed money to finance a European tour. He traveled, often on foot, through England, France, and Italy. His intellectual tastes were broadened and deepened and his interests aroused in French history and institutions. Returning to Rochester, he graduated as the ranking member of his class (1867).

Following a brief period of study in a law office, Perkins was admitted to the bar and to a partnership. He quickly acquired an excellent practice and the respect of his Monroe County colleagues. He continued to study, and wrote articles for the *American Law Review* on legal and political subjects. He also wrote book reviews for New York newspapers. His entrance to public service began with two terms as city attorney for Rochester (1874–78). He married, in 1878, Mary, youngest daughter of Gen. John H. Martindale [*q.v.*]. Stimulated by his reading in French history and by an ambition to write, he determined to study and interpret an important but, in America, little-known period of French history, the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. He went again to Paris in 1885 and there completed his first book, *France Under Mazarin With a Review of the Administration of Richelieu* (2 vols., 1886). The favorable reception of this effort led him to continue his studies. He sold his law practice and with his wife left for Europe where they resided, chiefly in France, from 1890 to 1895. He there completed *France Under the Regency With a Review of the Administration of Louis XIV* (1892), and began *France Under Louis XV* (2 vols., 1897). For the Heroes of the Nations Series he later wrote *Richelieu and the Growth of French Power* (1900). His last book, *France in the American Revolution* (published posthumously, 1911), completed a well-rounded survey of two significant centuries in the history of France.

In 1898 Perkins joined a group of distinguished Americans in founding the National Institute of

Arts and Letters, occupying at different times the offices of secretary and treasurer. Political life once more opened to him with a seat in the New York Assembly (1898). His term at Albany was followed, in 1900, by election to Congress from the thirty-second New York district (Monroe County). He was a member of the House of Representatives for five terms, from the Fifty-seventh to the Sixty-first congresses, until his death at Washington, Mar. 11, 1910. He did not live to accept the office of ambassador to Brazil for which he had been designated by President Taft. As a congressman he won the affection, confidence, and admiration of the House. He advanced gradually, but steadily, to one of the principal chairmanships, that of the committee on foreign affairs. With industry and an analytical, painstaking thoroughness he informed himself on the matter of legislative projects. His speeches, therefore, although he was not an orator, commanded the attention of his fellow members. He spoke with care and precision rather than with force and emotion. A Republican, he was from conviction a party man but, withal, fearless and independent in his opinions.

As a historian Perkins began to write at a moment inauspicious for scholars not of the professional guild. Emphasis upon scientific methods of investigation was in the ascendant and the production of monographs based upon intensive research in limited subjects was professionally the most approved form of scholarship. A work of such breadth and scope as that of Perkins was regarded by many of the "scientific historians" as superficial and popular. Historical journals, especially those of France and England, reviewed his books indifferently and none too charitably. More thoughtful and careful reviews in American journals pointed out that Perkins was doing a pioneer service in presenting, in English, a fresh, original, and interesting synthesis of an obscure and much neglected period. Without attempting research in the complete sense of the term, without pursuing a limited subject exhaustively, or seeking hitherto unknown evidence, he nevertheless worked extensively in archive material and with printed sources, avoiding second-hand or standardized opinions. He endeavored to maintain a strict fidelity to documentary evidence and for this reason was, perhaps, prone to confine his investigations to the more formal, official material. His analysis was unbiased, reasonable, and free from sentimentality; and his judgments, particularly of men and policies, were generally sound. His style is lucid and sustained, vigorous and somewhat austere.

Perkins

His books were widely read and if they added little essentially new in evidence, or little which was strikingly different in interpretation, they yet served, for an unusually long period, a very useful purpose. To the general reader and to many generations of college undergraduates they made a contribution unavailable in the more scholarly monographs.

Perkins was described by his contemporaries as a gentleman of the old school. Cultivated and courteous, hating hypocrisy, he was generous with assistance to others, as when he defended Algernon Sidney Crapsey in the celebrated heresy trial of 1906. In thought he was progressive, but not radical. Averse to exaggeration, he also avoided guesses and moralizing. He was quietly humorous, with a genuine sense of fun. Devoid of jealousy and distrust, his life was singularly happy, full, and generously spent.

[*James Breck Perkins*, a brief sketch by his wife, Mary Martindale Perkins (privately printed, Rochester, 1913), contains extracts from his diary and indicates the outstanding points in his career. Further information has been derived from Mrs. Perkins and from manuscript items in the family papers. See J. J. Jusserand's Introduction to *France in the Am. Revolution* and David J. Hill's review of the same in *Am. Hist. Rev.*, Oct. 1911. Political appreciations are to be found in *House Doc. 1508*, 61 Cong., 3 Sess.]

L. B. P.

PERKINS, JAMES HANDASYD (July 31, 1810–Dec. 14, 1849), author and social worker, father of Charles Elliott Perkins [*q.v.*], was born in Boston, the youngest of the six children of Samuel G. and Barbara (Higginson) Perkins and a descendant of Edmund Perkins who emigrated to New England in 1650. He attended boarding schools at Waltham and Lancaster, Mass., the Phillips Academy at Exeter, and the Round Hill School at Northampton. At the latter school he displayed some superiority in modern languages, and his letters of those years show a poetical, slightly cynical, and highly introspective cast of mind. Among his teachers were George Bancroft, Joseph G. Cogswell, and Timothy Walker. At eighteen he entered as a clerk the business founded by his uncles Thomas H. [*q.v.*] and James Perkins, prominent importers and philanthropists. In 1831 he was sent on a trip for his firm to England and the West Indies; but on his return he abandoned a business career as opposed to his tastes, health, and ethical ideals, and removed to Cincinnati with the expectation of following those horticultural pursuits to which his father had long been devoted. The influence of his former teacher, Judge Walker, now prominent in the Cincinnati bar, caused him to read law; he was admitted to the bar in 1834. He became a brilliant extemporaneous speaker; but his health, which was not robust, was unsuited

to sedentary occupations, and he was repelled by practices and attitudes of his profession which offended his sensitive ethical apprehensions. He therefore never devoted himself fully to the practice of the law, but drifted into literary pursuits.

Upon his first arrival at Cincinnati he had formed a connection with James Hall's *Western Monthly Magazine,* newly established in that city, which he maintained for about three years, while he was reading law, writing articles, sketches, and poems for the *North American Review,* the *New York Review,* the *Massachusetts Quarterly,* and other periodicals, and delivering lyceum lectures. In 1834 he became editor of the *Saturday Evening Chronicle,* which, later in that year, he purchased and merged with the *Cincinnati Mirror,* edited by William D. Gallagher and Thomas H. Shreve. Perkins shared the editorial work of these men for six months, until the failure of their publisher in 1835. In the meantime he had married, Dec. 17, 1834, Sarah H. Elliott, of Guilford, Conn. In 1836 he tried gardening and grain-milling at Pomeroy, Ohio, but gave that up to establish himself the next year as a gardener in the edge of Cincinnati. Here he continued writing, publishing in 1838 his *Digest of the Constitutional Opinions of Chief Justice John Marshall.* He was connected with the *Western Messenger,* an important Unitarian monthly, from its beginning in 1835, and was one of its editors in 1839. The First Congregational Society of Cincinnati, a Unitarian body, established him in 1838 as minister at large, in which capacity he continued until the end of his life to work with the poor of Cincinnati. He was president of the Cincinnati Relief Union from its organization in 1841 until his death, was active in prison reform, and was sympathetic with Fourierism. He also conducted a small school for girls.

In 1841 Perkins succeeded his cousin William Henry Channing, his childhood companion and later his biographer, as minister of the First Congregational Society of Cincinnati. He was, however, unsympathetic with denominational Unitarianism, and in 1848 he took steps to form a liberal church based upon practical Christianity. In the following year, under the reaction from an emotional stress caused by the supposed loss and the recovery of his two sons, he committed suicide by drowning from an Ohio River ferry-boat. His body was not recovered. Perkins had been interested in historical investigation, having served as the first president of the Cincinnati Historical Society (1844–47) and the first vice-president of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio (1849). His *Annals of the West* (1846) went through several editions. Perkins' features were delicate, with aquiline nose, high forehead, and flowing black hair; he affected carelessness in dress. He had wit and imagination, tinged with recurrent melancholia. His sympathies were warm and he enjoyed to an extraordinary degree the respect of those who were acquainted with his character and qualities.

[The chief source is *The Memoir and Writings of James Handasyd Perkins* (Cincinnati, 1851) in two volumes. The *Writings* were edited by Wm. Henry Channing, who also wrote the *Memoir.* It is doubtful if Channing's assumption that Perkins actually edited the *Western Monthly Magazine* is correct. All other sketches are founded on the Channing memoir.]

F. L. M.

PERKINS, JUSTIN (Mar. 5, 1805–Dec. 31, 1869), missionary, "apostle of Persia," was born in the Ireland Parish of West Springfield, now a part of the city of Holyoke, Mass., the son of William and Judith (Clough) Perkins, and a descendant of John Perkins who came to Massachusetts in 1631 and two years later settled in Ipswich. He spent his boyhood on a farm, but after experiencing a religious awakening at the age of eighteen, studied at Westfield Academy and in 1829 was graduated with honors at Amherst. Following a year of teaching at Amherst Academy, two years as a student at Andover Theological Seminary, and one year as tutor in Amherst College, he was ordained in the summer of 1833. In September he sailed as a missionary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, his appointment being to the remnant of the Nestorian Christians in northwestern Persia.

He found the people poor, ignorant, and degraded, living in a state of serfdom under their Mohammedan rulers. In the autumn of 1835 he established his missionary center in Urumiah, the reputed home of Zoroaster, near a lake of the same name. Religious work was begun at once and was carried on for the most part in entire harmony with the Nestorian clergy, in whose churches the missionaries were soon invited to preach. The establishment of a boys' school at Urumiah, the first Lancasterian school in central Asia, was soon followed by the opening of numerous schools for both boys and girls throughout the surrounding villages; later, at the invitation of the government, schools were established for the Persian Mohammedans. Perkins was the first to reduce the Nestorian vernacular, modern Syriac, to writing, and he at once set about producing a literature for the people. A printing press was established at Urumiah in 1840 and from it issued the eighty works of

which Perkins was either the author or translator. Under his editorship a periodical, the *Rays of Light,* devoted to "Religion, Education, Science, Missions, Juvenile Matters, Miscellany and Poetry" was issued, which was continued after his death. His translations of portions of the Scriptures appeared at various times; but his principal Bible translations were the New Testament (1846) and the Old Testament (1852), both printed with the ancient and modern Syriac in parallel columns; and the Old Testament with references, in modern Syriac (1858). His other numerous publications include books for day and Sunday-schools, hymn books, and translations of religious classics such as the works of Watts, Bunyan, Doddridge, and Baxter.

Perkins was widely recognized as one of the most eminent of Syriac scholars, and to him is chiefly due the great lexicon of modern Syriac and English left in manuscript at his death. The high esteem in which he was held by Nestorians and Persians alike enabled him to acquire valuable Syriac manuscripts which have enriched European libraries and have greatly aided scholars in linguistic and theological studies. His contributions to the journals of the American Oriental Society, of which he was a member, the *Deutsche Morgenländische Gesellschaft,* and the *Missionary Herald,* were numerous and important. His *Residence of Eight Years in Persia* (1843), *Missionary Life in Persia* (1861), and *Historical Sketch of the Mission to the Nestorians* (1862) are valuable source materials. Perkins was especially acceptable to the Persians on account of his uniformly polished and courtly manners. He had an iron will and a robust constitution and he worked with persistence and clocklike regularity. He died at the home of a nephew in Chicopee, Mass. On July 21, 1833, he married Charlotte Bass of Middlebury, Vt.; of their seven children, one son survived his parents.

[In addition to the above mentioned sources see G. A. Perkins, *The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich, Mass.* (1889); H. M. Perkins, *Life of Rev. Justin Perkins, D.D.* (1887); *Missionary Herald,* Feb. 1870; *Congregationalist,* June 13, 1870; *Obit. Record Grads. Amherst Coll.,* 1870. A copy of Perkins' lexicon of modern Syriac and English is in the Yale Univ. Lib.] F. T. P.

PERKINS, SAMUEL ELLIOTT (Dec. 6, 1811–Dec. 17, 1879), judge, legal writer, was born in Brattleboro, Vt., the son of John T. and Catherine (Willard) Perkins. His father died when he was five years old and the boy was reared in the family of William Baker, near Conway, Mass., receiving such formal education as the common schools of that day imparted. When he came of age he began to study law at

Penn Yan, N. Y., but before settling down he turned to the West. He walked from western New York to eastern Indiana and at Richmond finished his law course with Judge Borden. In 1837 he was admitted to the bar. Taking an interest in politics, he affiliated with and helped to build up a languishing Democratic newspaper, the *Jeffersonian.* This enabled him to strengthen his party in a locality where it had been weak. In 1844 he was appointed prosecuting attorney for the sixth district (Wayne County). In the same year he canvassed the state for James K. Polk, which so enhanced his reputation that James Whitcomb, the Democratic governor, three times made the effort to seat him on the bench of the state supreme court. As the governor's appointment required the confirmation of the Senate he failed twice, but in 1847, after the third nomination, his appointment was confirmed. Five years later, under the new constitution, he was elected by popular vote to the same office, which he retained till 1864. From 1872 to 1876 he was judge of the Marion County superior court, and while holding that office was returned to the supreme court. Here he remained till his death, in 1879, his services as judge totaling a period of about twenty-three years.

In 1857 Perkins was appointed professor of law in the Northwestern Christian University (later Butler University) and again, 1870, he took charge of the law school of Indiana University, where he taught for three years. In this time the department expanded and attendance increased. During his judicial service he published two legal works: *A Digest of the Decisions of the Supreme Court of Indiana* (1858) and *Pleading and Practice . . . in the Courts of Indiana* (1859). He is credited with being an able man and a capable judge, though most of his biographers make no mention of three of his decisions which at the time called down upon him widespread disapprobation. One of these obstructed educational progress for several years by holding unconstitutional a law under which the state's school system was hopefully developing (*City of Lafayette et al.* vs. *Jenners,* 10 *Ind.,* 70, 1855). The other decisions annulled the Indiana prohibition law of 1855 (*Beebe* vs. *The State,* 6 *Ind.,* 501; *Herman* vs. *The State,* 8 *Ind.,* 545), under which the state had measurably suppressed the liquor traffic and closed the saloons. Perkins' utterances in his public speeches, in his newspaper writings, and in some of his pronouncements as a judge show him to have been strongly prejudiced in favor of views that have since been discarded as opposed to the best in-

terests of society. He was twice married. After the death of his first wife, Amanda Juliet Pyle, he was married to her sister, Levinia M. Pyle. He had thirteen children, nine of whom died in infancy.

[See L. J. Monks, ed., *Courts and Lawyers of Ind.* (3 vols., 1916); J. P. Dunn, *Ind. and Indianans*, vol. III (1919); J. H. B. Nowland, *Sketches of Prominent Citizens of 1876* (1877); "In Memoriam," 68 *Ind. Reports*, 601–05; *Indianapolis Sentinel*, Dec. 18, 1879.]

G. S. C.

PERKINS, THOMAS HANDASYD (Dec. 15, 1764–Jan. 11, 1854), merchant, philanthropist, was born in Boston, Mass., the second son and one of eight children of James and Elizabeth (Peck) Perkins, and a descendant of Edmund Perkins who emigrated to New England in 1650. His father was a vintner, licensed Aug. 13, 1767, to sell wine at his house on King Street, which was near the scene of the Boston Massacre. His father died in 1773, but his mother took charge of her husband's affairs and until her death in 1807, conducted them so well that she became prominent in business and philanthropy. Before his father's death, Thomas was sent to a clergyman in Middleboro for instruction, after which he attended school in Boston. The siege, however, drove the family to Barnstable on Cape Cod, and he was able there to indulge his strong taste for outdoor activities. Following the evacuation of Boston, he was sent to Hingham to prepare for Harvard, but he decided on a commercial career and entered the counting house of the Shattucks, Boston merchants, remaining till 1785. He then visited his elder brother in Santo Domingo and joined him in business there after a sojourn in South Carolina. Finding the climate detrimental to his health, he returned to Boston by 1788 to manage the firm's affairs there, and to marry on Mar. 25, 1788, Sarah, the daughter of Simon Elliot, of Boston. His place in Santo Domingo was taken by a younger brother. A relative of his wife was captain of a ship in the China trade, and this connection led Perkins to make a voyage of investigation to Batavia and Canton as a supercargo of a ship owned by Elias Hasket Derby, of Salem, after which he embarked in the Oriental trade.

In 1792 the insurrection in Santo Domingo ruined the business there. Perkins' brothers returned to Boston and with the elder he formed a partnership as J. & T. H. Perkins, the name under which the business was conducted till James Perkins' death in 1822, when it was reorganized, but T. H. Perkins remained the principal partner till 1838. Its trade was chiefly with China, but speculative ventures were undertaken wherever they seemed likely to be profitable, and

Perkins

the business he controlled so long made many handsome fortunes besides his own. In 1795 he spent about eight months in Europe, for the most part in France. While he was there, James Monroe, then United States minister to France, asked him to request permission for George Washington Lafayette to go to America. Securing this privilege from the Committee of Safety, he shared with Joseph Russell, a Boston merchant, the expense of the journey, and had the youth entertained at his Boston home on his way to the Washington household. When Perkins visited the projected capital of the United States in 1796, he was presented to Washington and afterward paid a two-day visit to "Mount Vernon," counting it one of the greatest experiences of his life.

Perkins was a prominent member of the Federalist party and was eight times elected to the Senate and three times to the lower house of the Massachusetts legislature between 1805 and 1824, besides being a presidential elector in 1816 and 1832. He was in Europe for a year in 1811–12, and once he acted as bearer of dispatches to France for the United States ministry in London, running considerable risk through being given a loose document openly addressed to the Minister of Russia, with which country Napoleon was on the verge of war. Notwithstanding his detention, on entering France, as a person suspected of hostility to the country, he managed to prevent the discovery of the document and afterward delivered it. He returned to the United States after the outbreak of the War of 1812 and he was active in opposition to the Madison administration. He was one of the three Massachusetts delegates appointed to go to Washington to present the plea of the Hartford Convention that Massachusetts, alone or in association with its neighbors, be allowed to defend its own territories, and to apply for that purpose Federal taxes collected within its borders. Peace came before this resolution was presented.

Perkins was for a long time an officer of the Massachusetts militia and was generally known as colonel. For a time he was president of the Boston branch of the United States Bank, and he had one of the first railways in the United States constructed in 1827 to transport the product of a granite quarry at Quincy, Mass., of which he was president, two miles to the seaboard. But he was best known for his philanthropies. He was active in indorsing and generous in supporting many public institutions and undertakings, including the Massachusetts General Hospital, the Boston Athenæum, and the Bunker Hill and National Monument associa-

tions. His benefactions to individuals were so ready and generous that he was sometimes accused of being a poor judge of character. In 1833 he deeded his residence to the New England Asylum for the Blind for the period it should occupy it, but in 1839 he made the gift unconditional, and since then the institution has borne his name. He was himself blind for a time in his last years, but an operation restored the sight of one eye a few months before his death. Perkins died in Boston in 1854, having survived his wife two years. They had seven children.

[See: T. G. Cary, *Memoir of Thos. Handasyd Perkins, Containing Extracts from His Diary and Letters* (1856); A. T. Perkins, *A Private Proof . . . of the Perkins Family* (1890); *Boston Jour.*, Jan. 11, 1854; *Daily Advertiser* (Boston), Jan. 12, 1854.] S. G.

PERLEY, IRA (Nov. 9, 1799–Feb. 26, 1874), lawyer and jurist, was born at Boxford, Mass., the eldest child of Samuel and Phebe (Dresser) Perley and a descendant of Allan Perley, who settled in Charlestown, Mass., in 1630. He had few advantages in early years, the death of his father in 1807 leaving the family in somewhat straitened circumstances. He worked on the farm and attended school in the winter months. His mother, however, appreciated the boy's ability in his studies and gave him every encouragement possible. He prepared for college at Bradford Academy and graduated from Dartmouth in 1822 with a distinguished scholastic record. He had defrayed the greater part of his college expenses by teaching school. He was a tutor at Dartmouth, 1823–25, but was bent on a legal career, studying law at Hanover and in the office of Daniel M. Christie at Dover, where his famous successor in the chief-justiceship, Charles Doe [*q.v.*], likewise served his apprenticeship. He was admitted to the bar in 1827 and began practice in Hanover.

From 1830 to 1835 he served as treasurer of Dartmouth College, introducing more efficient business methods, modernizing the accounting system, preparing an inventory of the college property, and advising the trustees on sundry complicated legal and business problems involved in certain Vermont land holdings of the institution. He also represented Hanover for one term in the legislature. He became well known at the Grafton County bar but in 1836 moved to Concord where professional opportunities were better and where he resided for the remainder of his life. On June 11, 1840, he married Mary Sewall Nelson. While a successful advocate, he was regarded by his professional associates as possessing the judicial mind in an eminent degree, an impression which was

strengthened by his two years' service as associate justice of the superior court, 1850–52. In 1855 he was appointed chief justice of the supreme judicial court, serving until 1859. In 1864 he was reappointed chief justice, retiring five years later under the age limit imposed by the state constitution. During his last years he occasionally acted as a legal consultant but did not engage in practice before the courts. He twice represented Concord in the legislature (1839–40, 1870–71).

Perley was regarded by contemporaries as one of the most scholarly men on the bench. He had acquired a deep interest in general literature in his early years and retained it throughout his life. He read Latin, French, and Italian literature and was always ready with an apt quotation. He was for many years an active member of the New Hampshire Historical and the New-England Historic Genealogical societies and performed valuable services for both organizations. He was a thorough student of both English and American history and law and his judicial qualifications—both in character and training—were generally recognized. His printed decisions set a high standard and have received widespread commendation from the legal profession. He was occasionally invited to deliver public addresses but was not successful as a platform speaker, however well his material may appear in print. His address on trial by jury, delivered to the grand jury of Grafton County at the November term in 1866, and subsequently printed by their request (*Trial by Jury*, 1867), is a model treatment of the subject. In person he was of small stature, and in manner somewhat shy and nervous, but his intellectual qualities made him an impressive figure in the courtroom. He had a laconic manner on the bench and a characteristic shrewdness and humor which occasionally brightened tedious proceedings and furnished anecdotes which were often told at meetings of the New Hampshire bar.

[J. K. Lord, *A Hist. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1913); C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); *Address in Memory of Hon. Ira Perley . . . Pronounced before the Alumni Asso. of Dartmouth Coll., June 23, 1880* (1881); *Proc. Grafton and Coös Bar Asso.*, vol. III (1898); M. V. B. Perley, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Perley Family* (1906); *Independent Statesman* (Concord, N. H.), Mar. 5, 1874; manuscript material in the archives of Dartmouth Coll.] W. A. R.

PERRIN, BERNADOTTE (Sept. 15, 1847–Aug. 31, 1920), classical scholar, college professor, was born at Goshen, Conn., the son of the Rev. Lavalette Perrin and Ann Eliza (Comstock) Perrin. His father, a graduate of Yale College in the class of 1840, was a Congregational minister and a member of the Yale Cor-

poration from 1882 to 1889. The family was descended from Thomas Perrin, a French Huguenot who came to Massachusetts in 1690. Bernadotte Perrin was prepared for college at the Hartford High School, entered Yale in 1865, and received the degree of B.A. in 1869. He took high rank as a scholar and received distinguished social recognition from his fellow students. As an indication of his intellectual interests it is significant that this future classical scholar took no prizes in classics, but won high honors in English composition. At that time the work in Latin and Greek was almost entirely grammatical, and the scientific study of language never appealed to him as much as did the literature and history. The year after his graduation he taught in the Hartford High School. The next year he spent in the Yale Divinity School; the next two years in graduate study in classics at Yale. At the close of this period (in 1873) he received the degree of Ph.D. During the year 1873–74 he was tutor in Greek at Yale. Two more years at the Hartford High School as assistant principal were followed by two years of study at Tübingen, Leipzig, and Berlin. On his return he was again tutor in Greek at Yale from 1878 to 1879 and assistant principal of the Hartford High School from 1879 to 1881. He was then called to Western Reserve College as professor of Greek, remaining there until 1893. From 1893 to 1909 he was at Yale, first as professor of the Greek language and literature and after 1902 as Lampson Professor of Greek Literature and History. He was public orator of the University from 1898 to 1908, fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and president of the American Philological Association in 1896–97. His death occurred at Saratoga, N. Y. Perrin married his second cousin, Luella Perrin of Lafayette, Ind., on Aug. 17, 1881. She died on July 23, 1889, and on Nov. 24, 1892, he married Susan Lester, daughter of Judge C. S. Lester of Saratoga, N. Y. She survived him together with two sons by his first marriage.

Perrin's undergraduate interest in literary expression rather than grammatical analysis was indicative of the fundamental characteristic of his mind—an intuitive appreciation of the beautiful, and an artist's delight in the creation of beauty. In all his writings and public addresses he paid scrupulous attention to literary form. The brief paragraphs in which, as public orator, he introduced the candidates for honorary degrees, are polished gems of expression. In the daily business of teaching there was never any mere routine. "Every recitation," he said, "should be an event." His scholarly publication

was concerned chiefly with the field of ancient history. A dozen or more papers, published in the *American Journal of Philology* and in the *Transactions of the American Philological Association,* deal with the analysis of the sources of ancient historians and biographers. These studies culminated in his three volumes of translations of Plutarch, with historical notes and introductions on the sources. These volumes covered Themistocles and Aristides (1901), Cimon and Pericles (1910) and Nicias and Alcibiades (1912). His plan to extend this series was frustrated by failing eyesight. He was able to carry through, however, the complete translation of *Plutarch's Lives* (published in the Loeb Classical Library in eleven volumes, 1914–26). This work stands as his great monument. It enabled him to utilize at once his profound knowledge of the sources of Greek history, his enthusiasm for the heroes of antiquity, and his mastery of the English language. The result is an artistic and scholarly achievement of a high order.

[The principal sources are the autobiographies contributed to the various records of the Yale College class of 1869; they are collected in the *Seventh Biog. Record of the Class of 'Sixty-Nine, Yale Coll.* (1910). These can be supplemented by the catalogues and alumni records of Yale College, and in particular by the *Obit. Record of Yale Grads., 1920–21* (1921). The address delivered by his colleague, Prof. E. P. Morris, before the Yale Classical Club on Jan. 4, 1921, is an appreciative treatment of the man in his relation to his university. It was privately printed with the title, *Bernadotte Perrin, 1847–1920* (New Haven, 1921).]

H. M. H.

PERRINE, FREDERIC AUTEN COMBS (Aug. 25, 1862–Oct. 21, 1908), electrical engineer, the son of John Anderson and Rebecca Ann (Combs) Perrine, was born at Manalapan, N. J. He was a descendant of Daniel Perrin, a French Huguenot, who came to America in 1665. His early education was received at the Freehold Institute in New Jersey, and in 1879 he entered the College of New Jersey (Princeton), where he was graduated with the degree of A.B. in 1883. He continued his studies in the graduate school until 1885 when he received the degree of Doctor of Science. His broad education in the arts as well as in science developed habits of study which were to contribute much to his strength of character and to his achievements in widely different types of activity. He adopted as his line of special interest the study of electricity and the equipment needed in its application. His first position after leaving college was with the United States Electric Lighting Company of New York, as assistant electrician. In 1889, he was employed by the John A. Roebling's Sons Company as manager of the insulated wire department in connection with which he did spe-

cial research to develop more scientific methods for manufacturing the wire product. He became manager and treasurer of the Germania Electric Company of Boston in 1892 and the following year was appointed professor of electrical engineering at Leland Stanford University. As head of the department which he organized, he achieved outstanding success as a teacher, both his personality and his fine education admirably fitting him for the position. He emphasized strongly the need for a thorough study of theory, adhering to the tenet that practical work should only develop familiarity with processes. He himself, however, was intensely interested in the practical application of electricity, and while he was still teaching at Stanford he became the chief engineer of the Standard Electric Company of California, now a part of the Pacific Gas and Electric Company. In this position he designed the first long 60 kilovolt transmission line, for which he received a gold medal at the Paris Exposition in 1900.

He resigned from his positions in California in 1900 to become president and general manager of the Stanley Electric Manufacturing Company of Pittsfield, Mass. This office he resigned in 1904 to enter into practice as a consulting engineer in New York City. In addition to his other duties, he served as one of the editors of the *Journal of Electricity* from 1894 to 1896, and as an editor of *Electrical Engineering* from 1896 to 1898. In 1903, he published *Conductors for Electrical Distribution.* He presented a large number of papers before various organizations, was a member of several of the leading engineering societies including the American Society of Civil Engineers, and was especially active in the affairs of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers of which he served as manager and member of council from 1898 to 1900. On June 28, 1893, he married Margaret J. Roebling, the grand-daughter of John Augustus Roebling [*q.v.*]. She, with their two daughters and a son, survived him when he died at Plainfield, N. J., after an illness of several months.

[H. D. Perrine, *Daniel Perrin "The Huguenot" and His Descendants in Am.* (1910); *Proc. of the Am. Inst. of Electrical Engineers,* vol. XXIX, Nov. 1908; *Jour. of Electricity, Power, and Gas,* Oct. 31, 1908; *Electrical World,* Oct. 31, 1908; *Daily True American* (Trenton, N. J.), Oct. 21, 1908.] H. H. H.

PERRINE, HENRY (Apr. 5, 1797–Aug. 7, 1840), physician and plant explorer, was born at Cranbury, N. J., the son of Peter and Sarah (Rozengrant) Perrine. He was a descendant of Daniel Perrin, a French Huguenot who settled in New Jersey in 1665. As a youth he taught school at Rockyhill, N. J., and later he studied

Perrine

medicine. In September 1819, he settled at Ripley, Ill., where he practised medicine energetically for five years, earning the local sobriquet "little hard-riding doctor." On Jan. 8, 1822, he married Ann Fuller Townsend, the daughter of the Rev. Jesse Townsend of Denham, N. Y. His health had been very seriously affected by arsenical poisoning sustained accidentally in 1821, and two years later, in an effort to improve his condition, he sought the milder climate of Natchez, Miss., practising there until 1827 when he accepted an appointment as United States Consul at Campeche, Mexico. During ten years of continuous residence here he made botanical collections which are now preserved in the herbarium of the New York Botanical Garden, but of far greater importance was his persistent and enthusiastic effort to introduce useful tropical plants into southern Florida. This project resulted from a circular letter sent out in 1827, at the instance of President John Quincy Adams, calling upon consular officers to procure foreign plants of known or probable utility for cultivation in the United States. Perrine took the request very seriously, and before long he was flooding the Treasury, State, and Navy Departments with detailed reports on officinal and other economic plants, especially those producing durable fibers. Much of this matter is published in government documents which relate to a plan, proposed by Perrine in 1832, of establishing a tropical plant introduction station in extreme southern Florida upon land to be granted him by Congress. Not until 1838, a year after his return to the United States, was the law finally passed by which he and two associates received the provisional grant of a township on Biscayne Bay.

A nursery which he had begun on Indian Key in 1833 contained, at the time of the grant, over 200 species and selected varieties of useful tropical plants. He now removed to this location with his wife and three children to wait until the end of the Seminole War should permit occupying and planting out the mainland tract. He spent almost two years here, tending and extending the nurseries, but the period of happy activity was abruptly cut short by his death at the hands of marauding Indians. His family escaped, but under the most harrowing and remarkable circumstances. With the burning of his house all of his collections, records, and manuscripts were destroyed. Subsequently the grant was ceded outright to his family by Congress, but his long-cherished plans never came to real fruition. Of all the plants introduced by Perrine the sisal (*Agave sisalana*), which he first de-

scribed, is the most noteworthy. This and a closely related species, the henequen (*Agave fourcroyodes*), he had introduced upon the Florida Keys in 1833. Fifty years later these two fiber plants were recognized as being commercially important to the British colonies, and when attempts to obtain the jealously guarded propagating stock from Yucatan had failed, recourse was had to Florida, where Perrine's plants had meanwhile run wild. Although the demand was mainly for henequen, the sisal plant had spread the more widely and now furnished easily the huge quantity of bulbils needed for extensive tropical planting. Perrine was noted for his quick sympathies and devotion to duty. In Campeche he had practised medicine gratuitously and with great skill during a cholera epidemic, his extreme popularity undoubtedly overcoming local scruples against the exporting of useful plants. He truly deserves to rank as a pioneer of plant introduction in America.

[H. D. Perrine, *Daniel Perrin "The Huguenot" and His Descendants in Am.* (1910); H. E. Perrine, *A True Story of Some Eventful Years in Grandpa's Life* (1885); *Mag. of Horticulture*, Aug. 1840, Jan. 1841; F. C. Preston, "A Hero of Horticulture," *Bull. of The Garden Club of Am.*, Nov. 1931; C. H. Millspaugh, biog. sketch (MS.) in library of N. Y. Botanical Garden; J. H. Barnhart, biog. sketch in *Jour. of The N. Y. Botanical Garden*, Nov.–Dec. 1921; *Pensacola Gazette*, Aug. 29, 1840.]

W. R. M.

PERROT, NICOLAS (1644–*c.* 1718), explorer, was born in France. While still a youth he emigrated to New France and was in service with the Jesuit missionaries; later, for two years he was with the Sulpicians of Montreal. These services gave him opportunity to become acquainted with the Indian languages. Leaving the missionaries, he embarked in the fur trade, and may have been one of the Frenchmen who in 1663 went to Lake Superior with the Ottawa trading caravan. In 1667 he signed a contract with Toussaint Baudry for a voyage to the Ottawa country, where, the following year, they appeared at Green Bay, the first French traders to the Algonquian tribes, recently settled in that vicinity. Thenceforth they called Perrot their "father," since he brought them iron implements and weapons.

In 1670, after a very successful trade, Perrot and Baudry returned to Montreal. That autumn Governor Frontenac sent an expedition to take possession of the West for France; with the commander he sent Perrot as interpreter since "none better could be found." In the spring of 1671 Perrot visited Green Bay to secure delegates to the pageant—the ceremony of annexation—which took place June 14, at Sault Ste. Marie. That autumn he was again in Canada.

Perrot

where he married Marie Madeleine Raclot (or Raclos) and lived on a seigniory at Becancour. Little is known of his activities during the next decade. Frontenac in 1674 awarded him a license for the fur trade and in 1681 he was accused of sending peltry out of the country to the English settlements. In 1683 the new governor, La Barre, permitted Perrot to go West on a trading expedition, then, in 1684, summoned him to bring the western tribes to join his expedition against the Iroquois.

By his many trading excursions Perrot had obtained great influence with the western tribesmen, and the year after his disastrous Iroquois raid La Barre sent him West with a commission as commandant of La Baye and its dependencies. Proceeding to the Mississippi, he built Fort St. Nicolas at the mouth of the Wisconsin and wintered in a trading post at Mount Trempealeau. The next year he built Fort St. Antoine on Lake Pepin and opened trade with the Sioux. That year, 1686, was signalized by his gift to the mission of St. Francis of a silver ostensorium, finely chased and engraved. This relic is now in the museum at Green Bay. In 1687 Perrot was called upon to cooperate in another expedition against the Iroquois. This year he assisted in arresting two English fur-trading expeditions on the Great Lakes. Having returned to Fort St. Antoine after adjusting Indian difficulties at Green Bay, on May 8, 1689, he took possession of the region of the upper Mississippi in a ceremony similar to that of 1671 (*Collections of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin*, vol. XI, 1888, pp. 35–36). The next year, 1690, he discovered a lead mine in what is now southwest Wisconsin and built a fort to aid in its exploitation.

For several years more Perrot was employed among the western tribes, adjusting their disputes, preserving their friendship for France; then, in 1696, all licenses for trade were revoked and all commissions canceled. He returned to Canada, badly in debt and without resources. During Denonville's expedition (1687) 40,000 livres worth of furs Perrot had left at Green Bay were burned. In 1699 he requested permission for his sons to go West and collect his credits but was refused. In 1701, at the great peace treaty, he was employed as interpreter and was earnestly requested by the Indians to return with them as their ruler and guide. This request the governor refused; some time thereafter he was given employment in the militia service along the St. Lawrence. His later years were spent in writing his experiences. One memoir has survived, which was published in 1867 at Paris. His journals were also utilized by

Bacqueville de la Potherie in his *Histoire de l'Amérique Septentrionale* (4 vols., 1722). Perrot was one of the ablest Indian diplomats of the seventeenth century. Sulte called him "the greatest Frenchman of the West" (*post*, p. 12), and none ever had more empire over the fickle and treacherous savages than he. He cooperated with Duluth, Tonty, and other explorers and discoverers. His name is perpetuated in the Perrot State Park, on the upper Mississippi, the site of his Mount Trempealeau post.

[Perrot's "Mémoire" was edited with copious notes by R. J. P. Tailhan, *Mémoire sur les Mocurs, Coustumes et Relligion des Sauvages de l'Amérique Septentrionale* (1864); it is translated together with the portions of La Potherie's history in E. H. Blair, *The Indian Tribes of the Upper Miss. Valley and Region of the Great Lakes* (2 vols., 1911); a sketch of Perrot is in Appendix A (ii, 249–252). G. P. Stickney wrote a biog. of Perrot in *Parkman Club Papers* (copr. 1896). L. P. Kellogg, *The French Régime in Wis. and the Northwest* (1925) contains the most complete account of Perrot's career. See also *Pubs. State Hist. Soc. of Wis. . . . 1915* (1916); Benjamin Sulte, "La Baie Verte et le Lac Superieur," *Proc. and Trans. Royal Soc. of Canada*, 3 ser., vol. VI (1913).] L. P. K.

PERRY, ARTHUR LATHAM (Feb. 27, 1830–July 9, 1905), economist, was born at Lyme, N. H. His father, the Rev. Baxter Perry, was a descendant of John Perry, a clothworker, who, after the great London fire of 1666, emigrated to Watertown, Mass. His descendants almost a century later moved to Worcester, where Baxter Perry was married to Lydia Gray, whose ancestor, Matthew Gray, had come to Worcester in a large company of Scotch-Irish in 1718. The qualities of the Scotch-Irish—energy, frankness, conviction—were conspicuous in the character of Arthur Latham Perry.

He was a posthumous child, and the mother's material need was relieved by neighbors, particularly Arthur Latham, the principal merchant of Lyme, for whom the boy was named. "Brought up in extreme poverty without being in the least depressed by it," Arthur attended the village school, and between the ages of thirteen and sixteen, for a part of each session the Thetford (Vt.) Academy, just across the Connecticut River from his home. For the next two years he taught village schools in Vershire, Vt., and Bristol, N. H., and in September of 1848, having been encouraged to do so by President Mark Hopkins, he entered Williams College. In his sophomore year he discovered John Stuart Mill's *System of Logic*, upon which he battened, and which became, he said, the subsoil of his intellectual growth. At his graduation in 1852 he was given the honor of making the "metaphysical oration." He spent the next year teaching in an academy in Washington, D. C., but was promptly called back to Williams as tutor in political economy and history, and the next session was appointed professor of these subjects with the German language added. After 1890 he was able to concentrate upon political economy, of which he held the chair until his retirement as emeritus professor in 1891. On Aug. 7, 1856, he married Mary Brown Smedley of Williamstown, and they had seven children.

Perry's service as an economist falls under three heads—teaching, writing, and propaganda. His class-room instruction was clear, original, and spirited, and he was the cordial friend of the individual students in innumerable ways. His textbooks took the leading place in America in his day; the first one, *Elements of Political Economy*, appearing in 1865 when the field was scarcely occupied passed through a score of editions. He also published *An Introduction to Political Economy* (1877) and *Principles of Political Economy* (1891). About 1863, through Amasa Walker [*q.v.*], he discovered Frederic Bastiat's *Harmonies of Political Economy*, and this work determined the direction of his thought. Twenty years later he said, "I had scarcely read a dozen pages in that remarkable book, when the Field of the Science, in all its outlines and landmarks, lay before my mind just as it does to-day" (*Elements of Political Economy*, 18th edition, 1883, Preface, p. ix). The heart of his preachment, ethical as well as economical, was the necessity of unhampered exchanges, which became, in practical application, an unremitting insistence upon free trade. His devotion to free trade inevitably led, as a consequence of his reformer's zeal, to wide popular advocacy. Under auspices of the American Free Trade League he delivered 200 public addresses across the Continent; he smote protection in communications to the *Springfield Republican* and the New York *Evening Post*; he debated against Horace Greeley; and his pamphlet, *The Foes of the Farmers*, had two printings. He was elected to the Cobden Club of Great Britain. In all of his work, his scientific claims gave ground to his practical purpose. As one of his sons has said, he was not so much philosophical as "creative, imaginative, humanistic" (*A Professor of Life*, *post*, p. 92). His exaggerations, springing from intense belief, were honest on his part, but sometimes prompted hostility in others.

His avocation, the investigation of the local history of western Massachusetts, pursued indefatigably in state archives and country conversations, issued in his *Origins in Williamstown* (1894); continued in *Williamstown and Williams College* (1899); in his rediscovery of the

since famous Mohawk Trail; and in his successful resolve that the Bennington battle monument should be simple and impressive. For fourteen years he was president of the Berkshire Historical and Scientific Society. During a long period he supplied two nearby churches, and he took his turn in conducting the chapel exercises of the college. He died at Williamstown.

[Perry's *Miscellanies* (1902); *Biographical Rev. . . . Berkshire County, Mass.* (1899); *Springfield Republican*, July 10, 1905; Carroll Perry, *A Professor of Life* (1923); John Bascom, *Colls. Berkshire Hist. and Scientific Society*, vol. III (1899–1913), pp. 192–206; *Free Trade Broadside*, vol. I, no. 3; *Williams Alumni Rev.*, vol. XV, no. 4, pp. 131–36, containing also a partial Perry bibliog.; *Ibid.*, vol. XIX, no. 4, pp. 166–67; *Williams Coll. Bull.*, Apr. 1906; information from a member of the family.] B. M.

PERRY, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (Nov. 20, 1805–Dec. 3, 1886), governor of South Carolina, was born in Pendleton District, S. C. His father, Benjamin Perry, was a native of Massachusetts and a Revolutionary soldier, who had gone South in 1784 and married Anne Foster of Virginia. The boy's early life was spent on the farm with intermittent attendance at school, but when he was sixteen he went to Asheville, N. C., and was prepared to enter college. He began to study law at Greenville, S. C., however, and, admitted to the bar in 1827, continued there in practice.

A nationalist in belief, he opposed vehemently the policy of nullification, and in 1832 was a delegate to the Union party convention and the same year began to edit the *Greenville Mountaineer*, a Union newspaper. As a Unionist, he was elected to the nullification convention in 1832 and voted against the nullification ordinance. In the second session, 1833, which repealed the ordinance, he was active in support of compromise. During this period, he very unwillingly accepted a challenge from Turner Bynum, editor of the *Greenville Sentinel*, resulting from a political disagreement, and mortally wounded him. In 1834, 1835, and 1846, he was a candidate for Congress but in each election was defeated. From 1836 to 1862 he was frequently elected to the legislature, serving in both the House of Representatives and the Senate. In these bodies he was a strong friend of internal improvements and particularly active in behalf of the Louisville, Cincinnati & Charleston and the Greenville & Columbia railroads. He also favored divorcing the banks from the state. In 1848 he was a Democratic elector. He secured the establishment of the *Southern Patriot* in 1850, the only Union paper in the state, and edited it in spite of bitter opposition. In the legislature of 1850 he was a strong advocate of a Southern convention, but he opposed secession as "merely revolution," and voted against the calling of a convention. He was elected to the convention of 1852, which was called to secede but refused to do so, and he was a member of the committee which considered the whole question of secession. The report of the committee, affirming the right and justification of secession, declared that South Carolina forebore for expediency only. Perry voted against the report and offered a substitute opposing the right of secession, affirming the right of revolution, and vehemently defending slavery. He also opposed an ordinance granting the legislature the power to secede by a two-thirds vote. He was a delegate to the Charleston convention of 1860, and, perfectly frank in his Union views, refused to withdraw with the South Carolina delegation. While to him secession was not only "madness and folly" but rebellion, it did not occur to him to do other than follow his state. Answering an inquiry as to his position, he said, "You are all now going to the devil and I will go with you. Honor and patriotism require me to stand by my State, right or wrong (*Reminiscences, post*, p. 16). He became Confederate commissioner in 1862, district attorney in 1863, and district judge in 1864.

In 1865 Andrew Johnson made him provisional governor. He quickly excited criticism in the North by his reappointment of all who held office at the time of the downfall of the state government, but it was a wise and tactful move, enabling him to secure the adoption of popular election of governor and presidential electors, equal representation throughout the state on the basis of property and population, the destruction of the parish system, the popular election of judges for a term of years, and the ratification of the Thirteenth Amendment. He declined to run for governor, but was elected United States senator. He was denied his seat, however, and continued in the practice of his profession. His activity in politics continued and he was an enthusiastic delegate to the National Union Convention of 1866, and was a bitter and unrelenting opponent of congressional reconstruction. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention of 1868 and of 1876, and, in 1872, as a forlorn hope, he ran for Congress.

Perry was not a brilliant man, but he had good abilities, judgment, and poise. In spite of his independence, he made many friends and few enemies. He was an excellent and very successful lawyer, a wide reader, and a prolific writer of journalistic sketches of men and events, many of which were published under the titles *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883, second series,

1889) and *Biographical Sketches of Eminent American Statesmen* (1887). He was married in 1837 to Elizabeth Frances, daughter of Hext McCall of Greenville.

[H. M. Perry, *Letters of My Father to My Mother* (1889), *Letters of Gov. Benjamin Franklin Perry to His Wife, Second Series* (1890), and biog. sketch in B. F. Perry, *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883); *Jour. of the Convention of the People of S. C., 1832 . . . 1833* (1833); *Jour. of the State Convention of S. C.* (1852); *Jour. of the Convention . . . Held in Columbia . . . Sept. 1865* (1865); J. S. Reynolds, *Reconstruction in S. C.* (1905); J. P. Hollis, *The Early Period of Reconstruction in S. C.* (1905); F. B. Simpkins and R. H. Woody, *S. C. During Reconstruction* (1932); *In Memoriam, Benjamin Franklin Perry . . .* (revised ed., 1887); *News and Courier* (Charleston), Dec. 4, 1886; Diary of B. F. Perry in library of Univ. of N. C.]

J. G. deR. H.

PERRY, CHRISTOPHER RAYMOND (Dec. 4, 1761–June 1, 1818), naval officer, was a descendant of Edward Perry, a Quaker leader and pamphleteer, who emigrated from Devonshire, England, to Sandwich, Mass., about 1650. Religious persecution caused several children of the emigrant to seek a more tolerant neighborhood at South Kingstown, R. I. His great-grandson (or possibly grandson) Dr. Freeman Perry, a physician, was for many years president of the South Kingstown council, and for eleven years, 1780–1791, chief justice of the court of common pleas of Washington County. Christopher was born at South Kingstown, the third of the seven children of Freeman and Mercy (Hazard) Perry. A youth at the outbreak of the Revolution, he had a varied service with both the land and sea forces. He enlisted with the Kingstown Reds and was with the army of Gen. John Sullivan in the Rhode Island campaign of 1778. He was on board the privateer *General Mifflin* when that vessel captured the *Tartar* and the *Prosper* and he took part in the siege of Charleston, S. C. He was at different times attached to the Continental ships the *Queen of France* and the *Trumbull,* and participated in the hard-fought battle between the last-named vessel and the *Watt*. Four times taken prisoner, he was confined on the *Jersey* at New York, on the *Concord* at Charleston, S. C., and in the prisons at Tortola, W. I., and Kinsale, Ire., from which he escaped only after a long period of confinement.

He became acquainted, during his sojourn at Kinsale, with Sarah Wallace Alexander, and when he made a voyage to Ireland in 1784 as mate of a merchant vessel, Miss Alexander embarked on board his ship for the return voyage to visit friends in Philadelphia. Before the ship reached America the young couple were betrothed and in August 1784, were married at the home of Dr. Benjamin Rush. For fourteen years after the Revolution Perry made voyages as master or supercargo to Europe, South America, and the East Indies. In June 1798, he entered the navy as captain and was placed in command of the *General Greene,* then under construction at Warren, R. I. A year later he was employed suppressing piracy on the north coast of Cuba, convoying merchantmen to the United States, and cruising on the Santo Domingo station. His last voyage in the naval war with France was to the mouth of the Mississippi River, where he took on board James Wilkinson [*q.v.*], whom he conveyed to the United States. He was retired from the navy under the peace establishment of 1801, and returned to the merchant service, making at least one voyage to the East Indies. He offered his services to the secretary of the navy early in the War of 1812 and received a temporary appointment as commandant of the Charlestown navy yard. After the war he held the office of revenue collector at Newport. His five sons, including Oliver Hazard Perry [*q.v.*], and Matthew Calbraith Perry [*q.v.*], were naval officers, and two of his three daughters married naval officers—one, Ann Maria, marrying George Washington Rodgers [*q.v.*]. At one time there were seventeen cousins of the Perry family at the Naval Academy, Annapolis.

[Record of Officers, Bureau of Navigation, 1798–1801; Miscellaneous Letters, Navy Dept. Archives, 1812, vol. V, 1813, vols. I, II; C. E. Robinson, *The Hazard Family of R. I.* (1895); W. E. Griffis, *Matthew Calbraith Perry* (1887); G. W. Allen, *Our Naval War With France* (1909); *Newport Mercury,* June 6, 1818.]

C. O. P.

PERRY, EDWARD AYLESWORTH (Mar. 15, 1831–Oct. 15, 1889), Confederate soldier, governor of Florida, was born in Richmond, Mass., the son of Asa and Philura (Aylesworth) Perry. He received an elementary education at the Richmond academy and entered Yale College in 1850 but withdrew the next year. After a brief sojourn in Alabama, where he taught school and studied law, he removed to Pensacola, Fla., to begin the practice of law in 1857. On Feb. 1, 1859, he was married to Wathen Taylor, who bore him five children. At the coming of the Civil War he abandoned his law practice, raised Company A of the 2nd Florida Infantry, and became the captain. His regiment was a part of Lee's army in Virginia, and upon the death of its commander he was promoted to the rank of colonel in May 1862. He was badly wounded at the battle of Frayser's Farm and was invalided home. He was appointed brigadier-general in August 1862 and, upon his return to active duty, took command of the little brigade of three Florida regiments, which he continued to lead

throughout the war. After the battle of Chancellorsville he had typhoid fever and was again forced to retire from active service, thus missing the Gettysburg campaign. He returned to duty and led his brigade in Lee's defensive campaign until May 1864, when he was severely wounded in the Wilderness fighting and again forced to give up the service. During his absence his decimated brigade was condensed into a regiment and consolidated with another brigade. Upon his recovery he was assigned to duty with the reserves in Alabama.

At the end of the war he resumed the practice of his profession at Pensacola and soon acquired a wide reputation as a lawyer. He was an outspoken critic of Carpet-bag rule in the state, and in 1884 he was elected governor of Florida on the Democratic ticket, his selection being due largely to his fame as a soldier. His administration was a successful one but not distinguished for any great achievements; it was rendered memorable in state annals by the yellow fever ravages at Jacksonville and the disastrous St. Augustine fire. At the end of his administration he retired to private life and died as the result of a stroke of paralysis while visiting in Kerrville, Tex. He was buried in Pensacola.

[*Confederate Mil. Hist.*, ed. by C. A. Evans (1899), vol. XI; *Soldiers of Fla. in the Seminole Indian-Civil and Spanish-American Wars*, prepared . . . under . . . Board of State Institutions (1903); R. H. Rerick, *Memoirs of Fla.* (1902), vol. I; H. G. Cutler, *Hist. of Fla.* (1923), vol. I; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*, 1 ser., vols. XXXIX, pt. 2, XL, pt. 2; *Florida Times-Union* (Jacksonville), Oct. 16, 17, 19, 1889; date of birth from H. E. Aylsworth, *Arthur Aylsworth and His Descendants in America* (1887).] R. S. C.

PERRY, EDWARD BAXTER (Feb. 14, 1855–June 13, 1924), concert pianist, author and lecturer, was born in Haverhill, Mass., the son of Baxter E. and Charlotte (Hough) Perry. He was blind practically all of his life, as he lost his sight through an accident when he was only two years of age, but this handicap in no wise deterred his activities as a student. He was educated in the public schools of Medford, graduating in 1871. In the same year he went to Boston to study piano—first at the Perkins Institute for the Blind, in South Boston, then with J. W. Hill. Besides his music study, he specialized also in English literature. He remained in Boston until 1875, when he went to Europe for further study with Kullak in Berlin and Pruckner in Stuttgart. Later he studied with Clara Schumann and, in the summer of 1878, with Liszt at Weimar. He also took courses at the University of Berlin and at the Polytechnical Institute at Stuttgart (1875–78) in literature, history, and philosophy. He gave occasional concerts and played before the Emperor of Germany. Soon after his return to America he was appointed professor of music at Oberlin College (1881–83), but from 1883 to 1885 he was again in Europe and again at the Polytechnical Institute in Stuttgart. In 1885 he began to give concerts over the entire United States. He was perhaps the first to devote himself almost exclusively to lecture recitals, and in the period from 1885 to 1917 he gave more than three thousand, comprising practically the entire pianoforte literature available at that time. Besides this record activity, he wrote several hundred articles for magazines, principally for the *Etude*. In 1897–98 he toured in Europe and was everywhere greeted with enthusiasm.

Perry had an adequate technique; his playing was refined and facile, and his interpretations were poetic. His loss of sight had made his other senses particularly acute. But his description of his ideas of physical beauty around him sometimes seemed fantastic to less sensitive persons, and this quality was manifest to some degree in his lecture recitals and in his writings. His *Descriptive Analyses of Piano Works* (1902) is interesting but too rhapsodical to be of dependable value to the student, for Perry read into many of the compositions thoughts and emotional qualities that probably never occurred to the composers. The chief value of the work was to stimulate the search for poetic content in music. His *Stories of Standard Teaching Pieces* (1910) possesses the same quality, but both works had a large sale in their day. In November 1921 Perry went to Frederick, Md., as instructor in piano at Hood College, where he remained only one year. From 1922 until his death he occupied a similar position at Lebanon Valley College, Anville, Pa. On June 21, 1882, he married Netta A. Hopkins of Peoria, Ill. In 1898 he was decorated in Paris with the order of *Chevalier de Melusine* by Prince Lusignan in recognition of Perry's unpublished "Melusina Suite," based upon a legend in the family of the Prince. He died suddenly, of heart failure, at his summer home in Camden, Me. Among his published piano compositions are the following: "Why," "Mazurka Caprice," "Æolienne," "Autumn Reverie," "The Portent," and "The Ballad of Last Island."

[*Who's Who in America*, 1918–19, 1924–25; *Internat. Who's Who in Music* (1918); L. C. Elson, *The Hist. of Am. Music* (1904); *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians* (1928); *Musical Courier*, June 26, 1924; the *Etude*, Aug. 1924; *N. Y. Times*, June 15, 1924.] F. L. G. C.

PERRY, ENOCH WOOD (July 31, 1831–Dec. 14, 1915), painter, was born in Boston,

Perry

Mass., the son of E. Wood Perry of that city and Hannah (Dole) Perry of Newburyport. When he was seventeen he went to New Orleans, where he worked in a grocery store for four years, saving from his meager earnings $1100—no slight achievement in a city presenting so many temptations to prodigality. With his small capital he sailed for Germany, to study art under Emanuel Leutze, N.A., a well-known figure painter, and remained there for more than two years before going to Paris for a season in Couture's studio. In 1856 he was appointed United States consul in Venice, and even though his duties at that post left him sufficient time to carry on his painting, he resigned in three years and returned to the United States, doing some landscapes around Philadelphia before joining his father who had become a furniture dealer in New Orleans. Young Perry hired a studio on St. Charles Street and advertised himself as a portrait painter. He evidently met with success, and one of his best pictures, which now hangs in the Cabildo at New Orleans, is of Senator John Slidell [*q.v.*].

In January 1861 the Louisiana state legislature in session at Baton Rouge signed the ordinance of secession, and Perry made a preliminary sketch in oil of the proceeding which is now in the Cabildo. It contains likenesses of many of the most important of the legislators. He also painted about this time a large portrait of Jefferson Davis standing before a map of the Confederate States. Sitters became few, however, because men were too occupied with the grim business of fighting; so Perry went to California and for awhile he painted in San Francisco. In 1863 he was in Hawaii where he did portraits of King Kamehameha IV and his successor, Kamehameha V. When he returned to the United States he painted Brigham Young and other apostles of the Mormon Church, staying in Salt Lake City, Utah, until these commissions were finished. He must have had great ability in salesmanship, for he always contrived to have for sitters the most important people in the cities where he happened to be. His portrait of General Grant was done when Grant was at the height of his military glory.

After he settled in New York in 1865, Perry acquired a reputation for his genre subjects. Some of their titles, such as "Grandfather's Slippers," "Too Little to Smoke," "Good Doggie," and "Is Huldy to Home?," give an accurate idea of them. Although as works of art they are quite valueless today, they were painted with such fidelity to detail that they are still interesting as records of contemporary American interiors, manners, utensils, costumes, household customs, and even crafts, for he delighted in painting women at work, spinning, hackling flax, making patchwork quilts, and performing other tasks which have since completely disappeared from domestic life. He was an excellent draftsman and thoroughly trained in the technique of his profession; his weakness lay in following the passing fashions of his day. In 1868 he was elected an associate of the National Academy of Design, and an Academician in the following year. He was most active on the Academy's school committee and served as its recording secretary from 1871 to 1873, a position he also filled for the American Art Union during its entire existence. He died in New York, leaving a widow, Fanny F. Perry (death notice, *New York Times,* Dec. 15, 1915), and was buried at Newburyport, Mass.

[J. D. Champlin and C. C. Perkins, *Cyc. of Painters and Paintings* (4 vols., 1886–87); *Senate Executive Journal, 1855–58* (1887); G. W. Sheldon, *Am. Painters* (1881); C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and Their Works* (1884); I. M. Cline, *Art and Artists in New Orleans during the Last Century* (1922); *Am. Art News,* Dec. 18, 1915; *Am. Art Annual,* vol. XIII (1916); *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; death certificate, Health Dept., N. Y. City.]

E. L. T.

PERRY, MATTHEW CALBRAITH (Apr. 10, 1794–Mar. 4, 1858), naval officer; fourth child of Christopher Raymond Perry [*q.v.*] and Sarah Wallace (Alexander) Perry, was born at Newport, R. I. After attending school in his native town, he entered the navy in 1809 as a midshipman. He saw his first active service on the *Revenge,* commanded by his brother, Oliver Hazard Perry [*q.v.*]. In 1810 he was transferred to the *President* under Commodore John Rodgers [*q.v.*], a bluff disciplinarian who stamped many of his qualities upon the young subaltern. Perry's journal or logbook kept on board the *President,* more informative than most writings of this kind, records several unusual experiences, including the action with the *Little Belt* in 1811, the fight with the *Belvidera* in 1812, in which he was wounded, and the cruise off the coast of Norway in the following year, during which he was advanced to the grade of lieutenant. His next vessel, the *United States,* was driven into New London and there remained until near the end of the war. His enforced leisure he improved by marrying on Christmas Eve, 1814, Jane Slidell of New York, a sister of John Slidell [*q.v.*] and of Alexander Slidell Mackenzie [*q.v.*].

In 1816 Perry, on leave from the navy, made a voyage to Holland as the master of a merchant vessel. His first active duty after his return to the service was performed in 1820 as executive officer of the *Cyane* when that vessel aided in

Perry

establishing a colony of American negroes on the west coast of Africa. In the following year he returned to Africa in the *Shark,* his first command, conveying thither the United States agent to the colony, later named Liberia. In 1822 he cruised after pirates in the West Indies, capturing five piratical craft. In 1825–26, as executive officer of the *North Carolina,* 74, the flagship of the Mediterranean Squadron, he participated in a visit to the headquarters of the Greek Revolutionists and in an interview with the captain pasha of the Turkish fleet. At Smyrna he aided in the extinguishing of a disastrous fire and by his extraordinary exertions brought on an attack of rheumatism, from which disease he was never henceforth entirely free. His promotion to the grade of master commandant dated from Mar. 21, 1826. In 1830 he conveyed to Russia, on board the *Concord,* John Randolph of Roanoke, American envoy to that country. At St. Petersburg he was received by the Czar, who invited him to enter the Russian naval service, an invitation he declined. He next joined the squadron in the Mediterranean and in 1832, as commander of the *Brandywine,* participated in the naval demonstration made at Naples with the object of compelling payment of spoliation claims.

In 1833 he was appointed second officer of the New York navy yard and began a long and notable service on shore. He now became a resident of New York City, where henceforth he made his home. Much interested in naval education, he had in 1824 drawn up a plan for a naval apprentice system and he continued his agitation until an apprentice system was established by Congress in 1837. He was a member of the board of examiners that in 1845 prepared the first course of instruction for the Naval Academy at Annapolis. In 1833 he took the lead in organizing at the New York navy yard the United States Naval Lyceum, to promote the diffusion of knowledge among naval officers. He was its first curator, in 1836 its vice-president, and later its president. He was much interested in the *Naval Magazine,* an outgrowth of the museum and the first American periodical conducted by naval officers. He served on a committee that advised the secretary of the navy respecting the scientific work of the United States Exploring Expedition, of which he was offered the command.

Perry's interest in the revolution in naval matériel that began in the 1830's exceeded that of any other officer. An early advocate of naval steamships, he is sometimes called the father of the steam navy. Promoted to a captaincy from Feb. 9, 1837, he was in the same year placed in command of the *Fulton,* one of the pioneer naval steamships, and it fell to him to organize the first naval engineer corps. A report made by him in 1837 (*Senate Document No. 375,* 25 Cong., 2 Sess.) as a member of a naval board appointed to study the water approaches to New York City was used in Congress in behalf of an act creating lighthouses. In the following year he was sent on a mission to England and France to examine the lighthouses of those countries and to collect information on the use and construction of naval steamships and ordnance. His reports made after interviewing many officials, including King Louis Philippe, are valuable digests replete with information and suggestions (for Perry's report on lighthouses, see *Senate Document No. 619,* 26 Cong., 1 Sess.). In 1839–40 he conducted at Sandy Hook and on board the *Fulton* the first American naval school of gun practice. At Sandy Hook he established an experimental battery for the testing of guns, shells, and shot. One of his papers to the department dealt with the use of naval steamships as rams. In 1841 he was appointed commandant of the New York navy yard, in which office he could readily serve the department as technical expert on steamships and naval inventions.

In 1843 he was chosen to command the African Squadron organized that year to aid in the suppression of the slave trade, under the provisions of the Webster-Ashburton Treaty, and to protect the settlements of American negroes in Africa. Cruising up and down the African coast he held several palavers with the native chiefs, one of which, that of Little Berribee, ended in a fight with bloodshed and in the burning of several towns. His "ball-and-powder policy" was long remembered by the natives. His next important service was performed during the Mexican War, first as commander of the *Mississippi* and second officer in command of the squadron operating on the east coast of Mexico, and later as the commander-in-chief of the squadron. In the latter part of 1846 he commanded the expedition that captured Frontera, Tabasco, and Laguna. From Mar. 21 to Mar. 29, 1847, he commanded the naval forces that cooperated with the army in the siege of Vera Cruz and shared with Gen. Winfield Scott [*q.v.*] credit for the capitulation of that city. Later he captured Túxpan and other fortified posts, and demanded and received from Yucatan a promise of neutrality. His squadron is said to have been the largest that up to that time had flown the American colors.

From 1848 to 1852 Perry was on special duty at New York, chiefly engaged in superintending

the construction of ocean mail steamships. In the summer of the latter year he was once more placed in command of the *Mississippi* and ordered to protect American fisheries off the coast of the British provinces in America, since reports were current that Great Britain was seizing American fishing vessels. He visited the fisheries off Cape Breton and Prince Edward Island and, after reassuring and warning his countrymen, returned home.

His part in the fisheries episode was a brief interlude in the activities of a year spent in preparation for what proved to be the supreme work of his life. In January 1852 he was selected to undertake the most important diplomatic mission ever intrusted to an American naval officer, the negotiation of a treaty with Japan, a country at this time sealed against intercourse with the Occidental powers. He wrote to the secretary of the navy that he was willing to undertake the mission provided the East India Squadron was greatly augmented. The suggestion was accepted, and the government decided to send to Japan an imposing fleet, in the belief that a show of naval power might facilitate negotiations. The official documents relating to Perry's mission included a letter of President Fillmore to the Emperor of Japan, and instructions from the State Department. The last named stated that the objects of the expedition were the protection of American seamen and property in Japan and Japanese waters and the opening of one or more ports to American vessels for the procuring of supplies and for conducting trade. Perry was directed to try first the efficacy of argument and persuasion, but if these failed, he was to change his tone and use more vigorous methods, always bearing in mind however that his mission was peaceful and that the President had no power to declare war. No secret was made of the expedition, which aroused the interest of the whole civilized world.

On Nov. 24, 1852, Perry sailed from Norfolk for China on board the *Mississippi*. Late in May of the following year he assembled his fleet at Napa, Great Lu-chu Island, which he decided to make a port of refuge for his vessels. Here he spent several days calling on the prince regent, exploring the island for scientific purposes, and surveying harbors. While awaiting the arrival of a collier, he visited Port Lloyd, Peel Island, surveyed its harbor, explored the island, and purchased a coaling depot. At length, on July 2, 1853, he sailed from Napa for Yedo, the capital of Japan, with the *Susquehanna*, now his flagship, and three other vessels. According to his plan, he proposed to impress the Japanese by magnifying his mission, surrounding his person with an air of mystery, and declining to confer personally with subordinate officials. When on the morning of July 8 his ships approached Yedo Bay, their decks were cleared for action, their guns shelled, and their crews called to quarters. In the afternoon they anchored in Yedo Bay, off Uraga, twenty-seven miles from Yedo, and were soon surrounded by Japanese guard boats, one of which came alongside the flagship. A Japanese official inquired for the commander of the squadron, but since the official was only a vice-governor Perry declined to see him, appointing a lieutenant to inform him that the fleet came on a friendly mission with a letter from the President of the United States which the commander-in-chief wished to deliver to a dignitary of the highest rank. When the official replied that the fleet must go to Nagasaki, the only place in Japan where foreign business was transacted, Perry sent word that he expected the letter to be received in Yedo Bay. On the following day a governor came on board the flagship and again ordered the Americans to go to Nagasaki. Perry sent word that the letter would be delivered where he then was, and if a suitable person was not appointed to receive it he would go ashore with a sufficient force and deliver it, whatever the consequences might be. In the end his boldness and threats succeeded, and on July 14 the letter of the President and other documents were delivered with elaborate ceremonies by Perry himself on shore at the village of Kurihama to the princes Idzu and Iwami, representatives of the Emperor. As it seemed best to give the government time for reflection and discussion, Perry, having informed the princes that he would return in the following year, sailed for China, after a stay of nine days in Yedo Bay.

Suspicious movements of French and Russian naval ships caused him to return to Japan sooner than he had intended, and in February 1854 he once more anchored in Yedo Bay. The Japanese were now conciliatory. The Emperor had issued orders to receive the fleet in a friendly manner and had appointed five commissioners to meet Perry and consider the proposals made in the President's letter. The meeting took place at Yokohama, where the Americans made a second landing marked by much pageantry. There, on Mar. 31, 1854, was signed a treaty of peace, amity, and commerce granting the United States trading rights at the two ports of Hakodate and Shimoda. On his return voyage to China Perry stopped at the Lu-chu islands and negotiated with the islanders a treaty similar to that of Yokohama. Acting under his orders, one of his com-

modores took possession in behalf of the United States of the Coffin Islands.

As one of the chief diplomatic achievements of the nineteenth century, the opening of Japan will long make the name of Perry memorable. His expedition marked a departure in Occidental policy respecting Japan, in American policy respecting the Orient, and in Japanese policy respecting the western world. Perry was an imperialist bent upon extending widely in the Pacific the commercial and naval interests of America. He has been called the first American official, so far as is known, "to view not merely the commercial but also the political problems of Asia and the Pacific as a unity" (Dennett, *post*, p. 270). On his return to Hong Kong from Japan the American merchants in China gave him an elaborate candelabrum as an expression of their appreciation of his diplomatic services. In ill health and worn out by the labors of his mission he sailed for home on the British steamer *Hindostan* and arrived at New York on Jan. 12, 1855. The federal government, whose politics had changed during his absence, took no special notice of its sailor diplomat. The state of Rhode Island, however, presented him with a silver salver, New York City gave him a set of silver plate, and the merchants of Boston had a medal struck in his honor. In June 1855 he was ordered to Washington as a member of the naval efficiency board (see Samuel Francis du Pont), but his chief duty for more than a year was the preparation of a report of his expedition, which was published by the government in 1856 in three large folio volumes under the title, *Narrative of the Expedition of an American Squadron to the China Seas and Japan*. In the preparation of the first volume, consisting of the narrative itself, he was assisted by Francis Lister Hawks [*q.v.*]. He had previously sought the aid of Nathaniel Hawthorne, upon whom he called in Liverpool on his way home from Japan. Hawthorne declined the task, suggesting that he ask Herman Melville instead, a recommendation which did not meet with Perry's approval.

Perry was of a rather heavy build, blunt, something of a martinet; "Old Bruin" the sailors called him. Hawthorne described him as a "brisk, gentlemanly, off-hand but not rough, unaffected and sensible man" (*Our Old Home and English Notebooks*, Riverside Edition, 1883, I, 548). He had ten children. One of his sons retired from the navy as a captain, and his daughter Caroline Slidell Perry married August Belmont [*q.v.*]. He died in New York City, the third officer of the navy, and was buried in the Island Cemetery, Newport. A statue to his memory was erected in 1868 in Touro Park, Newport, by Mr. and Mrs. August Belmont. In 1901 a monument commemorating his first landing was unveiled in Kurihama, a gift of the Japanese American Association of Japan.

[W. E. Griffis, *Matthew Calbraith Perry* (1887) is a friendly account, which, while not without slips and extraneous information, contains most of the essential facts. See also Record of Officers, Bureau of Navigation, 1809–63; Letters to Officers, Ships of War, Navy Dept. Archives, 1809–14, 1837–52; R. W. Neeser, *Statistical and Chronological Hist. of the U. S. Navy* (1909); I. O. Nitobe, *The Intercourse between the U. S. and Japan* (1891); Tyler Dennett, *Americans in Eastern Asia* (1922); C. O. Paullin, *Diplomatic Negotiations of American Naval Officers* (1912); S. W. Williams [*q.v.*], "A Journal of the Perry Expedition to Japan," *Trans. Asiatic Soc. of Japan*, vol. XXXVII, pt. II (1910), the journal of Perry's interpreter; *Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 34*, 33 Cong., 2 Sess.; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 4, 1858.]

C. O. P.

PERRY, NORA (1831–May 13, 1896), poet, journalist, author of juvenile stories, was the daughter of Harvey and Sarah (Benson) Perry of Dudley, Mass. In her childhood the family removed to Providence, R. I., where her father was a merchant. There she was educated at home and in private schools. As a child of eight she wrote a hair-raising romance, "The Shipwreck," which she read to her playmates with great effect. Her book favorites were the *Arabian Nights* and boys' stories, and, as she grew older, Emerson's essays and the poetry of the Brownings. She was rather proud of the fact that she never went through the "Byron age." When only eighteen she began to write for magazines, and her first serial, "Rosalind Newcomb," ran in *Harper's Magazine*, 1859–60. She soon went to live in Boston where she became correspondent for the *Chicago Tribune* and the *Providence Journal*, as well as a contributor of stories and poems to many magazines. She was a favorite among New England readers. One of her most popular poems, "Tying Her Bonnet Under Her Chin," was declined by the *Atlantic Monthly* and was then published in the *National Era* at Washington, D. C. It took the public fancy and was sung and parodied throughout the East. The *Atlantic* then made her an offer for a poem equally good, and she wrote "After the Ball," her best-known piece, first published in the *Atlantic* for July 1859 and sometimes printed under the title "Maud and Madge." Although it was excessively sentimental and morbid, Longfellow is said to have given it moderate praise as "a very cleverly versified poem that—a very artistic poem."

Nora Perry later wrote stories for girls almost exclusively. Her volumes include: *After the Ball, and Other Poems* (1875); *Her Lover's Friend, and Other Poems* (1880); *The Tragedy of the Unexpected, and Other Stories* (1880); *A*

Book of Love Stories (1881); *For a Woman, a Novel* (1885); *New Songs and Ballads* (1887); *A Flock of Girls* (1887); *The Youngest Miss Lorton and Other Stories* (1889); *Brave Girls* (1889); *Lyrics and Legends* (1891); *Hope Benham, a Story for Girls* (1894); *Cottage Neighbors* (1899); *That Little Smith Girl* (1899); *May Bartlett's Stepmother* (1900); *Ju Ju's Christmas Party* (1901); and *A New Year's Call* (1903) in the Children's Friend Series. Character portrayal is the chief merit of her stories, which are very simple in plot but show a knowledge of girls. She was never a systematic writer but wrote only when she felt so inclined. For some time before her death she made her home in a hotel at Lexington, Mass. While on a short visit to her old home at Dudley she suffered a stroke of apoplexy and died.

[F. E. Willard and M. A. Livermore, *Am. Women* (1897), vol. II; Arthur Gilman and others, *Poets' Homes*, 2 ser. (1880); *Critic*, May 23, 1896; *Boston Daily Advertiser* and *Boston Post*, May 15, 1896; *Alphabetical Index of Births, Marriages, and Deaths in Providence*, vol. XII (1908); *Vital Records of Dudley, Mass.* (1908); names of parents and year of birth from Am. Antiquarian Soc.] S. G. B.

PERRY, OLIVER HAZARD (Aug. 20, 1785–Aug. 23, 1819), naval officer, was born in the village of Rocky Brook, South Kingstown, R. I., the eldest child of Christopher Raymond Perry [*q.v.*] and Sarah Wallace (Alexander) Perry. Matthew Calbraith Perry [*q.v.*] was a younger brother. After receiving elementary instruction in his native town, Oliver was placed in school at Newport, where he learned navigation, having exhibited a liking for the sea. The entrance of his father into the navy smoothed his way into that service, and on Apr. 7, 1799, at the age of fourteen, he was appointed midshipman. Joining his father's ship, the *General Greene*, he saw active service in the West Indies during the naval war with France. During the war with Tripoli he was twice stationed in the Mediterranean, first in 1802–03 on board the *Adams*, and again in 1804–06 on board the *Constellation* and other vessels of the squadron. In 1803 he was made an acting lieutenant and four years later received a permanent lieutenancy. From 1807 to 1809 he was employed in building gunboats in Rhode Island and Connecticut and for a time commanded a flotilla of such craft engaged in enforcing the Embargo. In 1809 he was advanced to the command of the schooner *Revenge* and in 1810 cruised off the coast of the southern states where he effected the recovery of the *Diana*, an American ship sailing under English colors, a performance that was regarded as highly creditable. Early in the following year while under orders to survey the harbors of New London and Newport, the *Revenge* ran aground in a fog and was lost. A court of enquiry acquitted Perry of blame, since the vessel at the time was in charge of a pilot. He next took command of the gunboats at Norwich and Westerly, with headquarters at Newport, where on May 5, 1811, he was married to Elizabeth Champlin Mason.

Perry was now considered an excellent seaman and an efficient deck officer. Physically handsome, with pleasing voice and manners, he was professionally ambitious, quick in decision, and willing to take risks. His stature was slightly above the average; his body compact, active, and muscular. When war with Great Britain appeared inevitable, he wrote to the secretary of the navy earnestly entreating that he be called into active service. Later he went to Washington to urge his claims, and was promised the first vacancy suitable to his rank, that of master commandant, which he attained in August 1812. Restless and dissatisfied with his post at Newport, which gave him the command of a few gunboats, he tendered his services to the department and to Commodore Isaac Chauncey [*q.v.*] for duty on the Great Lakes. Chauncey wrote to him that he was the very person that he wanted for a "particular service," which later proved to be the command of the naval forces on Lake Erie. On Feb. 8, 1813, the department ordered him to proceed to Sacketts Harbor, N. Y., Chauncey's headquarters. He reached his own headquarters, Erie, Pa., on Mar. 23 and spent the spring and summer energetically employed in building, assembling, equipping, officering, and manning a small fleet—a most arduous task because a large part of his supplies had to be procured on the seaboard and transported through the wilderness. In May for a brief period he was on Lake Ontario where he took part in the capture of Fort George. Chauncey in acknowledging his assistance wrote that Perry was "present at every point where he could be useful, under showers of musketry, but fortunately escaped unhurt" (Mackenzie, *post*, I, 147).

By August, Perry was ready for active operations. His fleet at Erie consisted of ten small vessels, the largest of which were the sister-brigs *Lawrence* and *Niagara*, each of 480 tons burden. The fleet of the enemy blockading him was commanded by Commander Robert H. Barclay. Perry could not cross the Erie bar in the presence of the enemy, for the water there was so shallow that the guns and equipment of his heaviest vessels had to be removed before they could pass over. For a reason never fully explained, however, Barclay relaxed his blockade and gave

Perry a chance to reach the open lake. The latter described his task as one of almost incredible labor and fatigue, but most of the ships were over before the enemy arrived. It has been justly said that the battle of Lake Erie was really won at the Erie bar.

Perry was now joined by Master Commandant Jesse Duncan Elliott [*q.v.*] with one hundred officers and men, and Elliott, as the second officer of the fleet, took command of the *Niagara,* Perry having made the *Lawrence* his flagship. On Aug. 12 the fleet sailed up the lake, unopposed by the enemy, who had retired to his station at Amherstburg on the Detroit River. Perry made Put-in-Bay his headquarters, some twenty miles north of the present city of Sandusky, from which position he could watch Barclay's movements. He was also convenient to Gen. W. H. Harrison [*q.v.*], commander-in-chief of the western army with headquarters at Seneca-town, thirty miles to the southward. Twice he reconnoitred Amherstburg and observed Barclay's fleet, consisting of the new flagship *Detroit,* the *Queen Charlotte,* and four other small vessels.

The completion of the *Detroit* and the urgent need of supplies led Barclay to the decision to contest with Perry the possession of the lake. On Sept. 9 he weighed anchor and at sunrise on the following day he was sighted by Perry, who at once sailed out of Put-in-Bay to meet him. In the early morning the British had the advantage of the weather-gage, but before the battle was joined the wind shifted and conferred on the Americans the power of initiative. In weight of metal the Americans had a decided superiority, but in the number of effective men the difference was not material. According to Perry's plan of battle, the *Lawrence* was to fight the *Detroit,* the enemy's most formidable vessel; the *Niagara,* the *Queen Charlotte*; and his smaller vessels, the smaller vessels of the enemy. At 10 A.M. the *Lawrence* was cleared for action and a battle flag was hoisted upon which were inscribed the words attributed to the dying Lawrence, "Don't give up the ship."

The battle began a quarter before noon and lasted until 3 P.M. During its major part the brunt was borne by the *Lawrence.* When the vessel had been shot to pieces, all her guns disabled, and of 103 men, eighty-three killed or wounded, Perry transferred his flag to the *Niagara,* which up to this time had taken but a small part in the battle. After he left the *Lawrence* she struck her colors, but as he soon brought the *Niagara* into action the British were unable to take possession of the former flagship. The ensuing minor part of the battle lasted about fifteen minutes and ended with the surrender of the enemy's fleet. Barclay's loss was forty-one killed and ninety-four wounded including the commander himself. Perry's loss was twenty-seven killed and ninety-six wounded. More than two-thirds of the casualties were suffered by the *Lawrence.* The results of this decisive victory were far-reaching. The Americans gained control of Lake Erie and held it until the end of the war. Harrison crossed the lake and captured a large part of Upper Canada. The American negotiators at Ghent were able to make good their claims to the Northwest.

In few general actions, according to Admiral Mahan (*post,* II, 64), has the personality of the commander after the battle was joined counted for so much. Of Perry's laconic dispatches announcing his victory, the one beginning, "We have met the enemy and they are ours" was addressed to General Harrison; and the one beginning, "It has pleased the Almighty to give to the arms of the United States a signal victory over their enemies on this lake" (reminiscent of Nelson's dispatch after the battle of the Nile), to Secretary of the Navy Jones. Soon after news of the victory was received in Washington President Madison promoted Perry to the rank of captain, his commission bearing the date of the battle, Sept. 10, 1813. Later Congress added $5000 to the $7500 which was his share of the prize money. The capture of a British fleet by the American navy was unprecedented and it at once raised Perry to a position of renown. On Jan. 6, 1814, Congress adopted a resolution thanking him and requesting the President to give him a gold medal. He received the thanks of the legislatures of Pennsylvania and Georgia. Boston and Newport each gave him a service of plate, several other cities voted him swords, and Baltimore, Washington, and Boston, dined and toasted him. His enjoyment of his well-deserved fame was marred only by the acrimonious controversy that arose with Elliott over the latter's part in the battle. (For an account of this controversy, see sketch of Jesse Duncan Elliott.)

After the victory, Perry cooperated with Harrison in taking possession of Detroit, in transporting troops across the lake, and in fighting the battle of the Thames, in which he served as aide-de-camp to the commander-in-chief. He joined Harrison in issuing a proclamation to the people of western Canada. On Oct. 25 he turned the squadron over to Elliott and began his triumphal journey to Newport. In July 1814 he was ordered to Baltimore to take command of the *Java,* 44 guns, but this ship was unable to go to sea, because of the blockade maintained by the

enemy. In September he commanded a battery, with a detachment of seamen, and harassed the British fleet in its passage down the Potomac River from Alexandria.

In 1816–17 as commander of the *Java,* Perry cruised in the Mediterranean. A difficulty that he had at this time with Capt. John Heath of the marines resulted in a court martial and a private reprimand for both officers by the commodore of the squadron, and later in a duel on the famous dueling grounds at Weehawken, N. J., in which neither was injured, Perry declining to fire. In May 1819 he was placed in command of a small fleet and sent upon a delicate mission to the republics of Venezuela and Buenos Aires, whose vessels had been preying upon American commerce. When descending the Orinoco River after concluding negotiations at Angostura, the Venezuelan capital, he fell ill of yellow fever and died within a few days. His body was interred at Port of Spain, Trinidad. In 1826 it was transported on the *Lexington* to Newport, where it found its final resting place, later marked by a granite obelisk erected by Rhode Island, a state that has loyally cherished the name of its hero. Perry had five children; one of his sons entered the navy and one the army.

[There is a considerable literature on Perry and the Battle of Lake Erie, most of which is listed in C. O. Paullin, *The Battle of Lake Erie* (1918), pp. 205–12. See also Records of Officers, Bur. of Navigation, 1798–1825; Letters to Officers, Ships of War, X, XIII, and Private letters, 1813–40, Navy Dept. Archives; A. S. Mackenzie, *The Life of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry* (2 vols., 1840); J. F. Cooper, *Lives of Distinguished Am. Naval Officers* (1846), II, 146–232; A. T. Mahan, *Sea Power in Its Relations to the War of 1812* (1905), II, 62–101; *Niles' Register,* Oct. 2, 1819.]

C. O. P.

PERRY, RUFUS LEWIS (Mar. 11, 1834–June 18, 1895), negro Baptist clergyman, missionary and educator, journalist, was born in Smith County, Tenn. His parents were Lewis and Maria Perry, the slaves of Archibald W. Overton. Perry's father was a Baptist preacher and such an able mechanic and carpenter that he hired his time from his master and was allowed to move to Nashville with his family. Here Rufus was permitted to attend a school for free negroes until his father ran away to Canada. After his flight the other members of the family were deprived of their temporary freedom and forced to return to their master's plantation. In August 1852 Rufus Perry, who was regarded as dangerous on account of his schooling, was sold to a slave dealer who intended to take him to Mississippi. After remaining in this man's custody for three weeks he followed his father's example and likewise fled to Canada. His goal was Windsor, Ont., where he studied diligently and soon qualified as a teacher among the fugitives of his race. Converted to the Baptist faith in 1854, he some years later studied for the ministry at the Kalamazoo Theological Seminary and after graduating from this institution, was ordained as pastor of the Second Baptist Church of Ann Arbor on Oct. 9, 1861. Subsequently he served as pastor of churches at St. Catharines, Ont., and Buffalo, and still later, of the Messiah Baptist Church in Brooklyn, which he organized in 1887.

In 1865 Perry engaged in general missionary work, laboring for the education and evangelization of the members of his race. He superintended schools for freedmen for a time, but ultimately devoted most of his energies to journalism. He served as editor of *Sunbeam* and of the *People's Journal,* was co-editor of the *American Baptist,* 1869–71, and in later years, 1872–95, was joint editor then editor-in-chief of the *National Monitor,* a Baptist organ. For ten years he was corresponding secretary of the Consolidated American Baptist Missionary Convention and he also served as corresponding secretary of the American Educational Association and of the American Baptist Free Mission Society. He was an eloquent preacher, a fluent debater, and an able writer with an entertaining style. On May 16, 1887, he delivered a lecture on "Light" before the State University at Louisville, Ky., which afterwards bestowed upon him the degree of Ph.D. His only literary effort in book form was *The Cushite; or the Descendants of Ham as Seen by Ancient Historians* (1893). He died in Brooklyn, where he had made his home since about 1870. His wife was Charlotte Handy, by whom he had seven children.

[W. W. Brown, *The Rising Son* (1874); W. J. Simmons, *Men of Mark* (1887); Wm. Cathcart, *The Bapt. Encyc.* (1881); *Courier-Journal* (Louisville, Ky.), May 18, 1887; *Appletons' Ann. Cyc., 1895* (1896); *Brooklyn Daily Eagle,* June 19, July 31, 1895.]

H. G. V.

PERRY, STUART (Nov. 2, 1814–Feb. 9, 1890), inventor, was born in Newport, N. Y. Here he obtained his early education, and then entered Union College, where he was graduated in 1837. Three years later he entered the wholesale butter and cheese commission house established by his older brother and brother-in-law in Newport, with which he was associated for upwards of twenty years. Although he prospered in his business, he was primarily interested in mechanics and devoted most of his spare time to study and invention in this field. After his retirement, about 1860, he gave the remaining thirty years of his life to this work. His first invention, now recognized as notable historically, was a gas engine, for which he obtained United States

Patent No. 3,597 on May 25, 1844. It was operated by the expansion of the products of combustion within the engine cylinder. The invention was the first of the class of non-compression gas engines that were so successfully introduced by Lenoir in France about 1860. Perry's engine utilized the explosive vapors obtained from rosin heated by the exhaust gases in a retort which was part of the engine. Again, in 1846, Perry patented an improved gas engine, obtaining patent No. 4,800 on Oct. 7, 1846. This design incorporated a provision for water-cooling the cylinder, an incandescent platinum igniter for the gas, and a receiver for compressed air to be used in starting the engine. In an effort to find a market, Perry exhibited his engine in the New York store of his brother's company in 1847 but without success. He then turned his attention to bank locks, inspired no doubt by the ingenious work of his friend and fellow citizen Linus Yale the elder. He obtained patents in 1857 for a lock, key, and safe bolt, and in 1858, patent No. 20,658 for an improved bank lock. This was a tumbler lock having no keyhole and a key made up of component parts which could be separated and reassembled to change the lock combination. It is said to have been marketed as the "Great American," and was an improvement on the famous Yale "Infallible" and "Magic" bank locks. Between 1860 and 1865 Perry worked on improvements in horse-powers and secured some ten patents which he assigned to a local manufacturer. He also devised during the sixties a milk-cooling apparatus, a stereopticon, sawmill machinery, and a velocipede. About 1870 he turned his attention to the manufacture of agricultural implements, particularly hay tedders of his own invention, and continued in this occupation for the remainder of his life. He married, in 1837, Amy Jane Carter of Newport, and after her death in 1873 he married Jane W. Maxson, who with a daughter by his first wife survived him.

[*Hist. of Herkimer County, N. Y.* (1879); *New York Journal,* XLVII (1847), 511; correspondence with Union College Graduate Council; Patent Office records.]

C. W. M—n.

PERRY, THOMAS SERGEANT (Jan. 23, 1845–May 7, 1928), author, scholar, and educator, was born at Newport, R. I. His father, Christopher Grant Perry, was the son of Oliver Hazard Perry [*q.v.*], of Lake Erie fame, whose brother, Commodore Matthew Calbraith Perry [*q.v.*], became equally famous because of his negotiations with Japan. His mother was Frances Sergeant, of Philadelphia, and on her side he was, by direct descent, the great-great-grandson of Benjamin Franklin, whose facial characteristics he inherited to a degree that was frequently recognized. His early education was at private schools. At the age of sixteen and a half he entered Harvard College, graduating with the class of 1866.

After graduation he went to Europe for further study, with the intention of returning to a position for life at Harvard as a tutor in French and German. After holding this position from 1868 to 1872, however, he relinquished it and became associated for a time with the *North American Review.* Returning to Harvard in 1877 as instructor in English, he remained there for five years. In 1874 he was married to Lilla Cabot, daughter of Dr. Samuel Cabot of Boston, and soon became an adopted Bostonian. As a lecturer he was notably popular. A volume of his lectures, *English Literature of the Eighteenth Century* (1883), is widely known and read. For several years, at home and abroad, he was engaged in an active literary life. In 1882 he published *The Life and Letters of Francis Lieber,* which was issued also in a German translation; in 1885 *From Opitz to Lessing* appeared. In 1887 he published a small volume in a lighter vein, *The Evolution of the Snob,* which is not, however, so trivial as the title sounds. His *History of Greek Literature,* the most voluminous and comprehensive of his works, appeared in 1890. In addition to his original writings he published translations of contemporary foreign authors, including Turgenev, and Saint-Amand. Although Oliver Wendell Holmes called him "the best read man I have ever known," he refused to be ambitious, saying as he grew older that writing was more a task than a pleasure. In spite of his unusual equipment, which was encyclopedic as well as scholarly, his native temper of the student and appreciator overcame by degrees his interest in original work, and with the exception of a brief biography of his old friend, John Fiske, which appeared in 1906, he published in his later years only an occasional short article.

In 1898 he went with his family to Japan, where for three years he was professor of English at the University of Keiogijiku. After his return to Boston he remained to the end of his life an omnivorous student and reader of many languages, including Sanskrit and Russian. By nature a cosmopolite, and perhaps never quite at home in America, he lived to see himself almost the last of "Old Boston," of which he had been for years a distinguished and familiar figure. He represented the perfection of a culture that has passed, and he is remembered for an impressive

and engaging personality that was itself a sort of genius. He was by nature what might be called a rationalist, if not quite a materialist, and yet was hospitable enough to say of Emerson, whose optimistic unworldliness could hardly have satisfied him, that he was "the only man I ever knew who seemed to be different from the rest of mankind." Though inclined to be exclusive in his human relations, he was altogether democratic in his appraisal of his fellow man, frowning only on what he felt to be cheap or mean or common. After a short illness he died at his home in Boston.

[C. B. Perry, *The Perrys of R. I. and Silver Creek* (1913); J. T. Morse, Jr., *Thomas Sergeant Perry, A Memoir* (1929); *Selections from the Letters of Thomas Sergeant Perry* (1929), ed. by E. A. Robinson; *Boston Transcript*, May 7, 1928.] E. A. R.

PERRY, WILLIAM (Dec. 20, 1788–Jan. 11, 1887), physician, manufacturer of starch, was born at Norton, Mass., the son of Nathan and Phebe (Braman) Perry. His youth was passed on the family farm and his preparation for college attained through a private tutor and a short period at an academy at Ballston, N. Y., where his brother, Gardner, was principal. He entered Union College but remained only a year, transferring to Harvard where he was graduated in 1811. During the next three years he continued medical studies at Harvard and under James Thacher [*q.v.*] of Plymouth and John Gorham and John Warren [*qq.v.*] of Boston, all distinguished physicians in their day. In 1814 he received the degree of M.D. at Harvard Medical School and immediately opened an office at Exeter, N. H. There he continued to practise until almost the end of his extraordinarily long life. Sound judgment, careful attention to his patients, and great professional skill quickly brought him a wide practice and made him the most distinguished physician and surgeon of his time in that section of the country. In his late eighties he was still performing difficult operations and at the age of ninety-two operated successfully for strangulated hernia (Watson, *post*). He was one of the first medical men in his state to urge the establishment of an asylum for the insane. Between 1830 and 1835 he was particularly interested in the subject of insanity, and it was mainly through his influence and exertions that an asylum was erected at Concord. His agitation included the delivery of two lectures on insanity before the state legislature. In 1836 he was appointed lecturer at the Bowdoin College Medical School and served one year; in 1837 he was offered a professorship, but declined.

Perry had a keen interest in chemistry, and after a series of experiments became convinced that "British Gum," an expensive imported product employed as a sizing by cotton manufacturers, could be produced by charring starch. Such a substance he succeeded in making from potatoes, and in the latter part of 1824 completed a mill for the manufacture of potato starch which was soon providing the cotton manufacturers of Lowell with a perfect substitute for "British Gum." In 1827 and again in 1830 the mill was burned to the ground, but within a short time was operating again. The secrets of the business were finally discovered, however, keen competition developed, and Perry gave up the manufacture of starch as no longer remunerative.

Original in mind and straightforward in action, he devoted his talents for over half a century to the highest interests of his community. He lived to be ninety-eight, and few men have more completely won the respect and confidence of their neighbors. It is said that at the last two presidential elections during his life his fellow-citizens waited to vote until he had cast the first ballot. He married, Apr. 8, 1818, Abigail Gilman (1789–1860), the daughter of Nathaniel and Abigail (Odlin) Gilman, and had by her five children. His oldest daughter, Caroline Frances, became the mother of Sarah Orne Jewett [*q.v.*].

[C. H. Bell, *Hist. of the Town of Exeter, N. H.* (1888); G. F. Clark, *A Hist. of the Town of Norton, Bristol County, Mass.* (1859); Arthur Gilman, *The Gilman Family* (1869); *Vital Records of Norton, Mass., to the Year 1850* (1906); I. A. Watson, *Physicians and Surgeons of America* (1896).] H. U. F.

PERRY, WILLIAM FLAKE (1823–Dec. 18, 1901), first state superintendent of public instruction of Alabama, the son of Hiram and Nancy (Flake) Perry, was born in Jackson County, Ga. When he was ten years old the family moved to Chambers County, Ala. This county was a part of the cession of the Creek Indians that had been made only a year earlier, and the boy grew up in the most primitive frontier conditions, with little or no schooling. Poor as his training was it was better than that of most of his neighbors, and he taught school in Talladega County, Ala., from 1848 to 1853, while studying law. He was married in 1851 to Ellen Douglas Brown in Talladega, Ala., the niece of William P. Chilton [*q.v.*]. They had seven children. He was admitted to the bar in 1854, but he never practised his profession, for in the same year he was elected state superintendent of education and, twice reëlected, served until 1858. The office of superintendent of education had been created in 1854 by an act of the Alabama legislature providing for a free public

school system, and he was the first to hold the office. Acting under the law of 1854 he laid the foundations for a strong public school system of Alabama, which were, however, a few years later swept away in the Civil War. He entered upon the task with energy and enthusiasm, but the situation he faced was most discouraging. The population was sparse and the available funds were small. The people were indifferent, and he never had adequate popular support. Teachers and administrators were indifferent and incompetent. In the face of these difficulties he accomplished much. He was able to build an organization and to persuade the legislature to revise the law in 1856 in the interest of greater efficiency of administration.

In 1858 he resigned his position as superintendent of education to become president of the East Alabama Female College at Tuskeegee. He remained there until 1862, when he enlisted in the Confederate army as a private in the 44th Alabama Infantry. Within a few weeks he was elected major by the men of the regiment. His promotion was rapid; on Sept. 1, 1862, he was made lieutenant-colonel and upon the death of the colonel of the regiment at Sharpsburg he was advanced to colonel. He led his regiment in the assault on Round Top at Gettysburg and later at Chickamauga, after which he was cited for gallantry by General Longstreet and recommended for promotion. He commanded his brigade during 1864 and 1865, but his commission as brigadier-general was dated Mar. 16, 1865. He was paroled with his regiment at Appomattox. After the war he returned to Alabama and spent two years as a planter. In 1867 he took charge of a military college in Glendale, Ky., and went from there to Ogden College at Bowling Green, where he became professor of English and philosophy. He published his own account of "The Genesis of Public Education in Alabama" in the *Transactions of the Alabama Historical Society* for 1898 (vol. II). He died in Bowling Green.

[T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala.* (1921), vol. IV; Willis Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); Wm. Garrett, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Ala.* (1872); J. J. Garrett, "Forty-Fourth Ala. Regiment," *Ala. Hist. Soc. Trans.*, vol. II (1898); S. B. Weeks, *Hist. of Public School Education in Ala.* (1915); W. G. Clark, *Hist. of Education in Ala.* (1889).] H. F.

PERRY, WILLIAM STEVENS (Jan. 22, 1832–May 13, 1898), Protestant Episcopal bishop, church historian, was born in Providence, R. I., the son of Stephen and Katharine Whittemore (Stevens) Perry. He attended the Providence High School and entered Brown University, but later joined as a sophomore the Harvard class of 1854, with which he graduated.

He attended the Theological Seminary in Virginia for a time and continued his studies under the special guidance of the Rev. Alexander H. Vinton, of Boston. While a candidate for orders, he helped found Grace Church, Newton, Mass. He was made deacon in Newton, Mar. 29, 1857, and ordained priest, Apr. 7, 1858. He served as rector of St. Luke's Church, Nashua, N. H., 1858–61; St. Stephen's, Portland, Me., 1861–63; St. Michael's, Litchfield, Conn., 1864–69; Trinity Church, Geneva, N. Y., 1869–76. From 1871 to 1874 he was professor of history in Hobart College, Geneva, and served for a short time as president of the college (April–September 1876). In 1868 he was appointed by the General Convention, historiographer of the Episcopal Church, and from 1865 to 1876 he was assistant secretary or secretary to the General Convention. On Jan. 15, 1862, he married Sara Abbott Woods Smith, daughter of the Rev. Thomas Mather Smith. He was consecrated bishop of Iowa in 1876, and continued until his death to administer the affairs of his growing diocese. He founded two church schools at Davenport, Iowa: St. Katharine's Hall for girls and Kemper Hall for boys.

Perry's most distinctive contribution to his period was as a historical writer. He stimulated the historical consciousness of the Episcopal Church in America, and preserved material which otherwise might have been lost. He was accurate, and in his work showed clear judgment, seizing upon the important facts in relation to the development of the institution. A student and investigator of early colonial sources, he made many visits to England, and in the archives of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, Fulham Palace Library, and the Public Record Office in London discovered valuable manuscripts relating to the origin and development of the Episcopal Church in America. These were published in five volumes (1870–78) under the general title: *Historical Collections Relating to the American Colonial Church.* He also published in two volumes *The History of the American Episcopal Church, 1587–1883* (1885), and *The Episcopate in America* (1895), a collection of biographical sketches. He was in demand as a special preacher and speaker on many historical occasions and many of his addresses and sermons were printed in permanent form. His literary activity is indicated by the fact that a list of his separate publications includes 125 titles. A few of these indicate his interests: *The Faith of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence* (1896?); *The Christian Character of George Washington* (1891); *The Men and*

Measures of the Massachusetts Conventions of 1784–85 (1885); *A Discourse Delivered . . . at Faribault, Minn., on the Eve of the Centenary of the Consecration of the Reverend Samuel Seabury to the Episcopate of Connecticut* (1884); *The Alleged "Toryism" of the Clergy of the United States at the Breaking out of the War of the Revolution* (1895?), and *A Missionary Apostle* (1887), a sermon preached in Westminster Abbey.

[The Harvard College Library has a complete collection of Perry's publications. For biographical data see *Harvard College, Report of the Class of 1854* (1894); *The Am. Church Almanac and Year Book for 1899* (1898); W. S. Perry, *The Episcopate in America* (1895); *Churchman*, May 21, 1898; *Dubuque Daily Telegraph*, May 13, 1898.] D. D. A.

PERSON, THOMAS (Jan. 19, 1733–Nov. 16, 1800), North Carolina Revolutionary leader, was born probably in Brunswick County, Va., but lived from infancy in Granville (now Vance) County, N. C. His father was William Person, of Virginia, who went to North Carolina about 1740. The maiden name of his mother, Ann Person, is not known. Thomas became a surveyor for Lord Granville and in the course of years acquired a landed estate of more than 82,000 acres lying in Granville, Halifax, Warren, Franklin, Orange, Caswell, Guilford, Rockingham, Anson, and Wake counties in North Carolina, and in Davidson, Sumner, and Green counties in Tennessee. He became a justice of the peace in 1756, sheriff in 1762, and was representative in the Assembly in 1764 and frequently thereafter. In the Regulation movement he was involved somewhat deeply as counselor and adviser. He was tried at the session of 1770 for perjury and for exacting illegal fees but he was triumphantly cleared. He was not present at the battle of Alamance when the Regulation was suppressed, but he was regarded as so important a leader that he was included in Governor Tryon's list of those excepted from the amnesty which was proclaimed. He was arrested and jailed but was released without trial, and his influence in the Assembly and in the colony grew steadily.

When the Revolutionary movement began Person threw himself into it with intense fervor. Ardently democratic, he believed the struggle to be primarily one for popular government. He headed the Granville delegation in all five provincial congresses, and he served on every important committee including the one which proposed the Halifax resolution of Apr. 12, 1776, instructing the delegates to the Continental Congress to vote for a declaration of independence, the one which drafted the bill of rights, and the one which drew up the Constitution of 1776. In the two congresses of 1776 he ranked with Willie Jones as a leader of the liberal party. In 1775 he was elected a member of the provincial council and in 1776 of the Council of Safety. In 1776 he was elected also a general of militia, but there is no record that he saw active service. He was again made a justice of the peace in 1776, and a member of the council of state, and in 1784 was elected to the Continental Congress but never took his seat. He was a member of the House of Commons from 1777 to 1786, 1788 to 1791, 1793 to 1795, and in 1797—seventeen years in all—and a member of the Senate in 1787 and 1791. In 1787 he became chief commissioner to settle the accounts of the state with the United States.

In 1788 Person was one of the most influential of those who opposed immediate ratification of the federal Constitution, and as a delegate to the Hillsboro convention voted against it. He was also a delegate to the Fayetteville convention of 1789 where he again opposed ratification. The legislature of 1789 named him one of the charter trustees of the state university and he held the place until 1795 and was one of the institution's earliest and most generous benefactors. Person in 1760 married Johanna Thomas of Granville County who died without issue. He died in Franklin County and was buried at Personton in Warren. His career in the General Assembly was notable not only for its length, but for the amount of legislative work which he did. He served on almost every important committee. He was a fighter and an able and adroit political leader, but there was about him nothing of the trickster. A zealous party man, he nevertheless had a passion for justice, equality, and honesty in government which was always stronger than party feeling.

[*The Colonial Records of N. C.*, vols. I–X (1886–90), and *The State Records of N. C.*, vols. XI–XXVI (1765–1771)," *Ann. Report of the Am. Hist. Asso. . . . 1894* (1895); S. A. Ashe, ed., *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. VII (1908); Louise I. Trenholme, *The Ratification of the Fed. Constitution in N. C.* (1932); *Hist. Papers Pub. by the Trinity Coll. Hist. Soc.*, ser. XIV (1922), pp. 79–81.] J. G. deR. H.

PETER, HUGH (1598–Oct. 16, 1660), clergyman, was the son of Thomas Dirkwood or Dyckwoode, who subsequently assumed the surname of Peter, and Martha Treffry. He always signed his name Peter but is often called Peters. He was baptized at Fowey in Cornwall in June 1598; entered Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1613; received the bachelor's degree in 1617/18, and the master's, in 1622. He was ordained deacon Dec. 23, 1621, and priest June 18, 1623, by George Montaigne, Bishop of London. After

preaching in Essex, he removed to London, where he lectured at St. Sepulchre's, and became associated with the Puritan feoffees who were raising a fund to buy up impropriations in England, and a member of the Massachusetts Bay Company. The appointment of Laud as bishop of London and the rise to power of the high church party caused him to leave England about 1629. After traveling through Germany, he assisted John Forbes in the congregation of English merchants at Delft and preached to an English congregation at Rotterdam. At the latter place he was joined by William Ames, and perhaps under Ames's influence drafted a covenant for the church embodying the principles of congregationalism, and refused communion to all who would not accept it. Hither he invited John Davenport [*q.v.*] when the latter failed to win installation as co-pastor with John Paget of the English church at Amsterdam, and here he and Davenport engaged Lion Gardiner [*q.v.*] to go to New England for the Warwick patentees. His movements in Holland were watched by emissaries of Laud, now archbishop of Canterbury, and probably for this reason he placed John Davenport in charge of his congregation in Rotterdam and departed for New England.

On Oct. 6, 1635, Peter arrived in Massachusetts Bay, and on Dec. 21, 1636, succeeded Roger Williams as pastor of the church at Salem. He was a firm supporter of non-separating congregationalism or the "New England way," and at the time of his settlement at Salem, the church adopted a covenant in some of its details resembling the covenant that he had drafted for the church in Rotterdam. On Mar. 3, 1635/36 he was admitted a freeman of the Bay Colony, and took an active part in the affairs of New England. Soon after his arrival in Massachusetts he and Henry Vane called a meeting to heal the breach between John Winthrop and Thomas Dudley. He served on committees appointed May 25, 1636, and Mar. 12, 1637/38, to draft a code of laws for the colony. He concerned himself with the settlement of the Warwick patentees at the mouth of the Connecticut River, and in the summer of 1636 accompanied George Fenwick [*q.v.*] to Saybrook. He opposed seizing the corn of the defeated Pequot Indians, but asked for "a young woman or girle and a boy" from among the captives for himself and John Endecott. In November 1637 he attended the examination of Anne Hutchinson by the court at Newtown, and in the following March, her trial before the church at Boston. He was a member of the committee appointed Nov. 20, 1637, "to take order for a colledge at Newetowne," was one of those to whom the building of the college was intrusted, and his name appeared as an overseer of the college on the theses printed in 1642. With others, he was sent by the governor and council of Massachusetts to settle a dispute in the church at Piscataqua and on leaving that place lost his way and wandered for two days and a night in the woods. He encouraged the fisheries, trade, and shipbuilding of New England, and is characterized by Winthrop (*post*, II, 23) as "a man of a very public spirit and singular activity for all occasions." Against the will of his Salem congregation, he was appointed one of three agents to represent Massachusetts Bay and to further the reformation of the churches in England, and on Aug. 3, 1641, sailed from Boston for the mother country.

In England he secured support for the Bay Colony and Harvard College and assisted in arranging a settlement with the creditors of New Plymouth. In negotiations with the Dutch West India Company he failed to settle the boundary between New England and New Netherland for lack of a commission from Connecticut, although one had been sent to him soon after his departure from New England (*Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York*, ed. by E. B. O'Callaghan, vol. I, 1856, p. 568). He always intended to return to New England, but with the outbreak of civil war in England he became involved in the affairs of the mother country, and made the poor health from which he suffered all his life an excuse for delay. During the summer of 1642 he served as chaplain with the forces of Alexander, Lord Forbes, in Ireland; in 1644, with the forces of the Earl of Warwick; in 1645 and 1646, with the New Model Army; and in 1649, with Cromwell in Ireland. With the duties of chaplain he combined those of war correspondent and reported the activities of the army to the House of Commons. In sermons preached during the trial of Charles I, he denounced the King, and in a letter to Queen Christina of Sweden some years later explained the reasons for the execution of the monarch. He stood in high favor with the Council of State and the Protector. He was one of the ministers appointed to preach before the Council, for which he received an annuity of £200 and lodgings in Whitehall, and so impressed a visiting New Englander with his high station that he was addressed as Archbishop of Canterbury, which "passed very well." With the overthrow of the Protectorate, he fell from power. On Jan. 9, 1659/60, he was turned out of Whitehall; on May 11 the Council of State, and on June 7 the House of Commons ordered his apprehension; on Aug.

20 he was excepted from the Act of Indemnity; on Sept. 2 he was arrested and committed to the Tower; on Oct. 13 he was tried and condemned; and on Oct. 16, 1660, he was executed at Charing Cross. While awaiting execution, he wrote *A Dying Father's Last Legacy to an Onely Child: or, Mr. Hugh Peter's Advice to His Daughter* (1660). During his lifetime and after his death he was cruelly maligned by both Anglicans and Presbyterians, but he enjoyed the respect of such men as the Winthrops of New England, the Earl of Warwick, Fairfax, and Cromwell.

About 1624 Peter married Elizabeth, the daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, Essex, widow of Edmund Reade of Wickford, Essex, and mother of the second wife of John Winthrop, Jr. She did not accompany him to New England and died in 1637 or 1638. Sometime before Sept. 4, 1639, he married Deliverance Sheffield, a widow, who was the mother of his only child, Elizabeth, baptized at Salem Oct. 1, 1640. His later life was clouded by the insanity of this second wife. In 1665 his daughter married Thomas Barker at All Hallows, London Wall, and as a widow in low circumstances, in 1703 laid claim to his Salem estate.

[E. B. Peters, "Hugh Peter," *Hist. Colls. Essex Inst.*, vol. XXXVIII (1902); William Harris, *An Hist. and Critical Account of Hugh Peters* (1751, 1818); J. B. Felt, *A Memoir or Defence of Hugh Peters* (1851); C. H. Firth, in *Dict. Nat. Biog.*; S. E. Morison, "Sir Charles Firth and Master Hugh Peter, with a Hugh Peter Bibliog.," *Harvard Grads. Mag.*, Dec. 1930; G. C. Boase, and Wm. P. Courtney, *Bibliotheca Cornubiensis* (3 vols., 1874–82); John Venn and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses*, pt. 1, vol. III (1924); Champlin Burrage, *The Early English Dissenters in the Light of Recent Research* (2 vols., 1912); British Museum, Add. MSS. 6394, printed in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XLII (1909); *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England*, vols. I–II (1853), ed. by N. B. Shurtleff; *Winthrop's Journal* (2 vols., 1908), ed. by J. K. Hosmer; "Winthrop Papers," *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 3 ser. IX (1846), X (1849), 4 ser. VI (1863), VII (1865), 5 ser. I (1871), VIII (1882); Thomas Lechford, *Plain Dealing; or, Newes from New-England* (1642), repub. in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 3 ser. III (1833); "Acts of the Commissioners of the United Colonies of New England," *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England*, vols. IX–X (1859); William Bradford, *Hist. of Plymouth Plantation, 1620–1647* (2 vols., 1912), ed. by W. C. Ford; *Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series; Acts and Ordinances of the Interregnum* (3 vols., 1911), ed. by C. H. Firth and R. S. Rait.]

I. M. C.

PETER, JOHN FREDERICK (May 19, 1746–July 19, 1813), school-master, preacher, and musician, son of John Frederick and Susanna Peter, was born at Hernndyck, Holland, where his father was pastor of the Moravian congregation. On the death of his mother in 1760, his father was sent to America to assist in the Moravian work at Bethlehem, Pa. The boy continued his education in schools at Gros Hennersdorf, Barby, and Niesky. Besides the usual training for the ministry, he received instruction on the violin and organ, and in harmony and musical composition.

In 1769 he followed his father to America and was for a year a teacher at Nazareth, Pa. Removing to Bethlehem in 1770, he became accountant and secretary of the Brethren's House, teacher in the boys' school, and organist of the church. For fifteen years his was the inspiration that gave activity to the musical life of Bethlehem. The Collegium Musicum, which had been founded in 1749 by Westerman, was expanded in its aims, and works by Bach, Händel, and Graun were rehearsed and performed, while the orchestra, consisting of the full complement of strings, wood, and brass, played symphonies by Haydn, Mozart, and their contemporaries. In 1786 Peter was sent, in succession, to Hope, N. J., Lititz, Pa., Graceham, Md., and Salem, N. C., where his musical activities were continued and where his talents made definite and permanent impression. In 1793 he returned to Bethlehem with his wife, Catharine Leinbach, a singer, whom he had married in Salem, and became accountant for the diocese, resuming, also, control of musical affairs.

During a life busied with many monotonous details, he composed more than thirty anthems for chorus, solo, and orchestra, and copied vocal and instrumental parts of works by the great composers of his day, for church and concert use. His only secular work is a set of six quintettes for two violins, two violas, and cello, written in the traditional sonata style; they show not only mastery of form, but also originality of melodic outline. Peter was well acquainted with the contrapuntal music of Bach, but his own compositions reflect Haydn rather than the father of the moderns. His choruses are usually written in five parts and seldom pass very far into free counterpoint, but his instrumental accompaniments are always independent of the voices, as to form. With respect to harmony, he very often shows a strong tendency toward the modern habit of chromatic alteration. In 1810 he copied all the vocal and instrumental parts of Haydn's *Creation* and in 1811, under his direction, the work was given its first complete performance on the American continent, some years before its production by the Händel and Haydn Society of Boston.

This talented musician, probably unknown outside of his circle, was, undoubtedly, the first composer of serious concerted music in America. Just what the technical quality of the performances of these pioneers of American music may have been we have no means of knowing; but

the seed whence sprang the Bethlehem Bach Choir was in their spirit and in that of their self-sacrificing leader. In the music library of the Moravian Church at Bethlehem the perfectly formed notes and the beautiful handwriting of Peter covered many hundreds of pages. Some of his copies of symphonies by Haydn are dated between 1760 and 1770 and reveal quite clearly the nature of his early training, for the much thumbed and marked copies speak eloquently of hard rehearsals. One of the most significant results of Peter's life is seen in the list of names of some six or eight local composers who fell under his influence, though none of them equaled their master. He died suddenly as he stepped down from the organ bench after a rehearsal.

[Authorities include manuscript diaries of the Bethlehem Congregation, 1770–1813, and of the Brethren's House, 1770–86, copies of the musical works of Peter, and accounts of the Collegium Musicum, 1774–1813, all in the Moravian archives, Bethlehem, Pa.; J. M. Levering, *Hist. of Bethlehem* (1903); Raymond Walters, *The Bethlehem Bach Choir* (1923); J. T. Howard, *Our Am. Music* (1930). The statement that Peter directed a complete performance of Haydn's *Creation* in 1811 is supported by the testimony of one of the original performers and by Peter's copy of the score, which bears marks in his handwriting indicating performance of the entire work.] A. G. R.

PETER, ROBERT (Jan. 21, 1805–Apr. 26, 1894), physician, chemist, was born at Launceston, Cornwall, England, the son of Robert and Johanna (Dawe) Peter. He came to Pittsburgh, Pa., with his parents in 1817, where from necessity he sought employment and secured a position in Charles Avery's wholesale drug store. Here he acquired and diligently cultivated a decided taste for chemistry. Soon after attaining his majority he became a naturalized citizen, and about that time attended the Rensselaer School (now Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute), Troy, N. Y. He was a member of the Hesperian Society and contributed to *The Hesperus* numerous papers—scientific, literary, and poetical. In 1829 he gave a series of lectures on natural sciences before the Pittsburgh Philosophical Society, of which he was a member, and in 1830–31 he lectured on chemistry in the Western University of Pennsylvania.

In 1832 he went to Lexington, Ky., to be associated with Benjamin O. Peers [*q.v.*] in the proprietorship of his "Eclectic Institute" and to give a course of lectures. When Peers was made proctor of Morrison College and acting president of Transylvania University in 1833, young Peter was installed in the chair of chemistry in Morrison College. He studied medicine in Transylvania, receiving his diploma in 1834, but so intent upon his scientific pursuits was he that he soon gave up the practice of medicine. On

Peter

Oct. 6, 1835, he was married to Frances Paca Dallam, and to this union were born six sons and five daughters. To the *Transylvania Journal of Medicine and Associate Sciences*, of which he was editor in 1837, he made numerous contributions, among them being articles entitled "Thoughts on Some Application of Chemistry to Medicine" (October–December 1834), "Notice of the Crab Orchard Mineral Springs" (September 1835), and "A Summary of Meteorological Observations Made During 1837 and 1838" (January 1837–July 1838). In 1838 Peter was elected to the chair of chemistry and pharmacy in the medical department of Transylvania University, which position he held until the closing of the school in 1857. During the last ten years he was dean of the medical faculty. He went to London and Paris in 1839 and expended $11,000 in books and apparatus for his department. From 1850 to 1853 he also served as professor of chemistry and toxicology in the Kentucky School of Medicine, Louisville. After his return from Europe he carried on much experimental work along practical lines. He made a study of calculi and published *Chemical Examination of the Urinary Calculi in the Museum of the Medical Department of Transylvania University* (1846). He also experimented with gun-cotton.

A memorial to the Kentucky legislature, which Peter prepared, resulted in the Kentucky geological survey of 1854, the first large state undertaking of its kind in the West. As chemist of the survey, he made a valuable contribution to knowledge of the minerals and soil of the state, the results of his studies being published in the various reports of the survey. He was the first to call attention to the fact that the productivity of the bluegrass soils of Kentucky is due to their high phosphorus content, and to report on the phosphatic limestone which underlies much of the bluegrass country. He was also chemist for the Arkansas and Indiana surveys directed by David Dale Owen [*q.v.*].

During the Civil War he was acting assistant surgeon in charge of military hospitals in Lexington. When, in 1865, Transylvania, Kentucky University, and the state Agricultural and Mechanical College were merged under the name of Kentucky University, Peter declined the presidency of the last-named and filled the chair of chemistry and experimental philosophy in the other two schools of the University. In 1867–68 he was assistant editor of the *Farmer's Home Journal* and afterwards was a frequent contributor. When the Agricultural and Mechanical College separated from the University in 1878, Peter chose to associate himself with the former as

professor of chemistry, remaining in that position until he retired as emeritus professor in 1887. He died at Winton, his country home, in his ninetieth year, retaining almost to the end his youthful appearance, mental and physical vigor, and happy outlook upon life. His son, Dr. Alfred M. Peter, was for forty-two years chemist in the Kentucky Agricultural Experiment Station. Father and son together gave nearly a hundred years of service in chemistry to Kentucky.

[Peter wrote *Transylvania Univ., Its Origin, Rise, Decline, and Fall* (1896), Filson Club Pubs., no. 11, and *The Hist. of the Medic. Dept. of Transylvania Univ.* (1905), Filson Club Pub., no. 20, published with biog. sketch by his daughter, Johanna Peter; see also J. N. McCormack, *Some of the Medic. Pioneers of Ky.* (1917); A. H. Barkley, *Kentucky's Pioneer Lithotomists* (1913); *Trans. Ky. State Medic. Soc.*, 1894; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Courier-Jour.* (Louisville), Apr. 27, 1894.] G. R.

PETER, SARAH WORTHINGTON KING

(May 10, 1800–Feb. 6, 1877), philanthropist, was the daughter of Thomas and Eleanor (Van Swearingen) Worthington. Thomas Worthington [*q.v.*] was a member of an old Virginia family who freed his slaves and started life anew in Chillicothe and Adina, Ohio, where he prospered as a lawyer, and became a political leader. Sarah, born in Chillicothe, was schooled in Frankfort, Ky., and in a private institution near Baltimore, receiving instruction chiefly in the social usages becoming a girl of her position and beauty. In 1816, she married Edward King, son of Rufus King [*q.v.*] of New York, who had completed the course at the Litchfield Law School and settled in Chillicothe to practise his profession. She became an ardent worker in the local Episcopal Church, which she helped to found in 1820, and maintained a cultivated salon on the frontier where she entertained among others Karl Bernhard, Duke of Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach, who recorded his impressions of the family in his *Travels through North America during the Years 1825 and 1826* (1828; II, 149–50). In 1825, she accompanied her father to New Orleans, where she was honored as one of Lafayette's hostesses. Moving to Cincinnati in 1831, the Kings became prominent in social life, aided in founding the Cincinnati School of Law, and assisted in the establishment of the Protestant Orphan Aslyum. In 1836, King died and his widow moved to Cambridge, Mass., where her sons were attending Harvard College. Welcomed by social leaders because of her family connections in New York and Maine, she spent her time in the service of Christ Church and in mastering French, German, and Italian.

With her elder son settled in Cincinnati as a lawyer and the younger in the Philadelphia commercial house of his kinsman, Richard Alsop, she felt free to follow her own bent, and in October 1844 she married William Peter, British consul in Philadelphia. He was an Oxford scholar, a translator of German poetry, and an essayist, and had served as a Whig member of Parliament. The Peters became favorites in social and intellectual circles, and their home was noted for its collections of bronzes, prints, and paintings. After the death of Sarah Peter's younger son, she took his widow and three children to Europe (1851–52). She organized the Philadelphia School of Design for Women, promoted an association for the advancement of tailoresses, and materially aided the Quakers in the erection of the Rosina House for Magdalens. On the death of her husband, Feb. 6, 1853, she returned to Cincinnati, where her home became a rendezvous for artists and musicians. She soon brought together a group of women interested in the fine arts with whose assistance she founded a small art museum, for which she collected masterpieces and worthy copies on her frequent European journeys. By 1876, this group had grown into the Woman's Museum Association, which later fostered the Cincinnati Academy of Fine Arts.

As a result of her sympathetic observations in European Catholic countries, especially in 1854 when she met the American prelates who had gone to Rome for the definition of the Immaculate Conception, she developed an interest in Catholicism. In 1855 she was received into the church at Rome by the picturesque Monsignor Bedini. As a Catholic, her interest in magdalens, orphans, and the indigent became more marked, although her early services were given little support by Archbishop Purcell, who in time came to trust her implicitly. In 1857, she brought the Sisters of the Good Shepherd under Mother Mary Ward from Louisville to Cincinnati and later assisted them in establishing houses in Newport, Ky., Cleveland, and Columbus (*Catholic Telegraph*, Aug. 7, 1858, Mar. 12, 1859). She urged successfully that they be given care of a prison exclusively for women such as she had seen in Paris. She secured a colony of Sisters of Mercy from Kinsale, Ireland, who developed into a strong community and during the Civil War rendered able service as nurses under the leadership of nuns who had served with Florence Nightingale in the Crimea. In 1858 she brought out the Franciscan Sisters from Cologne for work among the Germans. To this community she gave her home and much of her substance, founding hospitals in Cincinnati (1859) and Covington, Ky. (1861). During the Civil War,

she joined the Sisters of St. Francis at Pittsburg Landing as a nurse, criticized the inefficiency or corruption of the United States Sanitary Commission, and subsequently, despite bitter criticism from Northern partisans, spent herself in the care of prisoners in Cincinnati. As a result of another trip abroad she induced the Sisters of the Poor from France to join the Cincinnati diocese, where in 1869 they established a refuge for impoverished old people. On a journey to Europe in 1869–70, she was well received by Pius IX and the American bishops at the Vatican Council, who through Purcell were conversant with her charities and her self-sacrificing life. Among her manifold interests she was active to the end; her last efforts were in connection with art exhibits at the Centennial Exhibition. On her death, she was eulogized by Archbishop Purcell and her remains were interred in her mortuary chapel at St. Joseph's Cemetery, Cincinnati.

[Margaret R. King, *Memoirs of the Life of Mrs. Sarah Peter* (2 vols., 1889), a biography by her daughter-in-law, containing copious extracts from her European letters; J. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.*, IV (1892), 544 f.; *Records of the Am. Cath. Hist. Soc.*, Dec. 1923; *N. Y. Freeman's Journal*, Feb. 17, 24, 1877; *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Feb. 6–9, 1877.]

R. J. P.

PETERKIN, GEORGE WILLIAM (Mar. 21, 1841–Sept. 22, 1916), clergyman, first bishop of the Diocese of West Virginia, was born at Clear Spring, Washington County, Md., the son of the Rev. Joshua and Elizabeth Howard (Hanson) Peterkin. During his boyhood he lived in Maryland, New Jersey, and Virginia, and attended private schools, notably the Episcopal High School at Alexandria, Va., where he won high standing in his studies. He attended the University of Virginia in 1858 and 1859, taught for one year, and then began a course of private study in preparation for the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal Church. Upon the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted as a private in the 21st Virginia Regiment of Infantry, serving first under General Lee and later under General Jackson. In June 1862 he received a commission as first lieutenant, was appointed aide-de-camp to Gen. William Nelson Pendleton [*q.v.*], chief of artillery in the Army of Northern Virginia, and served with that army until its surrender in 1865.

He graduated from the Theological Seminary in Virginia in 1868 and was ordained deacon by Bishop Johns on June 24, 1868, and priest by Bishop Whittle on June 25, 1869. He served his diaconate as assistant to his father in St. James' Church, Richmond, Va. His first rectorate was

Peterkin

St. Mark's Parish, Culpeper County, Va., where he labored for four years to rebuild a parish which had been devastated by war. From 1873 to 1878 he was Rector of Memorial Church, Baltimore, Md. In 1878 he was elected the first bishop of the Diocese of West Virginia and was consecrated in St. Matthew's Church, Wheeling, W. Va., on May 30, beginning an episcopate of thirty-eight years. The new diocese, cut off from the mother Diocese of Virginia in 1877, covered about 24,000 square miles of sparsely settled mountainous territory most of which was inaccessible except on horseback over poor roads and trails. The new bishop found fourteen clergy, twenty-five churches, fewer than 1,200 communicants, and a people to whom his church was little known. He was a true pioneer missionary, indefatigably visiting every section of his diocese, making frequent preaching trips on horseback to remote villages in mountain communities, and winning everywhere the loyal affection of his people. An able organizer and administrator, he laid the broad foundations of the present diocese and became in the process an influential leader in the religious life of the state.

He was deeply interested in foreign and domestic missions, serving for twenty-six years as a member of the national Board of Missions. In 1893, shortly after a mission of the Episcopal Church had been established in southern Brazil, he was sent by the Board to direct its development. Much of the success of that missionary district was due to the policies inaugurated and executed during the six years of his supervision. He was called by the presiding bishop to visit Puerto Rico in 1901, and the development of a new missionary enterprise in that field profited by his advice. He was an able preacher and writer and published numerous addresses and pastoral letters. His most important works include *A History and Record of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the Diocese of West Virginia* (1902) and the *Handbook for Members and Friends of the Protestant Episcopal Church* (1908). Until two years before his death, when increasing ill health forced him into seclusion, he was able to maintain an active contact with the work of his church. He was buried in Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond, Va. Peterkin was married on Oct. 29, 1868, to Constance Gardner Lee of Alexandria, Va. She died in 1877 leaving three children. On June 12, 1884, he married Marion McIntosh Stewart of Brook Hill, Henrico County, Va., by whom he had one child.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; R. E. L. Strider, *The Life and Work of George William Peterkin* (copr. 1929); Susan P. Lee, *Memoirs of William Nelson Pendleton, D.D.* (1893); W. A. R. Goodwin, *Hist. of*

Peters

the Theol. Seminary in Va., vol. II (1924); *Wheeling Register*, Sept. 23, 1916.] G. M. B.

PETERS, ABSALOM (Sept. 19, 1793–May 18, 1869), Presbyterian clergyman, editor, author, was born in Wentworth, N. H., the fourth son of Gen. Absalom Peters, a Revolutionary veteran, and his wife Mary (Rogers) Peters. His first American ancestor in the paternal line was Andrew Peters, whose name appears in Boston records as early as 1659, while his mother's family claimed descent from Rev. John Rogers who was burned at Smithfield in 1555. Absalom became a teacher at sixteen and followed this occupation during his own school days and his years at Dartmouth College, where he was graduated in 1816. Soon after his graduation at Princeton Theological Seminary in 1819, he began preaching at the First Congregational Church, Bennington, Vt., and was ordained there by the Troy Presbytery in 1820. His Bennington pastorate continued till Dec. 14, 1825, when he became secretary of the United Missionary Society of New York, an interdenominational agency working mainly in that state. Under his leadership the American Home Missionary Society was established in 1826, with which the New York society was merged. The new organization, likewise interdenominational, was nation-wide in its scope, having a board of trustees representing sixteen different states. During his twelve years as corresponding secretary the income of the society was increased threefold and the number of its missionaries was quadrupled. He traveled about 75,000 miles, largely under difficult frontier conditions, planted many churches, wrote all the society's annual reports, and from 1828 to 1836 edited the *Home Missionary and Pastor's Journal*.

During these years occurred the formation of the Old and New School parties in the Presbyterian Church, leading up to the schism of 1837. Peters was a Calvinist, but of the more liberal, or New England, type and naturally took his place on the New School side. Never seeking controversy, he did not shirk it when it appeared to be his duty, and his skill in debate was an important factor in the defense of Albert Barnes [*q.v.*] before the General Assembly of 1836. It was during this period, also, that the Union Theological Seminary in New York was founded by a group of Presbyterian clergymen and laymen. Peters, who was one of the leading clerical founders, was a member of several important committees and chairman of the one which drew up the constitution. He was also a director of the seminary from its foundation in 1836 to 1842. In 1837 he retired from his secretaryship to engage in literary pursuits. He became editor of the *American Biblical Repository*, a quarterly, in 1838, and in 1841 founded the bi-monthly *American Eclectic*. In 1842 he became financial agent for Union Seminary and the same year was appointed professor extraordinary of homiletics, pastoral theology, and church government.

Relinquishing all his work in New York in 1844, he became pastor of the First Congregational Church in Williamstown, Mass. Though not formally dismissed till 1857, he spent much of his time during the latter years of his pastorate in duties devolving upon him as financial agent for Williams College, of which he was a trustee from 1845 till his death, and the presidency of which he had declined in 1836. From 1856 he lived in New York, edited the *American Journal of Education and College Review*, and did much preaching and writing. Among his published works are: *Sprinkling the only Mode of Baptism and the Scripture Warrant for Infant Baptism* (1848); and *Life and Time, a Birthday Memorial of Seventy Years* (1866). The latter, written in verse, contains notes of much biographical value. He published, also, numerous sermons and other pamphlets, and left in manuscript "Cooperative Christianity; the Kingdom of Christ in Contrast with Denominational Churches," a title suggestive of his position on an important subject. On Oct. 25, 1819, he married Harriet Hinckley Hatch, daughter of Reuben Hatch of Norwich, Vt. Of their seven children, three sons and two daughters survived their parents.

[E. F. and E. B. Peters, *Peters of New England* (1903); G. L. Prentiss, *The Union Theological Sem. in the City of N. Y.; Hist. and Biog. Sketches of its First Fifty Years* (1889); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867); Isaac Jennings, *Memorials of a Century; . . . the Early Hist. of Bennington, Vt., and its First Church* (1869); *N. Y. Tribune*, May 18, 1869.] F. T. P.

PETERS, CHRISTIAN HENRY FREDERICK (Sept. 19, 1813–July 19, 1890), astronomer, was born at Coldenbüttel, Schleswig, the son of Hartwig Peters, a minister. Having studied at the Gymnasium in Flensburg from 1825 to 1832, he matriculated at the University of Berlin, where he studied mathematics and astronomy under Encke. After receiving his doctor's degree in 1836, he went to Göttingen to study under Gauss. From 1838 to 1843 he was engaged in a survey of Mount Etna, as a member of the scientific expedition organized by Sartorius von Waltershausen. He declined an offer of the directorship of the Catania Observatory on account of certain imposed conditions, but accepted the

very important governmental post of director of the trigonometrical survey of Sicily. He was deprived of this position and ordered to leave the country when, in 1848, he sided with the Sicilian revolutionists; but he soon returned to Sicily, where he became naturalized and served as captain of engineers and later as major under Mieroslawski. Catania and Messina were fortified under his direction. After the fall of Palermo in 1849 he fled to France and soon after went to Constantinople. The Sultan planned to send him on a scientific expedition to Syria and Palestine but difficulties arose and eventually, with the beginning of the Crimean War, the plan was abandoned. During his stay here Peters acquired a good working knowledge of Arabic and Turkish, which was of great use to him in his later studies on Ptolemy's *Almagest*.

He came to the United States in 1854 with letters of recommendation from Alexander von Humboldt and obtained a position in the United States Coast Survey. He was stationed for a time at Cambridge, Mass., and at the Dudley Observatory in Albany, N. Y. In 1858 he was appointed director of the observatory at Hamilton College and in 1867, Litchfield Professor of Astronomy and director of the Litchfield Observatory. His scientific interests were wide, his ability and industry, marked. His researches on the sun, begun in Naples in 1845, and carried on until about 1865, blazed the way for further studies. Some of his conclusions were published in "Contributions to the Atmospherology of the Sun," in *Proceedings of the American Association for the Advancement of Science* (vol. IX, 1856). He described how sun spots were apparently divided by bridges of luminous gas, and investigated as far as his observational material permitted the motion of sun spots on the solar disk. After his death *Heliographic Positions of Sun-Spots, Observed at Hamilton College from 1860 to 1870* (1907), edited by E. B. Frost, was published. The task which he set himself in 1860, to prepare charts of the Zodiac, to give the positions of all stars in this belt visible in his 13-inch telescope, involved over 100,000 observations. Begun at a time when photography had not yet come into its own, these charts were to be a record of the sky at that time which could be compared, for the detection of changes, with similar charts made by future astronomers. The immediate result, however, was the discovery of forty-eight new asteroids—at that time a relatively large addition to the list of these bodies. He is said to have found recreation in computing their orbits. He also discovered two comets, one in 1846 while he was at Naples and one in

Peters

1857 when he was at Albany (*Monthly Notices of the Royal-Astronomical Society*, vol. VII, 1847; *Astronomical Journal*, Aug. 28, 1857). In 1874 he was sent as chief of the United States expedition to New Zealand to observe the transit of Venus. Observations were seriously hampered by clouds but that of the first internal contact with the sun's disk was successful. This transit was observed by many parties in different places, in the attempt to determine a more accurate value of the sun's distance. In 1869 he organized an expedition to observe the solar eclipse at Des Moines.

Peters also did a great deal of valuable work in the critical discussion and comparison of catalogues of star positions. About 1876 he started his attempt to prepare a more trustworthy edition of the star catalogue in the seventh and eighth books of Ptolemy's *Almagest*. This is the oldest catalogue containing positions of sufficient accuracy to be useful in comparison with modern catalogues for the detection of changes. The original is lost and the catalogue survives in a series of copyings and translations. The oldest copy extant was made several centuries after Ptolemy's time. Peters' task, therefore, was to collate as many of the copies as possible, Greek, Arabic, and Latin, decide what errors had been introduced, identify the stars, and try to recover the positions given in the original. He was well qualified for this task, for he was fluent in most of the European languages and had ample knowledge of Greek, Latin, Hebrew, Arabic, Persian, and Turkish. He had, also, high mathematical ability both in theory and computation. His industry and quick perception enabled him to give the problem the scrupulous study which it required. The examination of manuscripts took him to Vienna, Venice, Florence, Rome, and Paris. He was fortunate in having the collaboration of Edward B. Knobel who, equally interested in the problem, collated the British manuscripts, and, after Peters' death, edited the notes and catalogue (*Ptolemy's Catalogue of Stars; a Revision of the Almagest*, 1915). Among other records of Peters' work may be mentioned *Celestial Charts ... Made at the Litchfield Observatory of Hamilton College* (1882) and "Corrigenda in Various Star Catalogues," in *Memoirs of the National Academy of Sciences* (vol. III, pt. 2, 1886). He was a member of the National Academy of Sciences and a foreign associate of the Royal Astronomical Society. On his visit to Paris in 1887 to attend the convention to inaugurate the international photographic survey of the sky, the decoration of the Legion of Honor was conferred on him by the French government.

He was a man of the highest integrity and honor, courteous and kind and rich in friends.

[The *Am. Jour. Sci.*, the *Sidereal Messenger*, and Hamilton College bulletins use the English form of Peters' name, while the German form is frequently used elsewhere. For biographical data see J. G. Porter in *Sidereal Messenger*, Dec. 1890; A. Krueger, in *Astronomische Nachrichten*, Aug. 1890, also in *Bulletin Astronomique*, 1890; *Monthly Notices Royal Astronomical Society*, Feb. 1891; *Observatory*, Sept. 1890; *Christian Heinrich Friedrich Peters, 1813–1890: In Memoriam* (1890). For references to Peters' many articles in astronomical journals, see Royal Soc. of London, *Cat. of Scientific Papers*, vol. IV (1870), vol. X (1894).] R. S. D.

PETERS, EDWARD DYER (June 1, 1849–Feb. 17, 1917), mining and metallurgical engineer, son of Henry Hunter and Susan Barker (Thaxter) Peters and a first cousin of John Punnett Peters [*q.v.*], was born in Dorchester, Mass., a descendant of Andrew Peters who was in Massachusetts as early as 1659. Upon his mother's side he was descended from several old Massachusetts families. His mother died soon after his birth and his father married a second time in 1854. Edward received his early education in Massachusetts schools and at the Episcopal School for Boys, Cheshire, Conn. Near the latter was an old tin mine, in exploring which he spent many Saturday afternoons. In 1865 his family went abroad to remain for several years and his technical education was obtained at the Royal School of Mines at Freiberg, Saxony, from which he graduated in 1869. Classroom instruction was supplemented by actual work in nearby mines and smelting works, and during vacation trips he visited mines and metallurgical plants, gathering valuable data on prevailing practices. The fall of 1869 found him in Colorado started on his active career, first as millman and assayer, then as superintendent and metallurgist at the Caribou silver mine. In 1872 he was appointed territorial assayer for southern Colorado, the local press congratulating the district upon obtaining the services of "so thorough and correct a metallurgist." During 1872–74 he designed, built, and successfully operated the Mount Lincoln smelting works.

When, in 1874, mining went into a decline, Peters returned East and, giving up hope of following his profession, entered the Harvard Medical School, graduating in 1877 at the head of a class of sixty-two members. He practised medicine in Dorchester, Mass., from 1877 until 1880, when he returned to mining. In the years immediately following he was associated with and originated some of the largest American copper and nickel smelting plants, including those of the Orford Nickel & Copper Company, Bergen Point, N. J., the Parrott Silver & Copper Company, Butte, Mont., and the Canadian Copper Company, Sudbury, Ont., where he "blew in" the first blast furnace in December 1888 for the production of nickel-copper matte. In 1892 he was called to inspect the Mount Lyell mine, a vast pyritic ore-body carrying some copper and gold, in a most inaccessible part of Tasmania. In Melbourne and other cities en route he was feted, made an honorary member of the principal clubs, and otherwise treated as a celebrity. The following year the results of his survey were published in *Report on the Property of the Mount Lyell Mining and Railway Company, Limited.* In 1893 and 1894, in the interests of the Mount Lyell company, he visited the Rio Tinto mines in Spain, the Mansfeld mines in Germany, and various mines in the western United States. Then for several years he was engaged in consulting work in connection with numerous mining enterprises in Mexico and the United States.

He lectured at Columbia School of Mines in 1901 and at Harvard in 1904. In the latter year he was appointed professor of metallurgy at Harvard and in 1909, Gordon McKay Professor of Metallurgy. During his last few years he held a professorship in the combined mining departments of Harvard and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. As an author he made important contributions to technical literature, his most valuable work being *Modern American Methods of Copper Smelting* (1887), an authentic and comprehensive treatise which ran through fifteen editions, the last of which, 1895, bore the title *Modern Copper Smelting*. This was replaced by a new book, *The Practice of Copper Smelting* (1911). His other notable work was *The Principles of Copper Smelting* (1907). Peters was one of the commission to make the annual assay (1910) of the coin of the United States at the mint in Philadelphia.

On Sept. 28, 1881, he married his cousin, Anna Quincy Cushing; they had no children. He was something of a musician and in 'cello playing he found relaxation and satisfaction. A farm at Shirley, Mass., purchased in 1914, allowed him to indulge in another hobby—poultry raising. He died in Dorchester, Mass.

[E. F. and E. B. Peters, *Peters of New England* (1903); E. B. Peters, *Edward Dyer Peters, 1849–1917* (1918); *Bull. Am. Inst. Mining Engineers*, Aug. 1918; H. L. Smyth, in *Harvard Alumni Bull.*, Mar. 8, 1917; *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17.] B. A. R.

PETERS, JOHN ANDREW (Oct. 9, 1822–Apr. 2, 1904), was born in Ellsworth, Me., the son of Andrew and Sally (Jordan) Peters. His father was a merchant and shipbuilder and one of the most prominent men of Ellsworth. The

boy was educated at Gorham Academy and Yale College, where he graduated in 1842 with an oration on "The Profession of Politics." He then studied law at the Harvard Law School and in the office of Thomas Robinson of Ellsworth, and he was admitted to the bar in Ellsworth in 1844. Moving to Bangor in that year he began the practice of law in the office of Joshua W. Hathaway, whose partner he became. Later he entered into partnership with Franklin Augustus Wilson. On Sept. 2, 1846, he was married to Mary Ann Hathaway, the daughter of his partner, who died the following year, leaving a son who died in infancy. On Sept. 23, 1857, he was married to Fannie E. Roberts, the daughter of Amos M. Roberts of Bangor. They had two daughters.

His first political offices were those of state senator, 1862–63, and representative in 1864. In 1864 he became state attorney-general and served in that capacity until his election to Congress. Reëlected twice he remained in Congress from 1867 to 1873, working on the committee of patents and public expenditures, the committee on the judiciary, and the joint committee on the congressional library. He was much interested in national provision for the defense of the northeastern frontier and introduced bills for that purpose. As a friend of Blaine, then speaker, he several times sponsored measures that Blaine wished passed. Having refused further election to Congress he returned to Maine to be made at once, 1873, associate justice of the supreme judicial court of the state, and he was again chosen when his term expired in 1880. Three years later, 1883, he was elevated by Gov. Frederick Robie to the position of chief justice. His knowledge of the law, remarkable even when he began the practice of his profession, grew to be encyclopedic, and his decisions as chief justice were marked by lucidity and liberality. Because of their concise and untraditional nature they were much quoted in other states. His impartiality and fairness on the bench were famous, as were his imperturbable dignity and never-failing courtesy. A keen wit and overflowing humor, said to have been inherited from his mother, made him a most effective speaker both in campaigns and in the court room. As an after dinner speaker, he was thought to have no equal in his state. In 1900 his failing health caused his withdrawal from active public service. The remainder of his life was spent in Bangor, where he died.

[*Biog. Record of the Class of 1842 of Yale College* (1878); *Obit. Record of Grads. of Yale Univ.*, 1904; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Hist. of Penobscot County, Me.* (1882); E. F. and E. B. Peters, *Peters of New England* (1903); T. F. Jordan, *The Jordan Memorial* (1882); *The Peters' Banquet, Tendered the Hon. John A. Peters . . . 1900* (1900); *Daily Kennebec Jour.* (Augusta), Apr. 4, 1904; J. W. Porter, "Wayfarer Papers," vol. I, a collection of clippings from Bangor newspapers in Lib. of Me. Hist. Soc.] M. E. L.

Peters

PETERS, JOHN CHARLES (July 6, 1819–Oct. 21, 1893), physician, medical writer, was born in New York City. Apparently he was a studious youth, brought up in a comfortable environment. His medical studies were pursued in Berlin, Vienna, and Leipzig. On his return from Europe he was examined by the Comitia Minora of the Medical Society of the County of New York in 1842 and licensed to practise medicine. His associations were such that he soon acquired a large private practice among the élite of New York. In 1844, with a number of others, he founded the New York Pathological Society; later he was one of the founders of the Medical Library and Journal Society, of which he wrote a brief history (see *Detroit Review of Medicine and Pharmacy*, November 1875). This organization in its turn contributed much to the greatness of the New York Academy of Medicine and its library. He took an early interest in homeopathy and ere long identified himself with that school of medicine and proceeded forthwith to make rich contributions to its literature. Many of these, issued between 1853 and 1856 from the press of William Radde, were treatises based on T. J. Rückert's *Klinische Erfahrungen in der Homöopathie.* They included discussions of headaches, apoplexy, diseases of women, diseases of the eye, and nervous and mental disorders. Peters was the author of *The Science and Art or the Principles and Practice of Medicine* (1858–59), of which only four parts, of ninety-six pages each, were issued. He also wrote "A Review of Some of the Late Reforms in Pathology and Therapeutics" (*North American Journal of Homœopathy*, February 1860), reprinted separately the same year with an appendix on the illnesses of Washington Irving; "Elements of a New Materia Medica and Therapeutics, Based upon an Entirely New Collection of Drug-provings and Clinical Experience," in collaboration with E. E. Marcy and Otto Füllgraff, published as an appendix to the *North American Journal of Homœopathy*, 1859–60, and never finished. From 1855 to 1861 Peters was a joint editor of the *North American Journal of Homœopathy.*

In 1861 the medical world was astonished by the publication in the issue for Aug. 17 of the *American Medical Times*, then the most influential medical journal in the United States, of Peters' renunciation of homeopathy. Although the article was simply a declaration of independence to indicate the writer's belief that no

single system of treatment could be entirely adequate in practice, it brought upon Peters most severe criticisms from both sides. Many narrow-minded views were expressed by critics and the initial effect upon Peters was decided loss of prestige and practice, both of which, however, were regained within a few years. In his new environment he soon became an important factor. He was president of the New York County Medical Society, 1866–67, and continued his literary activity, devoting himself especially to investigation of infectious diseases, especially cholera and yellow fever. In collaboration with Ely McClellan he contributed "A History of the Travels of Asiatic Cholera" to *The Cholera Epidemic of 1873 in the United States* (1875), published by the United States Surgeon General's Office. He was a firm believer in the filth origin of the acute infections and was therefore prepared to accept very early the theory of the bacterial origin of disease.

Peters married, May 16, 1849, Georgina, daughter of Andrew Snelling. He died at Williston, L. I.

[T. L. Bradford, "Biographies of Homœopathic Physicians" (unpublished collection), in Library of Hahnemann Medic. Coll., Phila.; T. L. Bradford, *Homœopathic Bibliog.* (1892); Abraham Jacobi, in *Medic. Record* (N. Y.), Jan. 26, 1907; *Am. Physician*, July 1907; *U. S. Medic. Investigator*, Dec. 15, 1877; *Medic. and Surgic. Reporter*, Aug. 24, 1861; *Medic. Record* (N. Y.), Oct. 28, 1893; *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 24, 1893.]

C. B—t.

PETERS, JOHN PUNNETT (Dec. 16, 1852–Nov. 10, 1921), Episcopal clergyman, archeologist, was born in New York City the second son of the Rev. Thomas McClure Peters and Alice Clarissa (Richmond) Peters, and a lineal descendant of Andrew Peters, who came to America from Devonshire, England, appearing in Boston records as early as 1659, and became the first treasurer of the town of Andover, Mass. John attended church schools in New York until he was thirteen years old, and though compelled to abandon school for the next three years, occupied his time so well in private reading, with some aid from tutors, that he entered Yale University at the age of sixteen. He was a member of the first Yale football team, and a leader in intercollegiate football contests. After his graduation in 1873 he was a student in the Yale Divinity School, 1873–75, and in the Yale Graduate School, 1874–76, receiving the degree of Ph.D. in the latter year. From 1876 to 1879 he was a tutor in Yale College. In July 1876 he was ordained a deacon in the Protestant Episcopal Church, and in 1877, a priest. From 1879 to 1883 he was in Germany, studying Semitic languages at the University of Berlin, 1879–81; acting as

minister-in-charge and then as rector of St. John's (American) Church, Dresden, 1881–82; and studying at the University of Leipzig, 1882–83. While in Dresden he translated Wilhelm Müller's *Politische Geschichte der neuesten Zeit, 1816–1875* (1875), and to his translation, published in 1882 under the title, *A Political History of Recent Times*, he added an appendix which continued the history to the date of publication. On his return to New York he took charge, for ten months, during his father's absence, of St. Michael's Church, of which his father was rector. In 1884 he became professor of the Old Testament language and literature in the Episcopal Divinity School in Philadelphia, and in 1886, professor of Hebrew in the University of Pennsylvania, holding the positions concurrently.

In 1883 he had obtained from Catharine Lorillard Wolfe [*q.v.*] a gift of $5,000 to finance an expedition of archeological reconnaissance in Babylonia. Its success, under the leadership of William Hayes Ward [*q.v.*], encouraged Peters to interest certain Philadelphians in raising a fund for archeological excavation in Babylonia under the auspices of the University of Pennsylvania. For two seasons, 1888–90, the mound of Nuffar, the site of the ancient Nippur, was explored under his personal leadership, and although after 1890 the field work was carried on by John Henry Haynes [*q.v.*], Peters remained scientific director until 1895. The fruit of his personal labors in this field was published in his *Nippur* (2 vols., 1897).

In 1891 he was made assistant rector of St. Michael's Church, New York, and resigned his post at the Philadelphia Divinity School, although he retained his professorship in the University of Pennsylvania until 1893. In that year, upon his father's death, he became rector of St. Michael's Church. When he resigned the position in 1919, he, his father, and his maternal grandfather, the Rev. William Richmond [*q.v.*], had held the position in unbroken succession for ninety-nine years. During his long service as rector of St. Michael's, Peters exerted a strong influence in behalf of missionary enterprise and a broader outlook in the Episcopal Church, and was a force in promoting social service and laboring for clean politics in the city and state of New York. In 1904, as vice-president of the Riverside and Morningside Heights Association, he began a long struggle against commercialized vice. He was an outstanding leader in the effort to bring about a better understanding between capital and labor. Some of the papers which this endeavor called forth from his pen were published in 1902 under the title, *Labor and Capi-*

tal. On the centenary of St. Michael's Church in 1907 he published a history of the parish entitled, *The Annals of St. Michael's.*

Through all his religious and social activities, Peters pursued his Biblical and Oriental studies, the results of which were embodied in the following books: *The Old Testament and the New Scholarship* (1901); *Early Hebrew Story* (1904); *Religion of the Hebrews* (1914); *The Psalms as Liturgies* (1922), and *Bible and Spade* (1922). In collaboration with a German scholar, Hermann Thiersch, he published *Painted Tombs in the Necropolis of Marissa* (1905), a description of discoveries the two had made while traveling in Palestine in 1902. In addition to these books Peters was a collaborator in *The Bible as Literature* (1896), *The Universal Anthology* (33 vols., 1899), and *The Historians' History of the World* (25 vols., 1905). After retiring from the rectorship of St. Michael's, he traveled for a year, then became professor of New Testament exegesis in the University of the South at Sewanee, Tenn., but in the autumn of 1921 his heart failed and he died. On Aug. 13, 1881, he had married Gabriella Brooke Forman, daughter of Thomas Marsh Forman of Savannah and Helen (Brooke) Forman of Virginia. Six of his seven children survived him. He was a combination of scholar and citizen of a type that is rapidly becoming extinct in these days of specialization. He was quiet in manner, but displayed originality and determination in the way in which he surmounted obstacles, both in his civic work and in his enterprises as an explorer. In his books he always had a fresh point of view to present; his writing was never an echo of the work of other men.

[E. F. and E. B. Peters, *Peters of New England* (1903); *Yale Univ. Obit. Record*, 1922; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *Churchman*, Nov. 19, 1921; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 11, 1921.] G. A. B—n.

PETERS, MADISON CLINTON (Nov. 6, 1859–Oct. 12, 1918), clergyman, lecturer, and author, son of Morgan and Maria (Kemmerer) Peters, was born in Lehigh County, Pa. He was of German ancestry, a descendant of Caspar Peter who came to Philadelphia in 1731. His education was obtained under difficulties; he was unable to complete a college course, but studied at Muhlenberg College and at Franklin and Marshall College (1877–78). After graduating from Heidelberg Theological Seminary, Tiffin, Ohio, he was ordained in 1880 to the ministry of the Reformed Church, and during the next four years held a pastorate in Indiana and was minister to the Presbyterian Church at Ottawa, Ill. When only twenty-four years old he was called to the pastorate of the "First Presbyterian Church in the Northern Liberties," less than a mile north of what is now the shopping district of Philadelphia. For five years, as long as he remained, the church building was filled to its capacity every Sunday. In 1890 he left a prosperous church of nearly 500 members at Philadelphia to assume the pastorate of Bloomingdale Reformed Church in New York, where his abilities as a public speaker continued to attract much attention. Having become convinced that infant baptism is unscriptural, in 1900 Peters left the Reformed Church and accepted the pastorate of Sumner Avenue Baptist Church in Brooklyn. The following year he published a small book, *Why I Became a Baptist.* From 1904 to 1905 he served Immanuel Baptist Church in Baltimore, returning then to New York as pastor of the Baptist Church of the Epiphany, on Madison Avenue at Sixty-fourth Street. The organization was compelled to sell its property late in 1906, and within a brief period it went out of existence, after a history of nearly 120 years. Feeling the constraint of what seemed to him unnecessary sectarian intolerance, Peters soon transferred his membership from the Baptist to the Presbyterian Church, though without accepting a regular pastorate, and continued a Presbyterian until his death. For several years previous to 1907 he had been lecturing to large audiences and holding popular services in theaters and public halls. He now devoted himself to these activities, and to preparing syndicated newspaper articles and writing books. Calling himself "the people's preacher," apparently because of a feeling that many of the city churches were failing to reach the masses, he developed through these mediums a considerable influence among the unorganized religious-minded people of America. Some of his books attained a gratifying circulation, and his manuscripts continued to be welcomed by publishers until his death in his fifty-ninth year, a victim of the war-time influenza epidemic.

Of the twenty-five or more volumes issued by Peters, seventeen appeared during the last eighteen years of his life. Among these were *The Birds of the Bible* (1901); *The Man Who Wins* (1905); *Will the Coming Man Marry?* (1905), a discussion of problems of home and marriage; *After Death What?* (1908); *Sermons That Won the Masses* (1908); *How to Make Things Go* (1909); *Abraham Lincoln's Religion* (1909); *Seven Secrets of Success* (1916); and *Americans for America* (1916). Several of his books were written in behalf of the Jews, such as *Justice to the Jew* (1899); *The Jew as a Patriot* (1902); *The Jews in America* (1905); *Haym Salomon*

(1911); and *The Jews Who Stood by Washington* (1915). In 1917, the year before his death, he published *All for America* and *The Masons as Makers of America*; he had already published, in 1913, *The Mission of Masonry*. By his contemporaries he was known as a vigorous thinker, a popular and, at times, brilliant preacher, and a sincere, friendly man. In 1890 he married Sara H. Hart, by whom he had a son and two daughters.

[E. T. Corwin, *A Manual of the Reformed Church in America* (1902); Alfred Nevin, *Hist. of the Presbytery of Phila. and of Phila. Central* (1888); W. P. White and W. H. Scott, *The Presbyterian Church in Phila.* (1895); *Minutes of the Southern N. Y. Baptist Asso.* for 1906 and 1907; *Proc. and Addresses. Pa.-German Soc. of Phila.*, vol. XXX (1924); *Examiner*, Aug. 3, 1905; *Watchman-Examiner*, Oct. 17, 1918; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 13, 1918; *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; biog. sketch in preface to Peters' *Why I Became a Baptist* (1901).] P. P. F.

PETERS, PHILLIS WHEATLEY [See WHEATLEY, PHILLIS, *c.* 1754–1784].

PETERS, RICHARD (*c.* 1704–July 10, 1776), clergyman, provincial secretary and councilor, was born in Liverpool, England, the second son of Ralph Peters, a barrister, and Esther Preeson. Richard finished the academic course at Westminster School before he was fifteen. While there he entered into a clandestine marriage with a servant maid. His parents hearing of it thereupon removed him to Leyden to study for three years. On returning to England he spent five years, against his will, at the Inner Temple studying law. A persistent desire to take orders finally conquered him and he became a deacon in the Church of England (1730) and a priest (1731), and in the latter year matriculated at Wadham College, Oxford. But criticism of his early marriage and the discovery that his second marriage, to a Miss Stanley, was bigamous, caused him so much unhappiness that about 1735 he decided to emigrate to Philadelphia. There he became assistant to the Rev. Archibald Cummings at Christ Church (1736) and is said to have "wriggled himself into the affections of the multitudes, who have generally been bred dissenters" (Keith, *post*, p. 236). An open quarrel with Cummings soon led to his withdrawal from the post. Two discourses, *The Two Last Sermons Preached at Christ's-church in Philadelphia, July 3, 1737* (1737), were a defense against Cummings' attacks upon his character and against charges that he was a papist.

Obliged to seek secular employment, Peters accepted in 1737 an appointment as secretary of the provincial land office which he held until 1760. He was also admitted to the Philadelphia bar. When Cummings died (1741), Peters' friends pressed his name as successor, but the conservatives in the congregation, fearing a rector with such strong proprietary sympathies, blocked his appointment. On Feb. 14, 1742/43, he was appointed provincial secretary and private secretary for the proprietaries, and clerk of the council, and on May 19, 1749, provincial councilor. As provincial secretary he superintended Indian affairs and went on frequent missions to the Indians, including the Albany Congress (1754) and the conference at Fort Stanwix (1768). He was suspicious of the Quaker hegemony in Pennsylvania, repeatedly wrote of "Quaker plots" to injure the proprietors with the King, and diligently endeavored to collect quit rents and to prosecute Scotch-Irish and German squatters. He retired as secretary and clerk of the council early in January 1762 with a comfortable fortune acquired from the Indian trade, but remained provincial councilor until 1776.

In 1762 Peters returned to the ministry, as rector of Christ and St. Peter's churches, though not actually receiving his license until he visited England in 1764–65. He was assiduous in building up the churches spiritually and numerically and toward their financial needs contributed generously from his own purse. For a zealous High-churchman he was exceedingly tolerant, especially in later life. Toward the Quakers, whom he earlier viewed with distrust, he later developed a warm feeling, and he incurred the displeasure of the Archbishop of Canterbury for opening his churches in 1763 to George Whitefield, whose teachings he had actively opposed at an earlier time. Failing health compelled him to resign his rectorship on Sept. 23, 1775. Sincerely pious without ostentation, Peters was a polished and erudite scholar and a sound thinker, though sometimes given to quixotic views. He firmly believed that a thorough classical education was the best means of remedying existing social evils. Oxford conferred on him the degree of D.D. (1770). Loyal to the proprietaries to the last, he could not sanction separation from the mother country, but he accepted the change with a spirit of resignation. He was one of the first trustees of the Philadelphia Academy which later grew into the College of Philadelphia and from 1756 to 1764 was president of the board of trustees. He helped to organize the Library Company of Philadelphia and the Pennsylvania Hospital. Among his publications are *A Sermon on Education* (1751) and *A Sermon Preached in the New Lutheran Church of Zion, in the City of Philadelphia, 1769* (1769).

[The best account of Peters' life, though hardly adequate, is printed in C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883). See also the Peters Papers, 12 vols., and Letter Books of Richard Peters, 1737–1750, in the library of the Hist. Soc. of Pa., Philadelphia;

N. P. Black, *Richard Peters: His Ancestors and Descendants, 1810–1899* (1904); C. P. B. Jefferys, "The Provincial and Revolutionary Hist. of St. Peter's Ch., Phila., 1753–83," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Jan. 1924; W. S. Perry, *The Hist. of the Am. Episc. Ch.* (1885), vol. I; *Pa. Archives*, 1 ser. II–IV (1853); *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pa.*, vols. IV–X (1851–52); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1886, July 1899, Oct. 1905, Apr., Oct. 1907, Oct. 1914.]

J. H. P—g.

PETERS, RICHARD (June 22, 1744–Aug. 22, 1828), lawyer, Revolutionary patriot, judge, farmer, son of William Peters and his second wife, Mary Breintnall, was born at "Belmont," the family home, in Philadelphia. His father, an elder brother of the Rev. Richard Peters [*q.v.*], was a lawyer, was born in England, and came to Pennsylvania some time prior to 1739. He was register of admiralty (1744–71) and judge of the court of common pleas, quarter sessions and orphans court. In his youth Richard was greatly influenced by his uncle from whom he acquired a thorough knowledge of the classics and of whom he later wrote: "I was his adopted son and constant companion. With no man . . . have I ever enjoyed more pleasure, or solid instruction, or delight" (Octavius Pickering and C. W. Upham, *The Life of Timothy Pickering*, IV, 1873, p. 205). At his uncle's home he met Washington, George Whitefield, and other prominent men. He attended the Philadelphia Academy and graduated from the College of Philadelphia, now the University of Pennsylvania, in 1761. Ambitious to follow the profession of his father, he then studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1763, and soon acquired a successful practice. He was a commissioner to the Indian conference at Fort Stanwix (1768) and from 1771 to 1776 was register of admiralty.

Although previously associated with the proprietaries, at the outbreak of the Revolution Peters aligned himself with the Whigs and in May 1775 was chosen captain of militia. His military career, however, was short-lived. On June 13, 1776, Congress elected him secretary of the board of war of which he became a full-fledged member on Nov. 27, 1777. Much of the drudgery of the board's work fell upon him and after the summer of 1780 he seems to have managed the war office alone (*The Life of Timothy Pickering*, I, 1867, pp. 216, 229). He was particularly diligent in exposing the peculations of Benedict Arnold and in the latter part of the war in raising money and provisions for the army. He resigned from the board in December 1781 when a single-headed department of war was inaugurated. On Nov. 12, 1782, he was elected to Congress for one year. In 1785 he traveled in Europe, and while in England was instrumental in obtaining the ordination of three bishops for the Episcopal Church in America. He was a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly (1787–90), serving as speaker the last two years, and of the state Senate (1791–92), serving as speaker there also. When the new federal government was organized he was tendered the appointment of comptroller of treasury but declined the post.

On Apr. 11, 1792, Peters was commissioned judge of the United States district court of Pennsylvania. He held this office for the remainder of his life. In the controversy between the federal and state judiciaries the former received his ardent support and in the sphere of admiralty law his decisions have served to distinguish between the judicial and political authorities of the government. Justice Joseph Story later declared himself indebted to Peters "for his rich contributions to the maritime jurisprudence of our country" (W. W. Story, *Life and Letters of Joseph Story*, 1851, I, p. 540). His opinion (*United States* vs. *Worrall*, April 1798) that there was a common law of the United States from which the federal courts acquired a jurisdiction over crimes in addition to that bestowed by federal statute was the basis for prosecutions for libel against the federal government by the Federalists prior to the passage of the sedition law (1798). He published *Admiralty Decisions in the District Court of the United States for the Pennsylvania District, 1780–1807* (1807).

Peters was also a practical farmer. The "Memoirs" of the Philadelphia society for the promotion of agriculture, of which he was the first president, contain more than one hundred papers by him on the subject of agriculture. On his estate he experimented with new agricultural methods, with different breeds of sheep and cattle, with dairy products, and continually exchanged ideas with Washington and his other farmer friends. His *Agricultural Enquiries on Plaister of Paris* (1797) exercised a wide influence in introducing the culture of clover and other grasses. *A Discourse on Agriculture; its Antiquity* (1816), an exposition of agricultural development from earliest times, stresses the need for scientific farming, urges the use of plaster of Paris and other fertilizers, the growth of clover, scientific drainage, premiums for excellence in production, and a state-planned system of roads and canals to give a "more elastic spring" to agriculture. Peters was a brilliant conversationalist, noted for his witticisms, and beloved by his friends for his kindliness and sympathetic feeling. Both in public and private matters he was punctual, painstaking, and patient. His estate, "Belmont," inherited from his father, and standing high on the west bank of the Schuylkill,

was the scene of frequent visits by his large circle of prominent friends. From 1788 to 1791 he was a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania. His wife was Sarah Robinson, whom he married in August 1776 and by whom he had six children. Richard Peters, 1810–1889 [*q.v.*], was a grandson.

Peters' son Richard (Aug. 4, 1779–May 2, 1848) succeeded Henry Wheaton as reporter for the United States Supreme Court and compiled the *Reports of Cases in the Supreme Court of the United States, 1828 to 1842* (16 vols., 1828–42). His other published works include: *Reports of Cases in the Circuit Court of the United States for the Third Circuit . . . District of New Jersey, 1803 to 1818, and in the District of Pennsylvania, 1815 to 1818* (1819); *Reports of Cases . . . in the Circuit Court of the United States, for the Third Circuit . . . from the Manuscripts of . . . Bushrod Washington* (4 vols., 1826–29); *Condensed Reports of Cases in the Supreme Court of the United States . . . from its Organization to the Commencement of Peters's Reports* (6 vols., 1830–34); *The Public Statutes at Large of the United States . . . 1789 to Mar. 3, 1845* (1848); and *A Practical Treatise on the Criminal Law* (3 vols., 1847), an edition of the work of Joseph Chitty.

[See: Samuel Breck, *Address Delivered . . . on the Death . . . the Hon. Richard Peters* (1828), reprinted in *Reg. of Pa.*, Nov. 1, 1828; N. P. Black, *Richard Peters: His Ancestors and Descendants, 1810–1889* (1904); A. J. Dallas, *Reports of Cases Ruled and Adjudged in the Several Courts of the U. S.* (4 vols., 1790–1807); J. W. Stinson, "Opinions of Richard Peters (1781–1817)," *Univ. of Pa. Law Rev.*, Mar. 1922; H. D. Eberlein and H. M. Lippincott, *The Colonial Homes of Phila.* (1912); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), vol. I; *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pa.*, vols. X–XVI (1852–53); *Pa. Archives*, 1 ser. V–XII (1853–56); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1899, July 1916, Oct. 1920; and *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser*, Aug. 23, 25, 1828. There are 12 volumes of Peters Papers in the library of the Pa. Hist. Soc. at Philadelphia.] J. H. P—g.

PETERS, RICHARD (Nov. 10, 1810–Feb. 6, 1889), civil engineer, railroad superintendent, agriculturist and financier, was born in Germantown, Pa., of English-Irish and Scotch-Irish ancestry. His parents were Ralph and Catherine (Conyngham) Peters; his paternal grandfather was Richard Peters, 1744–1828 [*q.v.*], Revolutionary leader and federal district judge. His formal education began at the age of five and continued until his family, after financial reverses, moved first to Wilkes-Barre (1821) and then to Bradford County (1823 or 24), where Richard worked on a farm and led an outdoor life. With a few dollars which he had made in the maple-sugar business he went to Philadelphia, where for eighteen months he studied mathematics, drawing, and writing, to prepare himself for work in the office of William Strickland [*q.v.*], the architect; here he spent six months. Being predisposed to a more active life, and, according to his own account, unfitted for architecture, he assisted in the construction of the Delaware Breakwater, and then for a short time became an assistant engineer in the location of the Camden & Amboy Railroad. An old friend, J. Edgar Thomson [*q.v.*], the chief engineer of the newly organized Georgia railroad, made him an assistant engineer. Peters went to Georgia in 1835, having landed at Charleston and continued his journey over the new Charleston & Hamburg Railroad. He was so successful in surveying the Georgia road, carrying on his work as far as Madison, that two years later he was made superintendent. He immediately became intensely interested in this road, and showed his faith in its future by investing his savings in it. He gave full sway to his inventive genius by devising a spark arrester, and he arranged for running trains in the night by improvising sleeping quarters in the coaches and constructing a headlight on the locomotive by burning pine knots on a sand bed, constructed in front of the smokestack.

On the completion of the Georgia Railroad to Marthasville (1846), a name which he soon changed to Atlanta, he resigned the superintendency. In the meantime (1844), he had set up a stage line from Madison, Ga., to Montgomery, Ala., a business which he continued until the competition of the Atlanta & West Point Railroad, completed a few years later, led him to transfer his stages to a route from Montgomery to Mobile. He continued the latter route until the outbreak of the Civil War. His interest in promoting transportation facilities westward was shown further by his election in 1860 to the presidency of the Georgia Western Railroad (Phillips, *post*, pp. 370–72), and after the Civil War by his directorship of the Atlanta & West Point Railroad. Moving to Atlanta soon after the completion of the railroad to that point, he developed an unbounded faith in that growing railway center and he continued as one of its greatest promoters until his death. Here in 1856 he set up the largest flour mill south of Richmond, and for a source of wood supply he bought 400 acres of land, which later became the heart of Atlanta and greatly enhanced his fortune. In 1847 he had bought 1,500 acres of land in Gordon County and with slave labor developed it into a model plantation. Here he experimented with the best strains of live stock and introduced new plant crops to the South. He bought from the Ural Mountains Angora goats, and he brought to the South some of the finest breeds of horses

and cattle; he promoted the raising of sorghum in the South, and reëstablished silk culture. He promoted these interests by occasionally contributing articles to various magazines.

In politics he was a conservative Whig, who opposed secession but loyally accepted the new order when Georgia seceded. During the war he responded to all calls for aid, and at the same time greatly increased his wealth by organizing a blockade-running company. When Sherman burned Atlanta he fled to Augusta, but he was among the first to return and help rebuild the city when connections were reopened. He worked for the removal of the capital from Milledgeville to Atlanta in 1868, and three years later he was a chief promoter in the construction of eleven miles of street railway, becoming president of the company the following year. In 1870 he became one of the lessees and directors of the Western & Atlantic Railway, running from Atlanta to Chattanooga. Though he had no political ambitions, he became a member of the city council soon after the war, and in the early eighties he was elected a county commissioner.

With all his wealth, estimated at over a million dollars, and with his varied interests, Peters found time to be extremely kind and considerate in all his business and social dealings. He was an Episcopalian, and, after the Civil War, a Democrat. He had a robust physique and handsome features. On Feb. 18, 1848, he married Mary Jane Thompson of Atlanta, and to them were born nine children, three daughters and six sons. Seven survived him on his death in Atlanta.

[*Atlanta Constitution*, Feb. 6, 1889; W. J. Northen, ed., *Men of Mark in Georgia* (1911), III, 495–97; A. D. Candler and C. A. Evans, eds., *Georgia* (1906), III, 87–89; U. B. Phillips, *A Hist. of Transportation in the Eastern Cotton Belt to 1860* (1908); N. P. Black, *Richard Peters. His Ancestors and Descendants, 1810–1899* (1904); H. W. Grady, *Forty Years All Told Spent in Live Stock Experiments in Ga.: Richard Peters' Experiments in Live Stock Farming* (n.d.), and article in *Atlanta Constitution*, Oct. 12, 1884.] E.M.C.

PETERS, SAMUEL ANDREW (Nov. 20, 1735–Apr. 19, 1826), Anglican clergyman, Loyalist, son of John and Mary (Marks) Peters, was born at Hebron, Conn., a descendant of Andrew Peters whose name first appears in Massachusetts records in 1659. He was educated at Yale College, receiving the degrees of bachelor of arts in 1757 and master of arts in 1760. King's College conferred the degree of M.A. on him in 1761 and in later life he claimed to have received that of LL.D. from the University of Cortona in Tuscany, although no such institution seems ever to have existed. In 1758 he went to England to receive holy orders in the Anglican church and in the following year was ordained deacon and priest and appointed missionary by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. In 1760 he returned to America and for the next fourteen years served as rector of the Anglican church at Hebron and ministered to the surrounding country. On Feb. 14, 1760, he was married to Hannah Owen, who died Oct. 25, 1765; on June 25, 1769, to Abigail Gilbert, who died July 14, 1769; and on Apr. 21, 1773, to Mary Birdseye, who died June 16, 1774.

As the controversy between Great Britain and the colonies approached a crisis, he was suspected of informing the Bishop of London and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts of events in America, and on the morning of Aug. 15, 1774, he was visited by the Sons of Liberty, who examined his papers and forced him to sign a declaration that he had not written and would not write to England. Following a sermon in which he advised his congregation not to contribute aid or supplies for the relief of Boston, he was again visited by a mob, Sept. 6, 1774, and upon the discovery that he had arms in his house, he was carried to the meeting-house green and forced to sign and read a declaration and humble confession. Shortly after this incident he fled to Boston, leaving behind him a twelve-year-old daughter, an infant son, and some twenty slaves, eleven of whom were liberated by the General Assembly of Connecticut in 1789. On Oct. 25, 1774, he sailed from Portsmouth, N. H., for England, where he received a small pension from the Crown.

He took up his residence in London and occasionally preached in the churches of the city. He wrote for British periodicals and in 1781 published *A General History of Connecticut*, containing his famous account of the "blue laws" which, he alleged, were in force then. It is a highly unfavorable description of the colony of his birth but not as false as some of its critics in New England have maintained. In 1785 he published *A Letter to the Rev. John Tyler, A.M.: concerning the Possibility of Eternal Punishments, and the Improbability of Universal Salvation.* He hoped to obtain an American bishopric and in 1794 he was elected bishop of Vermont by a convention of Episcopal clergymen which met at Rutland, and sent John A. Graham to England to secure his consecration at the hands of the Archbishop of Canterbury. Peters accepted the bishopric and prepared to sail for America in the following spring but on the plea that he was limited by the Act of Parliament of January 1786, and could create no more American bishops, the Archbishop of Canterbury re-

fused to consecrate him. About 1804 Peters lost his pension. He had known Jonathan Carver [*q.v.*], the explorer, in England, and at the request of Carver's American heirs returned to America in 1805 to further their claim to a large tract of land to the east of the Mississippi River at the Falls of St. Anthony, which they claimed Carver had received from the Sioux Indians in 1767. In March 1806 Peters appeared before a committee of the United States Senate in behalf of Carver's heirs, and in November 1806 he bought their claim. He succeeded in interesting a company of New York merchants in a scheme to settle the territory on the Mississippi and in the summer of 1817 he himself set out to visit the region and spent the following winter at Prairie du Chien, but in 1826 Congress disallowed the claim. After Peters' return to America he published *A History of the Reverend Hugh Peters, A.M.* (1807). He claimed Hugh Peter [*q.v.*] as his great-grand-uncle, but the relationship has been disproved. Peters died at New York in his ninety-first year and was buried at Hebron.

[E. F. Peters and E. B. Peters, *Peters of New England* (1903); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. II (1896); Zadock Thompson, *Hist. of Vt.* (1842); W. W. Folwell, *A Hist. of Minn.*, vol. I (1921); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. V (1859); W. S. Perry, *The Hist. of the Am. Episcopal Church* (2 vols., 1885); E. E. Beardsley, *The Hist. of the Episcopal Church in Conn.* (2 vols., 1866–68); I. W. Stuart, *Life of Jonathan Trumbull, Sen., Gov. of Conn.* (1859); *The True-Blue Laws of Conn. and New Haven and the False Blue-Laws Invented by the Rev. Samuel Peters* (1876), ed. by J. H. Trumbull; J. H. Trumbull, *The Reverend Samuel Peters, His Defenders and Apologists* (1877); W. F. Prince, "An Examination of Peters's 'Blue Laws,'" *Ann. Report Am. Hist. Asso. for 1898* (1899); D. S. Durrie, "Captain Jonathan Carver, and 'Carver's Grant,'" *Report and Colls., State Hist. Soc. of Wis.*, vol. VI (1872); Milo M. Quaife, "Jonathan Carver and the Carver Grant," *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.*, June 1920; *Am. Archives*, ed. by Peter Force, 4 ser. I (1837), II (1839); *Am. State Papers, Public Lands*, vol. IV (1859); *The Correspondence of John A. Graham, with His Grace of Canterbury, When on His Mission as Agent of the Church of Vt., to the Ecclesiastical Courts of Canterbury and York, for the Consecration of Dr. Peters, Bishop Elect of Vt., 1794–95* (1835); S. J. McCormick, "Dr. Samuel Peters," *Churchman*, May 26 and June 2, 1877.] I. M. C.

PETERS, WILLIAM CUMMING (Mar. 10, 1805–Apr. 20, 1866), music publisher, musician, was born in Woodbury, Devonshire, England. Between the years 1820 and 1823 he came to America with his parents and lived for a short time in Texas. During these same years he studied music with his father, although as a musician he was largely self-instructed. From 1825 to 1828 he taught music in Pittsburgh, and in 1829 moved to Louisville, Ky., where he opened a music store. In 1839 he opened a branch house in Cincinnati, and in 1849 another branch in Baltimore. His home during his later years was in Cincinnati, and it was there that he died suddenly of heart disease at the age of sixty-one.

Peters was an important factor in the musical life of the cities in which he lived, and he was especially significant because of his connection with Stephen Collins Foster [*q.v.*]. According to evidence and tradition it was Peters who was among the first to profit by Foster's songs. When Foster lived in Cincinnati during the years 1846 to 1849 he was a song writer by avocation rather than by profession. He had written several songs which were sung by minstrel performers, and they were so successful that Peters asked Foster to let him publish them. Accordingly Foster gave Peters a number of songs, among them "Susanna," "Louisiana Belle," and "Old Uncle Ned." In spite of other, pirated editions of "Susanna," it is said that Peters made over $10,000 from the sale of Foster's songs. It was probably this success that enabled Peters to expand his business, and to become one of the leading music publishers of the Mid-West. Foster received little, if anything, from Peters. According to one tradition he was paid one hundred dollars for "Susanna" and nothing for "Uncle Ned" (R. P. Nevin, "Stephen C. Foster and Negro Minstrelsy," *Atlantic Monthly*, November 1867). Other reports state that Foster made Peters an outright gift of all the songs. For one year in Baltimore Peters edited and published a musical magazine, the *Olio*. In the final issue, December 1850, a statement was made that the magazine would be discontinued, not because of lack of support, but because of the editor's health, and the difficulty of procuring music plates in Baltimore.

Peters was active as a leader of concerts and choirs, and in composing and writing. He wrote music for the Roman Catholic Church, including a Mass in D. He compiled *Peters' Catholic Harmonist* (1848); *Catholic Harp* (1862), and a number of educational works, among them the *Eclectic Piano Instructor* (1855). He was the editor of a revised and enlarged edition of *Burrowes' Piano Forte Primer* (1849, again revised, 1869). Among his original compositions were "Citizens Guards' March" (1841); "Sweet Memories of Thee" (1839), a song, and "Kind, Kind and Gentle is She" (1840), "a favourite Scotch ballad."

[Information regarding Peters is meager. A number of his compositions are available in collections of old music. For biographical material see W. A. Fisher, *One Hundred and Fifty Years of Music Publishing in the U. S.* (1933); E. J. Wohlgemuth, *Within Three Chords* (1928); *Cincinnati Daily Gazette, Cincinnati Commercial*, Apr. 21, 1866; *Appletons' Cyc. Am. Biog.* A complete file of the *Olio* for 1850 is in the collection of Foster Hall, Indianapolis, Ind.] J. T. H.

PETERSON, CHARLES JACOBS (July 20, 1819–Mar. 4, 1887), editor, publisher, and au-

thor, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the eldest of the five sons of Thomas P. and Elizabeth Snelling (Jacobs) Peterson. Three of his brothers, Theophilus B., Thomas, and George W., later formed the book-publishing house known as T. B. Peterson & Brothers; Henry Peterson [*q.v.*], editor, publisher, and poet, was his cousin. They were descended from Erick Pieterson (a godson of Archbishop Laurence Pieterson of Sweden) who settled with a Swedish colony on the Delaware in 1638. Charles was a non-graduate member of the class of 1838, University of Pennsylvania, studied law, and was admitted to the bar, but never entered upon legal practice.

When George R. Graham [*q.v.*] purchased *Atkinson's Casket* (later *Graham's Magazine*) in May 1839, he associated the twenty-year-old Peterson with him in its editorship—a relation maintained until the founding of Peterson's own magazine. It has been said that a quarrel with Peterson was the reason for Poe's leaving his editorial position on *Graham's* (John Sartain, *Reminiscences of a Very Old Man,* 1899), though different reasons have been assigned for that rupture by other observers. In March 1840 Peterson purchased the interest of John DuSolle in the *Saturday Evening Post,* thereby becoming doubly the partner of Graham, this time in both editing and publishing. After just three years of this latter connection, he sold his interest to Samuel D. Patterson. In 1840, acting upon a hint from Graham, he founded the *Lady's World,* the name of which was changed in 1843 to the *Ladies' National Magazine* and in 1848 to *Peterson's Magazine.* In this venture he took as an associate Ann Sophia Stephens [*q.v.*], who had been connected with *Graham's,* and who remained a leading contributor to *Peterson's* until her death in 1886. Though she was sometimes listed as editor, Peterson himself was *de facto* editor for the forty-seven years from the founding of the magazine until his own death. *Peterson's* was an imitator of the successful *Godey's Lady's Book,* which it underbid in subscription price, and outstripped in circulation and influence shortly after the Civil War. In the seventies it gained a circulation—unusual at that time—of 150,000 copies. Peterson was also actively engaged in daily and weekly journalism at various times, and wrote sketches and verse for periodicals. He was an editor of Joseph C. Neal's *Saturday Gazette* in the middle forties. When the *Philadelphia Bulletin* was begun in 1847, he was one of its editorial writers; he also worked in that capacity for the *Public Ledger.* He wrote *The Military Heroes of the Revolution, with a Narrative of the War of Independence* (1848) and similar treatments of the War of 1812 and the Mexican War. In 1849 *Grace Dudley, or Arnold at Saratoga* appeared. This was followed by several other historical novels, including *Kate Aylesford, a Story of the Refugees* (1855), *Mabel, or Darkness and Dawn* (1857), and *The Old Stone Mansion* (1859). His most important work was a history of the American navy, first published as *The Naval Heroes of the United States* (1850) and later, in more comprehensive form, as *A History of the United States Navy* (1852) and *The American Navy, Being an Authentic History* (1856). Peterson's was an expansive and genial personality, and he had a notable capacity for friendship. He belonged to that group of littérateurs and magazinists who made Philadelphia a literary center in the forties. His friends have eulogized his cultivation, refinement, and studious habits. He died in Philadelphia, his last days shadowed by the accidental death of an only son. His wife was Sarah Powell, daughter of Charles Pitt Howard.

[Univ. of Pa., *Biog. Cat. of Matriculates of the College* (1893); A. H. Smyth, *The Phila. Mags. and Their Contributors* (1892); *Phila. Inquirer* and *Public Ledger,* both Mar. 7, 1887; *Press* (Phila.), Mar. 6, 1887; *Peterson's Mag.,* May 1887.] F. L. M.

PETERSON, HENRY (Dec. 7, 1818–Oct. 10, 1891), editor-publisher and poet, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of George and Jane (Evans) Peterson. He was a cousin of Charles Jacobs Peterson [*q.v.*]. Henry Peterson was largely self-educated, being compelled to go to work in a hardware store at the age of fourteen. He formed a partnership with Edmund Deacon for the publication of cheap manuals and reprints when he was twenty-one. For a short time he was connected editorially with Joseph C. Neal's *Saturday Gazette,* and in 1846 he succeeded George R. Graham as editor of the *Saturday Evening Post.* In February 1848 Deacon & Peterson bought the *Post* from Samuel D. Patterson & Company and became sole owners and editors. For twenty-five years, with some changes in partners, Peterson remained the controlling personality in the *Post,* reducing its attention to news and increasing its emphasis on fiction and verse. It was an eight-page folio, of newspaper format, and the oldest of the many American weekly story papers. In April 1873 Peterson sold his interest in this periodical to the Saturday Post Publishing Company, but he remained with it in an editorial capacity for another year. Thereafter he devoted himself to the writing of poetry and fiction. He had already published *Poems* (1863), and *The Modern Job* (1869), a dramatic and philosophical poem of three thou-

sand blank-verse lines with its setting in Pennsylvania. *Pemberton* (1873), a historical novel of the Revolution, was reprinted in 1887 and 1900. *Faire-mount* (1874) is a historico-philosophical poem in couplets. *Helen; or, One Hundred Years Ago,* a poetical drama, was produced in Philadelphia in 1876. *Confessions of a Minister* (1874) and *Bessie's Lovers* (1877) are novels. They were followed by *Caesar: A Dramatic Study* (1879), *Poems: Second Series* (1883), including *The Modern Job* and *Faire-mount,* and the posthumously published *Columbus* (1893), a dramatic poem in six acts. On Oct. 28, 1842, Peterson married Sarah Webb, of Wilmington, Del., a poet, who edited from 1864 to 1874 the *Lady's Friend,* a fashion magazine published by Deacon & Peterson and modeled upon *Godey's Lady's Book.* Peterson's verse, while not distinguished, has ease and thoughtfulness; his chief service was that which he rendered to popular literature in connection with the *Saturday Evening Post.* He died at his home in Germantown, Pa.

[There are no complete files of the *Saturday Evening Post,* but the connections of Henry Peterson with it may be noted in the file in possession of the *Post* itself. For biographical details see J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.,* vol. X (1918) and the *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Oct. 12, 1891.] F. L. M.

PETIGRU, JAMES LOUIS (May 10, 1789–Mar. 9, 1863), lawyer, political leader, was born in Abbeville District, S. C. He was the son of William Pettigrew, a native of Virginia, and Louise Guy Gilbert, the daughter of a Huguenot minister. He bore the names of his two grandfathers: James Pettigrew, who came to Pennsylvania in 1740 from County Tyrone, Ireland, and moved successively to Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina; and Jean Louis Gibert, who brought a party of Huguenots to South Carolina in 1763. Since the family was large and means were small, he worked from childhood, securing such schooling as he could. In 1804 he entered the famous school of Dr. Moses Waddell at Willington, and two years later South Carolina College, where, supporting himself by teaching in Columbia, he finished the course and received the A.B. degree in 1809. About this time, apparently, he changed the spelling of his name (Carson, *post,* p. 35). He taught in St. Luke's Parish and at Beaufort for the next three years, studying law the while, and was admitted to the bar in 1812. In that year, although as an intense Federalist he opposed the war, he served for a short while in the militia. Settling at Coosawhatchie, in 1816 he was elected solicitor, and, on Aug. 17, he married Jane Amelia Postell, the daughter of a nearby planter. In 1819 James Hamilton, Jr. [*q.v.*] offered him an attractive

Petigru

partnership and he moved to Charleston, where he spent the rest of his life. Rapidly gaining reputation, in 1822 he was elected attorney general, a post much to his liking which he unwillingly resigned in 1830 to become a Union candidate for the state Senate. He was defeated, but within a few weeks was elected to fill a vacancy in the lower house. A thorough-going nationalist, he was an intense opponent of nullification, for which he could find no justification in law, logic, or morals. He wrote a friend, "I am devilishly puzzled to know whether my friends are mad, or I beside myself" (Carson, p. 79). He disliked politics but felt compelled to participate in such a crisis, and, making many speeches, writing numerous newspaper articles, and contributing much wise counsel, found himself in 1832 the leader of the Union party. He wrote the address to the people issued by the Union convention in September (*Southern Patriot,* Sept. 15, 1832) and the protest against the nullification ordinance in December. In the period which followed, he naturally opposed the imposition of the test oath and won the decision from the court of appeals which declared it unconstitutional (*2 S. C.,* 1, 113). During the resulting bitter struggle, he and Hamilton, by cooperation, prevented any collision between their excited followers and finally effected a satisfactory compromise.

From the close of the nullification controversy to the end of his life Petigru held no office, save for two years that of United States district attorney, which he accepted as a matter of duty at the earnest request of President Fillmore when no one could be induced to do so. In 1859 he was elected code commissioner and by annual election retained the position until the completion of the work in 1863 (*Portion of the Code of Statute Law of South Carolina,* 1860–62). He opposed secession but was hopeless of checking the movement. Asked by a stranger in Columbia in December 1860 the location of the insane asylum, he pointed to the Baptist church where the secession convention had just assembled and said: "It looks like a church, but it is now a lunatic asylum; go right there and you will find one hundred and sixty-four maniacs within" (Lewis, *post,* IV, 71–72). But he could not always joke about it. Mistaking the bells for a fire alarm and being told that they announced secession, he exclaimed: "I tell you there is a fire; they have this day set a blazing torch to the temple of constitutional liberty, and please God, we shall have no more peace forever" (*Ibid.,* p. 72). Yet coercion surprised and grieved him, and, in spite of his intellectual belief, passion-

ately held, that the cause was bad, his heart was with the Southern rather than the Northern arms. But his heart was not with the Confederate government. He opposed the Confederate sequestration act in the district court, because, he said, he was free born. During the war his home in Charleston was lost by fire and a house on Sullivan's Island was destroyed in the erection of fortifications.

Petigru was known and admired all over the country. Lincoln seriously considered appointing him to the Supreme Court to replace Justice McLean or Justice Campbell but the difficulties in the way, combined with Petigru's age, dissuaded him. Petigru's position as "the greatest private citizen that South Carolina has ever produced," was unique. An admirer thus describes it: "He never occupied high public station, and yet he was a statesman. He never held judicial positions, and yet he was a great jurist. He never wrote books, and yet his life itself is a volume to be studied. He never founded a charity, and yet he was a great-hearted philanthropist" (Lewis, IV, 30–31). A superb advocate, he was the undisputed head of the state bar for nearly forty years. The profound legal learning he displayed in a case was matched by the simplicity of his deductive reasoning. He "turnpiked the legal pathway out of the most complicated labyrinth of law and fact" (*Memorial,* p. 11). In public affairs Petigru was doomed to the minority because of his nationalism. In other things he largely agreed with his neighbors. He opposed protection vigorously, and, while he did not like the institution of slavery, he was no abolitionist and owned slaves and approved of the domestic side of slavery. Politically, he was perhaps more sympathetic with free-soil ideas than his associates. A friend, always, of the lowly and oppressed, having a passion for mercy combined with his love of justice, he was ready in defence of the slave, the poor white, or the free negro who sought his aid. His manner was hearty, even inclined to be hilarious, but scrupulously courteous. He wrote well and had an unusual voice, capable of expressing every shade of feeling, that made him a really great speaker. In the heart of bitter controversy he retained the respect and the affection of his opponents, and the lasting quality of his fame is evidence of the dynamic character of his personality.

[J. P. Carson, *Life, Letters and Speeches of James Louis Petigru . . .* (1920); W. J. Grayson, *James Louis Petigru. A Biog. Sketch* (1866); W. D. Lewis, ed., *Great American Lawyers,* IV (1908), "James Louis Petigru" by J. D. Pope; *Memorial of the Late James L. Petigru. Proc. of the Bar of Charleston, S. C., Mar. 25, 1863* (1866); *Charleston Mercury,* Mar. 11, 1863.]

J. G. deR. H.

PETTIGREW, CHARLES (Mar. 20, 1743–Apr. 7, 1807), Episcopal clergyman, was born in Chambersburg, Pa. His family was of remote French origin with Scotch and Irish branches. Charles Pettigrew's father, James, of the Irish branch, became estranged from his people because of religious differences and emigrated to America with his wife, Mary Cochran, from County Tyrone, Ireland, in 1740. The family later moved to Virginia and in 1768, to North Carolina where Charles studied under the Rev. Henry Patillo [*q.v.*], who was serving the Presbyterians of that state. Five years later, although still a Presbyterian, he was appointed principal of the academy at Edenton, a school which was practically Episcopalian and which had marked influence on the early history of North Carolina. Here he became an Episcopalian and decided to take orders. He sailed for England in 1774, was ordered deacon by the Bishop of London, and advanced to the priesthood by the Bishop of Rochester in 1775. He returned to America in the last ship that sailed before the Revolution, and became rector of St. Paul's Church in Edenton.

In the fall of 1789, when Bishop White of Philadelphia wrote to Governor Samuel Johnston [*q.v.*], of North Carolina to request that the clergy of the Episcopal church in that state meet to take steps to revive the church organization there, the Governor referred the matter to the Rev. Charles Pettigrew, whom he called "his Pastor and Friend." Pettigrew called a meeting of the clergy, each of the six in the state being asked to bring one layman. Only two clergymen and two laymen, both residents of Tarboro, were present at the meeting in that town on June 5, 1790. They proceeded to organize and to elect deputies for the General Convention of 1792. It was a day of small beginnings, no notice of organization or attendance of delegates appearing in the records of the General Convention, and a permanent organization was not effected until 1817. At a state convention held in Tarboro on May 28, 1794, comprising five clergymen and eight laymen, Pettigrew was elected bishop. He expected to be consecrated at the Convention of 1795, which met at Philadelphia, but he was stopped in Norfolk, Va., by an epidemic of yellow fever, and was delayed until the Convention was adjourned. He returned to his home on the family estate, "Bonarva" in Tyrrell County, N. C., where he built a chapel on his own grounds to serve the surrounding countryside and where he died before being consecrated bishop.

He was twice married, first on Oct. 28, 1778, to Mary Blount who died in 1786, leaving him

two sons, one of whom was Ebenezer, the father of James Johnston Pettigrew [*q.v.*], and second, on June 12, 1794, to Mary Lockhart. His letters to his sons written while they were students at the University of North Carolina, 1795 to 1797, throw an interesting light on the student life of the period, and are quoted at length in Battle's history of the University. Pettigrew was instrumental in founding the University in 1789, and was one of the trustees from 1790 to 1793.

[M. D. Haywood, biog. sketch in S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. VI (1907); J. W. Moore, *Hist. of N. C.* (2 vols., 1880); W. M. Clemens, ed., *North and South Carolina Marriage Records* (1927); W. S. Perry, *The Hist. of the Am. Episc. Ch., 1587–1883* (2 vols., 1885); K. P. Battle, *Hist. of the Univ. of N. C.* (2 vols., 1907–1912); *The Early Conventions Held at Tawborough, A. D., 1790, 1793, and 1794 . . . Collected from Original Sources and Now First Published. With Introduction and Brief Notes by Joseph Blount Cheshire, Jr.* (1882); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit*, vol. V (1859).] C. L. W.

PETTIGREW, JAMES JOHNSTON (July 4, 1828–July 17, 1863), lawyer and soldier, was born at the family estate, "Bonarva," Lake Scuppernong, Tyrrell County, N. C., the son of Ebenezer and Ann B. (Shepard) Pettigrew. He was the great-grandson of James Pettigrew who emigrated to America in 1740, and the grandson of Charles Pettigrew [*q.v.*], the first bishop-elect of the Episcopal Church in North Carolina. His mother died when he was two years old. He often missed periods of schooling on account of ill health, but he rendered such a brilliant account of himself scholastically under the tutelage of William James Bingham of Hillsboro, N. C., that he was ready to enter the University of North Carolina at the age of fifteen. In his four years at the university he showed exceptional talent and upon his graduation in 1847, he was awarded by President Polk an assistant professorship at the Naval Observatory in Washington. He relinquished this position after two years and commenced the study of law, first in Baltimore, then in Charleston, S. C., where he was associated with his father's cousin, James Louis Petigru [*q.v.*]. In 1850 he took a long European tour with the particular object of studying Roman law in Germany for two years. He then resumed the practice of law in Charleston. He was elected to the General Assembly in 1856 and rapidly became an outstanding figure in the controversy over the slave trade. His minority report against a resumption of the traffic reads today as a thoughtful, well-balanced document. In 1861 he published a book, *Notes on Spain and the Spaniards*, based on his observations of manners and customs in that country.

Prior to the Civil War he was colonel of the 1st Regiment of Rifles of Charleston, and when Major Anderson immured himself within Fort Sumter, Pettigrew took over Castle Pinckney and later fortified Morris Island. When his own regiment was not able to enter the army of the Confederate states upon its own terms, he went to Richmond and enlisted in Hampton's Legion. After the secession of North Carolina in May 1861, he was elected colonel of the 12th Regiment. He first saw service at Evansport, Va., where his regiment was engaged in blocking the Potomac. His services were so conspicuous that President Davis himself wanted to make him a brigadier-general, but he refused on the grounds that he had never led troops in action. His officers and friends, however, persuaded him to accept later, and he served under Johnston throughout the Peninsular Campaign, was severely wounded at Seven Pines, bayonetted, and captured. In two months' time he was exchanged, whereupon he took command of the defenses of Petersburg. In the spring of 1863 he displayed at Blount's Creek his capacity for independent command, and his brigade formed part of the division of Henry Heth [*q.v.*] at Gettysburg. After Heth was wounded on the first day of the battle, Pettigrew took over the command of the division, and directed an advance on the left of Pickett in the famous charge. He was again wounded at the head of his troops near the Stone Wall, but was able to display conspicuous ability as a rear-guard commander during the retreat. On the night of July 14, he was wounded by a small raiding party of Federal cavalry. He died three days later, and was buried at Raleigh, N. C., but in 1866 his body was removed to "Bonarva."

[*S. C. Gen. Assembly, House of Rep., Special Committee on Slavery and the Slave Trade, Report of the Minority* (1858); H. C. Graham, biog. sketch in *Ladies Memorial Asso., Confed. Memorial Addresses* (1886); J. W. Clark, memorial address at the unveiling of a tablet and marble pillar in honor of General Pettigrew, Bunker Hill, W. Va., *N. C. Booklet*, Oct. 1920, Jan.–Apr. 1921, pub. by The N. C. Soc. of the D. A. R.; Mrs. C. P. S. Spencer, biog. sketch in W. J. Peele, *Lives of Distinguished North Carolinians* (1898); S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. VI (1907).] D. Y.

PETTIGREW, RICHARD FRANKLIN (July 23, 1848–Oct. 5, 1926), delegate from the Territory of Dakota, first senator from South Dakota, was born in Ludlow, Vt., the son of Hannah B. (Sawtell) and Andrew Pettigrew, who was an abolitionist and maintained a station on the Underground Railroad. The boy's youth was spent on his father's farm in Evansville, Wis., where he attended the public schools and local academy. He entered Beloit College but left in 1867. He studied law at the University of Wisconsin and with John C. Spooner [*q.v.*], and he settled in Sioux Falls in 1870, where he

became one of the leaders in the development of the town. He was admitted to the bar in 1871, practised law, engaged in government surveying, and was interested in real estate. He was a member of the House of Representatives of the territorial legislature in 1872 and a member of the territorial council in 1877 and 1879. On Feb. 27, 1879, he was married to Elizabeth V. Pittar, the daughter of John Pittar of Chicago, who bore him two sons. Elected a delegate to the Forty-seventh Congress in 1880, he served from March 1881 to March 1883. He was again a member of the territorial council in 1885. He advocated the division of Dakota Territory into two states, and, when North and South Dakota were admitted in 1889, he was chosen one of the first senators from South Dakota, to serve from October 1889 to March 1901. His most important service in the Senate was in the promotion of legislation reserving from sale the forest lands owned by the federal government. He studied carefully the forestry methods used in Europe, and, with the aid of Charles D. Walcott of the United States geological survey, he drafted an amendment to the timber culture act of 1891 authorizing the president by proclamation to reserve public lands covered by forests. As a result of this legislation 150,000,000 acres were reserved.

He was a non-conformist in politics and religion. He was feared in the Senate because of his bitter personal attacks. One senator described him as "pale malice" and another asked him if he "spit lemon juice" (Beer, *post*, pp. 220, 221). On the other hand he was remembered for his charities and for the efforts he made to improve sanitation and to obtain grain elevators in a small town, and he had many friends who were surprised by his public bitterness. He was a believer in the single tax and opposed the private ownership of land. He favored the government ownership of railroads and telegraphs, and he prepared bills for their purchase and operation. He held the opinion that such public utilities should be operated for service rather than for profit. These views alienated him from his Republican associates, and in addition his opinions about monetary problems brought him into conflict with the sound-money members of the party. He was a delegate to the Republican National Convention at St. Louis in 1896 but left the meetings after the rejection of a resolution in favor of free silver. He also opposed the annexation of the Hawaiian Islands and was a leader in the Senate in opposition to the annexation of the Philippine Islands. His position upon the currency and imperialism led to his defeat for reelection in 1900. He joined the Democratic party for a time and was a delegate to the national convention in 1908. He opposed entrance into the World War and expressed himself bitterly on the subject. He was indicted, but he was never tried. The indictment, engraved and framed, became one of his valued possessions.

After retirement from Congress he practised law in New York for several years and accumulated a comfortable fortune. Later he returned to Sioux Falls, where he built a large house. He traveled widely and gathered a collection of fossils, flints, and similar objects which, with his house, he bequeathed to the city. He published two volumes: one on *The Course of Empire* in 1920 and the other *Triumphant Plutocracy* in 1922, both largely made up of the materials used in his speeches in the Senate. He was survived by his widow Roberta A. (Hallister) Smith Pettigrew to whom he had been married on Feb. 2, 1922.

[*South Dakota*, ed. by G. M. Smith (1915), vols. I–IV; D. R. Bailey, *Hist. of Minnehaha County, S. D.* (1899); *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; Thomas Beer, *Hanna* (1929); *Rev. of Rev.* (N. Y.), July 1896, p. 10, Apr. 1900, pp. 394–95; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 6, 1926; *Daily Argus-Leader* (Sioux Falls), Oct. 5, 6, 7, 9; information from his widow, Mrs. Richard F. Pettigrew, Chicago, Ill.]

F. E. H—s.

PETTIT, CHARLES (1736–Sept. 3, 1806), merchant, Revolutionary patriot, son of John Pettit, was born near Amwell, Hunterdon County, N. J., of French Huguenot stock. His father, whose family emigrated to southern New York about 1650, was a Philadelphia importing merchant and an underwriter of marine insurance. Charles received a classical education. His marriage, Apr. 5, 1758, to Sarah, daughter of Andrew Reed, a Trenton merchant and also his father's business associate in Philadelphia, gave him important connections which opened the way to a public career. Through the influence of Joseph Reed [*q.v.*], his wife's half-brother, he held minor public offices in New Jersey and was appointed a provincial surrogate Nov. 19, 1767. On Apr. 3, 1770, he was admitted to the bar as an attorney and on Nov. 17, 1773, as counselor. He succeeded Reed as deputy secretary of the province, clerk of the council and of the supreme court, Oct. 27, 1769, and was appointed aide to Gov. William Franklin in 1771, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. When Franklin was arrested as a Loyalist in 1776, Pettit cast in his lot with the colonies and continued as secretary under the new state government until 1778. On Oct. 8, 1776, he was appointed aide to Gov. William Livingston with the rank of colonel, and in the following year drafted a plan for oyer and terminer courts for the new state régime.

On Gen. Nathanael Greene's recommendation Pettit was appointed assistant quartermaster-general of the Continental Army, Mar. 2, 1778. His experience with administrative details and his exacting methods well qualified him for the post. In the keeping of accounts and cash, the particular duties assigned to him, he inaugurated many needed reforms. In the face of congressional interference and a treasury "wretchedly poor" he found his duties exceedingly difficult, and in 1780 would have quit the place if he could have done so "without evident impropriety." He was suspicious of congressional schemes for remodeling the quartermaster's department, but did not, like Greene, think the new plan inaugurated in 1780 was impossible of execution. When Greene resigned as quartermaster-general, Pettit was offered the post, but emphatically declined it. He retained his assistantship, however, feeling that the prompt settlement of all accounts in the department would be facilitated by his remaining. He finally resigned June 20, 1781.

After the war he became an importing merchant in Philadelphia. During 1784–85 he was in the Pennsylvania assembly and in the former year was chairman of a committee of merchants appointed to find means for improving national commerce. From 1785 to 1787 he was a member of Congress. Although a Constitutionalist in Pennsylvania politics and opposed to parts of the federal Constitution, he urged the adoption of the instrument and at the Harrisburg convention of 1788 called to discuss measures for securing its revision, he was largely instrumental by his conciliatory conduct in placating the Pennsylvania opposition. He was the author of Pennsylvania's funding system and of a pamphlet, *View of the Principles, Operation and Probable Effects of the Funding System of Pennsylvania* (1788), urging support of the plan. During 1790–91 he was delegated to present to Congress Pennsylvania's Revolutionary claims against the federal government. As a Jeffersonian Republican, he joined with other Philadelphia merchants in opposing the Jay Treaty (1795) and in 1802 headed a committee appointed to secure relief against French spoliation of American commerce. Much of his later life was devoted to the business of the Insurance Company of North America, of which he was an original director and from 1796 to 1798 and from 1799 to his death, president. He was a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania (1791–1802) and a member of the American Philosophical Society. Recognized as an authority on financial questions, Pettit was a shrewd business man and possessed a calm dignity, a genial manner, and sound practical judgment. He died in Philadelphia. One of his four children, Elizabeth, married Jared Ingersoll [1749–1822; *q.v.*]; another, Theodosia, married Alexander Graydon [*q.v.*]. Thomas McKean Pettit [*q.v.*] was a grandson.

[*Archives of the State of N. J.*, 1 ser., vols. X (1886), XVI (1902); G. W. Greene, *The Life of Nathanael Greene*, vol. II (1871); T. H. Montgomery, *A Hist. of the Insurance Company of North America* (1885); W. C. Ford and Gaillard Hunt, *Jours. Continental Cong., 1774–1789*, vols. X–XXI (1908–12); *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pa.*, vol. XVI (1853); *Pa. Archives*, 1 ser., vols. X (1854), XI (1855); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), Sept. 9, 1806; W. B. Reed, *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed* (2 vols., 1847).]

J. H. P—g.

PETTIT, THOMAS McKEAN (Dec. 26, 1797–May 30, 1853), jurist, son of Andrew and Elizabeth (McKean) Pettit, was born in Philadelphia of Scotch-Irish and French Huguenot stock. His father was the son of Charles Pettit [*q.v.*], merchant and Revolutionary patriot, and his mother, the daughter of Gov. Thomas McKean [*q.v.*]. Andrew Pettit, a Philadelphia merchant and insurance man, was for many years a director of the Insurance Company of North America, and held the post of flour inspector under Governor McKean. Thomas received a classical education and graduated from the University of Pennsylvania in 1815. Upon leaving college he studied law in the office of his uncle, Jared Ingersoll (1749–1822; *q.v.*), and was admitted to the bar Apr. 13, 1818. In 1819 and again in 1821 he was appointed secretary of the Philadelphia board of public education. He was city solicitor (1820–23) and on Feb. 9, 1824, was appointed deputy attorney-general of Pennsylvania, which post he held until 1830. Although a member of the intellectual aristocracy, he adhered to the traditional party affiliations of his family and became a Jacksonian Democrat. He was an active member of the Hickory Club, which promoted Jackson's election to the presidency in 1824, and soon came to enjoy wide influence in the councils of the Democratic party in Pennsylvania both because of his ability and his family connections. He was elected to the lower house of the legislature in 1830 and in the following year became a member of the select council of Philadelphia.

His chief ambition, however, was a career on the bench, and on Feb. 16, 1833, Gov. George Wolfe appointed him an associate judge of the district court for the city and county of Philadelphia. He held this office until 1835, at which time the term for which the court was constituted expired. When the legislature passed a new law extending the life of the court for ten years more he was recommissioned associate judge, Mar.

30, 1835, and on the following Apr. 22 was appointed presiding judge, serving in this capacity until 1845. He declined reappointment on the expiration of his term and returned to his law practice. During Van Buren's administration, 1839, he was one of the board of visitors to West Point, and, together with Gov. William L. Marcy [*q.v.*] of New York, prepared the report of the board. Under President Polk he was United States district attorney for the eastern Pennsylvania district (1845–49). On Mar. 29, 1853, President Pierce appointed him superintendent of the Philadelphia mint and the appointment was confirmed on Apr. 4, but his duties at this post were cut short by his death a month and a half later.

Pettit's published writings and speeches include *A Discourse before the Historical Society and the Philomathean Society of the University of Pennsylvania* (1830); "Memoir of Roberts Vaux" in the *Memoirs of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania* (vol. IV, pt. 1, 1840); *An Annual Discourse Delivered before the Historical Society of Pennsylvania* (1828); and *The Common Law Reports of England* (1822), the last named having been prepared for publication in collaboration with Thomas Sergeant. Pettit's judicial decisions reflect a high degree of ability and broad legal training. By temperament he was well fitted for the bench. Because of his patience and composure and his willingness to compromise he was not the stormy petrel in state politics that his grandfather, Governor McKean, had been. He entertained broad ideas on popular education and worked earnestly for its advancement as a citizen, while in the legislature, and as a member of the Philadelphia board of education. He manifested a deep interest in the history of Pennsylvania and was one of the most active members of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania. His wife, whom he married Feb. 7, 1828, was Sarah Barry Dale, daughter of Commodore Richard Dale [*q.v.*], distinguished naval officer. She died in 1839. Of their seven children, three survived him.

[Roberdeau Buchanan, *Geneal. of the McKean Family of Pa.* (1890); Samuel Hazard, *Hazard's Reg. of Pa.*, Feb. 23, July 6, Dec. 14, 1833, Apr. 4, May 2, July 4, Oct. 3, 1835; J. H. Martin, *Martin's Bench and Bar of Phila.* (1883); J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila., 1609–1884* (1884), vol. II; *The Pennsylvanian* (Phila.), June 1, 1853.] J. H. P—g.

PETTUS, EDMUND WINSTON (July 6, 1821–July 27, 1907), soldier, senator from Alabama, was born in Limestone County, Ala., the youngest child of John and Alice (Winston) Pettus. At an early age death deprived him of his father, but his mother was able to educate him at Clinton College, Smith County, Tenn. After completing his studies there he read law in the office of William Cooper of Tuscumbia, Ala., and in 1842 was licensed to practise his profession. He selected Gainesville, Ala., as the seat of his efforts. In 1844 he was elected solicitor of the 7th judicial circuit. On June 27 of the same year he married Mary, the daughter of Samuel Chapman of Sumter County, Ala. They had six children. During the Mexican War he served as lieutenant in the United States Army and shortly thereafter went to California. Failing to find a fortune in the distant West he returned to Alabama and in 1851 settled at Carrollton in Pickens County. Two years later he was again made solicitor and in 1855 was elected judge of the 7th circuit. Resigning this office in 1858 he removed to Cahaba, Dallas County, and practised law there until the outbreak of the Civil War. During the struggle over the question of secession he was sent as commissioner from Alabama to Mississippi, of which state his brother, John J. Pettus, was governor at the time. Shortly afterward he assisted in the organization of the 20th Alabama Infantry and was elected a major in that command. He was soon promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and in this capacity he served in General Kirby-Smith's Kentucky campaign and later in the defense of Vicksburg. He was taken captive at the fall of Port Gibson but escaped. During the campaign he succeeded to the command of his regiment, and he acquired military distinction by leading a desperate and successful assault upon a part of the works that had been captured by the Federals. He was again made captive when Vicksburg fell, but he was exchanged, promoted to the rank of brigadier-general, and assigned to Stevenson's division at Chattanooga. He took part in the battles of Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge. After the retreat upon Atlanta he followed Hood into Tennessee and participated in the battle of Nashville. He later joined Johnston on his retreat through the Carolinas and finally laid down his arms when his commander surrendered to Sherman.

Returning to Alabama at the close of the conflict he took up his residence in Selma and resumed the practice of law. Though he refrained from seeking public office, he represented his state in the National Democratic Convention from 1876 until 1896, and in that year he became a candidate for the United States Senate. He was elected without difficulty on the Democratic ticket and at the end of his term was chosen to succeed himself. He served from Mar. 4, 1897, until his death at Hot Springs, N. C. He was buried in the Live Oak Cemetery at Selma, Ala.

He typified much that was characteristic of his section and generation. He possessed a vigor of character that was more common in the South than is generally supposed. As he sat in the Senate during his old age, he still exhibited a manly independence of spirit, a ready, fervid, and stilted oratory, a somewhat rustic and old-fashioned style of dress, his feet being clad in the only pair of boots then worn in the Senate, and an urbanity and chivalry of bearing that have gone with the passing of the "Confederate Brigadiers."

[An unsigned manuscript and other material in the files of the Alabama Department of Archives and History; Willis Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); *Confederate Mil. Hist.*, ed. by C. A. Evans (1899), vol. VII; *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *John Tyler Morgan and Edmund Winston Pettus—Memorial Addresses* (1909); *Ala. Hist. Soc. Trans.*, vol. II (1898); *Montgomery Advertiser*, July 28, 1907.] T. P. A.

PEYTON, JOHN LEWIS (Sept. 15, 1824–May 21, 1896), Confederate agent, author, was born at "Montgomery Hall" near Staunton, Va., the son of John Howe and Anne Montgomery (Lewis) Peyton. He was descended from Henry Peyton who was born in London and died in Westmoreland County, Va., about 1659. His father was a distinguished lawyer and public servant. His mother was the daughter of John Lewis, a Revolutionary officer and friend of George Washington. At the age of fifteen he entered the Virginia Military Institute but withdrew in his second year on account of his lack of health. In 1844 he received the degree of Bachelor of Law from the University of Virginia and practised his profession at Staunton until 1852, when he was sent on a secret mission to England, France, and Austria for the Fillmore administration. From 1853 to 1856 he lived in Illinois, where he was prominent in local military affairs. He was married on Dec. 17, 1855, to Henrietta E. Washington of Vernon, N. C., and to them was born one son. Refusing the appointment as federal district attorney of Utah, tendered him on the recommendation of Stephen A. Douglas, he returned in 1856 to Staunton and there engaged in many enterprises. A Whig in politics, he supported the Bell-Everett presidential ticket in 1860 and opposed the secession of Virginia in 1861. He did not regard the election of Lincoln as a cause for secession and believed that the inaugural address promised sufficient protection for slavery within the Union. In fact he "opposed Secession as unconstitutional, or, if constitutional, unnecessary, and the worst of remedies for the South" (*American Crisis, post*, I, 110). Upon the secession of his state, however, he helped organize a regiment, mainly at his own expense, but was physically incapacitated from serving with it in the field. Instead, he accepted an appointment from North Carolina as her state agent abroad. Embarking from Charleston, S. C., in October 1861, he reached England in November 1861 and remained there until 1876. In his reminiscences of his service abroad he was very critical of the foreign policy of the Davis government and accused it of apathy at the beginning of the contest. Recognition, he thought, might have been obtained then if the commissioners Yancey and Mann, who had to a large extent overcome the opinion that the South was fighting for slavery, had been energetically supported by the home government. During the *Trent* crisis he found that "English admiration of the South was a thing separate and apart from anything like kindred love. . . . They patted her on the back as the weaker of the two combatants. . . . It was not because they loved her, but because they disliked the Yankees" (*American Crisis, post*, II, 101). After an unofficial interview with Lord Palmerston in May 1862 he was convinced of Great Britain's determination to maintain strict neutrality and communicated this conviction to his Southern friends.

He retired to the Island of Guernsey in 1866 and resided there, with the exception of his travels on the Continent, until his return to "Steephill" near Staunton, where he devoted himself to literary and agricultural pursuits. He enjoyed membership in several learned societies at home and abroad, among them the Royal Geographical Society, contributed to several periodicals of his period, and was the author of many books, perhaps the most important of which are: *A Statistical View of the State of Illinois* (1855); *The American Crisis; or Pages from the Note-Book of a State Agent during the Civil War in America* (2 vols., 1867); *Over the Alleghanies and Across the Prairies—Personal Recollections of the Far West, One and Twenty Years Ago* (1869), an excellent description of the old Northwest in 1848; *Memoir of William Madison Peyton* (1873); *History of Augusta County, Va.* (1882); *Rambling Reminiscences of a Residence Abroad* (1888), full of charming observations on social England; and *Memoir of John Howe Peyton* (1894), the biography of his father and a record of life in Virginia.

[Autobiog. material in own writings; H. E. Hayden, *Va. Geneal.* (1891); *Men of the Time*, 9th ed., rev. by Thompson Cooper (1875), 14th ed., rev. by V. G. Plarr (1895); Bezer Blundell, *The Contributions of John Lewis Peyton to the Hist. of Va. and of the Civil War* (1868); an estimate of his ability by W. Hepworth Dixon quoted in footnote in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1881, p. 20.] W. G. B—n.

PHELAN, DAVID SAMUEL (July 16, 1841–Sept. 21, 1915), Catholic priest and journalist, son of Alexander and Margaret (Creedon)

Phelan, was born at Sydney, Nova Scotia, from which place his family removed to St. Louis, Mo., in 1853. Trained in local schools and by wide reading, he studied theology in the diocesan seminary and was ordained a priest by Bishop P. R. Kenrick [*q.v.*] on May 20, 1863. After serving a few months as a curate at the Cathedral and at Indian Creek, he was assigned to a pastorate at Edina, where as editor of the *Edina or Missouri Watchman* he was imprisoned for his refusal to take the test oath prescribed by the Drake constitution, which he attacked in his journal. A horseman, he was also arrested for violating a town ordinance which limited the speed of riding to ten miles an hour. When the case came to trial he was acquitted largely because the petty persecution involved was obvious. In 1868 he was transferred to the Church of the Annunciation in St. Louis and brought with him his paper, which afterwards was known as the *Western Watchman.* In a sense he was fostered by Kenrick, although the Bishop regarded him as somewhat dangerous as an editor. An excellent orthodox priest, beloved by the poor, a good preacher, a fair German scholar, and a pleasant, witty companion, Phelan was a laborious man. He built the Church of Our Lady of Mount Carmel in North St. Louis, 1872, which he served as pastor until his death; he also organized, in 1881, St. James's Church at Ferguson. As a writer, he attracted favorable attention through *The Gospel Applied to Our Times* (1904), *Christ the Preacher* (1905), and translations of three French works on ascetic theology.

While Phelan regarded journalism as merely an avocation, it was for his editorial independence, his somewhat unscrupulous quotation of private conversations, and his caustic criticism of priests and bishops with whom he did not agree, as the fiery editor of the *Western Watchman* for fifty years that he was known and dreaded. His paper is a chronicle of the Church in the West, but it must be read with discrimination. Anti-Catholic papers culled his columns and found good copy for their purposes, especially when he supported priests in trouble with their bishops. He regarded himself as a defender of the clergy against episcopal arbitrariness. He did not hesitate to censure episcopal interference in the affairs of patriotic societies and American Catholic meddling in the Roman question. A Democrat, he advocated free silver and opposed the war with Spain, though he accepted our colonial policy. A liberal, he advocated Catholic schools for Catholics and public schools for all other citizens, while he supported Archbishop Ireland's Faribault School plan. His defense of the tango and the right of girls to use cosmetics aroused some reforming Protestant ministers, and the Christian Endeavor Society at one time urged his unfrocking. Becoming a teetotaler, he condemned drinking. A militant campaigner against intolerance, he destroyed the American Protective Association in St. Louis by printing the denial of membership on the part of a number of merchants and then ruthlessly publishing their activities in the association from its official record, which he obtained irregularly. He was always in ecclesiastical difficulties, but he accepted censure with equanimity, even printing the official letter. In 1893 he was reproved by Archbishop John J. Kain for an imprudent attack upon a recent episcopal appointment as a lowering of the intellectual level of the hierarchy. Phelan thereupon retorted that since Kain was from a slave state he must be taught how to rule freemen. He was answered by an episcopal proscription of his paper, but Archbishop Ireland, an admirer who was known to have inspired some of Phelan's editorials, especially at the time of the Third Council of Baltimore, compromised the difficulty. Phelan joined Ireland in his condemnation of Cahenslyism and said bitter things relative to German lay and clerical leaders. With Bishop Schrembs he came into open dispute; Archbishop Glennon in a friendly way frowned upon his activities. In spite of his failings, however, he accomplished much good. At his death he was the oldest and best-known Catholic editor of the passing school of militant, independent writers. Rev. David Phelan, editor of the *Antigonish Cabinet,* was his cousin.

[J. E. Rothensteiner, *Hist. of the Archdiocese of St. Louis* (1928), vol. II; *Am. Cath. Who's Who* (1911); Cath. *Fortnightly Rev.*, Oct. 15, 1915; *St. Louis Globe Democrat,* Sept. 22, 23, 1915; information from life-long associates.] R. J. P.

PHELAN, JAMES (Apr. 23, 1824–Dec. 23, 1892), pioneer San Francisco merchant and capitalist, was born in Queen's (now Leix) County, Ireland. In 1827 his father emigrated to America, taking with him James and his two older brothers, John and Michael, and settled in New York. Such formal education as James received was secured in the public schools of that city. After a few years he became clerk in a grocery store, acquiring much practical experience and developing unusual business capacity at an early age. With his savings, he started a general merchandising business of his own, and was successful from the beginning. His trading operations extended to Philadelphia, Cincinnati, and even to New Orleans. By the time he was twenty-four years of age he had accumulated about $50,000, the foundation of his later fortune.

News of the gold discoveries roused his interest in merchandising possibilities in the new communities springing up in California. Accordingly, in 1849, he disposed of his eastern business interests and started for California via Panama. With keen discernment respecting the needs of early California settlers, he shipped, before leaving the East, a large stock of miscellaneous goods on three different ships. One sank at sea, but the other two reached San Francisco about the time when he himself arrived (Aug. 18, 1849). He and his brother Michael, who had come to San Francisco in the preceding June, formed the partnership of J. & M. Phelan, and carried on a thriving and highly profitable trade until Michael's death in 1858. Thereafter, James continued the business, enlarging the scope of the enterprise and planning all his ventures with rare judgment and foresight. During the Civil War he was among the first of California merchants to include in his operations exportations of large quantities of California wool and wheat to New York and even to foreign markets—always at a handsome profit. For some years, success in the wholesale liquor business added to his rapidly accumulating fortune. He was no less shrewd and successful in real-estate investments, not only in San Francisco and other parts of California, but also in Oregon and in New York City. So conservatively were his purchases made that it is said no mortgage was ever recorded or made against any of his property. At the same time he loaned large sums on first and second real-estate mortgages. On land owned by him, he erected (1881–82) the Phelan Building, one of the first of modern buildings in San Francisco. He also erected a number of blocks in San José.

By 1869, his fortune had become so great that he retired from commercial pursuits, spent a year in European travel with his family, and, upon his return, entered the field of banking, which was to be his chief interest during the rest of his life. In November 1870 he made a trip to Washington and obtained the charter for the first national bank in California, the First National Gold Bank, which is now (1934) operating as the Crocker First National Bank. Phelan was its first president and for many years was a director. In 1889, with James G. Fair [*q.v.*] and others, he helped organize the Mutual Savings Bank in San Francisco, and was its first vice-president. He was also vice-president of the American Contracting & Dredging Company for dredging the French Panama Canal, a project which brought him large returns. He was identified with the organization of the Firemen's Fund Insurance Company, and later with the Western Fire & Marine

Phelan

Insurance Company. By 1890 his financial interests had become so extensive that he formed a partnership with his brother John, who had been his New York agent in earlier years; and later, with his only son, James Duval Phelan [*q.v.*]. On May 12, 1859, he married Alice Kelly, daughter of Jeremiah Kelly of Brooklyn, N. Y. She, a son, and two daughters survived him. He died at his unpretentious San Francisco home, and was buried in Holy Cross Cemetery, San Mateo County. His will, disposing of an estate valued at nearly $7,500,000, contained generous bequests for churches, schools, orphanages, and asylums both in California and in his native country. He was a Catholic in religion and an independent Democrat in politics.

[S. B. F. Clark, *How Many Miles from St. Jo? The Log of Sterling B. F. Clark a Forty-Niner . . . together with a Brief Autobiography of James Phelan . . .* (1929); *In Memoriam: James Phelan—Read at a Meeting of the Society of California Pioneers, San Francisco, Apr. 3, 1893* (n.d.); W. F. Swasey, *The Early Days and Men of Cal.* (1891); Alonzo Phelps, *Contemporary Biog. of California's Representative Men* (1881); *The Builders of a Great City: San Francisco's Representative Men* (1891); H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.*, vol. VII (1890); *San Francisco: Its Builders Past and Present* (1918), vol. I; R. D. Hunt, *Cal. and Californians* (1926), vol. V; I. B. Cross, *Financing an Empire: Hist. of Banking in Cal.* (1927), vols. I, III; *Examiner* (San Francisco), *Evening Bulletin* (San Francisco), and *San Francisco Chronicle*, Dec. 24, 1892; date of birth established by photographic reproduction of autograph MS., at the Soc. of Cal. Pioneers.]

P. O. R.

PHELAN, JAMES (Dec. 7, 1856–Jan. 30, 1891), author, congressman from Tennessee, was born at Aberdeen, Miss., the grandson of John Phelan, an Irish immigrant who settled in Alabama. His parents were Eliza Jones (Moore) and James Phelan, a lawyer, editor, and Confederate States senator from Mississippi. In 1867 he was sent to school in Huntsville, Ala., and after the family removed to Memphis, Tenn., the next year, he was taught by his father and by private teachers there. Later he attended Kentucky Military Institute. In the winter semester of 1874–75 he became a student at the University of Leipzig and in 1878 was granted the degree of Ph.D. In his dissertation of sixty-four pages, printed in 1878, *On Philip Massinger*, the Elizabethan playwright, he wrote that "the author imagines he has possibly discovered a key for that most intricate problem, in what plays Massinger and Fletcher wrote together" (p. 64). With the exception of delightful allusions to the Elizabethans in subsequent political utterances, he forsook the drama and, returning to Memphis, studied law.

In 1881 he purchased the *Memphis Avalanche*. To the promptings of friends that he enter poli-

tics, he was unresponsive till in 1886 he consented to enter the race for the Democratic congressional nomination from the district that included the city of Memphis, and he was nominated over Josiah Patterson. With acutely developed ideas of propriety, he refused to permit his own paper to promote his candidacy, and the editor continued to express views divergent from his on the sectional issue and the negro question. Where as the editor regarded negro suffrage as "the irritating menace to peace and good order" (*Memphis Avalanche,* Aug. 14, 1889) and urged that the South could not "afford to divide on any question" (*Ibid.,* July 13, 1889), Phelan accepted "the citizenship of the negro race" and designated negroes as "our fellow-Americans, our fellow-Tennesseeans" with rights "as sacred as ours," who "can demand . . . all the privileges that flow from a free ballot and a fair count" (*The New South . . . Speech . . . at Covington, Tenn. on . . . 2nd of Oct. 1886,* 1886, p. 4). Not only on the negro question but on the tariff issue, he opposed Southern agricultural interests. He supported not free trade but a revision of the tariff by which protection would be accorded to infant Southern industries. He defeated his Republican opponent, Zachary Taylor, by a large majority. In 1888 he was renominated without opposition and was reëlected. His seat was contested, however, by his Republican opponent, Lucian B. Eaton, "a Carpet-bagger" and the author of a letter, "worthy of a Brownlow" aiming to stir up race trouble and sectional prejudice (*Memphis Avalanche,* Oct. 31, Jan. 25, 1888). Eaton charged the Democrats with the use of fraudulent ballots, the employment of disreputable election officers, the voting of repeaters and, above all, with the intimidation of negroes. Phelan published counter charges that specified the persons bribed by Eaton and the exact amounts of the bribes (*Ibid.,* Jan. 25, 1889). The case was still pending when Phelan died, a victim of tuberculosis in Nassau, New Providence, where he had gone for his health. He was survived by his widow, Mary (Early) Phelan, the niece of Jubal Early [*q.v.*] and by three children. He left as a monument to his training and industry a *History of Tennessee* (1888), in which he "endeavored to be accurate and impartial . . . to show the simple grandeur and homely nobility of the men who shaped the early destinies of the state of Tennessee" (*Memphis Avalanche,* Mar. 27, 1889).

[*Memorial Addresses on the Life and Character of James Phelan . . . in the House of Representatives and . . . Senate* (1891); "Vita" in dissertation, *ante*; J. M. Keating, *Hist. of . . . Memphis* (1888), pt. 3, pp. 232–43; *Contested-Election Case of L. B. Eaton vs. James Phelan* (2 pts., 1889); *Chattanooga Daily Times* and *Memphis Appeal-Avalanche* for Feb. 8, 1891.] M. B. H.

PHELAN, JAMES DUVAL (Apr. 20, 1861–Aug. 7, 1930), mayor of San Francisco, United States senator, was born in San Francisco, the only son of James [1824–1892, *q.v.*] and Alice (Kelly) Phelan. He was graduated from St. Ignatius College, San Francisco, in 1881, studied law for a year at the University of California, then traveled for two years. Influenced by his father, he abandoned his early ambition to become a lawyer and writer for a business career, first as partner with, later as heir and successor to his father in the banking business. Eventually, he became president of the Mutual Savings Bank, chairman of the board of directors of the United Bank and Trust Company, and a director of the First National Bank and First Federal Trust Company. As vice-president of the California World's Columbian Exposition Commission, in 1893, he personally attended to the details of constructing the California Building at Chicago, and so wisely managed the affair that $20,000 of the original appropriation was returned to the state treasury. The following year, he took an active part in organizing the Midwinter International Exposition in San Francisco.

During the early nineties, San Francisco was one of the most boss-ridden and corruptly governed cities in the country. Without previous political experience, Phelan was in 1897 selected by the reform element as its candidate for mayor. Elected and twice reëlected, he placed San Francisco in the forefront of well-governed cities. From the beginning, he pugnaciously attacked the corrupt board of supervisors, striking at graft wherever it showed its head. He was credited with saving the city over $300,000 a year by vetoing "jobs" in the board of supervisors. His most enduring achievement was his effective leadership in the drafting and adoption of a new charter for the city, which was adopted over the opposition of both old party machines. Other constructive work distinguished his administration—the beautification of the streets, the building of parks and playgrounds, the erection of fountains. Later, he was personally responsible for the "Burnham plan," from which ultimately came the present civic center of San Francisco. The chief criticism of his administration came in its last year (1901), when, during the strike of the teamsters' union, he placed policemen on trucks driven by non-union men. This led to numerous outbreaks of violence and earned for him the bitter hostility of organized labor—a fact which played a part in the election of his successor. In the fight against the notorious Schmitz-Ruef régime which followed, especially during 1906–08, Phelan took a prominent part, aggres-

sively backing Rudolph Spreckels in the campaign which resulted in the prosecution and conviction of Schmitz and Ruef. During his term as mayor, Phelan took important steps at his own expense whereby San Francisco was eventually able to acquire the right to bring its water supply from the Hetch Hetchy Valley. Afterwards, in 1903 and again in 1913, he headed a San Francisco delegation to Washington on behalf of the project. In the earthquake and fire of April 1906, he lost much but gave unstintedly of his time and means to the work of aiding the suffering and rebuilding the city. To him personally, rather than to the untrustworthy city government, President Roosevelt sent a national relief fund of $10,000,000, which, with a vast amount of supplies, was distributed by the relief organization of which Phelan was president. In 1913 he was appointed commissioner to Europe to support the invitation of the President to foreign countries to participate in the Panama-Pacific International Exposition of 1915.

Apart from serving as delegate to the Democratic National Convention in 1900, Phelan's political activity prior to 1914 had been restricted to the field of municipal government. In that year, however, he was the successful Democratic candidate for the United States Senate, serving from 1915 to 1921. Before commencing his term, he was appointed by Secretary of State, Robert Lansing, commissioner to investigate charges against James M. Sullivan, American minister to the Dominican Republic; and in his report (May 9, 1915) he recommended the minister's recall. Chief among the committees on which he served in the Senate were those on railroads, coast defense, interoceanic canals, public lands, and naval affairs. He participated in debates upon various measures, and vigorously advocated exclusion of Orientals. He gave the Wilson administration his undivided support until the close of the war; but he favored divorcing the Covenant of the League of Nations from the Treaty of Versailles. He was candidate for reëlection in 1920, but was defeated by his Republican rival, Samuel M. Shortridge. At the conclusion of his senatorial term, he retired from politics, though appearing as the head of the California delegation to the Democratic National Convention of 1924, where he made the speech nominating William Gibbs McAdoo for the presidency.

Phelan's was a many-sided career. In 1898 he was appointed regent of the University of California for a sixteen-year term. On important public occasions, he was an exceptionally pleasing speaker. He also contributed to the field of letters, both in prose and verse, although much

that he wrote was never published. He gave discerning and substantial encouragement to many young painters, sculptors, musicians, and poets, and bequeathed his beautiful Spanish-Italian villa, "Montalvo," at Saratoga, Cal., to the San Francisco Art Association. He was a collector of art treasures, and to him San Francisco is indebted for large gifts of statuary and other works of art. He died, unmarried, at "Montalvo."

[R. D. Hunt, *Cal. and Californians* (1926), vol. IV; *Complimentary Banquet Given to Hon. James D. Phelan by the Officials of the City of San Francisco . . . Dec. 28, 1901* (1901); *Meetings of the Board of Supervisors of the City and County of San Francisco: Memorial Services in Honor of the Late Senator James D. Phelan* (1930); Fremont Older, *My Own Story* (2nd ed., 1926); *Overland Mo.*, Nov. 1930; *San Francisco Chronicle*, Aug. 8, 14, 1930; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *San Francisco: Its Builders Past and Present* (1918), vol. I.]

P. O. R.

PHELPS, ALMIRA HART LINCOLN (July 15, 1793–July 15, 1884), pioneer educator, author, the daughter of Capt. Samuel and Lydia (Hinsdale) Hart, was born in Berlin, Conn. On her father's side she was a descendant of Thomas Hooker [*q.v.*], one of the original proprietors of Hartford. The education of her early years, under the care of unusually sympathetic and intellectual parents, was supplemented later in more formal fashion at the "select" school of her sister, Emma (Hart) Willard [*q.v.*], at Middlebury, Vt., at Berlin Academy, and in 1812 at the Female Academy of Pittsfield, Mass. Later she acquired a knowledge of Latin, Greek, French, and Spanish, the sciences—including botany, chemistry, and geology—and mathematics. Meantime, at the age of sixteen, she began teaching, first in a district school near Hartford, where she "boarded round," then, in rapid succession, at Berlin and New Britain, Conn., and in an academy at Sandy Hill, N. Y., of which she was principal.

Her career as teacher was interrupted by her marriage in 1817 to Simeon Lincoln, editor of the *Connecticut Mirror* (Hartford). To them were born three children. After the death of her husband in 1823, she began educational work of importance in association with her sister at Troy Female Seminary, 1823–31, where she served as acting principal while her sister was in Europe. In 1831 she became the wife of Judge John Phelps of Vermont, who was a sympathetic and interested associate in her work as author and teacher till his death in 1849. To them were born a son, Charles E. Phelps [*q.v.*], and a daughter. Returning to teaching in 1838, she became principal of the West Chester (Pa.) Young Ladies' Seminary, later accepted a position at Rahway, N. J., and in 1841 began her service at Patapsco

Female Institute, Ellicott City, Md., where she concluded active teaching in 1856. Removing thence to Baltimore, she devoted her energies to occasional writing and speaking till her death.

Early giving proof of a brilliant mind, she entered the field of authorship with an essay, "On the Duties and Responsibilities of the Teacher," which she read as a substitute when, a candidate for a teaching position, she could not tell her examiners the "exact distance of the largest fixed star from the planet Mars." Under the influence of Prof. Amos Eaton [*q.v.*] of the Rensselaer Institute, she perfected her knowledge of the sciences and published a series of textbooks, which became popular in the schools; they included *Familiar Lectures on Botany* (1829); *Dictionary of Chemistry* (1830), translated from the French of L. N. Vauquelin; *Botany for Beginners* (1833); *Geology for Beginners* (1834); *Chemistry for Beginners* (1834); *Natural Philosophy for Beginners* (1836); *Lectures on Natural Philosophy* (1836); and *Lectures on Chemistry* (1837). Her views on physical education were doubtless much influenced by her collaboration with her sister in the preparation of *Progressive Education* (1835), a translation of the first part of Madame Necker de Saussure's *L'Education progressive.* More general in nature, but providing an insight into her character and educational work, are *Caroline Westerly* (1833); *Lectures to Young Ladies* (1833), republished in 1836 under the title *The Female Student; or Lectures to Young Ladies*; *Ida Norman* (1848); *Christian Households* (1858); *Hours with My Pupils* (1859); and *Our Country in its Relation to the Past, Present and Future* (1864), of which she was editor. She also contributed articles on various phases of education to periodicals and newspapers. In 1838 she addressed the College of Professional Teachers on "Female Education," in 1866 she spoke before the American Association for the Advancement of Science on the "Work of Edward Hitchcock," and, later, on the "Infidel Tendencies of Modern Science." She became the second woman member of this Association, and was also long active in the Maryland Academy of Science.

Her career as educator was noteworthy, for her popularization of the sciences as fit subjects for girls' education; for her championship of the movement for physical education; for her promotion of a school for girls, Patapsco Female Institute, which became to the South what Troy Female Seminary was to the North—the best substitute for college in a day when colleges for women were unknown; and finally, for her emphasis on training young women for teaching, which carried the renown of her Institute to many parts of the United States. During her lifetime the content of girls' education changed from "polite" folderol to a substantial "mental discipline," based on the sciences, mathematics, modern and ancient languages. Through her books and the institutions she served, she was an influential contributor to this change. In the *Female Student; or Lectures to Young Ladies,* her conception of formal discipline of the mind is best set forth.

[Valuable biographical material may be found in Almira Phelps's numerous books and articles; see also Emma L. Bolzau, "Almira Hart Lincoln Phelps" (MS., Univ. of Pa., soon to be published); Barnard's *Am. Jour. of Education,* Sept. 1868; Thomas Woody, *A Hist. of Women's Education in the U. S.* (2 vols., 1929); Alfred Andrews, *The Geneal. Hist. of Deacon Stephen Hart and His Descendants* (1875); *The Phelps Family of America* (1899); *Sun* (Baltimore), July 16, 1884; manuscript material relating to her work at Patapsco Female Institute is in the Md. Hist. Soc., Baltimore.]

T. W.

PHELPS, ANSON GREENE (Mar. 24, 1781–Nov. 30, 1853), merchant and philanthropist, was born at Simsbury, Conn., the youngest of the four sons of Thomas and Dorothy (Woodbridge) Phelps. He was the descendant in the sixth generation of George Phelps who, with his brother William, emigrated from Gloucestershire, England, to Dorchester, Mass., about 1630 and five years later removed to Windsor, Conn. His father was a part owner in a saw- and gristmill at Simsbury and had served through most of the Revolution. After his parents died, his father in 1789 and his mother in 1795, the orphaned boy spent the next few years in the home of the local minister learning the saddler's trade from his elder brother, who became his guardian. Shortly after the opening of the century he settled in Hartford and there followed his trade. On Oct. 26, 1806, he was married to Olivia Eggleston, who bore him seven daughters and one son. His first successful mercantile operation was in manufacturing a large number of saddles and shipping them south. His business prospered; he established a branch in Charleston, S. C., and soon he was extending his interests in other lines, particularly in the merchandising and importing of tin plate and other metals. About 1812 he removed to New York, where he associated himself in business with Elisha Peck under the firm name of Phelps, Peck & Company. This company soon became one of the leading concerns in the country in the importing and merchandising of various metals and began to extend its operations into metal manufacturing at Haverstraw and elsewhere in New York state. The partnership was dissolved in 1828. The chief setback to a business career of almost uninterrupted success

came in 1832, when a large warehouse he had recently constructed at the corner of Cliff and Fulton streets collapsed with the loss of several lives. At this time he invited his two sons-in-law, William Earl Dodge [*q.v.*] and Daniel James, the father of Daniel Willis James [*q.v.*], to join him as partners in the firm of Phelps, Dodge & Company. Under the direction of Phelps and Dodge the firm expanded its interests from merchandising into manufacturing, mining, and railroads. In the middle thirties it became interested in copper manufacturing at Birmingham on the Naugatuck River in Connecticut. Prevented from extending north along the Naugatuck, Phelps and his associates purchased a site farther south, erected a dam, a factory, and some dwelling houses. From this grew the city of Ansonia, named in his honor. Later the Birmingham Copper Mills were consolidated with the Ansonia Manufacturing Company as the Ansonia Brass and Copper Company. Phelps, Dodge & Company was important in the development of Lake Superior copper and Pennsylvania iron, and its loans to George W. Scranton [*q.v.*] and his brother were important to the growth of the city of Scranton (Martyn, *post,* pp. 146–47).

Phelps was as well known in his lifetime as a philanthropist as he was as a business man. Extracts printed from his diary indicate a man with an intense desire to follow the Christian teaching, and his life did not belie his piety. He spent an hour each morning in prayer and other devout exercises, and he frequently presided at the weekly prayer-meetings of the Presbyterian Church. He generously supported and at some time acted as president of the American Bible Society, the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, the American Home Missionary Society, the New York Institute for the Education of the Blind, and the Colonization Society of the State of Connecticut. He was particularly interested in the latter as affording the best method of dealing with negro slavery. After an extended European trip in pursuit of health he died in New York leaving almost $600,000 of his large fortune to religious and benevolent purposes (Martyn, *post,* p. 154).

[G. E. Prentiss, *A Sermon Preached on the Death of Anson G. Phelps with some Extracts from his Diary* (1854); J. L. Rockey, *Hist. of New Haven County, Conn.* (1892), vol. II, 479; Carlos Martyn, *Wm. E. Dodge* (1890); D. S. Dodge, *Memorials of Wm. E. Dodge* (1887), pp. 17–19; O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *Phelps Family* (1899), vol. II.] H. U. F.

PHELPS, AUSTIN (Jan. 7, 1820–Oct. 13, 1890), Congregational clergyman, homilete, son of Rev. Eliakim and Sarah (Adams) Phelps, and a descendant of William Phelps who came from England to Massachusetts in 1630 and was one of the first settlers of Dorchester, was born in West Brookfield, Mass. His early experiences and schooling were determined largely by the peregrinations of his father, who moved to Pittsfield, Mass., in 1826, where he was principal of a young ladies' high school; and in 1830, to Geneva, N. Y., where he was pastor of the First Presbyterian Church. While the family was in Pittsfield, Austin attended the Berkshire Gymnasium, conducted by Dr. Chester Dewey [*q.v.*], and spent a year at Wilbraham Academy, Wilbraham, Mass. After the removal to Geneva, he entered Hobart College, being at that time thirteen years old. At the close of his second year there, he transferred to Amherst, and in December 1835, his father having taken up his residence in Philadelphia, he enrolled in the University of Pennsylvania, from which he graduated in 1837. Following a year of historical reading under Professor Henry Reed, he studied at Union Theological Seminary and the Yale Divinity School, but without having completed a regular theological course he was licensed to preach by the Third Presbytery of Philadelphia in 1840, and on Mar. 31, 1842, ordained as pastor of the Pine Street Congregational Church, Boston. In September of this year he married Elizabeth Stuart, daughter of Moses Stuart [*q.v.*], professor at Andover Theological Seminary, where Phelps was for a short time a resident licentiate. His wife was later a writer of popular stories and sketches under the pseudonym "H. Trusta," and one of their three children, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps Ward [*q.v.*], also became a writer. After the death of his first wife in 1852, Phelps married, April 1854, her sister Mary, then suffering from tuberculosis, and cared for her until she died some two years later; and in June 1858, he married Mary A., daughter of Samuel Johnson of Boston.

After a successful six years' pastorate, in 1848 he was called to Andover Seminary to be professor of sacred rhetoric and homiletics. This position he held for three decades, during the last of which he was also chairman of the faculty. In 1879 he was made professor emeritus, having resigned because of ill health, and the remainder of his life was spent in semi-invalidism, although he was able to do much writing. In the theological war waged at Andover during the last years of his life he aligned himself prominently with the conservatives. His published works were numerous, and are devotional, homiletical, and theological in character. With E. A. Park and Lowell Mason he prepared *The Sabbath Hymn Book; for the Service of Song in the*

House of the Lord (1858), and with Park and D. L. Furber, *Hymns and Choirs; or the Matter and the Manner of the Service of Song in the House of the Lord* (1860). Another book, *The Still Hour; or Communion with God*, which appeared in 1860, was also issued in London and Edinburgh, and circulated to the extent of 200,000 copies. In 1867 *The New Birth, or the Work of the Holy Spirit* was published, and *Sabbath Hours* in 1875. In the early eighties came a series of widely read homiletical works: *The Theory of Preaching; Lectures on Homiletics* (1881); *Men and Books; or Studies in Homiletics* (1882); *English Style in Public Discourse; with Special Reference to the Usages of the Pulpit* (1883), reissued in 1895, with alterations and additions, as *Rhetoric; Its Theory and Practice.* Subsequent works were *My Study and Other Essays* (1886) and *My Note-book; Fragmentary Studies in Theology and Subjects Adjacent Thereto* (1891). He also contributed much to the *Congregationalist.* His death occurred at Bar Harbor, Me., in his seventy-first year.

[E. S. Phelps, *Austin Phelps; a Memoir* (1891); O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family of America* (2 vols., 1899); *Eighth Gen. Cat. of the Yale Divinity School . . . 1822–1922* (1922); *Gen. Cat. of the Theolog. Sem., Andover, Mass., 1808–1908* (n.d.); *Congregationalist,* Oct. 23, 1890; *Boston Transcript,* Oct. 13, 1890.]

H. E. S.

PHELPS, CHARLES EDWARD (May 1, 1833–Dec. 27, 1908), jurist, soldier, congressman, author, was born in Guilford, Windham County, Vt., the son of John and Almira (Hart) Lincoln Phelps [*q.v.*], and a descendant of William Phelps who emigrated from England to Dorchester, Mass., in 1630. His father was a lawyer of reputation in Vermont and his mother was a teacher and the author of a series of popular scientific textbooks. In 1841 she assumed charge of the Patapsco Female Institute at Ellicott City, Md.

Phelps attended school at St. Timothy's Hall, near Catonsville, Md., and graduated from the College of New Jersey in 1852. The following year he spent at the Harvard Law School and then studied in the office of Robert J. Brent of Baltimore, a former attorney general of the state. After traveling abroad, he began the practice of law in Baltimore in 1855 and was admitted to practice in the United States Supreme Court in 1859. He was a major in the Maryland National Guard (1858–61), which he helped to organize to suppress the Know-Nothings; in 1860 he was elected to the city council of Baltimore on a reform ticket. When as a child he visited an elder brother at Fortress Monroe, he had acquired a taste for military life, but he was so out of sympathy with the outbreak of hostilities in 1861 that he disobeyed orders and resigned from the Maryland National Guard. Later, however, Aug. 20, 1862, he accepted a lieutenant-colonelcy in the 7th Maryland Volunteers. Twice when in action horses were shot from under him, one at the battle of the Wilderness and one at Laurel Hill, near Spotsylvania on May 8, 1864, where he was wounded, captured, and then recaptured by Custer's cavalry. He had been promoted to colonel on Apr. 13 of the same year; on Sept. 9, he was honorably discharged and on Mar. 13, 1865, brevetted brigadier-general for "gallant and meritorious service." Thirty-three years later, Mar. 30, 1898, he was awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor.

During four years in Congress (1865–69), being elected the first time as a Union war candidate and the second as a Union conservative, Phelps opposed radical measures, for his position, he said, was "radical in war and conservative in peace." The duty devolved upon him of supporting the claims of Annapolis as the site of the United States Naval Academy which, during the war, had been temporarily removed to Newport, R. I. He voted for issues regardless of party lines, served on the committees on naval affairs, militia, and appropriations, and was conspicuous as an antagonist of James G. Blaine. He declined an executive appointment as judge of the court of appeals of Maryland in 1867. On Dec. 29, 1868, he married Martha Woodward, and at the expiration of his second term in Congress returned to Baltimore, where he resumed practice of the law in association with John V. L. Findlay. In 1876 he served as commissioner of public schools and the following year commanded the 8th Maryland Regiment, which was called out to preserve order during the strike riots. He was president of the Maryland Association of Union Veterans and a member of various scientific, historical, military, and social organizations. In 1872 he read a paper on "Planetary Motion and Solar Heat" before the American Association for the Advancement of Science.

His later years were occupied with work as judge, professor, and author. From 1882 until his retirement, Mar. 1, 1908, he was a judge of the supreme bench of Baltimore, an incumbency which was extended beyond the age limit by an act of the Maryland legislature; for twenty-three years (1884–1907) he filled the chair of equity jurisprudence and pleading and practice in the law school of the University of Maryland. An able and hard-working jurist, he nevertheless found leisure to write two books of considerable merit, *Juridical Equity* (1894), a treatise on

equity jurisprudence, and *Falstaff and Equity* (1901), which was first published as a series of articles in *Shakespeariana* (July, October 1892, April 1893), and is an analysis of the meaning of the phrase "An the Prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring" (1 *Henry IV*, Act II, scene 2). Phelps died in Baltimore, and was buried in Woodlawn Cemetery. He had four sons and two daughters.

[Phelps's carefully compiled scrapbooks are in the possession of his son, F. H. Phelps, Baltimore, Md.; for published biog. material, see O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family of America* (2 vols., 1899); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Proc. of the Memorial Meeting of the Bench and Bar of Baltimore City in Memory of Charles Edward Phelps, Late Judge of the Supreme Bench of Baltimore City, January the Eleventh, Nineteen Hundred and Nine* (n.d.); *Report of the Fourteenth Ann. Meeting of the Md. State Bar Asso.* (1909); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Md.* (1879), vol. III; H. E. Shepherd, *The Representative Authors of Md.* (1911); *Sun* (Baltimore), Dec. 27, 1908.] H. C.

PHELPS, EDWARD JOHN (July 11, 1822–Mar. 9, 1900), lawyer, diplomat, was born in Middlebury, Vt., the son of Samuel S. and Frances (Shurtleff) Phelps and a descendant of William Phelps who emigrated from England in 1630 and was one of the founders of Windsor, Conn. His father graduated from Yale College in 1811 and the following year removed to Middlebury, Vt., where he resided until his death in 1855. He won distinction at the Vermont bar, served from 1831 to 1838 as a judge of the supreme court of Vermont, and for thirteen years as United States senator from Vermont. Edward J. Phelps graduated from Middlebury College in 1840 and attended the Yale Law School in 1841–42. He completed his preparation for the bar in the office of Horatio Seymour of Middlebury, was admitted to the Vermont bar in 1843, and began practice in Middlebury. In 1845 he removed to Burlington, Vt., which was his home thereafter. In politics he was a Whig, like his father, until the disintegration of that party, when he became a Democrat. In 1851 he was appointed by President Fillmore second comptroller of the United States Treasury, holding that office until the close of the Fillmore administration. As a Democrat in a strongly Republican state he naturally enjoyed slight political preferment in Vermont. He served as state's attorney of Chittenden County, and sat in the state constitutional convention of 1870. In 1880 he was the Democratic candidate for the governorship, and in 1890 and again in 1892 the candidate of his party for the United States senatorship.

At the Vermont bar he attained a position of leadership in a group of lawyers which included such distinguished men as Luke P. Poland, Jacob Collamer, and George F. Edmunds. While in active practice he appeared in most of the important cases before the Vermont courts, including the litigation concerning the Vermont railroads, which at intervals for a quarter of a century engaged the attention of both the state and federal courts. He also appeared in important cases before the United States Supreme Court. His acknowledged strength and success as a lawyer lay in his grasp of fundamental principles rather than in mastery of legal technicalities or factual details. His legal career culminated in his service, under appointment of President Harrison, as counsel for the United States in the fur-seal arbitration of 1893 between the United States and Great Britain, his associate counsel being Frederic R. Coudert and James C. Carter [*qq.v.*]. His closing argument before the arbitral tribunal, extending over a period of ten days, was an elaborate and able digest of the American case. He was the first president of the Vermont Bar Association, and in 1880 he was elected president of the American Bar Association. In 1888 his appointment to the office of chief justice of the United States Supreme Court, made vacant by the death of Morrison R. Waite, was seriously considered by President Cleveland, but political considerations growing out of his diplomatic service in England were successfully urged against him.

In 1881 he became Kent Professor of Law in Yale University, continuing to hold that chair until his death except for the period of his residence in London. From 1880 to 1883 he was professor of medical jurisprudence in the University of Vermont, his lectures on that subject having been published; and in 1882 he lectured on constitutional law at Boston University. His public career culminated in his appointment by President Cleveland, in 1885, as minister to Great Britain as the successor of James Russell Lowell. Although he was without previous diplomatic experience, his mission at the Court of St. James's was eminently successful. By his tact and ability in the discharge of his official duties, his personal charm, broad culture, and felicity as an occasional public speaker, he won for himself an assured place in the official and social life of England, materially strengthening the ties of friendship between the two countries. Among the important diplomatic matters with which he was called upon to deal were the question of American fishery rights in Canadian North-Atlantic waters, the Bering Sea fur-seal question, which later went to arbitration, the boundary dispute between Venezuela and Great Britain, which in Cleveland's second administration oc-

casioned strained relations between the United States and Great Britain, and the negotiation of an extradition treaty. His diplomatic service terminated early in 1889. As a public speaker he appeared on several notable occasions, among his better-known addresses being one on Chief Justice Marshall delivered in 1879 before the American Bar Association; an address on "The Law of the Land" delivered in 1886 before the Edinburgh Philosophical Institution; an address delivered in New York, in 1890, at the centennial celebration of the federal judiciary; and an address on the Monroe Doctrine before the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences in 1896. He wrote occasional essays dealing chiefly with legal and political subjects. He died at New Haven, Conn., in his seventy-eighth year. He had married, on Aug. 13, 1845, Mary L. Haight, by whom he had four children.

[There is a memoir of Phelps by J. W. Stewart in Phelps's *Orations and Essays* (1901), ed. by J. G. McCullough. See also: M. H. Buckham, "The Life and Pub. Services of Edw. John Phelps," *Proc. Vt. Hist. Soc. . . . 1899–1900* (1901); W. H. Crockett, *Vermont: The Green Mountain State*, vol. IV (1921), and D. L. Cady's biography of Phelps in Crockett's *Vermonters: A Book of Biogs.* (1931); *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1886–88; *Cat. of . . . Middlebury Coll. . . . 1800–1915* (1917); *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1900; O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family of America* (2 vols., 1899); *N. Y. Tribune, Burlington Daily Free Press*, Mar. 10, 1900. Phelps's argument in the fur-seal arbitration is contained in *Senate Executive Document 177*, 53 Cong., 2 Sess.]

E. C. M.

PHELPS, ELIZABETH STUART, 1815–1852, and

PHELPS, ELIZABETH STUART, 1844–1911 [See WARD, ELIZABETH STUART PHELPS, 1844–1911].

PHELPS, GUY ROWLAND (Apr. 1, 1802–Mar. 18, 1869), founder of the Connecticut Mutual Life Insurance Company, was born at Simsbury, Conn., the seventh of eight children of Noah Amherst and Charlotte (Wilcox) Phelps. He was the descendant of William Phelps who, with his brother George, emigrated from England to Dorchester, Mass., about 1630 and later was one of the first settlers of Windsor, Conn. The boy was graduated from the Medical Institution of Yale College in 1825 and taught school for several winters, devoting his summers to the study of medicine. After this training under local doctors he went to New York to study under Valentine Mott [*q.v.*] and Alexander Mott. He opened an office in New York and practised for a time there and later in Simsbury, when the failure of his health forced him to return there. On Mar. 20, 1833, he was married at Simsbury to Hannah, the daughter of Wait Latimer. After

Phelps

returning to New York and again to Simsbury he was convinced that he lacked the physique necessary for the duties of a successful physician. About 1837 he removed to Hartford and opened a drug store. His drug business prospered from the start. One of his formulas, "Phelps's Tomato Pill," had an extended sale, and the returns from this with the profits of his drug store laid the basis for his fortune.

The delicate health that had proved a handicap to his career as a physician early aroused his interest in life insurance. That business was then in its earliest infancy in America and was eyed dubiously by the general population. However, he made a diligent study of life insurance as carried on in England and the United States, became convinced of the soundness of the idea, and determined to found a mutual company to promote it. After interesting a number of friends and relatives in the project, he wrote a charter for the Connecticut Mutual Life Insurance Company and fought through two sessions of the legislature to have it granted in 1846. In the summer of that year the company was organized with him as secretary. Until his death, twenty-three years later, he remained the dominating influence in the organization, acting as secretary of the company until 1866 and as president from 1866 to 1869. Though not the originator of the mutual system of insurance, he did much to popularize it. For its day, the charter was unusual in the care with which it safeguarded the interests of the policy holders, and the business methods of the company were based on the conservative English practice with some slight modifications to meet American conditions. Before business was started, nineteen men, six of whom were his relatives, guaranteed $50,000, and no policies were issued until applications for $100,000 had been received. Shortly after the organization he went to England to make a further study of English insurance practice. Good financial management and rigid economy carried the company successfully through the panic of 1857 and the boom period of the Civil War. The economy of the company is illustrated by the fact that in the early years Phelps swept out his own office, and friends often met him on the street carrying kindling under his arm to light his office fire. He was a man of quiet habits and studious mind, particularly interested in languages and history. Deeply concerned with public affairs, he served his townsmen as a member of the city council, 1846–47, and as alderman, 1856–59. He was survived by his wife and one of their four children.

[*Commemorative Biog. Record of Hartford County, Conn.* (1901); G. L. Clark, *A Hist. of Conn.* (1914);

P. H. Woodward, *Insurance in Conn.* (1897); *The Conn. Mutual Educational Course*, published by Conn. Mutual Life Insurance Co. (1920); O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family in America* (1899), vol. I.]

H. U. F.

PHELPS, JOHN SMITH (Dec. 22, 1814–Nov. 20, 1886), congressman, governor of Missouri, was born at Simsbury, Conn., the son of Lucy (Smith) and Elisha Phelps, a member of Congress from 1819 to 1821 and from 1825 to 1829. He was the descendant of William Phelps who emigrated from England about 1630 and the cousin of Guy Rowland Phelps [*q.v.*]. He attended common school at Simsbury and then entered Washington College at Hartford, now Trinity College. He left before graduating on account of his refusal to take the part assigned to him on the Commencement program. In 1859 he was given the degree of A.B. as of the class of 1832. He studied law under his father and was admitted to the bar in 1835. On Apr. 30, 1837, he married Mary Whitney of Portland, Me. Later in the same year the bride and groom settled at Springfield, Mo., where their five children were born. In the small frontier town he prospered and quickly became a leading lawyer of southwest Missouri. He was elected to the state legislature in 1840.

Four years later he was elected to Congress as a Democrat and served in that body continuously for eighteen years thereafter. Within a short time he won distinction as an able and influential debater. Among the leading policies and projects that he advocated were the allotment of adequate bounties to soldiers, government aid for railroads, the establishment of an overland mail service to California, and cheaper postage. After a long fight the postage on ordinary letters was reduced to three cents. He was a leading advocate of the early admission of Oregon and California to the Union. For ten years he was a member of the committee on ways and means and from 1858 to 1860 was its chairman. Although he was not counted as extraordinarily brilliant, nevertheless, his contemporaries appreciated his faithfulness and his efficiency as well as his friendliness. During the last six or seven years of his service in Congress his ability as well as his position of seniority made him the logical candidate for the speakership, but his Northern birth and his Union political convictions caused him to be defeated for the place. When the Civil War broke out he went home, organized the Phelps Regiment, and led it in some of the hardest fighting at the battle of Pea Ridge, Ark. In July 1862 he was appointed by Lincoln military governor of Arkansas, but he soon resigned the position on account of the failure of his health. In his wife he had an able helpmate. During the war her home was turned into a hospital, and she took care of the body of Gen. Nathaniel Lyon [*q.v.*] after the battle of Wilson's Creek. For such services Congress voted her the sum of $20,000, which she used to establish an orphans' home at Springfield for the children of both Union and Confederate soldiers.

In 1864 he resumed his law practice in Springfield. He was the Democratic candidate for governor of Missouri in 1868, but owing to the wholesale disfranchisements of the Drake constitution he was defeated. Under the more liberal constitution of 1875 he became an ideal candidate because he could unify the Northern and Southern factions in Missouri Democracy. In 1876 he was easily elected, and he served the full four-year term. During his administration there was much agitation over strikes, chiefly of railway employees, and over the Greenback movement. He suppressed the strikes with vigor. The movement for currency reform, thanks to the steady economic recovery from the panic of 1873, produced no acute problem for him to solve. He was in hearty accord with the strong contemporary movement looking toward a more liberal support of the public schools of the state. Upon his retirement from office the *St. Louis Globe Democrat* said that "it will hardly be disputed that Missouri never had a better governor than John S. Phelps" (Jan. 12, 1881).

[Walter Williams and F. C. Shoemaker, *Missouri* (1930), vols. I, II; *The Bench and Bar of St. Louis . . . and other . . . Cities* (1884); W. B. Stevens, *Centennial Hist. of Mo.* (1921), vol. II; H. L. Conard, *Encyc. of the Hist. of Mo.* (1901), vol. V; F. C. Shoemaker, *A Hist. of Mo.* (1922); O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family* (1899), vol. I; *Booneville Weekly Advertiser*, Nov. 26, 1886; minutes of trustees of Trinity College through the courtesy of Professor Arthur Adams.]

H. E. N.

PHELPS, OLIVER (Oct. 21, 1749–Feb. 21, 1809), merchant and land promoter, was born on a farm near Poquonock, Conn., the seventeenth child of Thomas Phelps and the ninth of Ann (Brown), Thomas' second wife. He was a descendant of George Phelps who, with his brother William, came to America in 1630, lived in Dorchester, Mass., and in 1635 moved to Windsor, Conn. Oliver's father died when the boy was but three months old, leaving the mother to bring up the large family. At the age of seven he started work in a general store at Suffield. Without formal instruction, the quick-witted lad picked up his education at odd moments, meanwhile reinforcing his natural instincts as a trader. Self-confident and energetic, he went to Granville, Mass., in 1770, and before the outbreak of the Revolution had built up a prosper-

ous mercantile business. After a brief military service, he was appointed by Massachusetts superintendent of purchases of army supplies (1777). This office he filled with energy and success until the end of the war.

Meanwhile he had entered the lower house of the state legislature (1778–80); later he served in the constitutional convention (1779–80), in the Senate (1785), and in the governor's council (1786). A prosperous, if not a rich man now he had already proven himself a bold operator in various speculative fields. The great post-war boom in wild lands was just beginning and Phelps saw his opportunity in the desire of Massachusetts to sell its huge holdings in western New York—all the land in the state west of Seneca Lake. After much bargaining he and Nathaniel Gorham [*q.v.*] purchased the preëmptive rights to these six million acres (Apr. 1, 1788) for £300,000 in state notes. This sum, equal at the time to about $175,000, was to be paid in three yearly instalments. The following July Phelps bought the Indian rights to the easternmost third of this purchase and arranged for its survey and division into tiers of townships six miles square. In the meantime he and Gorham sought feverishly to sell enough shares in their enterprise to make possible their payments to the state. They failed, however, and by the successful assertion of the federal government's claim to the triangular tract on Lake Erie, they were also disappointed in a sale they had expected to make of this land to Pennsylvania (Massachusetts Archives, House File 3208). Even with an extension of time they were unable to make their first payment as agreed. With the second instalment soon falling due, in March 1790 they turned back to Massachusetts two-thirds of the original purchase, retaining an embarrassed title to that already bought of the Indians. Payment for this remaining third was in fact long drawn out, for by 1791 state notes were worth nearly double their value in 1788 and the debt of Phelps and Gorham was proportionately increased.

Though Phelps thus saw a huge profit slip through his fingers, he retained his buoyancy and his speculative fervor. Within five years he had acquired title to nearly a million acres along the lower Mississippi, to a share in the Western Reserve, and to lands in many other sections. He was operating largely on credit, however, and when the land bubble was pricked in 1796, his affairs became hopelessly involved. Fearful of following William Duer and Robert Morris, fellow land speculators, to the debtors' prison, he went for a time into hiding. Eventually, after several extended visits to the Genesee, he took up his residence in 1802 at Canandaigua. Here he passed his last years managing the remnants of his once extensive land holdings and promoting the interests of the Jeffersonian party. He served one term in Congress from 1803 to 1805. By his wife, Mary Seymour of Hartford, Conn., whom he married Dec. 16, 1773, he had a son, Oliver Leicester, and a daughter, Mary.

[O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family of America*, vol. II (1899); Orsamus Turner, *Hist. of the Pioneer Settlement of Phelps and Gorham's Purchase* (1851); G. S. Conover and L. C. Aldrich, *Hist. of Ontario County* (1893); R. L. Higgins, *Expansion in N. Y.* (1931); Phelps Papers in the N. Y. State Library at Albany.]

P. D. E.

PHELPS, THOMAS STOWELL (Nov. 2, 1822–Jan. 10, 1901), naval officer, was born at Buckfield, Me., the son of Stephen Decatur and Elisabeth Nixon (Stowell) Phelps, and descendant of George Phelps, who came with his brother William from England to America in 1630 and settled at Windsor, Conn., in 1635. He was appointed midshipman on Jan. 17, 1840, served five years chiefly in the Mediterranean and Brazil squadrons, studied further at the Naval Academy, and was then made passed midshipman. He was wrecked in the *Boston* on Eleuthera Island, Bahamas, in the winter of 1846, served in the *Polk* in Mexican waters from February to April 1847, and was then assigned to the coast survey, in which, except for another Mediterranean cruise in the *Independence* and *Constitution,* he remained until the close of 1852. A year in the receiving ship at Philadelphia was followed by extended duty in the *Decatur* of the Pacific Squadron, 1853–57, during which time he was made lieutenant. His experiences in defending the settlements in Washington Territory during the Indian uprising, are told in his "Reminiscences of Seattle . . . and the U. S. Sloop-of-War *Decatur,* 1855–56" (*United Service,* December 1881). After two years' ordnance work in Washington, D. C., and service in the Paraquay Expedition, 1858–59, he commanded the *Vixen* in survey duty till the opening of the Civil War.

His experience and special skill in this field led to his selection, June 1, 1861, to make a careful survey of the Potomac, a task which he completed during the month in the steamers *Philadelphia* and *Anacostia.* He was frequently in range of enemy batteries at Aquia Creek and elsewhere, his river boats apparently not being suspected of hostile activities. During the autumn his surveying was shifted to the approaches of Pamlico Sound where preparations for the Roanoke Island expedition were being made, his

plans again being successfully executed despite skirmishes between his steamer, the *Corwin*, and the Confederate "mosquito" flotilla. Thereafter he carried on similar work in Virginia waters until the Peninsular Campaign of April-May, 1862, when the *Corwin* was employed in reconnaissance and in support for the army. The *Corwin* captured several enemy small craft in York River on May 4, after the evacuation of Yorktown, and on May 7 it ran up the Mattapony River during the battle of West Point and thus prevented a considerable Confederate force from joining the main body of troops. He was made lieutenant commander in July 1862, was engaged from then until March 1863, in a more complete survey of the Potomac, and afterward made various surveys in anticipation of military and naval movements. At the close of 1864 he joined Porter's squadron, commanding the steam-sloop *Juanita* in the second attack on Fort Fisher, Jan. 13–15, 1865. He was made commander in 1865, captain in 1871, commodore in 1879, and rear admiral in 1884, eight months before his retirement. His sea commands after the war were the *Saranac* in the North Pacific, 1871–73, and the South Atlantic Squadron, 1883–84. In intervening periods he had duty at the Mare Island navy yard, San Francisco. On Jan. 25, 1848, he married Margaret Riche Levy, daughter of Capt. John B. Levy of Virginia. They had five children, one of the boys, Thomas Stowell, Jr., entering the navy and rising to the rank of rear admiral. After retirement he made his home in Washington, D. C. His death from pneumonia occurred at a hospital in New York City only a month preceding his wife's death from the same cause.

[Phelps's "Reminiscences of the Old Navy" appeared serially in *United Service*, Apr.–Dec. 1882; see also, *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1900, and for family data, O. S. Phelps and A. T. Servin, *The Phelps Family of America and their English Ancestors* (2 vols., 1899); personal narratives of his Civil War service appear in E. S. Maclay, *A Hist. of the U. S. Navy from 1775 to 1893* (2nd ed., 1899), vol. II; the *N. Y. Herald*, Jan. 11, 1901, and the *Army & Navy Jour.*, Jan. 12, 1901, contain obituaries.] A. W.

PHELPS, WILLIAM FRANKLIN (Feb. 15, 1822–Aug. 15, 1907), educator, was born in Auburn, N. Y., the son of Halsey and Lucinda (Hitchcock) Phelps, and a descendant of William Phelps, who came from England to Massachusetts in 1630 and later settled in Windsor, Conn. While William was still in the district school he was impressed by the absurdity of the methods of education then in use, which fact doubtless influenced his career as an educator. In 1834 he entered the newly established Auburn high school, an excellent institution, where he learned useful lessons in method and the value of kindness as an educational force. In 1838 the master told William's father that his son was fully able to take a school and in the next fall, before he was seventeen, he taught sixty boys and girls of all ages, attainments, and conditions in a primitive one-room schoolhouse. For the next five summers he attended the Auburn Academy and had instruction from efficient teachers. During the winters he taught in various rural schools, acquiring the reputation of being one of the best teachers in that part of the country.

In 1844 he was called to a large public school in the city of Auburn, where in one room he taught 140 pupils of all ages. He was soon appointed state student from Cayuga County to the normal school in Albany, from which he graduated in 1846. In 1845 he organized a model practice school, which was formally opened in 1846, and which he conducted for seven years. His health requiring that he have rest and change, from 1852 to 1855 he engaged in business and travel. In the latter year he organized the state normal school at Trenton, N. J., serving as principal and professor of the science of education. He was also principal of the Farnum Preparatory School at Beverly, N. J., which he organized in 1856. Removing to Minnesota in 1864, he reorganized the state normal school at Winona and was its head until 1876, when he became president of the normal school at Whitewater, Wis., which position he occupied for two years. From 1881 to 1886 he was secretary of the Winona board of trade; from 1886 to 1887, secretary of the St. Paul chamber of commerce; and from 1887 to 1889, of the Duluth chamber of commerce. He then returned to St. Paul, where he was connected successively with a number of business enterprises. He died in St. Paul, in his eighty-sixth year.

Phelps published *The Teacher's Hand-book* (1875), which was translated into Spanish for use in the Argentine Republic. He was editor-in-chief of the *Educational Weekly*, Chicago, 1877–78. In 1879 he published six brochures—*What Is Education?*, *Socrates*, *Pestalozzi*, *Horace Mann*, *Froebel*, and *Roger Ascham and John Sturm*—all prepared for use as Chautauqua textbooks. He also revised and edited, 1902, H. W. Pearson's *A Nebulo-Meteoric Hypothesis of Creation*. He was one of the organizers of the American Normal School Association, and its first president (1858–63); he also served as president of the National Education Association (1875–76). At the Centennial Exhibition in 1876 he presided at the first international conference of educators. He was awarded a diploma

and silver medal at the French exposition in 1878 for his work as an educator. Among his other achievements was the invention of a map-support for the exhibition of maps and charts of different sizes. He was married in 1854 to Carolyn, daughter of William Chapman of Albany, N. Y., and widow of Crawford Livingston.

[*Am. Jour. of Education*, Dec. 1858; *An Hist. Sketch of the State Normal College at Albany, N. Y.* (1894); *Hist. Hist. of Winona County* (1883); C. O. Ruggles, *Hist. Sketch and Notes, Winona State Normal School* (1910); *Bull. of the Winona State Normal School*, Oct. 1907; "Minn. Biogs.," *Colls. Minn. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XIV (1912); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *School Jour.*, Aug. 31, 1907; *St. Paul Dispatch*, Aug. 16, 1907.]

J. S—n.

PHELPS, WILLIAM WALTER (Aug. 24, 1839–June 17, 1894), lawyer, business man, congressman, diplomat, was born in Dundaff, Susquehanna County, Pa. He was a descendant of William Phelps, an English emigrant who came with his brother George to America in 1630 and who settled in Connecticut in 1635. John Jay Phelps, his father, left Connecticut to live for a short time in Pennsylvania and then moved to New York City where he built up a great fortune as an importer and railway promoter. His mother was Rachel Badgerly (Phinney). He attended the Mount Washington Institute, New York City, and then a private school at Golden Hill, near Bridgeport, Conn. He entered Yale before he was sixteen years of age and was graduated second in the class of 1860. On Commencement day, July 26, 1860, he was married to Ellen Maria Sheffield, daughter of Joseph Earl Sheffield [*q.v.*], founder of the scientific school bearing his name. After an extended bridal tour of Europe, he entered the law school of Columbia University and received the degree of LL.B. in 1863 as valedictorian of the class. A highly successful career in New York City as legal representative of several large corporations was cut short by the death of his father in 1869, when he retired to devote himself to the management of family properties and his own business interests. He transferred his residence to an estate at Teaneck near Englewood, N. J., from which district he was elected as a Republican to Congress in 1872. In the House of Representatives he distinguished himself by vigorous speeches on financial subjects and denunciations of the White League. Yet his independence of judgment led him to turn against his party in the contest over the Civil Rights Bill, with the result that he was defeated for reëlection by seven votes. He remained an active party worker, however, supporting Blaine, a close personal friend, in his candidacy for the presidency in the conventions

of 1880 and 1884. He was appointed minister to Austria-Hungary on May 5, 1881, but resigned the post within the year and returned to reclaim his seat in Congress, holding it thereafter for three terms. In the convention of 1888 he was supported by Blaine for the vice-presidential nomination (Edward Stanwood, *James Gillespie Blaine, American Statesmen*, 2 ser., vol. III, 1908, p. 309).

The interest taken by Phelps in the Samoan question during his service on the Committee on Foreign Affairs qualified him for an appointment by President Harrison on Mar. 18, 1889, as commissioner to the Berlin Conference on that question. His judgment in reconciling the conflicting views of his colleagues, John Adam Kasson and George Handy Bates [*qq.v.*] and in conceding enough minor points to assure fulfillment of the German government's substantial concessions without permitting it to dictate the settlement, was largely responsible for the measure of success attained (Alice F. Tyler, *The Foreign Policy of James G. Blaine*, 1927, p. 241). Although the outcome was not wholly satisfactory to Secretary Blaine, the quality of Phelps's work warranted his appointment as minister to Germany in 1889. His principal task during four years' tenure of that post was, as it had previously been at Vienna, the presentation of arguments in favor of the removal of the prohibition against importation of American pork products. Success crowned his efforts in September 1891. His cultivated and genial personality and his familiarity with the language of the country made him a popular representative not only among the Germans, but also among the rapidly increasing American colony in Berlin.

Upon his return to America, in the summer of 1893, he accepted an appointment on the New Jersey Court of Errors and Appeals. The confining duties of the position hastened his death within a year of pulmonary tuberculosis. He died at Englewood, N. J., and was survived by his wife and three children. His continued interest in his alma mater was most effectively demonstrated when he became a leader in the "Young Yale" movement which reflected the dissatisfaction of the young alumni with the staid policies of the trustees. A thoroughly stimulating, if somewhat bombastic address delivered by Phelps at an alumni dinner during the Commencement exercises in 1870, was largely responsible for the vigor with which the movement was charged from that date (H. E. Starr, *William Graham Sumner*, 1925, pp. 82-90). He was notably a forceful and witty speaker, equally popular in the intimate circle and on the platform. His bene-

factions from abundant wealth were wisely and gracefully given in many directions.

[H. M. Herrick, *William Walter Phelps, His Life and Public Service* (1904); *Foreign Relations*, 1891, pp. 505–17; *Obit. Record of Grads. of Yale Univ., 1890–1900* (1900); *N. Y. Times*, June 17, 1894; *N. Y. Tribune*, June 18, 1894.] J. V. F.

PHILIP (d. Aug. 12, 1676), Sachem of the Wampanoag Indians, was the leader of the most severe Indian war in the history of New England. The son of Massassoit [*q.v.*], his Indian name was Pometacom, Metacom, or Metacomet, but the colonists dubbed him "King Philip." Assuming the position of Sachem of the Wampanoags at the time of his brother Alexander's death in 1662, for which many Indians believed the Plymouth authorities responsible, Philip renewed his father's treaty with the settlers and conducted himself in a generally peaceful manner for the following nine years. The frequent land sales, which were necessitated by the natives' growing dependence upon English guns, ammunition, blankets, and liquor, restricted the Wampanoags, Narragansetts, and Nipmucks to ever narrowing territories and scarcer game, although the lands seem to have been fully paid for by the whites (S. G. Drake, *Old Indian Chronicle*, p. 3). Philip acted in a haughty and arrogant manner and considered himself on terms of equality with his "brother," King Charles II. Suspected of plotting against the settlers, he was summoned to Taunton in 1671, forced to surrender part of the firearms of his tribe, and fined. The execution in 1675 of three of his warriors for the murder of Sassamon, his former secretary, who had revealed his plots to the English, provoked the conflict known as King Philip's War. Starting in June 1675 in the vicinity of Narragansett Bay, the war spread rapidly through the Plymouth and Massachusetts colonies, and extended westward as far as the settlements on the Connecticut River. The Wampanoags with their Nipmuck allies assaulted most of the outlying towns, burned several and slaughtered countless men, women, and children, while the troops of the United Colonies tried in vain to engage them in a decisive conflict. After an unsuccessful attempt to win the Mohawks to his side (Mather, *post*, p. 38), Philip again fell upon the Massachusetts towns in the spring and summer of 1676, but with less success than formerly. The colonial troops now adopted the policy of destroying the Indians' corn, capturing their women and children, and offering immunity to warriors who would desert Philip. Deprived of most of his followers, including his wife, Wootonekanuske, and son, Philip took refuge in a swamp near Mount Hope (Bristol, R. I.), where he was shot Aug. 12, 1676, by an Indian serving under Capt. Benjamin Church [*q.v.*]. As a traitor to the King, he was beheaded, drawn, and quartered, and his head exhibited at Plymouth for many years. He was an able and crafty leader, according to Indian standards, and not without some elements of human kindness. Much of his success, however, was due to the inefficiency of the colonial officers, and there is little evidence that he planned a wide-spread conspiracy to exterminate the white settlers. New England paid dearly for her victory, with the destruction of twelve towns, several thousand deaths, and a debt estimated at £100,000.

[The outstanding contemporary works dealing with King Philip's War have been edited by Samuel G. Drake. Among these are: William Hubbard, *The Hist. of the Indian Wars in New England* (2 vols., 1865); Increase Mather, *The Hist. of King Philip's War* (1862); *The Old Indian Chronicle* (1867), a collection of contemporary tracts and letters; and *The Book of the Indians* (1841). The last-named contains letters, documents, and a biography of King Philip. Thomas Church's *Entertaining Passages Relating to Philip's War* (1716) is the account of Capt. Benj. Church. John Easton's account of the war was edited by B. F. Hough and published under the title: *A Narrative of the Causes Which Led to Philip's Indian War* (1858). It is also included in *Narratives of the Indian Wars* (1913), ed. by C. H. Lincoln, a volume in Scribner's Original Narrative Series. Relations between the Indians and the New England Confederation will be found in *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth*, vol. V (1856). The introduction to George M. Bodge's *Soldiers in King Philip's War* (1891) gives a good secondary account.] H. P. S.

PHILIP, JOHN WOODWARD (Aug. 26, 1840–June 30, 1900), naval officer, was born at Kinderhook, Columbia County, N. Y., the son of Dr. John Henry and Lucena (Woodward) Philip, and a descendant of the distinguished colonial Dutch family of Philipse. The final letters of the name were dropped by some branches of the family after the Revolution. After attending Kinderhook Academy he was appointed midshipman, and graduated from the Naval Academy on June 1, 1861. Extremely shy in feminine society, he was in academy days and later a very genial soul, overflowing with humor, trenchant in speech, one of the best loved men in the navy. Despite his youth, his Civil War service was entirely as executive, or second in command, first in the sloop *Marion* in the Gulf, and then in the *Sonoma* in the James River. From his promotion to the rank of lieutenant in July 1862, until the close of 1864 he was in the *Chippewa*, *Pawnee*, and in the monitor *Montauk* on the southeast coast blockade, where he was frequently in action and where he was wounded, July 16, 1863, in an engagement with shore batteries in the Stono River. He was executive of the *Wachusett* during an Oriental cruise, 1865–67, and was transferred from her to be executive of the *Hartford*,

flagship of the China Squadron. After two years in the *Richmond* of the European Squadron he was again in the *Hartford*, 1872–73. He was made commander in December 1874 and was for two years thereafter on leave as captain of the Pacific mail liner *City of New York*, which he took through Magellan to the west coast. He then commanded the *Adams*, 1876–77, and the *Tuscarora* and *Ranger*, 1877–83, in survey work on the west coast of Mexico and Central America.

In 1882 he was married at San Francisco to Mrs. Josepha Francesca (Tate) Cowan. Then followed his first extended shore duty as light-house inspector, 12th District, 1884–87, and as commander of the receiving ship *Independence*, Mare Island, 1887–90. He was promoted to the rank of captain on Mar. 31, 1889, spent a year in the *Atlanta*, became construction inspector of the cruiser *New York*, and commanded her until August 1894. In 1894–97 he was captain of the Boston navy yard, and afterward commanded the *Texas* from October 1897, through the Spanish-American War. Early in the hostilities he devoted himself energetically to making much-needed repairs in his ship, especially improvements in the rate of fire of the turret guns, the results of which were demonstrated effectively at Santiago. The *Texas* operated with the Flying Squadron, then joined the Santiago blockade, and was next to the *Brooklyn* at the west end of the blockading line on July 3, 1898, when the Spanish fleet emerged. Collision with the *Brooklyn*, when she made her much-discussed eastward turn at the opening of the battle, was averted by Philip's "quick appreciation and instant seamanlike action," to quote Admiral Mahan (Maclay, *Life, post*, p. 15), in backing and shifting course. When his crew shouted as one of their salvos hit a Spanish ship, Philip uttered his characteristic words, "Don't cheer, men, those poor devils are dying." He was made commodore on Aug. 10, 1898, and rear admiral Mar. 3, 1899. From January 1899, until his death he was commandant of the Brooklyn navy yard, where his warm sympathy and earnest religious feeling led him wholeheartedly into the movement for the construction of a Sailors' Rest building near the yard. His death occurred suddenly from heart failure, and he was buried in the Naval Cemetery at Annapolis, being survived by his wife, a son, John Woodward Philip, and a stepson, Barrett Philip.

[Many tributes and recollections of fellow officers are included in E. S. Maclay, *Life and Adventures of "Jack" Philip, Rear-Admiral* (1903), which was first published in the *Illustrated Navy*, a memorial magazine in four numbers, May–Aug. 1903, ed. by E. S. Maclay and Barrett Philip; a record of his cruise in the *Wachusett* is also printed in this publication. Family data were contributed by J. W. Philip, a son. See also E. H. Hall, *Philipse Manor Hall at Yonkers, N. Y.* (1912), *Who's Who in America, 1899–1900*, and obituaries in the *Army & Navy Jour.*, July 7, 1900, and the *N. Y. Times*, July 1, 1900.] A. W.

PHILIPP, EMANUEL LORENZ (Mar. 25, 1861–June 15, 1925), governor of Wisconsin, was born in Sauk County, Wis., the son of Swiss emigrants. His parents, Luzi and Sabina (Ludwig) Philipp, were members of an agricultural colony that has contributed a vigorous element to the life of Wisconsin. The boy attended the public school of his district and was licensed to teach without further formal training. He soon learned telegraphy and was train dispatcher and station agent for the Chicago, Milwaukee & Saint Paul Railway at Baraboo, Wis. In this service he obtained a transfer to Milwaukee. He became a contracting freight agent, took charge of the Gould freight interests, and also was traffic manager for the Schlitz brewery. On Oct. 27, 1887, he was married to Bertha Schweke of Reedsburg, Wis. They had three children. In 1893 he became interested in the lumber business and founded the town of Philipp in Tallahatchie County, Miss. During the following decade he devoted his energies and activities largely to this business. It proved profitable, and he rapidly increased his private estate. However, he retained his connection with transportation. In 1897 he became president of the Union Refrigerator Transit Company and six years later became its manager and proprietor. In 1904 he published *The Truth about Wisconsin Freight Rates*. This was followed in 1910 by *Political Reform in Wisconsin*, in which he was assisted by Edgar T. Wheelock, and which deals with the primary election law, the problems of taxation, and of railway regulation. These titles reveal the transition of his interests from business to politics.

He had become actively interested in politics and was a delegate to the Republican conventions of 1904 and 1908. There he formed acquaintances with the leaders of the national administration. The division of the Republican party, especially in Wisconsin, gave opportunity for leadership of a faction that would cooperate with the national administration, and he seized this opening. Meanwhile, he also became fire and police commissioner of Milwaukee. By 1914 he was fully intrenched in the local machine and was able to obtain the nomination for governor. Reëlected in two successive campaigns to this position, he served from 1915 to 1921. His work as governor was distinguished. He entered upon the task with slight experience in politics and served throughout a period of great stress and agitation. He was pledged to economy and

to reduction of the costs of the state institutions. However, he permitted no action until investigation of the institutions had been conducted. This procedure was beneficial and in many instances resulted in definite gains for the institutions. As war governor of a state with a large population of foreign origin, he reflected the sentiments of his people and was critical of the national administration. He had favored an embargo on goods to the Allies, opposed conscription, and opposed sending an army to France. In spite of his pronouncement of his views, General Crowder credited him with the most commendable record of any governor for cooperation in enforcement of the draft law (*Milwaukee Sentinel,* Nov. 5, 6, 1918). He gave every assistance in carrying the war to a successful termination. With the coming of peace he had a constructive plan for getting the soldiers back to the soil by assisting them to procure tracts of cut-over land in Wisconsin. He gave his support to a generous educational bonus for soldiers. Although he was not a Progressive but "an out-and-out corporation man" according to LaFollette (*post,* p. 229), the Progressive leaders admitted that no recognized progressive measure was repealed during his administration. Although a man of limited schooling, he was one of broader interests than his mere profession.

He was a regent of Marquette University, active in the work of the humane society, and a promoter of civic activities and progress. He procured and took great pride in the maintenance of a splendid farm. In appearance he was below average stature, broad and powerfully built. His whole appearance radiated strength of body and character. He was not given to great freedom of expression but on occasion could give vent to deep and moving emotions. He had those qualities that make and retain loyal friends.

[*Messages to the Leg. and Proclamations of Emanuel L. Philipp* (1920); E. B. Usher, *Wisconsin* (1914), vol. VII; *Who's Who in America,* 1922–23; *A Standard Hist. of Sauk County* (1918), vol. II, ed. by H. E. Cole; R. M. LaFollette, *LaFollette's Autobiog.* (1913); *Milwaukee Sentinel,* June 16, 1925.] J. L. S.

PHILIPS, JOHN FINIS (Dec. 31, 1834–Mar. 13, 1919), soldier, congressman, jurist, was born in Boone County, Mo. His parents, John G. and Mary (Copeland) Philips, were Kentuckians who went to Missouri in 1817. Although he spent his boyhood in a simple pioneer community, the educational and religious influences of his home were strong and the discipline severe. After graduating in 1855 from Centre College in Kentucky, he read law in the office of Gen. John B. Clark, a leading lawyer and politician of central Missouri. In 1857 he married Fleecie Batterton of Kentucky and commenced practice at Georgetown, Mo., attaining a large and lucrative business and devoting considerable time and attention to politics and to the Whig party. His career was interrupted by the Civil War which shattered the social, professional, and political life of the state, and forced a decision for or against secession. Philips soon decided, and put at the disposal of the Union his ability and his fine eloquence. As an opponent of secession he was elected a member of the state convention which governed Missouri from 1861 to 1863. He consistently supported the provisional state government and the Lincoln administration. Governor Gamble commissioned him colonel of the 7th Regiment of the state militia, a cavalry regiment. He commanded it with courage and skill until the close of the war, seeing service in several western campaigns.

Philips moved to Sedalia in 1865 and formed a law partnership with George G. Vest. In common with many former Whig leaders, who opposed the rule of the Radical Republicans in the state and nation, he became a Democrat. The test oath and registration system were responsible for his defeat for Congress in 1868. When the Democracy regained control in 1874, he became one of the "Big Four," sharing with Vest, T. T. Crittenden, and F. M. Cockrell the leadership of the party in Missouri. Nominated for Congress in 1874, after 691 ballots were taken, Philips was elected and served during the critical years 1875–77. A member of the committee to investigate the election of 1876 in South Carolina, he ably exposed the shocking and grotesque character of the government there (*Congressional Record,* 44 Cong., 2 Sess., Appendix, pp. 102–06). Certain that Tilden had been elected, he supported with reluctance the electoral commission bill and was convinced that Hayes's title was "grounded and steeped in fraud and perjury" (*Ibid.*). He was elected in 1880 to the Forty-sixth Congress, to fill an unexpired term. Familiar with conditions in the depressed South and debtor West he urged that the tariff be sharply reduced and that the government "do something for silver."

He became a commissioner of the state supreme court in 1882, three years later being appointed a member of the Kansas City court of appeals. He liked appellate work and won recognition for his thoroughness and discrimination. At the instance of his former law partner, Senator Vest, he was named by Cleveland in 1888 to the federal bench for the western district of Missouri. He occupied this position until his

retirement in 1910. As a judge, Philips was essentially conservative in his economic and social point of view. He was a master of the technical side of the law and of judicial detail, being seldom reversed by a higher court. Lawyers and laymen alike admired and respected his ability and sense of justice. He practised law after retirement from the bench until his sudden death. He was a man of striking personal charm, whose wit and eloquence won him a large number of friends. His formal speech was effective and adorned with classical allusions but he was best known as a raconteur of note.

[For the period of 1888, the files of the *Jefferson City Tribune* and the *Mo. Statesman* are valuable. See also: F. C. Shoemaker, "In Memoriam: Judge John F. Philips," *Mo. Hist. Rev.*, Apr. 1919; *Jour. and Proc. of the Mo. State Convention*, 1861–63; *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; Philips' *Speeches* (1918); *Kansas City Star*, Mar. 13, 14, 1919.] T. S. B.

PHILIPS, MARTIN WILSON (June 17, 1806–Feb. 26, 1889), Southern planter, agricultural writer, and reformer, was born in Columbia, S. C., of Irish descent, though his father and grandfather were both born in Virginia. He is said to have graduated from the old South Carolina College at Columbia and in 1829 he graduated from the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania. In this same year he settled in Mississippi and married Mary Montgomery, daughter of William Montgomery. After practising medicine for a short time with small success, he turned to farming and in 1836 purchased a tract of land in Hinds County, Miss., removing there with his wife and the family of William Montgomery. Philips' new home was a well-built log house of considerable pretensions, and to his plantation he gave the name of "Log Hall." Here he won fame as the "Sage of Log Hall" and was familiarly known as "Log Hall" Philips. He took great pride in his plantation, making it one of the most attractive places in the state. He raised fruit trees, sold them, and wrote about them, urging the raising of more fruit in the South. In his orchards were to be found the most desirable varieties. He was also a successful cotton planter and a stockbreeder. A believer in good implements, he was largely instrumental in introducing into Mississippi many of an improved type and in having them exhibited at the Natchez fair. He was preëminently an investigator but not a successful farmer in the opinion of his neighbors, who were inclined to make sport of his extravagant expenditures of money on blooded stock and agricultural experiments and regarded him as a man who farmed on paper.

He kept a diary of his farm operations from 1840 to 1863, which has been published under the title "Diary of a Mississippi Planter" (*Publications of the Mississippi Historical Society*, vol. X, 1909). In 1863 he was forced to flee from "Log Hall" before the invading army from the North. His plantation suffered greatly from the ravages of war and he never returned to it after the close of hostilities, settling at Magnolia, where he engaged in the nursery business. In 1872 he was asked to take charge of the newly created department of agriculture in the University of Mississippi with the title of adjunct professor of agriculture and superintendent of the university farm. Although the agricultural department did not succeed, it was due to lack of support rather than to any lack of ability on Philips' part. After its abolition in 1875, he became proctor of the University, in which position he served with ability until 1880. He died and was buried in Oxford, Miss. His first wife died in 1862 and he was later married in Columbia, S. C., to Rebecca Tillinghast Wade who survived him.

Philips was a prolific contributor to the farm press. Among the dozen or more journals, both in the North and in the South, to which he contributed most frequently were the *American Farmer*, *Cultivator*, *American Agriculturist*, *Southern Cultivator*, *American Cotton Planter*, and *De Bow's Review*. From 1843 to 1845 he was one of the editors of the *South-Western Farmer*, published at Raymond, Miss. After the death of Willis Gaylord [*q.v.*] of the *Cultivator* (Albany), he acted as editor until a successor was appointed. From 1867 to 1873 he edited *Philips' Southern Farmer*, published at Memphis, Tenn. He was greatly interested in the cause of education and did much philanthropic work. A prominent member of the Baptist denomination, he served as treasurer of the Mississippi Baptist State Convention for twelve years, contributing liberally of his time and means to advance the educational and missionary enterprises of that body. He was one of the founders of the oldest existing college for women in Mississippi, the Central Female Institute, now Hillman College at Clinton, established in 1853, and was a member of its first board of trustees; he was also one of the early members of the board of trustees of Mississippi College after it passed into the possession of the Mississippi Baptists. In politics he was an uncompromising Democrat. Honest, kind, generous, progressive, and scholarly, he was also somewhat irascible, impetuous, selfwilled, and impatient. No man in his day contributed more to the material and educational development of Mississippi.

[*Pubs. Miss. Hist. Soc.*, vol. X (1909); U. B. Phillips, *Life and Labor in the Old South* (1929); *Cultivator and Country Gentleman*, June 6, 1889; L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. Am. Agriculture*, vol. IV (1909).]

C.R.B.

PHILIPSE, FREDERICK (Nov. 6, 1626–1702), landed proprietor in New Netherland, was a native of Friesland, Holland, son of Frederick and Margaret (Dacres) Philipse. His name also appears as Vreedryk or Vrederyck Felypsen. His father removed with his family to New Amsterdam, probably with Stuyvesant in 1647. The son engaged in trade and rose to affluence. When New Netherland became an English province, he accommodated himself to the new régime. Trade with the Five Nations, the East and West Indies, and Madagascar swelled his profits, further increased by importation of slaves. He also engaged in the manufacture of wampum.

During the years from 1664 to 1674, when Dutch and English authority alternated, Philipse preserved his political equilibrium, unaffected by excessive zeal for either cause. From 1675 to 1688 he served in the council of the colony. When the revolt in New York City made Jacob Leisler [*q.v.*] its head, Philipse and Stephen Van Cortlandt were in charge of administration, committed to them by Nicholson, the retiring lieutenant-governor. Yielding to the storm, they withdrew from public responsibility. On the restoration of regular government, Philipse returned to the council, where he voted for the execution of the death penalty against Leisler and Milbourne. He served in this body until 1698, when his close relations with Governor Fletcher and reputed dealing with Madagascar pirates prepared the way for his final retirement. His resignation was ascribed to a discovery that the home government had determined to order his dismissal. The enterprise of Capt. William Kidd [*q.v.*], originally legitimate, had enlisted the cooperation of leading figures in the English government, besides Lord Bellomont, then governor of New York and New England, Robert Livingston of New York, and probably others in the latter colony. The formal charge of complicity in Kidd's lawless acts, leveled at certain men in high places, broke down in the Commons; but the Lords of Trade, reporting on the affairs of the province of New York, thought Philipse's connection with illegal trade sufficiently clear to warrant his removal. One signature to this report was that of the celebrated John Locke.

In 1672 Elias Doughty sold one-third of the former Adriaen Van der Donck estate, known as upper Yonkers or the Yonkers plantation, to

each of three men, one of whom was Frederick Philipse, who thus acquired the nucleus of a magnificent property. The remainder of the estate subsequently became his. By an Indian deed in 1680 he acquired title to land on both sides of the Pocantico River, and by a second deed four years later to all that tract between the Yonkers Creek and Bronck's River. Philipse's total acquisitions were consolidated in 1693 in the Royal Patent of Philipsburgh. The history of this manor is interwoven with the chronicles of the American Revolution and with American literature. Philipse's skill in building was much prized during his first years in the colony, and he was commonly styled Stuyvesant's "architect-builder." He was a carpenter by trade. In romantic Sleepy Hollow he erected a church and also the stone mansion, Castle Philipse. The Manor Hall of Yonkers, which he reared, has been purchased by the state for perpetual preservation in the city of his founding. His New York town house, at Whitehall and Stone streets, was confiscated after the War of the Revolution. Philipse married in December 1662, Margaret Hardenbrook (the name is variously spelled), widow of Pieter Rudolphus (de Vries), who was "a very desirable business partner as well as wife" (Hall, *post*, pp. 39, 61); for his second wife, he married Nov. 30, 1692, Catharine Van Cortlandt, widow of John Dervall. His wealth was increased by his marriages.

[I. N. P. Stokes, *The Iconography of Manhattan Island, 1498–1909* (6 vols., 1915–28); E. B. O'Callaghan, *Documents Relative to the Colonial Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, vols. II–IV (1858, 1853, 1854); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Westchester County, N. Y.* (1886); Robert Bolton, *A Hist. of the County of Westchester* (1848); *Minutes of the Common Council of the City of N. Y., 1675–1776* (8 vols., 1905), esp. vols. I and II; E. H. Hall, *Philipse Manor Hall at Yonkers, N. Y.* (1912); B. B. James and J. F. Jameson, *Jour. of Jasper Danckaerts* (1913); *Colls. N. Y. Hist. Soc., Pub. Fund Ser.*, XXV, for 1892 (1893), 369–73.]

R.E.D.

PHILLIPS, DAVID GRAHAM (Oct. 31, 1867–Jan. 24, 1911), journalist, novelist, the son of David Graham and Margaret (Lee) Phillips, was born in Madison, Ind., where his father was a banker. Educated at the public schools and privately instructed in languages, he matriculated at Indiana Asbury University (later De Pauw) but after two years transferred to the College of New Jersey, whence he was graduated in 1887. The following July he became a reporter on the *Cincinnati Times-Star* and showed such unusual talents for journalism that within a year he was employed at a higher salary by the *Cincinnati Commercial Gazette*. In the summer of 1890 he went to New York City, where he joined the staff of the *Sun*. Again distinguish-

ing himself, he soon became one of the paper's most valuable reporters. In 1893 he left the *Sun* for the *World*, which he first served as London correspondent. After a few months he returned to the United States to do general reporting until 1895, when he was assigned to feature writing. In 1897 Joseph Pulitzer transferred him to the editorial department, later giving him charge of the editorial page in the absence of W. H. Merrill.

Despite the progress that he had made in journalism, Phillips was not satisfied with newspaper work. In 1901 he published his first novel, *The Great God Success*, under the pseudonym of John Graham, and early in the next year he left the *World* to devote himself to the writing of magazine articles and fiction. He was a diligent worker, and by the time of his death he had published seventeen novels, a play, and a book of non-fiction. He had also written nearly forty articles for the *Saturday Evening Post* and at least as many more for the *Cosmopolitan*, *Success*, the *Arena*, and other magazines. In addition to all this he had completed six novels that were published posthumously. His death came suddenly. In the later months of 1910 he received a series of threatening notes, to which he paid little attention. On Jan. 23, 1911, as he was on his way from lunch, a young musician named Fitzhugh Coyle Goldsborough suddenly confronted him and fired six shots into his body, immediately thereafter killing himself. Phillips died the next day. Goldsborough's motive, as revealed in the notes to Phillips and in his private papers, was the desire to avenge the insults that he maintained Phillips had directed against the Goldsborough family in his novels. There was no basis for Goldsborough's charge, and his papers pointed to insanity.

Though Phillips wrote many different kinds of novels, his more characteristic work aimed at the exposure of contemporary evils in business and government. In many articles, and especially in the sensational series called "The Treason of the Senate," which he contributed to the *Cosmopolitan* in 1906, he took a direct part in the muckraking movement; but his fiction of the same type was more voluminous and probably more effective. In *The Cost* (1904) and *The Deluge* (1905) he dealt with financial manipulators, and in *Light-Fingered Gentry* (1907) he capitalized the insurance scandals. In *The Plum Tree* (1905), *The Fashionable Adventures of Joshua Craig* (1909), *George Helm* (1912), and *The Conflict* (1911) he treated national, state, and municipal corruption. As his interest in muckraking declined, he began to concern himself with such problems as sexual standards for women (*The Worth of a Woman*, a play, 1908), women's social ambitions (*The Husband's Story*, 1910), and feminine independence (*The Price She Paid*, 1912). Even into these stories, however, he often introduced exposure of industrial and political corruption, as in his most ambitious novel, *Susan Lenox: Her Fall and Rise* (1917), though it is primarily concerned with the position of women in society.

In his own day Phillips achieved considerable popularity. There can be no doubt of the sincerity of his attacks on corruption, nor is it possible to deny that he had a comprehensive knowledge of many aspects of American life. His work is seldom, however, more than journalism. Judged by esthetic standards his literary powers were of a low order, especially his powers of characterization, and he made many concessions to popular taste. The crudities even of *Susan Lenox*, which is much his best work, are often distressing, though the book is vigorous, honest, and sometimes impressive. Indeed, it may be said of Phillips' books taken as a whole that, however biased they may be and whatever literary faults they may have, they do constitute a substantial and not wholly inaccurate record of the social movements of his day.

[The only full-length biography is I. F. Marcosson, *David Graham Phillips and His Times* (1932). There is information about him in Don C. Seitz, *Joseph Pulitzer: His Life & Letters* (1924) and in Frank M. O'Brien, *The Story of the Sun* (1918). The New York papers of Jan. 24 and 25, 1911, contain long but not completely accurate accounts of his life, and there is an obituary in the *Princeton Alumni Weekly*, Feb. 1, 1911. Among contemporary magazine articles the most useful are in the *Book News Monthly*, Apr. 1907, the *Arena*, Mar. 1906, and the *Bookman*, Mar. 1911. Critical estimates may be found in Frank Harris, *Latest Contemporary Portraits* (1927) and F. T. Cooper, *Some Am. Story Tellers* (1911). The present article is to some extent based upon letters from or interviews with I. F. Marcosson, C. E. Russell, E. F. Flynn, J. A. Green, G. H. Lorimer, and other friends of Phillips. The author has also published a longer study of the man and his work in the *Bookman* for May 1931. The manuscripts of Phillips' novels are in the Princeton Library.]

G. H.

PHILLIPS, FRANCIS CLIFFORD (Apr. 2, 1850–Feb. 16, 1920), chemist, son of William Smith and Fredericka (Ingersoll) Phillips, was born at Philadelphia, Pa., and died at Ben Avon, a suburb of Pittsburgh, Pa. His early education was received at home from his mother. He completed his preparation for college at the Academy of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Philadelphia, entered the University of Pennsylvania in 1866, but left in his junior year. During a part of 1870 he was instructor in chemistry at Delaware College, Newark, Del. Soon afterward he went to Germany to continue his study of chem-

istry. From 1871 to 1873 he studied with Karl R. Fresenius in his private laboratory at Wiesbaden and the following year was fortunate in having the opportunity to be an assistant of the famous analytical chemist. He studied the next year with Landolt at the Polytechnic School in Aachen. Owing to the illness of his father he was unable to complete his work in Germany for the doctor's degree. In 1875 he became a member of the chemistry staff of the Western University of Pennsylvania—now the University of Pittsburgh—where he remained until his retirement in 1915. During his forty years of service he not only taught all branches of chemistry but for much of the time also geology and mineralogy. For one year (1878–79) he lectured in chemistry at the Pittsburgh College of Pharmacy.

His contact with the German system of university education stimulated him to continue his studies and as one result he received the degree of A.M. in 1879 and Ph.D. in 1893—both from the University of Pittsburgh. Moreover, the zeal for research which he acquired in Germany led him to undertake investigations which were original, particularly in the fields of natural gas and petroleum. He did not publish many articles, but his notes show that in his early work he anticipated principles which have been patented in commercial processes. The failure to publish was due partly to modesty and partly to interest in the scientific rather than the commercial aspects of investigations. Again, the skill acquired in analytical procedure under the eye of Fresenius was the basis of a lifelong interest in methods of analysis. He worked continuously on the improvement and standardization of methods, and many details which he established are an integral part of the accepted chemical process for the detection and determination of certain elements. In connection with this work he edited the second edition of *Methods for the Analysis of Ores, Pig Iron, and Steel in Use at the Laboratories of Iron and Steel Works in the Region about Pittsburgh, Pa.* (1901). At the time of his death he had nearly completed "Qualitative Gas Reactions." Another result of his studies in Germany was his knowledge of the literature of chemistry. In order to help his students and others in utilizing German journals he wrote a textbook entitled *Chemical German* (1913, 2nd ed., 1915). Besides chemistry, geology, mineralogy, and crystallography, he was well informed in botany and bacteriology. The last-named science he utilized in his extensive work on drinking water, studies which led to fundamental improvements in the water supply of Pittsburgh.

Phillips

Phillips was deeply interested in Joseph Priestley, had a large collection of Priestleyana, and planned to write a biography of Priestley, for which he had accumulated sufficient material. He was the originator of the movement which resulted in the establishment by the American Chemical Society of the Priestley Gold Medal. The medal is awarded triennially "for distinguished services in chemistry," and although Phillips did not live to see the culmination of his efforts his name will always be associated with this memorial to Priestley. In 1881 he married Sarah Ormsby Phillips, daughter of Ormsby Phillips, a former mayor of Allegheny. There were two children. He was a member of numerous scientific societies including the American Philosophical Society (1894) and the American Chemical Society (1894).

[Sources include: obituary notices by Alexander Silverman in *Jour. Industrial and Engineering Chemistry*, Apr. 1920, and in *Science*, May 7, 1920; *Jour. of Chemical Educ.*, Apr. 1932; the *Pittsburgh Post*, Feb. 17, 1920; autobiographical notes supplied by Frank H. Ramsay, Pittsburgh, Pa., and additional information from Alexander Silverman.] L. C. N.

PHILLIPS, GEORGE (1593–July 1, 1644), clergyman, was born probably at South Rainham, Norfolk, England, and died at Watertown, Mass. His father was Christopher Phillips. He matriculated at Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, in April 1610; received the degree of B.A. in 1613, and that of M.A. in 1617. He took orders in the Church of England, and served for some years as vicar at Boxted, Essex, though the length of his incumbency is uncertain, owing to the loss of the parish registers. Among Phillips' parishioners was John Maidstone, a nephew of John Winthrop's second wife, and later an officer in Cromwell's household. On Nov. 4, 1629, Maidstone wrote Winthrop stating that Phillips was resolved to go to Massachusetts, and highly commending him. Phillips sailed on the *Arbella* in April 1630, and there are frequent references to him in Winthrop's *Journal*. He was one of the seven signers of *The Humble Request*, which is dated April 7, on the eve of sailing, and which was printed that same year. This noble statement has been attributed to Rev. John White of Dorchester, but there seems to be much better ground for believing that Phillips drafted it (Foote, *post*, pp. 196–201).

Phillips was accompanied on the voyage by his wife, daughter of Richard Sergeant, and two children. His wife died a few weeks after landing at Salem. Phillips went with Winthrop to Charlestown early in the summer, and thence with Sir Richard Saltonstall to Watertown, where a settlement was begun in the fall of 1630.

He presumably drafted the covenant of the Watertown Church, of which he remained minister until his death. Soon after settling at Watertown he married Elizabeth, probably widow of Capt. Robert Welden, by whom he had seven children. Phillips was the first minister of the Massachusetts Bay Colony to put into practice the congregational form of church polity (Foote, pp. 202–07), doing so before the arrival of the Rev. John Cotton in 1633, to whom the initiation of the congregational polity has been commonly attributed. In 1632 he was one of the leaders in the protest made by Watertown against the action of the governor and assistants in arbitrarily levying a tax on the town. He and Richard Brown were summoned to Boston, where the matter was debated. The tax was not remitted, but within three months an election of representatives to the General Court was agreed upon, with the understanding that in future no taxes should be levied without the consent of the Court. To this Watertown protest is rightly traced the beginning of representative government in Massachusetts. Phillips also had a hand in drafting the compilation of laws published in 1641.

He was a man of learning, and brought an excellent library to Watertown. Although a sturdy independent he was not aggressive, but was notably modest and courteous. He published nothing in his lifetime, but soon after his death a pamphlet by him was printed with a title page beginning *A Reply to a Confutation of Some Grounds for Infants Baptisme* (1645). It contains three short treatises clearly setting forth Phillips' theory of the church, in reply to a pamphlet printed in London by an Anabaptist, in which Phillips was singled out for attack. His eldest son, Samuel, became an eminent minister at Rowley, Mass., and was the progenitor of Samuel and John Phillips [*qq.v.*], the founders of the academies at Andover, Mass., and Exeter, N. H., and of Wendell Phillips [*q.v.*].

[Cotton Mather, *Magnalia Christi Americana* (ed. 1853), vol. I, pp. 375–79, in some statements inaccurate; W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. I (1857); H. W. Foote, "George Phillips, First Minister of Watertown," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. LXIII (1931).

H. W. F.

PHILLIPS, HENRY (Sept. 6, 1838–June 6, 1895), numismatist, philologist, and translator, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., a member of a cultured Jewish family whose traditions destined him for the study of law. His father, Jonas Altamont Phillips (1806–1862), a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, was a successful lawyer, and his grandfather, Zalegman Phillips (1779–1839), also a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, was looked upon as a leading criminal lawyer of the city. His mother was Frances (Cohen) Phillips, of Charleston, S. C. He received his elementary education in a Quaker school conducted by Hannah and Mary Gibbons and prepared for college in the classical academy of Henry D. Gregory, to whom he attributed his devotion to scholarly pursuits. He entered the University in 1853, graduated in 1856, studied law, and was admitted to the bar in 1859. From the first, however, he lacked the interest in the law that was characteristic of his family and began to give his attention to antiquarian scholarship. Becoming interested in numismatics, he undertook studies which resulted in the publication in 1865 of his *Historical Sketches of the Paper Currency of the American Colonies* and in 1866 of his *Continental Paper Money*. These studies were accepted as authoritative. They were followed by many other works on numismatic subjects.

Phillips mastered foreign languages with ease and was widely read. He published various philological papers and was one of the most active of American contributors of readings for the Oxford Dictionary. At the request of L. L. Zamenhof, of Warsaw, inventor of Esperanto, he translated that author's *Attempt towards an International Language* (1889) and supplied an English-Esperanto vocabulary. In 1877 he was one of a committee of three appointed by the American Philosophical Society to examine into the scientific value of Volapük. He was also interested in folk-lore, serving for a time as treasurer of the American Folk-Lore Society, and was the author of a number of papers on the subject. His facility as a linguist was applied to translations of European poetry, including among others the *Faust* of Adalbert von Chamisso (1881), Spanish poems by Fray Luis Ponce de Leon (1883), and selections from the works of Alexander Petöfi and Hermann Rollett. In 1887 he translated Antonio Gazzaletti's *La Patria dell' Italiano* and in 1892 a finely printed volume of German lyrics. He also published articles on American archeology. These scholarly achievements brought him recognition both at home and abroad. In 1862 he was made treasurer and in 1868, secretary, of the Numismatic and Antiquarian Society of Philadelphia. He became a member of the American Philosophical Society in February 1877, was its curator in 1880, one of its secretaries in 1884, and from 1885 until his death, librarian of the society. From 1892 to 1895 he served as Belgian vice-consul for Philadelphia. In Europe he was elected to membership in more than a score of learned societies and received medals and honors. Always frail, he

suffered during his last ten years from hereditary gout, which induced arteriosclerosis. In the winter of 1894–95 he was ordered south for his health and on June 6, 1895, died of uremic poisoning. He was never married.

[See: A. H. Smyth, "Obit. Notice of Henry Phillips, Jr.," *Proc. Am. Phil. Soc. . . . Memorial Vol. I* (1900); J. L. Chamberlain, *Universities and Their Sons: Univ. of Pa.*, vol. II (1902); *The Jewish Encyc.*; the *Press* (Phila.), June 8, 1895.] J. C. F.

PHILLIPS, JOHN (Dec. 27, 1719–Apr. 21, 1795), founder of the Phillips Exeter Academy, was the second son of the Rev. Samuel and Hannah (White) Phillips, of Andover, Mass. Prepared by his father, he entered Harvard College before he was twelve, receiving four years later the degree of M.A. At graduation, in 1735, he delivered the Latin salutatory oration. For some months he taught school, studying theology and medicine, and settling in Exeter as a teacher at least as early as 1740. Although he made some attempts at preaching, he turned ultimately to business and carried on a country store. On Aug. 4, 1743, he married Sarah (Emery) Gilman, a widow some years older than himself, whose first husband, Nathaniel Gilman, of Exeter, had left her more than eight thousand pounds. Enterprising and thrifty, Phillips soon accumulated a large property, chiefly through speculation in real estate and the lending of money at high rates of interest. Mrs. Phillips died, Oct. 9, 1765, and on Nov. 3, 1767, he was married to the widow of Dr. Eliphalet Hale, the local physician. He had no children.

Phillips was interested in town and state affairs and held several offices, among them that of moderator of town meeting in 1778 and 1779. He served for three years in the General Court (1771–73) and was colonel of the Exeter Cadets. His chief claim to distinction, however, rests upon his philanthropies. He made liberal gifts to Dartmouth College, including a professorship of Biblical history and literature, and he became in 1773 a trustee. In 1781, shortly after the founding of Phillips Academy, Andover, he corresponded with his nephew, Samuel Phillips [*q.v.*], regarding the establishment of a similar school in Exeter. The act of incorporation for the new institution, to be called the Phillips Exeter Academy, was dated Apr. 3, 1781, but the school was not opened until 1783. In drafting this constitution, John Phillips, who was the chief contributor to the endowment, followed in general the ideas and phrasing of the Andover "deed of gift," but reserved to himself much power that, in the Andover plan, had been delegated to the trustees. He contributed approximately $30,000 to the establishment and development of Phillips Academy, Andover, and gave much of his remaining fortune to the Phillips Exeter Academy. He was the first president of the Exeter board of trustees and was also a member of the Andover board, and its president from 1791 to 1794.

Formal in his manners and austere by temperament, Phillips was thoroughly Puritanical in spirit and was frugal, conscientious, and religious. The epitaph written for him by Principal Pearson, of Andover, said of him: "Without natural issue, he made posterity his heir."

[G. E. Street, *Hist. Sketch of John Phillips* (1895); A. M. Phillips, *Phillips Gencals.* (1885); L. M. Crosbie, *The Phillips Exeter Academy: A Hist.* (1923); J. G. Hoyt, "The Phillips Family and Phillips Exeter Academy," *North Am. Rev.*, July 1858; C. M. Fuess, *An Old New England School* (1917).] C. M. F.

PHILLIPS, PHILIP (Aug. 13, 1834–June 25, 1895), singing evangelist, composer of sacred music, was born in Cassadaga, N. Y., the son of Sawyer and Jane Parker Phillips. When he was nine his mother died and a few years later he left home to attend a country school, working on a neighbor's farm to pay for his living. His early interest in music was encouraged by his employer who bought him a melodeon, for which Phillips paid in labor. He learned to play the instrument and to sing and before he was twenty he had organized a singing school of his own in Allegany, N. Y. He built up a small trade in music and instruments by taking his melodeon to the house of a prosperous farmer, where he would play and sing to the members of the household. Later he went into business with D. J. Cook of Fredonia, N. Y. On a business trip to Ohio, when he visited various towns, organized singing schools, and sold his goods, he met Ollie M. Clarke, of Marion, whom he married on Sept. 27, 1860. He had been converted to the Baptist faith, but after his marriage he joined the Methodist church. After living in Marion for two years he moved to Cincinnati to join the music firm of William Sumner & Company. Within the next year or two the firm became Philip Phillips & Company. The "singing pilgrim," as he was called, used the same advertising technique in the cities as he had in the country. He would place his melodeon at the most conspicuous corner, play and sing for passersby, and sell them his wares.

About 1860 Phillips published his first sacred-song collection, *Early Blossoms*. It was followed some two years later by *Musical Leaves*, of which several hundred thousand copies were sold. During the Civil War Phillips held song services in the principal Northern cities, in connection with the Christian Commission, the cli-

max of which was a meeting in Washington, D. C., over which Seward presided. In 1866 he published *The Singing Pilgrim, or Pilgrim's Progress Illustrated in Song.* The following year he moved to New York City where he became the musical editor of the Methodist Book Concern. He published his *New Hymn and Tune Book* (1867) and in 1868, as the culmination of a series of song services in England, his *American Sacred Songster,* of which more than a million copies were sold. Many other works followed, including *The Gospel Singer* (1874); *Song Ministry* (1874); *Gem Solos* (1887); *Six Song Services with Connective Readings* (1892); and, in collaboration with his son, Philip Phillips, Jr., *Our New Hymnal* (1894). Although his books represent a large output, they were for the most part compilations of existing hymns. The popularity of his sacred-song books was aided by his song services. Of these he gave more than 4,000 during his life, their returns devoted to charity. His most ambitious song-service tour was that which in 1875 carried him to the Sandwich Islands, Australia, New Zealand, Palestine, Egypt, India, and Continental Europe. Its experiences were embodied in his *Song Pilgrimage Round the World* (1882). Phillips died in Delaware, Ohio, at the age of sixty.

[Alexander Clark, *Philip Phillips: The Story of his Life* (1883); J. H. Hall, *Biog. of Gospel Song and Hymn Writers* (1914); A. M. Phillips, *Phillips Geneals.* (1885); *Appletons' Ann. Cyc.*, 1895; *Cincinnati Enquirer,* June 26, 1895.] F. H. M.

PHILLIPS, SAMUEL (Feb. 5, 1752–Feb. 10, 1802), founder of Phillips Academy, Andover, was born in North Andover, Mass., the sixth child of Samuel and Elizabeth (Barnard) Phillips, and the sixth in direct descent from the Rev. George Phillips, 1593–1644 [*q.v.*], the first clergyman of Watertown. At thirteen he entered Dummer Academy at South Byfield, Mass., where he studied under the gifted but eccentric Master William Moody. At Harvard College, where he graduated in 1771, he was faithful and painstaking rather than brilliant, with a tendency toward morbid introspection. He was married, on July 6, 1773, to Phoebe Foxcroft, youngest daughter of the Hon. Francis Foxcroft, of Cambridge, by whom he had two children, only one of whom—John Phillips (1776–1820)—survived his father. Phillips Brooks [*q.v.*] was a descendant.

Settling in North Andover, Phillips was elected in 1775 as delegate to the Provincial Congress. At the outbreak of the Revolution he hastily constructed a powder-mill on the Shawsheen River and after some prolonged experimentation was able to supply the American armies with ammunition. In 1777 he moved to the South Parish of Andover, where, in 1782, he erected an imposing mansion, which was his home until his death. He was a delegate to the state constitutional convention in 1779–80 and served in the state Senate, with the exception of one year, from 1780 until 1801. In 1785 he was chosen to succeed Samuel Adams as president of the Senate. He was appointed in 1781 as justice of the court of common pleas for Essex County and was thereafter usually known as Judge Phillips.

At least as early as 1776, Phillips began to plan for a new type of school and induced his father, whose fortune he did not inherit until 1790, and his uncle, John Phillips [*q.v.*], of Exeter, to be his financial backers. In 1777 he purchased in their names a sufficient tract of land and after consultation with his friend, Eliphalet Pearson [*q.v.*], he drafted a "deed of gift," or constitution, which was one of the significant documents in the history of American education. It provided for the establishment of an endowed academy, controlled by a board of trustees, the majority of whom should be laymen. It explicitly stated that the "*first and principal* object" of the institution was to be "the promotion of true Piety and Virtue," and that the teachers should point out to their pupils "the great end and real business of living." In thus emphasizing the importance of character, Phillips was undoubtedly influenced by John Locke and the English nonconformist academies. He himself was strongly Calvinistic in his theology.

Phillips Academy was the earliest of the endowed academies which, until the public high school began to develop about fifty years later, had such great influence on American education. It was opened, Apr. 30, 1778, with thirteen pupils, under Eliphalet Pearson as principal. Phillips was a member of the original board of trustees and later, in 1796, became its president, devoting much of his time to its affairs. He had previously enjoyed the friendship of George Washington, who visited him at Andover in 1789 and who sent to Phillips Academy one nephew and eight grand-nephews. Phillips was tall and dignified, and rather unbending in his manner. Extraordinarily industrious, he begrudged every moment not spent in work and took as his motto, "Be more covetous of your hours than misers are of gold." Although he was even-tempered, he had little sense of humor and permitted himself few diversions. He was a stanch supporter of the church and a liberal donor to benevolent projects. Afflicted with asthma in his later years, he sought to improve his health by travel, but in vain. He was elected in 1801

as lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts on the Federalist ticket but died shortly after his inauguration and was buried, with public ceremonies, in the cemetery of the South Church, in Andover. He left in his will generous bequests, not only to Phillips Academy, but also for other philanthropic purposes; and his name is still perpetuated in various memorial funds and in the chief recitation hall at Phillips Academy.

[*Biog. Cat. of . . . Phillips Academy, Andover* (1903); J. L. Taylor, *A Memoir of His Honor, Samuel Phillips, LL.D.* (1856); A. M. Phillips, *Phillips Geneals.* (1885); C. M. Fuess, *An Old New England School* (1917); manuscript collections owned by Phillips Academy, Andover.] C. M. F.

PHILLIPS, THOMAS WHARTON (Feb. 23, 1835–July 21, 1912), oil producer, congressman, religious writer, and philanthropist, was born on a farm near Mount Jackson, Lawrence County, Pa., the son of Ephraim and Ann (Newton) Phillips. He was a descendant of the Rev. George Phillips [*q.v.*] who came to Massachusetts in 1630 and was one of the founders of Watertown. Ephraim Phillips died when Thomas was less than a year old, leaving the mother to struggle with the problem of rearing her eight children on the one-hundred acre farm. Poverty constrained her to limit Thomas' formal schooling to that provided by the district schools but he supplemented his meager opportunities by earnest study and wide reading. His ambition was to obtain a college education and enter the ministry. He made preliminary preparation to that end and preached frequently in his early manhood, but the uncertainty of his health dictated the adoption of a more active outdoor life.

He was attracted to the new petroleum industry, and after unsuccessful efforts to produce oil in Lawrence County, went in 1861 to Oil Creek, where Col. Edwin L. Drake [*q.v.*] had driven the first successful well two years before. Here, with his three brothers, he engaged in oil production. The firm at first met with great success and the brothers disbursed their profits generously in religious and philanthropic benefactions, but the panic of 1873, together with the discovery of new oil fields and the consequent fall in the price of oil, made a dramatic change from prosperity to adversity in their fortunes. The payment of their indebtedness, with interest, absorbed the next fourteen years of Phillips' life. In 1887 he was made president of the Producers' Protective Association, a secret organization of some two thousand oil men in thirty-six local assemblies organized primarily to combat the Standard Oil combination; he was at this time one of the largest individual producers in the oil country. When in 1888 the Association made an agreement with the Standard Oil Company to reduce production, Phillips insisted as a prerequisite to his assent that two million barrels of oil be set aside for the benefit of the drillers who would be thrown out of employment by the shutdown. At the time of his death the T. W. Phillips Gas & Oil Company, of which he was president, owned 850 gas and oil wells, 900 miles of gas lines, and valuable leaseholds of gas and oil lands in Pennsylvania.

Phillips' political career began through his association with James A. Garfield as close personal friend, confidant, and political adviser. When Garfield was nominated for the presidency in 1880, Phillips dropped all business and devoted his entire time to the canvass. It was at his suggestion and with his assistance as author and financial backer that during this campaign the first *Republican Campaign Text Book* was published. He was defeated as a candidate for Congress in 1890 but was successful in 1892 and was reëlected in 1894. He voluntarily retired at the close of his second term. While in Congress he had formulated plans for the appointment of an Industrial Commission "to investigate questions pertaining to immigration, to labor, to agriculture, to manufacturing, and to business," but the act authorizing its creation was not passed until 1898. President McKinley appointed him a member of the Commission and he had an important part in the preparation of its nineteen volumes of reports, which appeared in 1900–02. This service entailed four years of the hardest work of his laborious life. The adequacy of the investigation as well as the constructive character of the conclusions and recommendations presented was perhaps due more to his efforts than to those of any other one man. The Bureau of Corporations was a direct result of this investigation, and the federal departments of labor and commerce carry forward the investigations which Phillips' inventive mind conceived and initiated.

In the midst of his business and political activities, Phillips found time to continue his religious study and writing. In 1866 he was instrumental in forming the Christian Publishing Association for the purpose of issuing a weekly journal, the *Christian Standard*. To this paper, which soon made a name for itself under the editorship of Isaac Errett [*q.v.*], he was a friend and contributor during the rest of his life. In 1905, in the seventieth year of his age, he published *The Church of Christ*, an exposition of the principles of the Disciples of Christ. He gave liberal financial support to Bethany and Hiram colleges, and was the virtual founder of Oklahoma Christian University, renamed Phil-

lips University after he died. His name was also given to Phillips Bible Institute, Canton, Ohio, opened after his death. He established ministerial loan funds at Bethany and Hiram colleges and at Drake, Phillips, and Eugene Bible universities. For many years he supported a missionary in the Northwest, and the local, state, and national Y. M. C. A. and Y. W. C. A. had cause to remember him gratefully as a generous friend. Death found him at New Castle, Lawrence County, Pa., busily engaged in writing an article on the Resurrection.

Phillips married, in 1862, Clarinda, daughter of David and Nancy Rebecca (Arter) Hardman. She died in 1866, and in 1870 he married her younger sister, Pamphila, who survived him. To the first marriage two sons were born, and to the second, three sons and a daughter.

[Biog. sketch by T. W. Phillips, Jr., in T. W. Phillips, *The Church of Christ* (15th ed., 1915); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); I. M. Tarbell, *The Hist. of the Standard Oil Co.* (1904), II, 158 ff.; "Supplementary Statement of Thomas W. Phillips," in *Final Report of the Industrial Commission, Vol. XIX of the Commission's Reports* (1902), pp. 652–85; *Pittsburg Dispatch*, July 22, 1912.]

C. E. P.

PHILLIPS, WALTER POLK (June 14, 1846–Jan. 31, 1920), telegrapher, journalist, the son of Andrew Smith and Roxena Minerva (Drake) Phillips, was born on a farm near Grafton, Mass., to which town his parents removed when he was eleven years of age. As a boy he became a messenger for the telegraph at Providence and, being permitted to practise at the key, quickly made himself proficient in the art. His rapidity and precision in taking messages by sound won him first place in a speed contest, in recognition of which Samuel F. B. Morse presented him with a testimonial gold pencil. Attracted to journalism, in 1867 he commenced to devote his nights to reporting for the *Providence Journal* and, the following year, became city editor, then managing editor, of the Providence *Herald*. In 1871 he was a reporter on the New York *Sun*. At intervals, however, he returned to telegraphy. For a time he was a fellow operator with Edison in Boston; during the winter of 1872–73 he was in the Western Union office in New York, and later he was one of the eight experts chosen to man the first leased press wire, which was installed in 1875, connecting New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Washington. He devised a code for news transmission, "The Phillips Telegraphic Code" (1879), and a system for facilitating delivery of telegraphic copy more fully punctuated and better edited. Interested in telegraphy and journalism, he contributed regularly to the *Telegrapher* and

became the associate editor of the *Electrician*, then the leading trade journal. His stories, sketches, and paragraphs, which had been signed "John Oakum," were issued as a little book in 1876, *Oakum Pickings*, and were republished in part twenty years later as *Sketches, Old and New*, with some additions, including an essay, "From Franklin to Edison." He also was the author of *My Debut in Journalism* (1892), a volume of newspaper-office tales.

When the original United Press emerged with apparent suddenness into the arena of news-gathering in the early eighties and began to challenge the entrenched Associated Press, Phillips was the managerial head of the former. He had recently scored brilliantly as the Washington representative of the New York Associated Press through the Hayes administration, from which position he had been called to help perfect the opposition association for papers arbitrarily excluded from the long-established news source. Such was his exceptional organizing ability and grasp of the telegraph situation that, within a short time, by utilizing the independent wires and by making alliances with news agencies abroad operating in rivalry to those supplying the Associated Press, he was delivering regular reports to nearly one hundred dailies on a far-flung network of leased lines. A little later he had obtained a secret arrangement for pooling with the Associated Press and was carrying on an extensive and lucrative sale of exclusive franchises to receive the service. In 1892–93, the United Press under Phillips' management absorbed the New York Associated Press and had practically concluded negotiations for a huge merger with the Western Associated Press papers when irreconcilable disagreements arose over division of territory and matters of control. In the great "War of the News Giants" which followed (1893–97), Phillips was the field marshal for the United Press forces. Success seemed near when he annexed the Southern Associated Press and again when he won over the New England Associated Press, but the endurance and persistence of the new Associated Press finally overpowered the United Press. The collapse occurred in the spring of 1897 and Phillips quit the news-gathering field.

After the extinction of his position as general manager of the United Press, Phillips was prominently connected with the Columbia Graphophone Company as an executive officer for fifteen years and with the American Red Cross, in whose Board of Control he was active during the period of the Spanish-American War. He was one of the early members of the Lotos Club of

New York City. Although large and rotund of form, he became an enthusiastic bicycler and his *Songs of the Wheel,* mostly humorous in tone, which he gathered together in his zeal for the sport, was published in 1897. In this volume he inserted some rhymes of his own set to music, notably "The Stout Man's Conquest." Depressed by the loss successively of his wife, Francena Adelaide Capron, and his son, he spent his closing years in Bridgeport, Conn., and at Vineyard Haven, Mass., where he died.

[In addition to Phillips' works see: Jas. D. Reid, *The Telegraph in America* (1879); Victor Rosewater, *Hist. of Coöperative News-Gathering in the U. S.* (1930); A. M. Phillips, *Phillips Genealogy* (1885); *N. Y. Times,* Feb. 1, 1920.] V. R.

PHILLIPS, WENDELL (Nov. 29, 1811–Feb. 2, 1884), orator and reformer, was the eighth child and fifth son of John and Sarah (Walley) Phillips, and traced his ancestry back to Rev. George Phillips [*q.v.*], who landed at Salem on the *Arbella* in June 1630. He inherited not only a superb physique and family traditions of a high order, but also ample wealth and an excellent social standing in Boston. At the Boston Latin School, to which he was sent in 1822, he won distinction in declamation; and later, at Harvard, where he graduated in the class of 1831, he showed ability as a debater and a student of history. He was obviously a patrician, animated by chivalric ideals and a spirit of *noblesse oblige.* After three years at the Harvard Law School, he was admitted to the Suffolk County bar and at once opened an office in Boston. Although he was never enthusiastic about his profession, he was able during his first two years of practice to pay his expenses, and he later enjoyed a fair clientage. He married, Oct. 12, 1837, Ann Terry Greene, orphan daughter of Benjamin Greene, a wealthy Boston merchant. She soon became a nervous invalid, confined usually to her room and often to her bed, but their domestic life was very happy. They had no children.

Even before his marriage, Phillips had become identified with the anti-slavery movement, and his wife encouraged him in his abolitionist views. On Mar. 26, 1837, at a meeting of the Massachusetts Anti-Slavery Society in Lynn, he spoke for twenty minutes announcing his allegiance to the cause, but he at first took no part in the work of the organization. His real opportunity presented itself on Dec. 8, 1837, at a public meeting held in Faneuil Hall to protest against the murder of Elijah P. Lovejoy [*q.v.*], the abolitionist editor, at Alton, Ill. Phillips listened in the audience while James T. Austin [*q.v.*], attorney general of the commonwealth, compared the assassins of Lovejoy to the Revolutionary patriots; then, urged by friends, he responded with a stirring indictment of the outrage. His personality and passionate eloquence caught the imaginations of the audience, and his impromptu address was received with cheers. Thus, at the age of twenty-six, he took his place in the front rank of the leaders of the anti-slavery protest.

Possessing an adequate private income which made it unnecessary for him to rely on his profession, he now became a lecturer on the lyceum platform, speaking mainly on the slavery question. His relatives thought him fanatical, but his wife's encouragement counteracted their influence. His ability and family prestige, as well as his charm and persuasive power, made him invaluable as a champion. Broadly speaking, he followed William Lloyd Garrison [*q.v.*] in his refusal to link abolitionism with the program of any political party and like Garrison he condemned the Constitution of the United States because of its compromise with the slave power, but he was never a non-resistant, and he and Garrison occasionally differed on this point. Phillips contributed frequently to Garrison's *Liberator* and, in 1840, went to London as a delegate from Massachusetts to the World's Anti-Slavery Convention, where he supported Garrison in the latter's insistence that women should have the same rights on the floor as men. On Oct. 30, 1842, speaking in Faneuil Hall on the fugitive-slave issue, he said, "My *curse* be on the Constitution of these United States" (Sears, *post,* p. 102). As time went on, he became more denunciatory in his language, arousing such hostility that on several occasions he was almost mobbed. He opposed the acquisition of Texas and the war with Mexico; and he condemned Webster bitterly for his "Seventh of March" speech, in 1850. Ultimately Phillips, like Garrison, demanded the division of the Union. During the Civil War, he was frequently a severe critic of the Lincoln administration, but the Emancipation Proclamation met with his approval as marking a victory for freedom. When, in 1865, Garrison urged the dissolution of the American Anti-Slavery Society, Phillips successfully maintained that it should not be disbanded, and was himself chosen president.

Regarding his mission as one of education, he devoted himself after the Civil War to advocating other moral causes, including prohibition, a reform in penal methods, concessions to the Indians, votes for women, and the labor movement. He was nominated in 1870 by the Labor Reform Party and the Prohibitionists for the governorship of Massachusetts and polled 20,000

votes; the following year he presided over the Labor Reform convention at Worcester and drew up its platform, which contained these words: "We affirm . . . that labor, the creator of wealth, is entitled to all it creates . . . we avow ourselves willing to accept . . . the overthrow of the whole profit-making system. . . . We declare war with the wages system . . . with the present system of finance" (*The Labor Question,* 1884, p. 4; Austin, *post,* p. 264). In this same year (1871) he supported Gen. B. F. Butler [*q.v.*] for the governorship. His denunciation of the moneyed corporations and his urging that the laboring class organize to further its own interests were regarded by some of his contemporaries as marking aberrations of a noble mind. Actually he seems to have had an unusually clear perception of national trends, but he was even further ahead of his time in his labor agitation than he had been when he championed abolition in 1837. In his seventieth year, he delivered the Phi Beta Kappa Centennial Oration at Harvard College, and showed himself to be still uncompromising by denouncing the timidity of academic conservatives. His last public address was delivered at the unveiling of a statue of Harriet Martineau on Dec. 26, 1883. He died after a week's suffering from angina pectoris, and after lying in state in Faneuil Hall his body was interred in the Granary Burying Ground.

Phillips was an aristocratic-looking man, with a rich, persuasive voice and a graceful, self-assured manner. Although famous as an orator, he was seldom rhetorical, and he was amazingly free from verbosity and pomposity. His subjects were many, among the most popular being "The Lost Arts," on which he spoke more than two thousand times; "Street Life in Europe"; "Daniel O'Connell"; "The Scholar in a Republic"; and "Toussaint L'Ouverture." He spoke before all kinds of audiences, large and small, sympathetic and hostile, and, in his prime, he seemed untiring. An omnivorous reader and a thorough scholar, he knew how to impart his knowledge in an easy and appealing way. His mission was that of an agitator, aiming to stir his countrymen to eliminate the evils in their midst. Like all extremists, he was frequently sharp of tongue and unfair to his opponents, but he was courageous, self-sacrificing, magnanimous, and lofty in his ideals, and has been rightly called the "Knight-Errant of unfriended Truth."

[Two volumes of Phillips' *Speeches, Lectures, and Letters* were published, the first in 1863 and the second, after his death, in 1891. The best biographies are Lorenzo Sears, *Wendell Phillips* (1909); G. L. Austin, *The Life and Times of Wendell Phillips* (1884); and C. E. Russell, *The Story of Wendell Phillips* (1914). See also T. W. Higginson, *Contemporaries* (1900), reprinting a paper first published in the *Nation* (N. Y.), Feb. 7, 1884; G. E. Woodberry, "Wendell Phillips," in his *Heart of Man and Other Papers* (1920); and Carlos Martyn, *Wendell Phillips* (1890).] C. M. F.

PHILLIPS, WILLARD (Dec. 19, 1784–Sept. 9, 1873), lawyer, author, was born in Bridgewater, Mass., and spent his early years in Hampshire County, where he received a common-school education. His father, Joseph, was a descendant of John Phillips who settled in Duxbury, Mass., before 1640; his mother was perhaps the Hannah Egerton whose marriage to a Joseph Phillips in 1784 is recorded in the *Vital Records of Bridgewater, Mass., to the Year 1850* (1916, II, 296). Willard graduated as valedictorian from the Bridgewater Academy and at eighteen became a teacher. Meanwhile, he prepared for college and in 1806 was admitted at Harvard, where he graduated with high rank in 1810. From 1811 to 1815 he was a tutor there and concurrently studied law with William Sullivan. He records in his diary for this period: "I very much regret having lost so much of my life both in regard to improvement and enjoyment. For this I am indebted to my excessive passions and appetites." He resolved to lead an abstemious life and "not to yield to the importunities of my hosts." In politics he believed that "the general spirit and principles" of the Federalists were good, but urged the disbanding of the party as a step toward placating partisan strife and arriving at a condition where individual merit would count for more. He had a taste for writing which led him into an editorial connection with the *General Repository and Review,* the *North American Review,* and the *American Jurist.* In 1818 he began to practise law in Boston. During 1825–26 he was a member of the legislature. Together with Theophilus Parsons [*q.v.*] he bought the *New-England Galaxy* in November 1828, and its publication continued for six years thereafter. He was chairman of a commission to codify the criminal law of Massachusetts (1837–42), but the commission's report was not adopted. In 1839 he was appointed probate judge for Suffolk County, resigning in 1847 to accept the presidency of the New England Mutual Life Insurance Company. This post he held until he had reached an advanced age. He was honored with membership in the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

From youth Phillips confided to a voluminous set of notebooks his reflections on what he read, from Weems's life of Washington to Coke's commentary on Littleton. He thought Adam Smith's *Wealth of Nations* "remarkably profound and ingenious." Later, he became a zealot for protective tariffs, and defended the faith in

his *Manual of Political Economy* (1828) and a catechism of protective orthodoxy entitled *Propositions Concerning Protection and Free Trade* (1850). He also published *A Treatise on the Law of Insurance* in two volumes, which appeared in 1823 and 1834 respectively. This work ran through five editions. In 1837 he published a little book called *The Inventor's Guide,* and also *The Law of Patents for Inventions.* His declining years were spent in the enjoyment of his friends and books at his home in Cambridge, where he died without symptoms of any acute disease. He was married in 1833 to Hannah Brackett Hill, daughter of Aaron Hill of Boston; she died three or four years later, and subsequently he married her sister Harriet.

[A. M. Phillips, *Phillips Genealg.* (1885); *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sciences,* vol. IX (1874); W. T. Davis, *Professional and Industrial Hist. of Suffolk County, Mass.* (1894), vol. I; John Livingston, *Portraits of Eminent Americans,* vol. I (1853); *Boston Daily Globe,* Sept. 11, 1873; collection of Phillips' early MSS. in the Harvard Coll. Lib.] C. F.

PHILLIPS, WILLIAM (Mar. 30, 1750 o.s.–May 26, 1827), merchant and philanthropist, lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, was the only son of William Phillips (1722–1804), a brother of John Phillips [*q.v.*], and of Abigail (Bromfield) Phillips, of Boston. He was sent to the Boston Latin School, but the feebleness of his constitution, especially a weakness of the eyes, repeatedly interrupted his education. He early entered business with his father, who was a prosperous merchant. In 1773 he made an extended tour of Great Britain, Holland, and France, returning in December of that year on one of the "tea ships." He married, Sept. 13, 1774, Miriam Mason, third daughter of Jonathan Mason of Boston, and they had seven children. At the outbreak of the Revolution, he removed his family to Norwich, Conn., but he himself labored assiduously for the colonial cause. At the death of his father in 1804, he inherited a large fortune. In the same year he became president of the Massachusetts Bank. In 1805, he was elected to the Massachusetts General Court and served until 1812, when he was chosen as lieutenant-governor on the Federalist ticket, with Caleb Strong as governor. To this office he was reëlected for eleven successive terms. In 1816 and 1820, he was a presidential elector at large. At the election of delegates to the state constitutional convention of 1820, he received the largest vote of any of the Boston candidates; and it was he who called the convention to order on Nov. 15, 1820, in the Hall of Representatives. His political career ended in 1823, with a term in the Massachusetts Senate.

Phillips was one of the most generous benefactors of his time. Elected in 1791 a trustee of Phillips Academy, Andover, founded by his cousin Samuel Phillips [*q.v.*], he was made president of the board in 1821, being the fifth of his family to hold that office. From 1812 to 1827 he supplied the sum of $500 annually for the support of needy students in that school, and in 1818 gave more than $5,000 towards the erection of a new brick academy building. It was said that over a period of years he devoted from $8,000 to $11,000 annually to charitable purposes, and his bequests in his will totaled $62,000, including $15,000 to Phillips Academy and $10,000 to Andover Theological Seminary. He was an original incorporator of the American Board of Foreign Missions, and was president of the American Bible Society, the Massachusetts General Hospital, the American Education Society, the Society for Propagating the Gospel, and many other charitable or philanthropic organizations. He was a member of the Old South Church, being one of the deacons from 1794 until his death.

Phillips was a man of domestic tastes, fond of retirement and averse to publicity. He was sound in his judgments, independent in his opinions, and devoted to duty. His conservatism and caution inspired and held the confidence of others. His portrait, by Gilbert Stuart, owned by Phillips Academy, shows a man much resembling George Washington in features and bearing.

[H. A. Hill, *William Phillips and William Phillips, Father and Son, 1722–1827* (repr. from *New-Eng. Hist. and Genealg. Reg.,* Apr. 1885); B. B. Wisner, *A Sermon Occasioned by the Death of the Hon. William Phillips* (1827); *Biog. Cat. of . . . Phillips Academy, Andover, 1778–1830* (1903); C. M. Fuess, *An Old New England School* (1917); *Columbian Centinel* (Boston), May 30, 1827.] C. M. F.

PHILLIPS, WILLIAM ADDISON (Jan. 14, 1824–Nov. 30, 1893), soldier, congressman from Kansas, author, was born at Paisley, Scotland, the son of John Phillips. He emigrated with his parents to the United States about 1838 and settled in Randolph County in southern Illinois, where he was reared in the strictest tenets of Presbyterianism. He went to the local schools and acquired some training in Latin and mathematics. He became editor of a newspaper at Chester, Ill., studied law, and was admitted to the bar. In 1855 he went to Kansas as a special correspondent of the *New York Tribune* and became conspicuous as a radical anti-slavery journalist and politician. He wrote *The Conquest of Kansas by Missouri and her Allies* (1856) in the interest of Frémont's candidacy for president. He was a participant in many of

the important political gatherings in Kansas Territory and became a member of the state legislature. In 1858 he and four associates founded the town of Salina. In 1859 he married Carrie Spillman, who died in 1883. They had four children. At the outbreak of the Civil War he became an officer in the Union Army, winning prominence as a commander of Indian troops in Indian Territory and Arkansas. He was mustered out as colonel of the 3rd Indian Regiment on June 10, 1865.

After the Civil War he returned to law and politics. While most of the anti-slavery radicals became conservatives, he merely transferred his radicalism to economic issues. His economic theories were given formal statement in a book called *Labor, Land and Law; a Search for the Missing Wealth of the Working People* (1886). Repudiating Henry George's single tax, he presented a program including: a graduated land tax for the purpose of reducing the size of holdings, preservation of public timber and reforestation of cut-over land, lease of grazing rights on public domain in tracts large enough to support a family, reservation in the public interest of subsoil rights to minerals, postal-savings banks through which the government might borrow from its people in national emergencies, organization of all labor, graduated taxation of large fortunes and inheritances, and regulation of public utilities. He was elected to Congress from Kansas in 1872, 1874, and 1876, and while there he was interested chiefly in land legislation, postal-savings banks, postal telegraphy, greenbacks, and silver. He was a Republican in politics, and, when he found it necessary to choose between his party and his principles, he supported the party. On questions that were not partisan issues he was independent. His Civil War experiences resulted in close association with problems relating to Indians, especially the Cherokee. After his retirement from Congress he became attorney for the Cherokee and engaged in law practice in Washington, D. C. In 1890 he was again nominated for Congress but was defeated by the candidate of the People's party. He wrote voluminously, fiction, verse, and essays, as well as economic and political discussions. From 1885 to 1887 he published several articles in the *North American Review* (Nov. 1885, July, Sept. 1886, Aug. 1887). However, much of his writing was anonymous and can not be identified. He was survived by his second wife, Anna B. (Stapler) Phillips, to whom he was married in 1885 at Tahlequah in the Indian Territory.

[A few letters in the Lib. of Kan. State Hist. Soc., Topeka; papers in possession of nephew, A. M. Campbell, Jr., Salina, Kan.; Cherokee material in the Lib. of the Univ. of Okla.; *Kan. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. V (1896); *Biog. Directory Am. Cong.* (1928); A. H. Abel, *The Am. Indian . . . in the Civil War* (1919) and *The Am. Indian under Reconstruction* (1925); Wiley Britton, *Memoirs of the Rebellion on the Border* (1882), *The Civil War on the Border* (2 vols., 1890–99), and *The Union Indian Brigade* (1922); *Daily Republican* (Salina, Kan.), Dec. 1, 1893.] J. C. M.

PHINIZY, FERDINAND (Jan. 20, 1819–Oct. 20, 1889), cotton merchant, financier, was of Italian ancestry on his father's side, his grandfather, Ferdinand, having come to America during the latter part of the eighteenth century. He was the eldest son of Jacob and Matilda (Stewart) Phinizy and was born at Bowling Green (now Stephens), Oglethorpe County, Ga. After attending the county schools he entered the University of Georgia, at Athens, whither his family had moved. Here he was graduated with honors in 1838. For the next few years he managed the family plantation at Bowling Green, but his business enterprise and sagacity soon led him into a venture of his own. He secured the contract for grading the first eleven miles of the new Georgia Railroad, leading out of Athens to Augusta. With the profits from this work, he entered the cotton trade in Augusta, setting up first with his classmate Edward P. Clayton under the firm name of Phinizy & Clayton. When by mutual agreement this partnership was dissolved, he organized with two of his kinsmen the firm of F. Phinizy & Company. His business ability was evident from the first, and before the outbreak of the Civil War he had amassed a fortune. In the struggle that followed, he did not enlist in the Confederate army, but instead became a fiscal agent of the Confederate government, and in the course of the four years of the war collected vast amounts of cotton which was run through the Federal blockade. He also marketed many Confederate bonds.

The war levied heavily upon his fortune, but he was able to regain his financial position and at his death handed down an estate estimated to be worth $1,300,000. He rehabilitated his fortune largely through wise management of the cotton trade and through sagacious investments. He bought many railway stocks and bonds, and at various times was a director of the Georgia Railroad & Banking Company, the Augusta & Savannah Railroad, the Atlanta & West Point Railroad, the Northeastern Railroad of Georgia, and the Augusta Factory. He was also a director and dominating force in the Southern Mutual Insurance Company, a director of the Bank of the University (Athens), and a trustee of the University of Georgia.

After the war he continued to show an inter-

est in his former slaves, moving one couple to Athens, where he cared for them throughout their lives. Being emphatically a business man, he had no political ambition. Though he did not belong to a church until late in life, when he joined the Methodists, he was always interested in religious affairs and often entertained in his home visiting Methodist bishops and other churchmen. His religious tastes were simple—almost primitive—and in the rural churches he found his greatest delight. He was much opposed to instrumental music in the churches, and his support of certain congregations was based on their agreement to refrain from introducing it. In 1849 he married Harriet H. Bowdre, of Augusta, and to this union were born eight children. His wife died Feb. 7, 1863, and on Aug. 11, 1865, he married Anne S. Barrett, of Augusta; of this union three children were born. He made Athens his home after the Civil War, and there he died.

[F. P. Calhoun, *The Phinizy Family in America* (1925); W. J. Northen, *Men of Mark in Ga.*, vol. III (1911); A. L. Hull, *Annals of Athens, 1801–1901* (1906); *In Memoriam: Ferdinand Phinizy* (Augusta, 1890); *Athens Weekly Banner*, Oct. 29, 1889; *Athens Weekly Chronicle*, Oct. 26, 1889; *Atlanta Constitution*, Oct. 21, 1889.]

E. M. C.

PHIPPS, HENRY (Sept. 27, 1839–Sept. 22, 1930), manufacturer, philanthropist, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Henry and Hannah Phipps, emigrants from England. In 1845 the family moved to Allegheny City, Pa., where they became next-door neighbors of the Carnegie family. In his *Autobiography*, Andrew Carnegie says that his mother often added $4.00 a week to the family income by binding shoes for Henry Phipps's father, who was a master shoemaker. Henry's education in the public school was supplemented by the influence of his mother, who inspired in him a fondness for poetry. His first regular employment, when he was thirteen years old, was in a jewelry store; then for a time he worked for a news and merchandise dealer. At seventeen he obtained work with Dilworth & Bidwell, dealers in iron and spikes, the Pittsburgh agents of the DuPont powder mills. At first he was office boy and clerk, and later bookkeeper, which position he held until 1861.

In 1859 he became a silent partner in the firm of Kloman Brothers, manufacturers of scales, and in 1861, borrowing $800, purchased a one-sixth interest in the firm, which was reorganized in 1863 as Kloman & Phipps; he kept the books and acquired practical experience with iron forgings and the manufacturing of axles. When the demand for their products created by the Civil War had lessened, Kloman & Phipps found it expedient to join forces with Andrew Carnegie [*q.v.*], and a company, the Union Iron Mills, was formed in 1867. From this time until they both retired in 1901, Phipps was an associate of Carnegie. He was naturally cautious and disliked change of any kind; moreover, he was content with his income from the iron industry; nevertheless, in 1874, when Carnegie, foreseeing the importance of steel, formed the Edgar Thomson Steel Company, Ltd., for the manufacture of steel exclusively, Phipps took an interest. He was a partner in Carnegie Brothers & Company Ltd. (1881), in Carnegie, Phipps & Company (1886), and in the Carnegie Steel Company, Ltd., recorded in Pittsburgh in 1892 with a capital of $25,000,000, which embraced all of the possessions acquired since the days of the Kloman forge. During all this time, Phipps's contribution to the industry was the steering of a discreet financial course. The fact that his firm came safely through the fluctuations of the post-war iron trade, the establishment of the new steel business, and the business depressions and panics of the period is due in no small part to his careful and accomplished management. His one contribution to the technical side of steel manufacture was a measure of economy: recognizing the value of the chemical expert, he was responsible for the discovery of a use for scale, hitherto a waste product.

In 1899 Carnegie, wishing to retire, gave Phipps and Henry C. Frick [*q.v.*] an option on his interest in the Carnegie Steel Company, Ltd., but even with the aid of W. H. Moore [*q.v.*], Phipps and Frick were unable to raise the funds necessary to effect the purchase. In 1900, the Carnegie Steel Company, Ltd., was reorganized as the Carnegie Company, and a year later, with all its subsidiaries, passed into the hands of the United States Steel Corporation.

After his retirement Phipps devoted himself to the utilization of his wealth for humanitarian purposes. Among his early gifts were public baths, reading rooms, playgrounds, and conservatories in the parks of Allegheny and Pittsburgh. His philanthropies of greatest interest, however, were foundations for combating tuberculosis and mental disease. With the caution of the inquiring business man, he first studied at a distance and helped anonymously the tuberculosis work of Dr. Lawrence F. Flick. When he had satisfied himself as to the wisdom of the course, after a trip of investigation in Europe, he established in 1903 at Philadelphia the Henry Phipps Institute for the Study, Treatment, and Prevention of Tuberculosis, which in 1910 passed into the control of the University of Pennsylvania.

In 1905 at Baltimore he founded the Phipps Tuberculosis Dispensary at the Johns Hopkins Hospital, under Dr. William Osler [*q.v.*] and Dr. L. V. Hamman. He also made possible the sixth International Congress on Tuberculosis held in 1908 in Washington. His interest in mental disease was the result of consultation with Dr. William H. Welch of the Johns Hopkins University, and bore fruit in the foundation of the Henry Phipps Psychiatric Clinic of the Johns Hopkins Hospital, opened in 1913. In addition to these foundations Phipps gave $1,000,000 for the erection of sanitary tenement houses in New York City. He married, on Feb. 6, 1872, Anne Childs Shaffer, the daughter of a Pittsburgh manufacturer, and they had three sons and two daughters. His well-preserved constitution carried him through more than ninety years of life; he died just before his ninety-first birthday at his home, "Bonnie Blink," Great Neck, L. I.

[*Autobiography of Andrew Carnegie* (1920), ed. by J. C. Van Dyke; Harvey Cushing, *The Life of Sir Wm. Osler* (2 vols., 1925); B. J. Hendrick, *The Life of Andrew Carnegie* (2 vols., 1932); manuscript notes on Phipps in the steel industry from B. J. Hendrick, Esq.; *Cosmopolitan*, Dec. 1902; *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 23, 1930.] A. M.

PHIPS, Sir WILLIAM (Feb. 2, 1650/51–Feb. 18, 1694/95), first royal governor of Massachusetts, was born on the Maine frontier, of humble parents, James and Mary Phips. At an early age he was apprenticed to a ship's carpenter, and later practised his trade in Boston for many years. Here he married Mary (Spencer) Hull, the daughter of Capt. Roger Spencer and the propertied widow of John Hull. He became a contractor for building ships and, for a time at least, commanded a sailing vessel. Coming into contact with sea rovers who talked of treasure fishing and the fabulous wealth of sunken Spanish vessels, Phips determined to search for one of these ships reported to have sunk near the Bahamas. He succeeded in interesting Charles II, who equipped him with a vessel, H. M. S. *Rose*, and set forth on his quest in September 1683. This venture failed, but a second, backed by a company under the patronage of the Duke of Albemarle, was successful in finding a vessel off the coast of Hispaniola (Haiti) and raised a considerable treasure. For this achievement Phips was knighted in 1687.

With wealth and newly acquired social position Sir William returned to Boston to become provost marshal-general, a post which James II had granted him as a further reward, in the new dominion government under Sir Edmund Andros [*q.v.*]. Because he was ill received he hurried to England to complain, and there came into touch with Increase Mather [*q.v.*], who was seeking governmental changes. After the Revolution of 1688 the two worked together for restoration of the old charter rule. Phips was again in Boston just after the overthrow of Andros, where he found himself in high favor with the Mather faction, which had come into control. Early in 1690 he joined the Second, or North, Church (Congregational), thereby becoming a parishioner of the Mathers, and at the same time was made a freeman of the colony. He was immediately chosen to command the expedition which Massachusetts was raising against Nova Scotia and won a spectacular victory there by surprising the French and capturing Port Royal. Upon his return to Boston, he found he had been elected magistrate in the provincial government of Massachusetts. Soon afterward he was chosen commander of another expedition against the French, this time consisting of forces sent by the northern colonies against Canada. Chagrined by the failure of this ill-starred expedition, he hastened to England to seek aid in another attempt. Decision at court on the matter was delayed until the king should determine whether to establish dominion or charter government in New England, since if dominion government were established, the new governor general would command the military forces in the war. Finally the king determined on a compromise. He agreed to grant a new charter, based largely on the old one, but reserving to himself the appointment of the governor. Increase Mather, quick to seize every advantage for the colony, agreed to the king's plan but asked and was granted the privilege of nominating the first governor. His choice was Sir William.

The task of the new governor was not easy. The policy which the king desired him to uphold was bound to clash with what Mather expected of him, and party conflicts over religious, economic, military, and political affairs were inevitable. He arrived in the colony in May 1692, when the witchcraft delusion was at its height. After a period of bewilderment, he made a sudden decision and brought the persecution to an abrupt end (*Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, America and West Indies, 1689–1692*, § 2551; *1693–1696*, §§ 33, 545). He favored legislation requiring universal taxation for support of the Congregational church, but his administration had to face the bitter opposition of those of other faiths who claimed liberty of conscience as their charter right. In commercial matters he stood for the old free-trade policy, thwarted the customs officials at every turn,

connived at piracy, and neglected to reserve the king's share in condemnations (*Ibid., 1693–1696,* §§ 214, 826, 838, 879). As for his military policy, he failed to protect his frontiers and to send the aid which neighboring colonies desired. Although he petitioned the Lords of Trade for permission to conduct another campaign against Canada, he refused to cooperate in the expedition under Sir Francis Wheler against the French in America, claiming that his orders did not arrive in time (*Ibid.*, §§ 545, 578). Probably his greatest mistake lay in crushing party opposition instead of attempting conciliation. He was disliked both by the advocates of the old charter régime and by those who favored dominion government. By using every means to keep these men out of the Council and House of Representatives, he was able to control the majority vote in the General Court, but he thereby gave them one more grievance about which to complain to England.

Socially Sir William seems always to have been at a disadvantage. A "self-made" man, he made a display of fraternizing with ship carpenters and former friends of lowly station, a trait as irritating to the aristocracy as his pompous manner or the undignified outbursts of temper with which he met opposition to his will. At times he could not resist resorting to brute force. He publicly caned a captain of the royal navy who refused to obey his orders, and on another occasion dragged the collector of customs around the wharf for attempting to seize a vessel suspected of illegal trading. In 1694 he was ordered to England to answer a number of charges brought against him by his enemies. His sudden death in London before his case was concluded was doubtless the only thing which prevented his recall, for the evidence of maladministration was very strong against him (*Ibid., 1693–1696,* §§ 1298, 1507). His failure was a great blow to the Mathers, who had expected him to unite all factions and by a sympathetic interpretation of his instructions to restore as nearly as possible the conditions existing in 1684, before the revocation of the charter.

[Cotton Mather's biography, *Pietas in Patriam: The Life of His Excellency Sir William Phipps, Knt.* (1697), repr. in *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1702) and as *The Life of Sir William Phips* (1929), ed. by Mark Van Doren, is totally unreliable, written as it was to defend Increase Mather for his responsibility in Sir William's appointment as governor. Francis Bowen's "Life of Sir William Phips," in Jared Sparks, *The Lib. of Am. Biog.*, vol. VII (n.d.), is only partly reliable, depending too greatly on Mather's account. Other lives are, William Goold, "Sir William Phips," *Me. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. IX (1887); H. O. Thayer, *Sir William Phips* (1927); C. H. Karraker, *The Hispaniola Treasure* (1934); and sketch by J. A. Doyle in *Dict. Nat. Biog.* See also the following articles in the *New England Quarterly*: V. F. Barnes, "The Rise of William Phips" and "Phippius Maximus," July and October 1928; C. H. Karraker, "The Treasure Expedition," Oct. 1932; and R. H. George, "Treasure Trove of William Phips," June 1933. For source material, probably the most interesting is the Knepp Journal of 1683–84, in the British Museum, Egerton MSS., 2526, and the log of the *James and Mary* in the British Museum, Sloane MSS., 50 or 1070; but the following material will be found valuable: Journal and Correspondence of the Lords of Trade, in the Public Record Office; Mass. Archives; *Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, America and West Indies, 1689–92* (1901), *1693–1696* (1903); "Andros Records," *Proc. Am. Antiq. Soc.*, n.s., vol. XIII (1901); "Diary of Samuel Sewall," *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 5 ser. V (1878). For genealogy, see F. L. Weis, *The Ancestors and Descendants of John Phipps of Sherborn* (1924).]

V. F. B.

PHISTERER, FREDERICK (Oct. 11, 1836–July 13, 1909), soldier and author, was born in Stuttgart, Württemberg, Germany, the son of Frederick and Frederiki Hahn Phisterer. He received his early education in the German schools until his nineteenth year, when he came alone to New York City, landing on June 22, 1855. Within a few months he enlisted at Philadelphia in the United States Army. In March 1856, he joined Company A of the 3rd Artillery, was advanced to the rank of corporal on Oct. 12, 1858, and to sergeant on July 10, 1860. He participated in Wright's expedition against the Spokane Indians, in Indian fighting at Four Lakes and at Spokane Plains in September 1858, in the occupation of the San Juan Islands from July to December 1859, and in Stein's expedition in eastern Oregon and Idaho in the summer of 1860. On Dec. 6, 1860, he was honorably discharged at Vancouver and came east to engage in business in Ohio.

After the first battle of Bull Run in the Civil War, he reënlisted and was made sergeant-major, 18th Infantry, on July 31, 1861. He was commissioned 2nd lieutenant, Oct. 30, 1861, promoted 1st lieutenant, Feb. 27, 1862, and captain, Feb. 15, 1866. He fought with the 18th Infantry throughout the Civil War, and at Stone's River on Dec. 31, 1862, he won lasting fame by volunteering to carry a message, under heavy fire, to a battalion commander whose troops faced capture or annihilation unless warned of their danger. In recognition of his valor, he was presented with the Congressional Medal of Honor on Dec. 12, 1894. He later won the commendation of his superior officers for his gallantry in action during the Chattanooga-Ringgold Campaign of 1863, and in the Atlanta Campaign of 1864.

After the Civil War, he served with the 36th and with the 7th Infantry regiments until Aug. 4, 1870, when he resigned his commission to enter civil pursuits in New York, in Brooklyn, in various cities in New Jersey, and in Columbus,

Ohio. He commanded a company of citizens' police in the Columbus railroad riots in 1877 and was commissioned captain of the Governor's Guards, Ohio National Guard, on Aug. 27, 1877, resigning in January 1879. He entered New York State military service on Jan. 1, 1880, as colonel and acting assistant adjutant-general, was made assistant adjutant-general on Nov. 22, 1892, and was reappointed on Jan. 1, 1897. He served in this capacity through the Spanish-American War, being brevetted brigadier-general on Dec. 22, 1898. He became colonel on the staff of the major-general of the New York National Guard on Mar. 5, 1903, and was brevetted major-general, Jan. 2, 1905. He was given original rank as lieutenant-colonel on the National Guard divisional staff on Jan. 30, 1908, and served as adjutant-general of New York until his death at Albany in 1909. His wife, Isabel Riley, whom he had married at Columbus, Ohio, on Nov. 14, 1867, and two sons, survived him. He is buried in Greenlawn Cemetery, at Columbus. He was a member of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion, the Order of Indian Wars of the United States, the Society of the Army of the Cumberland, and the Medal of Honor Legion of the United States. He wrote, *The National Guardsman on Guard and Kindred Duties* (1879), *The National Guardsman as a Non-Commissioned Officer of Infantry* (1885), *Statistical Record of the Armies of the United States* (1883), and *New York in the War of the Rebellion, 1861 to 1865,* the first edition of which was published in 1890.

[*Who's Who in N. Y. City and State* (4th ed., 1909); General Orders No. 48, General Headquarters, N. Y., July 13, 1909, printed in vol. I of *N. Y. in the War of the Rebellion, 1861 to 1865* (3rd ed., 5 vols. and index, 1912); records of the city historian of Albany, N. Y.; personal letter from his son, Col. F. W. Phisterer, U. S. A.; *Albany Evening Journal,* July 13, 1909.]

C. C. B.

PHOENIX, JOHN [See DERBY, GEORGE HORATIO, 1823–1861].

PHYFE, DUNCAN (1768–Aug. 16, 1854), cabinet maker, was a member of a Scotch family named Fife that, in 1783 or 1784, left their home at Loch Fannich, thirty miles northwest of Inverness, and sailed for America. The parents (or possibly only the widowed mother) were accompanied by several children, one or two of whom died during the voyage. They settled in or near Albany, N. Y., and there the second son, Duncan, then sixteen years of age, became an apprentice to a cabinet maker. Upon attaining his majority he moved to New York, and the directory of 1792 shows that he had a joiner's shop at 2 Broad Street. On Feb. 17, 1793, he married Rachel Lowzade, a native of Holland, who bore him four sons and three daughters. At about the time of his marriage he changed the spelling of his name to Phyfe, and so it appears in the 1794 directory. His business apparently prospered, for in 1795 he moved to larger quarters at 35 Partition Street, and between 1802 and 1816 he purchased the houses on each side and one across the street. In 1816 the name of the street was changed to Fulton. Phyfe's shops and warehouse were on the present site of the Hudson Terminal Building. At the height of his prosperity he is said to have employed over one hundred workmen. He took two of his sons, Michael and James D., into business with him and in 1837 the firm became Duncan Phyfe & Sons. On the death of Michael, in 1840, the name was changed again to Duncan Phyfe & Son. In 1847 Phyfe sold his interest and retired, but continued to live at 193 Fulton Street until his death, which occurred in 1854, in the eighty-sixth year of his age. He was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn.

Duncan Phyfe was described by members of his family who remembered him as a man of slight build—"a very plain man, always working and always smoking a short pipe." He was quiet, independent, and a man of strict and methodical habits. He combined the talents of an artist and a business man to a remarkable degree. He apparently had few interests outside his family and his work. He was a member of the Brick Presbyterian Church and a strict Calvinist. His fame rests upon the excellence of his furniture. Competent critics agree that in design and workmanship it is not surpassed by the finest products of the eighteenth-century cabinet makers of England. He was a master of proportion, line, and detail, and probably himself an expert carver. In the handling of mahogany to bring out its highest values of texture and color he never had a superior. His early work shows his indebtedness to Hepplewhite, Adam, and Sheraton, whose design books he undoubtedly possessed, though at no time was he a copyist. The characteristic curves of much of his work appear to have been derived from the French styles of the Directoire and the Consulate, followed by features strongly Empire in character. These elements he combined gracefully and successfully in a style all his own. Gradually, however, he acceded to the popular demand for furniture in the style commonly called American Empire. The first of this was not without merit, but it began to lose its lightness and grace and degenerated finally into heavy, commonplace forms which Phyfe himself called "butcher fur-

niture." His work may be divided for convenience into the following periods: Adam-Sheraton, 1795–1802; Sheraton-Directoire, 1802–18; American Empire, 1818–30; "butcher furniture," 1830–47. His fame rests upon the furniture made prior to 1825, and the best of it was probably produced before 1814. Chairs, sofas, and tables formed the bulk of his output, though he made other pieces also. The lyre form and crossed slats in his chair backs, outward sweeping curves in chair and table legs, parallel rows of beading, and acanthus carving on pedestal tables are among the more familiar features. He worked almost exclusively in mahogany until the later period of rosewood and black walnut.

Duncan Phyfe unquestionably exerted a corrective and restraining influence on American taste, kept alive the classic tradition well into the nineteenth century, and did more than any other man to postpone the decadence of style that was inevitable with the development of the machine age. In a very real sense he was the last of the great Georgians, the artistic heir of Chippendale, Hepplewhite, Adam, and Sheraton.

[Walter A. Dyer, *Early Am. Craftsmen* (1915, 1920) and "Duncan Phyfe Furniture," *House Beautiful*, Mar. 1915; C. O. Cornelius, *Furniture Masterpieces of Duncan Phyfe* (1922) and "The Distinctiveness of Duncan Phyfe," *Antiques*, Nov. 1922; R. T. H. Halsey and C. O. Cornelius, "An Exhibition of Furniture from the Workshop of Duncan Phyfe," *Bull. of the Metropolitan Museum of Art*, Oct. 1922; W. R. Storey, "Duncan Phyfe Enters on New Renown," *N. Y. Times Sunday Mag.*, Dec. 20, 1925; W. M. Hornor, Jr., "A New Estimate of Duncan Phyfe," the *Antiquarian*, Mar. 1930; *N. Y. Tribune*, Aug. 19, 1854; manuscript notebook of Ernest Hagen, a disciple of Phyfe.]

W. A. D.

PHYSICK, PHILIP SYNG (July 7, 1768–Dec. 15, 1837), surgeon, was born in Philadelphia, the son of Edmund and Abigail (Syng) Physick. His father was keeper of the Great Seal and receiver-general of Pennsylvania, and later agent for the Penn estates. He was anxious that his son should study medicine, but the son was not eager to do so, preferring the art of the goldsmith practised by his maternal grandfather, Philip Syng [*q.v.*]. Many of the inventions and improvements that Physick made in surgical procedures and instruments show that he had strong mechanical leanings. He attended a local school and took his college course at the University of Pennsylvania, graduating in arts in 1785. Yielding to his father's desire, he then began the study of medicine under Dr. Adam Kuhn [*q.v.*], who had been a pupil of Linnaeus, and in 1788 went to London, where John Hunter accepted him as a house pupil and later invited him to remain in London as his assistant. The American youth was fortunate in being associated with Hunter, who had one of the most fertile surgical brains the world has ever possessed. Physick studied at the Great Windmill Street School established by William Hunter, and it is probable that he and Jenner were fellow pupils. In 1790 he was appointed a house-surgeon to St. George's Hospital, which position he held for a year. He then went to Edinburgh, where he graduated in medicine in 1792, his thesis, *Dissertatio Medica Inauguralis de Apoplexia* (1792), being dedicated to John Hunter.

On his return to Philadelphia after receiving his degree he began practice, but at first patients came so slowly that he was greatly discouraged. He rendered good service in the yellow-fever epidemics of 1793 and 1798, contracted the disease himself and, it is said, even had a second attack. He gained one powerful friend, Dr. Benjamin Rush [*q.v.*], who did much to advance his fortunes, and came into contact with Stephen Girard [*q.v.*], who gave material aid to the yellow-fever hospital during the epidemic. He subsequently served as Girard's physician. He was elected to the staff of the Pennsylvania Hospital in 1794, holding this position until 1816. His clinical teaching there was renowned and did much to increase his reputation. In 1800 he was appointed surgeon to the Almshouse and about the same time he gave lectures in surgery at the University of Pennsylvania. At that time the subjects of anatomy and surgery were combined in one chair, but in 1801, Physick was asked by the University students to give independent lectures in surgery at the Pennsylvania Hospital, and these were so successful that in 1805 a separate chair of surgery at the University was created for him. He retained this chair until 1819, when failing health compelled his resignation.

Physick has many advances in surgery to his credit. The use of manipulation instead of mechanical methods of traction in the reduction of dislocations, new methods in the treatment of hip-joint disease by immobilization, a modified splint for certain fractures of the femur and of the ankle, were improvements in which he was largely concerned. He is said to have been one of the first in America to use the stomach tube. He invented needle forceps, which enabled deeply placed vessels to be tied, and the guillotine tonsillotome. He also used a form of snare in the removal of tonsils. He had much to do with the introduction of animal ligatures in surgery and with establishing the practice of leaving them in the tissues to become absorbed. His early experiments showed the value of catgut

ligatures. In 1804 he reported a successful operation on an arteriovenous aneurism which had followed venesection (*Philadelphia Medical Museum,* vol. I, 1805, pp. 65–67). He did notable work in surgery of the urinary tract; he devised new forms of catheters, especially the bougie-tipped form, and became celebrated for his ability in operating for stone in the bladder. In 1831 he performed lithotomy on Chief Justice Marshall, removing, it is said, nearly a thousand calculi. The patient was seventy-three years of age at the time, but he made a complete recovery and lived four years longer. Physick persistently believed in the virtues of venesection, and is said to have regretted in his later years that he had bled not too much, but too little.

Physick was not a prolific writer; his publications were chiefly reports in medical journals. His mind was evidently disposed more toward the invention and perfection of mechanical devices and the designing of improved methods of mechanical treatment than toward writing. His views are well represented, however, in *The Elements of Surgery* (1813), by his nephew, John Syng Dorsey [*q.v.*], and in *The Institutes and Practice of Surgery* (1824), by his successor, William Gibson [*q.v.*]. He was honored by election to English and French medical societies and to the American Philosophical Society. Controversies over the cause of the yellow-fever epidemic engendered dissension and bitter feeling among the members of the profession in Philadelphia, with the result that Physick did not become a member of the College of Physicians, but was first president of the Academy of Medicine, a short-lived rival institution.

On Sept. 18, 1800, Physick married Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Emlen of Philadelphia; they had seven children, of whom four survived infancy. Physick had many illnesses throughout his life; after an attack of fever in 1813, possibly typhoid, he never regained robust health and thenceforth suffered from renal calculus and gradually advancing cardiac disease. He took remarkable measures to avoid the possibility that he might be buried alive and to prevent an autopsy being performed on his body, the more surprising because he had been a strong advocate of the value of such examinations. He left particular directions that a guard should be stationed at his grave to prevent his body being carried away.

In estimating Physick's influence on American surgery, much importance should be given to his association with John Hunter. Stimulated by that great activator of surgical thought, he came to an untilled field as one of the few who were fitted to cultivate it. Throughout his life his talents led him to originate new procedures and improve methods, and "his chief organ of publicity was his class of students" (Horner, *post*). While the accounts of his times speak of him as a conservative surgeon, it is evident that he could be bold when necessary and there is good reason for the title "Father of American Surgery" frequently bestowed upon him.

[W. E. Horner, *Necrological Notice of Dr. Philip Syng Physick* (1838); Jacob Randolph, *A Memoir on the Life and Character of Philip Syng Physick* (1839), abridged in *Am. Jour. Medic. Sci.*, May 1839; S. D. Gross, *Lives of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1861); F. P. Henry, *Standard Hist. of the Medic. Profession of Phila.* (1897); R. H. Harte, "Philip Syng Physick," *Univ. of Pa. Medic. Bull.*, Feb. 1906; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); W. S. Middleton, "Philip Syng Physick, Father of American Surgery," *Annals of Medic. Hist.*, Sept. 1929; P. S. P. Conner, *Syng of Phila.* (1891); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser,* Dec. 16, 1837.] T. M.

PIATT, DONN (June 29, 1819–Nov. 12, 1891), journalist, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, the son of Judge Benjamin M. and Elizabeth (Barnett) Piatt. The former was the grandson of John Piatt, a Huguenot refugee who married Frances (Van Vliet) Wykoff in Holland, emigrated to the West Indies, and finally came to New Jersey. His son, Jacob, moved to Kentucky in 1795 and later settled in Ohio. Benjamin and Elizabeth Piatt possessed the hardy spirit of pioneers, tempered somewhat by an untutored appreciation of literature and the arts. Donn was the ninth of their ten children. In 1827 the family moved to a homestead, "Mac-o-cheek," near West Liberty, Ohio, where at the district school he laid the foundations of his education, which was continued in the public schools of Urbana and at the Athenaeum, now St. Xavier College, Cincinnati. At each of these institutions he gave evidence of brilliant but erratic abilities. Destined by his father for the law, he soon developed an ungovernable distaste for the machinery of legal practice, from which he found a temporary escape in active participation in the political campaign of 1840, during which he not only distinguished himself by his speeches, but also undertook the first of his editorial ventures, the *Democratic Club,* published at West Liberty. In this short-lived paper he first exhibited his talent for broad humor and crushing invective. After his marriage in 1847 to Louise Kirby, he gave up the law and retired from Cincinnati to "Mac-o-chee," whence both he and his wife contributed articles to various newspapers. In 1852 he was appointed judge of the court of common pleas of Hamilton County, a position from which he resigned the following year in order to take his wife to Paris for medical treat-

ment. In France he served with distinction as secretary to the American legation until his return to "Mac-o-chee" in 1855.

At the outbreak of the Civil War he was commissioned captain in the 13th Ohio Infantry, Apr. 30, 1861, and the following year, Nov. 4, was promoted to the rank of major. On Jan. 1, 1863, he was made a lieutenant-colonel and later acted as chief of staff to Gen. Robert C. Schenck [*q.v.*]. In the absence of General Schenck, he ordered Col. William Birney [*q.v.*], who was in Maryland recruiting a colored brigade, to enlist slaves only. For this unauthorized action President Lincoln reprimanded and threatened to cashier him, but he was saved by the intercessions of Stanton and Chase. He was active in the campaign of 1863, when he showed his soldierly acumen by ordering Milroy to evacuate Winchester. This order was overruled by Schenck with the result that Milroy was cut off and his regiments almost annihilated by Lee.

After the war he returned to his old pursuits, and in 1865 was elected to the Ohio legislature, where he served one term. His wife having died in 1864, he married in 1866 her sister, Ella Kirby, whose injuries two years later in a railway accident necessitated their removal to New York. There he was involved more extensively in journalism. In 1868 he moved to Washington as correspondent to the *Cincinnati Commercial*; for a few months in 1871 he was also editor of a department in the *Galaxy* known as the "Club Room." In 1871 he became, with George Alfred Townsend, co-editor and founder of the weekly *Capital,* and his work for this paper is the real basis of his reputation. Townsend withdrew a few weeks after the first number was published, but Piatt continued in active editorship for nine years. The *Capital* affiliated itself with neither political party, but attempted to expose the weaknesses and corruptions of the members of both. So vigorous and pointed were many of Piatt's denunciations that while they brought popularity to the paper, they won for its editor the enmity of many politicians. After the Presidential election of 1876 he denounced the formation of the Electoral Commission as robbing the people of the right of self-government and condemned its subsequent actions as defeating the will of the people. On Feb. 18, 1877, he printed an editorial, entitled "The Beginning of the End," in which he declared: "If a man thus returned to power can ride in safety from the executive mansion to the Capitol to be inaugurated, we are fitted for the slavery that will follow the inauguration." This remark was interpreted by President Grant and others as a threat

Piatt

to assassinate Hayes, and Piatt was indicted, Feb. 21, 1877, on the charge of inciting rebellion, insurrection, and riot. The prosecution was dropped, however, immediately after Hayes's inauguration. Piatt's complete frankness and outspoken honesty made him one of the most formidable and conspicuous editors of his time.

On his withdrawal from Washington in 1880, he devoted himself to literary composition. In 1887 he published *Memories of the Men Who Saved the Union,* a group of essays on Lincoln, Seward, Chase, Thomas, and others. Its sharp criticisms and its unpopular depreciation of Grant and Sherman attracted considerable attention. The following year *The Lone Grave of the Shenandoah and Other Tales* appeared. After his death, *Poems and Plays* (1893), *The Reverend Melancthon Poundex* (1893), a novel, and *General George H. Thomas* (1893), a critical biography with concluding chapters by H. V. Boynton, were issued. Piatt died at his country house, "Mac-o-chee," where his last years had been spent.

[C. G. Miller, *Donn Piatt: His Work and His Ways* (1893), fulsome but accurate; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army,* vol. I (1903); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Army*); S. B. Hedges, in *Catholic World,* Oct. 1893; *Cincinnati Enquirer,* Nov. 13, 1891.]

C. D. A.

PIATT, JOHN JAMES (Mar. 1, 1835–Feb. 16, 1917), poet, journalist, was born at James' Mills (later Milton), Ind., the son of John Bear and Emily (Scott) Piatt. The former was a second cousin of Donn Piatt [*q.v.*]. They were descendants of John Piatt, a French Huguenot who emigrated first to the West Indies and from there, some time prior to 1670, came to New Jersey. When John James was six years old his parents moved to Ohio, establishing themselves near Columbus. The boy attended the high school in that place, and later, Capital University and Kenyon College. Apprenticed to the publisher of the *Ohio State Journal* to learn the printer's trade, he became acquainted with William Dean Howells [*q.v.*], who was then associated with that paper, and the two formed a lasting friendship. Some of Piatt's verses appeared in the *Louisville Journal* in 1857, and soon afterward he accepted an editorial position on it. In 1859 he began contributing to the *Atlantic Monthly.* His poem "The Morning Street" evoked Howells' praise and the statement that he himself wished he could write something worthy of inclusion in the *Atlantic* (*Life and Letters, post*). The following year (1860) the two published in collaboration *Poems of Two Friends.*

On June 18, 1861, he married Sarah Morgan

Bryan, poet and contributor to the *Louisville Journal* [see Sarah Morgan Bryan Piatt]. They went to live in Washington, where Piatt was a clerk in the United States Treasury Department from 1861 to 1867. During this period he became acquainted with Walt Whitman [*q.v.*], who frequently referrcd to Piatt's writings (Barrus, *Cincinnati Chronicle,* and removed to North Bend, just below Cincinnati, on the Ohio River. From 1869 to 1878 he was literary editor and correspondent of the *Cincinnati Commercial,* but also served as assistant clerk (1870) and as librarian (1871–75) of the United States House of Representatives. From 1882 to 1893 he was United States consul at Cork, Ireland, and for a few months in the latter year at Dublin.

During all these years he was writing and publishing poetry and some prose. Among his books, in addition to several prepared in collaboration with his wife, are *Poems in Sunshine and Firelight* (1866); *Western Windows, and Other Poems* (copyright 1867); *Landmarks, and Other Poems* (1872); *Poems of House and Home* (1879); *Pencilled Fly-Leaves: a Book of Essays in Town and Country* (1880); *Idyls and Lyrics of the Ohio Valley* (1881); *At the Holy Well, with a Handful of New Verses* (1887); *A Book of Gold, and Other Sonnets* (1889); *Little New-World Idyls* (1893); *The Ghost's Entry, and Other Poems* (1895); *Odes in Ohio, and Other Poems* (1897). He also edited several collections of poems, and from 1907 to 1909 *Midland,* first a weekly, then a monthly, publication which was merged into *Uncle Remus's Home Magazine.* Piatt's poetry shows the regular meters of his time, but is original and varied in subject matter and appreciative of natural beauty, literary associations, and human feeling. His best-known poem is "The Morning Street," a bit of good realism; "The Night Train" is of the same type; "The Western Pioneer" reflects the life of his own forebears; "At Kilcolman Castle" (Edmund Spenser's home) shows literary taste and fancy. When political changes caused Piatt's recall from the consulate in Ireland, he settled at North Bend, Ohio. He continued his literary work, contributing to the *Cincinnati Enquirer* as editor of book reviews and to various periodicals, until a few years before his death, when he became an invalid through injuries received in a carriage accident. He died at Cincinnati; his wife, three sons, and one daughter surviving him.

[W. T. Coggeshall, *The Poets and Poetry of the West: With Biog. and Critical Notices* (1860); E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *The Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1875), vol. II; W. D. Howells, "Editor's Easy Chair," *Harper's Mag.,* July 1917; Mildred Howells, *Life and Letters of William Dean Howells* (1928); Clara Barrus, *Whitman and Burroughs Comrades* (1931); *D. A. R. Lineage Books,* vols. III (1893), LIX (1906); *Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; *Cincinnati Enquirer,* Feb. 17, 1917.] S. G. B.

Piatt

PIATT, SARAH MORGAN BRYAN (Aug. 11, 1836–Dec. 22, 1919), poet, was born in Lexington, Ky., the daughter of Talbot Nelson and Mary (Spiers) Bryan. Her grandfather, Morgan Bryan, was a relative of Daniel Boone [*q.v.*], and one of a party that went from North Carolina to Kentucky with him, where Bryan settled what was known as Bryan's Station. Before Sarah was eight years old her mother died, and subsequently the girl lived with the maternal grandmother at Lexington, with friends near Versailles, Woodford County, briefly with her stepmother, and finally with an aunt, at New Castle, Ky. There she was graduated from Henry Female College. Always a devoted reader of poetry, she especially loved Shelley, Byron, Coleridge, Moore, and Scott, and early began herself to write verse. Her first productions appeared in the Galveston, Tex., *News.* Some of her work came to the attention of George D. Prentice, editor of the *Louisville Journal,* who published it and prophesied for her the first place among American poets of her sex. On June 18, 1861, she was married to the poet John James Piatt [*q.v.*], whom she had met at New Castle after her own writings had become widely known through the South. They lived in Washington, D. C., until 1867, then in North Bend, Ohio, and for thirteen years, beginning in 1882, in Ireland, where Piatt was United States consul. There she counted among her friends Jean Ingelow, Edward Dowden, Edmund Gosse, Austin Dobson, Alice Meynell, and Philip Bourke Marston.

During these years she published some seventeen volumes of poems. Two of them, *The Nests at Washington and Other Poems* (1864) and *The Children Out-of-Doors, a Book of Verses, by Two in One House* (1885), were prepared in collaboration with her husband. *Selected Poems* appeared in 1886, and later *Child's World Ballads* (1887), a second series of which was issued in 1895; *An Irish Wild-Flower* (1891); *An Enchanted Castle, and Other Poems: Pictures, Portraits and People in Ireland* (1893); and in 1894 *Complete Poems,* in two volumes. All of her later volumes were published both in London or Edinburgh and in the United States. She was perhaps more highly esteemed in Great Britain, where she was likened to Elizabeth Barrett Browning, than in the United States. Her poetry is free from conventionality and introspective. Essentially femi-

nine, it reflects the joys, griefs, and aspirations of the ordinary woman's life. Much of it was inspired by her own children. Howells commended her for not writing like a man. Katharine Tynan said she had "a gift as perfect and spontaneous as the song of a blackbird" (*Irish Monthly*, July 1886, p. 389). Today she ranks as a minor poet of some excellence. On their return to America the Piatts lived in North Bend, Ohio. Sarah survived her husband and after his death lived with her son in Caldwell, N. J., where she died.

[F. E. Willard and M. A. Livermore, *Am. Women* (1897); Emerson Venable, in *Lib. of Southern Lit.*, vol. IX (1909); E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *The Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1875), vol. II; Katharine Tynan, *Twenty-five Years; Reminiscences* (1913); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Woman's Who Who of America*, 1914–15; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 24, 1919.] S. G. B.

PICKARD, SAMUEL THOMAS (Mar. 1, 1828–Feb. 12, 1915), printer, editor, biographer, author, son of Samuel and Sarah (Coffin) Pickard, was born in Rowley, Mass. When he was four years old, his family removed to Auburn, Me., where his father became treasurer of the Lewiston Manufacturing Company, a position he held for forty years. The boy spent his youth in Auburn and secured his education in the elementary schools of that city and at Lewiston Falls Academy. In 1844, after he had completed his course of study at the academy, he went to Portland and there learned the printer's trade. When he had finished his apprenticeship, he became associated with Benjamin P. Shillaber [*q.v.*] in the publication of a humorous paper, the *Carpet Bag*, at Boston, Mass. In 1852 he sold his interest in this paper to Charles G. Halpine [*q.v.*] and returned to Portland, where in January 1853 he joined E. P. Weston in the publication of the *Eclectic*. In April 1855 this journal was merged with the *Portland Transcript*, and Pickard became one of its editors and joint owner with Weston, whose interest was later purchased by Pickard's brother, Charles W. Pickard, and with Edward H. Elwell. Under the editorship of Elwell and the Pickard brothers, the *Portland Transcript* became one of the most influential papers in New England. Its subscribers exceeded in number by thousands those of any other paper in Maine. It was a clean, sane, interesting, and wholesome family paper. It early espoused the causes of abolition and prohibition. Its weekly advent into the home brought accurate information, interesting stories, bits of good poetry, wise teachings, knowledge of books and men, and withal good cheer. After nearly forty years, Pickard retired from the editorship of the *Transcript* and went to live in

Amesbury and Boston, Mass., where during the remainder of his life he was engaged in literary work.

On Apr. 19, 1876, Pickard married Elizabeth Hussey Whittier, a niece of John Greenleaf Whittier [*q.v.*] and a daughter of Moses F. and Jane E. (Vaughan) Whittier. By this marriage he had one son. His wife died in Boston, Apr. 9, 1902. For many years Samuel Pickard was a close personal friend and great admirer of the Quaker Poet, and on Whittier's death, in accordance with his expressed desire, became his literary executor and biographer. It proved to be a happy choice. Pickard's *Life and Letters of John Greenleaf Whittier*, which was published in 1894 and has passed through several editions, is written with excellent taste and simple sincerity such as the poet would have desired. This was his most important book. In 1897 he published a little volume, *Hawthorne's First Diary*, which purports to contain several authentic excerpts from a journal which Hawthorne was supposed to have kept during his boyhood days in Raymond, Me. Later Pickard became doubtful of the genuineness of this diary and withdrew the book from further sale. In 1900 he published *Whittier as a Politician*, presenting the poet in a somewhat new light, and in 1904, *Whittier-Land, a Handbook of North Essex*, "containing many anecdotes of and poems by John Greenleaf Whittier, never before collected." Besides these he was the author of numerous reviews and monographs, two of which are "Portland," published in 1898 in *The Historic Towns of New England*, and "Edward Henry Elwell," published in the *Collections and Proceedings of the Maine Historical Society* (2 ser. III, 1892, pp. 1–12). After a long life of useful activity, he died in Amesbury, Mass., in Whittier's old home.

[G. T. Little, in *Obit. Record Grads. Bowdoin Coll.*, 1915; *Biog. Record . . . of Leading Citizens of Cumberland County, Me.* (1896); Joseph Griffin, *Hist. of the Press of Me.* (1872); *Boston Transcript*, Feb. 12, 1915.] W. B. M.

PICKENS, ANDREW (Sept. 19, 1739–Aug. 11, 1817), Revolutionary soldier, was born near Paxtang, Pa., the son of Nancy and Andrew Pickens, who, having emigrated from Ireland, drifted south with the Scotch-Irish, sojourned eight miles west of Staunton, Va., obtained 800 acres in Anson County, N. C., and in 1752 were on Waxhaw Creek, S. C. He volunteered in James Grant's expedition in 1761 against the Cherokee under Oconostota [*q.v.*]. Two years later he and his brother sold their Waxhaw inheritance and obtained lands on Long Cane Creek in South Carolina. There he married, on

Mar. 19, 1765, Rebecca, daughter of Ezekiel Calhoun who was a brother of John C. Calhoun's father; at the opening of the Revolution, with a wife and four small children, he was a farmer and a justice of the peace. As captain of militia in the first fight at Ninetysix fort in November 1775, he helped to negotiate the treaty with the Loyalists that followed. During the next two years his services on the frontier brought promotion, and, when Williamson became brigadier-general, Pickens became colonel. His defeat of Colonel Boyd at Kettle Creek, he himself considered the severest check the Loyalists ever received in South Carolina or in Georgia. After the capitulation of Charleston in 1780, he surrendered a fort in Ninetysix District and with 300 of his men returned home on parole. When his plantation was plundered, however, he regarded himself as released from his parole, gave notice to that effect, and rejoined the patriots. His part in the victory at Cowpens brought him a sword from Congress and a brigadier's commission from the state. In April 1781 he raised a regiment, in which the men were enlisted as state regulars for ten months' duty and were paid in negroes and plunder taken from the Loyalists. Active in the capture of Augusta, he cooperated with the Continentals in Gen. Nathanael Greene's unsuccessful siege of Ninetysix and in the drawn battle of Eutaw Springs, in which he was wounded. Thereafter he was occupied mainly with Indian warfare.

Elected to represent Ninetysix in the Jacksonboro Assembly in 1782, he continued in the legislature until sent to Congress for the session of 1793–95. The South Carolina legislature voted him thanks and a gold medal in 1783 for his services in the Revolution and later elected him major-general of the militia. In 1785 he was chosen by Congress to treat with Southern Indian tribes that had been at war with the United States, and, until he declined further service in 1801, he was repeatedly appointed to deal with Indian relations. His most laborious service was in 1797, when for six months he was engaged in marking treaty boundaries. In 1792 he declined a command in the western army. For a number of years he lived at "Hopewell," his plantation in Oconee, where he had a store. He also carried on business in Charleston under the firm name of Andrew Pickens & Co. Later he settled at Tomassee in Pendleton District, where he lived in retirement except during a brief interval in the War of 1812. There he died suddenly and was buried at the Old Stone Church, of which he was an elder and a founder. Strict in family devotions and church observances, he was reputed so Presbyterian that he would have suffered martyrdom before he would have sung one of Watts's hymns. Of medium height, lean and healthy, with strongly marked features, he seldom smiled and never laughed, and conversed so guardedly that "he would first take the words out of his mouth, between his fingers, and examine them before he uttered them" (Wm. Martin to L. C. Draper, Jan. 1, 1843).

[Draper MSS. in Wis. Hist. Soc. Lib.; papers, chiefly of "talks" with Indians, not yet calendared in Charleston Lib. Soc.; A. L. Pickens, *The Wizard Owl of the Southern Highlands* (1933), a biog. tracing his career through the battle of Cowpens and *Skyagunsta* (1934) with revisions and biography to his death; *The State Records of N. C.*, vols. XVI–XIX, XXII (1899–1907); J. B. Grimes, *Abstract of N. C. Wills* (1910); A. S. Salley, *Jour. of the House of Representatives of S. C. Jan. 8, 1782–Feb. 26, 1782* (1916); Thomas Cooper, *Statutes at Large of S. C.*, vol. IV (1838); R. W. Gibbes, *Documentary Hist. of the Am. Revolution* (3 vols., 1853–57); R. N. Brackett, *The Old Stone Church, Oconee County, S. C.* (1905).] A. K. G.

PICKENS, FRANCIS WILKINSON (Apr. 7, 1805–Jan. 25, 1869), congressman, governor of South Carolina, was born in St. Paul's Parish, Colleton District, S. C., the son of Susannah Smith (Wilkinson) and Gov. Andrew Pickens and the grandson of Andrew Pickens [*q.v.*]. He was educated at Franklin College, Ga., now a part of the University of Georgia, and at the South Carolina College, withdrawing from the latter institution in 1827 while a senior because of dissatisfaction with mess hall regulations. He subsequently studied law at Edgefield under Eldred Simkins, was admitted to the bar in 1828, became Simkins' partner, and married the latter's daughter, Margaret Eliza. Through the study of Aristotle, Rollin, the classic orators, and the state-rights doctrines of Thomas Cooper [*q.v.*] he became passionately fond of the type of republicanism most acceptable in his state. He was proud of his ancestors and of his own abilities, dogmatic in beliefs, impressive in speech, but prudent in action. Inheriting wealth from both parents and through his wife, he established near Edgefield Court House "Edgewood," a large estate with several hundred slaves. Surrounded by a large library and the luxuries of a Southern gentleman, he entertained lavishly. John C. Calhoun, a relation, declared that he was the most promising young man in the state.

While still in college he began his public career by writing a series of anonymous letters to the *Charleston Mercury* upholding Thomas Cooper's doctrines of state sovereignty under the pseudonym of "Sydney" (quoted in Hayne, *post*, pp. 4–5). In 1830 in anonymous letters to

Pickens

the *Edgefield Carolinian* under the pseudonym of "Hampden," he declared that the time had come for South Carolina to put its nullification principles in action. "If we do not succeed constitutionally and peaceably," he wrote, "I am free to confess that I am for any extreme, even 'war up to the hilt'" (Boucher, *post,* p. 56). In 1832 he was elected to the state legislature. There he gained distinction by replying to Jackson's nullification proclamation and by defending the right of the state to exact an oath of allegiance from its officers. To defend the state against threats of federal coercion he raised, among his Edgefield constituents, a contingent of 2,158 men. In December 1834 he succeeded George McDuffie in Congress, where he served until March 1843. His speeches on foreign relations, treasury reforms, and in favor of slavery and state rights placed him among the leaders of that body. He bitterly protested against the acceptance of petitions asking the abolition of slavery in the District of Columbia and warned the South of the danger from the growth of abolitionist sentiment in 1844. He became a member of the state Senate. He was a leader of the South Carolina secession movement growing out of dissatisfaction with the compromise measures of 1850. He was a delegate to the Nashville convention of June 1850, where he declared, "Equality now! Equality forever! or Independence!" (Hayne, *post,* p. 23). He was the presiding officer of the state convention of 1852 and drew up its ordinance favoring secession.

When this secession movement proved abortive, he became more conservative, foreseeing the folly of South Carolina's going to extremes without the cooperation of the other Southern states; his enemies said that he was an aspirant for federal office. He cooperated with James L. Orr and the other National Democrats and in 1856 presided over the state convention to send delegates to the convention that nominated Buchanan. In 1857 he was defeated for the United States Senate by the extremist, James H. Hammond, and in 1859 urged that South Carolina fully participate in the National Democratic Convention of 1860. Although he had previously refused missions to France and England, in 1858 he accepted Buchanan's proffer of the Russian mission. He served in St. Petersburg for two years without special distinction. Foreseeing a crisis in South Carolina, he resigned in the fall of 1860 and returned home. At first he was inclined to oppose precipitate action on the part of the state, declaring, in a speech at Edgefield, that secession should not be made effective until the inauguration of Lincoln; but, carried along with the tide, he later, in a speech at Columbia, espoused the cause of immediate secession. He was nominated for governor by the conservative secessionists. The legislature, after three days of balloting, elected him, and on Dec. 17 he began his two-year term.

He showed great ability in guiding the state in the perilous adventure of secession. In his inaugural address he averred that the North in electing Lincoln had committed "the great overt act" and that South Carolina was ready for no compromise short of secession. He clearly foresaw that the safety of South Carolina as an independent government was dependent upon the possession of the Charleston forts and immediately asked Buchanan to surrender Fort Sumter. This demand, however, was withdrawn when the governor was informed from Washington that the status of the forts would not be disturbed. Believing it a breach of the agreement with Buchanan, he was angered when Major Anderson, on Dec. 26, concentrated his garrisons in Fort Sumter. When Anderson refused to reoccupy his former positions, the governor seized the evacuated forts and the federal arsenal and strengthened the harbor batteries so as to put Sumter at their mercy in case of hostilities. He was responsible for the firing of the first guns of the war when, on Jan. 9, Morris Island batteries prevented the passage of the *Star of the West,* a ship sent to relieve Sumter. When pressed by Anderson to deny responsibility for this act, he replied with a justification (*War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., I, 135) and sent a messenger to Washington demanding the surrender of the fort. However, on the suggestion of Southern leaders this demand was not delivered. He then became convinced that the fort should be immediately reduced. To forestall rash action on his part the newly created Confederate government, on Feb. 12, took over the responsibility for all decisions relating to the forts. The only part that Pickens played in the fateful step of opening fire on Sumter was the transmission to the Confederate authorities of Lincoln's repudiation of whatever words or deeds of his confidential agent, Ward H. Lamon [*q.v.*], had conveyed the impression that the fort would be evacuated, and Lincoln's notice that an attempt would be made to relieve the fort.

Alarmed over the capture of Port Royal in November 1861 and the apparent inability of the governor to provide adequately for the defense of the state, the convention that had passed the ordinance of secession erected in December 1861 an executive council composed of the

governor and four others. This body virtually usurped the functions of the governor. Pickens perforce submitted, protesting that there would "now be great imbecility in acting as Commander in Chief" (White, *post*, p. 759). Although the executive council was unpopular, it was not abolished until the end of his term of office in 1862. He retired to his Edgefield estate, emerging in the public eye only once more to urge the state constitutional convention of 1865 to accommodate the state to President Johnson's reconstruction plans. His first wife died in 1842. He then married Marion Antoinette Dearing of Georgia. After the death of his second wife he married in 1858 Lucy Petway Holcombe, the daughter of Beverly Lafayette Holcombe, a Virginian who had emigrated to Texas. Her influence was responsible for his acceptance of the Russian mission. Beautiful and accomplished, she made a splendid appearance in the official circles of St. Petersburg and of the Confederacy. A regiment of South Carolina troops was named the Holcombe Legion in her honor, and her picture was engraved on Confederate currency. Pickens died deeply in debt owing to personal extravagance and to the reverses of war. For thirty years afterward his widow, assisted by their only child, made "Edgewood" the center of a lavish hospitality unique in upper South Carolina.

[Some correspondence in the Lib. of Duke Univ.; Hammond Papers and other manuscript material in Lib. of Cong.; information from Mrs. Sarah L. Simkins, Edgefield, S. C.; articles by J. K. Aull in *State* (Columbia), Jan. 1929; P. H. Hayne, *Politics in S. C.*, *F. W. Pickens' Speeches, Reports, etc.* (1864); LeRoy F. Youmans, *A Sketch of the Life and Services of Francis W. Pickens* (1869); C. S. Boucher, *The Nullification Controversy in S. C.* (1916); L. A. White, "The Fate of Calhoun's Sovereign Convention in S. C.," *Am. Hist. Rev.*, July 1929.] F. B. S.

PICKENS, ISRAEL (Jan. 30, 1780–Apr. 23, 1827), third governor of Alabama, was born near Concord, Mecklenburg County, now in Cabarrus County, N. C., the son of Samuel and Jane (Carrigan) Pickens. His father was a Revolutionary soldier and was a cousin of Andrew Pickens [*q.v.*]. The boy enjoyed unusual educational advantages, at a private school in Iredell County, N. C., and at Jefferson College in Canonsburg, Pa., from which he was graduated in 1802. He studied law, removed to Morganton in Burke County, N. C., and was admitted to the practice of his profession. In 1808 and 1809 he sat in the upper house of the legislature of his state. From there he was sent to Congress, where he served in the House of Representatives from 1811 until 1817. He voted for the war with Great Britain and throughout that struggle favored the measures of the administration. At his retirement from Congress he became register of the land office at St. Stephens in the new Territory of Alabama. On June 9, 1814, he had been married to Martha Orilla, the daughter of William Lenoir of North Carolina, and with her he removed West. In 1818 he was made president of the Tombeckbee Bank of St. Stephens and the next year represented Washington County in the convention that framed the first constitution of Alabama. Shortly thereafter he removed to Greene County, where he resided for the remainder of his life.

In 1821 the anti-Crawford forces elected him governor of the state. At this time Alabama, with the West in general, was in the throes of the financial depression that followed the panic of 1819. Banks were badly needed to ease the credit situation, and the Alabama constitution provided for the creation of a state institution. Pickens' first legislature chartered such a bank with the preëxisting, privately owned banks as the basis of its organization. The governor vetoed this measure, and no further progress was made during his first administration. He was a candidate for reëlection in the campaign of 1823, in which the bank question was the leading issue. He won his race, and during the same year a state-owned, state-directed bank was chartered. In 1824 it went into operation for the relief of impoverished landowners. This was one of the devices of the rising Democracy of the West, but one that its chief, Andrew Jackson, opposed. Pickens was not originally a Jackson supporter, but he was too good a politician to continue to oppose a movement that was irresistible in his state. During his administration the University of Alabama was definitely incorporated, and he became the first *ex-officio* president of its board of trustees (Minute book, University of Alabama archives). He was an efficient administrator, and much of the fundamental work of organizing the governmental machinery of the state is credited to him. Retiring from the gubernatorial chair in 1825, he was appointed to the United States Senate in 1826, but an infection of the lungs forced his withdrawal from office after a brief issue. Declining an appointment as federal district judge for Alabama, he went to Cuba in search of health but died near Matanzas. He was buried near the place of his death, but later his remains were removed to Alabama and buried in the family cemetery near Greensboro.

[Correspondence in Ala. Department of Archives and Hist., and in Lib. of Cong.; Willis Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); J. H. Wheeler, *Reminiscences . . . of N. C.* (1884); A. J. Pickett, *Hist. of Ala.* (1851), vol. II; T.

M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), vol. IV; T. P. Abernethy, *The Formative Period in Ala.* (1922); *Biog. and Hist. Cat. of Washington and Jefferson College* (1889); *Southern Advocate* (Huntsville, Ala.), June 1, 1827.] T. P. A.

PICKERING, CHARLES (Nov. 10, 1805–Mar. 17, 1878), physician and naturalist, was born in Susquehanna County, Pa., near Starucca. His father, Timothy Pickering, Jr., who was a Harvard graduate and for a time a midshipman in the navy, died in 1807, and Charles was brought up on a farm in Salem, Mass., under the guidance of his mother, Lurena (Cole), and his distinguished grandfather, Col. Timothy Pickering [*q.v.*]. From boyhood he had a keen interest in natural sciences and in his youth made botanical excursions into the White Mountains. He entered Harvard College with the class of 1823 but transferred to the medical department without graduating and was graduated M.D. in 1826. In 1849 he was granted the degree of A.B. as of the class of 1823. In 1827 he settled in Philadelphia where, in addition to practising medicine, he began active work with the Academy of Natural Sciences of which he was already a corresponding member. For ten years he diligently used the excellent resources of the Academy to improve his knowledge; he was active on the zoölogical and botanical committees, and held the offices of librarian (1828–33) and curator (1833–37).

Pickering's ability and attainments were recognized in his appointment to the post of chief zoölogist of the United States Exploring Expedition which sailed to the South Seas in 1838 under the command of Lieut. Charles Wilkes [*q.v.*]. During the voyage, Pickering gave special attention to anthropology and to the geographical distribution of plants and animals, subjects which held his interest for the rest of his life. As a result of studies made on the voyage and on a visit to the East in 1843, he published his first important work, *Races of Men and Their Geographical Distribution* (1848), issued as the ninth volume of the report of the United States Exploring Expedition. The fifteenth volume of the same report was a treatise by Pickering entitled *The Geographical Distribution of Animals and Plants* (1854), which was later supplemented by *Plants in Their Wild State* (1876), published by the Naturalist's Agency in Salem. After his voyage to the South Seas, Pickering made his home in Boston. In 1851 he married Sarah Stoddard Hammond, daughter of Daniel Hammond. The last sixteen years of his life he devoted to painstaking research, the results of which are given in his monumental publication, *The Chronological History of Plants: Man's Record of His Own Existence Illustrated through Their Names, Uses and Companionship.* His death, in 1878, left this work unfinished, but the editing was carried on by his widow and the book was published in 1879. In addition to his books, he wrote a number of papers contributed to scientific publications and to the learned societies of which he was a member. Despite the wide scope of his interests, his work was scrupulously accurate. As a man he was characterized by sincerity, steadiness of purpose, reticence, and evenness of disposition.

[Biog. sketch in Charles Pickering, *The Chronological Hist. of Plants* (1879); W. S. W. Ruschenberger, in *Proc. Acad. Nat. Sci. of Phila.*, 3 ser. VIII (1879); Asa Gray, in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, n.s., vol. V (1878); J. W. Harshberger, *The Botanists of Phila. and Their Work* (1899); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Anniversary Memoir of the Boston Soc. of Nat. Hist.* (1880); *Bull. Essex Inst.*, vol. XII (1881); Harrison Ellery and C. P. Bowditch, *The Pickering Geneal.* (3 vols., 1897); *Boston Transcript*, Mar. 19, 1878.] F. E. W.

PICKERING, EDWARD CHARLES (July 19, 1846–Feb. 3, 1919), astronomer, was born on Beacon Hill, Boston, Mass., the son of Edward and Charlotte (Hammond) Pickering. He was a great-grandson of Col. Timothy Pickering [*q.v.*] of Salem, Mass., who served in the cabinets of Washington and John Adams; his father and grandfather were Harvard graduates; his father held various offices of trust in large business enterprises which he administered with marked ability; and his uncle, Charles Pickering [*q.v.*], was a naturalist of note.

From such men young Pickering acquired a broad outlook, a spirit of initiative, and a keen sense of business. Proceeding from the Boston Latin School to Harvard, he entered the Lawrence Scientific School, where in 1865 he was graduated S.B., *summa cum laude*, at the age of nineteen. After a year of teaching mathematics in that institution he became assistant instructor in physics, and in 1868 Thayer Professor of Physics, at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Here he served till 1877, introducing the laboratory method of instruction. He established a physical laboratory in which the students, guided by his excellent manual, *Elements of Physical Manipulations* (2 vols., 1873–76), made experiments for themselves, being encouraged to publish papers on their original researches. In 1869–70 he constructed an apparatus for the electrical transmission of sound which he described before the American Association for the Advancement of Science, but he sought no patent, for he believed that "a scientific man should place no restriction on his work."

In 1874, he married Elizabeth Wadsworth Sparks, daughter of Jared Sparks [*q.v.*], a former

president of Harvard, and in 1876 he was called to be director of the Harvard Observatory. On Feb. 1, 1877, he entered upon the duties which were to be his for forty-two years. The appointment by President Eliot of so young a man, a physicist and not an astronomer, to such an important position aroused some criticism from astronomers of the old school, but the wisdom of the choice was soon justified. Astronomical science had learned much from the so-called "old astronomy" of position, but was then on the threshold of the "new astronomy," which seeks a knowledge of stellar structure and its evolution. Physics held the key to these mysteries, and Pickering was the man to use physical methods with the Harvard equipment.

At the Observatory he found two instruments of large size and finest quality. To avoid duplication of work done elsewhere, he selected photometry as his field of observation, a field almost unexplored with large instruments. He gave an immediate demonstration, measuring by an ingenious photometric method the diameters of Phobos and Deimos, the tiny moons of Mars, then just discovered. Among the scientific achievements of his directorate, stellar photometry should be ranked first. At the time he entered the field, even the magnitudes (brightnesses) of the stars were not fixed on any generally accepted scale. Pickering established a satisfactory scale and substituted instrumental accuracy for uncertain eye estimates. To this end he invented the meridian photometer and employed other similar devices. The magnitudes of 80,000 stars were thus catalogued on the basis of over two million photometric settings, of which more than half were made by him personally.

A second important achievement was the compilation of a "photographic library," as Pickering called it, giving a complete history of the stellar universe down to the eleventh magnitude, written by the stars themselves on some 300,000 glass plates, a history duplicated nowhere else in the world. Photographic images of stars had been obtained at Harvard as early as 1850; with the advent of the dry plate, experiments were resumed about 1882; but it was in 1885 that Pickering began his intensive system of charting the heavens. From these plates the past record of the stars may be studied; Pickering himself was able to plot the path of Eros in the sky from photographs taken four years before this asteroid was known to exist.

He was also a leader in stellar spectroscopy. Stellar spectra indicate the composition, temperature, and physical conditions of the stars. With a prism placed over the camera lens he photographed the spectra by wholesale; laid the foundation of spectral classification now universally accepted, and obtained the material for the new Draper Catalogue containing 200,000 stars. Another important accomplishment of his régime was the establishment in 1891 of an observing station at Arequipa, Peru, to extend his surveys to the southern stars. His achievements in photometric magnitudes, in photography and photographic magnitudes, and in the classification of variable stars as well as of spectra, set a world-recognized standard. Eighty volumes of the *Annals of the Astronomical Observatory of Harvard College* (1855–1919) contain the record of this work. Moreover, under his administration, the Observatory's endowment rose to a million dollars. While not a rich man, he was himself always a large donor, and in later life regularly turned in his salary to increase the institution's scientific output. Twice he received the gold medal of the Royal Astronomical Society; scientific honors came to him from all over the world. He was a founder (1898) and was chosen president in 1906 of the American Astronomical Society, and was beloved of all its members. At the time of his death he was recognized as the "dean of astronomical research in America."

Pickering seldom took a vacation, but found relaxation and inspiration in the music his wife played to him on the piano. He liked chess as a pastime. He made local explorations on a bicycle and founded and was first president of the Appalachian Mountain Club. In this connection he devised the micrometer level, by which he plotted mountain topography. He had no children, but was fond of young people, and with his wife dispensed a stately yet cordial hospitality. Of large stature and commanding presence, he was a gentleman of the older school, combining dignity and social grace with a kindly spirit, eager to give time, data, or financial aid to promising and enthusiastic investigators.

[Harrison Ellery and C. P. Bowditch, *The Pickering Geneal.* (3 vols., 1897); S. I. Bailey, in *Astrophysical Jour.*, Nov. 1919; W. W. Campbell, in *Pubs. Astron. Soc. of the Pacific*, Apr. 1919; A. J. Cannon, in *Popular Astronomy*, Mar. 1919; E. S. King, in *Jour. Royal Astron. Soc. of Canada*, Apr. 1919; J. H. Metcalf, in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, vol. LVII (1922); H. N. Russell, in *Science*, Feb. 14, 1919; H. H. Turner, in *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astron. Soc.*, Feb. 1920; *Boston Transcript*, Feb. 4, 1919.] E. S. K.

PICKERING, JOHN (*c.* 1738–Apr. 11, 1805), judge, the son of Joshua and Mary Deborah (Smithson) Pickering, was born at Newington, N. H. He was descended from John Pickering, who settled at Portsmouth about 1633, and was not connected with Timothy Pickering. After graduation at Harvard in 1761, abandoning his

plan of entering the ministry, he studied law and became one of the few really learned lawyers in New Hampshire at this period. After a brief period of practice in Greenland he settled in Portsmouth and resided there for the rest of his life. He married Abigail, daughter of Jacob Sheafe of Portsmouth, but the date is a matter of uncertainty. His practice is said to have been large but not particularly remunerative in view of the petty nature of much of the litigation at this time. His name appears in the early records of the Revolutionary contest as a holder of sundry civil posts, but he took no important part in developments until 1781, when he was a member of the constitutional convention. From 1783 to 1787 he served repeated terms in the legislature as the representative of Portsmouth, declined service as a delegate to the Federal Convention at Philadelphia in 1787, and in 1788 was an influential member of the New Hampshire convention that ratified the United States Constitution. He was a presidential elector in 1788 and 1792, served in the New Hampshire Senate and Council, and in the constitutional convention of 1791–92.

He was appointed chief justice of the superior court of judicature on Aug. 7, 1790, serving until February 1795, when appointed judge of the United States district court. William Plumer, who had served with him in the legislature and the constitutional convention of 1791–92, has recorded some of Pickering's peculiarities, his timidity, his dread of crossing rivers, his tendency to seek seclusion at periodic intervals, and other characteristics which show a somewhat abnormal mentality. His failure to perform regularly the duties of chief justice had on at least one occasion attracted the attention of the legislature (*House Journal,* Dec. 22, 1794). For some years his duties on the federal bench were satisfactorily performed, perhaps as Plumer points out, because it was no longer necessary for him to go on circuit, but in 1801 he suffered a mental breakdown and a member of the federal circuit court was obliged to take over his duties in the district court at Portsmouth.

The abolition of the circuit courts soon after the opening of Jefferson's administration necessitated Pickering's resumption of duty and the situation was obviously incompatible with the proper administration of justice. On Feb. 3, 1803, the President in a special message laid the matter before the House of Representatives (*Annals of Congress,* 7 Cong., 2 sess., p. 460). Lacking precedent for dealing with such a matter and apparently influenced by the bitter party animosity of the day, the House promptly voted articles of impeachment, charging "loose morals and intemperate habits" and conduct "disgraceful to his own character as a judge and degrading to the honor and dignity of the United States." He had unquestionably been guilty of intoxication and profanity in the court room, but his friends and associates presented evidence of exemplary character prior to his mental collapse. After a perfunctory trial in which the defendant did not appear, the Senate formally voted his removal on Mar. 12, 1804. He did not long survive his unmerited disgrace.

[William Plumer, Jr., *Life of William Plumer* (1857), ed. by A. P. Peabody; brief sketch by William Plumer, in *N. H. State Papers,* XXII (1893), 839–43; letter of Plumer, with characterization of Pickering, in *Pubs. Colonial Soc. of Mass.,* XI (1910), 389–90; short paper, dealing with Pickering's character and the charges against him, by A. P. Peabody, in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* XX (1884), 333–38; C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); C. W. Brewster, *Rambles about Portsmouth, 2* ser. (1869); R. H. Eddy, *Genealogical Data Respecting John Pickering of Portsmouth, N. H. and His Descendants* (1884), and *Supplement* (1884). Pickering's career in the legislature can be traced in the *N. H. State Papers.* For his impeachment, see *Annals of Congress, 7* Cong., *2* sess., and 8 Cong., 1 sess.; and *Extracts from the Journal of the U. S. Senate in All Cases of Impeachment . . . 1798–1904* (1912), 62 Cong., *2* sess., *Senate Doc. No. 876.*]

W. A. R.

PICKERING, JOHN (Feb. 7, 1777–May 5, 1846), lawyer, philologist, was born at Salem, Mass., the eldest of the ten children of Timothy [*q.v.*] and Rebecca (White) Pickering, and the fifth in descent from John Pickering (1615–57), presumably a Yorkshireman, by trade a carpenter, who settled in Salem in 1637. At the time of John's birth his father was colonel of a Massachusetts regiment quartered in New Jersey. John entered Harvard College in 1792 and early gained a reputation for his devotion to the classics and, in lesser degree, to French. His cousin, John Clark (1755–98), William Emerson's predecessor in the First Church in Boston, addressed to him his *Letters to a Student in the University of Cambridge, Massachusetts* (1796), a little book still useful for the light it casts on the literary culture of that period. After his graduation in 1796, Pickering began the study of law in Philadelphia in the office of Edward Tilghman [*q.v.*] but in July 1797 he embarked at New Castle, Del., for Lisbon to become secretary to William Smith of South Carolina, the American minister to Portugal. He spent two happy years in Portugal, with ample leisure to enjoy the social life of the capital and of Cintra, to study the Romance languages, Turkish, and Arabic, and to continue his reading of the law. In November 1799 he went to London, where he was welcomed by Rufus King and, some months later, became his secretary. He spent much time

in the law courts and in the House of Parliament, enjoyed the theatres, visited Paris, Brussels, and the Dutch cities, collected a remarkable library —part of which he was compelled to sell on his return to the United States—and made the acquaintance of various scholars. On Oct. 8, 1801, he landed once more in Boston. His *Wanderjahre* were over; thereafter his longest, almost his only, absence from Boston and Salem was a five weeks' trip to New York, Philadelphia, and Washington in 1832. In 1804 he was admitted to the Essex County bar; and on Mar. 3, 1805, he married Sarah White, who was his first cousin once removed through his father's family, and his second cousin through his mother's. His wife, with their two sons and a daughter, survived him. To her wise management and self-effacing devotion he owed the leisure that enabled him to attain eminence both in the law and in philology.

Pickering moved to Boston in 1827 and in 1829 was made city solicitor, an office that he held until a few months before his death. His reputation as a lawyer was higher with his colleagues than with the public at large, but he was much sought after as a counselor, and his articles on legal subjects, most of them contributed to the *American Jurist*, are the work of a scholar. He was one of the few Americans deeply interested in Roman Law. His political horizon lay somewhere in the western suburbs of Boston, but he represented Salem in the General Court in 1812, 1814, and 1826, was a member of the Governor's Council in 1818, was a senator from Suffolk County in 1829, and drafted *Part First: Of the Internal Administration of the Government* (1833) of the *Revised Statutes of Massachusetts*.

His office library contained only law books, but in his study at home he devoted himself to linguistics. His permanent fame in this department has suffered from the fact that his main interest lay more in learning languages than in elaborating theories about them. Like so many American scientists of his generation and the one following, he was overpowered by the wealth of material unexplored. He acquired, with various degrees of thoroughness, all the principal European and Semitic languages, was acquainted with several of the Chinese group, and was the leading authority of his time on the languages of the North American Indians. His two closest correspondents, on linguistic subjects, were Pierre Étienne Du Ponceau [*q.v.*] and Wilhelm von Humboldt; his greatest admiration, in law as well as languages, was Sir William Jones. His chief service to his own time was his *Comprehensive Lexicon of the Greek Language* (1826; 1829; 1846), which was the best Greek-English dictionary before Liddell and Scott. In collaboration with Daniel Appleton White he prepared the first American edition of Sallust (Salem, 1805), and he is still remembered as the author of the first published collection of Americanisms, real or fancied, his *Vocabulary or Collection of Words and Phrases which have been supposed to be peculiar to the United States of America* (1816). His own style was that of the most eminent British reviewers. Most of his articles and monographs on linguistic subjects are scattered through the volumes of the *North American Review*, the *Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences*, and the *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*. It was said of him, with pardonable exaggeration, that he spent his life in declining honors. Both for his personal qualities and his attainments he was one of the most highly regarded Bostonians of his day. He died in Boston, after a year of declining health, and was buried in Salem.

[Mary Orne Pickering, *Life of John Pickering* (privately printed, 1887), reviewed in *Nation* (N. Y.), Sept. 29, 1887; Charles Sumner, "The Late John Pickering," *Law Reporter*, June 1846, and *The Scholar, the Jurist, the Artist, the Philanthropist* (1846); D. A. White, *Eulogy on John Pickering* (1847); W. H. Prescott, memoir, *Colls. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, ser. 3, vol. X (1849), with a useful, though inaccurate, list of his publications; A. P. Peabody, *Harvard Graduates Whom I Have Known* (1890); Harrison Ellery and C. P. Bowditch, *The Pickering Geneal.* (3 vols., 1897); esp. I, 258–62; H. S. Tapley, *Salem Imprints, 1768–1825* (1927).]

G. H. G.

PICKERING, TIMOTHY (July 17, 1745–Jan. 29, 1829), soldier, administrator, and politician, was born at Salem, Mass., where the Pickering family had been prominent since the first years of settlement. An ancestor, John Pickering, was living there in 1637. Timothy was the eighth of the nine children of Timothy and Mary (Wingate) Pickering. His father had sufficient means to give him and his only brother a good education. After graduating at Harvard College in 1763, he returned to Salem and became a clerk in the office of the register of deeds for Essex County, where he was employed at intervals for more than ten years. He studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1768, but, although he held several minor judicial posts in the course of his career, he never attained distinction as a lawyer. He was an early supporter of the Revolutionary movement in Massachusetts, and in this, as in sundry local disputes, displayed great ability as a newspaper controversialist and pamphleteer. He served on various committees engaged in Revolutionary agitation and drafted several notable addresses and petitions. In ad-

dition he held various Salem offices, including those of selectman, town clerk, and representative in the General Court, until summoned to more important duties after the outbreak of war.

In 1766 he had received a commission as lieutenant in the Essex County militia and he became a devoted student of military history and tactics. Although unsuccessful in his endeavor to place the Massachusetts militia on a really effective war footing, he performed useful service in drilling the local levies and his activity bore fruit in 1775 when he published *An Easy Plan of Discipline for a Militia,* adopted by Massachusetts in 1776 and widely used in the American army until replaced by the famous manual of Baron Steuben. He was elected register of deeds in October 1774 and, in February of the following year, colonel of the 1st Regiment of Essex County militia. He took part in the military operations in April 1775, and performed varied services, civil and military, during the early months of the war. On Apr. 8, 1776, he married Rebecca White, a woman of great ability and strength of character who had been born in Bristol, England. Their married life continued over fifty years and they had ten children, among them John, 1777–1846 [*q.v.*], and Timothy, father of Charles and grandfather of Edward Charles Pickering [*qq.v.*].

After a brief assignment to coast defense duty he led a Massachusetts contingent to join Washington's army and participated in the winter campaign of 1776–77 in New York and New Jersey. His creditable services and military talents led to Washington's offer of the post of adjutant-general of the United States Army. After some delay he resigned his place as register of deeds and, in a letter of May 7, 1777, of which Congress was informed May 24, accepted the military position. He served with distinction and in November was elected to the newly organized board of war, although continuing to serve as adjutant-general until the following January. Selected on Aug. 5, 1780, as quartermaster-general, he held this important post until after the conclusion of peace. While his conduct of the department was frequently criticized, he performed great services in the face of tremendous obstacles and showed himself to be a man of indefatigable industry and iron determination. His letters constitute an invaluable commentary on the course of the Revolution. He had no illusions as to the character of his countrymen and the real causes of much of the suffering and the prolongation of the war. "If we should fail at last," he wrote, Mar. 6, 1778, "the Americans can blame only their own negligence,

Pickering

avarice, and want of almost every public virtue" (Pickering and Upham, *post,* I, 211).

On the restoration of peace and after winding up the affairs of his department he engaged in mercantile business in Philadelphia, but because of the post-war depression decided to move with his growing family to the Wyoming Valley. At this time he repeatedly, with voice and pen, expressed disapproval of the harsh treatment of the Loyalists, declaring the policy pursued to be a national disgrace, of which "*the vestiges* will remain to the most distant age" (*Ibid.*, II, 132).

After a preliminary visit to the Wyoming region in 1786, he moved there early in 1787, charged by the government of Pennsylvania with the duty of organizing the new county of Luzerne. He was thus involved in the protracted and bitter dispute between the Connecticut settlers and the Pennsylvania authorities. Although he did his best to settle jurisdictional quarrels and quiet disputed land titles, the dilatory tactics and suspected bad faith of Pennsylvania authorities brought upon him the wrath of the settlers and caused him to be subjected to outrageous treatment on several occasions. He realized the grievances of the settlers, however, showed magnanimity toward offenders, and represented Luzerne County in the convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States, and in the state constitutional convention of 1789–90.

His personal finances being badly involved, apparently because of insufficient capital and excessive purchases of land, he determined to seek public office under the newly organized federal government. On Sept. 8, 1790, he applied to Washington for the postmaster generalship but was first sent on a special mission to the Seneca Indians, who were threatening to join the western tribes in the war then in progress. After the successful conclusion of this mission, he was appointed postmaster general, Aug. 12, 1791. He was repeatedly assigned on missions to the Indians during the next few years, his temperament and sympathies making him an admirable negotiator. He endeavored to protect the tribes from outrage and exploitation by the settlers but his suggestions for an enlightened Indian policy, like those for an effective military establishment, were too advanced for the opinion of his times. His recommendation for the establishment of a military academy, however, was at length accepted by the government. The Post Office Department was still in a rudimentary stage and Pickering's work was necessarily of pioneer character. For over three years he wrestled with its administrative problems. On Jan. 2, 1795, he became secretary of war and his capacity for

administrative detail was soon severely tested. In addition to military and Indian affairs, the department included the infant navy, and Pickering performed important services in connection with building and equipping several of the famous frigates which afterwards did so much to establish the naval reputation of the Republic.

In August 1795 the secretary of state, Edmund Randolph [*q.v.*], was forced to resign, owing to the discovery of dubious transactions with the French minister, and Pickering, who had been prominent in bringing the matter to the President's attention, succeeded to that portfolio. He had, naturally enough in view of his personal and official associations, together with his temperament, become a bitter and uncompromising Federalist. The French Revolution filled him with dread and loathing. The foreign complications accompanying the outbreak of war in Europe convinced him, as they did many of his associates, that France had malevolent designs on American independence and that "French influence" meant the subversion of American institutions and mob rule. As a corollary he became convinced that the British navy constituted the chief barrier against French designs. For more than twenty years his views of French influence and policy constituted an obsession which warped his judgment, weakened his political scruples, and involved him in sundry transactions which clouded his reputation and obscured his great services. He continued in the State Department after John Adams' accession to the presidency and took a prominent part in the turbulent foreign policy of that administration. He entered with enthusiasm into the preparations for hostilities with France in 1798, although protesting vigorously against British encroachments on American rights. While he had never held Washington in the exalted estimation of many contemporaries, he had apparently been greatly influenced by the awesome presence, calm judgment, and iron will of the great Virginian. He had no such sentiments towards Adams. For Hamilton, however, he had unbounded admiration, and, like many leading Federalists, regarded the latter as the real leader of the party. Pickering, on intimate terms with Hamilton, followed a course which a man of finer scruples would have shunned. While retaining his place in the Cabinet, he corresponded with the President's party enemies, intrigued against his appointments to the army then being organized, and in the face of the President's desire to settle difficulties with France, endeavored to widen the breach. The effect on Federalist party fortunes was disastrous, and Pickering

Pickering

was abruptly dismissed from the State Department, May 10, 1800.

He resumed farming operations in western Pennsylvania but his Federalist friends were determined that his talents should not be lost to the party. His lands were purchased by subscription and Pickering, after twenty-four years' absence, returned to his native county in Massachusetts, taking up farming, first in Danvers and later at Wenham. He was defeated as a candidate for the federal House of Representatives in 1802, but served in the Senate from Mar. 4, 1803, to Mar. 3, 1811. His controversial talents, developed in years of partisan activity, had not hitherto been tested in legislative halls, but he soon became a formidable debater. He was a bitter opponent of most of the measures of Jefferson and Madison. Republican opponents regarded him with malevolence equal to his own. He was repeatedly burned in effigy, and was the subject of continual caricature and slander in newspaper and pamphlet. The acquisition of Louisiana and other Jeffersonian policies convinced him that the interests of the commercial states could no longer be properly maintained within the Union. With Hamilton's death, Pickering's position of leadership among the Federalists made his attitude very significant. His correspondence shows that he was urging on many of his colleagues the desirability of a northern Confederacy, and that he considered peaceful separation entirely feasible (Henry Adams, *Documents relating to New England Federalism, passim*).

Defeated for reëlection to the Senate in 1811, he served as a member of the Executive Council of Massachusetts in 1812–13. In the meantime he was reëlected to the House, serving from Mar. 4, 1813, to Mar. 3, 1817, and distinguishing himself by the virulence of his opposition to the War of 1812. His expectation that the Union would dissolve was apparently never wholly abandoned until the restoration of peace. He retired at the close of his second term, but made an unsuccessful contest for election to the Seventeenth Congress. He moved from Wenham to Salem in 1820 and spent the rest of his life in his birthplace, where in 1829 he died. Of powerful physique and sound health, Pickering remained active to the end of his life. He presents a pleasanter side in his work for agricultural improvement, and in his correspondence on crop rotation, soil fertility, and animal husbandry. He deserves an important place in the history of New England agriculture and Timothy Pickering the farmer, winning a ploughing match in his seventy-fifth year, is a more attractive figure

than Timothy Pickering the politician, when almost eighty, fanning the dying embers of his controversy with Adams.

He was deeply interested in American history and planned extensive literary work. His correspondence with Governor Sullivan on the Embargo (*Interesting Correspondence between His Excellency Governour Sullivan and Col. Pickering . . .*, 1808), which was widely circulated as a campaign document; his *Political Essays. A Series of Letters Addressed to the People of the United States* (1812); and *A Review of the Correspondence between the Hon. John Adams . . . and the Late Wm. Cunningham, Esq.* (1824), disclose a mastery of English and a high order of polemical ability. His more ambitious literary projects failed to materialize. Throughout his career, however, he had been a prodigious letter writer, and his carefully preserved papers and notes are of unusual interest. Through his letters and journals move the great figures of the early days of the Republic. There are also glimpses of the soldiers shivering in their huts at Valley Forge, the officers cursing the ingratitude of their country at Newburgh, the Indians in council, the sailors crowding the smoky gundecks of the frigates and privateers, the frontiersmen and teamsters struggling to open the roads to the West, the people dying of yellow fever in the great Philadelphia epidemic of 1793. His judgments of contemporaries are frequently prejudiced and worthless, but his keen observations of places, customs, and conditions render his writings in the aggregate extremely valuable to the historian.

He had great administrative ability, industry, and personal integrity. Although an outstanding member of the die-hard school of Federalism, he was democratic in his personal relations and simple and unostentatious in his habits. His interests were broad and varied, but he had too large a share of the Puritan temperament to be an attractive figure. His portrait by Stuart seems to reveal the harshness, narrowness, and intolerance so often noted by contemporaries. Life to him was a serious matter, "a *probationary state, a school of discipline* and instruction, in which we are to be prepared for admission into the assembly of the saints and angels, to spend an eternity in the presence and worship of the Great Source of being and happiness" (Pickering and Upham, IV, 73). It was quite in keeping with such views that Hamilton, Stephen Higginson, George Cabot, and other very human associates became saints and angels in advance of their translation, and that Jefferson, John Adams, and Governor Sullivan seemed destined

to a very different region. He performed great services for his country; his defects of character, and his political mistakes were common to the group of New England Federalists to which he naturally belonged.

[The great collection of Pickering Papers is for the most part in the custody of the Mass. Hist. Soc., which published a valuable index in its *Collections*, 6 ser., vol. VIII (1896); this volume contains information as to other depositaries of Pickering material. *The Life of Timothy Pickering* (4 vols., 1867–73) by his son Octavius Pickering, who completed vol. I, and C. W. Upham, who finished the work, contains copious extracts from the original manuscript collections. It is a useful biography but glosses over or omits certain aspects of his character and career. See also: M. O. Pickering, *Life of John Pickering* (1887); Harrison Ellery and C. P. Bowditch, *The Pickering Genealogy* (3 vols., 1897), containing a sketch, vol. I, 133–159; H. C. Lodge, in *Atlantic Monthly*, June 1878, the best short sketch. Henry Adams, *Documents Relating to New England Federalism* (1877), throws considerable light on certain aspects of Pickering's career neglected by his biographers. George Gibbs, *Memoirs of the Administrations of Washington and John Adams, Edited from the Papers of Oliver Wolcott* (2 vols., 1846), the biographies and published works of his chief contemporaries, and the more important collections of official papers during the period of his public life contain frequent references to him. There is an obituary in (Salem) *Essex Register*, Feb. 2, 1829.] W. A. R.

PICKET, ALBERT (Apr. 15, 1771–Aug. 3, 1850), teacher and writer, was a pupil of Noah Webster in Connecticut in 1782 and studied from the manuscript sheets of the famous spelling book. He was largely self-educated. He married Esther Rockwell Hull on May 8, 1791, and about 1794 he began to teach in New York City. Preparation for his work as an organizer was obtained in the Incorporated Society of Teachers, of which he was twice elected president. His Manhattan School, at first for girls only, had a reputation extending beyond the city. It was not only large and successful but was also a pioneer in offering advanced instruction to girls. Like Noah Webster he began writing by compiling a spelling book, the *Union Spelling Book* (1804). Its success led him to the preparation of a series of elementary English texts for spelling, reading, and grammar, which were widely adopted in both the East and the West. Their rapid introduction into schools in the West was certainly one of the influences that led to his later removal to Cincinnati. To make a knowledge of progressive educational ideas more widely available, he undertook the establishment of a teachers' magazine. With the aid of John Picket, the eldest of his five children, he edited and published in New York *The Academician*, a semi-monthly paper, one of the first educational periodicals in the United States. Inexperience and the fact that the editors themselves had to write almost all the copy caused delays in publication. It ran

from Feb. 7, 1818, to Jan. 29, 1820, and developed a theory of education based upon psychology, introduced the views of Pestalozzi, Fellenberg, and Lancaster, published school news, and gave practical advice on teaching.

Removing to Cincinnati in 1826, he established another school for girls, was elected to the board of education, and became a trustee of Cincinnati College. When the city established a public school system, he united the teachers of the local private and public schools in 1829 to form an association that soon became the Western Literary Institute and College of Professional Teachers. This body, centering in Cincinnati, had members and affiliated societies in eighteen states in the Ohio and Mississippi valleys and remained active until about 1845. His presidential addresses and his reports as chairman of the executive committee, printed in the *Transactions of the . . . Western Literary Institute and College of Professional Teachers, 1834–40* (6 vols., 1835–41), are admirable statements of his program for the teaching profession. Influential in many states, the association was in Ohio one of the deciding factors in establishing a state school system and obtaining the passage of the school law of 1838. He also attempted to establish a normal school and with others obtained a charter for one from the Ohio legislature in 1834, but the institution was still-born. Whether as organizer, journalist, or protagonist of professional education, he aimed to raise the status of teaching and to develop a profession that should be able to guarantee the competence of its members. Those who knew him well speak of his clear mind, his ability as a teacher, dignified presence, and "pure, disinterested zeal in the cause of education" (E. D. Mansfield, *Personal Memories*, 1879, p. 269).

[B. A. and M. L. Hinsdale, "The Western Literary Institute and College for Professional Teachers," *Report of the Commissioner of Educ.* (U. S.), 1898–99, vol. I; *Ohio School Jour.* (Columbus), Sept. 1848; *Common School Jour.* (Boston), Dec. 1850; *Cist's Weekly Advertiser* (Cincinnati), Aug. 16, 1850; *N. Y. Herald*, Oct. 18, 1817, N. Y. *Evening Post*, Aug. 25, 1824; *Western Spy* (Cincinnati), June 20, 1817; *Cincinnati Chronicle*, May 10, 1834; *Cincinnati Daily Gazette*, Dec. 19, 1826, Apr. 5, 1832; *Olentangy Gazette* (Delaware, Ohio), Aug. 9, 1850; birthdate and other material from his great-grand-daughter, Mrs. Thomas E. Rardin, Columbus, Ohio.]

H. G. G.

PICKETT, ALBERT JAMES (Aug. 13, 1810–Oct. 28, 1858), historian, was born in Anson County, N. C., the son of Frances (Dickson) and William Raiford Pickett who in 1818 removed to Autauga County, Ala. There his father entered a large tract of land, opened a store, and engaged actively in the Indian trade. Indian traders made the store their headquarters, and Indians, especially the Creeks, came frequently to the store. The boy became familiar with them, often accompanied the traders on their journeys into the wilderness, and visited the Indians in their villages. For formal education there was little opportunity. He attended the schools opened irregularly in communities near his home. He was eighteen years old when his father sent him to Middletown, Conn., to military school. He reached Wadesboro, N. C., in safety after a journey on horseback, exchanged his saddlebags for a trunk, sold his horse, and made the rest of the journey to Connecticut by stage. Finding that the school at Middletown had been reorganized, he went on to Cambridge, Mass. He spent the next two years in school there and in Stafford County, Va. In 1830 he returned to Alabama and studied law with his brother. Law had little attraction for him, however, and he never took the examination for admission to the bar. He was married to Sarah Smith Harris on Mar. 20, 1832. They had twelve children, nine of whom lived to maturity. Until his death he lived the life of a gentleman planter in Autauga County, spending his winters in Montgomery and his summers on his plantation. He was a military aide to Gov. Clement C. Clay and was active in the preparations for war with the Creeks in 1836.

He early became interested in writing and wrote much for the newspapers on historical and economic subjects. He was interested in experiments for improving agriculture and wrote for the *Southern Cultivator* and other agricultural journals. In politics he was an ardent Democrat and an enthusiastic admirer of Andrew Jackson, declaring that he agreed "with that eminent person in every political opinion he ever held—in every military movement he ever made, and in his whole career through life—both civil, religious, military and political" (Woods, *post*, p. 605). Although interested in politics, office had no attraction for him, and, when his friends proposed to nominate him for governor in 1853, he resolutely refused to allow his name to be considered. His chief literary work was his *History of Alabama and Incidentally of Georgia and Mississippi from the Earliest Period* (1851). It carries the history of Alabama through the territorial period, and it remains today an important source for the history of the period. He had a first-hand knowledge of much of the period of which he wrote, and he spared no labor or expense to obtain accurate information. He spent thousands of dollars in the purchase of books and the copying of manuscripts, and he traveled hun-

dreds of miles to interview people who might give him information. The organization of the book is poor, and its literary style is cumbersome and involved, but it contains invaluable material. He expected to follow this book by a history of the Southwest, but he died before this work was completed. The papers he left form one of the most valuable collections in the Alabama State Department of History and Archives.

[M. L. Woods, "Personal Reminiscences of Col. Albert James Pickett," *Trans. Ala. Hist. Soc.*, vol. IV (1904); C. M. Jackson, *A Brief Biog. Sketch of the Late Colonel Albert James Pickett* (1859); B. F. Riley, *Makers and Romance of Ala. Hist.* (n.d.); T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), vol. IV; *The South in the Building of the Nation*, vol. XII (1909).]

H. F.

PICKETT, GEORGE EDWARD (Jan. 25, 1825–July 30, 1875), Confederate soldier, the son of Colonel Robert and Mary (Johnston) Pickett, and a descendant of William Pickett of Fauquier County, Va., was born in Richmond, Va. He received his early education in the Richmond Academy and the law office of his uncle, Andrew Johnston, in Quincy, Ill., from which state he was appointed in 1842 to the United States Military Academy. He graduated in 1846, the last of his class of fifty-nine members, and went directly from school into the Mexican War. He was commissioned second lieutenant, 2nd Infantry, Mar. 3, 1847, and was transferred in July, first to the 7th and then to the 8th Infantry. He served from the siege of Vera Cruz to the capture of Mexico City. For gallantry at Contreras and Churubusco he was brevetted first lieutenant, Aug. 20, 1847. He was first to go over the parapets of Chapultepec on Sept. 13, 1847, and under the menace of enemy fire, he lowered the Aztec emblem and hoisted the flag of his infantry. From 1849 to 1856 he did garrison duty in Texas, receiving the rank of captain on Mar. 3, 1855.

In January 1851, he married Sally Minge of Richmond, who died the following November. He was assigned frontier duty in 1856 in the Northwest and was engaged almost constantly in Indian fighting. In 1859 American settlers on San Juan Island (Puget Sound) complained of Indian outrages and threatened British aggression. Pickett was ordered to take possession of the island, which he did promptly with a force of sixty soldiers. Three British warships anchored broadside to the camp and warned him off the island, and later the British magistrate aboard the flagship summoned him for trial, but he disregarded both messages. The British next proposed landing a force equal to Pickett's for joint military occupation. To this he replied,

Pickett

"I am here by virtue of an order from my government, and shall remain till recalled by the same authority" (*Ann. Reunion, Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.*, 1876, p. 12). He further announced he would fire upon any landing force. This dangerous mission was accepted by Pickett with full knowledge that his orders were inspired by Democratic officials who hoped to weld together the disintegrating bonds of the Union by the threat of a foreign war. Joint occupation by British and American forces was the solution reached, and Pickett remained in command of the American forces there almost continuously until 1861 when he resigned from the Federal forces. He went to Richmond, was commissioned colonel, and assigned to duty on the lower Rappahannock.

He was made a brigadier-general in February 1862, and his command, by the dash and courage displayed at Williamsburg, Seven Pines, and Gaines's Mill, earned the sobriquet, "The Game Cock Brigade." At Gaines's Mill, on June 27, 1862, he was severely wounded in the shoulder and did not rejoin his command until after the first Maryland campaign. He was promoted major-general in October 1862, and given command of a Virginia division. At Fredericksburg he held the center of Lee's line and later served creditably in the campaign against Suffolk. At Gettysburg, on July 3, 1863, with a strength of 4,500 muskets, his command advanced over half a mile of broken ground against withering artillery and musket fire. With the precision of parade drill they descended one slope, ascended the next, and, with unmatched courage of individual gallantry, assaulted the formidable Union line only to be forced back in defeat. Scarcely a fourth of his command returned from this memorable charge. After the Gettysburg campaign, he commanded the Department of Virginia and North Carolina. His advance from Petersburg on Feb. 1, 1864, to free New Bern, N. C., failed of its objective but secured 500 prisoners and valuable stores. Late in April 1864, his troops, with Robert Frederick Hoke [*q.v.*] commanding, recaptured Plymouth, N. C., just as Pickett was ordered to Richmond. Before he could start, however, General Butler's fleet appeared off Citypoint in the James River, and threatened the back door of the Confederate capital. Butler's sluggish action enabled Pickett to turn the command over to Beauregard with Butler's troops still bottled up at Bermuda Hundred. In the final Union offensives near Petersburg, his division bore the brunt of the attack at Five Forks on Apr. 1, 1865, where he made the greatest fight of his career. He joined Longstreet

with the remnants of his command and remained with him until the surrender at Appomattox.

On Sept. 15, 1863, he married the young and beautiful La Salle Corbell of Chuckatuck, Va. Two children, one of whom lived to maturity, were born to them. Peace found him in poverty and deprived of his profession. The Khedive of Egypt offered him a commission as brigadier-general, but he refused service which would separate him from his beloved wife. When Grant became president, he offered him the marshalship of Virginia, but he declined. Instead he accepted the Virginia agency of the Washington Life Insurance Company of New York and was so employed at the time of his death. He died at Norfolk, Va., where his body was placed temporarily in a vault. On Oct. 25, 1875, his remains were borne to Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond, Va., and there buried with full military honors.

[Personal papers in the possession of a member of the family; T. L. Broun, "The Pickett Family," in the *Times-Dispatch* (Richmond, Va.), Apr. 11, 1909; La Salle Corbell Pickett, *Pickett and His Men* (1899), including in appendix a biog. sketch by G. B. McClellan; A. C. Inman, ed., *Soldier of the South, Gen. Pickett's War Letters to His Wife* (1928); *Ann. Reunion, Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad., 1876*; G. O. Haller, *San Juan and Secession* (1896); J. C. Mayo, "Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg," *Southern Hist. Soc. Papers*, vol. XXXIV (1906); *Richmond Enquirer*, Aug. 1, 1875.]

C. C. B.

PICKETT, JAMES CHAMBERLAYNE (Feb. 6, 1793–July 10, 1872), diplomat, was born in Fauquier County, Va., the grandson of William S. Pickett, and the son of John and Elizabeth (Chamberlayne) Pickett. Some three years after his birth the family moved to Mason County, Ky., but it was from Ohio that he was appointed, Aug. 14, 1813, to be third lieutenant in the 2nd United States Artillery. He left the service in 1815 at the end of the war with Great Britain only to reënter it June 16, 1818, as captain and assistant deputy-quartermaster-general. He served until June 1821. Meanwhile he had tried his hand at editing the *Eagle*, at Maysville, Ky., had read law, and on Oct. 6, 1818, had married Ellen Desha, daughter of Gov. Joseph Desha of Kentucky. Two sons were born to this marriage. In 1821 he returned to the practice of the law and the next year sat in the state legislature as his father had done before him. He achieved the reputation of being one of the foremost scholars of his state. After three years as secretary of state of Kentucky (1825–28), he was ready for the first of a series of federal appointments.

His appointment, on June 9, 1829, to be secretary of legation in Colombia, was the beginning of a diplomatic career of some distinction. He traveled about Colombia, reporting to the American minister at Bogotá his fears of British commercial aggression and his doubts whether even the sway of Spain could have been more tyrannical than the last five years of republican rule. He found the country still suffering from twenty years of civil war. Returning to the United States, he served for three months in 1835 as superintendent of the United States Patent Office and in January 1836 was appointed fourth auditor of the Treasury Department. Two years later (June 1838) he resumed his diplomatic career. As chargé d'affaires of the United States, he was authorized to conclude treaties of commerce with the Peru-Bolivian Confederation and with the Republic of Ecuador, to which he was appointed special diplomatic agent. By June 13 of the next year, a treaty of peace, friendship, navigation, and commerce with Ecuador, with its "most-favored-nation" clause and its definitions of neutral rights in wartime, was ready for signature. It was proclaimed in September 1842 (8 *U. S. Statutes at Large*, 534). With Peru, Pickett was somewhat less successful. After substantial concessions by the United States, a claims convention providing for the adjustment of the claims of citizens of the United States against Peru was signed on Mar. 17, 1841, but it was not proclaimed until Feb. 21, 1844 (*Ibid.*, 570). It called for a total payment by Peru of $300,000, to be met in ten annual instalments. Pickett found the youthful and tumultuous Peruvian republic no easy country with which to deal, for it was constantly on the verge of insurrection or involved in civil war; and when he returned to the United States late in 1844, he left three claimants contending for the presidency of the nation. Pickett appears to have been a warm expansionist who urged the desirability of an isthmian canal and who approved as early as 1842 of the plans of an American naval officer for detaching San Francisco from Mexico (*Memoirs of John Quincy Adams*, vol. XI, 1876, p. 367). After the close of his diplomatic career he settled in Washington where for some years (*c.* 1848–53) he edited the *Daily Globe*. He was also concerned in a short-lived magazine venture, the *National Monument*, suspended in 1851 for lack of funds (W. B. Bryan, *A History of the National Capital*, 1916, II, 422 n.). After this time, however, he lived in relative obscurity until his death, in Washington, in 1872.

[Pickett's dispatches and the Departmental instructions to Pickett in the archives of the Dept. of State; records of Appointment Office, Dept. of State; "The Pickett Family," *Times-Dispatch* (Richmond, Va.), Apr. 11, 1909; W. M. Paxton, *The Marshall Family* (1885); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S.*

Army (1903), vol. I; *The Biog. Encyc. of Ky.* (1878); H. Levin, *The Lawyers and Law-Makers of Ky.* (1897), p. 432; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), July 10, 1872.] E. W. S.

PICKNELL, WILLIAM LAMB (Oct. 23, 1853–Aug. 8, 1897), landscape painter, born at Hinesburg, Vt., was the son of the Rev. William Lamb Picknell and Ellen Maria (Upham) Picknell. His father, a Baptist minister, was of Scotch descent. His mother was a descendant of one of the settlers of Weymouth, Mass. Upon the death of his father, Picknell, then about fourteen years old, went to Boston, and, after a brief interval of business, in 1874 traveled to Rome. There he met George Inness [*q.v.*] and under his tutelage did his first experimental work at painting on the Campagna. After two years in Italy he went to Paris and worked under J. L. Gérôme in the École des Beaux-Arts. He then proceeded to the fishing village of Pont-Aven, Brittany, where he came under the influence of Robert Wylie and put in four years of patient and concentrated work. In 1880 he sent to the Paris Salon his "Road to Concarneau," which made a name for him. It was followed in 1881 by another excellent landscape. The artist then went to England and painted for two winters near the south coast and in the New Forest. "Bleak December," now in the Metropolitan Museum, New York, and "Wintry March," belonging to the Walker Gallery, Liverpool, were conspicuously successful works of this period.

After a decade abroad Picknell returned to America and painted at Annisquam, Mass., for several summers, usually going to the Mediterranean shores for his winter work. He spent one winter in Florida and another in California, where he painted his "In California," which brought $2,025 at the executor's sale of his works, in New York, 1900. He married Gertrude Powers in 1889 and a year later went abroad and remained in France until 1897. He worked in Moret in the summer and at Antibes in the winter. The pictures painted there served to increase his reputation in France, especially the "Déclin du Jour." The death of his only child at Antibes in 1897 was a heavy blow. Picknell was himself far from well, but he sailed for America in July and got to Marblehead, Mass., to die there of heart disease in August, at the age of forty-three. A memorial exhibition of forty-four of his paintings was held at the Boston Art Museum in 1898 and at that time Saint-Gaudens' bronze medallion portrait of the artist was shown. At a sale of his works in New York in 1900, fifty-six pictures fetched a total of $16,-520 (*American Art Annual*, vol. III, 1900, p. 46). His "Road to Concarneau" and "En Provence" are in the Corcoran Gallery, Washington; "Morning on the Loing at Moret" and "Sand Dunes of Essex" are in the Boston Museum of Fine Arts; "Morning on the Mediterranean, Antibes," is in the Luxembourg Museum, Paris; and other good examples are to be seen in the Pennsylvania Academy, Philadelphia, the Brooklyn Museum, and the Carnegie Institute, Pittsburgh. His landscapes are virile. Nothing is extenuated. His style is naturalistic and large; the construction is notably firm, and there is an invigorating atmosphere in his canvases of fresh air and strong sunlight.

[E. W. Emerson, "An Am. Landscape Painter," *Century Mag.*, Sept. 1901, and Foreword in the catalogue of the memorial exhibition, Boston, 1898; *New England Mag.*, Apr. 1896; F. K. Upham, *The Descendants of John Upham* (1892); *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 9, 1897, Feb. 12, 1898; catalogues of executor's sale, 1900; T. B. Clarke sale, 1899; G. I. Seney sale, 1891; E. McMillin sale, 1913; exhibition at Avery Gallery, N. Y., 1890.] W. H. D.

PICTON, THOMAS (May 16, 1822–Feb. 20, 1891), soldier of fortune, journalist, was Thomas Picton Milner, the son of Jane Milner (*General Alumni Catalogue of New York University*, 1906), who, shortly after his birth, was listed in New York City directories as "widow." Nothing is known of his father. He spent his youth in the home of his maternal grandmother, a woman of wealth, who provided him with a good education. Later in life he dropped his last name, becoming known to his contemporaries as Thomas Picton. After graduating in 1840 from New York University he spent several years abroad. While in France he became an officer in the French army under Louis Philippe, who is said to have made him a knight of the "Legion of the Stranger." With the fall of Louis Philippe in 1848 he returned to New York, but an adventurous spirit still dominated him, and probably toward the close of 1850 he joined the force which Narciso Lopez was collecting in the United States to lead against Cuba. Barely escaping capture when Lopez was taken prisoner, Picton sought refuge from his enemies in the steamer *Palmero*, which was pursued by a Spanish man-of-war. He finally succeeded in reaching New York and for a few years busied himself in journalistic pursuits. But the preparations which William Walker was making for the invasion of Nicaragua once more aroused his filibustering instincts, and he attached himself to Walker's force, becoming for a time paymaster in the General's army. After the shooting of Walker he returned to the United States and with the outbreak of the Civil War raised a company of sol-

diers which was later incorporated in the 38th New York Infantry, but Picton himself seems to have played no part in the war.

Picton's career as a journalist began as early as 1850 when for a short time he edited in conjunction with his teacher and friend, Henry William Herbert ("Frank Forester"), a periodical called the *Era*. He had already become associated with Edward Z. C. Judson ("Ned Buntline"), active in the organization of the Native American movement, and during the early fifties he became an editor of the *Sachem*, and on its discontinuance, the founder of the *True American*, both organs of the new movement. His love of sports also found expression through journalistic channels, and during his later years he contributed to the *Clipper*; *Turf, Field, and Farm*; and the *Spirit of the Times*. For the last-named periodical he wrote a series of articles, beginning with the issue of Feb. 19, 1881, called "Reminiscences of a Sporting Journalist." These articles, which appeared intermittently until a short time before his death, dealt with sporting, social, and historical topics having reference to the New York of Picton's youth and early manhood. During his years as a journalist, he was also connected with the *True National Democrat*, the *Sunday Dispatch*, and the *Sunday Mercury*. He frequently wrote under the pseudonym of "Paul Preston." Among his publications so designated were *Paul Preston's Book of Gymnastics: or Sports for Youth* (n.d.) and *The Fireside Magician* (1870). His interest in the history of old New York led to the publication in 1873 of a small pamphlet called *Rose Street; its Past, Present, and Future*. He also contributed a biographical sketch of Henry Herbert to the *Life and Writings of Frank Forester* (1882). Among his more creative efforts were two light dramas: *A Tempest in a Teapot* (copyright 1871), and *There's No Smoke Without Fire* (copyright 1872). A volume of poems, *Acrostics from Across the Atlantic*, published in London in 1869 and signed "A Gothamite," has also sometimes been ascribed to him.

Picton was familiarly known to his wide circle of New York acquaintance as Col. "Tom" Picton. He was a distinguished Mason and frequently wrote articles of Masonic interest. At one time he was a member of a city engine company and at another was city paymaster. For some years, too, he acted as assistant cashier of the Nassau Bank. About 1860 he married a Miss Gardner, daughter of a Confederate officer of that name, but a few years later the couple separated. At the time of his death in New York City he was without immediate family connections, and he was buried in the lot of the Press Club in Cypress Hills Cemetery

[Obituaries in the *N. Y. Recorder*, Feb. 25, 1891; *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 22, 1891; *Spirit of the Times*, Feb. 28, 1891; *Masonic Chronicle and Official Bulletin*, Mar. 1891.] N. F. A.

PIDGIN, CHARLES FELTON (Nov. 11, 1844–June 3, 1923), statistician, inventor, author, was born in Roxbury, Mass., the only son and only child surviving infancy of Benjamin Gorham and Mary Elizabeth (Felton) Pidgin. His father is designated at different times as a "turner," "varnisher," or "finisher," and though he may have been of New England origin, he apparently did not have as long an American descent as his wife, who was of the seventh generation of the Felton family in Massachusetts. Charles Felton Pidgin received in boyhood an injury to his hip that paralyzed one of his legs and necessitated the use of artificial support for it throughout his life, but despite this handicap he entered the Boston English High School in 1860 and graduated from it in 1863. He then secured employment as a bookkeeper in Boston, and he also did a certain amount of writing for newspapers in Boston and elsewhere. In 1870 he became junior member of the firm of Young & Pidgin, manufacturers of linen collars and cuffs, but his connection with this business lasted only two years, and he resorted to newspaper writing for a time. In 1873 he was appointed chief clerk of the Massachusetts Bureau of Statistics of Labor, probably as a result of the recommendation of Carroll D. Wright, who had just been made director of the bureau, and was impressed by Pidgin's ability. In this position he found an outlet for his inventive talent, and he showed great ingenuity and resource in devising methods and instruments for the mechanical tabulation of statistics, some of which were intended to meet the special needs of his own department, but others were patented and exploited commercially.

In the report of the 1885 census of Massachusetts, Pidgin is credited with an important part in organizing and directing it, and until after he was fifty his interest was chiefly in statistics and in machines of his invention for computing and recording. In 1888 he published *Practical Statistics*, but in 1900 he turned to non-technical literature. At this time he suffered from a cataract that rendered him almost blind, and it may have been his inability to use his eyes that led him to dictate *Quincy Adams Sawyer* (1900), a novel dealing with New England life. This book had a very wide sale and was also successfully dramatized. The success of this venture in the

field of creative literature spurred him to further efforts, and he published several other works of fiction within the next few years, the best known being *Blennerhasset* (1901), which dealt with a period and characters he found particularly interesting. In 1903 he was made chief of the Bureau of Statistics of Labor but in July 1907 his reappointment by the governor was not confirmed and he was retired on a pension. The rest of his life he devoted to authorship and invention. He wrote two more volumes in which Quincy Adams Sawyer was the hero, one of which was a detective story, and other works of a varied nature.

In 1917 Pidgin perfected what he called "visible speech," a system designed to make possible the photographing of words as if issuing from the mouths of motion-picture actors. There was no form of communicating thought or recording information in which he did not show aptitude, but his main interest was in what was practical and utilitarian. He did not lack esthetic perceptions, but he was more disposed to make his means of expression effective than he was to take delight in what it expressed. He foresaw the need imposed by the increasing complexity of mechanical civilization for rapid means of accumulating, condensing, and displaying involved records, and he played a part in developing the present methods of mechanical computation and graphic presentation of results. He died in Melrose, Mass., in 1923. He was married on July 3, 1867, to Lizzie Abbott Dane, who died in 1868; on Nov. 25, 1873, to Lucy Sturtevant Gardner, M.D., who died in 1896; and on July 21, 1897, to Frances Fern Douglas, who survived him. In 1906 he adopted a daughter, who also survived him.

[There are obituary notices of Pidgin in the *Boston Transcript*, June 4, 1923, and in the *N. Y. Times*, June 5, 1923. See *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23, for the list of his books; Cyrus Felton, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Felton Family* (1886); *Vital Records of Roxbury, Mass.*, vol. I (1925); and *Boston Advertiser*, June 28, 1907.]

S. G.

PIEPER, FRANZ AUGUST OTTO (June 27, 1852–June 3, 1931), Lutheran theologian, was born at Carwitz, Pomerania, Germany, the son of Augustus and Berta (Lohff) Pieper. Augustus Pieper, a town mayor, sent his sons to the junior colleges at Koeslin and Kolberg. In 1870 his widow took the family to America and Franz attended Northwestern University at Watertown, Wis., where he received the A.B. degree in 1872. He then attended Concordia Theological Seminary at St. Louis, and was graduated in 1875, being ordained in July of the same year. After serving a small congregation at Centerville, Wis., for a little over a year, he went in November 1876, to Manitowoc, where he remained until he was called to Concordia Seminary to teach dogmatics and to be an understudy of Dr. Carl Ferdinand Wilhelm Walther [*q.v.*]. He arrived in St. Louis on Oct. 2, 1878, and remained there until his death. In 1880 a storm which had been brewing for three years broke about the head of Dr. Walther. Pieper loyally rushed to his assistance and became involved in a controversy on predestination which was to occupy him actively for the next thirty-five years. By a fine-spun scholastic logic, backed by copious quotations from the sixteenth-century Lutheran fathers, the American Lutheran theologians on both sides tried to establish themselves in the eyes of a church rooted in a European culture. That Pieper was successful in his appeal is seen by the prodigious growth of the Missouri Synod at this time. He wrote tirelessly on this and related subjects in the organs of his synod, his last important word being the genial booklet, published in 1913, *Zur Einigung der Amerikanisch-lutherischen Kirche in der Lehre von der Bekehrung und Gnadenwahl* (translated as *Conversion and Election; a Plea for a United Lutheranism in America*), in which he made an eloquent plea for peace. This book heralded a new day, and in spite of the failure of efforts to make peace with the Ohio, Iowa, and Buffalo synods, Pieper lived to see his synod adopt a very irenic attitude towards its former antagonists.

Pieper was an able administrator. When he became a member of the very distinguished faculty of Concordia Seminary there were sixty-nine students enrolled at the institution. At his death there were 534 enrolled, of whom 432 were in attendance, making Concordia the largest Protestant seminary in the United States. Pieper was one of the magnets that attracted this large group of students, just as he was one of the magnets that had drawn into the membership of the Missouri Synod, of which he was president from 1899 to 1911, 1,200,000 souls. This rapid expansion gave rise to many problems, the most important of which were precipitated by overcrowded quarters. In 1882 the Missouri Synod had built a splendid compound of buildings, but Pieper, who was president of the Seminary from 1887 to 1931, found it necessary to erect a new set of fireproof buildings in 1907, and more during a period from 1923 to 1926, the latter project involving an expenditure of about three and a half million dollars. Besides being president of the Seminary and of the Missouri Synod, he served on innumerable committees.

The work of his church among the colored people was his hobby. He traveled in Europe twice, in 1898 and in 1911, seeking both times to restore his impaired health. Of his numerous writings, his *Christliche Dogmatik* (1917–1924), in three large volumes, will probably have the most enduring value. On Jan. 2, 1877, he was married to Minnie Koehn. They had thirteen children, three of whom became pastors, and five, pastors' wives.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *The Concordia Cyc.* (1927), ed. by L. Fuerbringer, T. Engelder, and P. E. Kretzmann; Theodore Graebner, *Dr. Francis Pieper, A Biog. Sketch* (1931); P. E. Kretzmann, "Prof. Franz August Otto Pieper, Dr. Theol.," *Concordia Theol. Monthly*, Aug. 1931; L. Fuerbringer, "Dr. F. Pieper Als Theolog.," *Ibid.*, Oct. and Nov. 1931; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, June 4, 1931. Comments upon his life and work were made in practically all the religious journals of the Lutheran Church in America and in some periodicals in Europe.]

J. M. R.

PIERCE, BENJAMIN (Dec. 25, 1757–Apr. 1, 1839), governor of New Hampshire, the son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Merrill) Pierce, was born in Chelmsford, Mass. He was descended from Thomas Pierce, an English emigrant of 1633–34 who settled in Charlestown, Mass. His father died when the boy was six, leaving him to the care of an uncle; his education consisted of a few weeks' schooling and much farm labor. When the news of the battle of Lexington came, Pierce immediately joined the Massachusetts militia as a private. Remaining in the army until February 1784, he participated in the maneuvers around Boston and in the Saratoga campaign, and was stationed at Valley Forge and in the Hudson Valley; during these years he rose to the rank of lieutenant in command of a company, receiving one promotion for bravery in the battle of Saratoga. When he was mustered out he became an agent for Samson Stoddard of Chelmsford, Mass., who had large tracts in New Hampshire and Vermont. He explored much of this land and in the course of his wanderings picked out a frontier farm in Hillsborough, N. H., where he settled in 1786. On May 24, 1787, he married Elizabeth Andrews, who died the following year; and on Feb. 1, 1790, he married Anna Kendrick (1768–1838), who became the mother of Franklin Pierce [*q.v.*].

In 1786 Pierce was appointed to organize the militia of Hillsborough County as brigade-major and served until 1807, when he resigned with the rank of brigadier-general. He began his political career in 1789, when he was elected to the lower house of the legislature; he was chosen annually for thirteen years and, in 1791, served as a member of the state constitutional convention. In 1803 he was elected a member of the governor's council, and in 1809 he was appointed sheriff of his county. During these years he had become an intensely active supporter of Thomas Jefferson and as a plain farmer warred against the aristocratic Federalists. He strongly supported the War of 1812 but New Hampshire returned to the Federalist fold in opposition to that contest. One of the first things the victorious Federalists did was to remove a number of Republican office holders, among them Benjamin Pierce, in 1813, ostensibly because he refused to recognize the new courts established by the Federalists to eliminate Republican judges. The next year his friends elected him to the governor's council as a vindication and when the Republicans regained power he was reappointed sheriff of Hillsborough County, serving from 1818 to 1827.

Party lines were indistinct in New Hampshire as elsewhere in the 'twenties; new groups were forming. Isaac Hill [*q.v.*] was marshaling a farmers' party in the interior of the state, and, recognizing Pierce's vote-getting strength as a Revolutionary veteran and an agrarian leader, brought him forward as a candidate for the governorship in 1827, 1828, and 1829. He was elected in 1827 and 1829 and, since the governor of New Hampshire had little power, he was content with a few recommendations for the improvement of the militia and local education. By this time he was an ardent Jacksonian; his last public service was as a Democratic elector in 1832. During these years of political activity he had been fairly prosperous as a farmer and had become a local magnate in the town of Hillsborough, where he kept a tavern in his large dwelling on the turnpike. He was a rugged, unlettered pioneer, dominating and patriarchal, who bore the hardships of frontier life easily and maintained a constant interest in the growth of the government he had helped to establish.

[A copy of Pierce's autobiography and a number of his letters are in the N. H. Hist. Soc. Biographical sketches appear in the *Farmer's Monthly Visitor*, Apr. 15, 1839, p. 49, and July 1852, p. 193. An obituary appeared in *N. H. Patriot and State Gazette*, Apr. 8, 1839. See also A. S. Batchellor, ed., "Early State Papers of N. H.," *N. H. State Papers*, vols. XXI, XXII (1892–93); G. W. Browne, *The Hist. of Hillsborough, N. H., 1735–1921* (2 vols., 1921–22); F. B. Pierce, *Pierce Genealogy . . . the Posterity of Thomas Pierce* (1882).]

R. F. N.

PIERCE, EDWARD LILLIE (Mar. 29, 1829–Sept. 5, 1897), lawyer and biographer, brother of Henry Lillie Pierce [*q.v.*], was born at Stoughton, Mass., where his father, Jesse, was a farmer, militia colonel, and sometime teacher and legislator. His mother, Elizabeth, was the daughter of Maj. John Lillie of the staff of Gen. Henry Knox. Pierce always took a keen in-

terest in his family history, which on both sides ran back to the earliest days of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was educated by his father and in the academies at Bridgewater and Easton. He graduated from Brown University in 1850 and from the Harvard Law School two years later. At both institutions he was a prize essayist. As a boy he heard Charles Sumner deliver his address on "The True Grandeur of Nations," and later paved the way to a personal acquaintance by sending him some college essays. Sumner's friendship became one of the deepest influences in his life. On leaving the law school Pierce spent some time in Salmon P. Chase's law office in Cincinnati and later was his secretary in Washington. In 1855 he returned to Boston. In these years before the war he emerged from his Democratic and Free-Soil background to become active in Republican politics; he attended his first national convention in 1860. In the first week of the war he enlisted for three months as a private in the 3rd Massachusetts Regiment and participated in the destruction of the Norfolk Navy Yard. In July he was placed in charge of General Butler's "contraband" negroes at Fortress Monroe. In 1866 Secretary Chase sent him to Port Royal, S. C., to supervise the raising of cotton by freedmen (*The Negroes at Port Royal: Report of E. L. Pierce,* 1862, and *The Freedmen of Port Royal, S. C., Official Reports,* 1863). He declined the appointment as military governor of South Carolina.

Pierce held many civil offices: collector of internal revenue at Boston, 1864–66; district attorney of Norfolk and Plymouth counties, 1866–70; secretary of the Board of State Charities, 1870–74; member of the legislature in 1875, 1876, and again in 1897. From 1888 to 1897, except for the year 1894, he was annually chosen moderator of the Milton town meeting. During his second term in the legislature he carried through an important act to limit municipal indebtedness. In 1871 he was nominated but not confirmed as judge of the superior court. He declined an offer of an assistant treasurership from President Hayes. He had large capacities for public service and aspired to a seat in Congress, but he lacked the faculty of vote-getting, and when he was nominated for Representative in 1890 he was defeated. For many years he lectured in the Boston Law School. Sumner named Pierce one of his literary executors, and after the other two executors, Henry W. Longfellow and Francis V. Balch, had declined the opportunity to write an official biography, Pierce undertook the task. The first two volumes appeared in 1877; the latter two he was not able to complete until 1893. The painstaking preparation involved the examination of many thousand letters, and of newspaper files and congressional debates for a quarter-century. In the estimation of James Ford Rhodes, "one of the most truthful of men, was fortunate in having one of the most honest of biographers" (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 2 ser. XII, 1899, p. 11).

Pierce was married to Elizabeth H. Kingsbury of Providence, R. I., on Apr. 19, 1865. She died on Mar. 30, 1880, leaving five sons and a daughter. On Mar. 8, 1882, he was married to Maria L. Woodhead of Huddersfield, England. They had a son and a daughter. He died while on a visit to Paris. It was one of his marked characteristics that he sought and was received into the society of famous men. In almost a score of trips to Europe he came to know many notables, most important in his regard being John Bright. In his profession he became an authority on railroad law. His published writings include, besides his *Memoir and Letters of Charles Sumner, A Treatise on American Railroad Law* (1857); *Index of the Special Railroad Laws of Massachusetts* (1874); *A Treatise on the Law of Railroads* (1881); *Major John Lillie, 1755–1801* (1896), and *Enfranchisement and Citizenship: Addresses and Papers* (1896).

[See J. F. Rhodes, "Memoir of Edward L. Pierce," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser. XVIII (1905); G. F. Hoar, "Edward Lillie Pierce," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* New Ser. vol. XII (1899); Remarks of A. B. Hart in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser. XIII (1900); *Dinner Commemorative of Chas. Sumner and Complimentary to Edward L. Pierce, Boston, Dec. 29, 1894* (1895); F. C. Peirce, *Peirce Geneal.* (1880); *Boston Transcript,* Sept. 7, 1897.] C. F.

PIERCE, FRANKLIN (Nov. 23, 1804–Oct. 8, 1869), fourteenth president of the United States, was of English ancestry. The son of Benjamin Pierce [*q.v.*] and Anna Kendrick, he was born at Hillsborough, N. H., on the New England frontier. His father not only gave him a good education at Bowdoin College, where he was in the class of 1824, but also thoroughly imbued him with nationalism and military interests and provided him with an excellent start in law and politics. He studied law under Levi Woodbury at Portsmouth, attended the law school of Judge Howe at Northampton, Mass., and was admitted to the bar of Hillsborough County in 1827. Immediately he entered politics, and in 1829 he was elected a member of the New Hampshire General Court at the same time that his father was elected governor of the state for a second term. With this auspicious start he served four years in the legislature and in spite of his youth was

speaker in 1831 and 1832. In 1833 he was elected to Congress and after two terms in the House was sent to the Senate (1837–42). During his nine years' service in the two houses of Congress he made few speeches but was diligent in committee. He was a loyal, consistent Jacksonian Democrat who followed his party leaders without question on all issues except internal improvements, to which he was ever opposed. He consistently respected Southern rights and developed a settled antipathy for political abolitionists, whom he considered dangerous trouble makers who might bring about the destruction of the Union. While he was an ardent nationalist, he believed in promoting the public welfare by harmonizing the conflicting ideas of the sections.

The last years of his service in the Senate were very distasteful. His wife, Jane Means Appleton, daughter of Jesse Appleton [*q.v.*], former president of Bowdoin College, whom he had married Nov. 19, 1834, was not well and disliked congressional life, especially as her husband's convivial nature was on occasion too much stimulated by the gay life of the capital. The needs of his growing family could not be fully met as a politician, so he resigned from the Senate in 1842 and joined his family in Concord, N. H. In the course of the next ten years he became a noted local lawyer, largely because of his success with juries. His clear and simple statement of legal principles, combined with oratorical skill and personal magnetism, made him convincing. Though but of middle height, he cultivated an erect military bearing; he dressed well and was considered handsome; and he was studiously polite in manner. He delighted in approbation and sought to attune himself to the spirit of any gathering in which he participated. As a result he was popular, whether in polite society or at hotel bars and political caucuses.

From 1842 to 1847 he managed most of the local Democratic campaigns, enforcing strict discipline to keep the party united and victorious. His discipline of John P. Hale [*q.v.*] for opposing the annexation of Texas, however, was a boomerang, for, as a result, a fusion of Whigs and free-soil Democrats defeated Pierce's party in 1846 for the first time since 1828. Polk in the meantime had appointed him district attorney for New Hampshire, and in August 1846 invited him to become attorney general. Pierce declined this offer as well as an appointment to the Senate. He enlisted for the Mexican War as a private but was not called to service until 1847, when he was appointed colonel and then brigadier-general. He led an army from Vera Cruz to join Scott in his attack on Mexico city but

Pierce

because of accident and illness was prevented from effectual participation in the battles that followed. As soon as the war was over he resigned from the army.

Returning to local politics in defense of the compromise measures of 1850, he took the lead (1850–51) in disciplining a gubernatorial candidate, John Atwood, who appeared to repudiate the Fugitive-slave Law, and attracted much Southern attention. When New Hampshire's candidate for the Democratic presidential nomination, Levi Woodbury, died in 1851, some of the local bosses thought of proposing Pierce's name. The active campaigns of Buchanan, Douglas, Marcy, and the friends of Cass seemed to show clearly that none of these rivals could secure the required two-thirds of the convention of 1852. Pierce's friends carefully planned to take advantage of this situation. He himself was not enthusiastic and did little to aid them except write a letter pledging loyalty to the compromise measures. Their plans, however, were successful. After many ballots the national convention was hopelessly deadlocked and at the suggestion of New England delegates the Southern bloc finally agreed to try Pierce's name; Dobbin of North Carolina led a successful stampede in his favor. William R. D. King [*q.v.*], a friend of Buchanan, was then nominated for the vice-presidency. The platform pledged the party to abide by the compromise measures of 1850.

During the campaign, Pierce made no speeches. No issues were presented either by the opposition candidates, Winfield Scott, Whig, and John P. Hale, Free-Soiler, or by his own party, so pointless personalities were the chief materials for press writers and orators. Pierce carried every state but four although his popular majority over the field was small, less than 50,000 out of 3,100,000 votes. While he was busy with the perplexing problems of framing his inaugural address and choosing his cabinet, he was in a railroad accident and suffered the unutterable horror of seeing his only remaining son, a lad of eleven, killed before his eyes. This terrible event completely unnerved Pierce and his wife. He was compelled to enter upon the trying duties of the presidency in a state of nervous exhaustion.

Determined to make permanent the party harmony that had been displayed in his triumphant election, Pierce decided to regard all who had voted for him in 1852 as Democrats worthy of patronage. He made up a cabinet representing all sections: William L. Marcy of New York, James Guthrie of Kentucky, Jefferson Davis of Mississippi, Caleb Cushing of Massachusetts, James Campbell of Pennsylvania, James C. Dob-

bin of North Carolina, Robert McClelland of Michigan [*qq.v.*]. With their aid he endeavored to distribute the patronage equitably among all sections and all factions. The policies of his administration were to be strictly orthodox: a vigorous foreign policy; *laissez-faire* and a respect for state rights in domestic matters; economy and honest administration. His foreign policy was to consist of a vigorous defense of American rights, especially against British or French encroachment, and a wide expansion of American interests, territorial and commercial. He set out to make Great Britain live up to his interpretation of the Clayton-Bulwer treaty by withdrawing from Nicaragua and Honduras. He also was anxious to settle the Newfoundland fisheries dispute which made naval forces necessary at the fishing grounds and might easily lead to trouble. James Buchanan was sent to England to settle the Central American problem, while Secretary of State Marcy concluded in Washington in June 1854 a treaty whereby the United States granted Canada commercial reciprocity and in return obtained favorable fishing rights. James Gadsden was sent to Mexico to purchase land for a right of way for a southern railroad to the Pacific and negotiated in December 1853 the purchase known by his name. The outbreak of the Crimean War and a change in Spanish politics together with the *Black Warrior* incident convinced Pierce and Marcy in April 1854 that the time was ripe for another attempt to purchase Cuba, so Pierre Soulé, minister to Spain, was instructed to make an offer to that country. At the same time, negotiations were begun to acquire Hawaii and a naval base in Santo Domingo, and inquiries were made of Russia about purchasing Alaska.

Pierce sought to reduce the treasury surplus by paying off the debt and urging upon Congress a lower tariff. He recommended a larger army and navy and suggested plans for better organization, better discipline, and better officers. Plans were drawn up for improving the services of the interior and post-office departments, getting rid of the deficit in the latter, and creating a new department of law for the attorney general. Western development and military efficiency were to be promoted by government aid to a railroad to the Pacific. Sectionalism was to be banished from government and politics. Such were Pierce's plans, few of which he was destined to carry out.

In the first place, his policy of recognizing all factions of his party proved disastrous, for when he attempted to make the New York leaders recognize former Free-Soilers he raised so much opposition in the South that it was doubtful whether the Senate would confirm some of his appointees. Worse still was the unexpected revival of the slavery issue. The leading Democratic senators were interested in a bill to organize Kansas and Nebraska as territories and to repeal the Missouri Compromise. They needed executive aid to insure its passage, so through Jefferson Davis they arranged a conference. They convinced Pierce that the measure was indorsed by the platform of 1852 and he, realizing the necessity of Senate approval of his appointments and foreign policies, accepted it. The Kansas-Nebraska bill became law. The Senate ratified the Gadsden and Canadian reciprocity treaties and confirmed his appointees. However, Congress was so distracted by the fight over the Kansas bill that practically none of his legislative policies were adopted. On the negative side, he was successful in his effort to prevent legislative jobbery and the appropriation of government money for subsidy purposes. His vetoes, in this session, of a large land grant for the ultimate benefit of the indigent insane (Nichols, *post*, p. 349) and of a general rivers and harbors bill, and his refusal, in the next, to sign bills satisfying the French spoliation claims and continuing a subsidy to the Collins steamship line, were all sustained by Congress. Finally, in the last session of his first Congress, some proposals looking to the reform and enlargement of the army and navy were acted upon favorably. During the summer of 1854 popular opinion in the North flared up at the repeal of the Missouri Compromise and new political organizations, anti-Nebraska and anti-Catholic, prepared the ground for the germination of the Republican party; in the meantime the Democrats were badly defeated in the congressional elections of that year. His second Congress paid scant heed to Pierce's recommendations.

In this unfortunate period, Pierce's worst disappointments were diplomatic. Negotiations with Great Britain over Central America were hampered when in July 1854 Captain Hollins destroyed a British protectorate, Grey Town, Nicaragua, in retaliation for an insult to the American minister. The hope of acquiring Cuba was blasted by blunders. In August 1854 Marcy authorized Pierre Soulé [*q.v.*], the minister to Spain, to consult about Cuba with the ministers to Great Britain and France, James Buchanan and John Y. Mason [*qq.v.*]. The conference was held in October, at Ostend and Aix-la-Chapelle. It was supposed to be secret, but, unfortunately, news of it leaked out. The tangible results were a somewhat ambiguous report prepared by Bu-

chanan, signed Oct. 18 by the three ministers, and a covering letter from Soulé, in which he intimated that French and British preoccupation with the Crimean War might make this an opportune time to consider acquiring Cuba, if necessary by force. Word of all this in garbled form was featured in the American press in October and November; Northern prejudices were further aroused against acquiring Cuba; and the loss of Congress by the Democrats put the acquisition of the island beyond the realm of possibility. The plans for annexing Hawaii and securing a coaling station in Santo Domingo also failed.

Meanwhile, difficulties were piling up for Pierce in Kansas. Determined to administer the popular-sovereignty law as fairly as possible, he sought a Southern governor for Nebraska and a Northern executive for Kansas and divided the other offices equally between the sections. For governor of Kansas he chose Andrew H. Reeder [*q.v.*], a Pennsylvania lawyer. Reeder, however, entered into some illegal land operations in the Indian reserves which were especially distasteful to the administration, and was already due for discipline of some sort when trouble developed in the territory between the Northern and Southern settlers. Conditions became so bad that in the summer of 1855 Pierce removed the governor and two judges (one a Southerner) and had an army officer courtmartialed, all for land speculating.

By the fall of 1855 Pierce had rallied somewhat from these successive disappointments and was determined to seek renomination. He became more decisive in his actions and prepared his annual message of 1855 as his platform. It consisted of a vigorous condemnation of the new Republicans as sectionalist agitators, and a strong statement of nationalism. When the House of Representatives failed to organize in December he attempted, by means of vigorous messages describing the need for congressional action, to bring the Southern members of the American party to join the Democrats in supporting an anti-Republican candidate for speaker. In the meantime, civil war had broken out in Kansas. The free-soil group had organized a government independent of the president's territorial officers, and Missourians were threatening to invade Kansas in order to disperse this new organization. The situation became so desperate that in February Pierce issued a proclamation, on the one hand ordering the treasonable free-state government to disperse, and on the other commanding the Missourians to stay in Missouri. To back up this proclamation he placed federal troops at the

Pierce

disposal of Wilson Shannon [*q.v.*], his second governor.

During his campaign for renomination he also pursued a vigorous policy toward Great Britain. Late in December 1855, he had requested Great Britain to recall her minister, Crampton, for sponsoring in the United States the illegal recruiting of troops to be used in the Crimea; after a series of unsatisfactory negotiations he dismissed him summarily, meanwhile continuing negotiations in regard to Central America. These decisive acts showed a more vigorous grasp of the problems of administration but they were not sufficient to restore popularity. The Democratic convention of 1856, uncertain as to the strength of the newly organized Republican party, fell back upon the idea that an old, tried, conservative, and safe man alone could save them from defeat; so they nominated James Buchanan who had been abroad during the heated controversies of the preceding years. Pierce was bitterly disappointed at the result but turned himself whole-heartedly to settling up as many of the problems of the nation as he could before March 4. In Kansas more bloodshed was imminent. Pierce still endeavored to be impartial and to give support to the regular and legal (though pro-slavery) territorial government. He maintained troops in Kansas, and removed Shannon, whose successor, John W. Geary [*q.v.*], went vigorously to work and by October could report, "Peace now reigns in Kansas." The difficulty with the British was finally settled as far as Pierce was concerned by the negotiation of the Dallas-Clarendon treaty in which Great Britain, indirectly and without apology, agreed to leave Central America except for British Honduras; the treaty later failed of ratification. Pierce retired, regretting that Congress had failed to carry out most of his recommendations for administrative reform, but rejoicing in the fact that his party was still in power and had regained Congress.

After his release from responsibility he made an extended tour of Europe and then settled down in Concord, N. H. As the Civil War approached he still deplored the "folly" of the Republicans but resented the hasty action of the South in leaving the Union. At first he gave lukewarm support to the government but it was not long before he was bitterly opposing the Lincoln administration because of its usurpations and destruction of personal and property rights. He became very unpopular even at home and died in social and political obscurity. As a national political leader Pierce was an accident. He was honest and tenacious of his views but, as he made

up his mind with difficulty and often reversed himself before making a final decision, he gave a general impression of instability. Kind, courteous, generous, he attracted many individuals, but his attempts to satisfy all factions failed and made him many enemies. In carrying out his principles of strict construction he was most in accord with Southerners, who generally had the letter of the law on their side. He failed utterly to realize the depth and the sincerity of Northern feeling against the South and was bewildered at the general flouting of the law and the Constitution, as he described it, by the people of his own New England. At no time did he catch the popular imagination. His inability to cope with the difficult problems that arose early in his administration caused him to lose the respect of great numbers, especially in the North, and his few successes failed to restore public confidence. He was an inexperienced man, suddenly called to assume a tremendous responsibility, who honestly tried to do his best without adequate training or temperamental fitness.

[More complete details are found in R. F. Nichols, *Franklin Pierce. Young Hickory of the Granite Hills* (1931), which contains an extended bibliography. The Pierce MSS. are divided into three parts, one in Lib. of Cong., one in N. H. Hist. Soc., one in possession of the family. A large file of Pierce letters is in the Burke MSS., Lib. of Cong., and a smaller group in the Lawrence MSS., Mass. Hist. Soc. The collections most valuable for a study of Pierce's administration are the Marcy Collection, Lib. of Cong., and the Buchanan Papers, Hist. Soc. of Pa. His ancestry is described in F. B. Pierce, *Pierce Genealogy* (1882), and his early life in the campaign biographies by Hawthorne (1852) and D. W. Bartlett (1852), and in J. R. Irelan, *The Republic*, vol. XIV (1888), "Hist. of the Life, Administration, and Times of Franklin Pierce." The records of his early political life are found in the N. H. local newspapers, especially the *New Hampshire Patriot*. His Mexican War Diary is in the Huntington Library (photostat copy in Lib. of Cong.). His legal career is best summed up in Davis Cross, "Franklin Pierce the Lawyer," *Proc. of the Bar Asso. of the State of N. H.*, vol. I, no. 1 (1900). The situation in his party which produced his nomination is detailed in R. F. Nichols, *The Democratic Machine, 1850–1854* (1923). His diplomacy is best described in S. F. Bemis, ed., *The American Secretaries of State and Their Diplomacy*, vol. VI (1928), article by H. B. Learned on "William Learned Marcy." Materials on the administrative history of his presidential term are in the archives of the various departments and in the attorney general's MSS. in Lib. of Cong. The newspapers most valuable for comment on his policies are the Washington *Star*, the *Washington Union*, the Baltimore *Sun*, and the *New York Herald*.] R. F. N.

PIERCE, GEORGE FOSTER (Feb. 3, 1811–Sept. 3, 1884), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, educator, was born in Greene County, Ga. His parents were Lovick Pierce, a well-known Methodist preacher, and Ann (Foster) Pierce. In 1826 he entered Franklin College, Athens, where he was graduated with honors in 1829. He began the study of law in the office of his uncle, Thomas Foster, but feeling called to preach, abandoned his legal studies and in January 1831 was admitted on trial to the Georgia Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church. His ability as a preacher was immediately recognized and within the next five years he served such leading stations as Augusta and Savannah, Ga., and Charleston, S. C. At the age of twenty-five he was presiding elder of the Augusta district. On Feb. 4, 1834, he married Ann Maria Waldron of Savannah, and to this union seven children were born. In 1838 Pierce was elected president of Georgia Female College (now Wesleyan College), at Macon, the first American college for women empowered by charter to confer a degree. Endeavoring to arouse public sentiment in favor of female education, he presented his views in the *Southern Ladies' Book*, which for ten months in 1840 he edited. It cannot be said that he made a success in his initial attempt as a college executive; he refused to discontinue his evangelistic activities even while president, and as a result the work of the college was somewhat neglected. In 1840 he resigned the presidency, although he served for two years thereafter as the financial agent of the institution.

Upon his return to the itinerancy in 1842 Pierce became recognized as the leading preacher of the Georgia Conference. He was a delegate to the General Conferences of 1840 and 1844, and at the latter conference, which marked the division of the Church, Pierce, although only thirty-three years old, was one of the outstanding leaders in the defense of Bishop J. O. Andrew and one of the chief spokesmen of the viewpoint of the Southern clergy on the slavery issue. He was a member of the convention held at Louisville, Ky., in May 1845, which organized the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, and was a delegate to the General Conferences of 1846, 1850, and 1854. In 1848 he returned to the educational field as president of Emory College, Oxford, Ga. Here he remained until 1854, when he was elected bishop. Upon his elevation to the episcopacy he moved to his plantation, "Sunshine," near Sparta, Ga., which with the exception of one year was his home until his death. It was at "Sunshine" during his spare moments that he had opportunity to engage in his hobby of agriculture. Prior to the Civil War he took little part in politics, but at the outbreak of armed hostilities he held that the Southern states were justified in secession and during the war he devoted a large part of his time to the raising of food supplies for the Confederate army.

As a bishop, he was noted for his pulpit oratory

and his kindness to the preachers, but was often in conflict with the progressive groups in his denomination. He believed in retaining the characteristics of early Methodism. He fought against granting lay representation, and opposed the pew system, long pastorates, choirs, and the establishment of a theological seminary for the Southern church. Concerning the latter proposal he wrote in 1872: "It is my opinion that every dollar invested in a theological school will be a damage to Methodism. Had I a million, I would not give a dime for such an object" (Smith, *post*, p. 558). He resisted all moves leading toward the organic union of the two branches of Episcopal Methodism. Pierce's writings consisted mainly of open letters to the religious periodicals of his denomination. Much of his work as bishop was done in the Western conferences, and his experiences on these trips were related in a series of letters published in the *Southern Christian Advocate*. Some of these were collected in 1857 under the title *Incidents of Western Travel*, edited by T. O. Summers, and in 1886, *Bishop Pierce's Sermons and Addresses*, edited by A. G. Haygood, appeared. He kept a diary between the years 1836 and 1866, and left in manuscript an account of the early life of his father.

[G. G. Smith, *The Life and Times of George Foster Pierce* (1888); "Bishop Pierce as a Farmer," *Meth. Quart. Rev.*, Apr. 1921; "Bishop George F. Pierce," in *Quart. Rev. Meth. Episc. Church, South*, Oct. 1884; O. P. Fitzgerald, *Bishop George F. Pierce* (1896); *Obsequies of George Foster Pierce* (1884); *Atlanta Constitution*, Sept. 4, 1884.] P. N. G.

PIERCE, GILBERT ASHVILLE (Jan. 11, 1839–Feb. 15, 1901), author, governor of Dakota Territory, and first senator from North Dakota, was born in East Otto, Cattaraugus County, N. Y., the son of Sylvester and Mary Olive (Treat) Pierce, both natives of New York. He received a common-school education, and, when the family removed to Indiana in 1854, he became a clerk for his father in a general store ten miles south of Valparaiso. In 1858 he married Anne Maria Bartholomew and removed to Valparaiso, where he began to read law. He studied in the old University of Chicago for two years and was later admitted to practice in Indiana. When the Civil War broke out he enlisted in the 9th Indiana Volunteers and was elected second-lieutenant. At the end of the three months' term of enlistment, Lincoln appointed him captain and assistant quartermaster. He served under General Grant in the West until the capture of Vicksburg. In November 1863 he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and served at Matagorda Island, Tex. The following year he was appointed inspector of the quartermaster's department with the rank of colonel. After serving in South Carolina he was ordered to the department of the Gulf, where he remained till the close of the war. After retiring from the army he again took up his residence in Valparaiso and devoted himself to law and journalism. In 1869 he was a member of the Indiana House of Representatives. At the close of his term he became secretary to Oliver P. Morton [*q.v.*]. This brought him into contact with a more influential group of public men, among whom he was soon well and favorably known. He kept up his interest in journalism and was a correspondent on several important dailies. For two years he served as assistant financial clerk in the United States Senate but resigned in 1871. Shortly after this he returned to Valparaiso and in 1872 obtained a place on the editorial staff of the Chicago *Inter Ocean* through the good offices of E. W. Halford, then editor of this paper. He had considerable literary ability and was the author of a number of books. In 1872 he published *The Dickens Dictionary*, which went through several editions and is now issued uniformly with the library edition of Dickens by Houghton Mifflin Company. In 1876 he published *Zachariah, the Congressman* and in 1883 *A Dangerous Woman*. Both novels were on Washington political life, ran through two editions, and were highly praised by the critics of the time. One of his plays, *One Hundred Wives* (1880), was a still greater success and was played for two seasons by De Wolf Hopper, as leading actor, with the Gosche-Hopper Company.

After serving as managing editor of the *Inter Ocean* for a number of years, he became a member of the editorial staff of the *Chicago Daily News*. He took an active part in the Republican campaigns of 1880 and 1884 and was especially prominent in the movement to nominate President Arthur at the Republican convention of 1884. When the need arose for a new governor of the territory of Dakota, he was named as the most available man for the position. He was at this time a national figure of considerable prominence with many friends in the Northwest and at Washington. He accepted the position in 1884 and moved his family to Bismarck, then a frontier city just coming into notice as the political center of the new territory. It was during his administration that the governor's guard was organized, and this group of young business men of Bismarck afterward became Company A of the territorial militia. In November 1886 he resigned his position. During his four years of

service he made an important place for himself in the territory. His fine presence and magnetic personality as well as his administrative ability made him the natural leader of his party at this time. When the territory was divided in 1889 he was chosen as one of the senators from North Dakota. The short term fell to him, and he stood for reëlection in 1891. Owing to a misunderstanding over senatorial patronage he found himself opposed by a group of state politicians, chief among whom was Alexander McKenzie. They were able to control the elections for members of the House and the Senate, and he lost the election to his opponent, Henry Clay Hansbrough. His defeat for reëlection closed his political career.

In 1891 he moved his family to Minneapolis and devoted himself, thereafter, to the field of journalism. He was first connected with the *Daily Pioneer Press* as special writer in the Dakota department, but later he became half owner and publisher, with W. J. Murphy, of the *Minneapolis Tribune*. Failure of health, in the fall of 1891, compelled him to give up his editorial work and seek a warmer climate, first in Florida and then in Colorado. On Jan. 6, 1893, he was appointed by President Harrison as minister to Portugal but was compelled to resign on Apr. 26, on account of continued lack of health. On his return to Minneapolis he found himself unable to continue his editorial work. He died at the Lexington Hotel, Chicago.

[A. T. Andreas, *Hist. of Chicago*, vol. III (1886); *The Biog. Encyc. of Ill.* (1875); *Biog. Directory of Am. Cong.* (1928); *Once a Clown, Always a Clown: Reminiscences of De Wolf Hopper*, written in collaboration with W. W. Stout (1927), p. 15; information from son, Paul A. Pierce, N. Y. City; *Minneapolis Tribune*, Feb. 16, 1901.] O. G. L.

PIERCE, HENRY LILLIE (Aug. 23, 1825–Dec. 17, 1896), manufacturer of cocoa, mayor of Boston, congressman, was born in Stoughton, Mass., the son of Jesse Pierce and Elizabeth Lillie and a descendant of John Pers (or Peirce) who emigrated to New England in 1637. Edward Lillie Pierce [*q.v.*] was his younger brother. The father was ultra-conscientious and sensitive; the mother was more forceful, plain-spoken, and with strong prejudices. This environment was scarcely cheerful, but it was tempered with fair educational advantages at home and at Bridgewater and Milton academies. At seventeen, Pierce suffered an illness which ended his formal education and from which he never fully recovered. Even as early as this, however, his interest in public affairs showed itself in the form of contributions to the county paper. By 1848 he was serving as a member of the school committee of Stoughton and was working hard

Pierce

for the Free-Soil party in the national elections. This interest in freeing the slaves was for some time the dominant note in his outlook on public affairs. For a number of years he engaged in light farm work but in 1849 he moved to Dorchester and there worked in the cocoa factory of his uncle, Walter Baker. Save for one short period, this association continued till his death. In 1854, after the death of Baker and his partner, Sidney B. Williams, the trustees leased the plant to Pierce. From that time till his death he worked to make and then to keep his factory the leader in its field, and saw its business grow forty times over. In 1884 he became full owner of the plant. He was progressive in his methods and constantly alert to discover and introduce improved processes. In all the years he never had any trouble with his employees. He took particular pride in the fact that his products were awarded a gold medal at the Paris Exposition of 1867.

Pierce's political career included four years as representative to the General Court, where he served as chairman of its committee on finance in 1862; three years (1869–71) as alderman of Boston; two years (1872, 1877) as mayor of Boston, and two terms, from 1873 to 1877, as a member of Congress. He opposed the Know-Nothing movement at the height of its power. As mayor he set his face against the vested interests in administration which had been acquired by the city council. He was instrumental in furthering the movement, general throughout the country, which resulted in the transfer of administration from committees of the council to boards set up for special purposes. The health and fire departments were so reorganized during his first term and the police department during his second. These boards were made responsible to the mayor, and he restored to that office its former prestige. In Congress his chief service was as a member of the committee on commerce and was directed toward relieving coastal vessels from state pilotage fees. In the Hayes-Tilden controversy, he and one other Massachusetts Representative were the only Republicans to vote to throw out the Louisiana electoral vote which the electoral commission had counted for Hayes. His voluntary retirement from Congress soon followed as he found himself in many ways out of harmony with his party. In the 1884 campaign he refused to support Blaine and from then till 1896, in presidential elections, he voted with the Democrats. In 1887 he became president of the Massachusetts Tariff Reform League, which was formed to secure general reductions in the tariff. His refreshing sincerity and independence made him a more than usually out-

standing local personality at a time when public life generally throughout the country was at a low ebb.

Pierce was a man who acted upon impulses, often odd ones. He masked his keen judgment behind a kindly and innocent-appearing exterior. Wendell Phillips said of him that if Diogenes came to Boston he would find his honest man in the mayor's chair. Particularly in his later years, he became a liberal giver, especially to struggling colored schools in the South and to small Western colleges. He never married, and at his death more than half his large estate was carefully apportioned to various charitable, educational, and religious institutions. In the latter group, he left money to Catholic and Unitarian churches alike.

[J. M. Bugbee, "Memoir of Henry Lillie Pierce," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. XI (1897); Justin Winsor, ed., *The Memorial Hist. of Boston*, vol. III (1881); T. T. Munger, "An American Citizen: The Late Henry L. Pierce," the *Century*, July 1897; "A Model Citizen," the *Critic*, Jan. 9, 1897; *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 18, 1896; *Boston Herald*, Dec. 18, 19, 1896.] E. S. G.

PIERCE, JOHN DAVIS (Feb. 18, 1797–Apr. 5, 1882), Congregational clergyman, educator, was born in Chesterfield, N. H., of old New England stock. His father, Gad Pierce, died two years after John's birth, leaving the mother, Sarah (Davis) Pierce, with two small children and no provision for their livelihood. John was sent to his paternal grandfather in Worcester County, Mass., with whom he spent a cheerless childhood. At the grandfather's death when he was ten years old, the boy went to work on his uncle's farm. Only eight weeks a year of schooling were permitted him, but at twenty he determined to seek an education, bought a Latin grammar, and began its study under the kindly tutelage of Rev. Enoch Pond [*q.v.*]. In less than a year, with his grandfather's legacy of $100 which he received upon attaining his majority, he was able to enter Brown University. He spent a portion of each year in teaching, and graduated in 1822. After another year of teaching in an academy at Wrentham, Mass., he studied for a few months in Princeton Theological Seminary. In 1825 he was ordained and became pastor of a Congregational church in Sangerfield, Oneida County, N. Y. He was a Freemason, and in 1830 this pastorate was terminated by the fury of the Anti-Masonic movement. Pierce thereupon accepted a call to service as a missionary in Michigan. In the fall of 1831 he moved his family to the little pioneer settlement of Marshall, Mich., where there were fewer than a dozen houses but the settlers included eight college men. His second day in Marshall being Sunday, he conducted church services in a log dwelling, and he is said to have been the first Protestant clergyman to solemnize a marriage or conduct a funeral in Western Michigan (Cooley, *post*, p. 318).

When the state government of Michigan was organized in 1836, Pierce was appointed superintendent of public instruction. The first work devolving upon him in this office was to draft plans for the organization of the primary schools and the state university and for the disposal of public-school lands. In preparation for this work he went East to consult eminent educators, Edward Everett [*q.v.*] and others, and after intensive study he presented a plan which was adopted by the legislature with virtually no change. This plan forms the basis of the present school system of Michigan and the foundation of its university. While superintendent of public instruction Pierce began the publication of the *Journal of Education* (1838–40), the first educational paper in the old Northwest Territory.

In 1841 he returned to Marshall to resume the life of a village preacher. In 1847 he was elected to the state legislature and in 1850 served on a committee to frame a new state constitution. This work was the end of his public career. Impaired health forced him soon afterward to retire to a farm near Ypsilanti. He contributed a paper on the "Origin and Progress of the Michigan School System" to the *Pioneer Collections: Report of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan* (vol. I, 1877). Though physically feeble, he retained his mental powers, and his interest in education remained alert until his death, which occurred in Medford, Mass. He was buried in Marshall, Mich. Pierce was married three times: on Feb. 1, 1825, to Millicent Estabrook of Holden, Mass.; on Oct. 28, 1829, to Mary Ann Cleveland of Madison, N. Y.; and in 1833 to Harriet, daughter of Calvin and Elizabeth (Barrett) Reed of Waterville, N. Y. She, with two of his four children, survived him.

[*Mich. Biogs.*, vol. II (1924); *Am. Biog. Hist. of Eminent and Self-Made Men, Mich. Vol.* (1878); C. O. Hoyt and R. C. Ford, *John D. Pierce* (1905); T. M. Cooley, *Mich., A Hist. of Govts.* (1885); G. L. Jackson, *The Development of State Control of Public Instruction in Mich.* (1926); A. C. McLaughlin, *Hist. of Higher Educ. in Mich.* (1891); *Hist. of Calhoun County, Mich.* (1877); *The Congreg. Year Book*, 1883; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Apr. 6, 1882; *Providence Daily Journal*, June 21, 1882.] R. H. E.

PIERCE, WILLIAM LEIGH (*c.* 1740–Dec. 10, 1789), Revolutionary soldier, member of the Federal Convention, was born probably in Georgia, although he entered the Continental Army as from Virginia and spoke of himself as a Virginian (*Magazine of American History*, De-

cember 1881, p. 439). Nothing is known of his parents and his early life. About 1783 he married Charlotte, daughter of Edward Fenwick, of South Carolina. One of their two sons died as a child and the other was William Leigh Pierce, author of a volume of verse, *The Year*, published in 1813. During the war, William Pierce—as he is known in contemporary documents—served as aide-de-camp to General Greene, and for his conduct at the battle of Eutaw Springs on Sept. 8, 1781, received the thanks of Congress and was presented with a sword. He left the army as a brevet major in 1783, and engaged in business in Savannah, Ga., as the head of the house of William Pierce & Company.

In 1786 he was elected to the Continental Congress, took his seat in January 1787, and attended the sessions until late in May. His chief claim to remembrance, however, is as a member of the Federal Convention at Philadelphia. He was elected one of Georgia's delegates in the early spring of 1787 and took his place on May 31, six days after the opening session. Although he played no conspicuous rôle in the proceedings of the Convention, he was not without influence. He took part in the debates on three different occasions, speaking once in favor of the election of the first branch of a federal legislature by the people and of the second branch by the states; he spoke again favoring a three-year term instead of a seven-year term for the second branch; and finally, he recommended the strengthening of the federal government as against the state governments. In a letter to St. George Tucker, of Virginia, he registered his general impressions of the Convention and his approval of the new Constitution. Parts of this letter appeared in the *Georgia Gazette*, Mar. 20, 1788 (reprinted in *American Historical Review*, January 1898). He left the Convention in the midst of the proceedings and did not return to sign the finished document. Business misfortunes and the subsequent failure of his firm probably account for his absence.

Pierce's notes on the Convention debates add little to the information contained in the notes of Madison, Yates, and King. They were first published in the *Savannah Georgian*, Apr. 19, 21–26, and 28, 1828, and were printed in the *American Historical Review*, January 1898, from a bound volume of personal papers in manuscript known as "Pierce's Reliques." Much more important are the character sketches which he wrote about his fellow members. They are short, pithy, and decidedly readable. Even more valuable than the descriptions of leaders such as Madison and Franklin are his observations on less prominent delegates, who, without Pierce's comments, would be little more than names. As for his own character, he remarks simply that his readers are left "to consider it in any light that their fancy or imagination may depict."

[The manuscript volume of Pierce's papers is in the possession of a descendant of his widow. For additional data, see: Max Farrand, ed., *The Records of the Federal Convention of 1787* (3 vols., 1911); *Am. Hist. Rev.*, Jan. 1898; *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, Dec. 1881; D. C. Huger Smith, "An Account of the Tattnall and Fenwick Families in S. C.," *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.*, Jan. 1913; Fairfax Harrison, *The John's Island Stud* (1931); C. C. Jones, *Biog. Sketches of the Delegates from Ga. to the Cont. Cong.* (1891); W. B. Burroughs, sketch in *Men of Mark in Ga.*, vol. I (1907); A. D. Candler and C. A. Evans, ed., *Cyc. of Ga.* (1906); *Georgia Gazette*, Dec. 24, 1789.] E. K. A.

PIERPONT, FRANCIS HARRISON (Jan. 25, 1814–Mar. 24, 1899), governor of the "restored" state of Virginia, 1861–68, was the son of Francis and Catherine (Weaver) Pierpoint. The name was spelled Pierpoint by the Virginia branch of the family until 1881 when Francis Harrison returned to the older spelling, Pierpont. His grandfather, John Pierpont, removed from New York State in 1770 and established a farm near Morgantown, Monongalia County, in western Virginia. Here young Francis was born in 1814, but during the same year his father removed from the old homestead to the neighborhood of Fairmont, in what is now Marion County, W. Va. As the boy grew up he helped his father on the farm and in his tannery. In 1835 he entered Allegheny College, Meadville, Pa., and was graduated with the bachelor's degree in 1839. For two years he taught school in Virginia and in 1841 went to Mississippi to engage in the same occupation, but his father's poor health necessitated his return home the next year. Having read law in his spare time, he was now admitted to the bar. In 1848 he became local attorney for the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, and in 1853 engaged in mining and shipping coal.

From 1844 to 1860 Pierpont took an active interest in politics as an adherent of the Whig party, serving as a presidential elector on the Taylor ticket in 1848. Being an ardent anti-slavery and Union man, he supported Lincoln in 1860. When Virginia in 1861 decided in favor of secession, Pierpont organized a mass meeting at Wheeling in May which called a convention to meet in that town during the following month. This convention, holding that the secessionist officials of the state had vacated their offices, elected Pierpont provisional governor of Virginia. He thereupon organized the Unionist members of the legislature from the western counties into a rump legislature; a constitution

was framed, and the name West Virginia adopted. Representatives from this government were seated in the Federal Congress, and in 1863 the state was admitted to the Union. A new governor was elected for the new state, but meanwhile Pierpont had been granted a four-year term as governor of the "restored" state of Virginia; that is, governor of the few counties which were in Federal hands and not in West Virginia. He now moved his capital to Alexandria and carried on under military protection. Upon the fall of the Confederate government, he moved his capital to Richmond and became in fact the governor of Virginia. Under the Johnson régime he conducted the affairs of the state until the reconstruction act went into effect and he was replaced by a military commander on Apr. 16, 1868. While at the head of affairs in Richmond he did what he could to alleviate the suffering and the bitterness which oppressed the people during those ghastly years. Upon his retirement from office, he returned to his home in West Virginia and resumed the practice of law. Subsequently he sat for one term in the legislature (1870) and was collector of internal revenue under Garfield. He died in Pittsburgh, Pa., where for two years he had lived in the home of a daughter. He was buried at his home near Fairmont, W. Va.

Pierpont was apparently one of that large class of men who are selected as leaders in troubled times because they possess strength of conviction rather than strength of intellect. In 1910 a statue of him was placed by West Virginia in Statuary Hall at the United States Capitol. In 1854 he married Julia Augusta Robertson, daughter of Samuel and Dorcas (Platt) Robertson of New York.

[The material dealing with the establishment of West Virginia is voluminous and largely of a partisan nature; the best study is J. C. McGregor, *The Disruption of Va.* (1922). There are sketches of Pierpont in T. C. Miller and Hu Maxwell, *W. Va. and Its People* (1913), vol. II; M. V. Smith, *Va., A Hist. of the Executives* (1893); R. A. Brock, *Va. and Virginians* (1888), vol. I; L. G. Tyler, *Encyc. of Va. Biog.* (1915), vol. III; *Encyc. of Contemporary Biog. of W. Va.* (1894); *Statue of Gov. Francis Harrison Pierpont: Proc. in Statuary Hall* (1910), being *Sen. Doc. No. 656*, 61 Cong., 2 Sess.; F. S. Reader, *Hist. of the Fifth W. Va. Cavalry* (1890); *Pittsburgh Post*, Mar. 25, 1899; *Wheeling Register*, Mar. 25, 1899.] T. P. A.

PIERPONT, JAMES (Jan. 4, 1659/60–Nov. 22, 1714), Congregational clergyman, one of the founders of Yale College, was born in Roxbury, Mass., the son of John Pierpont and Thankful Stow, daughter of John Stow of Kent, England. John Pierpont, born at London in 1617, came to Massachusetts in 1640 and in 1656 purchased three hundred acres of land lying in what is now

Roxbury and Dorchester. His father, James, was a cousin of Robert Pierrepont, first Earl of Kingston, and owned a considerable estate in Derbyshire. The business in which he was engaged, involving trade with Ireland, was ruined during the Protectorate, and he came to America to visit his sons, Robert and John, where, at Ipswich, he died. His grandson, James, graduated from Harvard College in 1681. Recommended as "a godly man, a good scholar, a man of good parts, and likely to make a good instrument," he was invited in 1684 to preach as a candidate for the pastorate of the First Church, New Haven. He arrived in that town the following August, and his ministrations gave such satisfaction that he was urged to remain and a house was built and furnished for him. On July 2, 1685, he was ordained pastor, which office he held until his death a little more than twenty-nine years later. He married, Oct. 27, 1691, Abigail, daughter of John and Abigail (Pierson) Davenport, a grand-daughter of John Davenport and of the elder Abraham Pierson [*q.v.*]. The following February she died, her illness, it is said, having been caused by exposure to cold on the Sunday following her marriage, when she went to meeting attired, according to custom, in her wedding dress. On May 30, 1694, he married Sarah, daughter of Joseph and Sarah (Lord) Haynes, and a grand-daughter of Gov. John Haynes [*q.v.*]. She, too, died early, Oct. 7, 1696, leaving him a daughter, Abigail. His third wife, whom he married July 26, 1698, was Mary Hooker, daughter of Rev. Samuel Hooker and grand-daughter of Rev. Thomas Hooker [*q.v.*]. Sarah, a child of this union, married Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*].

Not of extraordinary intellectual endowment, but genuinely good and possessing personal charm, force of character, discretion, and sound judgment, Pierpont had a peaceful and successful pastorate and became highly influential in the colony. In the establishment of the Collegiate School of Connecticut, the beginning of Yale College, chartered in 1701, he was the leading spirit, and as one of the original trustees he, more than any other, directed its course through the critical opening years of its existence. He had much to do with shaping its charter and insuring the school against state or church control; he selected its first president; and through Jeremiah Dummer [*q.v.*] he secured a library for it from English benefactors and probably brought it to the attention of Elihu Yale. His influence in ecclesiastical affairs is attested by the fact that at the famous Saybrook Synod of 1708 he was one of the leading members and is

traditionally credited with having drawn up the original draft of the articles for the administration of church discipline, known as the "Saybrook Platform." His death came in his fifty-fifth year when he was at the height of his powers. One sermon, *Sundry False Hopes of Heaven, Discovered and Decryed,* preached at the North Assembly, Boston, on Apr. 3, 1711, was published with a preface by Cotton Mather the following year.

[R. B. Moffat, *Pierrepont Genealogies* (1913); Leonard Bacon, *Thirteen Hist. Discourses* (1839); J. L. Sibley, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Harvard Univ.*, vol. III (1885); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. I (1857); *New Haven Colony Hist. Soc. Papers,* vol. III (1882), vol. VII (1908); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll. with Annals of the College Hist.*, vol. I (1885); Edwin Oviatt, *The Beginnings of Yale* (1916).]

H. E. S.

PIERPONT, JOHN (Apr. 6, 1785–Aug. 27, 1866), Unitarian clergyman, poet, reformer, great-grandson of James Pierpont and grandfather of John Pierpont Morgan [*q.v.*], was born in Litchfield, Conn., the second of the ten children of James Pierpont, a clothier, by his wife, Elizabeth Collins. He graduated from Yale College in 1804, in the same class with John C. Calhoun, and, after assisting Azel Backus [*q.v.*] for a few months in an academy at Bethlehem, went to South Carolina as tutor, 1805–09, in the household of William Alston, father of Joseph Alston [*q.v.*]. On his return he studied in the Litchfield Law School under Tapping Reeve and James Gould [*qq.v.*] and on Sept. 23, 1810, married his fourth cousin, Mary Sheldon Lord, who bore him three sons and three daughters. Their eldest child was named for William Alston. Having been called to the bar in 1812, he opened a law office at Newburyport, Mass., and, in the leisure afforded by a total absence of clients, composed *The Portrait* (1812), a poem surcharged with Federalist sentiment, which he declaimed Oct. 27, 1812, before the Washington Benevolent Society of Newburyport. It brought him renown as a bard but no retainers, and in 1814 he and his brother-in-law, Joseph L. Lord, went into the retail dry-goods business in Boston and soon took John Neal [*q.v.*] into the firm. They started a branch in Baltimore and for a while the venture flourished, but the dizzy fluctuations of wartime prices were more than they could cope with, and in 1815 the business collapsed. Still in Baltimore, Pierpont published the next year his beautifully executed *Airs of Palestine* (Baltimore, 1816), which was reprinted twice in Boston in 1817, and which put him for the time being in the front rank of American poets. Two later volumes, *Airs of Palestine and Other Poems* (1840) and *The Anti-Slavery*

Pierpont

Poems of John Pierpont (1843), comprise the bulk of his verse. He was an accomplished prosodist. In some of the temperance pieces he is unintentionally humorous, but as the expression of a vigorous, witty, noble mind his poetry has character and is continuously interesting.

Having graduated in October 1818 from the Harvard Divinity School, he was ordained Apr. 14, 1819, as minister of the Hollis Street Church in Boston. He edited two school readers, *The American First Class Book* (1823) and *The National Reader* (1827), which went through many editions and were the first American readers to include selections from Shakespeare; visited Europe and Palestine in 1835–36; published various sermons and lectures; and grew steadily in reputation as an eloquent, thoughtful minister. His penchant for reform was also growing steadily. He worked for the abolition of the state militia and of imprisonment for debt; became an enthusiastic propagandist for phrenology and spiritualism; and pressed to the forefront of the peace, the anti-slavery, and the temperance movements. The pew-holders of the Hollis Street Church did not share these enthusiasms; their temper may be deduced from the fact that the church cellar was rented out to a rum merchant for a warehouse. Several rum merchants who did not attend Pierpont's preachings bought pews in the church; and in 1838 there began a concerted movement, known locally as the "Seven Years' War," to oust him. Pierpont resisted with wit, eloquence, pertinacity, and a fixed determination to maintain the freedom of the Unitarian pulpit. As the war proceeded it became an unscrupulous attempt to destroy his character. He was vindicated by an ecclesiastical council before which he was tried in July 1841, but his enemies continued their campaign against him. Finally, with his back salary paid in full and all the honors on his side, he resigned in 1845. Subsequently he was pastor of the newly organized First Unitarian Society of Troy, N. Y., 1845–49, and of the First Congregational (Unitarian) Church of West Medford, Mass., 1849–58. His first wife having died on Aug. 23, 1855, he married, on Dec. 8, 1857, Harriet Louise (Campbell) Fowler of Pawling, N. Y., who survived him. For two weeks of 1861 he was chaplain of the 22nd Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, but the post was too strenuous for his seventy-six years. From then until his death, which took place at Medford, he was a clerk in the Treasury Department at Washington. He was known throughout the eastern United States as a lecturer, and by those who came into immediate contact with him he

was remembered as a man with more than a touch of genius.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. V (1911), with list of sources and a bibliog. of Pierpont's writings; C. R. Eliot, sketch in S. A. Eliot, *Heralds of a Liberal Faith*, vol. II (1910), with list of sources; O. B. Frothingham, *Boston Unitarianism 1820–50* (1890), pp. 184–86; A. A. Ford, *John Pierpont, a Biog. Sketch* (1909); Henry Ware, *A Sermon Delivered in Boston, Apr. 14, 1819, at the Ordination of the Rev. John Pierpont* (1819); *Proceedings in the Controversy between a Part of the Proprietors and the Pastor of Hollis Street Church, Boston, 1838 and 1839* (Boston, n.d.); S. K. Lothrop, *Proceedings of an Ecclesiastical Council in the Case of the Proprietors of Hollis-Street Meeting-House and the Rev. John Pierpont* (1841); G. L. Chaney, *Hollis Street Church from Mather Byles to Thomas Starr King* (1877); H. W. Simon, *The Reading of Shakespeare in American Schools and Colleges* (1932), pp. 20–22; J. R. Dix, *Pulpit Portraits* (1854); *Boston Transcript*, Aug. 27, 1866.]

G. H. G.

PIERREPONT, EDWARDS (Mar. 4, 1817–Mar. 6, 1892), lawyer, attorney-general of the United States, foreign minister, was born at North Haven, Conn., the son of Giles and Eunice (Munson) Pierpont and a descendant of James Pierpont [*q.v.*], one of the founders of Yale College. At baptism he was called Munson Edwards Pierpont, but he later dropped his first name and adopted an early spelling of his surname. He was educated in the schools of his native town and at Yale College, being graduated in 1837. After spending some time in the West he returned to study at the New Haven Law School. In 1840 he was admitted to the bar. He was a tutor at Yale, 1840–41, and then went to Columbus, Ohio, where he became a partner of Phineas B. Wilcox, one of the ablest lawyers of the state. In 1846 he moved to New York City and almost immediately established a successful practice. On May 27, 1846, he was married to Margaretta Willoughby of Brooklyn, N. Y.

After moving to New York he became an active participant in the campaigns of the Democratic party, though he never held office until 1857. In that year he was elected judge of the superior court of the city of New York but resigned in 1860 to resume his practice. Early in 1861 he took a determined stand in favor of coercive measures to preserve the Union. He was a member of the Union Defence Committee which, in the early months of the war, raised several regiments, and also helped to finance movements in favor of the Union in the border slave states. In 1864 he publicly expressed his disappointment at the nomination of McClellan and helped to organize the War Democrats in support of the reëlection of Lincoln. After the close of the war he remained for a time an independent Union Democrat. He approved President Johnson's policy of reconstruction and strongly opposed the program of the radical leaders in Congress. In the election of 1866 he cooperated with the regular organization of the Democratic party; but after the nomination of Seymour and Blair in 1868 he announced that he would support Grant because he had been a former Democrat who had stood by the Union. From that time his political fortunes were bound up with Grant's. He served for a year as United States district attorney for the southern district of New York, 1869–70, and was appointed minister to Russia, 1873, but declined to serve. In 1875 he became attorney-general of the United States, an extremely difficult position, since it involved the prosecution of members of the "whiskey ring," some of whom were close personal friends of the President. Pierrepont brought the offenders to trial and, with the exception of his circular letter to the district attorneys of Milwaukee, Chicago, and St. Louis, denying immunity to those who would testify against the ring, his conduct of the prosecutions was satisfactory to the public. In May 1876 he was appointed minister to Great Britain and served until December 1877.

As a lawyer, Pierrepont attained a high position, appearing for clients in many important cases. With John A. Dix [*q.v.*] he was appointed in February 1862 to examine the cases of state prisoners in the custody of the federal military authorities. In 1867 he assisted the United States district attorney in prosecuting John H. Surratt for complicity in the assassination of Lincoln (see sketch of John Wilkes Booth). Among his other public services, he was a member of the state constitutional convention, 1867–68, and one of the Committee of Seventy (1870) which assisted in freeing New York City from the "Tweed ring." In his later years he published numerous pamphlets on financial questions, most of which advocated the adoption of a bimetallic standard of currency. He died in New York City where he had lived and practised law since his return from England in 1878.

[R. Burnham Moffat, *Pierrepont Geneals. from Norman Times to 1913* (1913); *Record of the Class of 1837 in Yale Univ.* (7th ed., 1887); *Obit. Record of Grads. of Yale Univ. Deceased During the Academical Year ending in June 1892* (1892); *Argument of Hon. Edwards Pierrepont to the Jury, on the Trial of John H. Surratt for the Murder of President Lincoln* (1867); *N. Y. Herald*, Apr. 27, 1869; Feb. 7–Apr. 1, 1876; Mar. 7, 1892; *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 7, 1892.]

E. C. S.

PIERSON, ABRAHAM (1609–Aug. 9, 1678), clergyman, first pastor of the settlements at Southampton, L. I., Branford, Conn., and Newark, N. J., was born in Yorkshire, England, prob-

ably at Bradford, since he was baptized there on Sept. 23, 1609. He matriculated as a pensioner at Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1629 and was graduated A.B. in 1632, his name appearing on the rolls as Pearson or Peirson. On Sept. 23, 1632, he was ordained deacon at the Collegiate Church, Southwell, Nottingham, under the jurisdiction of York (John and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses*, pt. 1, vol. III, 1924, p. 330, and Institutional Act Books of York Cathedral cited by L. H. Patterson, in *The Pageant of Newark-on-Trent*, 1927, p. 4). Strongly Puritan in his convictions, he left England for the more salutary ecclesiastical atmosphere of Massachusetts, and was admitted to the church at Boston, Sept. 5, 1640. Earlier in the year "divers of the inhabitants of Linne, finding themselves straitened, looked out for a new plantation" (J. K. Hosmer, *Winthrop's Journal*, 1908, II, 4), and going to Long Island founded what is now the town of Southampton. Hugh Peter [*q.v.*] records that in November 1640 he attended the formation of a church at Lynn, composed of persons connected with this enterprise and on the same occasion took "part in the ordination of Abraham Pierson as their guide in the spread of Gospel knowledge and influences" (J. B. Felt, "Memoir of Hugh Peters," *New-England Historical and Genealogical Register*, April 1851, p. 233). The following month this "church formed at Lynn under Rev. Abraham Pierson moves to S. Hampton, L. Island" (J. B. Felt, *Annals of Salem From Its First Settlement*, 1827). About this time, or not long afterward, he was married, it is said to a daughter of Rev. John Wheelwright [*q.v.*], though available information regarding Wheelwright's children makes the truth of this tradition doubtful (see James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England*, vols. III, IV, 1861–62).

Pierson was a stern, unbending Puritan whose piety and learning came to be held in high esteem by the early New England clergy. His conviction that church and state should act in harmony, the latter being governed in its procedure by the law of God, and that church members only should be freemen, was unshakable. The town records of Southampton contain an "Abstract of the Lawes of Judgement as given Moses to the Commonwealth of Israel," written it is said, in Pierson's hand, which the inhabitants adopted for their guidance, though none of its drastic provisions were ever put into effect (J. T. Adams, *History of the Town of Southampton*, 1918, p. 55). He was strongly opposed to Southampton's uniting with Connecticut, which union was effected in 1644, because

Pierson

in Connecticut those not church members might become freemen; and in 1647 he removed to Branford, New Haven Colony, where John Davenport's church-state views prevailed. In this new settlement he organized a church of which he was pastor for about twenty years, and was prominent in the general affairs of the colony. He also engaged in missionary activities among the neighboring Indians, and acquired some knowledge of their language, receiving financial compensation for this work from the Commissioners of the United Colonies. By their order and with the cooperation of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England, he translated a catechism he had prepared into the Quiripi dialect, assisted by Thomas Stanton, interpreter-general to the United Colonies for the Indian language. It was entitled *Some Helps for the Indians Shewing Them How to Improve their Natural Reason, to Know the True God, and the True Christian Religion.* The first sheet (sixteen pages) was printed late in 1658 and sent to England, where it was reprinted, and the title page bears that date, although the catechism was not published complete until the following year. Pierson also seems to have had aspirations as a poet, for he wrote "Lines on the Death of Theophilus Eaton," a crude composition in thirty-one stanzas, and a ten-line stanza on the death of Robert Coe. Unwilling to remain in Branford after the absorption of New Haven by Connecticut—which he had vigorously opposed—in the summer of 1667, with practically his entire congregation, he again sought a new settlement where his views of church and state could be put into operation, and established himself at Newark, N. J. Here he remained as pastor until his death, assisted during the last nine years of his life by his son Abraham [*q.v.*], to whom he left his library of more than 400 books, one of the most extensive in the colonies.

["Some Helps for the Indians" is reprinted in the *Conn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. III (1895), and "Lines on the Death of Theophilus Eaton," in the *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 4 ser., vol. VII (1865). See also in addition to references above, Benj. Trumbull, *A Complete Hist. of Conn., Civil and Ecclesiastical* (1818); Cotton Mather, *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1820 ed.), I, 359; D. D. Field, *A Statistical Account of the County of Middlesex, Conn.* (1819); Ebenezer Hazard, *Hist. Colls.*, vol. II (1794); Alexander MacWhorter, *A Century Sermon, Preached in Newark, N. J., Jan. 1, 1807* (1807); J. F. Stearns, *Hist. Discourses Relating to the First Presbyt. Ch. in Newark* (1853); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. I (1857); E. E. Atwater, *Hist. of the Colony of New Haven to Its Absorption into Conn.* (1881); J. C. Pilling, *Bibliog. of the Algonquian Languages* (1891); B. F. Thompson and C. J. Werner, *Hist. of Long Island* (1918), vol. II.]

H. E. S.

PIERSON, ABRAHAM (*c.* 1645–Mar. 5, 1707), Congregational clergyman, first rector of

the Collegiate School in the Colony of Connecticut, of which Yale College was the outgrowth, was the son of Abraham Pierson [*q.v.*], who in 1640 came from England to Boston, and is said to have married a daughter of Rev. John Wheelwright [*q.v.*], though the tradition seems doubtful. It is commonly stated that Abraham the younger was born at Lynn, Mass., in 1641, but according to his tombstone in the graveyard at Clinton, Conn., he "deceased March ye 5th, 1706/7, aged 61 years." If the inscription there is to be trusted, he must have been born some time between Mar. 5, 1644/5 and Mar. 5, 1645/6. At this period his father, having left Lynn in December 1640, was still pastor of the Church at Southampton, L. I., from which he moved in 1647 to Branford, Conn. In the latter settlement, only recently established, the boy grew up. He received his early instruction, first, from his father and later, it is thought, from Rev. John Davenport and some of the early schoolmasters of New Haven. Graduating from Harvard in 1668, with a classmate, John Prudden, he studied theology for about a year under Rev. Roger Newton of Milford, Conn. In the summer of 1669 he was called to the pastorate of the church at Woodbridge, N. J., but declined, and became assistant to his father, now pastor of the church at Newark. In March 1672 he was made co-pastor. The year following he married Abigail Clark, with whom he had become acquainted in Milford, a daughter of George Clark, one of the first settlers of that town. After the death of the elder Pierson in 1678 his son became sole pastor, remaining in that capacity for nearly fourteen years. Differing convictions with respect to ecclesiastical polity on the part of minister and people severed their relationship early in 1692, Pierson favoring a moderate form of presbyterian government, while a majority of his parishioners were strongly congregational.

Returning to Connecticut, he was immediately called to the church in Greenwich, but declined to be installed there, although he agreed to supply the pulpit. Two years later he accepted an invitation from the people of Killingworth, now Clinton, to become their pastor. Here he brought peace and unity into a disrupted congregation, and had a successful pastorate which lasted until his death. The old church building was torn down and a new one erected in 1700, for which a bell, probably one of the first in Connecticut to summon people to worship, was secured in 1703. According to a description given, it is said, by one who had seen and heard him often, Pierson was "something taller than a middle size, a fleshy, well formed and comely looking man," exceeding pious, and an excellent preacher; kind and charitable to the poor and indigent, who in a special manner lamented his death (J. F. Stearns, *Historical Discourses Relating to the First Presbyterian Church, Newark,* 1853, p. 91). He was also reputed to have been a hard student and a good scholar, and was prominent in all the activities of the little group of Connecticut ministers who laid the foundations of Yale College. In the charter establishing a collegiate school, granted by the General Court of Connecticut in October 1701, he was named one of the ten trustees, and at their first meeting, which began on Nov. 11, he was elected rector. The official location of the school was Saybrook, but since the Killingworth people objected to their pastor's removing thither, the students were instructed in the Killingworth parsonage, and the commencements were held in Saybrook. His connection with the school caused serious friction between himself and his parishioners, but before the questions involved could be settled Pierson was seized with a violent illness which resulted in his death. So far as is known he published nothing; although he prepared a textbook on physics which in manuscript was long used in the early days of Yale. A letter to Increase Mather is printed in the *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society* (4 ser. VIII, 1868), two letters to Fitz-John Winthrop are printed in the *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society* (2 ser. XII, 1899) and several of Pierson's manuscripts are in the possession of Yale University.

[In addition to references cited above see Thomas Clap, *The Annals or Hist. of Yale Coll. to the Year 1766* (1766); Alexander MacWhorter, *A Century Sermon Preached in Newark, N. J., Jan. 1, 1807* (1807); D. D. Field, *A Statistical Account of the County of Middlesex, Conn.* (1819); J. L. Sibley, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Harvard Univ.*, vol. II (1881); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. I (1857); D. M. Mead, *A Hist. of the Town of Greenwich* (1857); *Two Hundredth Anniversary of the Clinton Congreg. Church* (1868); F. B. Dexter, *The Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles* (1901), vol. II, and *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. I (1885); Edwin Oviatt, *The Beginnings of Yale* (1916).]

H. E. S.

PIERSON, ARTHUR TAPPAN (Mar. 6, 1837–June 3, 1911), Presbyterian clergyman, promoter of missionary activities, editor and writer, was born in New York City, the son of Stephen Haines and Sally Ann (Wheeler) Pierson. His father was a descendant of Abraham Pierson the elder [*q.v.*], through his son Thomas. Up to the time of the financial panic of 1837, Stephen Pierson had been the cashier and confidential clerk of Arthur Tappan [*q.v.*]. At the age of eleven young Pierson entered the Mount Washington Collegiate Institute and two years

later, the Collegiate Institute at Tarrytown-on-the-Hudson, from which he shortly transferred to the Ossining School, Sing Sing, of which his brother-in-law, Rev. J. P. Lundy, was principal. Completing his course in the winter of 1852–53, he entered Hamilton College the following September. Here he took high stand as a scholar, was active in religious work, and contributed much verse and prose to New York periodicals. He graduated from Hamilton in 1857, and from Union Theological Seminary in 1860. On May 13 of the latter year he was ordained by the Third New York Presbytery and on July 12 married Sarah Frances Benedict. After having supplied a Congregational church in West Winsted, Conn., on Sept. 5, 1860, he was installed as pastor of the First Congregational Church, Binghamton, N. Y. Later he served the Presbyterian Church at Waterford, N. Y. (1863–69), and the Fort Street Church, Detroit (1869–82). During these years he became an effective and popular preacher. In 1876 his church edifice in Detroit burned, and while it was being rebuilt services were held in an opera house. He had already become convinced that his ambition for literary excellence diminished his spiritual power, and from this time on his preaching was extemporaneous, expository, and evangelistic. He also came to feel keenly that the chief work of the Church is "to rescue unsaved souls," and that conventional church buildings with elaborate architecture and rented pews hinder access to the common people. Expecting a greater field of usefulness along lines in harmony with these views, in the fall of 1882 he accepted a call to the Second Presbyterian Church, Indianapolis, but, disappointed in the cooperation he received, he remained but a few months. From 1883 to 1889, however, he had a fruitful pastorate at Bethany Church, Philadelphia.

He was a man of intense zeal, profoundly convinced of the inspired truth of the Bible, of the efficacy of prayer, and of the second coming of Christ; graphic in his preaching; and with a gift for drawing which enabled him by charts and pictures to illustrate his discourses. As time went on, concern for speedy world-wide evangelization possessed him with increasing force, and during his Philadelphia pastorate he became nationally known as an inspiring leader at missionary and Bible conferences. A friend of Dwight L. Moody [*q.v.*], he was prominent at Northfield gatherings and it was in no small part through the enthusiasm which he aroused that the Student Volunteer Movement for Foreign Missions was started. In 1886 he published *The Crisis of Missions,* which did much to arouse missionary activity in the churches. This was followed by *The Divine Enterprise of Missions* (1891), *The Miracles of Missions* (4 vols., 1891–1901), *The New Acts of the Apostles* (1894), *Forward Movements of the Last Half Century* (1900), and *The Modern Mission Century* (1901). In 1888 he became associated with James M. Sherwood in the editorship of the *Missionary Review,* and after Sherwood's death, two years later, he was sole editor for the rest of his life. Under his supervision the periodical became a picturesque and popular organ. After attending the World Missionary Conference at London in 1888, he made a tour of Scotland with Rev. A. J. Gordon in the interest of missions. His success was such that the next year, resigning his pastorate, he again visited Great Britain, and thereafter devoted himself to evangelistic activity, lecturing and preaching both in the United States and abroad. When Charles H. Spurgeon became ill in 1891 he called Pierson to take his place at the Metropolitan Tabernacle, London, and he continued to supply there for two years, Spurgeon having died in the meantime. Finally convinced that the views on baptism held by the Baptists were Biblical, on Feb. 1, 1896, he was immersed. This fact led to his separation from the Philadelphia Presbytery, and he never thereafter had formal ministerial standing in any denomination. In the latter part of his career he adopted and promulgated the views on personal holiness held by the Keswick Convention, and in 1903 published *The Keswick Movement in Precept and Practice.* He also published *Life Power; or, Character, Culture, and Conduct* (1895); *The Second Coming of Our Lord* (1896); *Catharine of Siena, an Ancient Lay Preacher* (1898); *In Christ Jesus; or, the Sphere of the Believer's Life* (1898); *George Müller of Bristol* (1899); *James Wright of Bristol* (1906); *Seven Years in Sierra Leone; the Story of the Work of William A. B. Johnson* (1897); *The Gordian Knot; or, the Problem Which Baffles Infidelity* (1902); *God's Living Oracles* (1904); *The Bible and Spiritual Criticism* (1905), and numerous other works of a similar character. In October 1910 he started on a tour of the missions in the Far East, but after visiting Japan and Korea was forced by the condition of his health to return to his home in Brooklyn, where he died. He was buried in Greenwood Cemetery.

[D. L. Pierson, *Arthur T. Pierson* (1912); J. K. Maclean, *Dr. Pierson and His Message* (1911); A. G. Wheeler, *The Geneal. and Encyc. Hist. of the Wheeler Family in America* (1914); L. B. Pierson, *Pierson Geneal. Records* (1878); *Missionary Review,* Aug. 1911, memorial number; *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Herald,* June 4, 1911.]

H. E. S.

PIERSON, HAMILTON WILCOX (Sept. 22, 1817–Sept. 7, 1888), Presbyterian clergyman, author, was born in Bergen, N. Y., the son of Rev. Josiah Pierson, grandson of Samuel and Rebecca (Parmele) Pierson, and a descendant of Abraham Pierson [*q.v.*]. Throughout his life he had to contend with a weakness of the lungs which more or less determined the course of his whole career. After graduating from Union College in 1843, partly for his health he traveled in Virginia for two years as an agent for the American Tract Society. He then entered Union Theological Seminary, New York, from which he graduated in 1848. Impressed, during a visit to the West Indies, with the religious tolerance in the recently established Dominican Republic, he became agent for the American Bible Society, and distributed Bibles in the French language to schools and individuals (*Thirty-fourth Annual Report of the American Bible Society,* 1850). He returned to the United States in 1850, and spent the next three years in travel and literary work. On Nov. 13, 1853, he was ordained by the Presbytery of New York. He had hoped to become a foreign missionary, but physicians had informed him that his physical condition would not permit, and that neither would he be equal to the duties of a permanent pastorate. Accordingly, he went to Kentucky as agent of the American Bible Society. In this capacity, for five years, he traveled through the back country, covering several thousand miles annually on horseback, holding religious services, and distributing Bibles. From the knowledge thus gained he published some time later, *In the Brush; or, Old-Time Social, Political, and Religious Life in the Southwest* (1881), a lively narrative which gives a valuable portrayal of pioneer conditions and habits. In 1858 he became president of Cumberland College, a Presbyterian school at Princeton, Ky. In addition to his administrative duties he traveled extensively "electioneering for students" and collecting funds. During his term of service an additional building was erected. The outbreak of the Civil War compelled the closing of the institution and Pierson returned North. During the war he served as agent of the American Tract Society in Washington, D. C., and as secretary of the Christian Commission at Toledo, Ohio. From 1863 to 1869 he did religious work among the freedmen in Virginia and Georgia. His activities in Andersonville, Ga., caused him to be driven from the city, and in 1870 he published *A Letter to Hon. Charles Sumner, with "Statements" of Outrages upon Freedmen in Georgia and an Account of My Expulsion from Andersonville, Ga., by the Ku-Klux Klan.*

The remainder of his life was made up of periods of illness, travel, and literary work. From 1885 to 1886 he was state librarian of Ohio. He published *American Missionary Memorial, Including Biographical and Historical Sketches* (1853), and in 1862, *Jefferson at Monticello: the Private Life of Thomas Jefferson,* based upon information and unpublished documents furnished by Capt. Edmund Bacon, a former overseer of Jefferson's estate at Monticello. He contributed to periodicals and was a member of the New York Historical Society. The last two years of his life were spent in Bergen, N. Y., the place of his birth.

[Considerable autobiog. material is to be found in his writings; see also *Gen. Cat. of Union Theolog. Sem.* (1919); and the *Thirty-eighth* to the *Forty-third Ann. Report Am. Bible Soc.* (1854–59).] H. E. S.

PIERZ, FRANZ (Nov. 20, 1785–Jan. 22, 1880), Roman Catholic missionary, was born near Kamnik in the Austrian province of Carniola. The Slovenian form of his family name was Pirc, but in the United States he used the spelling Pierz. Little is known of his parentage and early life. After an education in the gymnasium and the diocesan seminary in Laibach, he was ordained in 1813 and served successively thereafter three local parishes. He took a keen interest in agriculture and horticulture, and in 1830 published *Krajnski vertnar,* a work on gardening which has remained of importance not only among horticulturists but also among philologists because of its early use of a local dialect.

At the solicitation of a missionary among the Chippewa Indians, Pierz set out in 1835 for the United States as a missionary supported mainly by the Leopoldinen-Stiftung, a Viennese board of missions. His work for many years was with the Indians and settlers about the mission at Arbre Croche, now Harbor Springs, Mich. Prior to 1839, however, he served at Sault Ste. Marie and established important stations on Lake Superior. He was particularly successful in inducing the Indians to become an agricultural people. In 1852 he departed for the upper Mississippi, a large field hitherto neglected by his church. Despite his advanced age he traveled hundreds of miles every year to visit bands of Chippewa. His published reports were successful now, as his earlier letters from Michigan had been, in interesting Catholic Europe in the Indians and thus in providing funds for his work. When the Sioux rose against the whites in 1862, his influence helped to keep the Chippewa from rising also. With the aid of assistants whom he secured in Europe in 1863 he continued to labor among the Indians until 1871. In 1873

he returned to his native land, where he died.

He was an immigrant agent as well as a missionary. Perceiving that white men would inevitably settle close to his Indians, he determined to see that they were German Catholics. Accordingly he sent out a prospectus and published many letters describing central Minnesota in terms calculated to attract this class. The prospectus appeared in his *Die Indianer in Nord-Amerika* (1855), and together with his letters, printed in many European and American periodicals, brought great numbers of Germans to central Minnesota. He apparently published nothing in Ottawa or Chippewa, though his letters of 1843 and 1845 mention a life of Christ, a catechism with prayers and hymns, seventy Indian sermons, and a "Way of the Cross," ready or in preparation for printing.

[Sister Grace McDonald, "Father Francis Pierz, Missionary," *Minn. Hist.*, June 1929; unsigned article by John Seliskar, "The Reverend Francis Pireç, Indian Missionary," in *Acta et Dicta*, July 1911; Fr. Chrysostomus Verwyst, *Life and Letters of Rt. Rev. Frederic Baraga* (1900); A. I. Rezek, *Hist. of the Diocese of Sault Ste. Marie and Marquette*, vol. I (1906); Constant von Wurzbach, *Biographisches Lexikon des Kaiserthums Oesterreich*, vol. XXII (Vienna, 1870); many letters by Pierz in *Berichte der Leopoldinen-Stiftung* (Vienna), in *Annalen der Verbreitung des Glaubens* (Freiburg, Baden), and in *Wahrheitsfreund* (Cincinnati); a brief biography and original letters contrib. by the Rev. Hugo Bren, in *Zentralblatt and Social Justice*, Jan. 1934 ff.; miscellaneous items in the possession of the Minn. Hist. Soc.] G. L. N.

PIGGOT, ROBERT (May 20, 1795–July 23, 1887), stipple engraver, Episcopal clergyman, was born in New York City and at the age of seventeen went to Philadelphia, Pa., where he was apprenticed to David Edwin [*q.v.*] to learn the art of stipple engraving. When he became of age, he formed a partnership with his fellow student, Charles Goodman [*q.v.*], and together they engraved many plates for the *Port Folio*, the *Analectic*, and other publications. Virtually all of their works were signed Goodman & Piggot or C. Goodman & R. Piggot, but the former was the better engraver and artist. After a few years in business the firm was dissolved when the senior partner decided to study law. Piggot then opened a bookstore in Philadelphia and acted as agent to the Adult Sunday School of the city. He placed himself under the instruction of the Rev. James Wiltbank, who taught him the classical languages, and he received deacon's orders on Nov. 30, 1823. The same year he associated himself with the newly organized church of St. Matthew's, Francisville, Philadelphia, as lay reader, and in 1824, on the day the church was consecrated, he was elected its first rector, although he was not ordained a priest by Bishop William White until May 11, 1825. Before that

time he had resigned his rectorship and had accepted a call to another Pennsylvania church. He served in various Episcopal parishes in Pennsylvania and in Smyrna, Del., having become a missionary of the Society for the Advancement of Christianity in Pennsylvania. Later he went to Maryland, and after having had charge of several churches in that state, in 1869 became rector of the parish of the Holy Trinity, Sykesville, Md. He retired in 1883 and died in Sykesville, on July 23, 1887, at which time he was the last surviving clergyman of those ordained by the first bishop of Pennsylvania. On the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of St. Matthew's Church, Francisville, in 1874, Piggot preached the memorial sermon in the church.

[D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (2 vols., 1907); W. S. Baker, *Am. Engravers* (1875); Mantle Fielding, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1917); F. S. Edmonds, *Hist. of St. Matthew's Ch., Francisville, Phila.* (1925); the *Churchman*, Aug. 6, 1887; *Baltimore American*, July 25, 1887.] J. J.

PIGGOTT, JAMES (*c.* 1739–Feb. 20, 1799), Illinois pioneer, was born in Connecticut and is said to have been a privateer in the fore part of the Revolution. In April 1776 he appears as a captain from Westmoreland County, Pa., to serve under Gen. Arthur St. Clair until Oct. 22, 1777. According to family tradition, ill health following the Lake Champlain march caused him to resign his commission and as a volunteer to accompany George Rogers Clark to Kaskaskia. Although it has not been substantiated by records ("Cahokia Records," *post*, p. 190), Reynolds says that Piggott was in command of Fort Jefferson, near the mouth of the Ohio, during the siege of the Chickasaws, which occurred in 1780. This was the year, according to Piggott's later testimony, in which he became a resident of Illinois ("Kaskaskia Records," *post*, p. 421). Whether he was the builder, in 1783, of "Piggott's Fort," a stockade for colonists at Grand Ruisseau, near what is now Columbia, Ill. (Reynolds, p. 59), or merely one of the settlers there ("Cahokia Records," p. 191), it is a matter of record that in 1787 he led a movement against the French authority for which he was placed in irons for twenty-four hours (Philbrick, *post*, p. cclxi). On Aug. 27 of that year he was one of the signers of the contract appointing Bartholomew Tardiveau agent to Congress ("Kaskaskia Records," p. 443), and May 23, 1790, he "and forty-five others" at Grand Ruisseau petitioned the government relative to claims for land which they had risked their lives to improve (*American State Papers, Documents . . . in Relation to the Public Lands*, I, 1834, p. 15).

With the arrival of St. Clair in the territory as governor in 1790 Piggott rose to the place of importance which he had yearned for under French control. Forthwith appointed a militia captain and justice of the peace at Cahokia, he was, Sept. 28, 1795, made judge of the common pleas. The next year as justice of the quarter sessions, he proclaimed the opening of the orphans' court. Meanwhile, 1792–95, he had built a bridge across the River Abbe, later Cahokia Creek, opposite St. Louis, opened a road to the Mississippi bank, and erected two log cabins for the convenience of travelers bound for the Louisiana territory, the origin of the present city of East St. Louis. Ferry service was the next step and this Piggott established in 1797, pledging to Zenon Trudeau, governor of Louisiana territory, "timber at lowest rates" and "products" in return for ferriage rights on the St. Louis side. Piggott's enterprise led Trudeau to make him an honorary citizen of St. Louis.

After operating the ferry for two years, Piggott died of "a fever" at his bark, and was buried, according to one belief, at Kaskaskia. His first wife, Reynolds relates, was buried within Fort Jefferson, during the siege; his second wife, Francies James of Virginia, who bore him eight children, survived him and married again. Threefold was Piggott's contribution to the establishment of American life in Illinois—as a wilderness breaker, as a pioneer officer in the territorial government, and as the founder of a business, which as the Wiggins ferry, became a most lucrative monopoly.

[See John Reynolds, *My Own Times* (1855); C. W. Alvord, "Cahokia Records," *Ill. State Hist. Lib. Colls.*, vol. II (1907) and "Kaskaskia Records," *Ibid.*, vol. V (1909); F. S. Philbrick, "The Laws of Indiana Territory, 1801–09," *Ibid.*, vol. XXI (1930); Robert A. Tyson, *Hist. of East St. Louis* (1875); and J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of St. Louis City and County* (2 vols., 1883). The Appendix to L. U. Reavis, *St. Louis: The Future Great City of the World* (1876), contains a historical lecture about the origin of East St. Louis by Dr. Isaac N. Piggott, James Piggott's son. Information for this sketch was supplied by Mrs. Alice Jones Wientge, of St. Louis, Piggott's great-great-granddaughter.]

I. D.

PIKE, ALBERT (Dec. 29, 1809–Apr. 2, 1891), lawyer, soldier, author, and exponent of Freemasonry, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Benjamin and Sarah (Andrews) Pike. He was a descendant of John Pike, born in Landford, England, who emigrated to America with his wife, Dorothy Daye, and five children in 1635, and died at Salisbury, Mass. Soon after Albert's birth the Pikes returned to the family home in Byfield, and later moved to Newburyport, in the schools of which town and at an academy in Framingham, Mass., he received his early education. From 1824 to 1831 much of his time was spent in teaching and private study; in his spare moments he wrote poetry. He acquired an excellent knowledge of the classics and in his reminiscences he states that he spent a year at Harvard (*New Age Magazine*, August 1929, p. 462), but there is no record of his enrollment there, though in 1859 Harvard conferred upon him the honorary degree of A.M. As a teacher he was connected with schools in Gloucester, Fairhaven, and Newburyport. He had unbounded physical energy, an avid mind, an adventurous disposition, marked independence, and great determination.

The restraints of New England life becoming irksome, in March 1831, with little money and no very definite plans, he started West. Reaching St. Louis by various means of transportation, he then went to Independence, where he joined a party of hunters and traders going to Santa Fé. After some time in that town he accompanied another expedition into the Staked Plains, and finally arrived at Fort Smith, Ark., having passed through many hardships and exciting experiences. In 1833 he was teaching school in Pope County, Ark. During this year, under the *nom-de-plume* of "Casca," he wrote for the *Arkansas Advocate* of Little Rock a series of political articles, entitled "Intercepted Letters," supporting Robert Crittenden, a Whig, who was opposing Ambrose H. Sevier [*q.v.*], a Democrat, for election as delegate to Congress. These articles were of such merit that through Crittenden's influence the editor of the paper, Charles P. Bertrand, invited Pike to become his associate. He accepted the position and was also made an assistant clerk in the territorial legislature, then in session. On Oct. 10, 1834, he married Mary Ann, daughter of James Hamilton. She had some property, which enabled him to purchase an interest in the *Advocate*, and in 1835 he became sole owner and editor. In 1834 there was published in Boston his *Prose Sketches and Poems Written in the Western Country*. It contained a vividly written account of his recent adventures, "Narrative of a Journey in the Prairie," which also appeared as a serial in the *Advocate*, Apr. 17 to 19, 1835 (reprinted in *Publications of the Arkansas Historical Association*, vol. IV, 1917). Although a Massachusetts man, he supported the slavery provision in the Arkansas constitution of 1836, on the ground that since Arkansas bordered on slave states and was settled largely by slaveholders, freedom there would be inexpedient.

In 1837 he sold the *Advocate*, having in the meantime been licensed to practise law. In the

years that followed he became one of the best-informed and most capable lawyers of the Southwest. He was the first reporter of the Arkansas supreme court, his work appearing in the first five volumes of *Reports* (1840–45). In 1842 he published *The Arkansas Form Book,* containing legal forms and a summary of ordinary legal principles. That same year he was admitted to practice before the United States Supreme Court. He took an active part in the Mexican War as commanding officer of a cavalry troop which he had recruited. His criticism of the conduct of the regiment commanded by Col. Archibald Yell [*q.v.*], published in the *Arkansas Gazette* in 1848, involved Pike in a duel with Lieutenant-Colonel John Selden Roane [*q.v.*]. Two shots were fired by each participant without either being hit, after which, through intervention of the surgeons, the affair was settled peaceably. (See account in the *Arkansas Gazette,* Apr. 2, 1893.) He was a stanch Whig in a Democratic stronghold, and later one of the prominent promoters of the Know-Nothing party in his section of the country. He believed himself to be the first to suggest a Pacific railroad convention and he vigorously advocated the building of a Southern line. In 1853 he transferred his practice to New Orleans but returned to Little Rock in 1857. Throughout these years his feelings frequently found expression in published verse.

His career during the Civil War was an unfortunate one. Although not friendly to slavery and claiming to be opposed to secession except as a last and necessary resource, he cast in his lot with the Confederacy rather than desert his friends and abandon his property. In the summer of 1861 he was sent as a commissioner to negotiate treaties with the Indian tribes west of Arkansas. In this enterprise he was partially successful. Later he was commissioned brigadier-general, and under orders of Nov. 22, 1861, the Indian country west of Arkansas and north of Texas was constituted the department of Indian Territory and Pike was assigned to command the same (*Official Records,* 1 ser. VIII, 690). It was his understanding, he claimed, that the Indians recruited would be used only in defense of their own territory. They were employed, however, in the battle of Pea Ridge, Ark., Mar. 7–8, 1862, where they played an inglorious part and committed some atrocities for which Pike was unjustly criticized. Feeling that he occupied an independent command and that the safety of the Indians was in his keeping, he resented exercise of authority over his area by Gen. Thomas C. Hindman [*q.v.*], in command of the Trans-Mississippi district. This resentment led to much friction between the two, and on July 3, 1862, Pike issued a printed circular regarding the situation, entitled *Letter to the President of the Confederate States.* President Davis wrote him under date of Aug. 9, that the publication of this circular was a grave military offense, and that if the purpose was to abate an evil "the mode taken was one of the slowest and worst that could have been adopted" (*Ibid.,* 1 ser. LIII, 822). On July 12, 1862, Pike resigned his commission, but his resignation was not accepted until Nov. 5. In the meantime he aired his grievances in letters to various officials, and under date of July 31, 1862, wrote an address to the chiefs and people of the Indian tribes (printed in *Official Records,* 1 ser. XIII, 869–71). The character of this address was such that Col. Douglas H. Cooper ordered his arrest and wrote President Davis that Pike was "either insane or untrue to the South" (*Ibid.,* 1 ser. LIII, 820–21). The arrest was never actually effected, however, and he was granted leave and permitted to return to his home. He was vigorous in denouncing the spirit and acts of his superiors and published *Charges and Specifications Preferred August 23, 1862, by Brigadier General Albert Pike, against Major General Thomas C. Hindman* (1863). In October, at the expiration of his leave, he attempted to resume command of the Indian department. On Nov. 3, General Hindman ordered his arrest, which in this instance was effected, for on Nov. 19 he wrote President Davis from Warren, Tex., that he was there a prisoner (*Ibid.,* 1 ser. XIII, 921–22). His resignation had before this been accepted and he was later released. During much of the remainder of the war he seems to have been in retirement in Arkansas and probably for a time in Texas, though for a brief period toward the close of hostilities he served as associate justice of the Arkansas supreme court.

For several years after the war he was something of a wanderer. His property had been confiscated and he was looked upon with suspicion both in the South and in the North. He went to New York in 1865, but fearing arrest on the charge of inciting the Indians to revolt, he fled to Canada. His friends made persistent efforts to secure his pardon, and on Aug. 30, 1865, President Johnson issued an order permitting him to return to his home on condition that he take the oath of allegiance and give his parole of honor that he would conduct himself as a loyal citizen. While so conducting himself he was not to be molested by civil or military authorities. These conditions he fulfilled. Indicted for treason by the circuit court of the Eastern District of

Arkansas, he pleaded the President's order. Apparently he was ultimately restored to full civil rights (*New Age Magazine*, June 1930, pp. 425–26; September 1930, p. 534). In 1867–68 he was in Memphis, Tenn., where he practised law and for a time was editor of *The Memphis Appeal*. In 1868 he moved to Washington, D. C. Here he continued his practice, was associate editor of *The Patriot* (1868–70), studied much and wrote much, and devoted a large part of his attention to the interests of Freemasonry.

He had been made a Mason in 1850, a Scottish Rite Mason in 1853, and in 1859 he was elected sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Grand Council, Southern Jurisdiction of the United States, an office which he held for thirty-two years. As an administrator, a student and interpreter of Masonry, and as an author, he rendered an invaluable service to Scottish Rite Masonry, becoming highly revered in the United States and widely known abroad. While his services were numerous and varied, his greatest achievements, perhaps, were the rewriting of the rituals, a work upon which he was laboriously engaged over a period of many years, and his *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry* (1872, 1878, 1881, 1905).

More than six feet tall, of large frame and Jovian countenance, with flowing locks reaching to his shoulders, and a long beard, Pike presented an impressive appearance. His genius was many-sided and his mind ranged over a wide field of subjects. He had a working knowledge of Sanskrit, Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and French, and in his later days he spent much time in studying and translating Eastern writings. To periodicals he contributed numerous articles on diverse subjects. In his own profession he was not only an able practitioner but a student of the law. He prepared a work of considerable length, "Maxims of the Roman Law and Some of the Ancient French Law, as Expounded and Applied in Doctrine and Jurisprudence," which "had it been published, would have placed him in the front rank of American writers on Civil Law" (C. S. Lobingier, in *American Bar Association Journal*, April 1927, p. 208). His reputation as a poet was considerable. Early in his Arkansas career he had sent to *Blackwood's Edinburgh Magazine*, "Hymns to the Gods," which the editor, Christopher North (Dr. John Wilson), published in the June 1839 issue of that periodical with the comment: "These fine hymns . . . entitle their author to take his place in the highest order of his country's poets." They appear in *Hymns to the Gods and Other Poems* (1872), privately printed. A collection under the same title, also privately printed, appeared subsequently in two parts (part I, 1873; part II, 1882). He had previously issued *Nugæ* (1854), and after his death three volumes of selections—*Gen. Albert Pike's Poems* (1900), *Hymns to the Gods and Other Poems* (1916), and *Lyrics and Love Songs* (1916)—were published by his daughter, Lilian Pike Roome. Time has not confirmed Christopher North's rating of Pike as a poet. He had imagination and skill in versification, but was endowed with a better sense of rhythm than of euphony. Some of his poems have a lusty vigor, and of the different versions of "Dixie" his is perhaps the best. His work as a whole, however, is uneven, has little originality, and is frequently reminiscent of other writers.

Pike died in the house of the Scottish Rite Temple, Washington, in his eighty-second year. He left a written communication directing that his body be cremated and his ashes be put around the roots of two acacia trees in front of the home of the Supreme Council; but these instructions were not complied with, and he was buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Washington. The Supreme Council, Southern Jurisdiction, erected a heroic statue of him in Washington on a reservation designated for the purpose by Congress. His wife had died in 1876 and he had lost three children, one son having been killed in the Confederate service and one drowned in the Arkansas; two sons and a daughter survived him.

[Pike's unpublished MSS. are in the library of the Supreme Council, Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, Southern Jurisdiction, Washington, D. C.; W. L. Boyden, *Bibliog. of the Writings of Albert Pike* (1921), lists published and unpublished works; extracts from his manuscript autobiography are published by C. S. Lobingier in *New Age Mag.*, Aug. 1929–Sept. 1930; files of this magazine contain much other biographical material; see also J. L. Elwell, *The Story of Byfield* (1904); W. F. Pope, *Early Days in Ark.* (1895); John Hallum, *Biog. and Pictorial Hist. of Ark.* (1887); Fay Hempstead, *A Pictorial Hist. of Ark.* (1890); D. Y. Thomas, *Ark. in War and Reconstruction* (1926); *Ark. and Its People* (1930), vol. IV; W. S. MacNutt and others, *A Hist. of Ark.* (1932); *War of the Rebellion: Official Records (Army)*; C. A. Evans, *Confederate Military Hist.* (1899), vols. IX, X; F. W. Allsopp, *Albert Pike* (1928); *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 2, 3, 1891.] H. E. S.

PIKE, JAMES SHEPHERD (Sept. 8, 1811–Nov. 29, 1882), journalist, author, was born in Calais, Me., the son of William and Hannah (Shepherd) Pike, and died in that town in his seventy-second year while en route from his home at Robbinston, Me., to the South for the winter months. He was a descendant of John Pike and his son Robert [*q.v.*], who came to Massachusetts from England in 1635. His parents were among the early settlers of Calais, where his father was conspicuous in town affairs and was

instrumental in establishing the first schools (1810). In these, maintained with difficulty through the War of 1812, young Pike received his only formal education, which he later described as "not worth mentioning." The sudden death of his father in 1818 left the family in straitened circumstances, and, at the age of fourteen, James entered upon a series of business ventures in his native town, first as a clerk, later in a grain and shipping business, and in 1836, as cashier of the short-lived St. Croix Bank.

By 1840 his success in business was such as to permit him to devote himself to the more congenial work of journalism, in which he had already shown an interest by editing the *Boundary Gazette and Calais Advertiser* (Apr. 12, 1835–July 28, 1836), distinguished for its Whig sympathies and its early advocacy of Harrison for the presidency. Despite his limited education, he had acquired literary taste, a vigorous and picturesque diction, and forceful style. After 1840 he lived during the winter months in Boston, New York, and Washington, becoming actively associated with newspaper work. As correspondent for the *Portland Advertiser,* and especially for the *Boston Courier,* he became familiarly known through letters signed "J. S. P." As Washington correspondent for the *Courier* he described with characteristic vigor and effectiveness the persons and events in Washington during the debates on the compromise measures of 1850. Of Henry Clay, on the occasion of the Compromise speech, he said, "he was neither profound, brilliant, nor soul-stirring," and he characterized Robert Toombs as "burly, choleric, and determined," while Foote was described as "the *coltsfoot* of the bed of senatorial eloquence." The embarrassed editor of the *Courier* was moved to explain that "we do not look singly at the dark side, which he presents in his letter" (*Boston Courier,* Apr. 10, 1850, p. 2). In 1850 he was the Whig candidate for Congress from the seventh district of the state of Maine in opposition to T. J. D. Fuller. Although this district had been strongly Democratic, the seat was closely contested and it was not until ten days after the election that Fuller's victory was assured (*Portland Advertiser,* Sept. 11–13, 1850). In April of that year Pike was invited by Horace Greeley to become a regular correspondent of the *New York Tribune,* and in 1852 he was made an associate editor. Most of the time between 1850 and 1860 he was Washington correspondent for the *Tribune.* His letters during that period, together with the earlier letters to the *Boston*

Pike

Courier, are the most interesting of his journalistic achievements, a vivid and colorful description of official Washington during the decade preceding the Civil War. Widely quoted, bitterly attacked or enthusiastically praised, they exerted a profound influence upon public opinion and gave to their author national prominence, first as an uncompromising anti-slavery Whig, and later as an ardent Republican.

When Lincoln was elected to the presidency he named Pike as minister resident to The Hague, and on Mar. 28, 1861, the Senate confirmed his appointment. He arrived at The Hague on June 1, 1861. His diplomatic correspondence reveals him chiefly as an observer of the economic effects of the Civil War upon Europe. The relatively quiet life in a country which offered but few diplomatic problems proved uncongenial, and he returned to the United States on May 17, 1866, although his recall was not presented to the King of the Netherlands until Dec. 1, The remaining years of his life were devoted chiefly to writing, to collecting and publishing his earlier correspondence, and to the attractions of his summer home in Robbinston, Me. He was twice married: first, in 1837, to Charlotte Grosvenor of Pomfret, Conn.; second, in 1855, to Elizabeth Ellicott of Avondale, Chester County, Pa. He published successively *The Financial Crisis: Its Evils and Their Remedy* (1867); *The Restoration of the Currency* (1868); and *Horace Greeley in 1872* (1873). All of these works were based upon what he had previously written for the *New York Tribune.* In 1873 he published his *Chief Justice Chase,* and in the following year, *The Prostrate State: South Carolina under Negro Government,* the result of his observation of the working of the reconstruction government in South Carolina, also published in a Dutch translation in 1875. In 1875 his *Contributions to the Financial Discussion, 1874–1875,* appeared, and was followed in 1879 by *The New Puritan,* a study of seventeenth-century New England, based primarily upon the career of Robert Pike, and by *First Blows of the Civil War,* a contemporaneous exposition of the ten years of preliminary conflict in the United States from 1850 to 1860.

[G. F. Talbot, "James Shepherd Pike," *Colls. and Proc. Me. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser. I (1890); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Apr. 1883; C. W. Evans, *Biog. and Hist. Accounts of the Fox, Ellicott, and Evans Families* (1882). Joseph Griffin, *Hist. of the Press of Me.* (1872); I. C. Knowlton, *Annals of Calais, Me., and St. Stephen, New Brunswick* (1875); *Papers Relating to Foreign Affairs, 1861–67* (1861–68); *Portland Advertiser,* Apr. 10–20, 1850, Nov. 29, 1882; *Boston Courier,* esp. Apr. 10, 1850, and Nov. 30, 1882; *N. Y. Tribune,* Mar. 29, 1861; *Sun* (N. Y.), Nov. 30, 1882.]

T. C. V–C.

PIKE, MARY HAYDEN GREEN (Nov. 30, 1824–Jan. 15, 1908), novelist, was born in Eastport, Me., the daughter of Deacon Elijah Dix and Hannah Claflin (Hayden) Green, both of early Puritan stock. The family moved to Calais, Me., when she was quite young, and there she attended public school. Her girlhood was marked by strong religious influences. At the age of twelve she formally joined the Baptist Church, the immersion being performed after ice had been cut from the river for the occasion. At the Charlestown (Massachusetts) Female Seminary, from which she graduated in 1843, her religious convictions deepened under the leadership of its president, the Rev. William Phillips. Abolitionism soon became a focus for her spiritual energy. In 1846 she married Frederick Augustus Pike, a lawyer of Calais, who became a member of the Maine state legislature. Her anti-slavery sentiments were further confirmed by her husband's opinions and by the views of Hannibal Hamlin and James G. Blaine, intimate family friends. After a residence in Augusta, she visited in the South where she made direct observations of slavery. She lived in Washington between 1861 and 1869, when her husband was a member of Congress. The loss of her only brother in the war intensified her feeling against slavery.

Mrs. Pike's first book, *Ida May* (1854), which appeared under the name of Mary Langdon, dealt with a child of wealthy parents who was sold into slavery. It was melodramatic in style and episode, and more than sixty thousand copies were sold in America. It probably derived some of its popularity from the turmoil made by Mrs. Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin.* It was widely read abroad and was reprinted in London and Leipzig. The cruelty of race discrimination is the theme of *Caste* (1856), in which a quadroon girl is forbidden to marry her betrothed who is a white man. This novel appeared under the pen-name Sydney A. Story, Jr.; it was not so popular as *Ida May.* Her next book, *Agnes* (1858), "by the author of *Ida May*," attempted a truthful picture of the Indian interwoven with a plot of the American Revolution. These were her best-known works. At the close of her husband's term in Congress she accompanied him on a journey to Europe. They maintained their residence in Calais, Me., until his death in 1886. She was left a considerable estate and lived for the next nine years with her adopted daughter in Plainfield, N. J. She had become interested in painting and did some creditable landscape canvases. The closing years of her life were spent in retirement and poor health. She lived with her sister in Baltimore and occupied herself in various religious works. She died in Baltimore at the home of her niece, Katherine C. Oudesluys, and was interred at Calais, Me., beside her husband.

[There is considerable confusion in accounts of Mrs. Pike concerning her printed works, caused by erroneous identification of her with a niece and others. Information has been derived chiefly from family correspondence. For printed sources see: I. C. Knowlton, *Annals of Calais, Me., and St. Stephen, New Brunswick* (1875); S. A. Allibone, *A Critical Dict. of English Lit.; and British and Am. Authors,* vol. II (1871); *Boston Transcript,* Jan. 12, 1889; and the *Sun* (Baltimore), Jan. 16, 1908.] R. W. B.
E. P. W.

PIKE, NICOLAS (Oct. 6, 1743–Dec. 9, 1819), teacher, arithmetician, was born at Somersworth, N. H., the son of Rev. James and Sarah (Gilman) Pike, and a descendant of John Pike who emigrated from Landford, England, to Massachusetts in 1635. Nicolas graduated from Harvard College in 1766, and later received the degree of A.M. there. He married in Newburyport, Mass., Hannah Smith, and between Jan. 1, 1769, and Jan. 7, 1778, five sons were born to them. Hannah died July 7, 1778, and on Jan. 9 of the following year Pike married Eunice Smith, by whom he had one son. For many years he was master of the Newburyport grammar school, occupying that position at least as early as 1773. He also conducted a private evening school (1774–86) and for a time, a school for young ladies. He was town clerk of Newburyport from Mar. 14, 1776 to 1780, served as selectman in 1782–83, and for a considerable period was justice of the peace. Testimony concerning the quality of Pike's teaching is given by Gen. Henry Sewall, who stated that in 1769 and several years previously he had studied under Pike at York, in what is now Maine, particularly "arithmetic and trigonometry." Pike, Sewall says, made some improvement in the school there "with the accession of a new spelling-book, but did not make grammar and geography any part of school studies" (letter printed in *New-England Historical and Genealogical Register, post,* p. 310).

Pike's fame rests chiefly upon his treatise, *A New and Complete System of Arithmetick, Composed for the Use of the Citizens of the United States . . .* (1788). In the year 1793 he published a smaller work, *Abridgement of the New and Complete System of Arithmetick, Composed for the Use, and Adapted to the Commerce of the Citizens of the United States . . . For the Use of Schools, and Will be found to be An Easy and Sure Guide to the Scholar.* Both were first printed by John Mycall in

Newburyport, but the second was printed for Isaiah Thomas [*q.v.*], who acted as publisher and distributor. This famous publisher continued to issue the book for many years. Three years elapsed between the recommendation of the original edition written by Benjamin West, a well-known teacher and mathematician, and the book's appearance. Pike was able to secure, also, the hearty recommendations of the work by the presidents of Yale, Harvard, and Dartmouth, several of their professors of mathematics, and Governor Bowdoin of Massachusetts. Even Washington gave a guarded recommendation when a copy was sent to him (quoted in Blake, *post*, pp. 327–28). The author's confidence in the value of his work was evidenced by the fact that he registered as author in Pennsylvania, South Carolina, Massachusetts, and New York, such registration serving as copyright notice. His confidence was fully justified, for the original work went through eight editions, and the *Abridgement* continued to appear until 1830. He also edited, 1794, Daniel Fenning's *The Ready Reckoner or the Trader's Useful Assistant.* On Aug. 20, 1788, he was elected a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Pike was the first American arithmetician to attain wide popularity in the field of school textbooks. In his arithmetics the orderly presentation of the subject to children is stressed, the Federal money (then new) is given adequate treatment, and the applications of arithmetic to business are well indicated. The larger edition was an admirable effort, furnishing excellent material in geometry and trigonometry; the abridged edition was particularly well suited to instruction in elementary schools. In these textbooks Pike made an enduring contribution to American education.

[*Vital Records of Newburyport, Mass.* (1911); Arthur Gilman, *The Gilman Family* (1869); Joshua Coffin, *A Sketch of the Hist. of Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury, from 1635 to 1845* (1845); J. J. Currier, *Hist. of Newburyport, Mass., 1764–1909* (2 vols., 1906–09); E. V. Blake, *Hist. of Newburyport* (1854); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1880; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Dec. 11, 1819.]

L. C. K.

PIKE, ROBERT (*c.* 1616–Dec. 12, 1708), colonial official, the second son of John Pike and Dorothy Daye, was born in Whiteparish, Wilts, England, probably spent part of his childhood in Landford, and arrived in Boston with his father, his brother John, and three sisters, on June 3, 1635. They went first to Ipswich, but soon afterward moved to the newly settled town of Newbury, Mass., where Robert lived until 1639, when he joined the colony which founded Salisbury. He took the oath as freeman on May 17, 1637, just before the exciting election at which Winthrop defeated Vane for governor, and is said to have been of the Winthrop faction. On Apr. 3, 1641, he married Sarah Sanders, and they had eight children; she died Nov. 1, 1679, and on Oct. 30, 1684, he married in Salisbury Martha Moyce, widow of George Goldwyer.

Pike deserves a high place among the defenders of civil and religious liberty in colonial Massachusetts. Elected to the General Court in 1648, he criticized it in 1653 because it made preaching by one not a regularly ordained minister a misdemeanor. The law was designed to prevent certain Baptists from exhorting in the absence of a minister. For his action, which was also to the advantage of the Quakers, he was arraigned before the General Court, tried, convicted, fined, and disfranchised. As a result of his protest, however, the General Court at its next session repealed the law. Nevertheless, Pike's disfranchisement remained and fifteen of the numerous petitioners in his behalf were bound over for trial in the county courts. Whether they were actually tried or punished does not appear. Pike's civil disabilities were removed in 1657. He was immediately elected by the people of Salisbury to represent them again in the General Court. In 1675 he was engaged in a controversy with his pastor, John Wheelwright [*q.v.*], who sent him a document containing criticisms of his conduct and a warning that he might be excommunicated. Pike, as magistrate, summoned Wheelwright to appear before him to account for the document. Wheelwright then excommunicated Pike. Appeals to the General Court resulted in the admonition of both parties, the lifting of the excommunication, and the receiving back of Pike into the fellowship of the church. In 1692, at the height of the witchcraft delusion, Pike raised his voice against the character of the legal evidence upon which the convictions were based. The argument is contained in a letter addressed to Magistrate Jonathan Corwin and signed by the initials, "R. P." Though attributed by some to Robert Paine, the evidence indicates, according to Upham (*post*), that Robert Pike was the author. The argument was directed not to proving that witchcraft was a delusion, but to stressing the invalidity of spectre testimony. "Is the Devil a competent witness?" Pike asks. Pike's biographer describes this letter as a cool, close, and powerful argumentative appeal to the judges who were trying the witchcraft cases.

In spite of his controversies with the powers of authority, Pike was not fundamentally opposed to the existing régime and was evidently

valued as a man of force and character. He served as major in the Indian wars. During a period of fifty years, except for short intervals, he held public office continuously. In 1688–89, after the revolution in England and the deposition of Andros in Massachusetts, Pike was elected near the head of the poll at a popular election of magistrates. Later, when a list of appointees to fill the same offices was decided on by the Crown, Pike's name was on the list though the names of several of his conspicuous colleagues were omitted. From 1689 to 1696 he was a member of the Governor's Council. He was one of a group who bought the island of Nantucket from Thomas Mayhew [*q.v.*] in 1659 and had pecuniary interests there at the time of his death. He appears to have lived and died in comparative affluence. He headed the list of commoners of Salisbury after the minister, paid the largest tax in 1652, and he and his wife were first in the list of members of the Salisbury church in 1687. He educated his son John, later minister at Dover, N. H., at Harvard, and defrayed the expenses of a medical education for his grandson Robert. After 1696 he retired to private life and was engaged in giving away to his heirs the property which he had accumulated during his lifetime.

[D. W. Hoyt, *The Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, Mass.* (3 vols., 1897–1917); Joshua Coffin, *A Sketch of the Hist. of Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury from 1635–1845* (1845); J. S. Macy, *Geneal. of the Macy Family from 1635–1868* (1868); J. S. Pike, *The New Puritan . . . : Some Account of the Life of Robert Pike* (1879); *Records of the Pike Family Asso.*, 1900–1901 and 1902; James Savage, *A Geneal. Dict. of the First Settlers of New England*, vol. III (1861), pp. 436–37; C. W. Upham, *Salem Witchcraft* (1867), vol. II.]

H. S. W.
R. M. W.

PIKE, ZEBULON MONTGOMERY (Jan. 5, 1779–Apr. 27, 1813), soldier, explorer, was bred to a military career. His father, Major Zebulon Pike, served in the Revolution and afterward as an officer in the United States Army; an ancestor, Capt. John Pike, had fought in the early colonial wars; he was a founder of Woodbridge, N. J., in 1666, and the son of John Pike, first of the family in America, who emigrated to New England in 1635. Zebulon Montgomery Pike, whose mother was Isabella Brown, was born at Lamberton, now a part of Trenton, N. J. His childhood was spent in New Jersey and Pennsylvania, where he attended country school. While yet a boy he entered his father's company as a cadet, and at twenty was commissioned a first lieutenant. For several years he served with the frontier army, restlessly awaiting an opportunity to distinguish himself. At length it came, when Gen. James Wilkinson [*q.v.*] directed him to lead an exploring party to the source of the

Mississippi. At the head of a company of twenty men Pike set out from St. Louis on Aug. 9, 1805, with four months' provisions stored away in his seventy-foot keelboat. When they were some distance beyond the Falls of St. Anthony, winter weather set in. Leaving some of the men in a rude stockade, Pike and the others continued the journey, dragging their goods on sleds. They reached what Pike mistakenly took for the source of the river, and after visiting some British trading posts and holding councils with the Indians of the region, returned to St. Louis on Apr. 30, 1806.

The young lieutenant was soon dispatched upon a longer and more important expedition, setting out from St. Louis on July 15, 1806. He was instructed to explore the headwaters of the Arkansas and Red rivers and to reconnoitre the Spanish settlements of New Mexico, being warned to "move with great circumspection . . . and to prevent any alarm or offence" (Coues, *post*, II, 563). After visiting the Pawnee villages on the Republican River, Pike (whose promotion to a captaincy occurred by routine on Aug. 12, 1806) moved up the Arkansas to the site of the present Pueblo, Colo. Here, on a side trip, he made an unsuccessful attempt to reach the summit of the peak that bears his name. After exploring South Park and the head of the Arkansas, he turned southward, seeking the source of the Red River. He crossed the Sangre de Cristo Mountains and on the Conejos branch of the Rio Grande constructed a fort of cottonwood logs. The Spaniards of New Mexico, learning of his presence within their territory, sent a body of troops to fetch him to Santa Fé. He acceded without opposition, for he desired to visit the region and study its geography and resources. From Santa Fé he was taken on to Chihuahua, where he was examined by the commandante general. Here he was well treated, except that his papers were taken from him. (These were destined to rest for a hundred years in the Mexican archives and then to be discovered by an American scholar; see H. E. Bolton, in *American Historical Review*, April 1908, especially p. 523, and "Papers of Zebulon M. Pike, 1806–07," *Ibid.*, July 1908. The papers have since been returned to the United States and are now in the Archives Division of the Adjutant-General's Office, in the War Department.)

After returning to the United States, Pike found his name coupled, in some quarters, with the Burr-Wilkinson scheme for empire in the Southwest. There seems little doubt that Wilkinson ordered the tour with the expectation that its findings would be helpful in promoting his

designs, but whether or not young Pike was aware of the connection cannot be determined. He protested his innocence and Henry Dearborn, the secretary of war, in a formal statement gave him a clean slate. Nevertheless, historians continue to differ in the conclusions they draw from the circumstantial evidence. The information Pike gathered was of value to his government, his conduct was not incompatible with patriotic motives, and his subsequent career evidences genuine patriotism. He was commissioned major in 1808, colonel in 1812, and, following the outbreak of the second war with Great Britain, brigadier-general in 1813. When the attack on York (now Toronto), Canada, was launched in April of that year the immediate command of the troops was entrusted to Pike. He led his men to victory, but was killed in the assault (Apr. 27) when the enemy's powder magazine exploded. He had married in 1801 Clarissa Brown, daughter of Gen. John Brown of Kentucky. Several children were born to them, only one of whom, a daughter, reached maturity. She married Symmes Harrison, a son of William Henry Harrison [*q.v.*]. In 1810 Pike published *An Account of Expeditions to the Sources of the Mississippi and through the Western Parts of Louisiana,* which is the principal source for the story of his explorations. A London edition was published in 1811, and the work was translated into French (1812), Dutch (1812), and German (1813).

[Biographies include *Zebulon Pike's Arkansas Jour.* (1932), ed. by S. H. Hart and A. B. Hulbert; Henry Whiting, "Life of Zebulon Montgomery Pike," in Jared Sparks, *The Lib. of Am. Biog.,* 2 ser., vol. V (1845); Elliott Coues, *The Expeditions of Zebulon Montgomery Pike* (3 vols., 1895); article in *Analectic Mag.,* Nov. 1814, copied in the Supplement to vol. VII (1814–15) of *Niles' Weekly Register,* in the appendix to *Naval Biography* (1815), and in J. M. Niles, *The Life of Oliver Hazard Perry* (1820). See also *Niles' Weekly Register,* June 5, 1813, Oct. 28, 1815; I. J. Cox, "Opening the Santa Fé Trail," *Mo. Hist. Rev.,* Oct. 1930; *Records of the Pike Family Asso. of America,* 1900–04. A contemporary Spanish sketch of the Pike expedition, with collateral correspondence, is in the Archivo Histórico Nacional at Madrid, and a transcript of this is in the Library of Congress.] L. R. H.

PILAT, IGNAZ ANTON (June 27, 1820–Sept. 17, 1870), landscape gardener, was born at St. Agatha, Austria. He received a general education of collegiate rank at the University of Vienna, studied at the botanical gardens connected with the university and also at the Imperial Botanical Gardens at Schönbrunn, and for some years subsequently remained connected with the latter garden. His first important commission, and probably his greatest Austrian work, was the laying out of a park for the famous Prince Metternich. Political troubles induced

Pilat

him to come to America in 1848, and the years immediately following he spent largely in the South, where his name is connected with the laying out of the grounds of several estates in Georgia, including the garden of the Cumming-Langdon house at Augusta. During this period he also made a brief visit to Vienna, where he was appointed director of the Botanical Gardens, but he resigned in either 1856 or 1857 at the call of the commissioners of Central Park, New York City.

Pilat's botanical survey of the Central Park site, made in collaboration with Charles Rawolle, resulted in the publication of a *Catalogue of Plants Gathered in August and September 1857 in the Ground of the Central Park* (1857), a thirty-four-page pamphlet. A later survey entitled "Catalogue of Trees, Shrubs, and Herbaceous Plants on the Central Park, Dec. 31, 1861, with the Months of Flowering and Fruiting of such as have Conspicuous Blossoms or Fruits," was published in the *Seventh Annual Report* of the Board of Commissioners of Central Park, covering the year 1863. These surveys and a book on elementary botany, issued in Austria, were his only publications.

His lasting memorial is his work on Central Park, where his experience and knowledge of plant materials, his cultivated taste, and his great zeal resulted in his successful interpretation of the plans of Frederick Law Olmsted and Calvert Vaux [*qq.v.*]. The landscape architect Samuel Parsons was of the opinion that neither Olmsted's nor Vaux's knowledge of plants was sufficient to enable them to work out the details of the planting without the assistance of a plant expert who was also a landscape gardener (Parsons, *post*). That Pilat, a true artist, was of the greatest assistance to the designers is attested by themselves. Olmsted and Vaux having resigned as landscape architects of Central Park in May 1863 were reappointed to the position in 1865 and at that time wrote to Pilat as follows: ". . . Before going on to the work again, we desire, as artists, to express our thanks to you, a brother artist, for the help you have so freely rendered to the design in our absence" (*Frederick Law Olmsted, Landscape Architect,* ed. by F. L. Olmsted, Jr., and Theodora Kimball, vol. II, 1928, p. 76).

In 1870 the Board of Commissioners of Central Park was dissolved and its work was taken over by the newly organized Department of Public Parks whose first annual report (1870–71) contains Pilat's plans for the improvement of several of the smaller parks and squares of the city, among them the plan for the development of Mount Morris Park. At the time of his death

in 1870 preliminary planting sketches of most of the parks under improvement had been completed. During the last years of his life he also engaged in private practice, doing professional work for William Cullen Bryant, the Massachusetts Agricultural College, Cyrus W. Field, and others. He died at his home in New York City of consumption, thought to have resulted from his untiring devotion to the interests of the Central Park and the exposure consequent thereon. He was survived by a widow, Clara L. (Rittler) Pilat, and by five children.

[Unpublished data in possession of Pilat's son, Oliver I. Pilat, and his nephew, Carl F. Pilat; I. N. Phelps Stokes, *Iconography of Manhattan Island*, III, (1918), 723; Mabel Parsons, *Memories of Samuel Parsons* (1926); Alice G. B. Lockwood, *Gardens of Colony and State* (Garden Club of America, 1934), vol. II; E. H. Hall, "Central Park in the City of New York," App. G, in *Sixteenth Ann. Report, 1911, Am. Scenic and Hist. Preservation Soc.* (1911); "New York City, Parks," in *Twentieth Ann. Report . . . Am. Scenic and Hist. Preservation Soc.* (1915); *Bull. Torrey Botanical Club*, Sept. 1870; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 20, 1870; *N. Y. Herald*, Sept. 20, 1870; *N. Y. Tribune*, Sept. 20 and 21, 1870; N. Y. *Evening Post*, Sept. 19 and 21, 1870.] K. McN.

PILCHER, JOSHUA (Mar. 15, 1790–June 5, 1843), fur trader, superintendent of Indian affairs, the son of Joshua and Nancy Pilcher, was born in Culpeper County, Va., to which his grandfather is said to have emigrated early in the eighteenth century. The family removed to Fayette County, Ky., where the father died in 1810. The son studied medicine but soon drifted into the mercantile business and the fur trade. He removed to St. Louis from Nashville, Tenn., about 1815. He became senior warden of the Missouri lodge of Masons organized under a Tennessee charter approved on Oct. 8, 1816. With others, by consent of the legislature, he conducted a lottery for the benefit of this lodge and paid prizes aggregating $60,000. In St. Louis he was associated in busines with N. S. Anderson and, after the latter's death, became a partner of Thomas F. Riddick, a relative, under the name of Riddick & Pilcher. He was one of the directors of the Bank of St. Louis.

He joined in the reorganization of the Missouri Fur Company in 1819, and in 1820 he became president after the death of Manuel Lisa [*q.v.*]. In 1823 he was conspicuous in Henry Leavenworth's campaign against the Arikara Indians. He went on yearly expeditions into the Indian country and spent three years, from 1827 to 1830, with an outfit of forty-five men trading and trapping, going up the Platte River to its source, and penetrating the country beyond the Rocky Mountains. On this journey he was indefatigable and obtained information of great value for subsequent expeditions. Joining the western department of the American Fur Company after the dissolution of the Missouri Fur Company, he took charge of their post near Council Bluffs in 1831. He spent a number of years in the fur trade of the Upper Missouri and acquired a knowledge of the various tribes of that region. In 1837 he became Indian agent for the Upper Missouri tribes, having served several years previously in similar capacity for the Sioux of the Missouri, Cheyenne, and Ponca. When William Clark [*q.v.*] died, Pilcher succeeded him as superintendent of Indian affairs and served from Mar. 4, 1839, until Sept. 6, 1841. He was intelligent, industrious, and liberal. He was very enterprising and gave vitality to all undertakings in which he was engaged. He was never married, though he was once on the verge of a duel over a young lady to whom he was engaged. He was a devoted friend of Thomas H. Benton and consequently drew the opposition of Benton's enemies. In 1817 he was his second in Benton's first duel with Charles Lucas. In his will he left a note of Benton's for $3500 to the senator's daughter and his dueling pistols to Benton's son. He died in St. Louis of lung trouble.

[St. Louis Probate Court Records; John Dougherty and Chouteau collections in Lib. of Mo. Hist. Soc.; H. M. Chittenden, *The Am. Fur Trade of the Far West* (1902), vols. I, II; F. L. Billon, *Annals of St. Louis . . . 1804-1821* (1888); *Mo. Grand Lodge Bulletin*, Nov. 1927, pp. 167–68, Aug. 1928, pp. 132–38; J. H. S. Ardery, *Ky. Records*, vol. I (1926); Doane Robinson, "Official Correspondence of the Leavenworth Expedition . . . in 1823," *S. D. Hist. Colls.*, vol. I (1902); *Am. State Papers: Indian Affairs*, vol. II (1834); M. C. Pilcher, *Hist. Sketches of the Campbell, Pilcher, and Kindred Families* (copr. 1911); *Mo. Gazette and Public Advertiser* (St. Louis), Aug. 24, 1816, Mar. 29, 1817; *Mo. Intelligencer* (Franklin), Nov. 25, Dec. 2, 9, 16, 1823; *Mo. Reporter* (St. Louis), June 8, 1843; *Mo. Republican* (St. Louis), June 7, 1843.] S. M. D.

PILCHER, PAUL MONROE (Apr. 11, 1876–Jan. 4, 1917), surgeon and urologist, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., the son of Lewis Stephen Pilcher, himself a distinguished surgeon, and Martha S. (Phillips) Pilcher. After studying at the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute, he entered the University of Michigan where he graduated with the degree of B.S. in 1898. Two years later he received the degree of M.D. from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York. For two years following graduation, he was an intern in the Seney Hospital, Brooklyn, of which institution his father was senior surgeon. He then went abroad and for a year studied in clinics in Göttingen, Vienna, and Berlin, his work being chiefly in pathology and in the diagnostic use of the cystoscope. While in Europe he came under

the influence and teachings of Koenig, Orth, Nitze, and Von Fritsch.

Returning to Brooklyn in 1903, he received appointments to the Seney, German, St. John's, and Jewish hospitals. He resigned these positions in 1910, however, to join his father and brothers in the development of a private hospital. With a splendid surgical training as a background, Pilcher worked with enthusiasm and soon became well known and respected for his thoroughness and skill. He introduced methods for the investigation of patients which have been widely adopted by others. His frequent visits to clinics kept him well-informed as to medical progress elsewhere. His *Practical Cystoscopy and the Diagnosis of Surgical Diseases of the Kidneys and Urinary Bladder* (1911) went through two editions and was widely acclaimed. Besides being an exposition on the comparatively new science of cystoscopy, it was written in a clear, lucid style that reflected a highly cultured background. Following a visit to Copenhagen, he published *Abdominal Surgery, Clinical Lectures for Students and Physicians* (1914), a translation of the work of N. T. Rovsing. He also contributed an important chapter, entitled "Prostatic Obstructions," to *Modern Urology* (1918), edited by Hugh Cabot. He was also the author of many scientific contributions to medical publications, and from 1907 to 1911, edited the *Long Island Medical Journal.* He was operating surgeon at Eastern Long Island Hospital, Greenport; chairman of the section in surgery of the New York State Medical Society; and a member of numerous other professional societies.

Although he died of pneumonia at the comparatively early age of forty, he had already won recognition both as a skilful surgeon and by reason of his original researches in urology, which were pioneer work of their kind in the United States. In 1905 he married Mary Finlay of Montclair, N. J. She, with their two sons, survived him.

[*Annals of Surgery*, May 1917; *Long Island Medic. Jour.*, May 1917; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Trans. Am. Surgic. Asso.*, vol. XXXV (1917); *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 5, 1917.]

G. M. L.

PILKINGTON, JAMES (Jan. 4, 1851–Apr. 25, 1929), athlete, was born in Cavendish, Windsor County, Vt., the son of Thomas Pilkington, a farmer, and his wife, Anne Cusack. He never revisited his birthplace, and his earliest recollections were of Hillsboro, Highland County, Ohio, where his parents settled while he was still an infant. He lost no time in growing up. Giving his age as fifteen, he enlisted June 5, 1863, as bugler in the 24th Independent Battery of Ohio Volunteer Light Artillery and spent the next two years guarding prisoners on Johnson's Island near Sandusky and at Camp Douglas, Ill. When his battery was mustered out in 1865, he set forth in search of the adventure that the war had denied him, wandered through the Southwest, tarried awhile in New Orleans, worked his way up the Mississippi, tried life in Chicago, and finally reached New York, which was his home thereafter. For a number of years he was on the police force. Endowed with a superb body and the generous instincts of a great sportsman, he excelled at boxing, wrestling, rowing, bowling, trapshooting, and all track and field sports. With William Muldoon [*q.v.*] he was one of the founders of the Police Athletic Association and the Empire Athletic Association. On Mar. 11, 1882, at the old Madison Square Garden, he won the national amateur heavyweight boxing and wrestling championships, competing in and winning both events on the same night. He was most famous, however, as an oarsman. At a regatta at Greenwood Lake, N. J., in July 1882, he rowed in singles, doubles, six-oared gig, and eight-oared shell on a mile-and-one-half course, his boat winning every race. As the doubles was first declared a dead heat and had to be rowed over, this meant seven and one-half miles at racing speed. With Jack Nagle, then eighteen years old, as his partner in the national championship doubles at Pullman, Ill., Aug. 8, 1889, he set a record that stood over forty years. He was president of the National Association of Amateur Oarsmen from 1900 to 1920 and remained on the executive committee until his death. For a number of years he was a member of the American Olympic Committee. He worked constantly to interest young men in rowing and was especially successful in encouraging the sport in the New York high schools. When he grew too old to row he became a coach. His training rules were of the simplest: "You want to eat good food and do lots of hard work and get lots of good sleep. And when you're fighting, fight; when you're walking, walk; and when you're rowing, row!" The notion that there was such a thing as "athlete's heart" made him jeer. When his fame as an athlete brought him friends and financial backing, he became a contractor. His firm did work in various parts of the country, but chiefly in New York, where "Big Jim" himself did the first actual work for the original New York subway, beginning the excavation in Bleecker Street Mar. 26, 1900. Later he built part of the Broadway subway north of 135th Street and a section of the Catskill Aqueduct. Failing eyesight compelled him to give up his

business activities in 1923, and thereafter he seldom left his home on Sedgwick Avenue opposite the Bronx reservoir, but he continued to accompany the Columbia University crews to Poughkeepsie when they were in training. He died after a brief illness in his seventy-ninth year. His first wife, whom he married in 1877, was Constance Burke; his second wife, Kate Lysaght, and a daughter by his first marriage, survived him.

[*N. Y. Times*, Apr. 26, 27, 1929; *N. Y. Herald-Tribune*, Apr. 26, 1929; *Official Roster of the Soldiers of the State of Ohio in the War of the Rebellion*, X (1889), 630, 633; R. F. Kelley, *American Rowing* (1932), pp. 61–64; *James Pilkington* (booklet issued by the Nat. Asso. of Amateur Oarsmen); information from his daughter, Lily L. Pilkington.] G. H. G.

PILLING, JAMES CONSTANTINE (Nov. 16, 1846–July 26, 1895), ethnologist, was born in Washington, D. C., the son of James and Susan (Collins) Pilling. He received his education in the public schools and Gonzaga College, a Jesuit institution at Washington. He worked in a book store for a time and became proficient in stenography, which qualification, rare at the time, was to lead to important results in his life work. Beginning as stenographer in the courts of the District of Columbia when he was twenty, he later became an employee of congressional committees and commissions. He was asked by John W. Powell [*q.v.*] to join the survey of the Rocky Mountains in 1875. His imagination was stimulated by this field work with Powell, during which he was one of the party to explore the Grand Canyon, and his interest in the diverse languages of the Indians was aroused by contact with the little-known tribes of the Rockies. He began the life work he was henceforth indefatigably to pursue. The next five years, 1875 to 1880, he spent in collecting ethnological material concerning the Indians and acquiring skill in bibliographical method. He was then appointed chief clerk of the geological survey, and he also served as chief clerk of the ethnological bureau.

His preoccupation with the Indian was mainly in the literature on the languages of the various groups. At the inception of the Bureau of American Ethnology this groundwork was especially needed, and in 1892 he began to devote his whole time to bibliographical work. He produced in a few years an unparalleled work on the bibliography of the Indian tribes. As a preliminary he had begun a "Catalogue of the Linguistic Manuscripts in the Library of the Bureau of Ethnology" published in the *United States Bureau of American Ethnology, First Annual Report* (1881). It was followed by *Proof-sheets of a Bibliography of the Languages of the North*

American Indians (1885). This preliminary work was in the nature of a record of the titles he was able to collect from his own research and from other investigators. The first definite work on a single linguistic stock was the "Bibliography of the Eskimo Language" in 1887, followed by the "Bibliography of the Siouan Languages" the same year, the "Bibliography of the Iroquoian Languages" in 1888, and the following year the "Bibliography of the Muskhogean Languages." Bibliographies of the Athapascan Languages in 1892, the Chinookan in 1893, the Salishan in 1893, and the Wakashan in 1894 completed his great works. These were all published in the series of *United States Bureau of Ethnology Bulletins* (numbers 1, 5, 6, 9, 14, 15, 16, 19). The last article from his pen was published in the *American Anthropologist* in January 1895, entitled "The Writings of Padre Andres de Olmos in the Languages of Mexico." Other articles by him had appeared from time to time in journals and magazines. Without his proficiency as a stenographer the task of preparing these bibliographies would have been impossible. This work traced for scholars a vast mass of literature, much of which was difficult of access in the libraries of the world. Incidentally it led, in great measure, to the gathering of the comprehensive library of the Bureau of American Ethnology, which is regarded as unexcelled in rare books and manuscripts on the Indians. In his work he visited most of the important libraries of the United States, and by correspondence he added material from foreign libraries. Although bibliographical accretions are endless, his work of recognizing and recording so much of the source material for the study of Indian culture will remain a permanent contribution to science. Much of his later work was accomplished in a struggle against advancing disease. He died at Olney, Md., survived by his wife, Minnie L. (Harper) Pilling, to whom he was married in 1888, and by their one daughter.

[Marcus Baker, *In Memoriam: James Constantine Pilling* (1895); *Johnson's Universal Cyclop.*, new ed., vol. VI (1896); W. J. McGee, *Am. Anthropologist*, Oct. 1895.] W. H.

PILLOW, GIDEON JOHNSON (June 8, 1806–Oct. 8, 1878), soldier, son of Gideon and Anne (Payne) Pillow, was born in Williamson County, Tenn. Graduating from the University of Nashville in 1827, he became a shrewd and successful, but not a profoundly learned, criminal lawyer in Columbia, Tenn., with James K. Polk for some time as his partner. He married Mary Martin, and they had ten children. Pillow held no civil office of any importance and took openly

no very prominent part in political affairs, but he delighted in under-cover political manipulations, in which he considered himself adept. He claimed for himself the major responsibility for the nomination of Polk for the presidency in 1844, though this claim was disputed by others. In 1852 he took an important part in negotiations that resulted in the nomination of Franklin Pierce, and in this year and four years later he intrigued unsuccessfully to secure his own nomination for the vice-presidency.

Pillow's claim to notoriety, however, is not based on his activities as a politician, but on his career as a vain, ambitious, quarrelsome, and unsuccessful soldier. Despite his lack of military training or experience, President Polk appointed him a brigadier-general of volunteers in 1846, for service in the war with Mexico, and subsequently advanced him to a major-generalship. After a brief and inactive period of service on the Rio Grande under General Taylor, he was transferred to General Scott's army and took part in the campaign that resulted in the capture of Mexico City. He fought at Vera Cruz, Cerro Gordo, Contreras, and Chapultepec, and was twice wounded. He considered himself Polk's special representative and maintained a confidential correspondence with him. He quarreled violently with Gen. Winfield Scott [*q.v.*], who charged him with the authorship of a letter, signed "Leonidas," in the *New Orleans Daily Delta* of Sept. 10, 1847, in which Pillow's military activities at Contreras were praised and those of Scott belittled. The charges were examined by two successive courts of inquiry who decided that no further proceedings should be taken against Pillow. Polk took pleasure in acquitting his friend "of any censure," considering him "a gallant and highly meritorious officer" who had been "greatly persecuted" by Scott (*Diary, post,* IV, 7, 17).

On the question of secession, Pillow's position was conservative. He took a prominent part in the Southern Convention which met in Nashville in June and November 1850, and opposed the proposals of extremists from the Lower South. In 1860 he was a Douglas Democrat, and he refused to view the election of Lincoln as in itself a justification of disunion, proposing to save the Union by compromise. When war began, however, he gave his support to the cause of the South and was appointed senior major-general of Tennessee's provisional army. When his troops were transferred to Confederate service, he was greatly chagrined that he was not continued in command of them, but he accepted a brigadier-generalship in the Confederate army.

He fought at the battle of Belmont, Mo., Nov. 7, 1861, and was second in command at Fort Donelson. He proposed that the weary and closely beset army holding this important position of defense attempt to cut its way through Grant's superior forces, but other officers counseled surrender. When Gen. John B. Floyd [*q.v.*] then relinquished command, Pillow passed it to Gen. Simon B. Buckner [*q.v.*], and he and Floyd made good their escape before the surrender was effected (February 1862). He was suspended from command for some months (March–August 1862) and the Confederate secretary of war, George W. Randolph, held him guilty of "grave errors of judgment in the military operations which resulted in the surrender of the army" but found no reason "to question his courage and loyalty" (*Official Records,* 1 ser. VII, 313). He protested bitterly, threatened to resign; and during the remainder of the war was given no important command. For some years after the war he practised law in Memphis, with Isham G. Harris as his partner. He died in Helena, Ark.

[C. M. Polk, *Some Old Colonial Families of Va.* (1915); J. H. Smith, *The War with Mexico* (2 vols., 1919); E. I. McCormac, *James K. Polk* (1922); R. F. Nichols, *Franklin Pierce* (1931); P. M. Hamer, *Tenn.: a Hist.* (1933), vols. I, II; *The Diary of James K. Polk,* (4 vols., 1910), ed. by M. M. Quaife; proceedings of inquiry in *Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 65,* 30 Cong., 1 Sess., *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Army*); "Letters of Gideon J. Pillow to James K. Polk, 1844," *Am. Hist. Rev.,* July 1906; unpublished letters by Pillow in Lib. of Cong., N. Y. Pub. Lib., and library of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.; *Daily Arkansas Gazette* (Little Rock), Oct. 10, 1878.]

P. M. H.

PILLSBURY, CHARLES ALFRED (Dec. 3, 1842–Sept. 17, 1899), flour miller, the eldest son of George Alfred Pillsbury (Aug. 29, 1816–July 15, 1898) and Margaret Sprague (Carlton) Pillsbury, was born at Warner, N. H. His father was a grocer in Warner until 1851, when he became purchasing agent for the Concord Railroad, a position he held for twenty-five years. Charles attended the public schools at Warner and at Concord, prepared for college at New London Academy, and then attended Dartmouth, earning at least part of his college expenses by teaching. After his graduation, in 1863, he went to Montreal where he was a clerk in a produce commission store for about three years. He acquired a share in the business but shortly sold it in order to go West, following his uncle, John Sargent Pillsbury [*q.v.*], who had settled in Minneapolis in territorial days.

Soon after his arrival in Minneapolis in 1869, Charles Pillsbury purchased a share in one of the flour mills utilizing the water power of the Falls of St. Anthony. It was a small and not particularly successful enterprise, and his part-

ners, because of other interests, left the management to him. At first Pillsbury knew nothing of milling, but he was a man of keen mind, great energy, and physical strength, and soon acquired a working knowledge of the business. He entered the industry at the moment when revolutionary changes were about to transform it and had a large share in bringing these changes about. When Edmond La Croix produced his purifier, making possible the manufacture of a high-grade bread flour from Northwestern spring wheat and introducing "New Process" milling, Pillsbury was one of the first to see the possibilities of the machine. He induced George T. Smith, who claimed to be its co-inventor, to become head miller at the Pillsbury Mill and to install the new machines there. A few years later Pillsbury was one of the leaders in the introduction of the roller process. In consequence, his profits were large and his fortune grew rapidly.

In 1872 he organized the firm of C. A. Pillsbury & Company, the other members being his father and uncle; two or three years later his brother, Fred C. Pillsbury, became a member. In the next decade six more mills were purchased or built by the Pillsburys, including the Pillsbury "A" Mill (completed in 1883), which was advertised to be the largest in the world. In 1878 one of their mills was destroyed by fire, in December 1881 three were burned, but by 1889 they had three mills in operation with a total capacity of 10,000 barrels a day. Their flour brands were widely advertised, they were leaders in building up the flour export trade, and leaders also in experiments with wheat and flour testing, out of which modern systems of laboratory control have been developed.

Charles Pillsbury seems also to have taken a prominent part in organizing the grain trade of the Northwest, through the Millers' Association (Minneapolis) and later the chamber of commerce, so as to concentrate this trade at Minneapolis. The growth of the Minneapolis mills was in part due to extremely favorable freight rates, and Pillsbury was instrumental both in securing such rates and in the building of the Minneapolis, Saulte Sainte Marie, & Atlantic Railway, by which the Minneapolis millers sought to free themselves from their dependence on the Chicago lines. The large scale of his operations forced him to strengthen his sources of supply by building up a subsidiary grain elevator company which owned both country and terminal elevators. He was always greatly interested in the wheat market, and his dealings in it were frequently spectacular if not always financially successful. Curiously, he was usually a bull in the market—

Pillsbury

was generally boosting the price of wheat and was quite convinced that short selling should be prevented if possible.

In his later years Pillsbury became interested in a number of other enterprises such as railroads, banking, and lumbering, though milling always claimed the major share of his attention. His strong and winning personality, his travels, and his public utterances made him the best known of American millers. He was usually on very friendly terms with his employees. For five years the firm experimented with a profit-sharing plan under which over $150,000 was paid to the employees. Similarly he aided the Minneapolis coopers to start their coöperative shops, which were for years a notably successful example of producers' coöperation. He made large gifts to charitable and philanthropic undertakings. He was also somewhat interested in politics but played a relatively smaller part in that field than his uncle or his father, who after removing to Minneapolis in 1878 held several municipal offices. From 1878 to 1885 Charles A. Pillsbury was a member of the state Senate, but he held no other official position.

In 1889 an English syndicate purchased the Pillsbury mills, together with those of Senator W. D. Washburn and the water power of the Falls of St. Anthony, combining them to form the Pillsbury-Washburn Flour Mills Company, Ltd. Charles A. Pillsbury retained a large interest in the new company and was made managing director. In this position he was not so successful as in his earlier years. A new type of leadership which emphasized small economies as well as bold pioneering was required, and he had little taste for these. On the other hand, his bold speculations in the wheat market were sometimes disastrous. Nevertheless, under his management the Pillsbury-Washburn Company was the largest milling firm in the world, and at the time of his death, in Minneapolis, the *Northwestern Miller* characterized Pillsbury himself as "easily the foremost figure in the American milling trade."

On Sept. 12, 1866, Charles Pillsbury married Mary A. Stinson of Dunbarton, N. H. Of the four children born to them, twin sons, John S. and Charles S. Pillsbury, survived their father, in whose memory they founded the Pillsbury Settlement House in Minneapolis.

[Isaac Atwater, *Hist. of the City of Minneapolis, Minn.* (1893); C. B. Kuhlmann, *The Development of the Flour-Milling Industry in the U. S.* (1929); D. B. Pilsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); "The Early History of New Process Milling," *Northwestern Miller*, Aug. 24, 1883; obituary and editorial, *Ibid.*, Sept. 20, 1899; *Minneapolis Journal*, Sept. 18, 1899.]

C. B. K.

PILLSBURY, HARRY NELSON (Dec. 5, 1872–June 17, 1906), chess player, was a descendant of William Pillsbury who was living in Dorchester, Mass., as early as 1641. The son of Luther Batchelder and Mary A. (Leathe) Pillsbury, he was born in Somerville, Mass., where his father was a teacher in the high school. His interest in chess began when he was sixteen and for the next five years he was active in Boston chess circles. After two years' attendance at high school and some slight training in commercial subjects, he abandoned his intention to prepare for business and devoted himself to chess, beginning a career which brought him international distinction. In April 1893 he defeated in Boston the Berlin master, C. Walbrodt, 2–0, and later A. Schottländer of Breslau. He was the first American to engage professionally in extended chess exhibitions. At Philadelphia, in 1893, he played four games blindfold, winning three and losing one. He was also an expert in checkers and bridge, and all three games, as well as memory feats, figured in his exhibitions. After reading once a list of fifty numbered words he could give the word corresponding to any number, the number of any word, or repeat the list backwards. In blindfold play he could repeat from memory the game at any board, or, indeed, begin at almost any point in each game a discussion of it. One of his greatest exhibitions of blindfold play took place at the Franklin Chess Club, Philadelphia, on Apr. 28, 1900, when he conducted twenty games simultaneously (*British Chess Magazine*, June 1900). His ability to remember the sequence of moves in such cases he compared (in a personal talk with the writer of this sketch) to the ability to recall the sequence of the discussions in a series of business interviews. At one time he played as "Ajeeb, the Automatic Player" in the Eden Musée, Boston, obtaining some regular income in this way.

In master tournament play, his success in 1893 in finishing in the first half of a group including Emanuel Lasker (later world's champion), A. Albin, F. J. Lee, and J. W. Showalter, was his first notable achievement. He won first place in 1895 in the Hastings Tournament in England, thus establishing himself among the great master-players of the world. At Vienna in 1898 he tied for first with Siegbert Tarrasch, but lost the play-off. He stood among the first three in twelve tournaments between 1894 and 1904, tying for first at Munich in 1900. In match play he defeated Showalter in 1897 and in 1898, thus acquiring the title of United States champion. He was always a serious student, and contributed to the theory of chess in the defense against the

Pillsbury

Ruy Lopez, in the Petroff defense, and in introducing the modern aggressive Queen's pawn opening. Both as the greatest native genius since Paul C. Morphy [*q.v.*] and by his personal charm and versatility, he revived American interest in the noble game.

On Jan. 17, 1901, Pillsbury married Mary Ellen Bush, daughter of Judge Albert J. Bush of Monticello, N. Y. He made the effort demanded by his family tradition to maintain a dignified place in life and was constantly distressed by the difficulty of earning a decent living by chess. The blindfold exhibitions from which he principally derived his income required many hours of concentrated mental effort, sometimes twelve at a stretch, and during this time he smoked strong cigars and sometimes took alcoholic stimulants; to his physical condition he gave little thought. His death at thirty-three, in the Friends' Asylum, Frankford, Pa., was due primarily to a disease contracted in Russia, but resulted in part from the lack of resistance due to his irregular habits.

[P. W. Sergeant and W. H. Watts, *Pillsbury's Chess Career* (1923); *Am. Chess Bulletin*, July 1906; *Lasker's Chess Magazine*, May 1906; personal letter from Pillsbury's brother, Dr. G. D. Pillsbury; D. B. Pillsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); Richard Réti, *Masters of the Chessboard* (1932); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Tribune*, *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), June 18, 1906.] L. C. K.

PILLSBURY, JOHN ELLIOTT (Dec. 15, 1846–Dec. 30, 1919), naval officer and oceanographer, was a native of Lowell, Mass., the son of John Gilman and Elizabeth Wimble (Smith) Pillsbury, and a descendant of William Pillsbury who emigrated to Massachusetts about 1640. At the age of fourteen he was made a page in the United States House of Representatives and served till appointed to the Naval Academy by President Lincoln in 1862. His training took place at Newport and Annapolis, and in the summers of 1863 and 1864 on the *Marion* and *Saco* respectively as they cruised in search of the *Tacony* and other Confederate raiders. He graduated from the Academy in 1867, was made an ensign in 1868, and subsequently advanced through the grades until July 4, 1908, he became rear admiral. After two years at the Boston Navy Yard, he was sent to the Orient on the *Colorado*, participated in a futile attempt to open Korea to the world, and then returned to San Francisco on the *Benicia*. In 1873 he was at the Torpedo Station, Newport, and on Aug. 26 of that year married Florence Greenwood Aitchison, of Portland, Me.

Pillsbury's first contact with the scientific work of the navy was made in 1874–75, when

he went on the *Swatara* to Tasmania and New Zealand with a party of scientists to observe the transit of Venus. When he returned he began service with the Coast Survey, which lasted for fifteen years. His chief work was in the Gulf Stream. In 1876 he invented a current meter for determining the flow of ocean currents at various depths—an instrument which was used till his death (see *Encyclopedia Britannica,* 14th edition, V, 305). While in command of the Coast Survey steamer *Blake* (1884–89) he anchored his ship in water two miles deep, and determined the axis of the Gulf Stream and many of the laws governing its flow—work which has been of permanent value. The record of it appeared first in *Report of the Superintendent of the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey . . . 1890,* and was later published separately under the title, *The Gulf Stream* (1891).

Pillsbury returned to active duty in the navy in 1891, attended the Naval War College in 1897, and when the Spanish-American War broke out was already in command of the dynamite cruiser *Vesuvius,* which was engaged in the blockade of Santiago from June 13, 1898, until after the destruction of Cervera's fleet. Armed with three guns operated by compressed air, the *Vesuvius* would stand in close to the shore on dark nights and fire three dynamite shells at the Spanish batteries. The effect was slight, except that this new form of attack shattered the Spanish morale and dug huge holes where the shells landed. In 1905–07 Pillsbury served under Robley D. Evans [*q.v.*] as chief of staff of the North Atlantic Squadron, where he is credited by his superior with keeping the fleet in fine condition. He then served until 1909 as chief of the Bureau of Navigation, although he was retired on Dec. 15, 1908, and he was also on the board which decided against the claims of Dr. Frederick A. Cook that he had reached the North Pole. He became one of the managers of the National Geographic Society and held various offices in that organization till elected president in April 1919, a few months before his death, which occurred in Washington from paralysis of the heart. He was survived by his wife and one daughter. Besides *The Gulf Stream,* he published "Wilkes and D'Urville's Discoveries in Wilkes Land" (*National Geographic Magazine,* February 1910), "The Grandest and Most Mighty Terrestrial Phenomenon: the Gulf Stream" (*Ibid.,* August 1912), and "Charts and Chart Making" (*Proceedings of the United States Naval Institute,* vol. X, no. 2, 1884).

[D. B. Pilsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; *National Geographic Mag.,* Apr. 1920; *Army and Navy Reg.,* Jan. 3, 1920; *Army and Navy Jour.,* Jan. 3, 1920; *Evening Star* (Washington), Dec. 30, 1919; L. R. Hamersly, *Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy* (7th ed., 1902); F. E. Chadwick, *The Relations of the U. S. and Spain: The Spanish-American War* (1911), I, 379–80; Seaton Schroeder, *A Half Century of Naval Service* (1922); R. D. Evans, *An Admiral's Log* (1910).] W. B. N.

PILLSBURY, JOHN SARGENT (July 29, 1828–Oct. 18, 1901), flour-miller, governor of Minnesota, one of five children of John and Susan (Wadleigh) Pillsbury, was born at Sutton, N. H. On his father's side he was descended from William Pillsbury (or Pilsbury) who came to Massachusetts as early as 1641, settling first in Dorchester and then in Ipswich; on his mother's side he was also of Massachusetts Puritan stock. After a common-school education, he started to learn a trade, but abandoned it to become a clerk in his brother's general store. Soon after reaching his majority he opened a store of his own in partnership with Walter Harriman [*q.v.*]; two years later he was a merchant tailor and cloth dealer in Concord.

In 1855, after a tour of the West, Pillsbury settled at St. Anthony, Minn. (now a part of Minneapolis), as a hardware dealer, in partnership with his brother-in-law, Woodbury Fisk, and George A. Cross. Moderate success was interrupted by a fire which destroyed a season's stock and by financial panic which prevented rehabilitation for some years. In 1875 he sold his hardware interests in order to devote more time to the lumber and real-estate businesses which he had developed, and especially to the milling enterprise in which, in 1872, he had embarked together with his nephew, Charles A. Pillsbury [*q.v.*], and his brother George A. Pillsbury. About 1875 another nephew, Fred C. Pillsbury, joined the firm. Their milling business grew to be the most extensive in the world for a period, and the products of the Pillsbury Mills were known wherever men used wheat. Their energy and ability in realizing the opportunities of a relatively unexploited region built up for each of the partners a considerable fortune. John Sargent Pillsbury's seemed vast, in those days and in that place, although his multifarious benefactions caused him to leave an estate of only about a million and a half.

Pillsbury was far more, however, than a successful exploiter of a new country; he was a public-spirited citizen in the best sense of the word. For six years (1858–64) he was a member of the city council of St. Anthony. He helped organize the first three regiments which Minnesota sent to serve in the Civil War and the battalion recruited in 1862 to deal with the Indian uprising. In 1863 he was elected one of the Hennepin

County state senators, and, reëlected, served 1864–68, 1871, 1874, 1875. With no special effort on his own part he was nominated for governor by the Republican party in 1875 and elected to the office for three successive terms, serving as chief executive from Jan. 7, 1876, to Jan. 10, 1882. As governor, his most significant triumph was his success in persuading the legislature to provide for the redemption of an issue of railroad bonds authorized in 1858 and repudiated in 1860. This bond issue had been a bone of political contention for twenty years (W. W. Folwell, "The Five Million Loan," *Collections of the Minnesota Historical Society,* vol. XV, 1915), but Governor Pillsbury, after persistent urging, had the gratification in 1881 of signing a measure satisfactory to the claimants and, in his eyes, restoring the honor of the state. It was during this period that Minnesota, in common with other states of the Northwest was plagued with the "grasshopper scourge" which destroyed, season after season, all vegetation over wide areas. Pillsbury was energetic in personally investigating the seriousness of the situation and in securing relief, as well as in coördinating the activities of several states. Essentially a business man and not a politician, he did much to eliminate inefficiency and corruption in both state and local governments. From his own means he kept the penitentiary in operation when the legislature had neglected to make the usual appropriation, and advanced money to replace the burned hospital for insane in order to save the state the expense of a special session.

Significant as was his work in these ways, his most lasting public service was one he rendered the state university. In 1851 Congress had granted two townships of public lands for a university; this land was mortgaged to erect a building which, in turn, bore a mortgage when it was completed in 1857. The crash of that year found the embryo university laden with debt and its regents in despair of ever extricating it. In 1862 the legislature was ready to sell the land to satisfy the creditors. It was at this point that Pillsbury, made a regent in 1863, resolved that something should be done to save the institution. As state senator he was instrumental in securing an act (approved Mar. 4, 1864) by which an emergency board of three, with full powers, was created, and as one of these regents he set himself to the task of satisfying the creditors; he was successful to the extent that when all obligations were met the state still held some 30,000 acres of university lands. In 1895 the legislature made Pillsbury regent for life. For nearly forty years, in the midst of his manifold interests, the university engaged the best of his abilities. He took a personal interest in its plant, its faculty, and its students. During the last decade of his life, when he had withdrawn to a considerable degree from active business, he rarely let a day pass without visiting the campus to consult with President Cyrus Northrop [*q.v.*], and he continued to follow in every detail the life of the institution he had rescued. He died in Minneapolis at the age of seventy-three.

On Nov. 3, 1856, Pillsbury married Mahala Fisk of Warner, N. H. They had a son and two daughters. Both Pillsbury and his wife were lavish in their benefactions of private and public character.

[C. W. G. Hyde and William Stoddard, *Hist. of the Great Northwest and Its Men of Progress* (1901); W. W. Folwell, *A Hist. of Minn.*, vols. III, IV (1926, 1930); *Encyc. of Biog. of Minn.* (1900); H. B. Hudson, "A Public Servant of the Northwest," *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), Dec. 1901; D. B. Pilsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); J. K. Baker, "Lives of the Governors of Minnesota," *Minn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. XIII (1908); *Who's Who in America,* 1901–02; Isaac Atwater, *Hist. of the City of Minneapolis* (1893); *Dedication of the Pillsbury Memorial Town Hall in Sutton, N. H.* (1893); E. B. Johnson, *Forty Years of the Univ. of Minn.* (1910); *Minneapolis Jour.*, Oct. 18, 19, 1901.] L. B. S.

PILLSBURY, PARKER (Sept. 22, 1809–July 7, 1898), reformer, was born at Hamilton, Mass., the son of Oliver Pillsbury, a blacksmith and farmer, and Anna (Smith) Pillsbury. He was a descendant of William Pillsbury who came to Massachusetts about 1640. Parker's parents moved to Henniker, N. H., in 1814 and the boy's early education was limited to what the district school of that town had to offer. Until he was well past twenty years of age he worked on farms in New Hampshire and as a wagoner in Massachusetts. In 1835 he entered Gilmanton Theological Seminary, graduating in 1838. After studying a year at Andover Theological Seminary, he was engaged to supply the Congregational church at Loudon, N. H.; but in 1840 opposition to his denunciations of slavery from the pulpit led him to give up the ministry and devote himself to social reform. On Jan. 1, 1840, he married Sarah H. Sargent of Concord, N. H., who cooperated ardently in his activities.

He was an abolitionist of the Garrisonian type, and from 1840 until the emancipation of the slaves was lecture agent for the New Hampshire, Massachusetts, and American anti-slavery societies. An admirer of John Brown, he spoke at a demonstration meeting in Rochester, N. Y., following Brown's execution. In 1840 and again in 1845–46 he edited the *Herald of Freedom,* at Concord, N. H., and from January to May 1866, the *National Anti-Slavery Standard,* New York

City. After the Civil War, he labored for negro suffrage, believing that the right to vote was necessary for the negro's protection. He was also interested in temperance, political reform, international peace, and woman's rights. To the last-named cause he gave his longest service, being one of the earliest and most uncompromising nineteenth-century advocates of justice to women. He severed his connection with the *Standard,* because its managers were more favorable to votes for the negro than to votes for women, long served as vice-president of the New Hampshire Woman Suffrage Association and helped draft the constitution of the American Equal Rights Association. For a year and a half (1868–69) he was joint editor with Elizabeth Cady Stanton [*q.v.*] of the *Revolution,* a radical weekly. Though he held no regular pastorate, he preached for free religious societies in Toledo, Ohio, Battle Creek, Mich., Rochester, N. Y., and elsewhere. In addition to contributions to the papers with which he was identified, he wrote and published a large number of tracts on reforms, and was author of the *Acts of the Anti-Slavery Apostles* (1883), a history of the abolition movement in New England. As a public speaker he was fluent, sarcastic, and thunderous in his denunciations. James Russell Lowell in 1846 referred to him ("Letter from Boston," *Complete Poetical Works,* 1896, p. 112) as

> ". . . brown, broad-shouldered Pillsbury,
> Who tears up words like trees by the roots,
> A Theseus in stout cow-hide boots."

His interest in the work for human betterment continued to the last, and at the age of eighty-eight he wrote a letter to the convention of the National American Woman Suffrage Association. His death occurred at Concord, N. H. He had one daughter.

[D. B. Pilsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); E. C. Stanton, S. B. Anthony, and M. J. Gage, *The Hist. of Woman Suffrage,* vols. I–IV (1881–1902); I. H. Harper, *The Life and Work of Susan B. Anthony* (3 vols., 1899–1908); *People and Patriot* (Concord, N. H.), July 7, 1898; *Concord Evening Monitor,* July 7, 1898.]

M. W. W.

PILMORE, JOSEPH (Oct. 31, 1739–July 24, 1825), Protestant Episcopal clergyman, was born at Tadmouth, in Yorkshire, England. His name also appears as Pilmoor. At the age of sixteen he was converted under the preaching of John Wesley, who regarded him as a promising recruit and sent him to the school at Kingswood, near Bristol. Here Pilmore acquired a fair English and classical education. At an early age he became one of Wesley's lay assistants, working as an itinerant preacher in various places, but especially in Wales and Cumberland. In 1769 Wesley issued a call for volunteers to go to the American colonies and Pilmore and Richard Boardman offered themselves. They were accepted and at once sent out, arriving in Philadelphia in October of the same year.

Boardman went to New York, where there was a society already organized; Pilmore remained in Philadelphia, where he found about a hundred Methodists. He was not, therefore, the founder of Methodism in that city but was the first Methodist preacher there, though he had never been ordained by Wesley. He was remarkably successful, his willingness to adapt himself to any situation standing him in good stead; his first preaching was from an improvised stand in the race track. He later itinerated from Boston to Georgia, meeting with all sorts of adventures. On Jan. 2, 1774, he returned to England, probably because of the disturbed condition of the colonies and the fact that he was a stanch Loyalist. He was assigned work first at London and subsequently on the Norwich circuit and at Edinburgh, Nottingham, and York. He vigorously opposed Wesley in the matter of the Deed of Declaration of 1784, and as a consequence of the resulting friction he abandoned Methodism and returned to America. Here he joined the Protestant Episcopal Church which was just then in the process of organizing. He was ordered deacon on Nov. 27, 1785, by Bishop Samuel Seabury; his ordination to the priesthood occurred two days later.

Pilmore then returned to Philadelphia where he at once became rector of the United Parish of Trinity (Oxford), All Saints' (Lower Dublin), and St. Thomas's (Whitemarsh), all in the vicinity of Philadelphia. He added to these duties that of assistant minister, or evening preacher, of St. Paul's, Philadelphia. In 1789 he was a delegate from the diocese of Pennsylvania to the General Convention sitting at Philadelphia. Here he served on the committee on the revision of the Book of Common Prayer and on the sub-committee on the Communion Service. From 1793 to 1804 he was rector of the newly organized Christ Church in New York City, formed by seceders from Trinity Church, who were offended by the refusal of the vestry to call Pilmore as assistant minister of Trinity and evening lecturer. In 1804 he returned to Philadelphia as rector of St. Paul's Church and retained this cure until the end of his life, though he did little work after 1821. About 1790 he married Mary (Benezet) Wood, daughter of Daniel Benezet and widow of Joseph Wood; they had one child, a daughter, who died young. Pilmore was a man of massive frame and robust

constitution. His bearing was dignified and his voice described as sonorous. He must have been an amiable, kindly man, for there is a tradition in Philadelphia that he was known popularly as "Daddy Pilmore." He retained throughout his life his early evangelical views, which he set forth with much vigor and fervid eloquence, and he did much to give to the Episcopal churches in Philadelphia the evangelical character for which they were long noted.

[Manuscript sermons of Pilmore may be found in the Pa. Hist. Soc. in Phila.; portions of his journal as an itinerant preacher are given in J. P. Lockwood, *Western Pioneers* (London, 1881); personal reminiscences of Pilmore by the Rev. R. D. Hall appear in W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. V (1859). See also, Benjamin Allen, *Sketch of the Life of Dr. Pilmore* (1825); *The Jour. of Rev. John Wesley* (1909), ed. by Nehemiah Curnock; W. J. Townsend, H. B. Workman, and George Eayrs, *A New Hist. of Methodism* (London, 1909), vol. II; W. S. Perry, *Hist. of the Am. Episcopal Church* (1885); N. S. Barratt, *Outline of the Hist. of Old St. Paul's Church, Phila.* (1917); Samuel Small, *Geneal. Records of George Small . . . Daniel Benezet . . .* (1905); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), July 30, 1825.] J. C. A.

PILSBURY, AMOS (Feb. 8, 1805–July 14, 1873), prison administrator, was born in Londonderry, N. H., the son of Moses Cross and Lois (Cleaveland) Pilsbury. He was a descendant of William Pilsbury, or Pillsbury, who came to Boston late in 1640 or early in 1641, and married Dorothy Crosbey after an unconventional courtship. Amos spent his early years on the home farm, but when his father became warden of the New Hampshire state prison in 1818 and the family moved to Concord, he was sent to the academy there. He was known as a "dull scholar" and his father soon apprenticed him to a tanner and currier. When at the end of his apprenticeship he was unsuccessful in his attempt to find a journeyman's place at a living wage, he returned home and was in 1824 appointed guard in his father's prison and a year later, deputy warden.

His father had already achieved a more than local reputation, having made his prison a financial asset to the state instead of a liability. For this reason, perhaps, he was called to the wardenship of the new Connecticut prison at Wethersfield in 1826, where Amos soon joined him. When his father retired in 1830, because of ill health, Amos succeeded him, his youth causing the board of directors to express some misgivings about his election. Dissension between him and the directors soon ripened into warfare. In 1832 he demanded a legislative investigation of his work, was removed from office by a new board of directors, exonerated by the investigating committee, and reinstated in 1833, the Assembly compensating him both for the loss of his time and the cost of his defense (*Minutes of the Testimony Taken Before John Q. Wilson, Joseph Eaton, & Morris Woodruff, Committee from the General Assembly, to Inquire into the Condition of Connecticut State Prison, Together with Their Report and Remarks upon the Same*, 1834). He remained in office until 1845 when political fortunes caused his removal (*Memorial of Amos Pilsbury, Late Warden of the State Prison, to the General Assembly, May Session, 1845*, 1845). His abilities and experiences were not to be lost to the prison world, however. He was immediately called to Albany, N. Y., to supervise the construction of the new county penitentiary, of which he later served as warden, except for a brief period, until his last illness prompted his resignation. Urged to accept the superintendency of the New York City institutions on Ward's Island, he was absent from his position from 1855 to 1860, the last eight months of this period being spent as general superintendent of the metropolitan police, from which position he resigned in protest against the efforts of Mayor Fernando Wood to secure political control of the department. At his death in 1873 he was survived by his wife, Emily (Heath) Pilsbury, whom he had married in 1826, and who had borne him five children, three of whom died in infancy.

The Pilsburys, father and son, are said to have been the first professional prison wardens in the United States, Amos' service in three states covering a period of fifty years. In spite of the early accusations which challenged his competency, all commentators upon his life work unite in approval of his humane attitude toward his prisoners, albeit he was a strict disciplinarian. The two institutions which he headed were spoken of as models in their day and were sources of financial profit to the states. In the seventeen years he spent at Wethersfield that prison earned $93,000 above all expenses. His interest in jail reform made him propose to the General Assembly that each county be given a thousand dollars from the prison's surplus earnings on condition that its jail be rebuilt on the plan of the model jail at Hartford, and he was authorized to make such payments. In his 1841 report to the directors he also urged that the surplus be used to erect and maintain a special asylum for the criminal and pauper insane. His advice was widely sought. He shared in the work of launching the National Prison Association of the United States (1870), now the American Prison Association, and he represented the State of New York at the International Penitentiary Congress in London in 1872. At least

one of his officers became widely known, Zebulon Reed Brockway [*q.v.*], who began his prison career under Pilsbury as a guard at Wethersfield and Albany.

[D. B. Pilsbury and E. A. Getchell, *The Pillsbury Family* (1898); *Tribute to the Memory of Amos Pilsbury* (1873); *Trans. of the Third National Prison Reform Congress . . . 1874* (1874), pp. 31–33; David Dyer, *Hist. of the Albany Penitentiary* (1867); *Biog. Sketch of Amos Pilsbury, and a Brief Account of the Albany County Penitentiary* (1849); *Sketch of the Life and Public Services of Amos Pilsbury, Superintendent of the Albany Penitentiary, and Late General Superintendent of the Metropolitan Police* (1860); Joel Muntsell, *Albany Ann. Reg.*, 1849; O. F. Lewis, *The Development of Am. Prisons and Prison Customs, 1776–1845* (1922); *N. Y. Times*, July 15, 1873.]

T. S—n.

PINCHBACK, PINCKNEY BENTON STEWART (May 10, 1837–Dec. 21, 1921), politician, was born at Macon, Ga., the son of a white Mississippi planter, said to be William Pinchback, and of Eliza Stewart who had been a slave. He is sometimes referred to by the nickname "Percy Bysshe Shelley Pinchback." He was born free, because his mother had been emancipated by the father of her children and later sent to Ohio to educate them. About 1847 he was sent to high school in Cincinnati and in 1848 became a cabin boy and, later, a steward on riverboats. He was married to Nina Emily Hawthorne probably in 1860. In 1862, running the blockade at Yazoo City, he reached New Orleans, which was already in possession of the Union forces. He enlisted, raised a company of colored volunteers, known as the Corps d'Afrique, but resigned his commission in September 1863 because of difficulties over his race. Subsequently he was authorized to raise a company of colored cavalry.

At the close of the war he threw himself into Louisiana politics. Shrewd, energetic, aggressive, he represented the typical negro politician of the Reconstruction period. In 1867 he organized the fourth-ward Republican club, became a member of the state committee, and was sent to the constitutional convention of 1868. In 1868 he was elected to the state Senate, where he was elected president *pro tempore* in the exciting session of December 1871, and became, by virtue of that office, lieutenant-governor at the death of the mulatto incumbent, O. J. Dunn, in 1871. For the brief period from Dec. 9, 1872, to Jan. 13, 1873, he filled the gubernatorial office, while Henry Clay Warmoth [*q.v.*] was debarred from serving on account of impeachment proceedings. Though he had been originally nominated for governor by his wing of the Republican party in the fall campaign of 1872 he consented, in the interest of party harmony, to accept the place of

congressman-at-large on the Republican ticket. He was declared elected, but he was never seated because his Democratic opponent contested and ultimately won the seat. His experience in the Senate was similar, for, although elected senator by the Louisiana legislature in January 1873, after a contest of three years he was denied the seat by a close vote. He was, however, allowed payment equal to salary and mileage up to the termination of the contest. In 1877 he left the Republican party to support Governor Nicholls and the Democrats. The last office in his public career was that of surveyor of customs in New Orleans, to which he was appointed in 1882. He was, however, later recognized by several honorary posts. When fifty years old, turning from politics to law, he took the law course at Straight University, now Straight College, in New Orleans, and won admission to the bar, though he never practised his profession. In 1890 he removed to Washington, where he lived until his death.

[W. J. Simmons, *Men of Mark* (1887); Ella Lonn, *Reconstruction in La.* (1918); H. C. Warmoth, *War, Politics, and Reconstruction* (1930); *Times-Picayune* (New Orleans), Dec. 22, 1921; *Washington Post* (D. C.), Dec. 22, 1921; *Afro-American* (Baltimore), Dec. 30, 1921.]

E. L.

PINCKNEY, CHARLES (Oct. 26, 1757–Oct. 29, 1824), author of the "Pinckney draught" of the federal Constitution, governor of South Carolina, senator, minister to Spain, was born in Charlestown (Charleston), S. C. He was the fourth and eldest surviving child of Col. Charles and Frances (Brewton) Pinckney, and a second cousin of Charles Cotesworth and Thomas Pinckney [*qq.v.*]. His father (1731–1782), a wealthy lawyer and planter, first opposed the Revolutionary movement, then accepted the cause and labored actively in its behalf, but after the fall of Charlestown (1780) resumed allegiance to the British Crown and suffered two years later the amercement of his estate (Salley, *post*, pp. 135–38). Though his name appears in the list of Americans admitted to the Middle Temple (May 4, 1773, *American Historical Review*, July 1920, p. 687), the younger Charles seems to have been educated wholly in Charlestown, where in due course he was admitted to the bar (Ford Transcripts, *post*, July 8, 1801). At some time prior to October 1779, he enlisted for military service, for he was then participating, as a lieutenant of the Charlestown Regiment of militia, in the siege of Savannah (Charleston *City Gazette*, July 23, 1818). When captured at the capitulation of Charlestown, he refused to accept "protection" and remained a prisoner until June 1781. From 1779 to 1780 he was a mem-

ber of the state House of Representatives, and on Nov. 1, 1784, he took his seat as a delegate to the Congress of the Confederation, a position which he occupied until Feb. 21, 1787. When it was proposed (1786) to abandon the claims of the United States to navigate the Mississippi in return for commercial concessions from Spain, he led the opposition which eventually defeated the measure (*American Historical Review*, July 1905, pp. 817–27). Having become convinced that to continue its existence the federal authority must be strengthened, he joined in the memorable plea of Feb. 15, 1786, for a more effectual revenue. A month later, in an address by which he persuaded the New Jersey legislature to rescind its resolution refusing to pay the federal quota, he urged the calling of a general convention to revise and amend the Articles of Confederation (*American Museum*, July 1787, pp. 153–60). In May, he moved in Congress the appointment of a grand committee "to take into consideration the affairs of the Nation," and he probably had a large share in preparing the report which, on Aug. 7, recommended a comprehensive series of amendments to the Articles (McLaughlin, *post*, p. 738).

Besides submitting his celebrated plan for a constitution to the Federal Convention of 1787, Pinckney was a member of the committee that prepared the rules of procedure, and he participated frequently and effectively in the debates throughout the session. It is in the first that his main contribution lies, but it is difficult to determine exactly what this document contained and how much influence it had upon the final result. Thirty-one years after the convention, to supply an omission in the records then being prepared for publication, Pinckney, who had kept no copy of his plan (Pinckney to Mathew Carey, Aug. 10, 1788, manuscript in Library of Congress), sent to the editor from "4 or 5 draughts" in his possession the one which he believed to be his (*Nation*, May 23, 1895, pp. 398–99). This was printed in the Journal (Farrand, *Records*, III, 595–601), but it has been proved to be not the Pinckney plan but instead a slightly altered copy of the report of the committee of detail of a later period of the convention's proceedings (Jameson, *post*). From a variety of sources, however, it has been possible to reconstruct in considerable measure the "Pinckney draught" and to show that it contained at least "thirty-one or thirty-two provisions" that were finally accepted (McLaughlin, *post*, p. 741). This text (Farrand, *Records*, III, 604–09), incomplete though it is, together with what is more perfectly known concerning his part in the debates of the convention, makes it appear not improbable that Pinckney had a larger share than any other individual in the determination of the form and content of the finished Constitution.

At home Pinckney labored for ratification, which was finally accomplished in spite of opposition, especially from the back-country section of the state. After a year in the state privy council he was for two successive terms elected governor (January 1789–December 1792). Fittingly enough, it fell to him to guide the first steps in the adjustment of the relations between the South Carolina and the federal Union (Messages to the General Assembly, MS. House Journals, 1790, 1791). His success in this respect is reflected principally in the new state constitution which was evolved (1790) in a convention of which he was president from a plan which he had apparently modeled as far as possible after the federal instrument (Charleston *City Gazette*, May–June 1790; MS. Journal of the Convention . . . for the Purpose of Revising, Altering, or Forming a New Constitution of the State).

By many considerations Pinckney belonged with the Federalists, who could claim at this time most of the men of property and talents in the South Carolina low-country. To his Pinckney kin, who contributed in Charles Cotesworth and Thomas two of the major chieftains of the party, he added the wide-spreading family of the merchant prince, Henry Laurens [*q.v.*], by marrying (Apr. 27, 1788) the latter's twelfth child, Mary Eleanor. Henry Laurens Pinckney [*q.v.*] was their son. Until reduced through the mismanagement of his agents, his estate enabled him to live in lavish style. Disregard in 1791 of his request for a diplomatic post, preferably London (Ford Transcripts, Aug. 6, 1791), and the appointment instead of Thomas Pinckney, may have begun his alienation from the party. But more important was the fact that he was coming to oppose Federalist policies. In 1795, he denounced Jay's Treaty. The next year he was elected governor for the third time, defeating his brother-in-law Henry Laurens. Now vigorously supporting reforms favored by the Republican back-country (Charleston *City Gazette*, Dec. 6, 1798), he won in 1798 the seat in the United States Senate that was commonly allotted to that section. He became at once the leader among the Republican senators in attacks upon the administration, and later assuming the management of Jefferson's campaign in South Carolina he secured the choice of Republican electors. Among other consequences of this activity was estrangement from "many of his rela-

tives," one of whom (Charles Cotesworth) was the Federalist candidate for the vice-presidency (*American Historical Review,* October 1898, p. 122).

Pinckney's reward was the appointment (March 1801) as minister to Spain. After a leisurely journey through the Netherlands and France, he addressed himself in Madrid to the original object of his mission and was able to send home on Aug. 11, 1802, a convention providing for a joint tribunal to settle claims arising from spoliations committed in recent years upon American shipping by Spanish cruisers, and leaving open for future negotiation similar claims for French depredations carried out within Spain's jurisdiction (*American State Papers. Foreign Relations,* vol. II, 1832, pp. 475–76, 482–83). Unfortunately, the administration permitted delays in ratification which allowed this agreement to become entangled with the larger difficulties which were even then developing between the two countries. One cause of ill feeling he successfully removed by securing, with the aid of the Spanish minister to the United States, the restoration of the right of deposit at New Orleans which had been withdrawn by the intendant. When Pinckney was on the point of renewing his efforts to have the French spoliations included in the claims convention, Bonaparte reached the momentous decision to sell Louisiana to the United States. To Pinckney's cares was now added the task of inducing Spain to acquiesce in this transaction (*Ibid.,* II, 570–71). Having been met with an even more stubborn resistance than hitherto in the claims matter and having good reason to believe that the time was ripe to press for the cession of the Floridas to the United States, a subject which had long been included in his instructions but which of late he had been ordered not to urge without the concurrence of Monroe who was at this time in London, Pinckney combined these three points in a positive note to the Spanish government on Jan. 11, 1804 (*Ibid.,* II, 616–17). A month later Spain, acting under French compulsion, acceded to the sale of Louisiana, but the unexpected decision of the United States to accept the claims agreement in its original form and the passage of the Mobile Act authorizing the erection of a part of West Florida into a United States customs district left Pinckney no ground to stand upon in the other two matters. His request for Spain's renewal of the ratification of the convention being met with refusal unless the United States abandon altogether the French spoliations and repeal the Mobile Act, he now threatened to ask for his passports, believing that his government was prepared to defend its actions with war (*Ibid.,* II, 618–24; Ford Transcripts, July 30, 1804). Thus matters stood until the arrival of Monroe. Together the two ministers renewed the negotiations but accomplished nothing. In October 1805, Pinckney sailed for home. His mission had not been successful. In the Florida matter he had exceeded his instructions, but the main cause of failure lay with the administration.

On his return to Charleston (January 1806) Pinckney resumed his position as head of the state Republican party. His personal affairs had become sadly disordered during his absence, but he returned to his old seat in the General Assembly, and on Dec. 9, 1806, accepted the governorship for the fourth time. Having advanced from liberalism to democracy, he supported the constitutional amendment which in 1808 gave the back-country increased representation in the legislature and urged another which, when ratified two years later, established universal white male suffrage (Charleston *City Gazette,* Dec. 7, 1808). Twice subsequently (1810–12, 1812–14) he sat in the General Assembly and then declined reëlection. In 1818, however, when it appeared that otherwise the Federalists would elect the congressman from the Charleston district, he entered the lists once more and in the face of bitter assaults upon his private and public life defeated two opponents. In opposition to the proposed Missouri compromise he delivered one of his ablest addresses (*Niles' Weekly Register,* July 15, 1820, pp. 349–57). But his ardor could not withstand "the dreadfully rigorous Climate" of Washington, and he decided not to be a candidate again. His death occurred on Oct. 29, 1824.

Handsome, vain, and, doubtless, something of a roué, though capable of the tenderest devotion to his three young children after the death of their mother (1794), Pinckney possessed that iridescent genius which offends some and dazzles others. To his Federalist contemporaries he was "Blackguard Charlie," a demagogue, a spoilsman, and a corruptionist; to his followers he was a demi-god fit for the presidency. His great egoism induced in him a habit of seeing his own deeds in heroic dimensions. He honestly believed that he had virtually written the federal Constitution, and this, together with other extravagant claims that he made for himself, has raised doubts in the minds of historians which have obscured his real achievements.

[Biographical articles appear in J. B. O'Neall, *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar of S. C.* (1859), II, 138–45; W. S. E[lliott], in *DeBow's Review,* July–Aug. 1864, and *Hon. Charles Pinckney of South Carolina* (pamphlet, n.d.); B. F. Perry, *Biog. Sketches of Emi-*

Pinckney

nent American Statesmen (1887); and E. A. Jones, *American Members of the Inns of Court* (1924). Mabel L. Webber, manuscript notes on the Pinckney family, and A. S. Salley, *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.*, Apr. 1901, pp. 133–38, 144–48, contain genealogical material. The "Pinckney Draught" has been critically studied by J. F. Jameson, in *Annual Report of the Am. Hist. Asso. . . . 1902* (1903), I, 111–32, and *Am. Hist. Review*, April 1903, pp. 509–11; A. C. McLaughlin, *Am. Hist. Review*, July 1904, pp. 735–47; C. C. Nott, *The Mystery of the Pinckney Draught* (1908); Max Farrand, *The Records of the Federal Convention of 1787* (1911), III, 595–611; and T. D. Jervey, Charles Pinckney's Constructive Mind (MS.). A selection of private letters is printed in *Am. Hist. Review*, Oct. 1898, pp. 111–29. Transcripts of other letters to Jefferson, Madison, and Monroe, prepared by W. C. Ford, are in the S. C. Hist. Society. Episodes in Pinckney's career are treated in T. D. Jervey, *Robert Y. Hayne and His Times* (1909), and U. B. Phillips, "The S. C. Federalists," *Am. Hist. Review*, April, July 1909. Pinckney wrote copiously for the Charleston newspapers, especially the *City Gazette*, and not infrequently reprinted his articles in pamphlet form. An obituary article was published in the *City Gazette*, Nov. 9, 1824.]

J. H. E.

PINCKNEY, CHARLES COTESWORTH (Feb. 25, 1746–Aug. 16, 1825), soldier, statesman, diplomat, was born in Charlestown (Charleston), S. C. His father, Charles Pinckney, was for a short time chief justice of the province. His mother, Elizabeth (Lucas) Pinckney [*q.v.*], a woman of unusual force of character, is well known for her part in developing and promoting the culture of indigo in South Carolina. In 1753 Charles Pinckney was appointed agent of the colony in London and went thither with his family, planning to educate in England and on the Continent his sons, Charles Cotesworth and Thomas [*q.v.*]. In 1758 he left the boys there and, returning with his wife to South Carolina, died within a few months. The elder son studied under a tutor, attended a school in Kensington, and then entered the Westminster School in 1761. After making a high record there, he matriculated at Christ Church College, Oxford, Jan. 19, 1764, and on Jan. 24 was admitted to the Middle Temple. While at Oxford he attended the lectures of Sir William Blackstone. Called to the English bar Jan. 27, 1769, he rode one circuit for experience and then traveled widely on the Continent. In France he studied botany under Charles, chemistry under Fourcroy, and military science at the royal military academy at Caen. He returned to America late in 1769 and, admitted to the South Carolina bar Jan. 19, 1770, at once began successful practice. On Sept. 28, 1773, he married Sarah, the third surviving daughter of Henry Middleton, 1717–1784 [*q.v.*], and sister of Arthur Middleton, 1742–1787 [*q.v.*]. She died May 8, 1784, and on June 23, 1786, he married Mary, the daughter of Benjamin Stead.

Immediately after his return Pinckney entered upon a career of public service. He was elected a member of the provincial Assembly in 1769; he was made acting attorney general in 1773 for Camden, Georgetown, and the Cheraws; and in January 1775 he became a member of the provincial congress, in which he took an active and prominent part. A devoted member of the Church of England, and all his life zealous in church work, he, nevertheless, strongly advocated disestablishment. He was made a member of the committee of five and of the special committee, both of them charged with the responsibility for local defense. On Feb. 3, 1776, he was elected to the council of safety, and, on Feb. 10, chairman of the committee of eleven to draft a plan for the temporary government of the province. He was a member of the lower house of the legislature in 1778 and of the Senate in 1779, being chosen president of the latter body. In the same year he was again a member of the council of safety.

After his return from England Pinckney had kept up his interest in military affairs and had soon been made a lieutenant in the militia. Upon the organization of the 1st Regiment of South Carolina troops in June 1775 he was chosen the ranking captain, quickly became major, and in September 1776 was promoted colonel. With his regiment he took part in the defense of Fort Sullivan in June 1776, but when hostilities were suspended in the South his eagerness for active service caused him to secure leave from his regiment and to go north where he served for a time as aide to Washington and was present at the battles of Brandywine and Germantown. He was again in command of his regiment in the Florida campaign of 1778 and in the siege of Savannah. During the attack on Charlestown he was in command of Fort Moultrie. In the council of war called by General Lincoln to discuss the surrender of Charlestown, he vehemently but vainly opposed the suggestion. As a prisoner he was treated with great courtesy by the British officers who sought to detach him from the American cause. To one of these he wrote: "The freedom and independence of my Country are the Gods of my Idolatry." To another he said: "If I had a vein that did not beat with the love of my Country, I myself would open it. If I had a drop of blood that could flow dishonourably, I myself would let it out" (Ravenel, *post*, p. 297). Later he was sent to Philadelphia where he and his brother were together for a time. Exchanged in 1782, he rejoined the army, and on Nov. 3, 1783 just before his discharge, he was commissioned brigadier-general by brevet.

Once more he began the practice of his pro-

fession in Charleston, but he was frequently in the public service. In 1782, before he left the army, he was elected to the lower house of the legislature. In 1787 he was a delegate to the Federal Convention and was prominent in its deliberations. He opposed the imposition of any religious test for office; he suggested the year 1808 as the date at which Congress should assume power over the foreign slave trade; he argued strongly for giving the Senate power to ratify treaties as a wholesome check on the president; and he urged without success that senators should serve without pay. In the following year he was a member of the state convention which ratified the Constitution, and was one of the ablest defenders of the new system of government. He was also a member of the constitutional convention of 1790. He was a strong advocate of locating the state capital at Charleston and was a member of the committee, chosen to reconcile the conflicting claims of the low country and up country, which practically established two seats of government. In 1791 he was offered and declined the command of the army afterward conferred on Gen. Arthur St. Clair. On May 24, Washington wrote a remarkable joint letter to Pinckney and Edward Rutledge, his brother-in-law and partner, urging that one of them accept appointment as associate justice of the Supreme Court of the United States to succeed John Rutledge (W. C. Ford, *Writings of Washington,* XII, 43–44). Both declined. Jefferson might well write Rutledge (Aug. 29, 1791, P. L. Ford, *Writings of Thomas Jefferson,* V, 1895, p. 376): "Would to God yourself, Genl Pinkney [Pinckney], Maj. Pinkney [Pinckney] would come forward and aid us. . . . What is to become of us, my dear friend, if the vine & the fig-tree withdraw & leave us to the bramble & thorn?" On Jan. 22, 1794, Washington renewed an offer previously declined to make Pinckney secretary of war. He replied, "Of all the public offices in our country, the one you mention to me is that which I should like best to fill" (W. C. Ford, *ante,* XII, 405, footnote), but he declined it, as he did the secretaryship of state in August 1795. Finally, however, when Washington, in July 1796, offered him the mission to France to succeed Monroe, and urged it upon him in a most complimentary letter, Pinckney at once accepted. He had been friendly to the revolutionary movement in France from 1789 until 1793, but his sympathies had since become considerably alienated.

He arrived in Paris in December and the Directory declined to recognize his official status. He lingered on until February when he was notified by the police that unless he secured a permit he was liable to arrest. Then in a proper rage he left Paris for Amsterdam. In 1797 Adams nominated him to serve on a special mission to France with John Marshall and Elbridge Gerry [*qq.v.*]; in September he left The Hague and in October joined his colleagues in Paris. The X. Y. Z. affair followed in which Hottinguer (X.) approached Pinckney with a statement of the terms upon which negotiations would be undertaken by the French government. When pressed for a reply, Pinckney exclaimed vehemently: "It is No! No! Not a sixpence!" The familiar slogan, "Millions for defence but not one cent for tribute," is ascribed to Robert Goodloe Harper (*South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine,* Jan. 1900, p. 101; July 1900, p. 264). After the failure of the mission, Gerry remained in Paris, Marshall sailed immediately for America, and Pinckney, with an ill daughter, went to the south of France where he remained for several months before returning home. When, under the stress of the feeling excited by the revelation of the affair, preparations for war began, Washington selected Pinckney for major-general, hesitating for a long time, because of his place and influence in the South, about giving him a lower rank than Hamilton. When the appointments were made by President Adams, Pinckney offered no objection, and, when General Knox declined to accept the lower rank, offered to yield him precedence, saying, "Let us first dispose of our enemies, we shall then have time to settle the question of precedence" (Ravenel, *post,* p. 318). Commissioned July 19, 1798, he was placed in command of all the posts and forces south of Maryland and also of those in Kentucky and Tennessee. Later he was given specific direction of all the cavalry. He was discharged from service, June 18, 1800.

In politics Pinckney was a Federalist of the conservative state-rights group and was never partisan. In the election of 1800 he was the choice of his party for vice-president and, like his brother in 1796, was the innocent party in an unsuccessful scheme of Alexander Hamilton to defeat Adams. In 1804 and 1808 he was the Federalist candidate for president. During these years, so far as his public service permitted, he was busily engaged in the practice of law. He was not a brilliant lawyer, but, learned and essentially sound, possessed of sane common sense, he was effective and had an immense practice. Of imposing figure, genial and full of fun and humor, liberal in opinion, independent and penetrating in his judgment of men and movements, universally trusted and admired, he was also con-

stantly engaged in public undertakings. In the legislature of 1801 he was a strong supporter of the movement which led to the establishment of the South Carolina College and was the first elected member of its board of trustees. In 1810 he became the first president of the Charleston Bible Society and held the office until his death. From 1795 until 1798 he was major-general of the state militia. He was president of the Charleston Library Society. Owning a fine plantation, "Belmont," near Charleston, he had a lively and intelligent interest in agriculture and was a member of the South Carolina Agricultural Society. He was the first president of the South Carolina Society of the Cincinnati, resigning in 1805 to become the third president general of the Society, a position which he held until his death. At "Belmont" and at his home on East Bay in Charleston he dispensed a ready, kindly hospitality. He died in Charleston. Two of his three daughters died unmarried; the third had no children.

Charles Cotesworth and Thomas Pinckney well deserved the characterization of them by William H. Trescott (*The Diplomatic History of the Administrations of Washington and Adams*, 1857, p. 170): "Cultivated in their tastes and simple in their manners, placed by fortune where the exercise of a graceful hospitality was the habit of their daily life, and the assumption of high duties the natural consequence of their position, brave and gentle, free, with all the genuine frankness of the Southern nature, and yet grave as became earnest men in trying times, able, unselfish, active, their success in life was free from all the feverish excitement of political adventure. They sought neither place nor power, but rose gradually from duty to duty, illustrating in the fulness of their lives and services the virtues of the class to which they belonged."

[Pinckney papers in the S. C. Hist. Soc. and in the possession of various members of the Pinckney family; *Am. State Papers. Foreign Relations*, vols. I, II (1832); C. C. Pinckney, *Life of Gen. Thomas Pinckney* (1895); H. H. Ravenel, *Eliza Pinckney* (1896); H. C. Lodge, ed., *The Works of Alexander Hamilton* (8 vols., 1885–86); W. C. Ford, ed., *The Writings of George Washington* (14 vols., 1889–93); Max Farrand, *The Records of the Federal Convention of 1787* (3 vols., 1911); Alexander Garden, *Eulogy of Gen. Chs. Cotesworth Pinckney* (1825); C. E. Gadsden, *A Sermon Preached . . . on the Occasion of the Decease of Gen. Charles Cotesworth Pinckney* (1825); U. B. Phillips, "The South Carolina Federalists," in *Am. Hist. Review*, Apr., July 1909; F. J. Turner, ed., "Correspondence of the French Ministers, 1791–1797" in *Ann. Report of the Am. Hist. Asso. . . . 1903* (1904), II; J. B. O'Neall, *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar of S. C.* (1859), II, 130–37; *Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas* (1892), I, 117–20; obituary in *Charleston Courier*, Aug. 17, 19, 1825.]

J. G. deR. H.

PINCKNEY, ELIZABETH LUCAS (*c.* 1722–May 26, 1793), also known as Eliza Lucas, is identified with the development of indigo as a staple of colonial South Carolina. She was born probably in Antigua, where her father, Lieut.-Col. George Lucas, had been stationed and later became lieutenant governor. She was educated in England and arrived in South Carolina in 1738, when her father brought his wife and daughters to "Wappoo" plantation, near Charlestown (Charleston), inherited from his father, John Lucas. Upon Colonel Lucas' return to Antigua, Elizabeth was left at the age of sixteen to manage the business of three plantations. Popular in Charlestown society, she yet held herself to a systematic schedule of duties, music, and reading, and even studied sufficient law to draft wills for her poorer neighbors. She loved the plant world and soon was enthusiastically setting out live-oaks for future navies. As "Wappoo" and its twenty slaves were mortgaged, her problem was to find a profitable crop. Her father sent her a variety of West Indian seeds for experiment and about 1741 she first tried indigo, which theretofore had never been a success in South Carolina. She persevered to the third season before she ripened seed, and then her father sent a man from Montserrat to teach her the preparation for market. Upon her happy marriage, May 27, 1744, to Charles Pinckney, a prominent lawyer and a widower of more than twice her age, her parents presented him with the indigo then growing at "Wappoo" and wished to give her the plantation as a marriage dower. Creditors absorbed the plantation, but Pinckney distributed some of the indigo seed among his neighbors, and, after learning all he could from the French prisoners in Charlestown, published his information for the benefit of all.

After her marriage, Mrs. Pinckney lived at "Belmont" plantation on Charlestown Neck, where in consultation with her father's overseer she directed experiments with flax and hemp. She also revived silk-culture; dresses made from her silk are still exhibited. In March 1753, her husband having been appointed colonial agent for South Carolina, she and their children accompanied him to London. After considerable travel in England and a brief sojourn in London, they bought a home at Ripley, intending to remain until the children were educated. Five years later she returned with him to Charlestown for a visit, but he was taken with malaria and died in Mt. Pleasant, July 12, 1758. His will, finally probated in London in 1769, named as executors his wife, and their sons Charles Cotesworth and Thomas [*qq.v.*] when of age. The

burden of a very large property, therefore, devolved upon the widow of thirty-six years; and, assisted by a competent overseer, she took up once more the round of plantation duties. Although she did not see her sons again until they were grown, she had a strong influence upon their brilliant careers.

After the Revolution, she went to live with her widowed daughter, Mrs. Daniel Horry, at "Hampton" plantation on the Santee, and there welcomed President Washington in 1791. Soon her health failed, and in April 1793 she sailed for Philadelphia in hope of surgical relief. There, on May 26, she died in her seventy-first year. She was buried in St. Peter's churchyard, Washington at his own request serving as a pallbearer. No portrait of her exists, but she is described as a small woman, with an unrivaled talent for conversation. Her extraordinary charm is reflected in her letters, which have both literary and historical value.

[C. C. Pinckney, *Life of Gen. Thomas Pinckney* (1896); *S. C. Hist. & Geneal. Mag.*, Oct. 1907, pp. 217–19; Jan. 1913, p. 29; July 1916, pp. 101–02; Jan. 1918, pp. 31, 34; July 1918, p. 134; Oct. 1920, pp. 158–59, reprinting obituary in Charleston *City Gazette & Daily Advertiser*, July 17, 1793.] A. K. G.

PINCKNEY, HENRY LAURENS (Sept. 24, 1794–Feb. 3, 1863), editor of the *Charleston Mercury*, congressman, mayor, was born in Charleston, S. C., a child of Charles Pinckney [*q.v.*] and Mary Eleanor Laurens, who died at the time of her son's birth. His early education was directed by his father and the Rev. George Buist. In 1812 he was graduated from South Carolina College and later had legal training under his brother-in-law Robert Y. Hayne [*q.v.*] but did not follow the law professionally. At the first opportunity (1816) he secured a seat from Charleston in the state House of Representatives to which he was regularly elected for the next seventeen years, serving acceptably a large part of this time as chairman of the ways and means committee and as speaker during the last three years (1830–1832). In June 1823, he became the proprietor and principal editor of the *Charleston Mercury*, established the previous year, and despite the competition of three other dailies he had soon enlarged its size and added a "country" edition. When in October 1832 he severed connections with it, the *Mercury* had probably the largest circulation of any newspaper of the state and was the most uncompromising champion of "Southern rights," having just concluded a successful agitation in favor of nullification of the tariff acts.

Meanwhile, Pinckney had been elected (1829) intendant, or mayor, of Charleston. The next year he was defeated by a Unionist, but with the increasing acceptance of the policy of nullification, which had become the main issue in the city campaigns, he was returned to this office at the two ensuing elections and then sent successively to the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth congresses (1833–1837). Throughout his first term he was in complete accord with the Calhoun state-rights faction, defending at every opportunity the doctrine of nullification as recently applied by his state at the obvious sacrifice of his chances of securing the navy yard and other federal works desired by his Charleston constituents. Early in the next Congress, however, in securing the passage of resolutions which ultimately led to the adoption by the House of the policy of laying on the table "without being either printed or referred" all petitions for the abolition of slavery (see his report, May 18, 1836, 24 Cong., 1 sess., *House Report No. 691*), he brought himself into sharp conflict with the Calhounites who were contending for the outright rejection of these offensive memorials. He was unjustly denounced by the latter as a traitor to the South, the suggestion even being made that he was selling his principles for a navy yard (Elizabeth Merritt, *James Henry Hammond, 1807–1864*, 1923, p. 38). Largely in consequence of this, he lost the support of the country parishes of his district and was defeated for reëlection in 1836. Having retained, however, his popularity with the city electorate, especially the plebeian element, he was again chosen mayor in 1837, 1838, and 1839. During this and his former period in this office he accomplished much in the way of civic improvement, notably the conversion of the College of Charleston (1837) into the first municipal college in the United States and the construction of the White Point or Battery Gardens, the most distinctive feature of Charleston's topography. During the remainder of his life he occupied public offices of only minor importance: collector of the port (1840–1841), member of the state House of Representatives (1844–1845), and city tax collector from 1845 to the time of his death.

He was twice married: to Rebecca Pinckney Elliott and Sabina Elliott Ramsay, a first cousin in each instance, and by the first marriage had two sons and a daughter.

[Mabel L. Webber, manuscript notes on the Pinckney family; W. L. King, *The Newspaper Press of Charleston, S. C.* (1872); obituaries in *Charleston Mercury* and *Charleston Daily Courier*, Feb. 4, 1863.] J. H. E.

PINCKNEY, THOMAS (Oct. 23, 1750–Nov. 2, 1828), soldier, diplomat, governor of South

Carolina, was a native of Charlestown (Charleston), the son of Charles and Elizabeth (Lucas) Pinckney [*q.v.*], and the brother of Charles Cotesworth Pinckney [*q.v.*]. In 1753 he was carried to England and in 1765 entered the Westminster School. There he took a high stand, particularly in Greek, in which he was the first scholar of his year. He matriculated at Christ Church College, Oxford, Nov. 23, 1768, and on Dec. 16 was admitted to the Middle Temple. He was called to the bar Nov. 25, 1774. He spent an intervening year on the Continent in travel and in study at the royal military academy at Caen, France.

Late in 1774 he returned to South Carolina and was immediately admitted to the bar. Early in 1775 he joined a company of rangers as lieutenant, and upon the organization of the 1st South Carolina Regiment he was chosen a captain. On account of his previous military training he was employed in drilling officers and men. Later he was sent out on recruiting service, at which he proved successful. For a year he was stationed at Fort Johnson in Charlestown harbor and was employed as an engineer in constructing fortifications. In August 1776 he was sent to Fort Moultrie where he remained for two years with the exception of some months spent in recruiting in Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina. On May 17, 1778, he was promoted major, and on account of his proved skill in handling troops he was constantly called upon to organize and drill new detachments. He took part in the ill-fated Florida campaign of 1778, participated in the battle of Stono in 1779, and, on account of his knowledge of French, was sent as a special aide to Count d'Estaing at Savannah and was thus present during the siege of the city and took part in the assault. In the interval between the British attacks on Charlestown, he practised law, served in the legislature of 1778, and on July 22, 1779, married Elizabeth, the daughter of Jacob and Rebecca (Brewton) Motte. He was in command of part of the defenses of Charlestown during the siege of 1780 and with his brother strongly opposed the surrender of the city. Before its fall he was sent out to hasten the troops expected for relief and thus escaped capture. He immediately went north to join Washington's army but soon returned on the staff of General Gates. He was severely wounded at Camden and was captured. He was, however, soon taken to the home of his mother-in-law, where he slowly recovered, though his wound was to trouble him for years to come. He was then sent with his brother to Philadelphia where they were paroled until they were exchanged. In September 1781 he was recruiting in Virginia where he met Lafayette, for whom he formed a warm attachment and with whom he served at Yorktown. He then returned to South Carolina where he published a defense of Gates.

General Provost, after his repulse from Charlestown in 1779, burned "Auckland," Pinckney's home on the Ashepoo, and took away all the servants and stock, so Pinckney now took up his residence in Charleston where he practised law successfully. On Feb. 20, 1787, he was elected governor and served, according to South Carolina custom, for two terms of a year each; during this time he did much to restore order in the state, which still suffered from the results of foreign invasion and even more from the civil war that had prevailed during the closing years of the Revolution. Severe with criminals, he was inclined to leniency with respect to the Loyalists, and sought to soften the harshness of the laws against them and the asperities of popular feeling towards them. He was president of the convention of 1788 which ratified the Constitution, and in 1789 declined Washington's offer of a federal judgeship. In 1791 he was a member of the lower house of the legislature and drew the bill creating the court of equity.

In November 1791 Washington offered him the appointment as minister to Great Britain, and Pinckney accepted, his nomination being confirmed in January 1792. His instructions, prepared by Jefferson, ordered him to express "that spirit of sincere friendship which we bear to the English nation." He was further instructed to seek the liberation of American commerce from British restrictions and the protection of American seamen from impressment. Thanks to his personal qualifications, English education, and knowledge of English thought, he was *persona grata* in London, but his ministry, viewed in the large, was not highly successful. Foreseeing war in Europe, he labored to secure a prompt settlement of all questions in dispute, bombarding the Foreign Office with protests and demands that were usually, though not always, ignored. The appointment of Jay to negotiate a treaty hurt his feelings, as he frankly admitted, and he doubtless welcomed his appointment in April 1795 as special commissioner and envoy extraordinary to Spain to negotiate a treaty settling all matters in dispute between the two countries.

In Spain, Pinckney carried on his negotiations entirely with Godoy, the Duke de la Alcudia, better known as the Prince of Peace. In the face of the seemingly insuperable difficulties

which at first confronted him, due chiefly to the Spanish policy of indefinite delay, Pinckney was bold, persistent, obstinate, and unfailingly tactful. On August 10, 1795, he submitted to the Spanish government an able state paper dealing with the southern boundary of the United States and the navigation of the Mississippi River. Time and international circumstances combined with his able efforts to bring Spain finally to agreement, and on Oct. 27, 1795, the treaty of San Lorenzo el Real was signed. The boundary settlement was in accordance with the treaty of peace between the United States and Great Britain; the right of free navigation of the Mississippi was recognized; and the privilege of a port of entry at New Orleans and the right of deposit for three years were granted. The treaty also provided for the establishment of a court for the settlement of American claims against the Spanish, and obligated both parties to restraint of the Indians. The treaty signed, Pinckney returned to London. Under special instructions from Washington, and with personal interest and zeal, he exhausted every possible device to secure the release of Lafayette, but without success. On Oct. 10, 1795, he had asked for recall; he now resumed the request, and came home in September 1796.

Before his return the Federalist party had chosen him as candidate for vice-president. He was defeated, however, through the machinations of Alexander Hamilton in his attempt by stratagem to defeat Adams and elect Pinckney president. He received fifty-nine electoral votes. In 1794, while they were in England, Mrs. Pinckney died. On Oct. 19, 1797, he married her sister, Frances, the widow of John Middleton. About the same time he was elected to Congress and took his seat Nov. 23, 1797. A Federalist, though strong in state-rights feeling, he in general supported the administration, but he was not always in agreement with it. He was not eager for war with France in 1798 and doubted the wisdom of elaborate military preparations. He also voted against the Sedition Act. He served until March 4, 1801, when he voluntarily retired. Pinckney's only other public service was in the War of 1812 when he was commissioned major-general and placed in command of the district extending from North Carolina to the Mississippi River. He was active and efficient, but won no special distinction, never seeing active service. He joined Jackson, took command of the forces at the end of the Creek War, and negotiated the treaty which concluded peace. For Jackson he conceived a great admiration

and recommended that he be placed in command of a new military district.

Deeply interested in agriculture, Pinckney was a scientific planter. He wrote frequently for the *Southern Agriculturist,* and in October 1828 published there a report to the South Carolina Agricultural Society on diversification of crops in the low country, based upon the results obtained at an experimental farm which he operated. On his plantations on Santee River, first at "Fairfield," and later at "Eldorado," he demonstrated his ability as a practical farmer as well. Owning a vast area of salt marsh, he remembered his observations in Holland, and, with the aid of a Dutch engineer whom he brought over, he constructed a system of dykes and reclaimed the land for immensely productive rice-planting. He also imported improved breeds of cattle. Pinckney was a wide reader and possessed a large private library. In November 1822, after the Denmark Vesey insurrection, he published, over the pseudonym "Achates," a pamphlet, *Reflections Occasioned by the late Disturbances in Charleston*; in this, after attacking the movement for the abolition of slavery, he made a plea for replacing the negro artisans and mechanics in Charleston with white freemen, arguing the advantages which would result from immigration. In 1806 he was elected president of the South Carolina Society of the Cincinnati, succeeding his brother, and held the position until 1826 when he succeeded him as president general of the Society.

Pinckney was tall and spare in figure, poised and self-controlled, with great personal dignity, but with delightfully easy and courteous manners. A contemporary comment (Robert Goodloe Harper, *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for the Year 1913,* 1915, vol. II, 24–25) gives a just appraisal in dwelling on his "prudence, moderation, sound judgment, great coolness and discretion, calm steady firmness of character, and uniformity of conduct." Many of his contemporaries found in him a strong resemblance to Washington. He died in Charleston after a long and painful illness. By his first marriage he had four children: Thomas, who left daughters only; Charles Cotesworth, through whom all of his name and line descended; Elizabeth, who married William Lowndes [*q.v.*]; and Harriott (or Harriotta) Lucas, who married Francis K. Huger [*q.v.*].

[Papers in the S. C. Hist. Soc., in the possession of members of the family, and in the archives of the Dept. of State; C. C. Pinckney, *Life of General Thomas Pinckney* (1895); H. H. Ravenel, *Eliza Pinckney* (1896); A. S. Salley, Jr., *Jour. of the Convention of S. C. . . . 1788* (facsimile, 1928); *Debates . . . in the House of Representatives of S.-C. . . . on the Consti-*

tution Framed for the U.-S. (1831); *Am. State Papers. Foreign Relations*, vols. I, II (1832); S. F. Bemis, "The London Mission of Thomas Pinckney, 1792–1796," in *Am. Hist. Review*, Jan. 1923, and *Pinckney's Treaty* (1926); U. B. Phillips, "The S. C. Federalists," in *Am. Hist. Review*, Apr., July 1909; W. H. Trescott, *The Diplomatic Hist. of the Administrations of Washington and Adams* (1857), p. 170; *Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas* (1892), vol. I; J. B. O'Neall, *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar of S. C.* (1859), II, 111–14; "The Pinckney Family of S. C.," in *Historical Mag.*, Sept. 1867; obituary in *Charleston Courier*, Nov. 4, 1828.]

J. G. deR. H.

PINE, ROBERT EDGE (1730–Nov. 19, 1788), painter, was born in London. He came of an artistic family and was associated from childhood with artists. His father, John Pine [see *Dictionary of National Biography*], a well-known engraver, was stout and jovial, but the son, Robert Edge, is recalled as a small man of sensitive temperament and irritable disposition. His brother, Simon, was a successful miniature painter at Bath. Instructed by his father, Pine early attained recognition in England as a painter of ability. He was always interested in the theatre, and his first paintings were of actors and actresses in well-known characters. One of his earliest works was a painting of Thomas Lowe and Mrs. Chambers as Captain Macheath and Polly, engraved by McArdell. In 1760, to the first exhibition held in London by the Society for the Encouragement of Arts (now Royal Society of Arts), he contributed a full-length portrait of Mrs. Pritchard as Hermione and also a large painting, "The Surrender of Calais," receiving for the latter a prize of one hundred guineas offered for the best historical work; he won the same prize again in 1763 by his painting, "Canute Rebuking His Courtiers." In 1772, because of "an insult from the president," he withdrew from the Society, and thereafter exhibited in the Royal Academy until 1784.

While in England Pine painted four portraits of Garrick, one of which is now in the National Portrait Gallery, London, and another in the New York Public Library. He also did a large subject picture of Garrick reciting an ode to Shakespeare, which was engraved in stipple by Caroline Watson. Among his other well-known works from this period are a full-length portrait from memory of George II (at Audley End) and a full-length portrait of the Duke of Northumberland (at Middlesex Hospital). In 1782 he showed in London a series of paintings illustrating scenes from Shakespeare, which collection in whole or part he brought with him to America two years later and exhibited in the State House in Philadelphia—one of the earliest, if not the earliest, exhibition of paintings ever held in the United States. At the Royal Academy, 1784, he exhibited portraits of Lord Amherst and the Duke of Norfolk, as well as a "Portrait of Lord Rodney in Action, aboard the *Formidable*," which was later hung in the Town Hall at Kingston, Jamaica. His paintings were popular and were engraved by such well-known engravers as J. McArdle, C. Watson, Valentine Green, Aliamet, Lomax, and Dickinson.

After the death of his brother Simon in 1772, Pine resided for five years in Bath, then returned to London. He was a close friend of John Wilkes, whose principles he espoused, and he was deeply in sympathy with the American cause. In 1784 he came to America, intending to produce a series of historical paintings illustrative of the Revolution. The exact time of his arrival is uncertain, but he was in Philadelphia in November. His portrait of Francis Hopkinson, the first he painted after reaching Pennsylvania, bears the date 1785. He spent several weeks at Mount Vernon in April and May of that year, painting portraits of Washington and members of his family—notably Fanny Bassett Washington and young George Washington Parke Custis. A portrait of Washington's mother, Mary Ball Washington, is also attributed to him (see *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, April 1918). In 1787 he made some changes in his portrait of Washington, which is now in Independence Hall, Philadelphia.

Pine did not succeed in carrying out his ambitious plan for a series of historical paintings, although he never completely abandoned it. Before he went to Mount Vernon he spent some time at Annapolis painting portraits of prominent men and women which he intended to use in his larger pictures. Washington, in a private letter, said: "Mr. Pine has met a favorable reception in this country, & may, I conceive, command as much business as he pleases" (W. C. Ford, *The Writings of George Washington*, vol. X, 1891, p. 467). There are contemporary records of portraits by him of General Gates, Charles Carroll, Baron Steuben, Mrs. John Jay, Robert Morris, and others, but his only historical picture completed in America was "The Congress Voting Independence," painted in Congress Hall, and this was finished, presumably after his death, by Edward Savage [*q.v.*]. It is now owned by the Historical Society of Pennsylvania. Robert Morris, the financier, was one of his best patrons and built a house for him "suitable to his objects" on Eighth Street, Philadelphia.

When Pine came to America he brought with him his wife and two daughters, all of whom are said to have been diminutive, like himself. He also brought, as an art treasure, one of the ear-

liest casts of the Venus de Medici, but since, in the words of Joseph Hopkinson, "the manners of our country, *at that time,* would not tolerate the public exhibition of such a figure" (Dunlap, *post,* I, 378), it was kept shut up in its case and only shown privately. After Pine's death, in Philadelphia, from a stroke of apoplexy, his widow, who had assisted him in his drawing classes, secured permission to dispose of his works by lottery. A considerable number of them went to the Columbian Museum, Boston, and there Washington Allston saw them and is said to have been strongly influenced by them, but when the Museum burned the entire collection was destroyed. Joseph Hopkinson, second president of the Pennsylvania Academy, wrote in 1833 that Pine's works "were scattered about in Virginia where he went occasionally to paint portraits" (Dunlap, I, 377), and comparatively few can now be located. Portraits of one of the Lees, Benjamin Franklin, Samuel Huntington, and George Reid, all well authenticated, have been exhibited at the Pennsylvania Academy; the Metropolitan Museum, New York, owns Pine's "Mrs. Reid in the Character of a Sultana"; his "General Gates" belongs to the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, New York; his portraits of George Washington Parke Custis and Elizabeth Parke Custis are at Washington and Lee University; "Martha Washington" is at the Virginia Historical Society, Richmond; "Francis Hopkinson" and "Robert Morris" are in the collection of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, and the portraits of Charles Carroll and Polly Carroll (Mrs. Richard Caton) are still in the possession of the Carroll family of Maryland.

[William Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (3 vols., 1918), ed. by F. W. Bayley and C. E. Goodspeed; Samuel Redgrave, *A Dict. of Artists of the English School* (1874); H. T. Wood, *A Hist. of the Royal Soc. of Arts* (1913); C. H. Hart, "The Congress Voting Independence," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Jan. 1905; J. H. Morgan and Mantle Fielding, *The Life Portraits of Washington* (1931); W. S. Baker, *The Engraved Portraits of Washington* (1880); L. A. Hall, *Cat. of the Dramatic Portraits in the Theatre Collection of the Harvard College Library* (4 vols., 1930–34); sketch by L. H. Cust, in *Dict. Nat. Biog.*; *Fed. Gazette and Phila. Evening Post,* Nov. 22, 1788; Catalogues of Independence Hall, Metropolitan Museum of Art, Lenox Library, Panama-Pacific Exposition, Hist. Soc. of Pa.] L. M.

PINGREE, HAZEN STUART (Aug. 30, 1840–June 18, 1901), manufacturer, mayor of Detroit, governor of Michigan, was born at Denmark, Me., the fourth child of Jasper and Adeline (Bryant) Pingree. His father, a farmer, was a descendant of an old New England family. At the age of fourteen he left school to work in a cotton mill and later went into a shoe factory.

During the Civil War he enlisted and was mustered into service at Boston on Aug. 2, 1862, as private in Company F, 14th Massachusetts Infantry, subsequently the 1st Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. He served for two years and reënlisted for the balance of the war. In May 1864 he was captured and was paroled the following November. He was mustered out as a private on Aug. 16, 1865. Soon after his discharge he went to Detroit, Mich., where he secured employment in a shoe factory. In December 1866 he entered a partnership in a shoe-manufacturing enterprise, which subsequently became one of the largest in the West, employing about seven hundred men. He married Frances A. Gilbert in February 1872.

In 1889 Pingree was offered the Republican nomination for mayor of Detroit, then normally Democratic, and was elected in a "reform" campaign. His administration was tempestuous. Relatively inexperienced in politics, he was apparently shocked at the situation he found, though the Detroit government was far from notorious in that day of municipal scandals. A group of private vested interests were controlling politics in self-protection. Pingree had voiced only mild objection to the system in his campaign but his utterances rapidly became more radical and specific. He found the city paying a private utility for street lighting at a rate which seemed to him excessive and after a bitter fight established a municipal electric plant. He boasted of the low cost of his new system, but seems not to have advocated extending the benefits to private users of electricity. Perhaps the most bitter controversy was with the local street railway company. The earlier single-line street railways had been consolidated into a monopoly which gave indifferent service at rates which were said to be excessive. The fight at first centered about an extension of a franchise, which yet had years to run. Pingree proposed to grant extension only on concessions. He then tried to introduce competition by securing a franchise for a second company, only to have the two lines combine. He waged an attack on the toll gates which still cumbered every important road to the city and secured their abolishment. He forced price reductions by gas and telephone companies. When the panic of 1893 filled the city with jobless he inaugurated his plan of gardens for the unemployed and "Pingree's Potato Patches" secured national notice.

To national politics Pingree paid slight attention, but in 1896 he accepted the Republican nomination for governor and was elected. Made governor while still mayor of Detroit, he tried to

hold both offices, but the state supreme court ruled that the city office had been vacated. As governor his chief attack was on the railroads and on the legal difficulty in collecting just taxes, growing out of early and incautious charters. His chief strength, a direct appeal to the people, was less effective over the larger area, and he had difficulty in securing the cooperation of his legislatures. He made an effort to dramatize his part and Michigan's contribution to the Spanish-American War, but a scandal concerning the supplies for the Michigan militia marred his administration and the war diverted public attention from state politics. He served two terms as governor. Once more a private citizen, he traveled in Europe and Africa. His interest in the Boers and his prejudice against England led him to begin a history of the Boer War, which his death interrupted. He died in England, and was buried in Detroit. His wife and two of their three children survived him.

Pingree's chief contributions were made while mayor of Detroit. Without specific training for the office or clear-cut theory, he was sometimes inconsistent and seldom constructive. He was best when combating special privilege and corruption, though his controversies were marred by invective and personal reflections. He was constantly at odds with the Republican organization under Senator McMillan, yet his personal popularity made him indispensable. Pingree must be listed as one of the important pre-Roosevelt reformers who awakened public conscience. The people of Michigan, by public subscription, erected a statue to his memory in Grand Circus Park, Detroit.

[Pingree's seven messages as mayor of Detroit and his messages as governor are all printed and with his other printed speeches best show his program and attitude. He kept newspaper scrap-books, 1890–1901, 253 volumes, which are in Burton Historical Collection, Detroit Pub. Lib. His one book, *Facts and Opinions, or Dangers That Beset Us* (1895), is a personal reaction to contemporary problems. Some information on his early business career is contained in an advertising booklet, *Detroit, The Beautiful* (n.d.), pub. by the Pingree Company, Shoe Manufacturers. See also: G. B. Catlin, *The Story of Detroit* (1923); *Mich. Biogs.*, vol. II (1924); W. M. Pengry, *A Geneal. Record of the Descendants of Moses Pengry of Ipswich, Mass.* (1881); *Detroit News* and *Detroit Free Press*, June 19, 1901. There is a manuscript thesis by Muriel Bernitt, "The Campaign of 1896 in Mich." (1931), in the Univ. of Chicago Lib.] R. C. M—r.

PINKERTON, ALLAN (Aug. 25, 1819–July 1, 1884), detective, was born in Glasgow, Scotland, the son of William Pinkerton, a sergeant of the police force. When Allan was ten years old his father, on duty during Chartist riots, was so severely injured that he never walked again.

Four years later he died. Forced to help maintain the family, the boy was apprenticed at the age of twelve to a cooper; at nineteen he became an independent craftsman. His part in the Chartist demonstrations of 1842 led him to fear arrest, and he decided to go to America. On the day before sailing he married Joan Carfrae. They reached Chicago where Pinkerton found temporary employment in a brewery. The next year they moved to the Scotch settlement of Dundee on the Fox River where he established a cooper's shop of his own. One day while cutting hoop poles on an unfrequented island he chanced upon a rendezvous for counterfeiters and he led a party which captured the entire gang. Similar success followed in several local detective commissions, and in 1846 he was made deputy sheriff of Kane County. An ardent Abolitionist he was also a "foreman" of the Underground Railroad and his shop was a station. Wider recognition came with an invitation to become deputy sheriff of Cook County and he sold a prosperous business to move to Chicago. In 1850 he was attached to Chicago's newly organized police force as its first and at that time only detective. The same year, in response to suggestions from several railroad presidents following a series of robberies, he established, in partnership with E. G. Rucker, a lawyer, a private detective agency, one of the first of its kind in the country. Rucker withdrew within a year, and Pinkerton resigned his city connections to give full time to his venture.

The solution of several sensational Adams Express robberies gave the Agency a national reputation and brought it much Eastern business in the years before the Civil War. In January 1861 Pinkerton was employed by the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore Railroad to investigate threats by Southern sympathizers against its property. While his operatives were working on the case in Baltimore they learned of an intended attempt on Lincoln's life to be made as he passed through the city on the way to his inauguration. With several of Lincoln's advisers, Pinkerton worked out plans for the President's unexpected night trip (Feb. 22, 23) ahead of schedule to the capital. In April 1861 Lincoln invited Pinkerton to a conference on the subject of a secret-service department, but no action was taken. A few weeks later, at the invitation of Gen. George B. McClellan, a close friend and former client, Pinkerton agreed to organize and conduct a secret service for the Ohio Department which McClellan commanded. Agents were immediately sent into Kentucky and West Virginia, and Pinkerton himself, in

disguise, toured Tennessee, Georgia, and Mississippi. When in July McClellan was made commander-in-chief Pinkerton accompanied him to Washington and established headquarters at the capital and an office in the field. He now also directed important counter-espionage activities in Washington. During the war he went under the name of Maj. E. J. Allen, and many officers who knew him well did not suspect his real identity. He resigned upon McClellan's removal in November 1862 and thereafter served as an investigator of numerous claims against the government.

At the close of the war he resumed the personal direction of his Agency and established branches in Philadelphia and New York. In 1869 he suffered a slight paralytic stroke, and thereafter left to others the work of actual investigation. More protective work was being done on an annual payment basis, a type of service inaugurated by Pinkerton in 1860. The Agency was building up a voluminous record of its criminal contacts which at the time was the most usefully complete in America. Pinkerton also devoted much time to writing reminiscent detective narratives to the extent of eighteen volumes, based for the most part upon the Agency's experiences. Written in pleasant style, the books sold like novels and did much to advance the fame and prestige of Pinkerton's name. From an autobiographical viewpoint the most valuable were *Criminal Reminiscences and Detective Sketches* (1879); *The Spy of the Rebellion* (1883); and *Thirty Years a Detective* (1884). The policy in labor disputes that was to win the Pinkertons severe criticism in the closing years of the century was forecast during the strikes of 1877 when Allan Pinkerton still directed affairs. He had come into contact with the more vicious side of early labor combinations and apparently sincerely believed that Unions were hurting rather than helping the cause of the workingman. (See the introduction to his *Strikers, Communists, Tramps, and Detectives,* 1878.) His was not a mind for analyzing social problems but rather a genius for detail, organization, and practical results. After his death his two sons took over the direction of the Agency.

[All of Pinkerton's books are to some extent autobiographical and reveal his opinions. R. W. Rowan's *The Pinkertons* (1931) is popularly written. Pinkerton states in *The Spy of the Rebellion,* p. xxxi, that many of his Civil War papers were destroyed in the Chicago fire. See under E. J. Allen in the index to *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Army*); McClellan's report, *House Executive Doc. 15,* 38 Cong., 1 Sess.; Pinkerton's *Hist. and Evidence of the Passage of Abraham Lincoln from Harrisburgh, Pa., to Washington, D. C.* (1868); *Chicago Tribune, N.-Y. Tribune,* July 2, 1884.]

O. W. H.

PINKERTON, LEWIS LETIG (Jan. 28, 1812–Jan. 28, 1875), clergyman, editor, prominent in the activities and controversies of the Disciples of Christ in Kentucky, was a native of Baltimore County, Md. His father, William, was of Scotch-Irish ancestry, and his mother, Elizabeth (Letig), of German. Five of their sons became preachers, and six of their grandsons. Soon after Lewis' birth the family moved to Chester County, Pa., and later to West Liberty, not far from Bethany, in what is now West Virginia. Here he encountered Campbellite influences, and in 1830, having already become dissatisfied with Presbyterianism, his father's faith, he ardently embraced the views of the Disciples. Such elementary schooling as necessary work on the farm had permitted him to secure was now completed at Pleasant Hill Seminary, West Middletown, Pa., and in 1831 he went to Trenton, Butler County, Ohio, and for four years studied medicine, supporting himself by teaching. On Mar. 19, 1833, he married Sarah A. Bell. He began practice in 1834 and the following year settled in Carthage, Ohio. Although successful professionally, he felt impelled to preach, and his evangelical work finally led him in December 1839 to remove to Kentucky and abandon medicine for the ministry.

After short pastorates in New Union and Lexington, he accepted a call to the church at Midway, which he served from 1844 to 1860. Here in the church edifice he opened a school for girls, the Baconian Institute, and soon built for it a schoolroom and dormitory. He was also instrumental in having established the Kentucky Female Orphan School, chartered by the legislature in 1847. For a year, 1848, he published a monthly magazine, the *Christian Mirror*; he edited the Kentucky department of the *Christian Age,* 1853–54; and during the latter year conducted a temperance paper, *The New Era.* Under the urgency of John B. Bowman [*q.v.*], founder of Kentucky University, Harrodsburg, Pinkerton became professor of English in that institution in 1860. A pronounced anti-slavery man and supporter of the Union, he was commissioned as surgeon in the 11th Kentucky Cavalry in September 1862, and also took upon himself the duties of chaplain. His service was soon terminated by a sunstroke, from the effects of which he suffered for the rest of his life. When Kentucky University was transferred to Lexington in 1865, he removed to that place.

After the war his career was a troubled and somewhat unhappy one. His aggressive support of the Union was resented by many of his co-religionists. Pulpits were closed to him; in 1866

he thought it best to resign his professorship. For a brief period he was agent of the Freedman's Bureau in Fayette County, but from 1866 to 1873 he had no fixed charge, though he was offered the presidency of Hiram College in 1867. The opposition to him was not due to his politics alone, but also to his liberal theological convictions. He opposed the legalistic view of religion common among the Disciples, laying emphasis on personal righteousness rather than on conformity to prescribed doctrines and rites; rejected the verbal inspiration of the Bible; sanctioned the admission of the unimmersed into the Church; and advocated the Presbyterian form of church government. He set forth his view in the short-lived *Independent Monthly,* begun in January 1869, which he edited with John Shackleford, Jr., and in other periodicals. Branded as a heretic in his day, he is now recognized as perhaps the first to combat a formalism that threatened the vitality of the Churches of Christ and as one who was a liberalizing force in the history of the Disciples. No one ever questioned his piety, his sincerity, his courage, or his unselfishness.

Apparently through the influence of his friend James A. Garfield, he was appointed in 1873 special mail agent. While he was on a trip to investigate irregular mail service in the Kentucky mountains in October 1874, an illness began from which he never recovered. He published *A Discourse Concerning Some of the Effects of the Late Civil War on Ecclesiastical Matters in Kentucky* (1866), and a few of his writings are preserved in *Life, Letters, and Addresses of Dr. L. L. Pinkerton* (1876), by John Shackleford, Jr.

[In addition to the *Life* mentioned above, see J. T. Brown, *Churches of Christ* (1904); W. T. Moore, *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909); W. E. Garrison, *Religion Follows the Frontier* (1931); A. W. Fortune, *The Disciples in Ky.* (copr. 1932); Harry Giovannoli, *Ky. Female Orphan School: A History* (1932); *Christian Standard,* Feb. 6, 13, 1875.]

H. E. S.

PINKHAM, LYDIA ESTES (Feb. 9, 1819–May 17, 1883), patent medicine manufacturer, was born in Lynn, Mass., of English colonial stock, the tenth of the twelve children of William Estes, a shoemaker, by his second wife, Rebecca Chase. She spent her entire life, except for a few years of childhood, in her native town. After completing the course in the academy she became a school teacher. She was a member from its beginning of the Female Anti-Slavery Society of Lynn, was made secretary of the Freeman's Society, and was a lifelong friend of Frederick Douglass. Like most reformers she was too magnanimous to specialize: Swedenborgianism, phrenology, temperance, Grahamism, woman's rights, and other causes enjoyed her warm approval, and in later years she embraced spiritualism and fiat money. On Sept. 8, 1843, she married a young widower, Isaac Pinkham, and for the next thirty years she was a wife and mother and not much else. She had four sons and a daughter, the second son dying in infancy. The business that made her famous and her heirs rich was not started until eight years before her death. In the financial smash of 1873 her husband, whose principal occupation was speculating in real estate, lost his money, health, and spirits together, and by 1875 the family, which had never been really prosperous, was reduced to actual want. In their need Lydia bethought her of an herb medicine that she had been concocting off and on for about ten years and that was beginning to have a local reputation as a sovereign remedy for "woman's weakness" and allied disorders. With neighborly kindness she had given the nostrum to whoever asked for it, even to a perfect stranger who had driven all the way from Salem to obtain a bottle of it. As Mrs. Lydia E. Pinkham's Vegetable Compound it made its commercial début in Lynn in 1875.

The meager profits, after the family had been fed, were turned back into the business, and while Mrs. Pinkham labored over the kitchen stove her sons distributed handbills from door to door and endeavored to sell the mixture to druggists in Salem, Boston, and Providence. Daniel, the most aggressive of the three, carried the campaign to Brooklyn and New York, where he received moral encouragement and a substantial cash order from Charles Nelson Crittenton. He was the first, also, to discover that the compound might be recommended impartially for the kidneys of both sexes. In 1876 a label was registered at the Patent Office, and sometime later a column advertisement in the Boston *Herald* gave the sales their first big impetus. Thereafter the Pinkhams bought newspaper space in larger and larger quantities until in 1898 the compound was the most widely advertised merchandise in the country. Besides supervising its manufacture, Mrs. Pinkham wrote the advertisements and answered faithfully a voluminous fan mail. In 1879 she authorized the use of her portrait as part of the propaganda. Her advertisements were an adaptation, at times more than a little quaint, of the language and ideology of the humanitarian and medical cults that had flourished in her youth, and with their intimacy of tone and their appeal to the emotions and to mental symptoms they proved to be remarkably effective exercises in what has been called "creative psychiatry." Worthless as a therapeutic agent (*Nostrums and*

Quackery, post, II, pp. 160–63), the compound was popular as a psychic sedative. In 1881 the two younger sons, Daniel and William, died of tuberculosis, which had been aggravated by overwork and the privations of their years of poverty. Shortly before her own death, which occurred within two years, the business was incorporated. She was its guiding spirit till the last. Since her death her fame has been ministered to not only by the art of advertising but by the national sense of humor, the Uplift, the American Medical Association, and the New Biography.

[Chas. Estes, *Estes Geneals.* (1894); C. N. Sinnett, *Richard Pinkham . . . and His Descendants* (1908); *Nostrums and Quackery* (Am. Medic. Asso., vol. II, 1921); Elbert Hubbard, *Lydia E. Pinkham* (1915); R. C. Washburn, "Lydia Pinkham," *Am. Mercury,* Feb. 1931; and *The Life and Times of Lydia E. Pinkham* (1931).] G. H. G.

PINKNEY, EDWARD COOTE (Oct. 1, 1802–Apr. 11, 1828), poet and editor, was born in London, where his father, William Pinkney [*q.v.*] of Annapolis, Md., had been serving since 1796 as one of the commissioners of the United States to adjust claims under the Jay Treaty. Edward was the seventh of ten children. His mother, Ann Maria (Rodgers) Pinkney, also of Maryland, was a sister of Commodore John Rodgers [*q.v.*] of the United States Navy. The Pinkneys returned to Maryland in 1804 and lived in Baltimore until 1806, when the father was again sent to England on a diplomatic mission. In 1807 he was named minister to the Court of St. James's and held this post until 1811.

Edward's elementary education was begun in London, and continued in Baltimore at St. Mary's College, which had been established by the Sulpicians in 1803. In November 1815 he turned his back on his books for a commission as midshipman in the navy. His active service at sea continued with brief interruptions until the death of his father in 1822. It included duty in the ship of the line *Washington,* which carried his father on a diplomatic errand to Naples in June 1816, and kept him cruising in the Mediterranean, on board the *Washington* and other vessels, for nearly three years. Returning to America in the sloop *Peacock,* he was assigned to the *Constellation,* from which he was dismissed in 1821 in consequence of a protest which he and others made against what they thought an unjust penalty imposed by the commodore. After apologies, he was restored to duty, but was later involved in a disagreement with the captain. In the United States schooner *Porpoise,* he saw active service in the West Indies against pirates and was cited for bravery. He returned to Baltimore in 1822 and resigned his commission in 1824.

Pinkney

Soon after his resignation Pinkney was admitted to the bar, and practised law in Baltimore as a partner of Robert Wilson, Jr. He had already won some repute as a poet, having published with a musical setting in 1823 *Look Out Upon the Stars, My Love: A Serenade Written by a Gentleman of Baltimore,* and a slender volume entitled *Rodolph, A Fragment,* which won favorable comment from the *North American Review* (January 1824). He now, in 1825, issued a small volume, *Poems,* which included a new version of "Rodolph," and about a score of songs and lyrics. "Rodolph," a Byronic tale of lawless passion, may have influenced Poe's "Al Aaraaf." In the judgment of Poe and other mid-century critics, Pinkney was entitled to high rank among American lyric poets. After a journey to Mexico in the vain attempt to secure an appointment in the Mexican navy, from which he returned in ill health, he was chosen by the supporters of John Quincy Adams to be editor of a new paper, *The Marylander,* created as the organ of their cause. This paper appeared twice weekly from Dec. 5, 1827, and was edited by Pinkney until in 1828 failing health compelled him to retire. He died, less than twenty-six years old, and was buried in the Unitarian cemetery. In 1872 his body was moved to the Pinkney lot in Greenmount Cemetery. On Oct. 12, 1824, he married Georgiana McCausland, daughter of a citizen of Baltimore of Irish birth; they had one child. The poet is described by a contemporary as "a very handsome man." He was punctilious in matters of honor and was several times involved in challenges, though there is no record of his having fought a duel. One of these challenges was to John Neal [*q.v.*], who refused to fight, and Pinkney posted him as a coward. Brief and varied as his career was, his lyrics, particularly "A Health" and "Serenade," have won him what seems a secure place in American poetry.

[T. O. Mabbott and F. L. Pleadwell, *The Life and Works of Edward Coote Pinkney* (1926); Esmeralda Boyle, *Biog. Sketches of Distinguished Marylanders* (1877); C. W. Hubner, *Representative Southern Poets* (1906); *Marylander,* Apr. 16, 1828; *Baltimore Patriot,* Apr. 17, 1828; *N. Y. Mirror,* Apr. 26, 1828.] J. C. F.

PINKNEY, NINIAN (June 7, 1811–Dec. 15, 1877), naval surgeon, was born in Annapolis, Md., the son of Ninian and Amelia (Grason) Hobbs Pinkney. His father held for thirty years the position of clerk of the council of Annapolis. He had served with distinction in the War of 1812 and was the author of *Travels through the South of France* (1809), which Leigh Hunt said

"set all the idle world to going to France." Of relatives who achieved distinction perhaps the best known were his uncle, William Pinkney [*q.v.*], the lawyer, diplomatist, and statesman, and the poet, Edward Coote Pinkney [*q.v.*], a cousin. His brother William became Protestant Episcopal Bishop of Maryland. Ninian Pinkney was graduated from St. John's College in Annapolis in 1830, and from Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, with the degree of M.D., in 1833. The brilliant teacher of anatomy at Jefferson, Granville Sharp Pattison, is said to have looked upon Pinkney as his successor, but probably the glamour of travel and the certain income led him to the navy in which he was commissioned as assistant surgeon in 1834. After cruises in South American waters and in the Mediterranean, he served at the naval hospital in Philadelphia, 1838–39. In 1840 he was court-martialed on charges of "disrespectful and provoking language to a superior" and "conduct unbecoming to an officer and gentleman." He was found guilty of part of the charge and was suspended for eight months, but he returned to the service and for three years, 1841–44, was on the west coast of South America. This duty was followed by two years, 1844–46, on the receiving ship in Baltimore, blockade duty during the war with Mexico in 1846, and in 1852, by a coveted appointment at the Naval Academy. It was during the duty at Callao, Peru, 1841–44, that he built up a reputation for skill in surgery. This port was the rendezvous for the whaling fleet in the South Pacific, and to Pinkney fell the practice from this source. From Apr. 20, 1841, to Nov. 29 of the same year he reported forty-one operations of a major character, with but one death. After 1852, when he went to Annapolis, he took an active interest in the affairs of the American Medical Association and in improving conditions in his own corps. He rarely missed an annual meeting of the Association and in 1876 was elected a vice-president.

After another cruise in the Mediterranean, and duty at Washington, Pinkney was assigned as surgeon of the fleet to Admiral David D. Porter's squadron operating in the upper Mississippi. He joined the flagship *Black Hawk* in December 1862, but spent his time largely on the hospital ship *Red Rover*. His accomplishments under Admiral Porter, who became his lifelong friend, attest his ability. He had medical supervision over eighty ships, organized in 1863 the hospital at Memphis, named Pinkney Hospital in his honor, and in one letter to his wife he mentions having traveled 8,000 miles in visiting some ninety-five ships and stations, distributing medical supplies. After the war he took quite an active interest in politics. He had very definite ambitions about becoming the head of his corps, but the fates were to deny him this honor. He retired on June 7, 1873, with the rank of commodore, and settled with his wife and daughter in Easton, Md., in the house, "Londonderry," which he himself had planned and built. Here he died after a short illness, leaving his widow, Mary Sherwood Hambleton, and his only child, Amelia.

[Sources include: J. M. Toner, memoir in *Trans. Am. Medic. Asso.*, vol. XXIX (1878); F. L. Pleadwell, "Ninian Pinkney, M.D. (1811–1877)," *Annals of Medic. Hist.*, Nov. 1929, Jan. 1930; *War of the Rebellion: Official Records* (*Navy*), 1 ser. XXIV, XXV, and XXVI; D. D. Porter, *Incidents and Anecdotes of the Civil War* (1885); Orlando Hutton, *Life of the Right Reverend Wm. Pinkney, D.D., LL.D.* (1890); the *Gazette* (Baltimore), Dec. 17, 1877; family papers; and the S. A. Harrison Collection, Md. Hist. Soc.]

F. L. P.

PINKNEY, WILLIAM (Mar. 17, 1764–Feb. 25, 1822), lawyer, statesman, diplomat, was born at Annapolis, Md., one of four children of Jonathan Pinkney, an English immigrant, and Ann Rind, his second wife. The latter, a native of Annapolis, was a sister of Margaret Rind, Jonathan's first wife, by whom he had one child. When the father's property was confiscated by reason of Loyalist sentiment in the Revolution, poverty necessitated the son's withdrawal from the King William School of Annapolis, at the age of thirteen. In overcoming the handicap of deficient education, Pinkney devoted a lifetime to intense study. According to tradition, he favored Maryland's cause in the war and would often elude the paternal vigilance to mount guard with the Continental soldiers. Sometime later, while he was receiving instruction in medicine from a Baltimore physician, a fortuitous occurrence changed the course of his life. Samuel Chase [*q.v.*] heard him debate in a society of medical students and, perceiving his aptitude for the law, offered the use of his library if he would undertake its study. Pinkney accepted; and in February 1783 entered Chase's office to master the obscurities of pleading and tenures from the black-letter learning of the day. He was called to the bar in 1786 and removed to Harford County to practise.

His first efforts attracted public attention and resulted in his election to the state convention that ratified the Federal Constitution, in April 1788, although Pinkney, under the influence of Chase, voted against its ratification; a circumstance worthy of note in view of his later preeminence as a constitutional lawyer. (See B. C. Steiner, "Maryland's Adoption of the Federal Constitution," *American Historical Review*, Oc-

tober 1899 and January 1900; but Rev. William Pinkney, *post*, p. 17, insinuates that he voted for it.) He was a member of the legislature continuously from October 1788 until his retirement in 1792. At the session in 1789 he delivered a florid speech advocating the abolition of slavery which, twenty years later, was published and distributed in Congress by the Quakers to challenge the consistency of his position on the Missouri question. On Mar. 16, 1789, he was married at Havre de Grace to Ann Maria Rodgers, sister of Commodore John Rodgers [*q.v.*] of the United States Navy; ten children—one of them being Edward Coote Pinkney [*q.v.*]—were born of this union, all of whom survived him. A capricious element in his character was exhibited in connection with his election to the Second Congress in 1790, which was disputed because he did not reside in the district from which he was chosen. He stubbornly contested the point and then, when successful, refused to serve. He was appointed a member of the state executive council in 1792 and was chairman of the council board when he resigned in 1795.

Meanwhile his rise at the bar had been sensational and, in 1796, Washington selected him as joint commissioner with Christopher Gore [*q.v.*], under the seventh article of the Jay Treaty, to adjust American claims for maritime losses. Eight strenuous years in London followed, significant years in his development. Speeches heard in Parliament and in the courts were the models of his later efforts. Contact with men of culture revealed, to his discomfort, the dearth of his own. Accordingly, he was tutored in Latin and Greek, read widely in law and literature, declaimed in private, and began a diligent study of dictionaries and lexicons that was never thereafter relaxed. From the work of the commission he also found time successfully to terminate a chancery suit instituted more than a decade before by Samuel Chase, recovering for the State of Maryland a large quantity of stock in the Bank of England. His prestige was great when he returned to practice in Baltimore in 1804, and on Dec. 1, 1805, he became attorney-general of Maryland. He relinquished this office, however, after six months' service.

Following Pinkney's return, British Admiralty courts began to justify the condemnation of American shipping by reviving the so-called "Rule of the War of 1756." In January 1806 a memorial attacking this "Rule" was drafted by Pinkney for the merchants of Baltimore and forwarded to Congress (*Memorial of the Merchants of Baltimore, on the Violation of Our Neutral Rights,* 1806). It induced Jefferson to appoint

Pinkney

him, in the following April, as joint commissioner with James Monroe [*q.v.*], then minister resident in London, to treat with the British cabinet on the subjects of reparations and impressments. Wholly abandoning the three conditions that by their instructions were to form the foundation of the agreement, they signed a treaty remarkable for its failure even to bind the British government. Jefferson angrily repudiated it without consulting the Senate, yet when Monroe left England in October 1807, Pinkney was retained as minister. Immediately affairs became further complicated by the attack of the *Leopard* on the *Chesapeake* and the issuance of the British Orders in Council. Throughout the next four years Pinkney sought fruitlessly to obtain reparation for the former and repeal of the latter. No more difficult, futile task has been assigned to an American diplomat. The presence of a strong Anglophile party at home embarrassed his negotiations, while the conciliatory manner he was forced to adopt diminished his effectiveness. His correspondence with Canning, the foreign secretary, was distinguished alike for restraint under irritation and strength of argument. In finesse, however, he was wanting. On one occasion he was cajoled into making a written offer to repeal the Embargo in return for repeal of the Orders and, because the offer violated instructions, was deeply mortified by its prompt rejection. At length his notes to Wellesley, Canning's successor, elicited only vague replies after long delays, and Pinkney broke relations, rather inamicably, Feb. 28, 1811, convinced that matters would lead, as they did, to war. To admirers of Pinkney the lawyer, Pinkney the diplomat was disappointing. Moreover, there were numerous strictures in the press upon various phases of his work. Henry Adams declares, however, that "America never sent an abler representative to the Court of London" (Adams, *post,* VI, 21).

On his return he was appointed attorney-general in Madison's cabinet, Dec. 11, 1811, and in this office assumed undisputed leadership of the American bar, a leadership he maintained until his death. Owing to the introduction of a bill in Congress, requiring the residence of the attorney-general at the seat of government, he resigned abruptly, Feb. 10, 1814, before the bill was even reported out of committee. In pamphlets, under the pseudonym Publius, he vigorously supported the War of 1812, and as a major of Maryland militia he commanded a battalion of riflemen in the battle of Bladensburg, Aug. 24, 1814, being severely wounded in the arm. At the February term of the Supreme Court in 1815, he

delivered a speech in the celebrated case of *The Nereide* (9 *Cranch*, 388), that was even extolled in the opinion (p. 430). He served in the Fourteenth Congress from Mar. 4, 1815, until Apr. 18, 1816, when he resigned to accept appointment as minister to Russia with a special mission to Naples en route. The object of the Naples mission was to obtain compensation from the existing government for shipping seized under the Murat régime. Through the strategy of the Marchese di Circello in avoiding an answer to Pinkney's note until after he had been forced to proceed on his way, the mission utterly failed and compensation was never secured. The prospect upon his arrival in Russia in January 1817 was not promising, for the controversy that followed the arrest of Kosloff, a Russian consul in America, had only recently been settled. Notwithstanding, he quickly accomplished one object of his mission by procuring the recall of every Russian diplomatic officer in the United States; and though he failed to negotiate the commercial treaty that was his primary object, he succeeded in establishing more friendly relations with Russia than had ever theretofore existed. His impatience to return to the bar had been daily increasing and, in declining appointment as minister to England, he wrote Monroe, "My desire is to be a mere lawyer" (Wheaton, *Life*, p. 160). In February 1818, he left Russia without awaiting his recall.

It was while serving in the United States Senate from Dec. 21, 1819, until his death that, as an interpreter of the Constitution, Pinkney performed his greatest work. In the Senate debates on the Missouri question, he became the champion of the slave-holding states and his speeches in opposition to Rufus King [*q.v.*] were an important factor in bringing about the Compromise. His most distinguished labors, however, were in the Supreme Court, where his arguments in *McCulloch* vs. *Maryland* (4 *Wheaton*, 316) and in *Cohens* vs. *Virginia* (6 *Wheaton*, 264) were his crowning achievements. Of the former, Justice Story wrote: "I never, in my whole life, heard a greater speech; it was worth a trip from Salem to hear it . . . his eloquence was overwhelming" (*Life and Letters*, *post*, I, 325).

During these years his foppish dress, his affected, flamboyant manner of delivery, and his extravagant rhetoric made him a vivid, picturesque figure. Women crowded to hear him and Pinkney, excessively vain, sought their approval as much as the Court's. He literally lived for applause. Though he desired to excel in everything, his ruling ambition was to excel at the bar, and to sustain his reputation there he toiled

Pinkney

incessantly, feverishly; yet, oddly enough, sought to create the impression that his knowledge resulted from hasty incursions and that his precise citations of cases, made in an offhand manner, were but chance recollections. Toward those who challenged his supremacy his conduct was insolent and ungenerous. Much criticism resulted from insults offered in court to Thomas Addis Emmet (1764–1827) and William Wirt [*qq.v.*], and a duel with the latter was narrowly averted. For frequent discourtesies to Daniel Webster, the latter boasted of having extorted an apology under threat of a beating (Harvey, *post*, pp. 121–23). Conspicuous in Pinkney's physical appearance were his square shoulders, erect carriage, and intense blue eyes, but most conspicuous were the deep furrows in his face and the heavy circles under his eyes, and to conceal them he used cosmetics. He wore corsets to diminish his bulk. Despite apparent robust health, he was a hypochondriac. In society he was haughty and reserved. He had little sense of humor. Though he spent sixteen years in Europe, he was of counsel in seventy-two Supreme Court cases and acquired what has been described as the most extensive and lucrative practice of his time. That he was the most talented, versatile advocate of his time there can be little doubt. Volumes of contemporary eulogy attest his superiority. Chief Justice Marshall proclaimed him "the greatest man I ever saw in a Court of justice" (Tyler, *post*, p. 141). Chief Justice Taney wrote thirty years after his death: "I have heard almost all the great advocates of the United States, both of the past and present generation, but I have seen none equal to Pinkney" (*Ibid.*, p. 71). He never wrote his speeches, however, and no product of his pen that remains would seem a worthy index of his living fame. But fame in life he considered more desirable and strove to preserve it with increasing anxiety until, exhausted by overwork, he died at Washington and was buried there in the Congressional Cemetery.

[The two biographies are: Henry Wheaton, *Some Account of the Life, Writings, and Speeches of William Pinkney* (1826) and Rev. William Pinkney, *The Life of William Pinkney* (1853). Both are inadequate and panegyric; the latter must be read with care. Another sketch by Wheaton appears in Jared Sparks, *The Lib. of Am. Biog.*, vol. VI (1836). For good sketches see H. H. Hagan, *Eight Great Am. Lawyers* (1923) and A. S. Niles in vol. II (1907) of *Great Am. Lawyers*, ed. by W. D. Lewis. The following periodicals are important: *Law Reporter*, Sept. 1846; *Albany Law Jour.*, Aug. 20, 1870, Mar. 18, 1876, Aug. 2, 1879; *N. J. State Bar Asso. Year Book*, 1906–07; *U. S. Law Intelligencer*, Aug. 1830; *Am. Lawyer*, July 1905; *No. Am. Rev.*, Jan. 1827. For amusing anecdote see *Forum* (London), Jan. 1874. On diplomatic career see: *Am. State Papers*, *Foreign Relations*, vols. III, IV (1832–34); J. C. Hildt, "Early Diplomatic Negotiations of the U. S. with Russia," in *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies in Hist. and Pol.*

Sci., vol. XXIV (1906); *Letters and Other Writings of James Madison* (4 vols., 1865); Henry Adams, *Hist. of the U. S.* (9 vols., 1889–93); Madison and Monroe Papers (MSS. Div., Lib. of Cong). For contemporaneous estimates see Wm. Sullivan, *Familiar Letters on Public Characters* (1834); W. P. Kennedy, *Memoirs of the Life of William Wirt* (2 vols., 1849); *Life and Letters of Joseph Story* (2 vols., 1851) and *The Miscellaneous Writings of Joseph Story* (1852), both ed. by W. W. Story; Samuel Tyler, *Memoir of Roger Brooke Taney* (1876); *Life, Letters and Journals of George Ticknor* (2 vols., 1876), ed. by A. E. Ticknor and A. E. Hilliard; Peter Harvey, *Reminiscences and Anecdotes of Daniel Webster* (1877); A. J. Beveridge, *The Life of John Marshall*, vol. IV (1919); *Daily National Intelligencer* (Washington), Feb. 26, 1822. The source for date of marriage is "Maryland Marriages, 1777–1804" (typescript in Md. Hist. Soc.); genealogical material has been taken from records in the possession of Mrs. L. Roberts Carton, Towson, Md.]

J. J. D.

PINNEY, NORMAN (Oct. 21, 1804–Oct. 1, 1862), clergyman, educator, was born in Simsbury, Conn., the son of Butler Pinney, whose wife was Eunice (Griswold), widow of Oliver Holcomb. He was a descendant of Humphrey Pinne, who emigrated from England to Dorchester, Mass., in 1630. Norman received a college training at Yale, where he won the Berkleian Premium and was graduated in 1823. On June 14, 1826, he was elected tutor at Washington (now Trinity) College, Hartford, Conn., and two years later was appointed adjunct professor of ancient languages, with an annual salary of $600. He resigned this position on Sept. 5, 1831. Soon afterward he was ordained by Bishop Thomas C. Brownell of the Protestant Episcopal Church, who was also president of Washington College. In 1829 Brownell had traveled through Kentucky, Mississippi, Louisiana, and Alabama, where his visits lent impetus to the growth of the Episcopal Church, and it was probably due to his influence that in 1831 Pinney went to Mobile as rector of Christ Church. He was active both in his parish and in the affairs of the diocese. Judging from his one published discourse, *A Sermon Preached July 5, 1835 in Christ's Church, Mobile* (1835), he took his responsibilities seriously yet cheerfully; the sermon is marked by clear analysis, an enlightened spirit, and a sensible tone. During his rectorship the floor of the church building fell under the weight of the crowd attending a Fourth of July service. Having come to differ with the doctrines of his Church, he withdrew from the ministry, and was formally displaced by Bishop James H. Otey, on Feb. 27, 1836. Later, he became a Unitarian.

In this same year he founded the Mobile Institute, a school for boys. His educational ideas are set forth in his booklet of fifty-six pages, *The Principles of Education as Applied in the Mobile*

Institute (1836). He foresaw that New Orleans was to become the commercial center of a great inland empire, and hoped that Mobile might aspire to be the educational and cultural center of this region. He understood that in a democracy there is peculiar need for proper education, and considered that the education of his time was too theoretical. He opposed the plan on which many colleges and schools were then being founded, which provided that students should spend part of their time in farm work, on the ground that such labor was "incompatible with that neatness of dress and cleanliness of person which befits a student." He stressed the value of unrestricted sport for boys, and thought corporal punishment necessary only in rare and unusual cases. He attached importance to Latin, mathematics, and English composition, but put less emphasis on history, modern languages, and sciences. The last named he thought important, but not "to be taught in all their minute detail." Parents who wanted their children educated in order to make more money "must of course regard money, not merely as the chief good, but as the only good." The Institute prospered, and many men later conspicuous in Mobile history were educated there. Pinney had important qualifications as an educator and was especially noted for the patient firmness with which he succeeded in bringing out whatever capacity there was in his pupils. He lived quietly, and took no active part in public affairs. Shortly before his death he went to New Orleans, intending to found a boys' school there, but died after a brief illness. He published a number of textbooks, the most of which went through several editions. They include *Practical French Teacher* (1847); *First Book in French* (1848); *The Progressive French Reader* (1850); *The Practical Spanish Teacher* (1855); with Juan Barceló; *Easy Lessons in Pronouncing and Speaking French* (1860); *French Grammar* (1861), with Émile Arnoult. Apparently he never married.

[L. Y. Pinney, *Geneal. of the Pinney Family in America* (1924); H. R. Stiles, *The Hist. and Geneals. of Ancient Windsor, Conn.*, vol. II (1892); *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Coll.*, 1863; information from the treasurer's office, Trinity Coll., Hartford, Conn.; records of the dioceses of Miss. and Tenn.; Erwin Craighead, *Mobile, Fact and Tradition* (1930); *Picayune* (New Orleans), Oct. 2, 1862.]

R. P. M.

PINTARD, JOHN (May 18, 1759–June 21, 1844), merchant, philanthropist, was born in New York, the son of John and Mary (Cannon) Pintard, and was descended from Anthony Pintard, a Huguenot from La Rochelle who had settled at Shrewsbury, N. J., in 1695. He lost both parents during his first year, his father, a seagoing merchant, dying on a voyage to Haiti,

John was brought up by his uncle, Lewis Pintard [*q.v.*]. After preparing at the grammar school of the Rev. Leonard Cutting at Hempstead, Long Island, he attended the College of New Jersey where he received the degree of A.B. in 1776 after running away for a brief military service. He served for some time as deputy to his uncle, who was commissioner of prisoners at New York. In 1780 he went to Paramus, N. J., for a while, and then was associated in his uncle's mercantile operations. On Nov. 12, 1784, he married a celebrated beauty, Eliza, daughter of Abraham Brashear of Paramus. They had two daughters. Inheriting a legacy from his maternal grandfather, he was enabled to go into the China and East India business on his own account, and until 1792, when he was dragged down by the crash of the stock speculations of William Duer [*q.v.*], he was rated as one of New York's most successful and prosperous merchants. Pintard, who had indorsed his notes for more than a million, it is said, lost his entire fortune and was even imprisoned for debt. For eight years he resided at Newark and then declared himself bankrupt in New York. For a short while he was book auctioneer and editor of the *Daily Advertiser*. He then went to New Orleans to try his fortune but decided not to settle there, and was soon back in New York where he spent the rest of his life. He never recovered his old fortune, but his positions as secretary of the pioneer New York fire insurance company and later as bank president seem to have enabled him to contribute generously to the various movements which he sponsored.

Pintard's great work was as a promoter. "He could indite a handbill," says Scoville, "that would inflame the minds of the people for any good work. He could call a meeting with the pen of a poet, and before the people met, he would have arranged the doings for a perfect success. He knew the weak points of every man, and he would gratify the vanity of men and get their money." DeWitt Clinton was always ready to allow Pintard to use his name and moral support for any measure. He developed a real passion for the preservation of historical manuscripts. He purchased a valuable collection of material on the Revolution from a Tory clergyman. In 1789, while visiting Jeremy Belknap, he gave the initial impulse which resulted in the establishment of the Massachusetts Historical Society. In 1791 he organized a historical museum under the auspices of the Tammany Society of which he was the first sagamore and later grand sachem. After the museum passed into private hands, Pintard carried out his original idea by taking

Pintard

the leading part in organizing the New York Historical Society in 1804. It was one of the many organizations which he served for years as secretary. He also developed the systematic municipal recording of vital statistics during his term (1804–10) as clerk of the corporation and city inspector of New York City.

Religious activity also appealed to him. He was for thirty-four years vestryman of the Episcopalian Huguenot church in New York and translated the Prayer-Book into French for its use. He was also a prime mover in founding the General Theological Seminary and was active in raising funds for it. The American Bible Society, which he called his "brat," he served as secretary and vice-president. He had been an alderman in 1788 and 1789, and in 1790 he sat in the state legislature. After the War of 1812 he helped to revive the Chamber of Commerce and was its secretary from 1817 to 1827. In 1815 he promoted a mass meeting in favor of the Erie Canal project. He engineered the organization of New York's first savings bank in 1819 and was its president from 1828 to 1841. He was also interested in the Sailors' Snug Harbor, the House of Refuge, and the Mercantile Library. A Trumbull portrait shows a handsome and kindly face, with a high forehead. Belknap described him as "very loquacious and unreserved." He had been deafened in youth by a Fourth of July explosion and in his last years was nearly blind. He died in New York at the home of a daughter.

[The chief source is J. G. Wilson, *"John Pintard, Founder of the N. Y. Hist. Soc.," an Address before the N. Y. Hist. Soc., Dec. 3, 1901* (1902). See also: J. A. Scoville (W. Barrett), *Biog. Sketch of John Pintard* (1863) and *The Old Merchants of N. Y. City* (5 vols., 1863–69); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol I (1879), p. xi; E. P. Kilroe, *Saint Tammany and the Origin of the Soc. of Tammany* (1913); J. G. Wilson, *The Memorial Hist. of the City of N. Y.* (4 vols., 1892–93); material in the alumni files of Princeton Univ.; *N. Y. Commercial Advertiser*, June 22, 1844.]

R. G. A.

PINTARD, LEWIS (Oct. 1, 1732–Mar. 25, 1818), merchant, commissary of prisoners, was born in New York City, the son of John and Catherine (Carré) Pintard. He was descended from Anthony Pintard who had escaped from his native La Rochelle after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes and in 1695 settled in Shrewsbury, N. J. Lewis received a fair schooling and a good commercial training in his father's prosperous shipping and commission business to which he later succeeded. By his marriage with Susan Stockton of Princeton, N. J., he became the brother-in-law of Richard Stockton, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and brother-in-law of Elias Boudinot [*qq.v.*]. In 1760, after

the death of his brother John, he practically adopted the infant nephew, also named John [*q.v.*]. By the outbreak of the Revolution, Pintard was reckoned as one of the substantial merchants of New York City. He was a member of the Committee of One Hundred, organized in New York in the spring of 1775. Shortly afterward the Provincial Congress appointed Henry Remsen, Jacobus Van Zandt, and Pintard as a committee to procure gunpowder and clothing from Europe. They raised nearly £4000 on subscription and in September chartered the sloop *Nancy*, sending her to Bordeaux for the necessary supplies which arrived the following summer by the way of St. Eustatius and Providence, R. I.

Pintard remained in New York City after the British occupation and was able to carry on a moderate amount of business during the war. He became commissary of prisoners and held the position until relieved late in the war by Abraham Skinner. There were about 5,000 American prisoners in and around New York in the Provost, in various church and sugar houses, and in the hulks in Wallabout Bay, including the notorious *Jersey*. Pintard, with the aid of several deputies, did what he could to relieve their sufferings. He distributed the money and supplies gathered by Gov. George Clinton and others for the relief of the prisoners. He managed to secure easy and regular access to the prisoners and was active in arranging exchanges. Bad as conditions were, they would probably have been considerably worse had it not been for Pintard's work. At the close of the Revolution he was commissioner for liquidating claims in the state of New Jersey against the United States, a responsible task involving large discretionary power.

For some time after the Revolution, Pintard was the chief importer of Madeira wines into the United States and an exporter of flaxseed to Ireland. Then, like his nephew John, he suffered a heavy financial loss through the collapse of another whom he had trusted. Owing to the failure of a Dublin consignee, his cargoes were seized and £20,000 in bills protested. He was able to continue, however, and engaged in the importation of sugar and molasses from the West Indies until the beginning of the War of 1812. During these years he had commuted to New York from his home in the nearby Huguenot town of New Rochelle, where a street now bears his name. In 1797 he was one of the school commissioners of New Rochelle. He spent the last six years of his life at his wife's home in Princeton, "devoting himself principally to the perusal of the

sacred scriptures and to the practice of every Christian virtue in domestic life," and he died there at the home of his son-in-law, Samuel Bayard [*q.v.*].

[J. G. Wilson, *"John Pintard, Founder of the N. Y. Hist. Soc.," an Address before the N. Y. Hist. Soc., Dec. 3, 1901* (1902); J. A. Scoville (W. Barrett), *Biog. Sketch of John Pintard* (1863) and *The Old Merchants of New York* (5 vols., 1863–69); *Huguenot Soc. of America, Colls.*, I (1886), 195, 254; *N. Y. in the Revolution as Colony and State*, vol. II (1904), pub. by E. C. Knight; F. G. Mather, *The Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Conn.* (1913); Danske Dandridge, *Am. Prisoners of the Revolution* (1911); *N. Y. Commercial Advertiser*, Apr. 1, 1818.]

R. G. A.

PINTO, ISAAC (June 12, 1720–Jan. 17, 1791), merchant, scholar, and patriot, was a member of a Portuguese family, a branch of which came to North America, probably by way of Jamaica, before the middle of the eighteenth century. Some members of the family settled in Connecticut as early as 1724; others were settled in New York by 1736. Their names are recorded in the earliest Minute Books of the Congregation Shearith Israel. Isaac Pinto's name occurs in the records of 1740–41, 1747, and 1750. Nothing is known of his immediate ancestry or the place of his birth, where he was educated or how he was related to the other members of the Pinto family. From contemporary sources, he appears to have been a merchant of means who lived from time to time in different places. On the ledger of Daniel Gomez, a New York merchant, he is described in 1741 as being "now at Norwalk, now at Strattsburg" (*Publications of the American Jewish Historical Society*, No. 27, 1920; p. 248). In 1760–62, he was in Charlestown, S. C., where he advertised himself in the *South Carolina Gazette* as a wholesale wine merchant. In 1764 his name was attached to a petition against carrying into effect a certain act of the New York legislature passed in December 1761 (D. T. Valentine, *Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York*, 1850, p. 434). In 1768 he advertised for sale "Choice South Carolina Pink Root" in many issues of the *New York Journal*. In the supplement to the *New-York Gazette* of July 23, 1770, his name was subscribed to a list of importers and shopkeepers who were in favor of continuing the Non-Importation Resolutions of 1765. In 1790 Ezra Stiles referred to him in his *Diary* as "a learned Jew at New York" (F. B. Dexter, *The Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles*, 1901, III, 392). From Nov. 15, 1790, until his death he advertised in the *New York Journal* as a teacher of the Spanish language.

Pinto is best known as the translator into English of the first Jewish Prayer Book printed in America. The work appeared in two parts. The

first, *Evening Service of Roshashanah and Kippur,* was published anonymously in 1761; the second, *Prayers for Shabbath, Rosh-Hashanah, and Kippur,* appeared under the author's name in 1766. It can hardly be doubted that the two volumes came from the same hand. The translation was a notable performance in its day. Pinto was probably the translator, also, of *The Form of Prayer . . . for a General Thanksgiving . . . for the Reducing of Canada* (1760). Samuel Oppenheim would attribute to him "The Chapters of Isaac the Scribe," six sketches written in Biblical style that appeared in the *New York Journal or General Advertiser* from Sept. 10 to Oct. 8, 1772 (*Publications of the American Jewish Historical Society,* No. 22, 1914, pp. 39–51). It is possible too that many of the letters in the newspapers that appeared between 1750 and 1775 under the pseudonyms "A. B." and "Philalethes" were from his pen. Pinto died unmarried. An obituary notice which appeared in the *New-York Journal & Patriotic Register* of Jan. 20, 1791, described him as "a much respected citizen . . . whose knowledge of mankind was general. Though of the Hebrew nation, his liberality was not circumscribed by the limits of that Church. He was well versed in several of the foreign languages. He was a staunch friend of the liberties of his country. . . . In his death . . . his relations have lost a firm friend and the literary world, an historian and philosopher." His tombstone can still be seen in the Spanish and Portuguese Burial Ground on Twenty-first Street, New York.

[See: *The Jewish Encyc.*; Index to *Am. Jewish Hist. Soc. Pubs.*; B. A. Elzas, *The Jews of S. C.* (1905); Israel Abrahams, *By-Paths in Hebraic Bookland* (1920); *The Lit. Remains of the Rev. Simeon Singer* (1908), ed. by Israel Abrahams; D. de Sola Pool, "The Earliest Jewish Prayer Book Printed in America," the *Jewish Tribune,* Sept. 5, 1924.] B. A. E.

PIPER, CHARLES VANCOUVER (June 16, 1867–Feb. 11, 1926), agronomist, was born at Victoria, British Columbia, the son of Andrew William and Minna (Hausman) Piper. A few years after his birth his parents removed to the state of Washington, where young Piper obtained his early education. In 1885 he graduated from the University of Washington with the degree of bachelor of science, receiving in 1892 the master's degree. Between these dates he helped his father run his bakery business in Seattle and in spare time pursued his hobby, botanizing in the Puget Sound and Mount Ranier country. In 1893 he began teaching botany and zoölogy in what is now the State College of Washington, at Pullman, remaining head of his department until 1903. He married Laura Maude Hungate on Sept. 15, 1897, and took time enough from his teaching to secure in 1900 the degree of M.S. from Harvard. During the years at Pullman he made very valuable collections for the school, not only of plants, but also of zoölogical specimens and insects. In this work his students and many acquaintances helped him, especially his assistant, R. Kent Beattie. Together the two young men carried on explorations in Washington, Idaho, and Oregon, collecting and classifying botanical specimens and compiling material published later in *The Flora of the Palouse Region* (1901), *Flora of Southeastern Washington and Adjacent Idaho* (1914), and *Flora of the Northwest Coast* (1915). In 1906 *Flora of the State of Washington* appeared, of which Piper was sole author. These books are still the best works for the botany of that region. In this labor Piper acquired the extreme niceness in the use of terms that distinguished all his later writings.

From 1903 until his death he was employed by the United States Department of Agriculture, being in charge of the office of forage crops investigations from its beginning as a separate unit in 1905. While in this position he accomplished a prodigious amount of work and published many articles, both alone and in collaboration with others. He had a passion for doing things and one of his characteristic expressions was: "What's next?" He himself worked at high pressure and inspired his associates with much of his own enthusiasm. With his capacity for seeing all sides of a project he often arrayed himself in opposition to it, and thus forced its advocate to present his case thoroughly; then he would turn his attention to overcoming every obstacle and carry the project through. He was big in all ways, over six feet in height, broad-minded, generous, and absolutely without pretense. Scientists all over the world wrote for his help and sent him specimens.

By the request of the War Department Piper was sent in 1911 to make a survey of forage crop possibilities in the Philippines. He carried out this enterprise so successfully that he was asked in 1923 to make a similar study in the Panama Canal district. His work on grasses led to his most brilliant achievement. Conceiving the idea that somewhere there must grow a cousin of the weedy Johnson grass of the Southern states, without the latter's objectionable features, he sent innumerable requests to the old world for samples of grass and actually found in Sudan, mistakenly classified under the name *Sorghum Halepense,* the grass of his dreams, which he named Sudan grass. In 1913 he published *Sudan*

Grass, a New Drought-resistant Hay Plant, as Circular No. 125 of the Bureau of Plant Industry. The value of this grass crop in the United States since 1918 has been estimated at $10,000,000 a year. The record of his achievements would be incomplete without mention of his work for the improvement of golf courses. In collaboration with R. A. Oakley he wrote *Turf for Golf Courses* (1917) and contributed many valuable articles on this subject. Among his writings not elsewhere mentioned were *The Soybean* (1923), in collaboration with W. J. Morse, and *Forage Plants and Their Culture* (1914, 1924). For two or three years he worked under the impediment of ill health but in this time he completed unfinished manuscripts, and he left a practically empty desk when death overtook him.

[H. N. Vinall, in *Jour. of the Am. Soc. of Agronomy,* Mar. 1926; R. K. Beattie, in *Proc. of the Biological Soc. of Washington,* vol. XLI (1928); R. A. Oakley, in *Bull. of the U. S. Golf Asso., Green Section,* Mar. 16, 1926; *Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; *Science,* Mar. 5, 1926; *Evening Star* (Washington), Feb. 12, 1926; information from friends and associates.]

L. G.

PIRSSON, LOUIS VALENTINE (Nov. 3, 1860–Dec. 8, 1919), geologist, professor at Yale University, was born at Fordham, N. Y., the son of Francis Morris and Louisa (Butt) Pirsson. His great-grandfather, William Pirsson, came from Chelmsford, Essex, England, to the vicinity of New York in 1796. His son William married Emily Morris of New York, and it was in the comfortable home of his paternal grandparents that Louis was born. His mother died when Louis was four years old; his father saw little of the young son, being absent in South America. At nine years of age Louis became the ward of Thomas Lord of New York, who placed him in the family of the Rev. William J. Blain, pastor of a near-by church, who lived on a small farm near Amsterdam, N. Y. Blain was a strict disciplinarian but a good teacher, and from him Louis received much of his primary education. Here also he was trained in the strict and regular performance of small family duties. He delved into his preceptor's excellent library and acquired a taste for literature and for natural history. Another boy taken into Blain's family helped stimulate his scientific leanings. The two organized collecting excursions, had a small museum in the woodshed, and called themselves naturalists. Birds were Pirsson's chief interest. At sixteen he was placed in Amenia Academy, Dutchess County, N. Y. (later in New Marlboro, Mass.), and entered the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale in 1879. His summer vacations spent at the shore with his wealthy guardian softened an otherwise severe life with luxurious pastimes and social diversions.

Pirsson graduated from Sheffield with honors in 1882; served as assistant in chemistry; became an expert analyst; and laid the chemical foundation for his later geological work. In 1888 he taught chemistry at the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute, but in 1889 he left to accept an unusual opportunity, procured for him by his kindly adviser, Professor Brush, to become a field assistant of a United States Geological Survey party under Arnold Hague to study Yellowstone Park. An enthusiastic geologist, he returned to Yale and studied under Professor Penfield. Another field season in Montana developed his interest in igneous geology, which became his life work. Subsequently he studied at Heidelberg, the Mecca of petrologists, and in Paris. While abroad, in 1892, he was called by Professor Brush to Yale to become instructor in mineralogy and lithology. In 1893 he gave the first graduate course at Yale in petrology, which later attracted a continuous flow of graduate students, many of whom were to become distinguished geologists. In 1894 he was made assistant professor, and in 1897 professor of physical geology. In 1902 he married Eliza Trumbull Brush, daughter of his early teacher and adviser, Professor George J. Brush.

As a teacher he held his students "not by picturesque or fascinating language, but by his knowledge of the subject and his clear and fluent presentation of it" (Cross, *post,* p. 182). As a member of the governing board of the Sheffield Scientific School, he served as its secretary; was senior class officer and chairman of the discipline committee; was a member of the board of Sheffield trustees and of its executive committee, and for a brief period was acting director of the school. He was elected a member of numerous scientific societies, and from 1899 until his death was associate editor of the *American Journal of Science,* in which some forty of his contributions were published. His most noted contributions were a series of papers dealing with the igneous rocks of Montana, which Whitman Cross states constitute "one of the most important contributions to American petrology." His analyses and microscopic investigations revealed many interesting rocks, some new to science. In 1903 appeared the *Quantitative Classification of Igneous Rocks,* by Cross, Iddings, Pirsson, and Washington, the great four of American petrology, in which was formulated an entirely new system of classification and a new terminology. Pirsson was also the author of a widely used book on

Rocks and Rock Minerals (1908) and of a textbook of physical geology, which is Part I of the *Text Book of Geology* (1915) by Pirsson and Schuchert. By 1929 Pirsson's part had gone through three editions and was the most widely used textbook of geology in the world.

[Sources include: Whitman Cross, "Biog. of Louis Valentine Pirsson," *Am. Jour. Sci.*, Sept. 1920; R. H. Chittenden, *Hist. of the Sheffield Sci. School*, vol. II (1928); *Yale Univ. Obit. Record of Grads. Deceased During the Year Ending July 1, 1920* (1921); *Science*, May 28, 1920; *New Haven Journal-Courier*, Dec. 9, 1919; private diaries; records of the governing board, Sheffield Scientific School, personal acquaintance.]

A. M. B.

PISE, CHARLES CONSTANTINE (Nov. 22, 1801–May 26, 1866), Roman Catholic priest and writer, was born in Annapolis, Md., the son of an educated Italian refugee, Louis Pise, who married Marguerite Gamble, member of an old Philadelphia family. Charles was sent to Georgetown College, where in 1815 he joined the Jesuits and attracted the notice of Archbishop Ambrose Maréchal [*q.v.*], by Latin verses written for the Commencement of 1819. In 1820 he withdrew and was sent by Maréchal to Rome. Returning a year later, he completed his theological course at Mount St. Mary's, Emmitsburg, Md., where he was associated with three future archbishops, McCloskey, Purcell, and Hughes. Ordained by Maréchal, Mar. 19, 1825, he taught rhetoric at the "Mount," served as a curate in the cathedral at Baltimore, and as an assistant at St. Patrick's Church in Washington, where he gained a reputation as a preacher of polished sermons. During these years, he wrote "Celara," a poem of the fifteenth century; a Latin elegy on Pius VII; and "Montezuma," a drama in three acts, which was presented by the students of Mount St. Mary's in 1824. These remained in manuscript, but in addition, he published an apologetic novel, *Father Rowland* (1829), which was well received in religious circles; *The Indian Cottage, A Unitarian Story* (1829), in defense of the divinity of Christ, which was reprinted serially in the *Catholic Expositor* (1842); and *History of the Church from Its Establishment to the Present Century* (5 vols., 1827–30), which was never completed beyond the beginning of the sixteenth century. While hardly more than a well-written compilation, this study offered the best Catholic account of the church in English and was certainly the most extended literary work achieved by an American Catholic up to that time. Indeed, prior to Pise, Catholic literature in the United States was confined practically to translations and reprints of foreign authors. In 1832 he revisited Europe. At Rome, he received on examination the doctorate in divinity, and was dubbed a Knight of the Sacred Palace and Count Palatine by Gregory XVI, an honor not heretofore held by an American. At the same time he was created a Knight of the Holy Roman Empire.

On his return to Washington, he was nominated by Henry Clay, who was rather generally supported politically by the old American Catholic element, for the chaplaincy of the United States Senate, and was duly elected, Dec. 11, 1832, despite an intense nativist opposition in press and pulpit to his creed and foreign honors. A slight honor, it nevertheless was a marked recognition of Pise, for he was the only Catholic priest ever selected for that office. His social relations, apparently, were highly satisfactory, because of the friendship of Jackson. A temporary pastor at Annapolis (1833), he was called by Bishop John Dubois [*q.v.*] to New York in 1834, where he labored in the parish of St. Joseph's, rent at the time by trusteeism, until he was appointed an assistant to Dr. John Power [*q.v.*] at St. Peter's Church in 1840. Two years later he went abroad to collect funds for the orphanage connected with St. Peter's, armed with a letter of introduction from President Tyler to American representatives in Europe. While in Ireland, he came under the influence of Father Theobold Mathew and returned an ardent temperance worker and a friend of the Irish immigrant, though in Irish circles he was criticized for his observations on Ireland in the *Catholic Expositor* and particularly for his condemnation of the Irish clergy for their lack of sympathy for the Mathew movement. In 1849 he built the church of St. Charles Borromeo in Brooklyn, of which he was pastor until his death.

His literary labors did not slacken. With Felix Varela [*q.v.*], with whom he was earlier associated as a founder of the ephemeral *Protestant Abridger and Expositor* (1832), he launched in 1841 *The Catholic Expositor and Literary Magazine.* Among his books were *The Pleasures of Religion and Other Poems* (1833), dedicated to Washington Irving; *Aletheia, or, Letters on the Truth of Catholic Doctrine* (1843, reprinted 1894); a eulogistic biography, *Saint Ignatius and His First Companions* (1845), which in revised form is still in circulation; *Lectures on the Invocation of the Saints, Veneration of Sacred Images and Purgatory* (1845); *Zenosius or the Pilgrim Convert* (1845), an artificial reminder of Bunyan; *The Catholic Bride* (1847), translated from the Italian; and *Christianity and the Church* (1850), an adaptation of Louis Lahuré's *Le Christianisme et les Philosophes*

(1846). A Southerner to the core, he was saddened by the Civil War, though his loyalty *de jure* could not be questioned. As a brilliant lecturer, Pise had considerable vogue, but as a critic he was too kindly, just as he was less effective as a controversialist because he was gentle and never acrimonious.

[Sister Eulalia T. Moffatt, "Charles Constantine Pise (1801–1866)," U. S. Cath. Hist. Soc., *Hist. Records and Studies*, vol. XX (1931); J. T. Smith, *The Cath. Church in N. Y.* (1905); M. J. Finotti, *Bibliographia Catholica Americana* (1872); U. S. Cath. Hist. Soc., *Hist. Records and Studies*, vol. II (2 parts, 1900–01); *Cath. Encyc.* XII, 116; M. J. Riordan, *Cathedral Records* (1906); F. X. McSweeny, *Story of the Mountain* (1911); James Fitton, *Sketches of the Establishment of the Church in New England* (1872); Peter Ross, *A Hist. of L. I.* (1902), I, 807; *Columbia*, Nov. 1927; *New York Freeman's Jour. and Cath. Reg.*, June 2, 1866; *N. Y. Herald*, May 27, 1866.] R. J. P.

PITCAIRN, JOHN (1722–June 1775), British officer, was born at Dysart, Scotland, the son of the Rev. David Pitcairn and his wife, Katherine Hamilton. As a young man he sought service in the Royal Marines, being commissioned captain, June 8, 1756, and major, Apr. 19, 1771. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Dalrymple, of Arnsfield, Dumfriesshire, and Dreghorn Castle, in Midlothian. Of their children two obtained eminence, Robert as a naval officer and David as a physician. (Biographies of both are in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.) Pitcairn accompanied the marines sent to garrison Boston in 1774. He went with the troops dispatched by Gen. Gage on the night of Apr. 18, 1775, to destroy the rebel stores at Concord. Directed by the commander of the expedition, Lieut.-Col. Francis Smith, to push ahead of the main body in order to seize the bridges at Concord, he was in command of the regulars who came into conflict with the minute-men on Lexington Common. He always maintained that the Americans fired first and denied having ordered his own men to fire. Although his horse was wounded, he himself escaped without injury. At Concord he labored with Smith to convince the inhabitants that the British meant no injury, but apparently without complete success, since, according to Smith's report, one of the townspeople struck him. There is a persistent tradition—the truth of which is challenged by reliable authority—that he went to Wright's Tavern, and calling for a drink, stirred the brandy in his glass with his finger declaring that he hoped he would stir the Yankee blood so before night. On the march back to Lexington, his horse, frightened by a sudden volley, threw him off and escaped, obliging him to continue on foot. In the battle of Bunker Hill he was mortally wounded while storming the American redoubt. It is said that the fatal shot was fired by a negro, Peter Salem, who is depicted in Trumbull's picture of the battle, but there have been other claimants. His son, a lieutenant in the marines, bore him to the water's edge, whence he was transferred to a house in the North End where he died not long after, despite the ministration of a physician sent to his bedside at the special request of Gage. His remains were at first interred under Christ Church. Later they were transferred by friends to the church of St. Bartholomew the Less, London. He was perhaps the only British officer in Boston who commanded the trust and liking of the inhabitants. It is reported that whenever the townspeople had a dispute with the military, they would refer it to him, confident of obtaining just and considerate treatment. By his men he was beloved as a father, and among the last acts of his life was the drafting of a letter to Lord Sandwich in behalf of the worthy and unfortunate under his command. The Lexington Historical Society possesses his pistols and a charming miniature of him.

[Chas. Hudson, "The Character of Maj. John Pitcairn," *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XVII (1880); F. B. Dexter, ed., *The Lit. Diary of Ezra Stiles* (1901), vol. I; Richard Frothingham, *Hist. of the Siege of Boston* (1849); Constance Pitcairn, *The Hist. of the Fife Pitcairns* (1905); Harold Murdock, *Earl Percy's Dinner-Table* (1907) and *The Nineteenth of April 1775* (1925); Allen French, *The Day of Concord and Lexington* (1925).] E. E. C.

PITCAIRN, JOHN (Jan. 10, 1841–July 22, 1916), manufacturer, philanthropist, the son of John and Agnes (McEwen) Pitcairn, was born in Scotland, at Johnstone, near Paisley, Renfrewshire. Coming to the United States before 1850, the family settled in Allegheny, Pa. Pitcairn received an elementary education in the public schools of that city, but, following in the footsteps of his elder brother Robert, began his business career about 1855 in the employ of the Pennsylvania Railroad at Altoona, Pa. His connection with railroads lasted practically without interruption until 1872, and during this period he occupied minor executive positions with the Pittsburg, Fort Wayne & Chicago railway and the Philadelphia & Erie Railroad, as well as with the Pennsylvania Railroad. His advancement was steady, but not spectacular, and in 1872 he resigned the general managership of the Oil Creek & Allegheny Valley Railroad to become an active partner in the firm of Vandergrift, Forman & Company (later Vandergrift, Pitcairn & Company), interested in various phases of fuel distribution. The firm built the Imperial Refinery at Oil City, Pa. Engaged also in the distribution of crude petroleum, Pit-

cairn is said to have been among the first to recognize the possibilities of the use of natural gas as fuel in manufacturing. A natural gas pipe line, perhaps the first in the United States, was laid from Butler County, Pa., to Pittsburgh under the control of Pitcairn and his partner, J. J. Vandergrift.

The most significant part of his business career was his connection with the plate-glass industry. In 1882 it was proposed to pipe natural gas to a glass factory to be built at Creighton, Pa., and Pitcairn's advice was asked. He became interested in the project to manufacture plate glass, which had hitherto never been successful in the United States. With Captain John B. Ford and others, Pitcairn became in 1883 one of the organizers of the Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company, an enormously successful venture. A director of the company from its incorporation, he was from 1897 to 1905 its president, and from 1894 until his death chairman of the board of directors. As president he inaugurated a policy of extensive experimentation with manufacturing methods. Among the successes achieved under this policy the lehr annealing process is worthy of note. This process of slow, controlled cooling of sheet glass, perfected between 1900 and 1904, has become standard in the industry. During the period of Pitcairn's influence, the company's capacity was greatly increased; at the time of his death it had built and was operating eight factories.

From 1905 until 1916 Pitcairn was increasingly absorbed by the religious activities which had been an important part of his life for many years. He was a follower of Emanuel Swedenborg and identified himself with that branch of Swedenborgianism known as the General Church of the New Jerusalem, which became a separate religious entity in 1890. From then on he became increasingly prominent as the most influential layman of that wing of the church, and was the founder of its distinctive community at Bryn Athyn, Pa. He was an enthusiastic supporter of the doctrine of the General Church that education was a proper and necessary function of the religious organization and was one of the twelve original founders of the Academy of the New Church at Philadelphia in June 1876. In 1897 it was moved to Bryn Athyn, and two years later it was generously endowed by Pitcairn. This unique school includes all phases of education from kindergarten through theological school.

It was Pitcairn's desire to give the community a church building, and this was undertaken in 1912, with the firm of Cram & Ferguson as

architects. As plans were discussed, the original conception of a small architecturally perfect church was greatly expanded. Gradually there was developed a cooperative organization for the building of the church, with craftsmen producing everything necessary—lumber, stonework, metal, glass, sculpture, cabinet-work, embroidery—in workshops at Bryn Athyn. It was a kind of neo-medieval guild system. The result is a magnificant group of ecclesiastical buildings, in a perfect natural setting—on a hill with a background of trees for the towers. The central building is the Cathedral, fourteenth-century Gothic in style; it is flanked by a choir building and a council building, both in twelfth-century Romanesque. At the time of Pitcairn's death none of them had been finished. Pitcairn was married on Jan. 8, 1884, to Gertrude Starkey, who died in 1898. Of their six children, three sons survived the father, who died at his country home, "Cairnwood," at Bryn Athyn. Ralph Adams Cram described him as "an old gentleman of small stature, grave, courtly, keenly intelligent, vigorous beyond his years, an acute business man, and withal possessed of imagination and intense idealism" (*American Architect*, May 29, 1918, p. 710).

[R. A. Cram, "A Note on Bryn Athyn Church," *Am. Architect*, May 29, 1918; M. B. Block, *The New Church in the New World: A Study of Swedenborgianism in America* (1932); *A Brief Handbook of Information concerning the Cathedral-Church at Bryn Athyn, Pa.* (5th ed., 1930); *Glass, Paints, Varnishes and Brushes: Their Hist., Manufacture and Use* (1923), pub. by Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company; J. W. Jordan, *Encyc. of Pa. Biog.*, vol. III (1914); editorial in *Jour. of Educ. of the Academy of the New Church*, Jan. 1917; *N. Y. Herald*, July 23, 1916; *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), July 23, 1916.]

L. P. B—t.

PITCHER, MOLLY [See McCauley, Mary Ludwig Hays, 1754–1832].

PITCHER, ZINA (Apr. 12, 1797–Apr. 5, 1872), physician and naturalist, was born on a farm near Fort Edward, Washington County, N. Y., the son of Nathaniel Pitcher, a captain in the Revolutionary army, and Margaret Stevenson, a native of Scotland. His father died early, leaving to the mother an unproductive farm and the care and education of four sons. A woman of strong personality, she laid the foundation for a highly useful career for each of her boys. Zina was educated in the common schools and in a local academy. He began the study of medicine with the neighborhood practitioners, then attended the medical school at Castleton, Vt., and, according to the practice at the time, received the degree of M.D. from Middlebury College (1822). Shortly after graduation he entered the army as an assistant surgeon and was sent to

Michigan where during the next eight years he served at posts at Detroit, Saginaw, and Sault St. Marie. He was next transferred to Fort Gibson in the Indian Territory and thence to Fortress Monroe, Va. While here in 1836 he tendered his resignation to the War Department and returned to Detroit to take up the private practice of medicine. His military service was mainly in pioneer surroundings and in close association with Indians. Wherever he went he interested himself in the natural history of the locality, particularly in botany, geology, and meteorology. He furnished material for *A Flora of North America* (2 vols., 1838–43), by John Torrey and Asa Gray, and several new botanical species were named after him. In all his contacts with the Indians he sought the acquaintance and the friendship of the tribal medicine men and familiarized himself with their ideas and practices. The result of this study is found in his chapter on Indian medicine in Henry R. Schoolcraft's *Information Respecting the History, Condition, and Prospects of the Indian Tribes of the United States* (vol. IV, 1854).

Pitcher had taken a prominent part in Detroit life and had made strong friendships there during his earlier stay, so that when he returned in 1836 he found himself from the first a leading citizen. In 1837 he was appointed a member of the first state board of regents, a position he held until 1852. He initiated the movement for a medical department at the University of Michigan, was a member of the committee to study the project, and participated in the opening of the school in 1850. He is credited with the selection of the first faculty of the school and with the draft of the rules to govern the department. He was himself designated professor emeritus. Owing to inadequate clinical material at Ann Arbor he instituted a clinical summer course at St. Mary's hospital and the Marine hospital at Detroit, beginning in 1857. He was designated clinical instructor, the only teaching title that he ever held. Faculty opposition caused the suspension of these courses after two sessions. He was elected mayor of Detroit three times, in 1840, 1841, and 1843. In 1844 he sought to assist the presidential campaign of Henry Clay by running for governor on the Whig ticket, but he went down to defeat with his chief. While mayor of Detroit he was responsible for the enactment of a law by the state legislature which eventually provided the city with its first free public schools. From this beginning developed the common-school system of the state. At various times he held the positions of city physician, county physician, member of the city board of

health, and surgeon to the Government Marine Hospital. For the greater part of his career he was on the staff of St. Mary's hospital. He was president of the Territorial Medical Society (1838–51), of the Michigan State Medical Society (1855–56), and at the Detroit meeting of the American Medical Association in 1856 he was elected its president. He was active in the organization of the Detroit Sydenham Society and of the city and county medical societies.

Pitcher was one of the incorporators of the Michigan Historical Society in 1822, and upon his return to Detroit, was appointed librarian of the society. In 1853 he and Dr. Edmund Andrews founded the *Peninsular Journal of Medicine*. Upon the departure of Andrews to Chicago in 1855, he became a co-editor of the journal, continuing until 1858. He was later an associate editor of the *Richmond and Louisville Medical Journal*. His most notable literary contributions are in the form of reports on clinical cases, epidemics, medical education, and the natural sciences. His scholarly addresses to graduating classes and medical societies show deep insight into the professional problems of the day, always with suggestions looking toward their solution. Though always a general practitioner he was a bold and skilful, though conservative, surgeon. He continued practice until 1871 when failing health compelled him to quit. He was a man of fine personal appearance, genial manner, and dignified bearing. Positive in his convictions, he was strong in his likes and aversions. He was married in 1824 to Anne Sheldon of Kalamazoo, Mich. She died in 1864, and in 1867 he married Emily L. (Montgomery) Backus of Detroit.

[F. G. Novy, biography of Pitcher, in *Physician and Surgeon*, Feb. 1908, with bibliography; *Mich. Univ. Medic. Jour.*, Mar. 1872; *Richmond and Louisville Medic. Jour.*, June 1869; *Trans. State Medic. Soc. of Mich.*, 2 ser. VI (1874); B. A. Hinsdale, *Hist. of the Univ. of Mich.* (1906); *Detroit Medic. Jour.*, July 1909; *Detroit Free Press*, Apr. 6, 1872.]

J. M. P—n.

PITCHLYNN, PETER PERKINS (Jan. 30, 1806–Jan. 17, 1881), Choctaw chief, was born in Noxubee County, Miss., the son of John Pitchlynn, a white interpreter for the federal government, and Sophia Folsom, the daughter of a Choctaw woman and a white man. Eager for an education, he traveled two hundred miles, while still only a boy, to enter a school in Tennessee. He later attended the academy at Nashville. Returning to his home in Mississippi, he built a cabin and began farming. He married Rhoda Folsom according to the rites of the Christian Church, and it is said that by his influence and example he caused the Choctaw to

abandon the practice of polygamy. He also helped to stop the traffic in liquor among the Choctaw Indians. His interest in education led him to establish a school in Kentucky for Indian children, which was supported for years by funds granted by the Choctaw government.

In 1828 he went to the West with a delegation sent out to select lands for his people. After the Choctaw treaty of 1830 he removed to Indian Territory with his family, and in 1860 he was elected principal chief. At the outbreak of the Civil War he sought to induce the Choctaw to remain neutral, and he himself always remained loyal to the Union, though he owned about a hundred slaves who were set free by the war. He signed the treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek in 1830 and the treaty of 1855, and he witnessed, as principal chief, the treaty of Washington in 1866. For many years he represented the tribe in Washington. After the death of his first wife, he was married at Washington to Caroline (Eckloff) Lombardy, the daughter of Godfrey Eckloff. He was a friend of both Andrew Jackson and Henry Clay and met Charles Dickens during the latter's American tour. In *American Notes* (1842, II, 96, 99), Dickens described him as a tall, handsome man with raven black hair, high cheek bones, and piercing black eyes, "as stately and complete a gentleman of nature's making, as ever I beheld." He also mentioned that the Indian chief spoke very good English and had read and understood such English literature as Scott's *Lady of the Lake* and *Marmion*. He was a member of the Lutheran Memorial Church at Washington and was also a prominent Mason. Upon his death in Washington his funeral services were conducted by Gen. Albert Pike. He was buried in the Congressional Cemetery, and a monument was erected over his grave by the Choctaw Nation. A gifted orator, an able statesman, he was not only a popular leader of his own people but also possessed many warm friends among the whites.

[Choctaw Archives in the manuscript collections of the Univ. of Okla.; *Memorial of P. P. Pitchlynn, Choctaw Delegate* (n.d.); F. W. Hodge, *Handbook of Am. Indians*, pt. II (1910); J. B. Thoburn, *A Standard Hist. of Okla.* (1916), vol. I; *Evening Star* (Washington), Jan. 18, 1881.] E. E. D.

PITKIN, FREDERICK WALKER (Aug. 31, 1837–Dec. 18, 1886), lawyer, governor of Colorado, was born in Manchester, Conn., the son of Eli and Hannah M. (Torrey) Pitkin, and a descendant of William Pitkin [*q.v.*] who emigrated from England to Hartford, Conn., in 1659. For generations the Pitkin family had been prominent in the affairs of the state. Although left an orphan at the age of twelve, Frederick was prepared for college and in 1854 entered Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., from which he graduated four years later. Shortly after his graduation from the Albany (N. Y.) Law School in 1859, he began the practice of law in Milwaukee, Wis. Following a serious illness in 1872, he became a health-seeker, visiting Minnesota in the autumn of that year, Europe in the spring of 1873, and Florida in the winter of 1873–74. In October 1874, he went to Colorado and took up his residence in the southern part of that territory, first at Ouray and then at Pueblo.

In Colorado he came into contact with prominent political leaders, who were so much impressed with his personality and ability that they urged and secured his nomination for governor by the Republican party in 1878. In the election he defeated his Democratic opponent, W. A. H. Loveland, by a majority of 2,700 votes in a total of 27,000 votes cast. His first term (1879–81) was filled with stirring events which tested fully his judgment and executive ability. Colorado, only three years in the Union, was still a frontier state with hundreds of Indians within its borders. In September 1879 occurred at the White River Agency the uprising of the Ute Indians known as the Meeker massacre. Governor Pitkin used the full power of the state, in cooperation with the federal troops, for the protection of the ranchers and miners on the frontiers; he vigorously voiced to the authorities in Washington the universal cry in Colorado that "the Utes must go." As the result of a treaty with these Indians in 1880 they were moved from the state in 1881, and a large tract of land on the "western slope" was thus thrown open to settlement. Other perplexing problems that involved the maintenance of law and order in frontier communities were the strike of the Leadville miners, and the struggle between the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fé Railroad and the Denver & Rio Grande Railway for the control of the Royal Gorge in the canyon of the Arkansas River. Governor Pitkin's proclamation of martial law in the Leadville strike (June 13, 1880) was one of the main points of attack upon him in his campaign for reëlection in 1880, but he was victorious over his Democratic rival, John L. Hough, by a majority of about 5,000 in a total of 52,000 ballots. At the expiration of his second term as governor (1883), he was a candidate for the United States Senate, but was defeated in the Republican legislative caucus by Thomas M. Bowen [*q.v.*].

During the three remaining years of his life he engaged in the practice of law in Pueblo.

He is generally regarded as one of the ablest of Colorado's governors. He was indefatigable in guarding the public interest and in his devotion to duty; his honesty and integrity were never questioned. The lack of decisiveness with which he was sometimes charged was due, not to weakness, but to an extreme conscientiousness and to fear that hasty action might work injustice. He was survived by his wife, Fidelia M. (James) of Lockport, N. Y., to whom he was married on June 17, 1862, and by their two children.

[A. P. Pitkin, *Pitkin Family in America* (1887); Frank Hall, *Hist. of the State of Colo.*, vol. II (1890), vol. III (1891); *Hist. of Colo.: Biog.* (1927), vol. V; *Rocky Mountain News* (Denver), and *Denver Tribune-Republican*, Dec. 19, 1886; information regarding certain facts from Robert J. Pitkin of Denver.]

C. B. G.

PITKIN, TIMOTHY (Jan. 21, 1766–Dec. 18, 1847), statesman, historian, economist, was born in Farmington, Conn., the sixth child of the Rev. Timothy Pitkin (Yale, 1747), pastor of the church at Farmington. He came of distinguished ancestry, being descended from William Pitkin, 1635–1694 [*q.v.*], the founder of the family in America, who settled in Hartford in 1659, and a grandson of William Pitkin, 1694–1769 [*q.v.*], colonial governor of Connecticut. His mother, Temperance Clap, was the daughter of the Rev. Thomas Clap [*q.v.*], rector of Yale College. Timothy Pitkin was prepared for college by his father and brother-in-law. Upon graduation in 1785 he had the honor of delivering the Latin salutatory address. After teaching Latin and Greek for a year at Plainfield Academy, he studied law at Windsor with Oliver Ellsworth [*q.v.*]. From him Pitkin received a strong leaning toward political life. Admitted to the bar in 1788, he began his political career two years later in the lower house of the Connecticut General Assembly. There he served until his election to Congress in 1805. As congressman, he devoted himself industriously to the study of economic conditions in the new nation. He collected public documents and state papers and continually made memoranda from confidential communications from the executive. He was a loyal member of a Federalist group led by Josiah Quincy, his lifelong friend, and to the cause, by supplying much of the statistical material used in Quincy's speeches against the Embargo and Non-Intercourse acts. In 1818 Pitkin served as a delegate to the convention which revised the Connecticut constitution. The defeat of the Federalists brought his service in Congress to an end in 1819. He was at once elected to the Connecticut legislature, retaining his seat until 1830, when he retired from politics. Soon afterward he gave up his legal work and devoted his remaining years to writing on historical and economic subjects.

In 1816 Pitkin had published *A Statistical View of the Commerce of the United States of America,* a work of unusual importance. A second edition had appeared in 1817. This book he now revised and enlarged. In the third edition (1835), he brought together a large amount of valuable data on the foreign trade of the country and on taxation, manufactures, and internal improvements. His industry in collecting his material and his careful habits of writing made this book the outstanding work of its kind. It still remains a valuable reference work on American economic history. In 1828 he published in two volumes *A Political and Civil History of the United States,* which covered the period 1763–97. Compiled from original sources, the work was marked by "accuracy, judicial temper, excellent judgment, and exhaustive research." Although the style is somewhat uninteresting, and although it is now largely superseded by later histories using material inaccessible to Pitkin, his work is still useful. A continuation of the history he left uncompleted at his death. His interests were wide. He was the author of a plan for the progressive emancipation of the slaves in the border states by the use of funds obtained through the sale of public lands. In college he was interested in astronomy and succeeded in calculating and accurately predicting the famous annular eclipse of the sun in 1790. In recognition of his contributions to statistics, he was awarded in 1837 a medal by the Société Française de Statistique Universelle. He died in New Haven. A devout churchman with pronounced religious convictions, for several years before his death he devoted much time to the study of theology. He married, June 6, 1801, Elizabeth Hubbard of New Haven, by whom he had six children.

[T. C. Pitkin, "Hon. Timothy Pitkin, LL.D.," *Memorial Biogs. . . . New-Eng. Hist. Geneal. Soc.*, vol. I (1880); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll.*, vol. IV (1907); A. P. Pitkin, *Pitkin Family of America* (1887); *Columbian Reg.* (New Haven), Dec. 25, 1847.]

P. W. B.

PITKIN, WILLIAM (1635–Dec. 15, 1694), Connecticut lawyer and judge, was the son of Roger Pitkin, probably of Marylebone, England. After an excellent training in the law and perhaps some dabbling in theology, for which he had considerable fondness, he migrated to Hartford at the age of twenty-four. Here he was in 1660 granted liberty to teach the town school. Public life and the law soon claimed him, for in 1662 the General Court appointed him to prose-

cute certain offenders and two years later he became the colony's attorney for the prosecution of all delinquents. A leading lawyer in the colony, he served occasionally upon the bench, as when he was a member of the special court which met at Fairfield in 1692 to try four women for witchcraft. Apparently only one of the four was convicted and she was probably reprieved through the efforts of Pitkin himself and two other assistants. As assistant in the years 1690–94 he sat generally upon the Court of Assistants, when it met at Hartford, and was often its presiding judge.

Pitkin was a stout champion of Connecticut's colonial liberties. He served in 1683 with other commissioners who visited New York to congratulate the new governor, Dongan, and to press Connecticut's claims to a boundary that should not be more than twenty miles east of the Hudson. Three years later he served in a similar capacity, paying his colony's respects to Governor Andros and vainly requesting New York and Mohawk aid against the Indian enemies of Connecticut. In the critical years of the early nineties he championed the colony's right to control its own militia and to maintain its governmental independence of royal control. In 1690 Connecticut had voted to send troops to Albany at the request of Jacob Leisler for the war against the French, but in 1693 the extremely conservative instructions that Pitkin and his fellow commissioner had received helped to make the intercolonial defense conference in New York an abortive one. He had already in 1692 written the General Court's letter to Sir William Phips politely refusing to relinquish control of the local militia (*Connecticut Historical Society Collections*, vol. III, 1895, p. 245), and in 1694 he was joint author of the pamphlet, "Their Majesties Colony of Connecticut in New-England Vindicated" (*Ibid.*, vol. I, 1860, pp. 83–130). This was a defense against those who would have the Crown destroy the colony's self-government for the reason that the General Court was not always wise and just.

Pitkin was a member of the Church of England, but as there was no congregation in the town, he contended successfully for the right to have his children baptized in the First Church of Hartford, and was himself buried in its churchyard. His property interests lay largely on the east side of the Connecticut River where he was probably the largest land-owner and where he had an interest in a saw and grist mill. His wife was Hannah, the daughter of Ozias Goodwin, one of the early settlers of Hartford.

[See: *The Pub. Records of the Colony of Conn.*, vols. I–IV (1850–68); A. P. Pitkin, *Pitkin Family of America* (1887); W. D. Love, *The Colonial Hist. of Hartford* (1914); J. H. Trumbull, *The Memorial Hist. of Hartford County* (2 vols., 1886); C. W. Manwaring, *A Digest of the Early Conn. Probate Records*, vol. I (1904); *Commemorative Exercises of the First Church of Christ in Hartford . . . 1883* (1883), pp. 63–64.]

E. W. S.

PITKIN, WILLIAM (Apr. 30, 1694–Oct. 1, 1769), colonial judge and governor of Connecticut, son of William and Elizabeth (Stanley) Pitkin, was born and lived in Hartford. His father was a prosperous manufacturer, cloth merchant, public man, and jurist, who was the son of William Pitkin, 1635–1694 [*q.v.*], the first of the family in America. The third William was of good figure, tall, affable, and reputed to be "an Example of universal Goodness in all Relations." On May 7, 1724, he was married to Mary Woodbridge, the daughter of the Rev. Timothy Woodbridge of the First Church. William himself, a man of evident piety, was probably a member of the Third Church, that in East Hartford where he lived and owned considerable real property. Here also he and his brother Joseph operated the fulling mills bequeathed to them by their father. William alone fell heir to the clothier's shop where much of their cloth was sold. His father intended him to be a merchant, but from the age of twenty-one, when he was chosen rate-collector, to his death at seventy-five, he was almost constantly in the service of his town or colony. A captain of the train band at thirty-six, he later became major and colonel (1739) in the first regiment. When the Connecticut frontier in 1733 feared an Indian war instigated by the French, Pitkin sat on the committee for defense. Again in 1740 he was active in the cause of defense, a member of the council on war, a war financier concerned with the issue of bills of credit, enrolment officer for the volunteers of Hartford County who were to war on Spain in the West Indies, and later (1743) committeeman for war. After service as commissioner to treat with the Iroquois, he was sent in 1754 to the Albany Congress with Roger Wolcott and Elisha Williams [*qq.v.*]. Their instructions were carefully restrictive, discouraging presents for the Indians and advocating generous royal military assistance with a minimum of financial and military aid from the colony. Pitkin was one of the committee of five for drawing up the plan of confederation.

After an apprenticeship as justice of the peace, William Pitkin received appointment as judge of the county court where he presided from 1735 to 1752. The General Court of the colony elected him in 1741 to the bench of the highest court in Connecticut, the superior court. Here he served faithfully until his election to the lieu-

tenant-governorship in 1754 made him, for twelve years, its chief judge. Meanwhile he had been active in politics. After four years in the Assembly as delegate from Hartford, he became its speaker (1732–34). Twice defeated in the election of assistants, he obtained his seat in 1734. In this capacity he served for twenty years, occasionally combining his duties with those of colonial auditor, canvasser of votes, or commissioner on the Massachusetts boundary and on Mohegan affairs (both 1752). By the time he became deputy governor (1754–66) under Governor Fitch, he was known as a champion of colonial rights against the royal government. Consequently, when Governor Fitch in October 1765 took the oath to administer the Stamp Act, Pitkin received the nomination of the colonial rights men, given perhaps through a meeting of the Sons of Liberty (*Connecticut Historical Society Collections*, vol. XIX, 1921, p. xxv), for governor. The election was a landslide, and after being twice reëlected, and having creditably served nearly three terms, Pitkin died in office in October 1769.

[*Conn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. V (1896), "The Law Papers," vol. XI (1907), XIII (1911), XV (1914), and "The Pitkin Papers," vol. XIX (1921); Eliphalet Williams, *The Ruler's Duty to Honor, . . . A Sermon Occasioned by the . . . Death of the Hon. Wm. Pitkin* (1770); A. P. Pitkin, *Pitkin Family of America* (1887); *The Pub. Records of the Colony of Conn.*, vols. VII–XIII (1873–85).] E. W. S.

PITKIN, WILLIAM (1725–Dec. 12, 1789), Connecticut jurist and manufacturer, was the fourth in a line of distinguished Hartford magistrates and prosperous manufacturers of the same name. His father was William Pitkin, 1694–1769 [*q.v.*], and his mother, Mary Woodbridge. The fourth William and his wife Abigail, the daughter of James Church, attended faithfully the Third Church of Hartford of which he was for twenty-nine years deacon. Trained for the law and renowned chiefly for his career on the bench, he found time to carry on the family tradition of manufacturing. He owned power sites and mills that had belonged to his father and his uncle, Joseph Pitkin. When, in December 1775, the General Assembly granted to George Pitkin and himself permission to establish a powder-mill three miles east of the Connecticut River, one of these earlier sites was used. This powder-mill, probably the first in Connecticut, supplied the colony during the Revolution. But the price of powder, set in 1776 by the Assembly at 5*s*.4*d*., was too low for profit, and Pitkin received additional compensation at the end of the war. The Act of Jan. 8, 1783, gave to him and two others a monopoly for twenty-five years upon the manufacture of glass in Connecticut, and during the

next year he alone received similar rights over snuff manufacturing with exemption from taxation for fourteen years. In addition to these ventures he had an interest in a forging-mill.

Much of his life was given to public service. At thirty-one he was commissioned captain of the third militia company of Hartford, and two years later, still captain of his third company, he became major-commandant of the first regiment of Connecticut forces which was to serve under Abercromby in the campaign against New France. In 1762 he became lieutenant-colonel of the same regiment. In the realm of politics he served for nineteen years (1766–85) as assistant on the governor's council. During the Revolution he sat almost continuously on the Council of Safety and was known as an ardent patriot. Elected to Congress in 1784, he seems not to have taken his seat. He was considered for the lieutenant-governorship in 1787, but he finished a poor seventh among the eight candidates in the field. The next year, however, he and Elisha Pitkin were East Hartford's delegates to the convention that ratified the new federal constitution, and William cast his vote in its favor. East Hartford had been separated from Hartford after the war, and William Pitkin had been moderator of its first town meeting. In the year of his father's death, 1769, he was made a judge of the superior court and remained until the year of his death, the last year as its chief judge. He was the fourth William Pitkin in the direct line to preside over the highest court of Connecticut.

[See: *The Pub. Records of the Colony of Conn.*, vols. XIII–XV (1885–90) and *The Pub. Records of the State of Conn.*, vols. I–III (1894–1922); *Roll of State Officers of Conn., 1776 to 1881* (1881); A. P. Pitkin, *Pitkin Family of America* (1887); J. H. Trumbull, ed., *Memorial Hist. of Hartford County* (1886), vol. II; Mathias Spiess and P. W. Bidwell, *Hist. of Manchester, Conn.* (1924); *Hartford, Conn., as a Manufacturing . . . Center* (1889).] E. W. S.

PITMAN, BENN (July 24, 1822–Dec. 28, 1910), phonographer, son of Samuel and Mariah (Davis) Pitman, was born in Trowbridge, Wiltshire, England, one of a family of seven boys and four girls. He received a good elementary education under the direction of the rector of the parish, the poet George Crabbe, and through private instruction at home. His father was the manager of a cloth manufactory, a hand-loom weaver by trade. He was a strict disciplinarian, a strong supporter of education in the parish, and a man of liberal views, as witnessed by the fact that while a member of the Church of England and superintendent of the Sunday school, he served in the same capacity in the Baptist chapel which his wife attended, taking his four elder

sons with him, where they all taught classes. In Benn Pitman's biography of his brother Isaac, he says that no trivial conversation was allowed in their home. The children under fourteen were expected to be silent at table; those under twelve stood while eating. When he was twenty-one, Benn began to assist his brother Isaac as a lecturer on phonography. Isaac Pitman had invented a new system of shorthand based on the sounds in the English language and Benn had learned it four or five years before and had superintended the correction of the plates of the first edition of Isaac's book on phonetic shorthand. He was profoundly convinced of the importance of the phonetic principle as a factor in education and general progress, and, filled with the enthusiasm born of this conviction, he now went about the country with his brother Joseph and several other young men, lecturing and teaching.

In 1846, he took charge of a publishing house called the Phonographic and Phonotypic Depot. Three years later he married Jane Bragg, of Manchester. By 1852 Isaac felt that the United States should no longer be left in ignorance of phonography and in the middle of the winter sent Benn and his wife with their two children across the ocean as steerage passengers. After living for a time in Philadelphia, Pa., and Canton, Ohio, Pitman moved to Cincinnati, which remained his home until his death. There he founded the Phonographic Institute, for the teaching of shorthand and the publishing of works on that subject. Although in 1858 Isaac Pitman made radical changes in his system, Benn continued to teach the original method, which he felt to be superior to the new, and which came to be one of the most popular in the United States. During the first years of the Civil War Benn served in the ranks. Later he was employed by the government as a shorthand reporter. He reported a number of famous trials, among them the trial of the conspirators in the assassination of President Lincoln, and he compiled and arranged for publication an abridgment of the testimony (*The Assassination of President Lincoln and the Trial of the Conspirators*, 1865).

He was the author and editor of many works on shorthand and phonetic reform, a number of which were elaborately decorated, and in 1902 published *Sir Isaac Pitman, His Life and Labors, Told and Illustrated by Benn Pitman.* In 1855 he invented an electrochemical process of relief engraving and in 1867, with Dr. J. B. Burns, produced relief stereotype plates by a photo-gelatine process. It is said that the interior of his home in Cincinnati was ornately decorated with woodcarving, the work of himself and

his pupils at the Cincinnati Art School where he taught woodcarving and decorative art for many years. His wife died in 1878, and in 1881 he married Adelaide Nourse, by whom he had one daughter. By his first marriage there were two sons and a daughter. He died in Cincinnati after a long illness.

[*Cincinnati Enquirer*, Dec. 29, 1910; *Cincinnati Commercial Tribune*, Dec. 29, 1910; Alfred Baker, *The Life of Sir Isaac Pitman* (1908); *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), Feb. 1911; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11.] B. R.

PITNEY, MAHLON (Feb. 5, 1858–Dec. 9, 1924), legislator and judge, was the third child of Henry Cooper Pitney, vice-chancellor of New Jersey, and Sarah Louisa (Halsted) Pitney. He was born at Morristown, N. J., where he received his preparatory education. Before he was eighteen he entered the College of New Jersey (now Princeton University), took the full course, and received the degree of A.B. in 1879. After reading law in his father's office at Morristown he was admitted to the bar and began practice at Dover in the same county. In 1885 he was licensed as a counselor and four years later, upon his father's appointment as vice-chancellor, returned to Morristown and took over the latter's practice which he continued with marked success for nearly a dozen years. On Nov. 14, 1891, he was married to Florence T. Shelton, of his native town, and two sons and one daughter were born to them. In 1894 he was elected a Republican member of the National House of Representatives and served on the committee on appropriations. He had now become a recognized party leader in his region and in the following year was temporary chairman of the Republican State Convention. In 1896 he made an active campaign for reëlection to Congress, stressing his party position on the money question, and won the election by an increased plurality. Two years later he was elected to the state Senate from his native county, became his party's floor leader therein, and in 1901, president of that body. On his forty-third birthday he was nominated by Gov. Foster M. Voorhees for a vacancy on the state supreme court, was confirmed and served from Nov. 16, 1901, to Jan. 22, 1908, when he was advanced to the position of chancellor of the state. After a little more than four years of service in that capacity he was nominated by President Taft, on Feb. 19, 1912, to succeed Associate Justice John M. Harlan of the federal Supreme Court. His nomination was confirmed on Mar. 13, and he took office five days later.

Pitney's service on the Supreme Court continued for somewhat less than eleven years. His opinions (in 225–59 *U. S.*), show painstaking

care and a labored style. The opinion in *Hitchman Coal & Coke Company* vs. *Mitchell* (245 *U. S.*, 229) was a blow to organized labor, since it seriously limited the common-law right of workmen to combine. In *Duplex Printing Press Company* vs. *Deering et al.* (254 *U. S.*, 433) the Clayton Act was invoked to restrain a labor union from boycott. In *Eisner* vs. *Macomber* (252 *U. S.*, 189) Congress was denied the right to tax stock dividends, on the ground that they constituted capital increase, not income. Pitney's opinion in *Frank* vs. *Mangum* (237 *U. S.*, 309) dealing with due process of law, met a vigorous dissent from Justices Holmes and Hughes who held that "mob law does not become due process of law by securing the assent of a terrorized jury" (237 *U. S.*, 347). Although most of his opinions were strongly conservative, in *Mountain Timber Company* vs. *Washington* (243 *U. S.*, 219), in which the Workmen's Compensation Act of the state of Washington was upheld, Pitney delivered the opinion of a liberal majority. He resigned, effective Dec. 31, 1922, having served twenty-five years in public office. After leaving the Supreme Court he continued to reside in Washington. It was apparently his arduous work on the Supreme Court which compelled him to retire at the relatively early age of sixty-four and caused his premature death a few months later.

[See: E. R. Walker, "In Memoriam: Mahlon Pitney," *Am. Bar Asso. Jour.*, May 1925; Wm. Nelson, ed., *Nelson's Biog. Cyc. of N. J.* (1913), vol. II; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); W. O. Wheeler and E. D. Halsey, *Descendants of Rebecca Ogden and Caleb Halsted* (n.d.); T. R. Powell, "The Workmen's Compensation Acts," *Pol. Sci. Quart.*, Dec. 1917, and "Collective Bargaining Before the Supreme Court," *Ibid.*, Sept. 1918; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; the *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Dec. 9, 1924.] C. S. L.

PITTOCK, HENRY LEWIS (Mar. 1, 1836–Jan. 28, 1919), newspaper publisher, paper manufacturer, was born in London, England, the son of Susanna (Bonner) and Frederick Pittock. In 1825 his father and his grandfather had emigrated from England to Pittsburgh, Pa. His father returned to London, married, and went back to Pittsburgh in 1839, where he followed the printer's trade the rest of his life. The boy attended the public schools of Pittsburgh and the preparatory school of the Western University of Pennsylvania and learned to be a practical printer. Induced by newspaper narratives of Oregon in the early 1850's he and his brother Robert undertook the six months' journey to the Northwest. In the autumn of 1853 he began work as a compositor for the *Weekly Oregonian* and soon became a journeyman printer. In June 1860 he was married to Georgiana Martin Burton, the daughter of E. M. Burton, who died in 1918. Later in the year 1860 he became proprietor of the paper at a time when outside news was obtained by pony express, stage, and steamship, printing methods were primitive and financial problems difficult. He exerted every effort to get news; he watched all night for the arrival of the stage bringing news and, after the telegraph was established in 1864, spent a large portion of his slender resources to pay for this service. In 1861 he began to publish the *Morning Oregonian*. The first press was a Ramage, hand-operated, that required a separate impression for each page. The paper supported Lincoln, the Union cause, and Reconstruction, and for the twenty years before 1896 he advocated "sound money" and the gold standard. His undertakings prospered; he became state printer, in 1877 he added an afternoon edition, the *Evening Telegram*, and in 1881 a Sunday edition, the *Sunday Oregonian*, and he built two large buildings for the newspaper. All competitors of his newspapers in Portland failed before 1902.

Throughout his life he lent his interest and abilities to various enterprises in developing the new country. He helped found the Northwestern National Bank, became president of the Portland Trust Company of Oregon, engaged extensively in logging and lumbering, and was a leader in the building of the railroads from Lyle to Goldendale, Wash., and from Salem to Falls City, Ore. He was a principal owner in the Baldwin Sheep & Land Company that held 35,000 acres in eastern Oregon, also an organizer of the Harkins Transportation Company that operated steamboats on the Columbia and Willamette rivers, and of the Clearwater Irrigation Power & Boom Company at Lewiston, Idaho. With his brother, Thomas R. Pittock, he held extensive interests in Pittsburgh. Beginning in 1866 at Oregon City he was one of the first to engage in paper manufacture in the Pacific Northwest. At first he used rags for raw material and later wood pulp. In 1868 he built another new plant near Oregon City, and in 1883–85 a third at Camas, Wash. He was an organizer and stockholder in the Columbia Paper Company, later a part of the Crown Zellerbach Corporation. He was a thirty-third degree Scottish Rite Mason and held high places in other Masonic organizations. He was a member of many clubs and civic societies. The geography, resources, industries, and people of the Pacific Northwest were familiar to him as to few others. He died at his home in Portland.

[Autobiog. in *Morning Oregonian*, Dec. 4, 1900; *Ibid.*, Jan. 30, 1919; H. W. Scott, *Hist. of the Ore. Country* (1924), vols. I–V, comp. by L. M. Scott;

Am. Biog.: A New Cyclop., vol. XII (1922); Joseph Gaston, *Portland, Ore.* (1911), vol. II.] L. M. S.

PITTS, HIRAM AVERY (*c.* 1800–Sept. 19, 1860), inventor, was the son of Abial and Abiah Pitts. Soon after he was born his father moved to Winthrop, Kennebec County, Me., where he worked as the village blacksmith for many years. Hiram and his twin brother, John Avery, attended the district school, and in their father's blacksmith shop learned to make shoes for horses and oxen, sleds and oxyokes, hinges and latches for doors, andirons and tongs for fireplaces, and the other wrought-iron work needed to supply the rural community. After their father's death, probably in 1825, the brothers carried on the business in Winthrop in partnership for upwards of two years; then Hiram retired to devote his whole time to invention. He developed an improvement in the chain type of hand pump, and then turned his attention to the horse-power treadmill. With the help of his brother he worked on this problem for a number of years, and on Aug. 15, 1834, they were granted a patent for the chain band for a horse-power. In their device hard maple rollers connected by an endless chain were substituted for the old-fashioned belt. Shortly after obtaining this patent, the Pitts brothers became partners for the purpose of manufacturing their improved power in Winthrop. Hiram took it upon himself to introduce the machines throughout the state of Maine and elsewhere in New England and met with considerable success, and the treadmill came to be widely used in connection with the "Ground Hog Thresher," or open-cylinder threshing machine. Dissatisfied with the work of the "Ground Hog," Pitts gave considerable thought to the designing of a better thresher, and in 1834, with his brother, built a combined threshing and fanning mill in portable form. In this machine, behind a cylinder similar to that of the "Ground Hog" was an endless apron conveyor, and over it a round beater armed with pegs to agitate the straws and a picker or rotary pitchfork to throw them off the end. The grain fell from the cylinder and conveyor into a trough which conducted it to the fanning mill mounted under the machine. A trough was arranged just behind the sieves to catch the heads of grain, allowing the chaff to blow over and away. These bits of grain, known as "tailings," were conveyed to the sieves to be refanned. Patent No. 542, for their thresher and fanning mill, was awarded the brothers on Dec. 29, 1837. Various minor improvements were made on the original Pitts machine, but the principles of the original invention remained unchanged for over a half century. For the next ten years Pitts engaged in the successful manufacturing and marketing of his machines in Winthrop, the first three years in partnership with his brother and after 1840 alone. In that year John A. Pitts opened a factory in Albany; after several subsequent moves he settled in Buffalo, where he manufactured the "Buffalo-Pitts" thresher until his death. In 1847 Hiram moved to Alton, Ill., where he began the manufacture of threshers in the shops of a brother-in-law, improving and perfecting them from time to time. Four years later he removed to Chicago, and in 1852 there began the manufacture of these improved threshers. They were called the "Chicago-Pitts" threshers and they soon found a ready market wherever grain was extensively raised. Besides these important inventions, Pitts is said to have devised a machine for breaking hemp and separating the stalk from the fiber, and also several corn and cob mills. He married Leonora Hosley of Livermore, Me., and when he died in Chicago at the age of sixty, he was survived by four sons who carried on his business.

[R. L. Ardrey, *Am. Agricultural Implements* (1894); E. S. Stackpole, *Hist. of Winthrop, Me.* (1925); Waldemar Kaempffert, *A Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924), vol. II; *Daily Times and Herald* (Chicago), Sept. 20, 1860; Patent Office records.] C. W. M—n.

PLACIDE, HENRY (Sept. 8, 1799–Jan. 23, 1870), actor, was the ablest and best-known member of a notable American stage family. His father was Alexander Placide, a popular acrobat, dancer, actor, and manager, of French birth and origin. His mother, Charlotte Sophia (Wrighten), was the daughter of James Wrighten, for many years prompter of the Drury Lane Theatre in London, and of the actress and singer known on the American stage as Mrs. Pownall. Henry Placide was the second of their five children. His brother Thomas (1808–1877) was a popular comedian, and his three sisters all had stage careers: Caroline (1798–1881) was the wife successively of Leigh Waring and William R. Blake, Jane (1804–1835) was both actress and singer, Eliza (d. 1874) appeared successively as Mrs. Asbury and Mrs. Mann. Henry made his first recorded appearance on the stage in Augusta, Ga., Aug. 23, 1808, at the age of nine, and his last in New York at the Winter Garden Theatre, May 13, 1865, his professional career thereby extending over the exceptionally long period of fifty-seven years.

He first acted in New York at the Anthony Street Theatre as early as 1814, but his name then practically disappears from the records until Sept. 2, 1823, when he appeared at the Park

Theatre as Zekiel Homespun in *The Heir at Law* and Dr. Dablancœur in *Budget of Blunders.* During that interval it is certain that he was acting in obscure regions, and there is one reference to his appearance in 1815–16 in the part of a monkey. After his début at the Park Theatre in 1823, except for brief intervals when he acted elsewhere for short periods (he attempted an engagement at the Haymarket Theatre in London in 1841, but it was an immediate failure), he was the centre of attraction in the New York theatrical world. During his career of twenty years at the Park, he played over five hundred characters, being the original representative of more than two hundred of these. His range extended from clowns of broadest Yorkshire dialect to garrulous Frenchmen, from clumsy hobbledehoys and senile old men to high-bred English gentlemen. He also sang buffo rôles in English opera, and he was as successful in the frothiest and most trivial farce as in the highest type of comedy. Among his rôles were David, Bob Acres, and Sir Anthony Absolute in *The Rivals,* Sir Benjamin Backbite, Crabtree, and Sir Peter Teazle in *The School for Scandal,* Dogberry in *Much Ado About Nothing,* Dr. Ollapod in *The Poor Gentleman,* Colonel Hardy in *Paul Pry,* and Captain Cuttle in *Dombey and Son.* He was the Sir Harcourt Courtly to Charlotte Cushman's Lady Gay Spanker at the first performance of *London Assurance* in the United States, Oct. 11, 1841.

After leaving the Park Theatre, of which he had been for a brief period manager as well as leading actor, he joined the company at Burton's Theatre, and gave distinction to its performances by the contribution of his reputation and his art. "He was not broadly funny like Burton or Holland," says W. L. Keese (*post,* p. 49), "but . . . he was the owner of a rich vein of eccentric humor, and . . . worked his possession effectually. He was an expert in the Gallic parts where the speech is a struggle between French and English, and indeed, since his departure they, too, have vanished from the stage." He made extended tours, throughout the entire country. Joseph Jefferson in his *Autobiography* (p. 155) records a performance at the Baltimore Museum in 1853 of *The School for Scandal,* with Henry Placide as Sir Peter, Thomas Placide as Crabtree, and himself as Moses, referring to Henry Placide as "a finished artist, but somewhat cold and hard in his manner." After his last appearance, in 1865, he was compelled to retire because of ill health and failing eyesight. He made his home thenceforth in Babylon, N. Y., where he died.

[Information about Placide is profusely scattered through many sources; see especially William Dunlap, *Hist. of the Am. Theatre* (1833); G. C. D. Odell, *Annals of the N. Y. Stage,* vols. III–VII (1928–31); J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N. Y. Stage* (2 vols., 1866–67); H. P. Phelps, *Players of a Century* (1880); J. N. Ireland, in *Actors and Actresses of Great Britain and the U. S.: Kean and Booth; and Their Contemporaries* (1886), ed. by Brander Matthews and Laurence Hutton; W. L. Keese, *William E. Burton, Actor, Author and Manager* (1885); *The Autobiog. of Joseph Jefferson* (1889); G. O. Seilhamer, *Hist. of the Am. Theatre* (3 vols., 1889–91); T. A. Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); Eola Willis, *The Charleston Stage in the XVIII Century* (1924); *N. Y. Tribune,* Jan. 24, 25, 1870; newspaper clippings in the files of the Harvard Library Theatre Collection.]

E. F. E.

PLAISTED, HARRIS MERRILL (Nov. 2, 1828–Jan. 31, 1898), soldier, congressman, governor of Maine, seventh of the nine children of Deacon William and Nancy (Merrill) Plaisted, was born at Jefferson, N. H. He was a descendant of Roger Playstead who settled in Kittery (now Berwick), Me., about 1650. Until the age of seventeen, Harris Merrill Plaisted made his home upon the farm where he was born, attending the district school when there was one. His education was obtained largely during the fall and spring terms, first at Lancaster, N. H., and later at academies in St. Johnsbury, Vt., and New Hampton, N. H. Summers he worked on the farm; winters he taught school. He entered Waterville (now Colby) College in September 1849 and was graduated in 1853, meanwhile paying his way by serving as superintendent of schools in Waterville (1850–53) and principal (1853) of the Waterville Liberal Institute. He was graduated with highest honors from the Albany (N. Y.) Law School in 1855, and studied one year in the office of A. W. Paine at Bangor, Me. Admitted to the bar in 1856, he practised in Bangor until 1861. He voted for Lincoln, taking an active part in the campaign and writing assiduously in behalf of the Union. When the war began, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel by Governor Washburn, and raised a company in thirty days. On Oct. 30, 1861, he became lieutenant-colonel of the 11th Maine Regiment and was promoted to a colonelcy May 12, 1862, in the midst of the Peninsular campaign. Transferred to the Southern Department, he commanded a brigade in the vicinity of Charleston, and during the siege of that city had charge of the famous gun, the "Swamp Angel." In April 1864, he was transferred with his so-called "Iron Brigade" to the Richmond sector. His three leaves, July 1862, February and November 1864, he spent in recruiting men for his depleted ranks, turning over the recruiting fees to the men themselves. Suffering with fever and ague, he was

mustered out Mar. 25, 1865, and after a month in a hospital returned to Bangor in the latter part of May 1865. For gallant and meritorious service he had been brevetted brigadier-general of volunteers, Feb. 21, 1865, and major-general, Mar. 13.

Resuming his law practice and entering politics, he twice represented Bangor in the legislature (1867, 1868) and was a delegate-at-large to the Republican National Convention of 1868, at Chicago. In competition with several able lawyers, among them Thomas B. Reed, Plaisted was elected attorney-general of Maine in January 1873. During his three years in this office, he secured twelve convictions in fourteen indictments for capital crimes. He resigned Dec. 1, 1875, and took the congressional seat left vacant by the death of Representative-elect Samuel F. Hersey. As one of the two Republican members of the select committee on trials for whiskey frauds under the chairmanship of J. Proctor Knott [*q.v.*], he assumed the defense of Grant. He was firmly convinced of Grant's honesty and integrity, and, carefully presenting the results of his investigations, in the opinion of many completely vindicated Grant of complicity. Declining reëlection, he returned to Bangor in March 1877. In 1879 he left the Republican party on the money issue, maintaining that "greenbacks" should be substituted for bank bills which, when outstanding in the hands of the people, he held constituted a loan from the people to the banks without interest. In 1880 he was elected governor as the candidate of both Democrats and Greenbackers, but failed of reëlection in 1883. His term in office was marked by a continuous conflict with the Republican council over political appointments. He was the Democratic nominee for senator in 1883, but was defeated. From 1883 to his death he published and edited at Augusta *The New Age*, which under his influence was an able exponent of Bryan and bimetalism and a strong opponent of Blaine. His death, in Bangor, was due to Bright's disease resulting from malarial poisoning contracted in the army. He married first, Sept. 21, 1858, Sarah J. Mason, who died in 1875, and second, Sept. 27, 1881, Mabel True Hill. Three sons were born to the first marriage and one daughter to the second. He was the author of several trial reports; with F. H. Appleton, of *The Maine Digest* (1880), a digest of decisions of the state supreme court from 1820 to 1879; and also of several unpublished genealogical and autobiographical works.

[*Life and Public Services of Gen'l Harris M. Plaisted* (1880); Richard Herndon, *Men of Progress . . . in and of the State of Me.* (1897), with photograph; Henry Chase, *Representative Men of Maine* (1893), with photograph; *New Age*, Feb. 4, 1898; *The Story of One Regiment: The Eleventh Me. Infantry Vols. in the War of the Rebellion* (1896); M. F. King, *Lieut. Roger Plaisted of Quamphegon (Kittery) and Some of His Descendants* (1904); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Bangor Daily Commercial*, Jan. 31, 1898.]

R. E. M.

PLANT, HENRY BRADLEY (Oct. 27, 1819–June 23, 1899), founder of the Plant system of railroads and steamboats, was born in Branford, Conn., the son of Betsey (Bradley) and Anderson Plant, a farmer in good circumstances. He was the descendant of John Plant who probably emigrated from England and settled at Hartford, Conn., about 1639. When the boy was six, his father died. Several years later his mother married again and took him to live first at Martinsburg, N. Y., and later at New Haven, Conn., where he attended a private school. His grandmother, who hoped to make a clergyman of him, offered him an education at Yale College, but, impatient to begin an active career, he got a job as captain's boy, deck hand, and man-of-all-work on a steamboat plying between New Haven and New York. He was then eighteen. Among his various duties was the care of express parcels. This line of business, hitherto neglected, he organized effectively, and, when it was taken over by the Adams Express Company and later transferred from steamboats to railroads, he went along with it. After a few years he was put in charge of the New York office of the company. In 1853 his wife, Ellen Elizabeth (Blackstone) Plant, to whom he had been married in 1842, was ordered South for her health. Several months spent near Jacksonville, then a tiny hamlet, impressed the shrewd Yankee with the possibilities of the future development of Florida. The next year he became the general superintendent of the Adams Express Company for the territory south of the Potomac and Ohio rivers. In the face of great difficulties he successfully organized and extended express service in this region, where transportation facilities, although rapidly growing, were still deficient and uncoördinated. At the approach of the Civil War the directors of Adams Express, fearing the confiscation of their Southern properties, decided to transfer them to Plant. With the Southern stockholders of the company he organized in 1861 the Southern Express Company, a Georgia corporation, and became president. His company acted as agent for the Confederacy in collecting tariffs and transferring funds. In 1863, following a serious illness, he took an extended vacation in Europe, and he returned by way of Canada.

After the war the railroads of the South were practically ruined and many roads went bankrupt in the depression of 1873. In this situation

he found his opportunity. Convinced of the eventual economic revival of the South, he bought at foreclosure sales in 1879 and 1880 the Atlantic & Gulf Railroad and the Charleston & Savannah Railroad. With these as a nucleus he began building along the southern Atlantic seaboard a transportation system that twenty years later included fourteen railway companies with 2,100 miles of track, several steamship lines, and a number of important hotels. In 1882 he organized, with the assistance of Northern capitalists, among whom were H. M. Flagler, M. K. Jesup, and W. T. Walters [*qq.v.*], the Plant Investment Company, a holding company for the joint management of the various properties under his control. He reconstructed and extended several small railroads so as to provide continuous service across the state, and by providing better connections with through lines to the North he gave Florida orange growers quicker and cheaper access to Northern markets. Tampa, then a village of a few hundred inhabitants, he made the terminus of his southern Florida railroad and also the home port for a new line of steamships to Havana. For the accommodation of winter visitors he built here, in the style of a Moorish palace, an enormous hotel costing $2,500,000. The subsequent growth in wealth and population of Florida and other states tributary to the Plant system made its founder one of the richest anl most powerful men in the South. A good physical inheritance, preserved by temperate habits, made it possible for him to keep at work until almost eighty years of age. His first wife died in February 1861, and in 1873 he married Margaret Josephine Loughman, the daughter of Martin Loughman of New York City, who with one of his two sons survived him. In his will he attempted to prevent the partition of his properties, to the value of about $10,000,000, by forming a trust for the benefit of a great-grandson, but the will was contested by his widow and declared invalid under the laws of the state of New York. This decision made possible the consolidation of his railroads with other properties to form the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad. His son, Morton Freeman Plant (1852–1918), was vice-president of the Plant Investment Company from 1884 to 1902 and attained distinction as a yachtsman, part owner of the Philadelphia baseball club in the National League, and sole owner of the New London club in the Eastern League. Of the younger Plant's many gifts to hospitals and other institutions the most notable were the three dormitories and the unrestricted gift of $1,000,000 to the Connecticut College for Women.

[G. S. Smyth, *Henry Bradley Plant* (1898); H. D. Dozier, *A Hist. of the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad* (1920); *Railroad Gazette*, June 30, 1899; *N. Y. Herald*, June 24, 1899; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 5, 15, 1918, for son's activities.] P. W. B.

PLATER, GEORGE (Nov. 8, 1735–Feb. 10, 1792), sixth governor of Maryland, was born on the family estate, "Sotterley," near Leonardtown, St. Mary's County, Md. He was the grandson of George Plater who emigrated from England to Maryland and became locally prominent, and he was the son of a second George Plater, who was conspicuous in the provincial government, and of Rebecca (Addison) Bowles Plater, at the time of her marriage a widow of ample means. He was graduated from the College of William and Mary in 1753. He then adopted the legal profession. From 1767 to 1773 he served as naval officer of the Patuxent district in a position filled earlier by both his father and grandfather. He was also a justice of the peace of St. Mary's County from 1757 to 1771, a delegate in the lower house of the Assembly from 1757 to 1766, and during the last few years before the Revolution, 1771–74, a member of the Executive Council.

Official position did not debar him from early sympathy with the colonists' quarrel, although he became conspicuous as a leader only as matters approached a crisis. In February 1776 he was appointed by the Maryland Council of Safety one of three collectors in his county to obtain gold and silver coin for military operations against Canada, a task well discharged since in about a month he reported a goodly sum collected. In March following, he and George Dent were selected by the Council of Safety to cooperate with Virginia commissioners in the construction of beacons on each bank of the Potomac. The records indicate success in erecting twenty such stations about five miles apart. Events were now moving swiftly, and on May 24 he was constituted one of a committee of five to invite Governor Eden to leave the province. The next day he was seated on the Council of Safety. Scarcely three months later he was serving on a committee charged to draft a declaration and charter of rights and to form a government for the state. In 1778 he was sent by the legislature to represent Maryland in the Continental Congress, where he served until 1780. It fell to his lot to preside over the Maryland convention that ratified the new federal Constitution. In the first electoral college he cast his vote for Washington for president. He represented St. Mary's County several times in the state Senate after the Revolution. In November 1791 he was elected governor by the Maryland Assembly. It was

during his brief incumbency of less than a year that negotiations for the location of the federal capital on Maryland soil were conducted. He was married twice: first, on Dec. 5, 1762, to Hannah Lee, who lived only ten months after her marriage, and then on July 19, 1764, to Elizabeth Rousby of Calvert County. One of their six children married Philip Barton Key [*q.v.*]. Though not a man of large creative ability or of marked individuality, Plater's value as a lawyer and lawmaker came to be appreciated by his constituents and colleagues.

[*Tercentenary Hist. of Md.* (1925), vol. IV; H. E. Buchholz, *Governors of Md.* (1908); C. W. Sams and E. S. Riley, *The Bench and Bar of Md.* (1901); *Md. Hist. Mag.*, Dec. 1907, Mar., June 1920; *Md. Gazette*, Feb. 16, 1792; *Md. Jour. and Baltimore Advertiser*, Feb. 14, 1792.] E. L.

PLATNER, SAMUEL BALL (Dec. 4, 1863–Aug 20, 1921), classical scholar, teacher, was born at Unionville, Conn., the son of William and Emily Childs (Ball) Platner. His mother, a remarkable woman, daughter of Samuel and Experience (Howland) Ball of Lee, Mass., was of New England stock. His father was a business man of Dutch extraction, who died when Samuel was still a boy. After 1865 the family lived at Newark, N. J., and from the Newark Academy Samuel entered Yale College in 1879. He was graduated with distinction in 1883, remained to study the classics and Sanskrit in the Graduate School for two years, and received the degree of Ph.D. in 1885. Thereafter until his death he was associated with Adelbert College of Western Reserve University, Cleveland, being instructor in Latin and French (1885–90), assistant professor of Latin (1890–92), and then professor of Latin. He married, June 29, 1892, Leonora Sayre of Utica, N. Y. In 1889–90 he studied in Berlin and Bonn and visited Rome for the first time. This visit kindled in him a real enthusiasm for the city of Rome, its history, topography, and monuments, and in the years 1897–98 and 1899–1900, which he spent for the most part in Rome, this enthusiasm was strengthened. Thereafter he returned to Rome as often as he could. He was actively interested in the foundation, in 1895, of the American School of Classical Studies in Rome, and he served the School as annual professor in 1899–1900, as member of its managing and executive committees from the beginning, and as secretary of both committees from 1897 to 1911. He was a member of Phi Beta Kappa, acting secretary (1899) and president (1900–1901) of the American Philological Association, and a member of various other learned societies.

Apart from articles and reviews in periodicals his published work comprises: *Greek and Roman Versification* (1892), translated from the German of Lucian Müller; *Selections from the Letters of the Younger Pliny* (1894); *The Topography and Monuments of Ancient Rome* (1904; 2nd edition, 1911); and *A Topographical Dictionary of Ancient Rome* (1929). A translation of the *Noctes Atticae*, which he had begun, was finished by Professor John C. Rolfe. The *Topographical Dictionary* was nearly completed in 1921, but Platner wished to add the finishing touches in Rome. On the voyage to Europe an attack of acute indigestion affected his heart, which was already weak, and caused his death. Thomas Ashby completed the *Dictionary*, which was published eight years later. It is a monument of sound scholarship, industry, and good judgment. The earlier book is an admirable handbook, and the *Dictionary* is indispensable to all who undertake serious work in the field of Roman topography. As a teacher Platner had no patience with slipshod work and chastised it with biting, though genial, sarcasm. He was extremely conservative and would gladly have kept the college curriculum as it was in his youth. Although most of his colleagues disagreed with his opinions, yet they appreciated so highly his ability and thorough culture as to put him in charge of the McBride Lectures, which became under his management an important element in the intellectual life of Cleveland.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *Am. Jour. Archæology*, Jan.–Mar. 1922; *Am. Jour. Philology*, Jan.–Mar. 1922; *Classical Philology*, July 1922; *Yale Univ. Obit. Record*, 1922; *Reserve Weekly*, Sept. 28, 1921, and *Western Reserve Alumnus*, Sept. 1921; *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, Aug. 23, 1921; *Cleveland News*, Aug. 23, 1921; "Samuel Ball Platner, a Memorial Adopted by the Faculty of Adelbert College of Western Reserve University, 1921" (MS., in records of Faculty, Adelbert College.)] H. N. F.

SAB KU & KASHMIR UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
No 14,065.
Date 25. 1. 56.
SRINAGAR
ALLAMA IQBAL LIBRARY
14065